





Class F572

Book B5H6





















013  
25

92901  
4955-6,

Outline Map  
OF  
**BERRIEN**  
AND  
VAN BUREN COUNTIES  
MICHIGAN.





HISTORY  
—OF—  
ERRIEN AND VAN BUREN COUNTIES,  
MICHIGAN.

With Illustrations and Biographical Sketches

—OF—

ITS PROMINENT MEN AND PIONEERS.

PHILADELPHIA:  
D. W. ENSIGN & CO.

1880.



## P R E F A C E.

---

THE object steadily kept in view in the preparation of this history has been to furnish an exhaustive accurate account of events of importance or general interest which have occurred within the territory comprehended in the counties of Berrien and Van Buren, from the first discovery of this region by the men down to the present time; to exclude everything of doubtful authenticity, but to embody all obtainable *facts* in the narrative, and at the same time to confine it as closely as practicable to the limits of the two counties, referring to no outside matters, except such as could not well be omitted because of their close connection with the history of the region which is especially noticed.

The work is divided into three parts. The first nineteen chapters are devoted to matters common to both counties, viz.: the discovery and exploration of this section of country by French adventurers and priests; its occupation by the *Miami* Indians, and afterwards by the *Pottawattamies*; the operations of Indian traders through all this region; the several Indian cessions of land, covering the territory now included in Berrien and Van Buren; navigation and harbor improvements at St. Joseph, South Haven, and New Buffalo; internal improvements,—in the matters of Territorial roads, State roads, plank roads, and railways traversing both counties; military history,—principally referring to the services performed in the war of the Rebellion by a number of Michigan regiments, all or nearly all of which contained soldiers from both counties; and finally an article on the fruit-belt of Western Michigan, which covers the greater part, if not all, of both Berrien and Van Buren Counties. Next, after these general chapters, is given a separate history of Berrien County, Niles City, and each of the several townships; and this part is followed by a similar separate history of Van Buren County and its townships.

The amount of time and labor which has been expended in the preparation of this history is great. Some of the material has been gleaned from the very few (reliable) published works which bear upon the subject; much more from county, township, and society records, and files of old newspapers; but by far the greater part has been obtained from the oldest residents and best-informed people of the two counties,—of whom more than three hundred have been applied to for information, and have given it.

The result of all this patient labor and research has been so satisfactory that the work is now presented to its patrons with the confident expectation that their verdict will be a favorable one. Every effort has been made to render the history as nearly perfect as it is possible for such a work to be; and, this being the case, no apology is thought necessary. It is proper, however, to make this explanation: that if errors are discovered (as it is nearly certain there will be) in the orthography of some of the family names of the early and later residents of the counties, it is largely due to the fact that the names have been found spelled differently (and sometimes in as many as four or five different ways) in the county, township, church, and society records, and that in several instances different members of the same family vary in the orthography of <sup>the</sup> <sup>the</sup> surname. Under such circumstances, it is not a matter of surprise if the several writers of the <sup>the</sup> <sup>the</sup> and township histories, often finding themselves wholly at a loss to know which manner of spelling have sometimes made the mistake of choosing the wrong one.

To those who have kindly given their aid in the collection of material for the work, the writer desires to express his acknowledgments; especially to the editors and proprietors of the several newspapers, county and township officers, the gentlemen of the legal and medical professions in the two counties, and pastors and leading members of the churches. The pioneers and other citizens of Berrien and Van Buren who have furnished information are too numerous to receive the separate individual mention to which they are entitled, but grateful thanks are tendered to each and all for the assistance which they have willingly and courteously given.

F.

PHILADELPHIA, PA., March 26, 1880.

# CONTENTS.

## HISTORICAL.

### HISTORY OF BERRIEN AND VAN BUREN COUNTIES.

CHAPTER	PAGE
I.—Discoveries and Explorations . . . . .	9
II.—The Miami Occupation . . . . .	18
III.—The Pottawattamie Occupation . . . . .	21
IV.—The Pottawattamies of the St. Joseph after 1815 . . . . .	30
V.—Cessions of Indian Territory—Erection of Counties and Towns upon it . . . . .	35
VI.—Navigation—Harbor Improvements . . . . .	39
VII.—Internal Improvements . . . . .	47
VIII.—Military History—The Sauk War—The Great Rebellion . . . . .	57
IX.—The Ninth, Twelfth, and Thirteenth Infantry Regiments . . . . .	67
X.—Seventeenth, Nineteenth, and Twenty-fourth Infantry . . . . .	80
XI.—Twenty-fifth and Twenty-sixth Infantry . . . . .	85
XII.—Twenty-eighth Infantry—First Engineers and Mechanics—First Sharpshooters . . . . .	91
XIII.—First and Second Cavalry . . . . .	95
XIV.—Third Cavalry . . . . .	99
XV.—Fourth Cavalry . . . . .	103
XVI.—Seventh, Ninth, and Eleventh Cavalry . . . . .	108
XV. I.—Western Sharpshooters, and One Hundred and Second United States Colored Troops . . . . .	112
XVIII.—Other Soldiers from Berrien and Van Buren Counties . . . . .	115
XIX.—The Fruit Belt . . . . .	118

### BERRIEN COUNTY.

XX.—Natural Features—Early Settlement . . . . .	127
XXI.—Erection and Organization of Berrien County—Courts and County Buildings . . . . .	130
XXII.—The Press of Berrien County . . . . .	136
XXIII.—The Medical and Legal Professions . . . . .	141
XXIV.—Civil List—County Societies . . . . .	148
XXV.—City of Niles . . . . .	153
XXVI.—Buchanan Township . . . . .	174
XXVII.—Benton . . . . .	187
XXVIII.—Berrien . . . . .	203
XXIX.—Bainbridge . . . . .	213
XXX.—Bertrand . . . . .	227
XXXI.—Chickaming . . . . .	232

CHAPTER	PAGE
XXXII.—Galien Township . . . . .	236
XXXIII.—Hagar . . . . .	242
XXXIV.—Lake . . . . .	248
XXXV.—Lincoln . . . . .	255
XXXVI.—Niles . . . . .	260
XXXVII.—New Buffalo Township . . . . .	270
XXXVIII.—Oronoko . . . . .	278
XXXIX.—Pipestone . . . . .	292
XL.—Royalton . . . . .	301
XLI.—St. Joseph . . . . .	312
XLII.—Sodus . . . . .	327
XLIII.—Three Oaks . . . . .	332
XLIV.—Watervliet . . . . .	339
XLV.—Weesaw . . . . .	353

### VAN BUREN COUNTY.

XLVI.—Erection and Organization of the County—Location of County-Seat . . . . .	359
XLVII.—Courts—Records—County Buildings—Civil List . . . . .	362
XLVIII.—The Press of Van Buren County . . . . .	367
XLIX.—The Learned Professions . . . . .	369
L.—County Societies . . . . .	373
LI.—Antwerp Township . . . . .	374
LII.—Arlington . . . . .	391
LIII.—Almena . . . . .	399
LIV.—Bangor . . . . .	407
LV.—Bloomingdale Township . . . . .	421
LVI.—Columbia . . . . .	429
LVII.—Covert . . . . .	434
LVIII.—Decatur . . . . .	439
LIX.—Geneva . . . . .	449
LX.—Hartford . . . . .	454
LXI.—Hamilton . . . . .	465
LXII.—Keeler . . . . .	477
LXIII.—Lawrence . . . . .	487
LXIV.—Paw Paw . . . . .	502
LXV.—Pine Grove . . . . .	521
LXVI.—Porter . . . . .	527
LXVII.—South Haven . . . . .	533
LXVIII.—Waverly . . . . .	544

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

	PAGE
Hon. George H. Jerome . . . . .	171
Joseph C. Lartimore . . . . .	172
Major L. A. Duncan . . . . .	173
Joseph Covey . . . . .	facing 180
Hon. Lorenzo P. Alexander . . . . .	184
Jacob P. Van Riper . . . . .	185
George H. Richards . . . . .	186
Eleanor and Henry C. Morton . . . . .	197
Jehial Enos . . . . .	199
Sterre Brunson . . . . .	199
Lew's Sutherland . . . . .	200
G. N. Lord . . . . .	200
Phineas Pearl . . . . .	201
Warren H. Pearl . . . . .	201
J. M. Higbee . . . . .	202
Porter Bury . . . . .	202

	PAGE
Luther Kinney . . . . .	202
Elkanah Nickerson . . . . .	203
Edwin T. Dickson . . . . .	211
Nathan McCoy . . . . .	212
Israel P. Hutton . . . . .	212
Silas Ireland . . . . .	213
Nathaniel Brant . . . . .	224
Sidney Spencer . . . . .	225
Martin Tiee . . . . .	225
John K. Bishop . . . . .	226
Samuel Messenger . . . . .	231
George H. Rough . . . . .	231
John C. Morgan . . . . .	235
Alfred W. Ames . . . . .	236
David A. Cuthbert . . . . .	240
Henry Renbarger . . . . .	240



## BIOGRAPHICAL.

	PAGE		PAGE
Mrs. Mary Witter . . . . .	240	J. G. Miller . . . . .	420
Cyrus Thurston . . . . .	241	John Sebring . . . . .	428
Frank Jerac . . . . .	242	Aaron K. Tedrow . . . . .	428
R. B. Huston . . . . .	242	J. G. Clark . . . . .	428
James Hannah . . . . .	247	H. H. Howard . . . . .	429
Anthony S. Bishop . . . . .	247	A. S. Brown . . . . .	433
Isaac Hathaway . . . . .	253	J. N. Hinckley . . . . .	433
John H. Nixon . . . . .	253	William Packard . . . . .	434
Norman E. London . . . . .	254	Edward A. Rood . . . . .	438
David Myers . . . . .	259	Alfred S. Packard . . . . .	439
L. W. Archer . . . . .	259	Alexander E. Copley . . . . .	440
Dr. J. N. Porcell . . . . .	259	Dolphin Morris . . . . .	446
Burton Jarvis . . . . .	269	Charles H. Morris . . . . .	447
Daniel Fisher . . . . .	270	Nancy (Beaver) Morris . . . . .	447
John Murray . . . . .	277	Elias and Samuel Morris . . . . .	448
Richard Phillips . . . . .	277	Dr. C. T. Baker . . . . .	449
Robert Cassiday . . . . .	300	Gilman and Philena White . . . . .	453
George C. Hartman . . . . .	300	N. S. Taylor . . . . .	453
Josiah Gano . . . . .	301	Clark Pierce . . . . .	454
Amasa and Norman C. Preston . . . . .	301	Hon. Fabius Miles . . . . .	462
Thomas Evans . . . . .	302	Thomas Conklin . . . . .	464
William Ridenour . . . . .	302	Henry P. Phelps . . . . .	465
Mrs. Mary Burton . . . . .	302	G. G. B. Yeekley . . . . .	between 466, 467
Miles Davis . . . . .	303	Aaron and Austin M. Barney . . . . .	466, 467
Morgan Enos, M.D. . . . .	303	Robert Nesbitt . . . . .	" 468, 469
Henry Ashoff . . . . .	facing 304	Capt. Josiah R. Hendryx . . . . .	470
William H. Tryon . . . . .	" 308	Philetus Haydon . . . . .	472
Dr. Edward Hall . . . . .	309	James M. Osborn . . . . .	473
George H. Scott . . . . .	310	Erastus Osborn . . . . .	473
John Bort . . . . .	311	John Bennett . . . . .	474
Hon. Alexander H. Morrison . . . . .	facing 314	John Q. Adams . . . . .	475
Dr. Lyman Collins . . . . .	326	William Horton . . . . .	476
J. C. Caldwell . . . . .	326	A. S. Wise . . . . .	476
Walter Donaldson . . . . .	327	John H. Collins . . . . .	476
John B. Rush . . . . .	332	Dr. George Bartholomew . . . . .	483
Josephus Fisher . . . . .	332	Orrendo M. Sikes . . . . .	484
Edward Vetterley . . . . .	339	Orman V. Roosevelt . . . . .	485
Edward Brant . . . . .	350	Charles Duncombe . . . . .	485
Harvey C. Sherwood . . . . .	351	Albert E. Gregory . . . . .	486
W. W. Allen . . . . .	351	Tobias Byers . . . . .	486
Joseph Knapp . . . . .	352	A. S. Haskin, M.D. . . . .	facing 492
S. P. Merrifield . . . . .	352	David Ferris . . . . .	" 496
Sebastian Smith . . . . .	353	Anson U. Barnes . . . . .	499
Gabriel F. Penwell . . . . .	358	Eaton Branch . . . . .	500
George Boyle . . . . .	358	T. W. Howard . . . . .	501
Jason A. Sheldon . . . . .	facing 384	Howard S. Allen . . . . .	501
Lyssander Bathrick . . . . .	388	Abner M. Munger . . . . .	501
Jonathan J. Woodman . . . . .	389	Albert Harrison . . . . .	514
Henry Waite . . . . .	390	Elder Joseph Woodman . . . . .	facing 514
James M. Lull . . . . .	391	Peter Gremps . . . . .	515
Peter Harwick . . . . .	391	Anderson C. Webb . . . . .	515
J. R. Bangs . . . . .	392	Henry W. Rhodes . . . . .	516
Orange Stephens . . . . .	392	Edwin Barnum . . . . .	516
N. L. Surdam . . . . .	393	David Woodman . . . . .	517
Alvin Chapman . . . . .	399	Philip Sherrod . . . . .	518
Edward P. Mills . . . . .	404	William H. Lee . . . . .	518
Asa Crofoot . . . . .	405	Jeremiah H. Simmons . . . . .	519
Jacob Erkenbeck . . . . .	406	Henry Wilson . . . . .	520
Alonzo W. Stevens . . . . .	406	G. F. Harrington . . . . .	520
Charles I. Cross . . . . .	facing 407	B. A. Murdock . . . . .	521
William W. Kinney . . . . .	416	David Wise . . . . .	between 524, 525
John M. Vanauken . . . . .	417	D. O. Everest . . . . .	526
Thomas Cross . . . . .	417	Samuel Bartlett . . . . .	531
John Southard . . . . .	418	Sanford Corey . . . . .	532
David K. Charles . . . . .	418	Nelson Corey . . . . .	532
William S. Charles . . . . .	419	Russel V. Munger . . . . .	532
Anson Goss . . . . .	419	Manasseh Kern . . . . .	533
Thomas Kemp . . . . .	419	William H. Harbut . . . . .	533
Orlando S. Brown . . . . .	420		

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

Outline Map of Berrien and Van Buren Counties . . .	facing title.
Geological Map of the Lower Peninsula of Michigan. . .	" 9

**BERRIEN COUNTY.**

Court-House, Jail, and County Buildings . . .	facing 127
---	------------

**NILES CITY.**

Residence of Maj. W. S. Millard . . .	facing 156
Property of Maj. L. A. Duncan . . .	" 160
Church of the Immaculate Conception . . .	" 164
Premises of Mrs. J. B. Millard . . .	" 168
Residence and Surroundings of Hon. G. H. Jerome . . .	" 171
Portrait of Hon. George H. Jerome . . .	" 171
" Joseph C. Larimore . . .	" 173

**BUCHANAN TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Capt. George H. Richards . . .	facing 174
Portraits of Joseph Coveney and Wife . . .	" 180
Portrait of Hon. L. P. Alexander . . .	" 180
" Jacob J. Van Riper . . .	" 180

**BENTON TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of James F. Higbee (with portraits) . . .	facing 188
" G. N. Lord . . .	" 190
" Luther Kinney . . .	" 192
" Capt. E. Nickerson . . .	" 194
Property of L. Kelley . . .	" 194
Residence of Lewis Sutherland (with portraits) . . .	" 196
Portrait of Eleazer Morton . . .	" 197
Portraits of Henry C. Morton and Wife . . .	" 198
Portrait of Jehial Eros . . .	" 199
" Sterne Brunson . . .	" 199
Residence of W. H. Pearl (with portraits) . . .	facing 201
Portraits of Phineas Pearl and Wife . . .	" 201
Residence of J. D. Bury (with portraits) . . .	facing 202

**BERRIEN TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Silas Ireland (with portraits) . . .	facing 204
" Israel P. Hutton . . .	" 206
" Edwin T. Dickson . . .	" 208
Portrait of Nathan McCoy . . .	" 212

**BAINBRIDGE TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Nathaniel M. Brant (with portraits) . . .	facing 216
" the late Martin Tice . . .	" 220
Portraits of Sidney Spencer and Wife . . .	" 223
" John K. Bishop and Wife . . .	" 226

**BERTRAND TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of George H. Rough . . .	facing 227
" Charles F. Howe (with portraits) . . .	" 228
" the late F. A. Howe . . .	between 230, 231
" Samuel Messenger . . .	" 230, 231

**CHICKAMING TOWNSHIP.**

Lakeside Farm—Residence of John C. Morgan (three views) . . .	facing 232
Portrait of Alfred W. Ames . . .	" 236

**GALLEN TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of the late Henry Renbarger, present residence of David Cuthbert . . .	facing 236
" Cyrus Thurston (with portraits) . . .	" 238
Portrait of Mrs. Mary Witter . . .	" 241
Residence of R. B. Huston (with portraits) . . .	facing 242
" Frank Jerus . . .	" 336

**HAGAR TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of James Hannah (with portraits) . . .	facing 246
Portraits of Anthony S. Bishop and Wife . . .	" 248

**LAKE TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Isaac Hathaway (two views) . . .	facing 253
Portraits of Isaac Hathaway and Wife . . .	" 253
" John H. Nixon and Wife . . .	" 254
" N. E. Landon and Wife . . .	" 254, 255

**LINCOLN TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of David Myers (with portraits) double page . . .	between 256, 257
" the late L. W. Archer (with portraits) . . .	facing 258
Portrait of J. N. Percell, M.D. . . .	" 260

**NILES TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Barton Jarvis (with portraits) . . .	facing 268
Portrait of Daniel Fisher . . .	" 270

**NEW BUFFALO TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of John Murray (with portraits) . . .	facing 276
Portraits of Richard Phillips and Wife . . .	" 278

**ORONOKO TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Aaron Van Patten . . .	facing 292
-------------------------------------	------------

**PIPESTONE TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of George C. Hartman . . .	facing 292
" William Ridenour (with portraits) . . .	" 294
" Miles Davis . . .	" 296
" Thomas Evans . . .	" 298
" Robert Cassidy . . .	" 300
" Milton Preston . . .	" 301
" Sarah Wells . . .	" 301
Portraits of Josiah Gano and Wife . . .	" 301
Portrait of Mrs. Mary Burton . . .	" 302
" Morgan Enos, M.D. . . .	" 303

**ROYALTON TOWNSHIP.**

Portrait of Henry Ashoff . . .	facing 304
Portraits of A. G. Abbee and Wife . . .	" 306
" W. H. Tryon and Wife . . .	facing 308
Portrait of Dr. Edward Hall . . .	" 310
Portraits of George H. Scott and Wife . . .	" 310
" John Bort and Wife . . .	" 311

**ST. JOSEPH TOWNSHIP.**

View of the Park Hotel . . .	facing 312
Portrait of Joseph W. Brewer . . .	" 313
" Hon. A. H. Morrison . . .	facing 314
Residence of Dr. Lyman Collins (with portrait) . . .	" 316
The Michigan Basket-Factory of A. W. Wells & Co. . .	" 318
Residence and Manufactory of A. H. Morrison . . .	" 320
St. Joseph's (R. C.) Church . . .	" 324
Portrait of J. C. Caldwell . . .	" 326
" Walter Donaldson . . .	" 327

**SODUS TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of J. B. Rush (with portraits) . . .	facing 328
Portrait of Josephus Fisher . . .	" 332

**THREE OAKS TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Mrs. Edward Vetterley . . .	facing 336
--	------------

**WATERLIET TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of Edward Brant (with portraits) . . .	facing 340
" Joseph Knapp . . .	" 344
" Harvey C. Sherwood (three views) . . .	" 351
Portrait of W. W. Allen . . .	" 351
" S. P. Merrifield . . .	" 352
Views of Pomona Point, Paw Paw Lake, Property of S. Smith . . .	facing 353

**WEESAW TOWNSHIP.**

Residence of George Boyle (with portraits) . . .	facing 354
" G. F. Penwell . . .	" 356

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY.

	PAGE
View of Court-House and County Offices . . . . .	facing 359
<b>ANTWERP TOWNSHIP.</b>	
Residence of Hon. J. J. Woodman (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 374
" Peter Harwick (with portraits) . . . . .	" 376
" James M. Lull . . . . .	" 378
" Henry Waite . . . . .	" 378
" J. R. Bangs (with portraits) . . . . .	" 380
" Nathaniel L. Surdam (with portraits) . . . . .	" 382
Portraits of Jason A. Sheldon and Wife . . . . .	" 384
" Lysander Bathrick and Wife . . . . .	" 388
Residence of Orange Stephens (with portraits) . . . . .	" 392

## ARLINGTON TOWNSHIP.

Residence of Alvin Chapman (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 394
---	------------

## ALMENA TOWNSHIP.

Residence of Alonzo W. Stevens . . . . .	facing 400
" Asa Crofoot . . . . .	" 404
" Edward P. Mills . . . . .	" 404
Portraits of Jacob Erkenbeck and Wife . . . . .	" 406

## BANGOR TOWNSHIP.

Portraits of Charles U. Cross and Wife . . . . .	facing 407
Residence of Thomas Cross (with portraits) . . . . .	" 408
" William S. Charles " . . . . .	" 410
" Anson Goss " . . . . .	" 412
Property of J. G. Miller . . . . .	" 414
Residence of Wm. W. Kinney . . . . .	" 416
Portrait of John M. Vanauden . . . . .	" 417
Portraits of John Southard and Wife . . . . .	" 418
Residence of D. K. Charles (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 418
" O. S. Brown " . . . . .	" 420
Portraits of Thomas Kemp and Wife . . . . .	" 420

## BLOOMINGDALE TOWNSHIP.

Residence of H. H. Howard (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 422
Church and Parsonage—Store and Residence of J. G. Clark (with portraits) . . . . .	" 424
Residence of Catharine Tedrow (with portraits) . . . . .	" 426
" John Sebring . . . . .	" 428

## COLUMBIA TOWNSHIP.

Residence of Mrs. S. D. Brown (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 430
" W. J. Dennis . . . . .	" 432
Portraits of J. N. Hinckley and Wife . . . . .	" 434

## COVERT TOWNSHIP.

Portraits of William and W. O. Packard . . . . .	facing 434
Residence and Mill of A. S. Packard (with portraits) . . . . .	" 436
Portrait of E. A. Reed . . . . .	" 438

## DECATUR TOWNSHIP.

Portrait of Alexander B. Copley . . . . .	facing 440
Decatur Union School Building . . . . .	" 442
Residence of C. T. Baker, M.D. (with portrait) . . . . .	" 444
Portraits of Dolphin Morris and Wife . . . . .	" 446
" Elias and Samuel Morris . . . . .	" 448
Old Homestead of Dolphin Morris, late Residence of C. H. Morris . . . . .	facing 448
Portraits of the late C. H. Morris and Wife . . . . .	" 448

## GENEVA TOWNSHIP.

Residences of Gilman and Phillena White, Irvington . . . . .	between 450, 451
Geneva Mills and Residence of S. W. Trowbridge . . . . .	" 450, 451
Residence of Noble S. Taylor (three views, with portraits) . . . . .	facing 452
Portraits of Clark Pierce and Wife . . . . .	" 454

## HARTFORD TOWNSHIP.

	PAGE
Residence of Thomas Conklin (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 456
" Henry Phelps " . . . . .	" 460
" Fabius Miles " . . . . .	" 462

## HAMILTON TOWNSHIP.

Residence of A. S. Wise (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 465
Portrait of G. G. B. Yeckley . . . . .	between 466, 467
Portraits of Aaron and Austin M. Barney . . . . .	" 466, 467
Residence of Robert Nesbitt (with portraits) . . . . .	" 468, 469
Residence and Stock-Farm of J. R. & H. J. Hendryx . . . . .	facing 471
Portraits of Josiah R. Hendryx and Wife . . . . .	" 471
Residence of James M. Osborn (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 472
Portrait of Philotas Haydon . . . . .	" 473
" Erastus Osborn . . . . .	" 474
Residence of John Bennett (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 474
Portraits of John Q. Adams and Wife . . . . .	" 475
Residence of J. H. Collins (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 476
Portraits of William Horton and Wife . . . . .	" 476

## KEELER TOWNSHIP.

Residence of Charles Duncombe (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 478
" A. E. Gregory " . . . . .	" 480
" O. V. Rosevelt . . . . .	" 482
Camping-Ground of E. Pardee (three views) . . . . .	" 483
Portrait of Dr. George Bartholomew . . . . .	" 483
Residence of O. M. Sikes (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 484
" Tobias Lycer " . . . . .	" 486

## LAWRENCE TOWNSHIP.

Residence of Howard S. Allen (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 488
Portrait of A. S. Haskin, M.D. . . . .	" 492
Residence of T. W. Howard (with portraits) . . . . .	" 494
Portraits of David Ferris and Wife . . . . .	" 496
Residence of A. U. Barnes (with portraits) . . . . .	" 498
Portrait of Eaton Branch . . . . .	" 500

## PAW PAW TOWNSHIP.

Residence of David Woodman (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 502
" Albert Harrison " . . . . .	" 504
" G. F. Harrington " . . . . .	" 506
" Philip Sherrod . . . . .	" 508
" A. C. Webb . . . . .	" 508
" B. A. Murdock (with portraits) . . . . .	" 510
Portraits of Elder Joseph Woodman and Wife . . . . .	" 514
" Peter Gremps and Wife . . . . .	" 515
" Henry W. Rhodes and Wife . . . . .	" 516
Portrait of Edwin Barnum . . . . .	" 517
" William H. Lee . . . . .	" 519
" Jeremiah H. Simmons . . . . .	" 519
Residence of Henry Wilson (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 520

## PINE GROVE TOWNSHIP.

Portrait of Chauncey Wise . . . . .	" 522
Residence of David Wise (with portraits) . . . . .	between 524, 525
Portraits of D. O. Everest and Wife . . . . .	" 527

## PORTER TOWNSHIP.

Portrait of Sanford Corey . . . . .	between 528, 529
Residence of A. M. Munger . . . . .	" 528, 529
" R. V. Munger . . . . .	" 528, 529
" the late Luke Munger (with portrait) . . . . .	" 528, 529
" Samuel Bartlett (with portraits) . . . . .	facing 530
Portrait of Nelson Corey . . . . .	" 532
" Manasseh Kern . . . . .	" 533

## SOUTH HAVEN TOWNSHIP.

Residence of W. H. Hurlbut (three views, with portraits) . . . . .	facing 534
Leighton Block and First National Bank Building . . . . .	" 538

## WAVERLY TOWNSHIP.

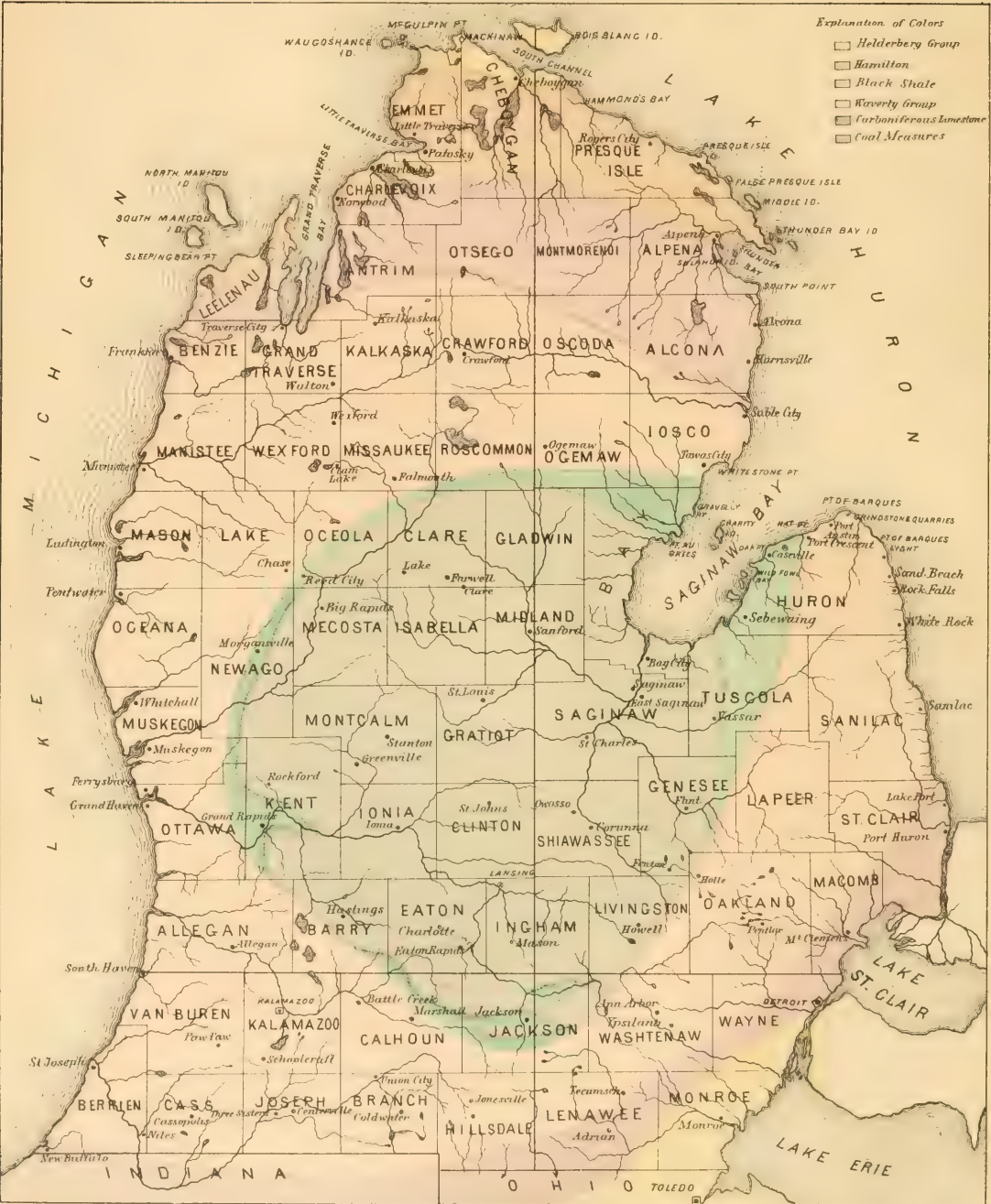
Residence of O. A. Breck . . . . .	facing 544
------------------------------------	------------



# GEOLOGICAL MAP OF THE LOWER PENINSULA OF MICHIGAN.

Explanation of Colors

- Helderberg Group
- Hamilton
- Black Shale
- Waverly Group
- Carboniferous Limestone
- Coal Measures





# HISTORY

## OF

### BERRIEN AND VAN BUREN COUNTIES, MICHIGAN.

BY FRANKLIN ELLIS.

#### CHAPTER I.

##### DISCOVERIES AND EXPLORATIONS.

French Adventurers, Hunters, Fur-Traders, and Priests—The Franciscans—The Jesuits—Establishment of Posts and Missions in the Northwest—Formal Possession of the Upper Lake Country taken by the French—The Unknown Waters of Lake Michigan—La Salle, the Adventurer and Explorer—Louis Joliet and Jacques Marquette—Their Voyage to the Mississippi—Discovery of the St. Joseph River—Death of Marquette—La Salle's Explorations—First Vessel on the Upper Lakes—Sailing of the "Griffin," bound to the Mouth of the St. Joseph, where she never arrived—La Salle on the St. Joseph in 1679—"Fort Miami" built at the mouth of the River—Passage up the St. Joseph in Canoes—Journey to the Illinois—Return by Way of the Mouth of the St. Joseph—First Overland Journey from the St. Joseph to the Detroit River—Return to the St. Joseph in 1680—Destruction of "Fort Miami"—Another Journey to the Illinois—Return to the St. Joseph—"Fort Miami" Rebuilt—Clearing and Preparations for Ship-Building at the Mouth of the St. Joseph—Winter Quarters at "Fort Miami"—Remote Tribes of Indians coming to the St. Joseph for French Protection—Councils with the Illinois and Miamis—Expedition to the Mouth of the Mississippi—La Salle's subsequent Visits to the St. Joseph River.

THE earliest white explorers of the country which is now the State of Michigan, as of all the regions lying on, and contiguous to, the great lakes of the Northwest, were traders, priests, and adventurers, who were all subjects of the king of France. The government of that country had moved with great energy to extend its power in America, and, as early as 1604, French colonists had settled in Acadia, now Nova Scotia. Quebec was founded in 1608, and from that point, and from Montreal, there were sent forth innumerable expeditions, led by Frenchmen, whose object was the opening of trade or the establishment of their flag and their religion among the Indian tribes of the remote regions stretching away from the St. Lawrence to the Mississippi. Hunters and fur-traders were in most cases the first to penetrate the wilderness, but these were closely followed by missionaries of the Romish Church, usually accompanied by representatives of the military power of France. "The establishment of the mission was the precursor of military occupancy. The priest and the soldier went hand in hand; and the cross and the *fleur-de-lis* were planted side by side."

The Franciscan fathers were the first to enter the new and promising missionary field; and when, in the year

1615, Samuel de Champlain, the French Governor of Canada, led an expedition of discovery as far as the shores of Lake Manitoulin (the northern arm of Lake Huron), the priests of that order either accompanied him or followed immediately after, and established Catholic missions among the *Huron* tribes who lived there. But in 1625 the pioneer priests of the far-famed Jesuit order arrived in Canada, and they, by their fiery zeal and almost superhuman energy, pushed aside the less aggressive Franciscans, and took the lead in the occupation of the missionary ground throughout the entire lake region. Sixteen years after the arrival of the Jesuits two of their number—Fathers Raymbault and Jogues—had reached the outlet of Lake Superior, and were bending all their energies to the task of converting the savages around the *Saut Ste. Marie*.

The route by which the early traders, priests, and expeditions reached Lake Huron and the waters above it was from Montreal by way of the Ottawa River, thence across to Georgian Bay and Lake Manitoulin, and along the shores of the latter to the *Saut* and Lake Superior. The route by way of Niagara River and Lake Erie was considered impassable, for on the shores of those waters dwelt the powerful and vindictive *Iroquois*, who were deadly enemies of the French; and it was not until fifty-four years after Champlain's visit to Manitoulin that the first canoe bearing a white man (the fearless Joliet, on his return from Lake Superior) passed through the Detroit River into Lake Erie. A few months later two priests, Dollier de Casson and Galin e, crossing from the western end of Ontario to Erie, passed up over the same route, as will be mentioned in succeeding pages.

In 1654 the French fur-traders had penetrated to Green Bay, and Father Mercier was with them there, laboring to make Indian proselytes. This point had, however, been visited fifteen years earlier, by Jean Nicollet,\* who pushed farther on, to the waters of the Wisconsin River, and afterwards lost his life among the *Algonquins*. In 1655, Jean de Quens, a missionary, was at Green Bay, and reported that large and powerful Indian tribes were there; one of which tribes, he said, numbered sixty villages. In the same year a large number of these savages, in fifty canoes, went

\* An interpreter who had been employed at Three Rivers, on the St. Lawrence, and also among the *Nipissing* Indians.

down to Quebec for the purpose of establishing a fur-trade with the French. In 1660, René Menard, an aged Jesuit priest, explored Lake Superior as far as Chemoinégon Bay, and attempted to found a mission there, but failed in his attempt, and died in the wilderness. In 1666\* the Jesuit priest Claude Jean Allouez established the mission of St. Esprit, at La Pointe, where he was joined soon afterwards by Father Louis Nicholas. In 1668, Fathers Claude Dablon and Jacques Marquette founded a permanent mission at the Saut Ste. Marie. This was the first real settlement made by Europeans within the boundaries of the present State of Michigan. In the autumn of 1669, Allouez was sent to Green Bay, where he founded a mission, to which he gave the name of St. Francis Xavier, his first mass at that place being pronounced on the festival day of that saint, the 3d of December. The mission of St. Ignace, on the northern shore of the Strait of Michillimackinac, was established in 1671, by Marquette and Dablon, the latter being at that time Superior of the Missions of the Lakes.

Formal possession of the upper lake country was taken in the summer of 1671, in the name of the French monarch, by Daumont de St. Lussou, a military leader, who had been sent out in the previous year by Jean Talon, Intendant of Canada, to search for copper mines reported by Indians and others as existing on the shores of Lake Superior. St. Lussou called a council of the Indian tribes, to be held at the Saut Ste. Marie in the spring of 1671, and, in response to the call, representatives of the *Pottawattamies*, *Sauks*, *Miamis*, *Winnebagoes*, *Miaminées*, and nine other tribes met him at the point designated, where, on the 14th of June, the grand ceremony was performed. The parties present on the part of France were St. Lussou, Louis Joliet, a force of fourteen French soldiers, armed and fully accoutred, and four Jesuit priests,—Fathers Dablon, Allouez, Gabriel Drulilletes, and Louis André,—all clad in the sacred vestments of their order. On the part of the aboriginal owners of the country there were the representatives of fourteen tribes living on the borders of the great lakes, in what are now the States of Michigan, Wisconsin, and Illinois, and the Dominion of Canada. A large wooden cross was reared, and blessed by Father Dablon, who was highest in priestly authority of any present. A cedar post had been prepared, bearing a metallic plate, on which was engraved the royal insignia of France. This post was raised and firmly planted beside the cross, while the soldiers chanted the *Domine saluum fac Regem* and the Jesuits prayed for the king. Then St. Lussou advanced with drawn sword, raised a sod of earth with his left hand, and in a loud voice made this proclamation :

"In the name of the Most High, Mighty, and Redoubted Monarch, Louis, Fourteenth of that name, Most Christian King of France and of Navarre, I take possession of this place, Sainte Marie du Saut, as also of Lakes Huron and Superior, the island of Manitoulin, and all countries, rivers, lakes, and streams contiguous and adjacent thereunto; both those which have been discovered and those which may be discovered hereafter, and all their length and breadth, bounded on the one side by the seas of

the North and of the West, and on the other by the South Sea; declaring to the nations thereof that from this time forth they are vassals of His Majesty, bound to obey his laws and follow his customs; promising them, on his part, all succor and protection against the incursions and invasions of their enemies; declaring to all other potentates, princes, sovereigns, states, and Republics,—to them and their subjects,—that they cannot and are not to seize or settle upon any of the parts of the aforesaid countries, save only under the good pleasure of His Most Christian Majesty, and of him who will govern in his behalf; and this on pain of incurring his resentment and the efforts of his arms." The speech was closed by the leader's shout of "Vive le Roi!" which was taken up and echoed by the soldiers; and the deafening yells of the savages mingled with and swelled the acclamation. Then Father Allouez harangued the red auditory. After a reverent mention of the cross as the symbol of the holy religion which he was endeavoring to establish among them, he continued: "Look at this post, to which are fixed the arms of the great chief of France, whom we call king. He lives across the sea. He is chief of the greatest chiefs, and has no equal on earth. All the chiefs whom you have ever seen are but children beside him. He is like a great tree, and they are but the little herbs that one walks over and tramples under foot. You know Onontio,† that famous chief at Quebec; you know, and you have seen, that he is the terror of the *Iroquois*, and that his very name makes them tremble since he has laid their country waste and burned their towns with fire. Across the sea there are ten thousand Onontios like him, who are but warriors of our great king of whom I have told you. When he says, 'I am going to war,' everybody obeys his orders; and each of these ten thousand chiefs raises a troop of a hundred warriors, some on sea, and some on land. Some embark in great ships such as you have seen at Quebec. Your canoes carry only four or five men, or at the most ten or twelve; but our ships carry four or five hundred, and sometimes a thousand. Others go to war on the land, and they are so numerous that if they should stand in a double line, they would reach from here to Mississaugunk, which is more than twenty leagues away. When our king assaults his enemies he is more terrible than the thunder; he makes the earth shake; the sky and the sea are on fire with the flash of his cannon; he goes in the midst of his warriors covered with the blood of his enemies, whom he slays in such numbers that he does not count them by the scalps, but by the streams of their blood. The number of the prisoners whom he takes is so great that he makes little account of them, but lets them go where they will, to show that he is not afraid of them. No one now dares make war on him. All the nations beyond the sea have submitted to his power and have humbly asked for peace. Men come from every part of the world to listen to him and admire him. All that is done on the earth is decided solely by him." Again the savages yelled their approval and admiration; again the soldiers shouted "Vive le Roi!" and the French occupation of the lake was complete, so far as this formal act of the military and priestly power could make it.

\*Some accounts make the date of this event some two or three years later.

† The name given by the Indians to the French Governor of Canada.

But although, as has been shown above, the zeal and enterprise of the French traders and priests had led them as far to the west and north as the waters of the Wisconsin River and to the head of Lake Superior, and though the French officer, St. Lusson, had taken verbal possession of an indefinite extent of country, embracing both that which had then been and that which might afterwards be discovered, it seems quite clear that the great body of Lake Michigan—all that part lying south of the mouth of Green Bay—was yet an unknown sea, whose eastern and southern shores had never been visited by any other people than the native Indians. It is not certain, however, as to who were the first white explorers of these waters and this wilderness, or what was the precise time when such discovery and exploration was made. These questions are matters of some doubt, and must probably remain so.

In some historical accounts of this region it has been stated that in 1669 the Jesuit fathers Marquette, Dablon, and Allouez set out in canoes and made a circuit of Lake Michigan, discovering and entering the stream now known as the St. Joseph River. This account, however, seems improbable for a number of reasons, among which is the fact that in the year named Father Marquette was located at the St. Esprit mission, at the western end of Lake Superior, and during the summer months was engaged in a tour of discovery around the shores of that lake. There is also the significant fact that when St. Lusson set up the arms of France at the Saut Ste. Marie in June, 1671, he announced that he thereby took possession in the name of his king, of Lakes Huron and Superior, but made no mention of Lake Michigan (or Lake of the *Illinois*, as it was earliest known among the French), as it seems reasonable to suppose that he would have done if the existence of such a lake had then been known. And if the omission had been made through inadvertence, there were Dablon and Allouez (two of the alleged explorers of the lake two years before) present to correct him, and to cause their discovery to be included in the announcement of occupation. Still another circumstance tending to the same conclusion is the following: In May, 1670, two Sulpitian priests, Fathers Galinée and Dollier de Casson, came up through Lake Huron and reached the Saut Ste. Marie, where they found Fathers Dablon and Marquette in charge of the mission. Remaining there a short time, they then returned to Montreal by way of Lake Nipissing and the Ottawa River, and after their return Galinée made a map purporting to be of the lake region which they had visited. On that map the lower peninsula of Michigan did not appear, nor was Lake Michigan portrayed, except the north part of it as far as Green Bay, which part was made to appear as merely a prolongation of Lake Huron, and named, with the last mentioned, as "*Michiganeu ou Mer Douce des Hurons*." As Galinée had then just returned from a visit to Dablon and Marquette, it is difficult to believe that he could have remained ignorant of the result of that exploration if it had really been made by them at the time stated; and it is equally improbable that he would have omitted to place Lake Michigan upon his map if he had been aware of its existence.

In the Jesuit map of "*Lac Tracy ou Supérieur*," how-

ever (published soon after Galinée's map), the northern part of the lower peninsula of Michigan is shown;\* but the first map in which the lake and peninsula were laid down with anything like accuracy in their whole extent was one made in 1672 or '73. The name of the maker of this map is not shown, but Parkman, in his "*Discovery of the Great West*," assumes it to be the production of that fearless and energetic explorer, La Salle.† He mentions it as showing the great lakes, including Lake Michigan (designated upon it as "*Lac Mitchiganong ou des Illinois*"), with considerable accuracy, and as bearing, at a point directly in front of the present site of Chicago, a note of remark in French, of which the literal translation is: "The largest vessels can come to this place from the outlet of Lake Erie, where it discharges into Lake

\* Of this Jesuit map Father Dablon says: "It was drawn by two fathers, very intelligent and observing, who did not wish to incorporate anything except what they had seen with their own eyes. That is the reason why they have only inserted the upper parts of Lakes Huron and Illinois, although they have coasted much on both." That is to say, they only inserted the upper (by which he means the northern) part of Lake Illinois (Michigan), because they knew nothing of it, except in the part which they had coasted, between Michillimackinac and Green Bay. There is no reason to believe that the Jesuits, who were always exceedingly anxious to appropriate to themselves the honor, as well as the advantages, of first discovery, would have omitted any lake or country which they had even partially explored.

† René Robert Cavelier was the name of this famous man. He was the son of Jean Cavelier, a wealthy merchant of Rouen, and was born in that city in 1643. The title or designation of *Sieur de la Salle*, by which he was generally known (but which was not a title of nobility) was obtained from an estate of that name owned by the family, and situated near Rouen. In his youth he was educated by the Jesuits, and, as some accounts have it, was intended for the priesthood. He, however, dissolved his connection with the order, and through all his after-life hated them most cordially. Being of an adventurous turn of mind, and having a brother (a Sulpitian priest) in Canada, he sailed for that country in the spring of 1666. At first he took a grant of land at La Chine, near Montreal, from the seminary of St. Sulpice, and appears to have lived on it in comparative quiet for about three years; but having become fired with a desire for exploration, and having obtained the Governor's permission to conduct an expedition (at his own cost), he set out in July, 1669, with the ultimate intention of discovering and exploring the great river (Mississippi) which Indians reported to exist five hundred leagues westward, and which was then believed to flow into the Vermilion Sea, or Gulf of California. He reached the western end of Lake Ontario, but was there taken sick with a fever. During his sickness a part of his men deserted, and the expedition was broken up; but after his recovery he entered the country of the *Iroquois*, found the Allegany River, and passed down that stream and the Ohio to the present city of Louisville, being then much nearer the Mississippi than he probably supposed. He, however, proceeded no farther at that time, on account of the positive refusal of his men to go on. His expedition through Lake Michigan to the present site of Chicago, and thence to the Illinois River, in 1671, as also his building the first sailing-vessel on the upper lakes, in 1679, and his subsequent journeyings by way of the St. Joseph River, of Michigan, to the Illinois River, are mentioned elsewhere in these pages. He finally reached the Mississippi, and descended on its mighty current to the Gulf of Mexico, in 1681. He went to France in 1683, and in the following year sailed with an expedition bound for the Gulf of Mexico and the mouth of the Mississippi. But, either through design of the commander of the vessels or by accident, they missed the mouth of the river, and soon after found themselves in Matagorda Bay. La Salle and his followers were landed in Texas, where, after enduring great hardships and disappointments, he was deliberately murdered by two of his own men, in March, 1687, at the age of forty-four years. He is represented as a handsome man with blonde ringlets, apparently better fitted for the *salons* of Paris than the forests of the New World; but a thousand evidences show him to have possessed a lion heart, with an energy and hardihood that made him the foremost explorer of his time in America.



Frontenac [Ontario], and from this marsh, into which they can enter, there is only a distance of a thousand paces to the river Divine [Desplaines], which can lead them to the river Colbert [Mississippi], and thence to the Gulf of Mexico." Of this map Parkman says that "it was evidently made before the voyage of Joliet and Marquette [of which an account is given below], and after that voyage of La Salle in which he discovered the Illinois, or at least the Desplaines branch of it." It was in the year 1671 that La Salle made the voyage to which Parkman alludes as above, and which he further mentions as follows: "It appears that the indefatigable explorer embarked on Lake Erie, ascended the Detroit to Lake Huron, coasted the unknown shores of Michigan, passed the straits of Michillimackinac, and, leaving Green Bay behind him, entered what is described as an incomparably larger bay,\* but which was evidently the southern portion of Lake Michigan." This allusion to La Salle's coasting along unknown shores, and entering a "bay" incomparably larger than Green Bay, indicates a strong probability that very little, if anything, was known of the southern part of Lake Michigan at that time.

The voyage in which Joliet and Marquette discovered the Mississippi River, and to which reference has been made above, was accomplished by them in 1673. On the 17th of May in that year, with a company of five other Frenchmen (seven in all), in two bark canoes, they set out from Point St. Ignace, skirted the north shore of Lake Michigan, passed through Green Bay to the mission at its head, thence up the Fox River, through Lake Winnebago, and across the portage to the Wisconsin River, down which they floated, until, on the 17th of June, they emerged upon the broad bosom of the Mississippi at Prairie du Chien. Then they drifted down its swift current by day, camping on the river bank at night (or sleeping in their canoes, moored in the stream, for fear of hostile Indians), for more than four weeks, until they reached the mouth of the Arkansas River, whence, on the 17th of July, they again turned their faces northward, and worked slowly and laboriously up the great river to the mouth of the Illinois, which they entered, and passed up to an *Illinois* village, mentioned by Marquette as Kaskaskia, which was near the site of the present village of Utica. There a chief offered to guide them to the great lake of the *Illinois* (Michigan). The offer was gladly accepted; the party followed up the Desplaines River and across the short portage to the present site of Chicago,† where they embarked on the lake, and reached the Green Bay mission in the latter part of September, after an absence of about four months.

Father Marquette had formed the project of establishing a Jesuit mission at the Indian town which he had discovered on his return from the Mississippi, and had promised the *Illinois* chiefs that he would soon return to them for

\* "Il reconnoit une baie incomparablement plus large" is the language of the French account.

† It has been stated, in some accounts, that they returned by the St. Joseph River, but Parkman says distinctly that their route was by Chicago,—a fact which he learned from the original narrative, written in French. On his next journey Marquette returned by the St. Joseph.

that purpose. In pursuance of this plan, he set out from Green Bay mission on the 25th of October, 1674, accompanied by two Frenchmen and a number of *Pottawatamie* and *Illinois* Indians; all embarked in ten canoes. They proceeded to Sturgeon Cove, crossed the portage, thence to Lake Michigan, and paddled along the shore of the lake to the Chicago River, which they entered, and continued their way to a point some five or six miles inland, where they halted; for the holy father had become too sick and weak to proceed farther. His illness continued unabated, so that he was obliged to pass the winter in that place; but at the end of March, 1675, having sufficiently recovered to be able to resume the journey, he started with his followers, descended the Desplaines River, and proceeded to the *Illinois* village by the route over which he and Joliet had returned from their Mississippi expedition in the fall of 1673.

He was received with great cordiality and rejoicing by the Indians of the *Illinois* tribe, and at a grand council, convened at his request, there were said to have been assembled five hundred chiefs and old men, three times that number of young men and warriors, and a vast concourse of women and children. Here he made his object known; he "displayed four large pictures of the Virgin, harangued the assembly on the mysteries of the faith, and exhorted them to adopt it." In short, he there laid the foundation of a mission which he named the Immaculate Conception. But his malady had returned in an aggravated form, and, feeling that his days were numbered and nearly finished, he decided to return at once to the north, hoping to reach St. Ignace, and to die there under the shadow of its mission cross. So, about the middle of April, he set out, accompanied by his two Frenchmen,—Pierre and Jacques,—and with several Indian guides, to go to Lake Michigan by a different route from that over which he had passed in his previous journeys, intending to strike the lake on its eastern side, and to pass northward along that shore to Michillimackinac.

The sick priest and his party took their way up the Illinois River to the mouth of the Kankakee (then called by the Indians Teankakeek), and thence up the latter stream to a point near its head, where they landed and crossed a portage of five or six miles in length, which brought them to the waters of a stream to which they gave the name of "River of the *Miamis*," because they found the principal village of that Indian tribe located a short distance south of it, on the portage. The Indian name which Marquette bestowed on the river continued to be used by the French explorers and priests for something more than a quarter of a century after that time, and is found applied to the stream in their accounts of operations in this region until about the year 1703; but in the following pages the later and present name—St. Joseph—will be used without further explanation, to avoid obscurity of meaning, and circumlocution.

The place where the Jesuit and his followers reached the St. Joseph is at or near the present city of South Bend, Ind., and from that point they passed down the river in their canoes to its mouth, where the village of St. Joseph now stands. There is no doubt that Marquette and his two voyageurs were the first white men who explored this

river for any considerable distance, and it is not improbable, though it is not certain, that they were the first of European birth or descent who ever knew definitely of its existence.

From the mouth of the St. Joseph, Marquette and his two French boatmen moved northward along the eastern border of the lake, where no sign of civilization or life relieved the dreary monotony of the wild and lonely coast. The priest, though rapidly sinking, still hoped to reach the shelter of his beloved St. Ignace; but when, on the 19th of May, they came to the mouth of a small stream that enters the lake a short distance south of Sleeping Bear Point, in the present county of Leelanaw, he felt that the hour of his departure was near at hand, and asked his companions to land, and take him on shore to die. They complied with his request, erected a rude shelter of bark near the shore, and tenderly brought him to it. Knowing that he had but a few hours more to live, he calmly gave directions as to the manner of his burial, administered the sacrament to his humble but faithful friends, and died the same night in perfect peace and with the names of the Saviour and the Blessed Virgin on his lips. His followers buried him there in accordance with his directions, and then, bidding adieu to the spot, hastened to Michillimackinac to recount the events of the journey and its sad ending to the holy fathers at St. Ignace. In the spring of the following year the remains of Marquette were disinterred by some *Ottawa* Indians, who had been his religious pupils at St. Esprit, and who carried the bones to St. Ignace, where they were buried with great solemnity and ceremony beneath the mission chapel.

Marquette's voyage down the St. Joseph was a most interesting event in itself, both because it was the first time that the river, from its mouth to the portage, had been passed over by Europeans, and because this had been done by the famous Jesuit in the last days of his life, when the chill and shadow of approaching dissolution was already upon him; but it was still more important because by this means the route was discovered, over which the far more vigorous explorer, La Salle, was to pass, by way of the harbor and river of St. Joseph, to the Illinois, the Mississippi, and the sea.

La Salle at this time was living on his seigniorial possessions at the eastern end of Lake Ontario, but the intelligence of Marquette's discovery had caused all his ambition for exploration to flame up anew, and he at once resolved to outdo the exploit of the Jesuit by following the Mississippi from the country of the *Illinois* to its ocean outlet. He still believed that a passage might be found through it to the Vermilion Sea, and thence to China and Japan; and he also had an eye to the vast and profitable trade which might be prosecuted with the tribes in its valley, of which trade it was a part of his project to secure a monopoly. Besides, he would gain high honor and favor by extending the dominion of his king and being the means of establishing the holy Catholic religion among the Indians of the remote West. He was always a zealous supporter of the Church, though he preferred that the missionary field should be occupied by the fathers of the Récollet order

rather than by the Jesuits, whom he thoroughly disliked and distrusted.

Having digested and matured his plans, he went to France in the year 1677 and procured an interview with the prime minister, Colbert, to whom he unfolded his views. He was well received, and with little difficulty obtained authority from the king to prosecute his proposed exploration, on condition that it was to be done at his own expense. His own slender resources being wholly insufficient for the purpose, he supplemented them by loans, which he obtained without great difficulty from his wealthy relatives and friends; and, having done this and completed all necessary preparations, he sailed from France for Canada, July 14, 1678, bringing with him tools, cordage, naval stores, and all the articles necessary for the building and equipping of a vessel or vessels upon the lakes, as well as a considerable stock of merchandise suitable for Indian trade. There also came with him and in his employ thirty men—sailors, mechanics, and laborers—as assistants in the schemes he had in view; and he was accompanied by Henri de Tonty,\* an Italian officer, who had lost a hand in the wars of his native country. He was engaged by La Salle as a lieutenant or second in command, and he faithfully and fearlessly performed the duties of that position.

On his arrival in Canada, La Salle lost no time in commencing preparations for the business he had in hand. He immediately sent out fifteen men to the "Lake of the *Illinois*,"† to open trade with the Indians and to collect provisions for the use of the expedition. Then he named the Niagara River as a point of rendezvous, and ordered the remainder of his company forward to that point, for which they started on the 18th of November. La Salle and Tonty followed soon after, and, having obtained the consent of the neighboring Indians, a stockaded warehouse was commenced and preparations were made for the building of a vessel on Lake Erie. This work was vigorously prosecuted during the winter, and at the opening of spring the vessel was launched in the Niagara River, about two leagues above the Falls. Soon afterwards she was moved up the river to Black Rock, and there completed, rigged, and equipped. She was of about forty-five tons' burden‡ and armed with five small cannon; but the Indians who flocked to see her regarded her with as much wonder, admiration, and fear as if she had been a ship-of-the-line. She was named by her

\* Several writers, in their accounts of La Salle's voyages, have spelled this name Tonty. Parkman, however, who has examined original documents bearing Tonty's signature, says he signed his name in the Gallicized form, which has accordingly been adopted in these pages.

† The earliest name given to Lake Michigan by the French was "Lake of the *Illinois*," because it afforded access to the country of the *Illinois* tribe of Indians. The Jesuit Allouez gave it the name of Lake St. Joseph, in 1676, and the Franciscan priest, Membre, who accompanied La Salle in his expedition of 1679, named it Lake Dauphin. These names, however, do not appear to have been adopted to any great extent among the French. Allouez gave its Indian name as *Machigamegon*, but Daillon wrote it *Mitchigamou*.

‡ This is the tonnage given by Hennepin in his narrative of 1683. In a later edition he gives it as sixty tons, which many later writers have given as the correct size. Parkman, however, who is the highest authority in the matter, considers the smaller figure to be the correct one.



commander the "Griffin,"\* and was the first sailing-vessel that ever floated on the lakes above Niagara.

The commander of the "Griffin" had encountered so many obstacles and delays in his preparations for the expedition, that nearly eight months elapsed from the time when the vessel's keel was laid before she was ready to commence her perilous voyage. Her company consisted of La Salle, twenty-nine French followers,—sailors, artisans, and other employes,—one Indian hunter of the *Mohican* tribe, well skilled in woodcraft, and three Franciscan friars, Fathers Louis Hennepin, Zenobe Membré, and Gabriel Ribourde, the first named being mentioned as the historian of the expedition.

On the 9th of August, 1679, the anchor of the "Griffin" was hoisted, her sails set to a favoring breeze, and she stood boldly out among the billows of Lake Erie, bound for a passage through unknown waters to a port (which she never reached) now known as the harbor of St. Joseph, on Lake Michigan. Three days were passed in traversing the length of Lake Erie, and on the fourth day the little craft entered Detroit River, where she took on board the lieutenant, Tonty, who had been sent on in advance early in the summer to look after the men who had been ordered West in the preceding fall.

Passing up through the lake and river of St. Clair, the expedition emerged upon the waters of Huron, where a violent storm was encountered, during which the "Griffin" was in imminent danger of foundering; but the gale finally abated, and in due time she came to anchor in front of the Jesuit mission of St. Ignace, at Michillimackinac. Here La Salle found four of the men whom he had sent forward to open trade and collect supplies. These had treacherously appropriated the merchandise entrusted to them, and had commenced trading on their own account. La Salle arrested them and took them on board, and, having learned that several other deserters were at the Saut Ste. Marie, he dispatched Tonty to that place with orders to capture them with their plunder, and then to proceed up the east shore of Lake Michigan and rejoin the party at the mouth of the Miamis (St. Joseph) River.

Having made these dispositions, La Salle left St. Ignace and sailed westward to an island at the mouth of Green Bay, where he found several other men of his advance party, who had been faithful and had collected a large and valuable lot of furs. He therefore decided to send the vessel immediately back to Niagara with these furs, which were to be transported thence to Montreal to satisfy in part the demands of his many and clamorous creditors in Canada. So the merchandise was placed on board the "Griffin," and on the 18th of September she sailed for Niagara, with orders to return with all practicable dispatch to the St. Joseph River, where the party would be found awaiting her arrival.

When the "Griffin" and her crew had departed, La Salle, with the remainder of his company,—viz., the three friars, ten other Frenchmen, and the *Mohican* hunter,—left the island in four large canoes and proceeded southward. They

passed along the west shore of the lake, paddling by day and bivouacking on shore at night, always on their guard against savages, and sometimes compelled to remain for several days at a time on an island or the main land, on account of storms upon the lake. Their progress was slow and laborious, but early in October they reached the place where Milwaukee now stands, and about a week later passed the present site of Chicago. If, from a point between these two places, they could have crossed the lake on a direct course to their destination at the mouth of the St. Joseph, it would have shortened their route and lightened their labor materially; but this, of course, it would have been madness to attempt at that inclement season, even if their canoes had been burdened with none other than their living freight; but in this case they carried a heavy additional load, consisting of arms, merchandise, a blacksmith's forge, and a variety of other necessary implements and tools. So the voyagers kept on their way near the shore, around the southern curve of the lake (meeting near its head a large party of *Outagamie* or *Fox* Indians, who at first showed hostility, but were soon brought to apparent friendliness by a judicious display of force); turned northward, passed the present site of Michigan City and New Buffalo, and on the 1st of November moored their canoes in safety within the harbor of St. Joseph.

It was the intention of La Salle to make this the base of his operations and his vessel's principal port on Lake Michigan. In the royal permission given him to prosecute his discoveries he was empowered to build forts in the newly-found region, and to hold possession of them on certain specified terms, and he was granted a monopoly of the traffic in buffalo-skins,—a new branch of trade which he expected to open in the Mississippi valley with enormous profit to himself,—but he was at the same time expressly prohibited from engaging in the fur-trade with the *Ottawas* or other Indian tribes of the upper lakes. We have seen, however, that one of his first acts was to violate this condition, by the collection of the large lot of furs with which the "Griffin" sailed from Green Bay, and there is no doubt that it was his intention to continue the traffic in defiance of the prohibition, and to establish a post at this point to secure the trade of the Indian tribes of the neighboring country.

Immediately after his arrival he commenced the construction of a fort, or stockaded enclosure of logs, on the bluff bank of the St. Joseph, though his men demurred and objected strongly to the delay, wishing to push on at once to the *Illinois* villages, so as to procure provisions from that tribe before they set out for their winter hunting-grounds. La Salle, however, was immovable in his determination. It was necessary that such a work should be built for defense in case of emergency, and there was nothing to prevent its erection while they were waiting for the return of the "Griffin" and the arrival of Tonty from Michillimackinac. Tonty was to bring twenty-one men with him, and La Salle told his followers here that, though they should all desert him, he, with his *Mohican* hunter and the three priests, would remain until the arrival of the lieutenant and his party. The men yielded, and the construction of the fort went on. At the end of three weeks, when it was nearly

\* So named in honor of Count Frontenac, whose crest bore the figure of a griffin. A carved figure of that imaginary monster adorned the prow of the little vessel.

completed, Tonty arrived, but had with him only ten men, the others having, on account of the failure of provisions, been left some thirty leagues to the northward to support themselves by hunting. The commander immediately sent Tonty back with two assistants to bring them in, but their canoe was swamped in a gale, their arms and provisions lost, and the party returned in a condition bordering on starvation. The men who had been left behind, however (excepting two who had deserted), came in a few days afterwards.

The arrival of these detachments was gratifying to the commander, but he was yet very anxious on account of the "Griffin," which was still absent, though she had had more than time enough to complete her voyage from Green Bay to Niagara and thence back to the rendezvous. But he felt that he could wait no longer for her arrival, and therefore made preparations for setting out on his way to the Mississippi, detaching two men from his party, however, with orders to go to Michillimackinac, there to intercept the vessel and pilot her to her destination. But they were to wait and watch in vain for the white wings of the "Griffin," for she had sunk to an unknown resting-place beneath the waters, and nothing was ever known of her fate.

The force of La Salle now consisted of thirty-three persons, including himself, the *Mohican* hunter, and the priests, and on the morning of the 3d of December this force was mustered ready for departure. The fort on the bank of the river had been completed, and a space around it cleared of trees to give unobstructed play for musketry. The work itself—named by the commander "Fort Miami"—was left without a garrison,\* but it stood ready to give shelter to the advancing force if it should be compelled to retreat before hostile Indians.

The party embarked in eight canoes, struck out into the icy current of the St. Joseph, and paddled briskly up the stream along its marshy shores. After a time they entered a more rolling and wooded country, and at length came to an abrupt turn in the river,—at the site of the city of South Bend,—in the vicinity of which they knew was the eastern end of the portage over which they were to cross to the stream called, in Indian, Teankakeek (Kankakee), one of the head-waters of the Illinois. The Indian hunter had previously gone on shore for game, and in his absence there were none of the party sufficiently skilled in the mysteries of the forest to discover where the portage trail struck the river. The result was that they passed the proper place without detecting it. La Salle then went on shore to find the hunter, but he himself became lost in the mazes of the forest and the blinding snow-storm, and remained through the night. In the mean time the hunter had returned, the trail was discovered, and the party encamped for the night near the river. On the following day they crossed the portage,—some five or six miles in length,—carrying their canoes, baggage, and implements. Arriving at the head-waters of the Kankakee, they embarked, and floated

\*Tuttle, in his "History of Michigan" (page 105), says that ten men were left to garrison the fort, but this is clearly disproved by Parkman, as are also a number of other statements found in the same work in reference to the operations of La Salle and Allouez on the St. Joseph.

down that stream and the Illinois River until they came to an Indian village containing four hundred and sixty lodges, but which was entirely deserted. They helped themselves to corn from the Indian *caches* and resumed their way, passing by the site of the city of Peoria. A short distance below, they found a village of eighty lodges, inhabited by Indians of the *Illinois* tribe, who received the party well at first, but soon began to grow cold and suspicious. La Salle erected a defensive work of logs near this place, and called it Fort Crèvecoeur (Broken Heart), which indicates that he was then in deep despondency, caused by the doubtful attitude of the Indians, the desertion of a part of his men, and the almost certainty of the loss of the "Griffin," on whose safe return so much of the success of his project depended. Under these circumstances he determined to return to Canada for needful assistance; but meantime he commenced the building of a vessel of about the same size as the lost "Griffin," with which, in the future, he expected to explore the course of the Mississippi.

Leaving Tonty in command at Fort Crèvecoeur with about fifteen men, La Salle, accompanied by his Indian hunter and four of his French followers, commenced his return journey on the 2d of March, 1680, and worked slowly back along the ice-bound streams, over a part of the same route by which they came, but struck Lake Michigan at its head, and passed thence along the shore to the mouth of the St. Joseph and Fort Miami, which he reached on the 24th of March. Here he found the two men—Chapelle and Le Blanc—whom he had sent out in the preceding December to look for the "Griffin." Their report having extinguished his last lingering hope of her safety, he ordered the two men to join Tonty at Fort Crèvecoeur and prepared to move eastward with his party across the Michigan peninsula. The incidents of this stage of their journey—which was unquestionably the first ever made by white men through the wilderness of Southern Michigan from lake to lake—are thus narrated by Parkman:

"They were detained till noon of the 25th in making a raft to cross the St. Joseph. Then they resumed their march, and as they forced their way through the brambly thickets their clothes were torn, and their faces so covered with blood 'that,' says the journal,† 'they could hardly know each other.' Game was very scarce, and they grew faint with hunger. In two or three days they reached a happier region. They shot deer, bears, and turkeys in the forest, and fared sumptuously. But the reports of their guns fell on hostile ears. . . . On the evening of the 28th, as they lay around their fire under the shelter of a forest by the border of a prairie, the man on guard shouted an alarm. They sprang to their feet, and each, with gun in hand, took his stand behind a tree, while yells and howlings filled the surrounding darkness. A band of Indians were upon them, but, seeing them prepared, the cowardly assailants did not wait to exchange a shot.

"They crossed great meadows overgrown with rank grass, and set it on fire to hide the traces of their passage. La Salle bethought him of a device to keep their skulking

† Manuscript "Relation des Découvertes," from which the account was translated by Parkman.

focs at a distance. On the trunks of trees from which he had stripped the bark, he drew with charcoal the marks of an *Iroquois* war-party, with the usual signs for prisoners and for scalps, hoping to delude his pursuers with the belief that he and his men were a band of those dreaded warriors. Thus, over snowy prairies and half-frozen marshes, wading sometimes to their waists in mud, water, and bulrushes, they urged their way through the spongy, saturated wilderness. During three successive days they were aware that a party of savages was dogging their tracks. They dared not make a fire at night lest the light should betray them; but, hanging their wet clothes on the trees, they rolled themselves in their blankets and slept together among piles of spruce\* and pine boughs. But the night of the 2d of April was excessively cold. Their clothes were hard-frozen, and they were forced to kindle a fire to thaw and dry them. Scarcely had the light begun to glimmer through the gloom of the evening when it was greeted from the distance by mingled yells, and a troop of *Mascoutin* warriors rushed towards them. They were stopped by a deep stream, a hundred paces from the bivouac of the French, and La Salle went forward to meet them. No sooner did they see him and learn that he was a Frenchman than they cried that they were friends and brothers, who had mistaken him and his men for *Iroquois*, and, abandoning their hostile purpose, they peacefully withdrew. Thus his device to avert danger had well-nigh proved the destruction of the whole party. Two days after this adventure two of the men fell ill from fatigue and exposure, and sustained themselves with difficulty till they reached the banks of a river, probably the Huron. Here the sick men rested; their companions made a canoe. There were no birch-trees and they were forced to use elm bark, which at that early season would not slip freely from the wood until they loosened it with hot water. Their canoe being made, they embarked in it, and for a time floated prosperously down the stream, when at length the way was barred by a matted barricade of trees fallen across the water. The sick men could now walk again, and, pushing eastward through the forest, the party soon reached the banks of the Detroit." Thus was made the first exploration of the overland route between the Detroit River and the mouth of the St. Joseph,—a route which, a little more than a century and a half later, in the early days of railroad projects and schemes of public internal improvement, became the subject of many a debate in the legislative halls of Michigan and very familiar to surveyors and pioneers.

The party crossed the Detroit River on a raft and travelled through the woods to Lake Erie, where they embarked in a canoe and paddled to Niagara. At length, after great hardship, La Salle reached Montreal, where with much difficulty he collected fresh supplies of stores and ammunition, and started on his return journey with a company of twenty-five men, comprising a surgeon, ship-carpenters, and other mechanics, laborers, soldiers, and voyageurs,—everything needed to finish the vessel he had left on the stocks, and to sail her down the Mississippi. His return

This seems to be an error, as no spruce is found in the region through which they passed. It was probably tamarack, which they mistook for spruce.

route was by Lake Simcoe, Georgian Bay, and Lake Huron to Michillimackinac, and thence by the eastern shore of Lake Michigan to St. Joseph River, which he reached on the 4th of November.

On his way hither he had been apprised of the destruction of Fort Miami during his absence, and now he found the report to be true. The men whom he had left at Fort Crèvecoeur, on the Illinois, had deserted, stolen the goods and stores deposited there, and, proceeding thence northward on their way to Michillimackinac, had passed down the St. Joseph and leveled and burned the logs which formed Fort Miami; of which nothing now remained but the charred *debris*. The commander made no stay here, but pushed on in haste up the river and across the portage to the Illinois. He, however, left five men at the ruined fort, in charge of some heavy stores, to wait for his lieutenant, the *Sieur de la Forest*, who, with thirteen men, had for some reason been left behind at Michillimackinac, but with orders to come up without delay to the St. Joseph.

On his arrival at Fort Crèvecoeur,—or rather at the place where it had once been,—La Salle found that it also had been destroyed by the mutineers. His most earnest desire now was to find Tonty, whom he had left in charge of the fort on his departure for Montreal. For this purpose he passed on down the Illinois to its junction with the Mississippi, beholding for the first time the broad, swift current of the Father of Waters. But, finding no signs of Tonty, he turned back in despair from the great river which had so long been the subject of his dreams, and retraced his way up the Illinois. On the 6th of January, 1681, his party reached the mouth of the Teanaka-keek, but, instead of going up that stream over the route by which they came, they took the northern branch of the river; but, soon finding their way blocked by ice, they left their canoes and traveled through deep snow towards the St. Joseph, where they arrived after many days of excessive fatigue and hardship.

Here they found the *Sieur de la Forest* with his eighteen men, including the five who had been left by La Salle in charge of the stores. They had heard nothing of the lost Tonty, but during the absence of the commander they had rebuilt the fort, and around it on the plateau they had

† This old fort—afterwards strengthened or rebuilt by the French government—is supposed to have stood near the edge of the bluff, on or a little north of the spot where now stands the St. Charles Hotel, in the village of St. Joseph. It is said that when the first settlers came here, a half century ago, they found at that place a large open space, which had evidently been cleared by the hand of man. There is little doubt that this was the clearing commenced by La Salle when he built the fort, and extended by his men in the winter of 1680-81.

In recent years, when, in the prosecution of village improvements, a part of this plateau was graded down, a number of human skeletons were discovered buried here. It is said that on some of these the hair was found in a good state of preservation, and that in one or two instances there were decayed remnants of what appeared to have been silken robes, indicating, as was believed, that the wearers had been priests; also, that there were found "silver brooches," which appeared to have been worn on the person, and seemed to show that the wearer was of considerable rank and consequence. But an examination of the old account books of William Burnett, the trader, who located on the St. Joseph about 1785 (as will be mentioned hereafter), explains this "silver-brooch" question, and divests it of all its imaginary significance, for in the invoices of that trader's stock the



cleared a considerable area of ground for planting in the following spring. Besides this, they had constructed a saw-pit, and had already sawed out (by hand) the timber and plank for a new vessel. This was, unquestionably, the first project for the building of vessels ever commenced on the St. Joseph, or within the limits of the counties of Berrien and Van Buren, as it was also probably the first attempt of the kind made at any point on Lake Michigan.

The winter of 1680-81 was spent by La Salle at his headquarters, Fort Miami. "Here," says Parkman, "he might have brooded on the redoubled ruin that had befallen him,—the desponding friends, the exulting foes, the wasted energies, the crushing load of debt, the stormy past, the black and lowering future. But his mind was of a different temper. He had no thought but to grapple with adversity, and out of the fragments of his ruin to rear the fabric of a triumphant success."

The banks of the St. Joseph at that time presented a new scene, and a strange one for this wilderness. Here, domiciled within the log inclosure of the fort, were La Salle and La Forest, with a company of twenty-five Frenchmen and the Indian hunter who had followed the commander's fortunes so long and faithfully. The clearing, the piles of freshly-sawed planks and ship-timber, and the presence of so numerous a company of white men, must have given the place a decided appearance of civilization. And, as a background and contrast to the picture, there were seen near the fort the bark wigwams of a band of Eastern Indians, who were, says Parkman, "exiles from their homes and strangers in this Western world; a band of refugees, chiefly *Abenakis* and *Mohicans*, driven from their native seats, who had roamed into these distant wilds and were wintering in the friendly neighborhood of the French."

The *Shawanoes*, living in the valley of the Ohio, had heard of the presence of the French on the St. Joseph in the winter of 1680-81, and in the following spring a chief of that tribe came to Fort Miami to ask their protection against the fearful *Iroquois*, of whose attack they stood in constant dread. Their chief promised to come to the fort in the following autumn with all his band, which numbered two hundred warriors. No account is found of his subsequent appearance on the St. Joseph, but the *Shawanoes* did afterwards join the Indian settlements under protection of the French in Illinois.

On the first of March, 1681, while the face of the country was yet covered by the snows of winter, the commandant set out with La Forest and nineteen men (leaving the remainder at Fort Miami), bound on another mission to the *Illinois*, to induce the Indians to make peace among the

item of "silver brooches" occurs oftener than any other, excepting only the item of "spirits." And not only are they mentioned frequently, but in great numbers; as many as one thousand of the large size and eleven hundred of the second size being sent at one time by one of Burnett's agents (Baptiste Lalime) when he left St. Joseph on a trading trip to the Kankakee; so that these "silver" trinkets must have been nearly as plenty among the Indians of this region (during Burnett's time) as leaves are supposed to have been in Vallombrosa. The cost of the "silver brooch" appears from Burnett's books to have been about twenty cents, though this may have been the cost price. There is nothing very strange, then, about their being found with Indian skeletons.

several tribes, and to settle at Fort Crèvecoeur under French protection. The St. Joseph River at that time was covered with ice, so that La Salle and his party were compelled to make the journey across the country on foot. They traveled on snow-shoes, dragging their canoes after them, for use upon the breaking up of the ice, which occurred soon afterwards. They reached the *Illinois* country, accomplished the object of the mission, and returned to Fort Miami, but without La Forest, he having been dispatched to Michillimackinac to communicate with Tonty, who had at last been heard from at that place.

Later in the spring, La Salle, with ten men in canoes, ascended the St. Joseph and crossed the portage to the great village of the *Miamis*, with whom his business was similar to that on which he had visited the *Illinois*. Meeting with the same success with the former as he had with the latter tribe, he again returned by way of the St. Joseph to the fort. He had now made the necessary arrangements for safe passage through the Indian country, and for assistance by the tribes on his projected journey to the mouth of the Mississippi, but before commencing that arduous undertaking he must go to Montreal to procure means, material, and men for the expedition. For this purpose he set out with a party in canoes, leaving the fort in the latter part of May, 1681. They passed down the east coast of Lake Michigan to Michillimackinac, and thence along the shores of Huron, St. Clair, Erie, and Ontario to the St. Lawrence, and reached Montreal in safety.

The necessary men and material were collected, and La Salle again traversed the same weary way on his return, reaching his base of operations at the mouth of the St. Joseph River late in November, and having paddled more than two thousand miles in canoes since his departure from the place, six months before. With him returned his brave lieutenant, Tonty, who had been found at Michillimackinac after his weary and perilous wanderings among the savages of Illinois and Wisconsin. The presence of this one trusty companion was more highly prized by the commander than would have been an accession of fifty men to the strength of his force.

During a stay of about a month at the fort, all preparations for the great journey to the Mississippi were completed, and on the 21st of December a part of the expedition, led by Tonty and accompanied by the Récollet father Membre, embarked in six canoes upon the waters of the wintry lake and skirted the frozen shores around its southern curve. La Salle, with the remainder of the party,\* followed by the same route a few days later, and joined them at the mouth of the Chicago River. There they constructed sledges, and loaded the canoes and stores upon them (for the streams were frozen over), and, hauling these, they crossed the portage and passed down the valleys of the Desplines and Illinois Rivers to the foot of Peoria Lake, where, finding the river open, they launched the canoes and embarked. They passed swiftly down the Illinois, and on the 6th of February reached its junction with the Mississippi. "Here, for the time, their progress was stopped, for the river was full of floating ice. The Indians, too, had lagged behind,

\* The expedition was composed of twenty-three Frenchmen and a number of the Eastern Indians who had been living near Fort Miami.



but within a week all had arrived, the navigation was once more free, and they resumed their course." In their way down the great river they met several hitherto unknown tribes of Indians and encountered many strange adventures, but they accomplished the object for which the commander had so long labored. On the 9th of April, 1682, in full sight of the blue expanse of the Gulf of Mexico, La Salle reared a cross and a column inscribed with the name of the French sovereign, and took possession for him of the valley of the river and a contiguous country of indefinite extent, which he named Louisiana.

The expedition returned up the Mississippi and Illinois Rivers to Peoria Lake, and about the 1st of September, in the same year, La Salle again descended the St. Joseph River, on his way to Quebec, from whence it was his intention to proceed to France and report his discovery to the prime minister. But on his arrival at Michillimackinac he received intelligence which changed his plans and caused him to return to the *Illinois* by way of Fort Miami. The journey was made late in the autumn of 1682; and this was the last visit ever made here by the great explorer who planned and directed the first occupation by white men of the valley of the St. Joseph. On his return from the *Illinois*, in the fall of 1683, he took the route by way of the Chicago portage, descended to Quebec, and soon after sailed for France. He never again visited the northern portion of America, but he afterwards, on an expedition to the Gulf of Mexico (originated and commanded by him), landed in Texas, and was murdered there in 1687, as has already been mentioned.

It does not appear that after the final departure of La Salle the river St. Joseph and the fort on its bank were ever used by the French for the purposes which he had had in view,—that is, as a port for vessels coming from Lake Erie and a base of supply for military and trading posts on the *Illinois*. In fact, very little is known of events which occurred during the next succeeding eighty years in the St. Joseph valley, or in any part of the territory to which this volume has especial reference.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE MIAMI OCCUPATION.

The *Miamis* in the St. Joseph Valley—Forays of the *Iroquois*—La Salle's Council and Treaty with the *Miamis*—Removal of the *Miamis* and Eastern Indians to the *Illinois* River—The "Debatable Ground"—Antecedents of the *Miamis*—Their Return to the St. Joseph Valley—Attack and Massacre of the *Miamis* by the *Sioux*—The Mission of St. Joseph established among the *Miamis*—Indian Plot to Exterminate the *Miami* Tribe—Their final Removal from the St. Joseph Valley.

THE history of the savage tribes who, prior to the beginning of the eighteenth century, inhabited the region which now includes the counties of Berrien and Van Buren, is veiled in almost complete obscurity, and nearly the same is true of the Indian occupancy of the same territory during a succeeding period of more than sixty years. The earliest event, the record of which throws any light on the

subject, was the discovery, in or about 1675, of the St. Joseph River and its designation by the French as the "River of the *Miamis*," on account of its course being through the country which was then peopled by that tribe. There is nothing, however, in the old narratives to show that the discoverers found them in any great numbers in the St. Joseph valley, nor is any mention made, in the accounts of La Salle's numerous journeyings up and down this river in the years 1679 to 1682, of his finding their settlements at any point on the stream below the portage. Their principal village was at the southwestern end of this portage, at the head of the Teankakeek (Kankakee) River, to which place, in 1681, La Salle went up from Fort Miami to hold grand council with the chiefs of the tribe. But, although they were chiefly located farther to the southward, and their principal village was outside the valley of the St. Joseph, it is evident that they regarded that valley and the contiguous country as a part of their domain, and held it as such, though not to the complete exclusion of other tribes.

The *Iroquois*, or Five Nations, though living far away to the east, within the present State of New York, had hitherto been the terror and scourge of the Western Indians, and had rendered their country almost uninhabitable by reason of their destructive and bloody incursions. The territory of the *Miamis*, however, had for a time been an exception, because that tribe had been allied with the Eastern enemy in their forays against the *Illinois*. It was doubtless the intention of the *Iroquois*, after having used the *Miamis* to conquer the *Illinois* and other tribes, to turn upon these, their allies, and exterminate them also. Indications of their perfidy had already become apparent. In 1680 a party of *Iroquois*, in returning from an expedition against one of the *Illinois* tribes, had met and slaughtered a band of *Miamis*, "and had not only refused satisfaction, but intrenched themselves in three rude forts of trees and brushwood in the heart of the *Miami* country." The *Miamis* were of course terrified at this threatening demonstration on the part of the fierce *Iroquois*, whom they, in common with the other tribes, believed to be as invincible as they were sanguinary.

It was while this state of affairs existed, that La Salle seized upon the opportunity to meet the *Miamis* in council at their village, as before mentioned. The object which he had in view was to induce them to make peace with the *Illinois* nation, and to place themselves under the protection of the French, on the *Illinois* River, where he proposed to establish a strong central post, to congregate around it a large number of tribes friendly to the French, and to band them all in a defensive alliance against the irruptions of the dreaded Five Nations. When he came to the *Miamis'* village, on the occasion of the council, he found there "a band of *Iroquois* warriors, who had been for some time in the place, and who, as he was told, had demeaned themselves with the insolence of conquerors." He met these warriors with a menacing arrogance which eclipsed their own, and so completely browbeat and cowed them by his threats that they stole away from the village under cover of night.

The *Miamis*, who had stood in the greatest dread of

their fierce visitors, were amazed at this result, and in the council which followed they readily yielded to the proposals of the French leader, whom they regarded as a superior being. After he had addressed them, in their own tongue, in a speech which was at once eloquent, complimentary, and convincing, and had further won their hearts by presents of clothing, hunting-knives, guns, and wampum belts, the whole assemblage gave vent to yells of satisfaction, and the chiefs replied to his overtures, "We make you the master of our beaver and our lands; of our minds and our bodies. We cannot wonder that our brothers from the East wish to live with you. We should have wished it too, if we had known what a blessing it is to be the children of the great king." Finally, they agreed to make peace and an alliance with the *Illinois*, and to remove to the neighborhood of Peoria Lake, there to live under French protection. In accordance with this agreement they vacated their country, and removed to that place in 1681.\* Probably they stood in such dread of the vengeance of the *Iroquois* that they would not have dared to remain here longer if they had been so disposed.

It has already been mentioned that a band of Eastern Indians had built their bark wigwams near the mouth of the St. Joseph in the autumn of 1680, and passed the succeeding winter there, evidently for the purpose of availing themselves of the protection of Fort Miami and its French garrison. At the *Miami* village there was found a much larger band, in which there were a few Virginia Indians, but of whom the majority were *Narragansetts*, from Rhode Island, intermixed with *Mohicans*, *Abenakis*, and other New England tribes, who had, perhaps, some of them, fought under King Philip, and all of whom, after the death of the great chieftain, had been compelled to flee from their native hunting-grounds to escape the retributive vengeance of the New England settlers. The band which had wintered at the fort (having apparently been joined by a part of those found at the *Miami* village) remained there during the summer and fall; and when the French started in December on the Mississippi exploration, thirty-one of them (eighteen warriors and ten women, whom they insisted on taking with them to perform the labor, and three children, who necessarily accompanied their mothers) joined the expedition and went with it to the Gulf of Mexico. These, on their return, remained on the *Illinois*. Those of the

Eastern band who remained at the fort on the St. Joseph after the departure of the French, and those who were at the village of the *Miamis*, afterwards migrated with that tribe to the *Illinois* River.

Though the St. Joseph was named by its French discoverers the "River of the *Miamis*," and the country through which it flows was included in the possessions of that tribe, it does not appear to have ever been very firmly held or thoroughly occupied by them. In the narrative, before quoted from, of the journey of La Salle's party across the peninsula in the spring of 1680, it is said of the region bordering, and to the eastward of, the St. Joseph River, that it was a "debatable ground, infested with war-parties of several adverse tribes, and none could venture here without risk of life," and that a war-party of the *Mascoutins* from Wisconsin were at that time roaming in the vicinity. Accounts are also given of *Outagamies* (*Foxes*) and other tribes from the northwest of Lake Michigan, traversing these forests in 1679 and 1680.

The *Miamis* themselves were from Wisconsin, where they and the *Mascoutins* were found located together, on the Fox River, by the Jesuits Allouez and Dablon, in 1670. In the account of the visit of those priests it was stated that the two tribes together numbered more than three thousand, and that the chief of the *Miamis* "was honored by his subjects like a king, and his demeanor towards his guests had no savor of the savage." In the same year the tribes on the Fox River were visited by St. Lason, on which occasion the *Miamis* entertained him with a sham battle and the Indian game of la crosse. His interpreter, Nicholas Perrot, "gave a marvelous account of the authority and state of the *Miami* chief, who, he said, was attended day and night by a guard of warriors."

The circumstances above noticed point to the conclusion that the *Miami* tribe removed, soon after 1670, from the Fox River to the country bordering the waters of the *Kankakee* and the St. Joseph; that their occupation of this region was of but recent date when the French first explored the last-named river; that they never became very firmly or thoroughly established here; and that the tribe emigrated from the lake region to the *Illinois* River in 1681, leaving their former domain unoccupied, and in truth "a debatable ground."

After about ten years' absence they returned to the St. Joseph Valley, and (as is believed, for reasons which will appear in succeeding pages) made their principal settlements on the lower part of that river. Here, a few years after their return, they were assailed by the ferocious *Sioux*, who slaughtered a large number of the less warlike *Miamis*. An account of this massacre is found in a report on Indian affairs, made by La Motte Cadillac to Count Pontchartrain, dated "Fort Pontchartrain [Detroit], Aug. 31, 1703," as follows: "From time immemorial our allies have been at war with the *Sioux*; and on my arrival at Fort Michillimackinac [in 1695], in conformity to the orders of Count Frontenac, I attempted to negotiate a truce between the *Sioux* and all our allies. Succeeding in this negotiation, I took the occasion to turn their arms against the *Iroquois*, with whom we were then at war; and, soon

\* The strength of the *Miamis* in their new home on the *Illinois*, two years after their removal thither, was mentioned as being thirteen hundred warriors. This was based on the report of La Salle to the French minister on his return to France from the *Illinois* country. A few years afterwards they were occupying a rudely fortified village at Buffalo Rock, on the *Illinois* River, a place which was visited by Charlevoix in 1721, and was mentioned by him as "Le Fort des *Miamis*," though the tribe had evacuated the place before that time.

While they remained on the *Illinois* River they became considerably weakened and demoralized, and upon the failure of La Salle's grand project of Indian colonization around the Rock of St. Louis (near the present Peoria), they, with other tribes, left the place. The *Miamis* (or at least a large part of them) returned to settle on their former possessions,—not, however, at the site of their old village on the *Kankakee*, but in the valley of the St. Joseph, and principally near its mouth, where, as we shall see, a mission was established among them a few years later. Before the opening of the mission, however, they were attacked by the *Sioux* and terribly punished. After this a part of them appear to have migrated to the southward.

after, I effected a treaty of peace between the *Sioux* and the French and their allies, which lasted two years. At the end of that time the *Sioux* came in great numbers to the villages of the *Miamis*, under pretense of ratifying the treaty. They were well received by the *Miamis*, and after spending several days in their villages departed, apparently perfectly satisfied with their good reception, as they certainly had every reason to be.

"The *Miamis*, believing them already far distant, slept quietly; but the *Sioux*, who had premeditated the attack, returned the same night to the principal village of the *Miamis*, where most of the tribe were congregated, and, taking them by surprise, slaughtered nearly three thousand and put the rest to flight. This perfidly irritated all the nations. They came to Michillimackinac with their complaints, begging me to join them and exterminate the *Sioux*. But the war which we then had upon our hands did not permit me to listen to their proposition, so it became necessary for me to hold a great council and play the orator in a long harangue. In conclusion, I advised them to 'weep their dead and wrap them up, and leave them to sleep coldly till the day of vengeance should come,' telling them that we must sweep the land on this side of the *Iroquois*, as it was necessary to extinguish even their memory, after which the allied tribes could more easily avenge the atrocious deed that the *Sioux* had just committed upon them. In short, I managed them so well that the affair was settled in the manner that I proposed."

This account given by La Motte indicates the year 1697 as the date of the massacre. There is every reason to believe that the number which he mentions as having been slain by the *Sioux* is a great exaggeration, but there is no reason to doubt that the loss of the *Miamis* was very severe. It was probably at this time that a portion of the tribe fled southward to the valley of the Wabash, which region they continued to occupy, as also the country bordering the Maumee, a stream which was for many years known as the Miami River of Lake Erie.

If, as La Motte's account seems to imply, the entire body of the surviving *Miamis* fled before the onslaught of the bloody *Sioux*, it is certain that a part of the tribe afterwards returned to the St. Joseph; and these were, in later accounts, frequently mentioned as "the *Miamis* of the St. Joseph" in distinction from "the *Miamis* of Ouyatanon" and other divisions of the tribe. The first named appear to have been principally located at the mouth of the river whose name they bore; and here, at about the commencement of the eighteenth century, the Jesuit mission of St. Joseph was established for the purpose of converting them to Christianity.

As to which of the Jesuit fathers was the founder of this mission, there is as much doubt as there is concerning the exact date of its commencement. In some historical accounts it has been stated that it was begun by Father Claude Jean Allouez during the first *Miami* occupancy (and by some placed as early as 1675), and that about the same time, a trading-post was opened and a small force of French soldiers was stationed here; but this statement is clearly erroneous. In the account of the numerous journeyings of La Salle up and down the St. Joseph River

(written by Francis Parkman, who has had access to the original narratives of La Salle, Hennepin, and Tonty) no mention is made of any such mission, post, or garrison then existing at this point,\* nor is there any allusion which can lead to another conclusion than that the great explorer found a complete solitude at the mouth of the St. Joseph (although it was known, through previous discoveries, to be the base of a feasible route to the country of the *Illinois*), and that this solitude remained uninvaded, or at least unoccupied, by any Europeans, except those of the parties under his command, during the period of his operations here, which extended beyond the time of the removal of the *Miami* tribe to the Illinois River in 1681. This seems to be strong evidence against the supposition that any mission was commenced by Allouez or any of the other Jesuits during the first occupancy of the *Miamis*. It is mentioned in the narrative of La Salle's explorations that Allouez was among the *Illinois* in 1676 to 1679, and that in 1680 he was with the *Miamis* on the Kankakee (not, however, having a permanent mission there); and it is therefore possible, that, in journeying to or from the *Miami* village, he may have passed by way of the St. Joseph River. Even this, however, is not probable, for an ill-feeling existed between him and La Salle, and the priest, who always showed a disposition to avoid his enemy, would not have been likely to take a route which would lead him past Fort Miami if he could avoid it. A few years later he was stationed at the mission on the Illinois, and died in 1690; so that, beyond all reasonable doubt, he had lain several years in his grave before the founding of the first mission on the St. Joseph.

Of this mission,—which, as before stated, and as nearly all well-informed writers agree, was established about the year 1700,—the earliest mention which is found recorded is contained in a letter dated Michillimackinac, Aug. 16, 1706, and addressed to the Governor-General by the Jesuit father Joseph T. Marest. This letter, after mentioning the discovery of an *Ottawa* plot in which "a party of warriors were to leave Michillimackinac, and, having engaged the *Sacs* and *Foxes* to join them, intended to attack the *Miamis* on the river St. Joseph," and that the plot had been temporarily frustrated, proceeds: "I asked the savages if I could send a canoe manned with Frenchmen to the river St. Joseph with any degree of safety. They replied that I could, and urged me to do so, seeming to take an interest in the fathers who are there. The truth is, they do not feel at liberty to make war upon the *Miamis* while the missionaries remain there, and for that reason would prefer that they should come to us. I had previously engaged some Frenchmen to carry the news to the river St. Joseph, and to relieve our fathers if they were in any difficulty; but one of them has been so much intimidated by the representations of his friends that he dare not trust himself among the savages.

"As affairs are at present, I do not think the removal of

\* But, on the contrary, Parkman does say, "He [La Salle] led his followers to the banks of the river now called the St. Joseph. Here he built a fort, and here, in *after years*, the Jesuits placed a mission, and the government a garrison."—*Conspiracy of Pontiac*, vol. i. p. 59.



the fathers is advisable, for that [St. Joseph] is the most important post in all this region, except Michillimackinac; and, if the *Ottawas* were relieved from the restraint imposed upon them by the existence of the mission, they would unite so many tribes against the *Miamis* that in a short time they would drive them from this fine country. . . . I have at last found another Frenchman who is willing to go to the river St. Joseph, and I hope the four will now depart immediately. We have reason to feel anxious concerning the safety of the fathers, on account of so many war-parties going down on that side. At least we shall have news from St. Joseph, unless our men find too many dangers in the way." In another letter from Marest to the Governor, dated August 27th, he says, "We are impatiently awaiting the return of M. Boudor and the *Ottawa* chiefs. I have not yet sent to the river St. Joseph, but hope to very soon."

It is noticeable, in the above extract from the letter of Father Marest, that the river on which the mission was located is called the St. Joseph, instead of the Indian name which had been given to it by its discoverers, and which had been adhered to in the earlier writings. This leads to the conclusion that at the time of the establishment of the mission of St. Joseph its name was also given, for the first time, to the stream which had previously been known as the "River of the *Miamis*." It is also shown almost conclusively by Marest's letter that there was then no military post on the St. Joseph. If there had been, he would certainly have felt less anxiety than he here exhibits for the safety of his priests, and at all events he would have known that the garrison at St. Joseph (if there had been one there) would afford the missionaries much better protection than could be given them by the four men whom he purposed sending in a canoe to their assistance. It seems clear, therefore, that the French had established no military post on the St. Joseph prior to August, 1706.

About this time an attempt was made by Indians or disaffected Frenchmen to burn the fort at the newly-established post of Detroit; and in an account which was subsequently given to Count Pontchartrain by La Motte Cadillac, the commandant of the post, there is found a clue as to the time of the final evacuation of the St. Joseph Valley by the *Miamis*. In the course of his account, Cadillac said, "Soon after the attempt to burn the fort, the *Miamis* of Ouyatanon came to Detroit and made an attack on the savages there. They killed an *Ottawa*, two *Hurons*, and a *Pottawattamie*. This act of hostility exasperated all the nations at Fort Pontchartrain, and warlike preparations were immediately made. I succeeded in persuading them to wait a few days, and then dispatched a messenger to the camp of the *Ouyatanons*, who were four hundred strong, telling them, if they did not come promptly and make reparation for this insult, I would go myself and exterminate them. They immediately sent their chiefs to Detroit, replaced the dead with the living, according to their custom, and made large presents to the relatives of those who were killed. Thus a bloody war was prevented. Father Mermet, a Jesuit, is missionary to the *Ouyatanon Miamis*. This attack was made after the *Miamis* of the river St. Joseph had left their villages, and had come to settle at

Detroit." The last sentence in this extract seems to fix the departure of the *Miamis* from the St. Joseph River at about the year 1706.

The post of Detroit had been established in 1701, by Cadillac, who immediately began to use great efforts to induce the remote tribes of Indians to leave the territory they were then occupying, and to locate their villages in the vicinity of the new military post. In this he succeeded to some extent, though against a determined opposition from all the influence and power of the Jesuits, who were his bitter enemies. That the feeling of enmity was reciprocated by Cadillac is clearly enough shown in a letter written by him to Count Pontchartrain from Detroit, Aug. 31, 1703, in which he said, "Thirty *Hurons* of Michillimackinac arrived here on the 28th of June to unite themselves with those already established here. There remain only about twenty-five at Michillimackinac. Father Carheil, who is missionary there, always remains firm. I hope this fall to pluck out the last feather of his wing, and I am persuaded that this obstinate old priest will die in his parish without having a single parishioner to bury him." Cadillac never realized all his hopes in this direction, but he succeeded in drawing a large number of *Hurons*, *Ottawas*, *Pottawattamies*, and other Indians to the neighborhood of Detroit; and it was largely, no doubt, through his persuasions, though probably still more through fear of the threatened attack on them by *Ottawas* and other tribes, as mentioned by Marest, that the *Miamis* were led to take their final departure from the St. Joseph and remove to the neighborhood of Fort Pontchartrain.

### CHAPTER III.

#### THE POTTAWATTAMIE OCCUPATION.

Possession of the St. Joseph Valley taken by the Pottawattamies—Their previous Occupation of the Green Bay Country—Continuance of the St. Joseph Mission among the Pottawattamies—Military Post and Canadian Village at the Mouth of the St. Joseph—Religious Instruction of the Pottawattamies—Their Warlike Spirit, and long Alliance with the French—Surrender of the French Posts to the English, and Indian Hatred of the Latter—Alliance of the Pottawattamies with Pontiac against the English—Massacre of the English Garrison at the Mouth of the St. Joseph by the Pottawattamies in 1763—The Trader Winston—The Pottawattamie Alliance with the British in the Revolution—Langlade's Expedition in 1779—The Trading-Posts of Burnett and Bertrand—"Mad Anthony" Wayne's Punishment of the Indians and subsequent Treaty with them—First appearance of the name of Tipinabé as head chief of the Pottawattamies—Alliance with Tecumseh—Pottawattamies at Tippecanoe—The killing of John Chandonais near the Mouth of the St. Joseph—The Pottawattamies fight with England in the War of 1812-15—Their last Battle and complete Subjugation by the United States.

THE successors of the *Miamis* were the numerous and warlike *Pottawattamies*, who spread themselves not only over the lands of the former tribe on the St. Joseph and Kankakee, but also over a vast area of additional territory, stretching from the vicinity of Chicago, around the head of Lake Michigan, northward at least as far as the mouth of the Kalamazoo, eastward far enough to include the valleys of that stream and the St. Joseph, as well as the head-

waters of Grand River, and southward into Indiana and Illinois. They held firm possession of this broad domain for nearly a century and a quarter, being the dominant tribe of Southern Michigan at the coming of the first English-speaking settlers, and a remnant of them lingering here until within the memory of many persons now living.

The *Pottawattamies*, like the *Miamis*, were first found within the present State of Wisconsin, their location being in the territory bordering the shores of Green Bay. The party under La Salle found them a short distance above the mouth of that bay, on the west shore of Lake Michigan, in 1679, and to him, as to other French leaders, they proved very friendly. Mention is made of one of their principal chiefs, "who in his enthusiasm for the French was wont to say that he knew but three great captains in the world,—Frontenac, La Salle, and himself." This is the first recorded instance of the display by a *Pottawattamie* of that spirit of boastfulness which was a marked characteristic of the tribe in later years.

The time of the *Pottawattamies'* migration from the northwestern to the southeastern shore of Lake Michigan\* is not precisely known, but such facts as have been brought to light in reference to the matter show that it was within the first decade of the eighteenth century. They, as well as the other Indian nations of the Green Bay and Fox River regions, had roamed through the "debatable ground" of Southwestern Michigan for many years, and they were among the first of the tribes who sent colonies to Detroit in response to the invitation of Cadillac, mention being made in official documents of a *Pottawattamie* village near Fort Pontchartrain as early as 1702. A part of the tribe at least appears to have been temporarily located within the territory of the *Miamis* before the final emigration of the latter.

The *Pottawattamies* were fast and faithful allies† of the *Ottawas*, and nothing is more probable than that the offensive combination against the *Miamis* to which Father Marest alludes in his letter of Aug. 14, 1706, was formed with a view to the very object which it accomplished, viz.,

\* At the time of the removal of the *Pottawattamies* from Wisconsin to their later home, at the head of Lake Michigan, a small part of the tribe was, for some reason, left behind at Green Bay. It is stated on the authority of Dr. Lapham, of Wisconsin, that the strength of the *Pottawattamie* tribe in what is now the territory of that State was, in the beginning of the eighteenth century, only twenty warriors. This was evidently the remnant of the tribe who remained after the migration of the main body.

† Sakima, the second chief of the *Ottawas*, having secured pardon for an unprovoked attack on the *Miamis* at Detroit and the murder of a French priest, made a speech of thanks to the Governor-General, at Montreal, June 23, 1707, in which he said, "The *Sacs*, the *Menominees*, the *Mascoutins*, the *Kickapous*, the *Ojibwegons*, and the *Pottawattamies* are people who will like to hear the good news. They are our allies, and are those to whom our old men will give notice, that the land may be united." The feelings which were entertained by the *Miamis* towards the *Ottawas* at that time are shown by this passage in a letter written at Detroit by Cadillac to the Governor-General: "The *Hurons*, *Ojibawons*, and some of the *Miamis* are here, and have in all the councils expressed the following sentiments: 'We will never listen to a treaty of reconciliation with the *Ottawas*. We will hear, on this subject, neither the Governor nor you. Onontio might give us all the goods in Quebec and Montreal, and we would reject them. . . . We do not wish for peace. It must not be spoken of. If you make peace with the *Ottawas*, we shall have bad thoughts.'"

the removal of the *Miamis* and the occupation of their country by the *Pottawattamies*. This gave nearly the whole of the lower peninsula of Michigan to the three tribes, *Pottawattamies*, *Ottawas*, and *Ojibwas* (*Chippewas*), all of whom were leagued together in a sort of confederation, and of whom the first and last named were also allied by consanguinity. The hunting-grounds of the *Ottawas* and *Ojibwas* joined those of the *Pottawattamies* on the north and northeast, and extended thence to the shores of Lake Huron, and along Lake Michigan to the Straits of Michillimackinac.

It was not long after the *Miamis* left the valley of the St. Joseph before the *Pottawattamies* had full possession. It appears almost certain that their occupation commenced immediately after the departure of the first-named tribe, and that the Jesuit mission which had been established for the *Miamis* was continued, without break, for the conversion of their *Pottawattamie* successors. For it was only a few years later (1712) that we find the mission of St. Joseph reported by Father Marest as being in a very flourishing condition, and the most important of all the missions on the lakes excepting that at Michillimackinac. A military post had also been established here, and around the post and mission there had clustered a small settlement of Canadians, some of whom were without doubt engaged in traffic with the Indians, for in those days, and under the French rule, the trader always accompanied the soldier on his advance into the wilderness.

Another mission, or missionary station, was afterwards established nearly fifty miles farther up the river, on its eastern bank, near the southern limits of the present city of Niles. It is certain that this was commenced prior to 1721, for in that year it was visited by the French traveler Charlevoix, but beyond this nothing authentic is known of its commencement or continuance.‡

‡ The writer has visited the University of Notre Dame, at South Bend, Ind., for the purpose of gaining information in reference to this ancient mission. The fathers in charge of the institution received him with the greatest courtesy and extended every facility, but they were unable to afford even the slightest information on the subject, though willing and anxious to do so. This being the case, it seems evident that the particularized accounts which have from time to time appeared in print in reference to this old mission are either purely imaginary, or at best are based on nothing more substantial than vague tradition.

In a history—of which the advanced sheets have very recently been published—of one of the Niles churches the statement is made that "The French Roman Catholic mission [at Niles] was started as early as 1675. Later, Claude Allouez, assisted by Father Dublou [probably having reference to the Jesuit Dablon], reached Niles and removed the mission [1680] to the site of Johnson's brewery. In 1690 Allouez died, but the mission was maintained by Chaudon. In 1759 the French were attacked by the English, and being captured, were carried to Canada. The mission was not re-established for many years. The rude wooden cross on the hill above the dam has been generally supposed to mark the grave of a Father Joseph. It marks the grave of Father Allouez, the first white man dying in this vicinity." This would really be an important item in the history of the old mission if it could, by any possibility, be regarded as authentic. The particularization as to dates and localities in this account, as well as the positiveness of its assertions, would seem to close the door against all doubts of its authenticity, if other statements made by this author were marked by general accuracy, but this, unfortunately, is not found to be the case. In another portion of his narrative occurs this remarkable passage: "The intrepid French Roman Catholic mis-



The report of Father Marest, in 1712, that the mission on the St. Joseph was in a flourishing condition, meant, of course, that the *Pottawattamies* were favorably inclined towards religious instruction, and ready and willing to profit by the teachings of the pious Jesuits. This character they sustained during all the residence of the missionaries among them. The priests seemed to have always found them more tractable and easily managed than were most of the tribes of the northwest, and for years after the Jesuit fathers left them, and even down to the time when the remnant of the

tionary, navigator, explorer, and discoverer of regions in this new world, Father Robert de la Salle, constructed at Fort Erie, then Fort Frontenac, or, as some assert, at Schlosser's Landing, just above Niagara Falls, on the American side, the first vessel that passed (August, 1679) Detroit. This was a schooner, the "Griffin," of sixty tons burden, and was lost, with all hands, in Lake Huron, Oct. 1, 1679." Here we have an even more minute account than he gives of the establishment and removal of the old mission, and of the burial-place of Father Allouez; for we have the particulars, even to the exact date, of the loss of the little "Griffin," whose fate has remained a profound mystery for more than two centuries. Besides this we learn, for the first time, that the "Griffin" was built at Fort Frontenac, "just above Niagara Falls,"—all previous historians having located Fort Frontenac on the north shore of Lake Ontario, near its eastern end. But the most remarkable part of this statement is that portion in which allusion is made to "the intrepid French Roman Catholic missionary, Father Robert de La Salle"! This is the description given of a man who publicly denounced the Jesuits, between whom and himself there existed so cordial a hatred that Father Allouez, when laboring among the *Illinois* Indians in 1680, fled the country on hearing of the approach of his enemy, "Father" La Salle, the "Catholic missionary." Probably, if this author were writing a history of France, he would make mention of the fact that the devout missionary, Father Napoleon Bonaparte, labored among the Russians, and established missions at Moscow and Borodino in 1812.

In the traditions and published accounts which have reference to the old mission at Niles, mention has been made of a defensive work called "Fort Oola," which is represented as having been located at or near the same place, and as being still visible in a slight elevation of earth supposed to indicate the position of the ancient ramparts. Among the various statements that have been made in reference to this "Fort Oola" is one to the effect that this, as well as Fort St. Joseph, was captured by the Indians in the Pontiac war, but there is every reason to believe that this account is erroneous. In the official documents of that time, frequent reference is made to the fort at the mouth of the river, and its capture by the *Pottawattamies*, but never a word in reference to "Fort Oola" or any other fort in all this region; and in a map of the "Forts and settlements in America, A.D. 1763," shown by Parkman in his "Conspiracy of Pontiac," the only forts shown within the bounds of Michigan are those at Detroit, Michillimackinac, and St. Joseph. In 1760, when the French surrendered their American possessions to the English, the French commander-in-chief at Montreal sent orders to the commandant at Michillimackinac to deliver to the English officers the forts at Michillimackinac, Green Bay, and St. Joseph, but mentioned no others; and in the following year, when a detachment of the Royal Americans was sent to receive the surrender of Fort St. Joseph from the French, no such detachment was sent to occupy "Fort Oola."

The old mound (now nearly if not quite obliterated, but said to have been plainly visible when the first settlers came here) is described as circular in form, and some two or three feet high at that time. This fact is fatal to the theory that it was once a French fort, for that nation never constructed circular defenses,—that form being opposed to all principles of European engineering,—nor is there an instance known of their building an earthwork in the Indian country. Far better protection against savage attacks was afforded by stockades than by earthen parapets, consequently they never constructed the latter. The old mound may have been one of the prehistoric works so common in Ohio and other parts of the West, but whether it was such or not, the conclusion is unavoidable that "Fort Oola," as a French defensive work, is a myth.

tribe emigrated to the far West, there were a considerable number of them (including some of the chiefs) who held fast to the religion which the Romish missionaries had taught to their ancestors. In fact, there are yet living in Van Buren County, near the northeast corner of Berrien, a number of the descendants of the ancient *Pottawattamies*, who are nominally within the fold of the Catholic Church.

The *Pottawattamies* inherited the usual characteristics of the Indian, and especially of the *Algonquin* race. Neither in battle, or at the council fire, could they be considered as the equals of the renowned and terrible *Iroquois*, but they were, like their allies and kindred, the *Ottawas* and *Ojibwas*, brave and hardy warriors, sanguinary, cruel, and implacable as enemies, generally treacherous, as were all other American Indians, but often steadfast and faithful friends, as they notably proved themselves to be towards the French. A very marked exhibition of that friendship was made in the spring of 1712, when the red warriors of the St. Joseph bravely aided the French garrison of Detroit in a dire extremity, and helped to save them from massacre.

In the year mentioned, early in the month of May, a large body of *Outagamie* (*Fox*) and *Muscoutin* Indians, enemies of the other Indian tribes of the lakes, and supposed to be in league with the *Iroquois* against the French, suddenly made their appearance before Fort Pontchartrain, in an attitude of unmistakable hostility, constructing a breastwork near the fort, and making other preparations for its assault. The commandant, Du Buisson, had only a force of twenty men for its defense. The camps of his Indian allies—*Pottawattamies*, *Ottawas*, and *Wyandots*—were near at hand, but their braves were then absent on a hunting expedition, and all he could do was to send runners to the distant hunting-grounds, to find them if possible, and notify them of his danger, and then to await the onset of the savage besiegers, whose force outnumbered his more than twenty to one.

On the 13th of the month the enemy assaulted the fort. Their onslaught was most furious, and though the French repelled it gallantly, the commandant knew that without reinforcements he should be compelled to yield at last to the terrible odds against them. But suddenly, in the midst of the conflict, there came from the border of the surrounding forest a sound, wild and terrible, but which was as welcome to Du Buisson and his men as were the shrill notes of the pibroch to the beleaguered ones within the walls of Lucknow. It was the mingled yell of the *Pottawattamie*, *Wyandot*, and *Ottawa* warriors, who had come from the hunting-grounds with all speed to their succor. The volleys from the Indian rescuers, and the fire from the fort, soon drove the besiegers into their own defenses, and relieved the garrison for the time; but the enemy was still unconquered and defiant. The French and their allies attacked in turn, but met a repulse which was followed by a sally from their antagonists. And so for many days the battle went on without decisive results; but at last the *Foxes* and *Muscoutins*, realizing that they were nearly overpowered, asked for peace. This being denied them, they finally, in despair, and after nineteen days of fighting, fled at midnight, during a furious storm, towards Lake St. Clair. Several miles from Detroit, they again constructed a rude

fortification; but the French and allies pursued, bringing with them two small pieces of cannon, and after three days more of fighting, their enemies were utterly broken and put to flight, and the rout then became a massacre. The vengeance of the Indian victors, in accordance with savage custom, was visited alike upon warriors, squaws, and children. Eight hundred of these were said to have been slain, and so great was the havoc made by the infuriated allies of the French that the *Fox* nation was reported as being entirely destroyed.\*

The work of butchery done by the savage allies on this occasion—of which the *Pottawattamies* undoubtedly performed their full share—proves that there was in them the same instinct of tiger-like ferocity which nearly all the Indian tribes were wont to exhibit in the day of victory; the same wolfish thirst for blood which was shown by the copper-colored fiends at Schenectady, Wyoming, and Michillimackinac. But the part which the *Pottawattamies* took in the rescue of the imperiled garrison of Fort Pontchartrain had the effect to strengthen the alliance between them and the French, and to draw closer the bond of friendship, which was never sundered or weakened through all the years of their intercourse with that nation.

Of the history of the *Pottawattamies* during the half-century which succeeded the massacre of the *Foxes* and *Mascoutins*, scarcely anything is known. Doubtless they, with their confederates, the *Ottawas* and *Ojibwas*, were engaged in frequent wars with other tribes, and when not employed in hostilities or hunting they lounged about their squalid villages, drinking the brandy which the French traders gave them in exchange for their beaver-skins, boasting of their exploits and prowess in battle, and listlessly watching the squaws as they prosecuted their rude agriculture. When, in 1744, war broke out between the English and French nations, the *Pottawattamies* of course espoused the cause of the latter, and it appears that they gave material assistance to the *fleur-de-lis*, for there are found in the correspondence of the French officials at Montreal, in the year 1745, numerous references to this tribe as one of their Indian allies. One of these is to the effect that fifty "*Poutewatamies*," fifteen *Puans*, and ten *Illinois* warriors had arrived at Montreal to join the French forces; and another memorandum, dated August 22d, in the same year, mentions the arrival of "thirty-eight *Outawois* [*Ottawas*], of Detroit, seventeen *Sauternes*, twenty-four *Hurons*, and fourteen *Poutewatamies*." These Indian auxiliaries undoubtedly moved with the numerous expeditions which,

\* This statement, however, was untrue, as appears by the extract given below from a letter written by Father Marest to the Governor-General, dated Michillimackinac, June 22, 1712: "No doubt you have already learned the news of the recent attack on Detroit, by the *Sacs*, *Foxes*, and *Mascoutins*, by a canoe sent from that place. The Reverend Father Récollet, of Detroit, informs me that about eight hundred men, women, and children of the *Foxes* and *Mascoutins* have been destroyed. Yet in this large number, I presume, he does not reckon forty warriors, sixty women, and more than a hundred children of the *Mascoutins*, who are reported to have been killed near the great river. . . . Although the number of the dead is very great, the *Fox* nation is not destroyed. There still remain a great number of them near the Bay; some say there are two hundred warriors, besides those who have gone to the *Loguons*."

during that war, were sent from Canada, to carry terror, slaughter, and desolation into the exposed settlements of New York and New England. That war lasted for four years, and during its continuance the *Pottawattamies* appear, from the frequent mention made of them, to have been among the most active of the Indian nations who turned their arms against the enemies of France.

After the peace, which was concluded in 1748 at Aix-la-Chapelle, there came a period of about seven years, during which the *Pottawattamies* were compelled to return to their previous manner of life, and to depend solely for excitement on such opportunities as presented themselves for quarrels with other tribes. But to this period there succeeded another war,—the final one between the English and French in America,—and in this the *Pottawattamies* again took part with their ancient allies. Sargent† mentions them as taking part with the French against the army of Gen. Braddock on the Monongahela, on the fatal 9th of July, 1755, but this statement is not fully sustained by other writers. It is certain, however, that a considerable force of them were summoned to the defense of Fort Duquesne (Pittsburgh, Pa.) in 1758, and that they were participators in the attack and massacre of the English battalion which, under command of Major Grant, had been sent forward by Gen. Forbes to reconnoitre in the vicinity of that French stronghold. Again, in 1759, the warriors of this tribe stood in the ranks of their Gallic friends in an attempt to relieve Fort Niagara, which was held by a small French garrison under command of D'Aubry, and besieged by the English and their *Iroquois* auxiliaries under Sir William Johnson. The latter was fiercely attacked by the relieving force, but the conflict was as brief as it was decisive. The French and Indians were utterly defeated, and pursued for many miles through the woods. Their commander was wounded and taken prisoner, and a large part of the whole force was either slain or captured. This is believed to have been the last field on which the *Pottawattamie* braves ever raised the hatchet for France. The war was virtually ended by the fall of Quebec in September, 1759; Montreal fell in the following year, and by the treaty of peace which succeeded soon after England became possessor of all the territory east of the Mississippi which France had previously held in America. On the 29th of November, 1760, the Bourbon flag was lowered from the flag-staff of the fort at Detroit, and in its place arose the red cross of St. George.

The forts at St. Joseph, Michillimackinac, and Green Bay remained in possession of the French until the following year, for the reason that immediately after the surrender of Detroit the weather became so cold that it was impracticable for the English soldiers to pass Lake Huron. But early in August, 1761, Lieut. Leslie with three hundred men of his Majesty's Sixtieth Regiment (known as the "Royal Americans") reached Michillimackinac and took possession of the fort, and a few days afterwards a detachment of the same force proceeded to the St. Joseph River, and raised the British flag on the fort where the French standard had floated for half a century.

† History of Braddock's Expedition.

The English occupation wrought a great change in the condition and feelings of the Indians. In their intercourse with the French, the latter had always treated them with kindness and even with politeness, and had done all that was possible to secure their lasting friendship,—in which, as we have seen, they had been eminently successful. But with the new lords all this was reversed. The English officers were cold, supercilious, and severe with them, and even the soldiers treated them with undisguised aversion and a contempt which was in the last degree galling to the proud spirit of the chiefs and warriors. It had been the custom of the French to give them presents at stated intervals, but when the English came a different course was adopted, and the presents which the Indians expected were either withheld entirely or given with an exceedingly sparing hand. When the French soldiers left the posts the French traders accompanied them, and their places were in all instances filled by the English, and these, says Parkman, were often “ruffians of the coarsest stamp, who vied with each other in rapacity, violence, and profligacy. They cheated, cursed, and plundered the Indians, and outraged their families; offering, when compared with the French traders, who were under better regulations, a most unfavorable example of the character of their nation.”

These and other causes produced in the minds of the *Pottawattamies*, as well as Indians of other tribes, the bitterest hatred of the English domination, and made them willing and eager to enter the conspiracy which originated in the brain of the great Pontiac, principal chief of the *Ottawas*, and leader and head of the confederacy which was composed of his own nation, the *Ojibwas*, and the *Pottawattamies*.\* The object of this chieftain was to band together the tribes of the Northwest, and by a preconcerted arrangement to attack all the English posts on the same day, massacre the garrisons, and destroy the forts, and thus clear the way for the return of the French; for he “lent a greedy ear to the falsehoods of the Canadians, who assured him that the armies of King Louis were already advancing to recover Canada, and that the French and their Indian brethren, fighting side by side, would drive the red dogs back within their own narrow limits.”

His first movement towards the execution of this plan was the sending out, in the autumn of 1762, of emissaries to the different nations, bearing belts of wampum, and inviting them to join the league. The *Pottawattamies* yielded a willing and eager assent, for it was the chief leader of their confederacy who asked them to assist in the extermination of the hated English. The time set for the striking of the blow was in the following May, but a grand Indian council was first to be held at the river Ecores, not far away from Detroit. This was accordingly held on the 27th of April, 1763, on which occasion, after the unfolding and explanation of the plot by Pontiac, it was adopted by acclamation. Another gathering of the conspirators was held

a few days later in the council-house of the *Pottawattamies* (who, though the home of the tribe was in the St. Joseph valley, had, like other tribes, maintained an outlying village or camp near Detroit), and here the details of the plot were fully matured.

The plan, as regarded the fort at Detroit, was for the leader and sixty of the principal chiefs to demand a council with the commandant of the fort (Maj. Gladwyn), to which, they had no doubt, they would readily be admitted. Each was to wear his blanket wrapped closely about him, and under the blanket of each was to be carried a gun, the barrel of which had been shortened by filing off, for easier and more perfect concealment. During the progress of the council, at a preconcerted signal by the leader, the chiefs were to throw off the disguise, yell the war-whoop, and murder the English officers present. The host of warriors outside,—*Pottawattamies*, *Ojibwas*, *Ottawas*, and *Wyandots*,—who were to be congregated in apparent listlessness around the inclosure, were to await the signal of the whooping and firing in the council-room, and upon hearing it, were to suddenly attack and massacre the unsuspecting garrison. The plot was well arranged, but, unfortunately for its success, the details were disclosed to the commandant by an Indian girl, who stood high in his favor,—an *Ojibway* maiden who lived in the village of the *Pottawattamies*. This is the tradition.

On the day which had been set apart for the execution of the infernal plot,—May 7th,—the leader with his attendant chiefs presented themselves at the entrance, demanded a council, were promptly admitted within the stockade, and the gate closed behind them. But there they saw a sight very different from what they had expected. Instead of a few careless soldiers loitering about the inclosure, they saw the entire garrison under arms and in line, the drummers ready to beat the charge, and the artillerymen standing to their guns on the bastions; and on entering the council-room they found the commandant and his officers awaiting them, each wearing sword and pistols at his side. They perceived that their intentions were known and their plans futile, and after a short interview, made up of hollow protestations of friendship on their part, they left the fort, bursting with chagrin and baffled rage. But the chief was determined not to abandon his design. On the following day he held another council at the *Pottawattamie* village, and it was then decided to attack the palisade, and if unable to carry it, to force its surrender by regular siege.

Accordingly, on the 10th of May the allied savages, to the number of more than eight hundred warriors, made a furious assault, which continued through the entire day, but was unsuccessful. From this time the place was besieged and frequent attacks were made, but all to no purpose, and at the end of about five months, upon receiving intelligence that a British force was on its way up the lake to relieve Detroit, Pontiac withdrew his remaining forces and retired discomfited to the wilderness. His plot, however, though it failed here, was successful with regard to the other remote garrisons, for all the other English posts west of Niagara and Fort Pitt had been destroyed by his allies, and Detroit alone remained unharmed.

\* In the “Pontiac Manuscript,” now in possession of the Historical Society of Michigan, and supposed to have been written by a French priest, the great Indian conspirator is mentioned as “Pontiac, great Chief of all the *Ottawas*, *Chippewas*, and *Pottawattamies*, and of all the nations of the lakes and rivers of the North,—a man proud, vindictive, warlike, and easily offended,” etc.



During the first part of the siege the *Pottawattamies* were active and energetic participators. Their warriors, under lead of their principal chief, Ninavé, were more numerous than those of the *Wyandots*, though less than those of their allies, the *Ottawas* and *Ojibwas*. To the *Pottawattamies* was assigned the work of destroying the fort (St. Joseph) which was located in their own country; and it was a work which they performed in the most thorough and savage manner. The fort was at that time garrisoned by fourteen British soldiers, under command of Ensign Schlosser. Near by was the English trading-house, and the small settlement of Canadians, which had been commenced here prior to 1712. The commandant and his garrison appear to have regarded themselves as secure in their isolated fortress, and to have been taken entirely by surprise when, on the 25th of May, the blow fell. Early in the morning of that day the officer was told that a numerous body of *Pottawattamies* had come in from Detroit, professedly on a visit to their people at St. Joseph, but he was to learn, all too soon, that their real mission was a far different one. Soon the *Pottawattamie* chief Washashé made his appearance, accompanied by a few other Indians, having come to the fort, as he intimated, for the purpose of paying his respects and having a friendly talk with the English chief; but immediately afterwards one of the Canadian residents came to Schlosser with the information that the stockade was surrounded by a crowd of Indians whose appearance and behavior indicated that they had come on no peaceful errand. The commander rushed from his quarters to the barracks, ordered the men to fall in instantly with their arms, and then returned to the parade-ground, where he found a great number of Indians and some Canadians. While endeavoring to persuade the latter to muster for his assistance against the savages, he heard the sound of the war-whoop from within the barracks. It was the signal for attack. Simultaneously with the first quaver of the terrible yell, the swarthy demons inside the inclosure sunk their tomahawks in the head of the sentinel at the gate, and made an entrance for the screeching horde on the outside. They rushed in, and in less than two minutes—as Schlosser afterwards declared—their bloody work was done. Eleven of the soldiers were killed and scalped, and the remaining three, with the officer, were made prisoners, securely bound, and marched to Detroit, where the *Pottawattamie* murderers succeeded in exchanging them with Maj. Gladwyn for some warriors who had been made prisoners by the English at the commencement of the siege.

The trading-post on the St. Joseph at the time of the massacre of the garrison appears to have been owned by, or in charge of, Richard Winston, who, with one or two others besides the Canadians, escaped the slaughter. An extract from a letter written by him to the Detroit traders, and dated June 19, 1763, is given by Mr. Parkman, in his "Conspiracy of Pontiac," as follows: "Gentlemen, I address myself to you all, not knowing who is alive, or who is dead. I have only to inform you that, by the blessing of God and the help of M. Louison Chevalie, I escaped being killed when the unfortunate garrison was massacred, Mr. Hambough and me being hid in the house of the said

Chevalie for 4 days and nights. Mr. Hambough is brought by the Savages to the Illinois, likewise Mr. Chim. Unfortunate me remains here Captive with the Savages. I must say that I met with no bad usage; however I would that I was (with) some Christian or other. I am quite naked, & Mr. Castacrow, who is indebted to Mr. Cole, would not give me one inch to save me from death."

The slaughter of the garrison at the St. Joseph was the principal exploit of the *Pottawattamies* during the series of hostilities generally known as the siege of Detroit. They soon after professed to have become weary of fighting, and finally asked for peace, which was granted by Major Gladwyn. They, with the *Wyandots*, pretended to withdraw from the struggle, but this was only an exhibition of their characteristic treachery, for in two weeks afterwards both *Wyandots* and *Pottawattamies* took part in the attack on Captain Dalzell's force, who were coming to aid Gladwyn; and on the 31st of July they were again found in the savage ranks at the slaughter of Bloody Run. A little more than a month after that time they were engaged in the attack on the schooner "Gladwyn," and sustained very severe loss at the hands of the brave crew. After that affair they did very little fighting during the continuance of the siege, and probably very little if any ever afterwards under Pontiac. They did, however, fight most fiercely to avenge his death, which came by assassination at Cahokia, near St. Louis, in 1769. The murder was charged to the *Illinois* Indians, and when this became known among the warriors of the lakes all were eager to take revenge, for their fierce blood boiled at the thought that the contemptible *Illinois*, whom they had always looked on as their inferiors, should dare to slay their redoubtable chieftain. *Ottawas*, *Pottawattamies*, *Ojibwas*, and several other tribes sent their warriors on the errand of vengeance, and before they returned the *Illinois* were almost entirely exterminated. It was during this retributive campaign that a party of *Pottawattamie* warriors assailed a band of *Illinois* and drove them to their stronghold, which being unable to carry by assault, they besieged until the miserable inmates all died by starvation. The place was afterwards from this circumstance called "Starved Rock." Its location is on the Illinois River.

In 1765, George Croghan—who had been a trader among the Western tribes, and who thoroughly understood their feelings and peculiarities—was sent forward from Niagara "to reason with the Indians as far as they were capable of reasoning; to soften their antipathy to the English; to expose the falsehoods of the French, and to distribute presents among the tribes by way of propitiation;" that is, to prepare them for the occupation of their country by a stronger English force than had yet been sent there. On this mission he held a council at Detroit, on the 17th of August, with the confederated tribes of the Michigan peninsula. They had been completely humbled by the failure of Pontiac's scheme, and besides this, having acquired many artificial wants since the white men came among them, they were suffering from the suspension of the fur trade, and were really so anxious for peace that they professed their repentance and submission in abject terms. Particular mention is made of a band of *Pottawattamies* from the St.

Joseph,\* who were present at this council, and whose orator in the course of a speech made on that occasion said, "We are no more than wild creatures to you, fathers, in understanding; therefore we request you to forgive the past follies of our young people, and receive us for your children. Since you have thrown down our former father on his back, we have been wandering in the dark, like blind people. Now you have dispersed all this darkness which hung over the heads of the several tribes, and have accepted them for your children, we hope you will let us partake with them the light, that our women and children may enjoy peace. We beg you to forget all that is past. By this belt we remove all evil thoughts from your hearts. Fathers, when we formerly came to visit our fathers the French they always sent us home joyful; and we hope that you, fathers, will have pity on our women and young men, who are in great want of necessities, and not let us go home to our towns ashamed." This speech shows that though they had laid aside all thought of active hostility, they had by no means given up the inveterate propensity for begging, which was universal among all the Indian tribes.

The council resulted in success. Presents were quite freely distributed, and *Pottawattamies*, *Ojibwas*, and *Ottawas* returned to their villages well satisfied. Peace was secured, and with it a friendly feeling on the part of the savages towards their white "fathers." This friendship was never as thorough or as cordial as that which had existed between the Indians and the French, but it was sufficient to hold the red men in alliance with the English until the power of the latter was finally expelled from Michigan.

In the war of the Revolution the *Pottawattamies* remained in sympathy with the British, but it does not appear that they afforded much material aid in the struggle. Some of their warriors, as well as those of the *Ottawas* and other Western tribes (not exceeding six hundred, however, in all), reported at Montreal, and joined the invading army of Burgoyne at the head of Lake Champlain about July 10, 1777. These accompanied the British forces to the Hudson River, and a few are said to have been with Baum at Bennington. But they became restive under the strict discipline which Burgoyne attempted to enforce (in the matter of indiscriminate slaughter for the collection of scalps), and they soon after deserted, almost to the last warrior.

In the winter of 1778-79, the Indian allies of the English were notified to assemble at L'Arbre Croche (Little Traverse Bay), on the eastern shore of Lake Michigan, for the purpose of holding a council and organizing an expedition to set out from that point and proceed by way of the St. Joseph River and through the heart of the country of the *Pottawattamies* (the old route of La Salle and Marquette by way of the Kankakee portage), to reinforce Governor Hamilton, the British leader, who was marching against the American general, George Rogers Clark, the latter having taken possession of the whole *Illinois* country. The tribes did not appear willing to take any further part in the struggle between the white combatants, and

were not prompt in responding to the call. They were, however, finally induced to meet at the appointed rendezvous, where a grand council was held, and after a great deal of opposition and heated debate, in the Indian style, a large expeditionary force was made up, under command of two French half-breeds, Charles de Langlade† and Gautier de Vierville, and embarked in a great number of canoes on Lake Michigan. Skirting the eastern shore southward, the savage flotilla arrived early in the spring at the mouth of the St. Joseph, where Langlade learned that his mission was futile, for the reason that Hamilton had surrendered his force to Clark in the latter part of February and was himself a prisoner in the American camp. Upon the receipt of this intelligence the expedition was abandoned, and the northern Indians returned (probably not unwillingly) to their homes. The *Pottawattamies*, laying aside the tomahawk, remained in quiet and peace in their villages along the banks of the St. Joseph, and appeared no more as participants in the conflict which ended in the independence of the United States.

The trading-post at the mouth of the St. Joseph, which was broken up by the massacre of 1763, was probably not reopened; but soon after the Revolution another was established here by William Burnett, who, as tradition says, was a native of the State of New Jersey. His trading-house was not exactly at the mouth of the river, but about a mile and a half (by its course) farther up the stream, upon its south bank, the spot being indicated by an old apple-orchard, supposed to have been planted by him. Some of Burnett's books of account are still in existence, and have been examined by the writer. They show that he did a very large business with the Indians, furnishing them not only strouds, blankets, utensils, brooches, and gewgaws, but also an abundance of ardent spirits, hatchets, and scalping-knives; in exchange for which he received great quantities of furs of every kind, raccoon skins being largely in excess of all others. The trader's books which have been found cover the period from 1792 to 1802. The older one is entitled "Ledger B," dating from the commencement of 1792 and extending to 1799. If "Ledger A" (which is missing) covered a like period, this would place the date of Burnett's establishment here at 1785, which is doubtless about the correct date. At about the same time Joseph Bertrand located in trade among the *Pottawattamies* some fifty miles farther up the river, but the books above named indicate that the goods sold by Bertrand were owned by Burnett, and that the former was in the employ of the principal trader, Burnett. The presence of these traders among the Indians must have assisted them materially in their warfare by furnishing them with more and better weapons than they had before possessed.

In 1794 the red warriors of Southern Michigan were again on the war-path. Five years before, they had made a treaty of peace‡ with the Americans, but this did not

† The same who, in command of the Indian auxiliaries, fought on the French side against the English at the battle of the Monongahela, in 1755, and who was mentioned as "the person who planned and executed the defeat of Gen. Braddock."

‡ In 1789 the *Pottawattamies* and other Michigan tribes were represented by their principal chiefs in a great council held on the Mus-



deter them from joining the Indian hordes who collected, in the year above named, to oppose the force which the American leader, "Mad Anthony" Wayne, was marching into the wilderness of Ohio for the chastisement of the *Shawanoes* and other tribes who had previously violated their pledges by raising the hatchet against General Harmar. The Indian host, to the number of about two thousand (made up from the three principal nations of the Michigan peninsula and several other tribes, with about seventy white men), gathered on the Maumee River and attacked Wayne's forces at a place about five miles south of the head of the rapids of that stream. But the veteran was well prepared for their reception, and, after a short but hotly contested battle, the Indians gave way at every point, fled in utter rout from the field, and, as was usually their custom when defeated, abandoned the campaign, and returned to their villages humbled, crestfallen, and deeply impressed by Wayne's vigorous manner of fighting and the power of the United States. A great number of Indian warriors were left dead on the battle-field in the valley of the Maumee, and beside every one was found a musket, bayonet, and equipments bearing the mark of a British armory, and of course issued to them from British forts; for it was not until 1796 that Detroit and the other posts in the West were surrendered by England to the United States.

In regard to the military post of St. Joseph very little mention is found of later date than 1763. The forts at Michillimackinac and Green Bay had in the Pontiac war suffered the same fate as this at St. Joseph; but in the account of the re-establishment of the former, by order of Gen. Bradstreet, in 1764, no mention is made of the re-occupation of the latter, nor does it appear to have been garrisoned by the British during the Revolutionary war. Its history must, therefore, be considered as virtually closed\* by the massacre of its garrison by the *Pottawattamies*.

After the deserved punishment administered to the Indian tribes at the Maumee by Gen. Wayne, in 1794, that commander sent messengers summoning their chiefs to council, to which they very readily assented. The head men of the *Pottawattamies*, *Chippewas*,† *Ottawas*, and nine other tribes met the general in council at Greenville in 1795, and there concluded a treaty of peace and friendship with the United States, which was quite faithfully kept for about fifteen years. The *Shawanoes* and other tribes made a large cession of land in Ohio to the United States, but the Michigan Indians were left in undisturbed possession of their territory (except some inconsiderable tracts in the vicinity of Detroit and Michillimackinac), and it was declared on the

kingdom River by Gen. St. Clair, Governor of the Northwest Territory; and there they concluded a solemn treaty of peace with the government of the United States.

\*About the commencement of the present century the United States government sent commissioners to the St. Joseph to negotiate with the Indians for land on which to establish a fort at the mouth of the river (the lands of Southwestern Michigan not having been ceded at that time), but the red proprietors refused, and the commissioners then selected the location at Chiengo, upon which Fort Dearborn was erected in 1804.

† The name of that tribe was originally and properly *Ojibwa*, but in the treaties of the United States it is spelled *Chippewas* or *Chippewas*, which latter is the usual orthography of later years.

part of the government that "the Indian tribes who have a right to those lands are quietly to enjoy them, hunting, planting, and dwelling thereon as long as they please, without any molestation from the United States." Among the Indian signatures to this treaty there appears, on the part of the *Pottawattamies*, the mark and name of Topinabé, who was then the head chief of the tribe, and continued to hold that position and dignity until his death, nearly forty years afterwards.

In the autumn of 1810 the villages of the *Pottawattamies* received a visit from an Indian personage scarcely less famed than the great Pontiac himself. This visitor was none other than the *Shawnoe* chieftain, Tecumseh, who came "accompanied by three other chiefs, all mounted on spirited black ponies,"‡ bound on a mission to this and other Western tribes for the purpose of enlisting them in a league, similar to that in which they had joined with Pontiac nearly a half century before, for the destruction of the whites. His fiery eloquence prevailed, and the *Pottawattamie* chiefs, with Topinabé at their head, promised to enter the combination. We do not find them engaged in actual hostilities, however, until the fall of the following year, when three hundred warriors of this tribe—some from the southwest of Lake Michigan and some from the St. Joseph—attacked Gen. Harrison at Tippecanoe before daybreak, in the morning of the 7th of November. For two or three hours the battle raged furiously; the *Shawanoes* and *Pottawattamie* braves fought with desperation, and many of the Americans were slain. But at length the steady valor of the whites prevailed over the fierce energy of the Indians, and the latter gave way at all points, fleeing for their lives. Being wholly defeated, the *Pottawattamies*, of course, returned with all speed to their villages; and these were so far distant that they escaped all further punishment for the part they had taken.

When war was declared between England and the United States, in 1812, there could have been but little reasonable doubt as to which side the Michigan Indians would join, yet both British and Americans appear to have felt considerable anxiety in regard to the matter, and both parties sent emissaries to the *Pottawattamies* on the St. Joseph to observe their movements, and to do what might be done to secure them as allies. The American commandant at Detroit sent Robert Forsyth with a small party, among whom was Jean Baptiste Chandonais,§ a French half-breed, who had lived among these Indians for a number of years, having been employed here by William Burnett,|| the trader, as early as 1792, and from that time until 1799 at least. He was, therefore, well known here, and on that account an excellent man for the business then in hand. He was usually called simply Baptiste, or more nearly "Battese." The agent sent by the English was John Chandonais, an uncle of Baptiste, and equally familiar with

‡ Wisconsin Hist. Soc. Collections.

§ This Chandonais received a pension from the government during his life for services to the United States in the war of 1812-15. He also received (at the request of the Indians in the treaty of 1821) a grant of two sections of land on the north side of the St. Joseph River.

|| Burnett's books of accounts show this fact.

Indian life and at home among them. He was then in the service of the British, and had come up from Michillimackinac on this errand, having with him a party of about thirty *Chippewa* Indians.

In the account which is given of this occurrence, it is stated that the *Pottawattamies* were about to hold a council to determine the course they would pursue in the impending war, and that the British and American agents had come for the purpose of being present on the occasion. It is not probable that such was the case, but however this may have been, it is certain that the two parties met at or near Burnett's trading-house, and that the elder Chandonais, enraged at finding his nephew there in the interest of the Americans, demanded of him that he should join the British side or surrender himself a prisoner. In short, he was determined that he should go to Michillimackinac by fair means or by foul. Baptiste told his uncle that it was useless to parley, that he would not abandon the American cause nor would he be taken prisoner; and, cocking a double-barreled gun which he held in his hand, he added that if he—the uncle—should attempt to approach him for that purpose, and should pass a certain line which he indicated on the ground between them, he would do so at the peril of his life.

John Chandonais, being a brave and determined man, and probably having no thought that Baptiste would execute his threat, drew his sword and boldly advanced, but the instant he stepped beyond the limit a ball from his nephew's gun entered his heart, and he fell dead on the fatal boundary. The *Chippewas* of the British party rushed to the spot and set up a hideous yelling; but Baptiste Chandonais—who spoke their language as well as his own—met them coolly, and told them that he was sorry he had been compelled to kill his uncle, but that he was determined not to be captured, and that the first one who crossed the line would be a dead Indian; that he did not fear them, for his *Pottawattamie* friends would stand by him and never see him injured (in which he was no doubt correct); and finally that if they would be quiet and make no trouble, and would help bury his uncle, he would give them plenty of fire-water, which would be much preferable to being incumbered with a troublesome prisoner,—even if they were able to take him. Upon this a consultation was held, and they finally agreed, for the consideration of ten gallons of rum, to make no disturbance about the matter, but to allow him and his companions to depart in peace. The dead man was buried near where he fell (the spot being on the farm of the late Capt. Samuel G. Langley, in St. Joseph township), a cross erected over his grave, and then Chandonais and Forsyth left without delay for Detroit. An arrangement had been made with the trader Burnett, by which (as a precautionary measure) the *Chippewas* were not to receive the ten gallons of rum until the next morning. It was delivered to them at that time, and, upon receiving it they set out on their return to the North.\*

If the *Pottawattamies* had not already determined on the course they would pursue in the impending hostilities, they

\* Many of the facts relating to this killing of the elder Chandonais were related by Maj. Forsyth himself to Mr. Jehiel Enos, who is now living in Benton.

arrived at an instant conclusion when, immediately after this occurrence, runners appeared in their villages bearing the announcement from Tecumseh that war had been declared, and asking them to take part with him against the United States. They acceded to the proposal at once, and a band of warriors were soon on the war-path, marching towards the southeast, where, on the 5th of August, they took part, with *Ottawas* and *Shawanoes*, in the attack and slaughter of Maj. Van Horn's command on the river Raisin. Ten days later the *Illinois* branch of the tribe attacked the garrison of Fort Dearborn (sixty-six men and several families, who had already evacuated the work and were marching eastward), massacred about one-half their number, and took the rest prisoners. Probably there were but few, if any, of the St. Joseph Indians concerned in this atrocious affair.

Late in the fall of the same year a force of about five hundred Indians of the Northwest, under command of the afterwards famous chief Black Hawk, and accompanied by a small band of *Illinois Pottawattamies*, under their chief Shaubena,† passed along the southern shore of Lake Michigan, and through a part of the valley of the St. Joseph, on their way to join Tecumseh on the river Raisin. No doubt the sight of this large body of warriors inflamed the ardor of the *Pottawattamies*, and caused their braves to flock to the English standard in still larger numbers, for it is stated by Auchinleck, the Canadian historian of the war of 1812–15, that at the battle of the Raisin, which was fought not long afterwards (Jan. 22, 1813) between the American forces under Gen. Winchester and the English under Gen. Proctor, there were two hundred *Pottawattamies* engaged on the British side, under Tecumseh. They fought with great bravery in that battle, but afterwards enacted a part which might put devils to shame, in the frightful butchery of the prisoners who had been captured there.‡

In the force which, under Proctor and Tecumseh, moved against the American post of Lower Sandusky (now Fremont, Ohio) in the following summer, the *Pottawattamies* were still more numerously represented, about three hundred and fifty of their warriors being present, out of a total of some twelve hundred Indians of all tribes. The assault on the fort was made on the 2d of August by about five hundred British troops, while the Indians surrounded the work and kept up an unintermitted fire on the defenders wherever they could be seen. But the attacking column was completely repulsed by the one hundred and sixty Americans within the fort, commanded by the gallant Maj. Croghan, and soon the red and white assailants retired from the field, defeated. Afterwards, the *Pottawattamies* took

† "Sketch of Shaubena, a *Pottawattamie* chief," in Wisconsin Hist. Soc. Collections, vol. vii.

‡ The *Pottawattamies* and other tribes engaged at this battle are charged with deeds even more horrible than that of massacre, and that, too, by those whose testimony carries great weight. Rev. Isaac McCoy, long a missionary among the Indians of the St. Joseph, says, "From well attested facts we are compelled to believe that the *Pottawattamies*, *Ottawas*, *Chippewas*, and *Miamis* have all been guilty of cannibalism. . . . If the accounts of the Indians can be credited, the last war with England, in which Indians were mercenaries on both sides, was disgraced by cannibalism, the last instance of which we have been informed having occurred near Fort Meigs, on the Maumee River, in 1813."

part in several other engagements, of which the principal and the last was the battle of the Thames, which occurred on the 5th of October, 1813. In this battle they, and all the Indian allies, fought with unusual desperation, for they felt that all their hopes of final success were staked on the success of the day. After the British infantry had given way, the savages still fought on with fierce determination, though against overwhelming odds, until at length Tecumseh fell, and then, knowing that all was lost and further fighting useless, they yielded and fled.

The field of the Thames was the last battle-ground of the *Pottawattamies*. Their utter defeat on that day, and the death of Tecumseh, had extinguished forever all hope of successful resistance to the Americans. They, like the other tribes, sued for peace, and receiving the mercy which they had no right to expect, gave hostages for their future good conduct, retired to their villages,—sullen at first, but thoroughly subjugated,—and never raised the tomahawk again.

#### CHAPTER IV.

##### THE POTTAWATTAMIES OF THE ST. JOSEPH AFTER 1815.

The St. Joseph Indians as they were found by the Protestant Missionaries in 1822—The Effects of Fire-Water apparent in their Poverty and Wretched Condition—Their Superstition and Strange Festivals—Pottawattamie Chiefs and their Villages—Sobriety and Humanity of the Chief Pokagon—His Conversion to the Catholic Faith—Improved Condition of the Indians during the First Part of the Missionaries' Stay among Them—Their Later Relapse to a Worse State than ever—Departure of the Missionaries—Consent of the Pottawattamies to Emigrate from their Homes in the St. Joseph Valley—Pokagon and other Catholic Indians refuse to go—Final Removal of the Rest of the Tribe to Lands beyond the Mississippi.

BETWEEN the time of the subjugation of the Michigan tribes, following the death of Tecumseh, and the time when actual settlement began to be made by whites within the territory that is now embraced in the counties of Berrien and Van Buren, there intervened a period of about fifteen years. During the last half of this period, the Rev. Isaac McCoy spent the greater part of his time among the *Pottawattamies* of the St. Joseph Valley, and some idea of their condition and mode of life is gained from his published narrative, or journal, covering the time of his labors here. There had been, for many years, at least two trading-posts established among them on the river (Burnett's, at near the mouth, above where St. Joseph village now stands, and Bertrand's, at the old village of Bertrand, on the east side of the river, in the present township of Niles), and the access which they thus obtained to the white man's whisky had resulted to them, as it has to all other tribes, in advancing them far on the road to demoralization and wretchedness.

In the very first entry made by Mr. McCoy with reference to this region, he relates that on the 16th of May, 1822, "we reached the French trading-house [Bertrand's\*] at *Parc aux Vaches* by traveling through the rain. I was

sorry to hear that many of the chiefs, whom I desired to see in reference to our settlement in that country, had gone to Lake Michigan to engage in a drunken frolic; a trader having arrived at that place with a quantity of whisky. . . . On the 23d we passed three drunken Indians, lying asleep in the weeds, and also passed many others who were intoxicated." Again, he quotes from a letter written to him, during his temporary absence, by Mr. Lykins, one of his associates at the St. Joseph, to the effect that the Indians in the vicinity had been in a continual state of intoxication for twenty-eight days, and that the traders appeared to have enough liquor on hand to keep them in that condition during the entire spring and summer. This debauchery resulted in frequent murders, of which a large number were committed every year among them, and all, with scarcely an exception, were caused by drunkenness.

The extreme poverty and destitution which prevailed among the Indians at the time when Mr. McCoy first came among them is shown by this entry: "I did not see among them a particle of either bread or meat, excepting a few pigeons which they had killed with sticks. Some deer might have been taken, but they were destitute of powder and lead, and had not anything with which to purchase those articles. Excepting roots and weeds, their only food at this time consisted of corn and dried beans, of which their stock was exceedingly small." It is difficult to understand, however, why they were unable to get powder and lead with which to secure the necessities of life (game), when they apparently found so little difficulty in obtaining whisky from the traders.

In regard to their dwellings, he makes this allusion: "In our excursion [his preliminary visit to the country in the spring of 1822] we called at two lonely little huts, one made of bark and the other of flags. Here I met with a chief from a neighboring village, who, with the rest of the company, appeared delighted with the prospect of our settling near them, and by many rude expressions of friendship welcomed me to their country. The wigwam of flags was circular, about ten feet in diameter, and about seven feet high in the centre. The smoke from the fire in the middle of the hut escaped through an opening above. The door was closed by a deer-skin attached to the upper part." And the condition of its inmates he describes as even more wretched than that of the habitation.

"The vicinity of our place,"† says Mr. McCoy, "had been occupied by the *Potawatamies* from time immemorial. Formerly the tribe, then numerous, generally resided here in one extensive settlement. Many had been buried on the shore of the St. Joseph and in the neighborhood." A principal village of the tribe is mentioned as being situated five miles from the mission. Elsewhere he mentions that "On the 18th [May, 1822] I rode to Menominee's and Pcheekos' villages," and "We halted and conversed a while with the people at Rum's village, and at night pitched our tents amidst a fall of rain;" but does not describe the precise location of any of these settlements, except the ancient and abandoned one first named. "About the Indian villages," he says, "or where villages had once been situated,

\* He had come from Fort Wayne, Ind., and consequently entered the valley from the southward.

† The west side of the river near West Niles.



we often found blue grass,\* which affords some grazing at all seasons. On our journey we availed ourselves of a practice, common to us, of seeking those grassy places, though at the expense of turning out of our way. We lodged in one of the bark huts, but the dreariness of those places in winter can hardly be conceived by one who has not visited them; not an individual is to be seen about them, nor any domestic animals, nor anything which is to be employed for the future use of the unsettled owners on their return at the commencement of warm weather."

The *Pottawattamies* of that late day appear to have been as firmly held in the bonds of superstition as were their ancestors in the time of La Salle and Marquette. In regard to this Mr. McCoy relates the following incident. In the fall of 1826 a large company of these Indians had been collected on the St. Joseph, to attend a treaty-council on the Wabash. "After their company was formed, which consisted of four or five hundred souls, they set out for the treaty-ground, compelled by circumstances to travel slowly. Within the first three days' journey their most expert hunters, to the number sometimes of fifty, with their utmost diligence were unable to kill a deer. They saw game, and often shot at it, but killed nothing. The consequence was that they began to be distressed for food. Soon after the company halted to encamp on the evening of the third day, Saugana, a well-known chief, fell asleep and slumbered soundly through the night. On the following morning he informed the company that in a dream a person had acquainted him with the cause which rendered their hunting unsuccessful, which was an error in Chebass, a celebrated chief, who had been the principal agent in prevailing on them to set off on the journey, and had neglected to make a sacrificial feast before they started. He had started on this journey, the dreamer said, as a white man would, without making any religious preparation; and for this dereliction of duty the whole company had been rebuked by the Great Spirit, to realize the scarcity of food. In order to propitiate the Deity, Chebass must fast that day, and twelve men, neither more or fewer, with faces blacked,—indicative of hunger and want and of their devotion,—must proceed to their hunting; six of them on each side of the trail along which the company had to travel. By the time the sun had risen to a height pointed out in the heavens (we would say about nine o'clock), Saugana said they would have killed four deer. Such, he assured them, would be the fact, because he had seen in the vision four deer lying dead. The hunters set off according to instructions, killed the four deer within the time spoken of, and brought them to the company. A general halt was called. The four deer, including head, legs, and feet, were all boiled at the same time, and feasting immediately followed, in which all participated, excepting Chebass. The feast was considered his, and on that account it was necessary for him to fast until the sun had gone down. Several speeches were made during the festival. About noon of the same day the com-

pany resumed their march, and on the following day they killed five deer and one bear, and during the two or three remaining days of their journey they had plenty."

An account of a *Pottawattamie* festival, at which he was present, is thus given by the reverend missionary: "In the summer of 1825 I attended an Indian festival, which, according to custom, they accompanied with dancing. . . . The aged chief Topinabé led in the ceremonies. He delivered a speech of considerable length, without rising from his seat, with a grave countenance, and his eyes almost closed. He then sat and drummed with one stick, and sung at the same time, while his aid at his side rattled a gourd. At length four women appeared before him and danced. A while after this he arose, delivered another speech, then, drumming and dancing, turned, and moving slowly round the dancing hall, was followed by all the party. When he had performed his part in leading, others went through the same ceremonies, and these were repeated until every pair had twice led in the dance. These exercises were accompanied with many uncouth gestures and strange noises. Three large kettles of meat, previously boiled, were hanging over a small fire near the centre of the house, and occasionally a man would stoop to the kettle and drink a little soup. One fellow, assuming a frantic air, attended with whooping, lifted out of a kettle a deer's head, and holding it by the two horns, with the nose from him, presented it first upwards, and afterwards towards many of the bystanders, as he danced round hallooing. The droppings of the broth were rather an improvement than an injury to the floor, it being of earth, and now becoming pretty dusty. At the conclusion, which was after sun-setting, each brought his or her vessel, and received a portion of the food. Chebass, a chief, sent to me and invited me to eat with him, and I having consented, he placed his bowl on the earth beside me and said, 'Come, let us eat in friendship.' After eating, another speech was delivered, the music followed, all joined in the dance with increased hilarity, and most of them with their kettles of meat and broth in their hands, and, at length breaking off, each went to his home." Mr. McCoy mentions this as one of their religious festivals, but in his description of it there seems to be very little to indicate that character.

The chief Topinabé, mentioned above as the leader of the festival ceremonies, and who, as before noticed, was the representative of the *Pottawattamies* at the treaty of Greenville, in 1795, was the ranking chief of the tribe for a period of forty years. His village at the time mentioned was located on the present farm of David Gitchell, in section 5 of the township of Bertrand. This village was established by the old chief in or about 1825. Mr. McCoy, in his narrative of events in that year, says, "I on one occasion went with two young men to the new settlement formed near our place by Topinabé, the principal chief, and his party, where we found the inhabitants engaged in a horrid bacchanalian revel. After searching among them awhile, I found a keg of spirits, but I had scarcely taken hold on it before it was seized by the drinking Indians, and I was under the necessity of leaving it in their possession." It is evident from this that the village had been recently located at that place. It was afterwards known as "Swopuck."

\* He evidently alludes to the well-known blue grass of Kentucky, and there is no probability of his being mistaken in it, as he was entirely familiar with the blue grass region of that State. But it is a little curious that the location of an Indian village should bring it in where it had not before existed.



Topinabé is spoken of as being a man of ability and a brave and cunning warrior; and there is little doubt that this is true of him, otherwise he could not have remained so long the acknowledged leader of the tribe. But during the latter years of his life he became addicted to the use of whisky, and was its abject slave. At the treaty of Chicago, in 1821, where he represented the tribe in the matter of a proposed cession of lands to the United States, he was advised by the commissioner, Gen. Cass, to keep sober, if possible, so as to secure a good bargain for himself and his people; but the characteristic reply of the *Pottawattamie* sagamore was, "Father, we do not care for the land, nor the money, nor the goods; what we want is whisky; give us whisky." He was then very old, and from that time his progress towards complete degradation was rapid. One of the assistants of Mr. McCoy in the St. Joseph Valley in reporting to him the situation of affairs there in May, 1826, said, "Since we wrote you last, I suppose the Indians have not passed a single day without drinking. Poor old Topinabé (principal chief) is said to be near his end from intoxication." And, finally, the death of the old chief is mentioned by Mr. McCoy, as follows: "On the 27th of July, 1826, a poor, destitute Indian woman was murdered, about a mile and a half from our house, by *Pottawattamies*, under circumstances too shocking to be related. About the same time, Topinabé, the principal chief, fell from his horse, under the influence of ardent spirits, and received an injury of which he died two days afterwards.\* Both these deaths are attributed to the whisky-sellers."

The chief Pokagon (spelled also Pocagin), whose rank in the tribe was second only to that of Topinabé, was wholly different from his superior in the matter of whisky drinking. He is mentioned as "a *Putaumatonic* chief of respectability" by Mr. McCoy, who, in another part of his narrative, says, "Many of the Indians manifested a dislike to the traffic in ardent spirits, fraught with ruin to themselves, though they seldom possessed fortitude enough to withstand the temptation to drink. On the 20th of August (1824), Pocagin, a chief, and many others came to inform us of liquor in their country, and expressed a wish to go and seize it. We could not hope that Indians in such cases would be governed by sound discretion, and therefore dis-

suaded them from their purpose." The missionary also relates an incident, showing that Pokagon possessed also feelings of humanity which were very unusual among the *Pottawattamie* Indians. After mentioning that a large body of *Sauk* Indians† had passed along the St. Joseph Valley, on their return from Detroit, in August, 1827, he says, "A few days after the *Sauks* had passed on, Pocagin and his wife visited us, bringing with them an Indian boy, apparently about eleven years of age, supposed to be a *Naudowissee* (*Siouxs*), whom they had purchased of the *Sauks*. Pocagin having heard that in divers villages of the *Putaumatomies* the *Sauks* had been offering a person for sale, went to them and proposed purchasing. He gave for the boy three horses, saddles and bridles, and other property, equal in value to a fourth horse. The boy had been taken prisoner by the *Sauks*, and illy treated. Several scars on him were pointed out to us, occasioned by the blows of a cruel old woman, to whom he had belonged. In making the purchase, it seemed that Pocagin had been actuated in a good degree by humane motives. In evidence of the sincerity of our commendation of this praiseworthy act, we presented the boy with a couple of garments, of which we perceived he was still in want." It was certainly very remarkable to find a chief of the ferocious *Pottawattamies* giving the value of four horses to save an unfortunate prisoner from cruel treatment.

Mr. Edward B. Cowles, who was once a pupil of Mr. McCoy, says of this chief that he was "the reality of the noble red man of whom we read. He was a man of considerable talent, and in his many business transactions with the early settlers was never known to break his word."

Each chief of note appears to have had his separate village. That of Pokagon was located on the Jacob Troup farm, in the south part of the township of Bertrand, on "Pokagon Creek," about one mile from the St. Joseph River. The village is laid down on the survey of the Michigan and Indiana State line, made in 1827. The Chiengo road was also surveyed through it. The chief's house was on the north side of the stream, in section 16 of the township. On an eminence in section 22, on land now owned by William Copp, was located the Indian cemetery, where some of Pokagon's people were buried, though he himself was not. A part of the old cedar cross which marked the burial-place was standing there in very recent years.

This village of Pokagon was established after Mr. McCoy came among the Indians, and is thus mentioned by him: "Pocagin and his party had commenced a village about six miles from us [probably it was about that distance by the route then traveled], and manifested a disposition to make themselves more comfortable. It was one of our places of preaching. In the spring of 1826 we were about to afford them some assistance in making improvements, when one of those white men who are commonly hanging about the

\* This statement of the time and manner of Topinabé's death—a statement made by a man of undoubted veracity, who was well acquainted with the person whose death he records, and who was living in the midst of the Indians at the time—would seem to be sufficient proof that the old chief died in July or August, 1826, if it were not for the unexplained fact that the name of To-pen-e-bee appears at the head of the Indian signatures to the treaties of 1828, at Carey Mission, of 1832, at Tippecanoe River, and of 1833, at Chicago, the latter being the last in which his name is found. It is known that there was among the St. Joseph Indians another Topinabé, a much younger man (but whether a son of the old chief or not is not known), and it is, of course, possible that he may have been the Topinabé whose name appears in the above-mentioned treaties; but it is hardly likely that he could have been a chief of sufficiently exalted rank to assume the place of the veteran who had sat in every treaty-council in which his tribe had been represented since 1795, and to entitle his name to take precedence of those of the other chiefs present. Much pains has been taken to ascertain the exact date of Topinabé's death, but without success. The strongest probability, however, seems to be that it was the old chief Topinabé who signed the treaties of 1828, 1832, and 1833.

† Large bodies of *Sauks* passed through this region every year, on their way to and from Malden, Canada, where they went to receive the small annuities given them by the British government for their services against the United States in the war of 1812-15. On these journeys they frequently had prisoners and scalps with them. Mr. McCoy says they were addicted to cannibalism, even at that late date.

Indians for the sake of flaying them, like crows around a carcass, interfered, and made a contract for making improvements. This ended in disappointment to the Indians. Pocagin applied to us, and in November we hired white men to erect for them three hewed-log cabins, and to fence twenty acres of prairie-land. We saw that justice was done to the Indians in regard to price and the good performance of the work, and we subsequently employed our team and hands to plow up the new prairie-land for them. We also presented to them some stock hogs, and loaned them a milch-cow, for their encouragement to raise stock." Pokagon was a convert to the Catholic religion, and continued in that faith during his life. He used all his powers to prevent the final emigration of his tribe, and was one of the few who did not accompany them to the West. He died at Silver Creek, in Cass County, and there his bones repose.

Weesaw was the war-chief of all the Indians of the St. Joseph. He was a great lover of gorgeous dress, and of all forms of Indian pomp and show. One of his three wives was Topinabé's daughter, and she was the favorite, on whom he bestowed the most and the choicest of the tawdry finery which he was able to procure. She was almost constantly with him, and on their visits to the white settlements always took precedence of the other wives, by walking next behind her lord, the others following her. Weesaw's village was located on the south side of the St. Joseph River, on or near the corner-point of sections 15, 16, 21, and 22, in the township of Niles, some two miles below the central part of the city. An Indian burial-ground was situated in the bend of the river, a short distance below the village. Weesaw was a lover of strong drink, and was killed by his own son in a drunken brawl.

Chebass was a chief of the tribe, and evidently one of high rank, as appears from the fact that he was one of the distinguished guests invited by Mr. McCoy to his New Year's dinner in 1823, which was soon after his arrival in the Indian country. The good missionary says, "On the 1st of January we deemed it expedient to invite Topinabé and Chebass, principal chiefs, and some others, to partake of a frugal meal with us, some attention having generally been paid to the 25th of December and the 1st of January by white men among them, most of whom have been French Catholics, from whom the natives derived a knowledge of these holidays." In July, 1827, a son of Chebass, probably in a drunken fit, brutally murdered the son of an Indian named Owl, and set fire to the dwelling of a *Pottawattamie* named Shakwaukshuk. "One of Shakwaukshuk's wives," says the missionary, "was a sister of the murderer. She very unconcernedly said that her brother had become so troublesome that the Indians were about to look for him and kill him. A few hours afterwards the chief Chebass called on us and said he was in great distress; that a council was to be held on the following day, when the family of the murdered man would demand vengeance on his son, who had participated in the murder. He said he would take a horse to the council as an atonement for the offense. The culprit and the price of atonement would be placed near each other, and the avengers could make their choice of one or the other. He awaited the decision in an agony of hope and fear, and equal to his anxiety must have

been his joy when it was decided that the offender should not be executed."

Chebass appears to have been among the progressive portion of the *Pottawattamies*, as the reverend missionary tells us that "in the spring season of this year [1824] Chebass, one of the principal *Pottawattamie* chiefs, and two other families, commenced improving their lands in a manner that was really promising. Three log cabins were erected, and two considerable fields fenced with rails. In this labor, and in plowing the fields, we afforded them some assistance." The location of Chebass' village has not been definitely ascertained.

Another chief (probably of lower degree) was Saugana, the same one whose remarkable dream was believed by the Indians to have provided food for the party on its way to the treaty of the Wabash, in 1826. Very little mention is made of him except that when, in 1827, the *Pottawattamie* chiefs were approached by emissaries from the *Winnebagoes* inviting them to join in a war of extermination against the whites, he was one of the most positive and indignant rejecters of the proposal;\* and that when intelligence arrived that the *Winnebagoes* had actually commenced hostilities, Saugana, with fifteen other chiefs and head men, visited the missionaries, to whom he, as chief speaker, made this reassuring address: "Our brother, we are sorry to hear that some Indians have been fighting with the white people. This is not good, and we will not join them; we will remain at peace; we are happy that you have come to live among us, and that you are our friend, the same as one of us. . . . You will know everything that passes among the whites. If anything should occur that we ought to know for our safety, we desire you to inform us, and advise us what to do. We will understand all that occurs among the Indians. If we hear anything of danger to you we will inform you. Finally, I can say no more than do you take care of us, and we will take care of you."

Moccasin, or "Porcupine-Moccasin," as he is called by McCoy, was a *Pottawattamie*, whose village was situated on the west bank of the St. Joseph, at a place which is still known as "Moccasin Bluff," something more than a mile north of Buchanan village. The missionary, so frequently quoted in preceding pages, makes the following mention of this chief: "On the morning of July 4, 1824, I took Noaquett, alias Luther Rice, one of our Indian boys, who had acquired some knowledge of English, and rode five miles to an Indian village [evidently Moccasin's]. At the house where we halted we found the Indians at their usual occupations. One woman was pounding corn in a mortar, two were making moccasins, one was preparing bark for making sacks, some of the men were idle, and four of them were playing at cards. We were received with the usual expressions of friendship, though the men with cards were too much interested in their game to take much notice of us. I entered into conversation with others, but could not thereby divert the attention of the gamblers from their cards. At length I told the owner of the house that I had come to talk to them about religion. They replied that they would be glad to hear me. . . . They were informed

\* It appears, however, that the proposition received no favor or countenance from any of the *Pottawattamies*.

that if it would be agreeable to them such visits would be frequently repeated. "Yes," said Porcupine-Moccasin, who had just been at cards, "nobody will be sorry for that. We will be glad when you come, and will listen to you." It appears from this that gambling as well as intoxication had, even at that early day, taken root among these remote *Pottawattamies*, and that the chief Moccasin was addicted to the former vice, as he probably was also to the latter, though that is not particularly mentioned.

Besides the villages to which allusion is made above, Mr. McCoy, in his narrative, speaks of the villages of Pcheekos and Menominee, and also of "Rum's village," but he does not describe their location, nor does he say whether these three Indians were chiefs or only common warriors. A village was located within the present city limits of Niles, on the west side of the river; and at a somewhat later time there were two villages situated on what is known as the Dr. Wells farm, on the west side of the river, below Niles. The villages last named were those of Weesemo and Matchkee.

The object of Mr. McCoy and his assistant missionaries in coming among the Indians of the St. Joseph Valley, was not alone to acquaint them with the truths of the gospel, but also to improve their temporal condition by inducing them to abandon their indolent and improvident manner of life; to cultivate their lands; to become sober and industrious; and by these means to surround themselves with comforts which they had never yet possessed; and to assume by degrees a condition approaching civilization. We have seen that this was partially effected with Pokagon and Chebass, and their example appears to have influenced a considerable number of others—not only chiefs, but many of lower degree—to move in the same direction. Judge John C. Leib, a government agent, made a second official visit to these Indians in the summer of 1826, and in his report made to Governor Cass he spoke of their improved condition as follows: "Numerous Indian families have, since my last visit, settled themselves around, and have, from the encouragement, countenance, and assistance of the missionary family, made considerable progress in agriculture. Indeed, a whole village has been formed within six miles of it, under its benevolent auspices and fostering care. I visited them to witness myself the change in their condition. To good fences, with which many of their grounds are inclosed, succeed domestic animals. You now see oxen, cows, and swine grazing around their dwellings, without the danger of destroying their crops. . . . Occupancy now seems consecrated by the labor which these new exertions cost, and results in giving birth in the mind of the Indian to a strong sense of individual property." He also mentioned that near the mouth of the St. Joseph "the most surprising changes have taken place. Strong and effective inclosures are made and making, and stock has been acquired;" and that the general condition of the tribe was greatly improved in many respects since his previous visit to them.

But on this occasion Judge Leib probably saw the St. Joseph *Pottawattamies* in the most advanced condition which they ever attained, for from about that time the number of white whisky traders among them was largely and rapidly increased, and the effect of their traffic upon the Indian

was ruinous. They had not sufficient strength of mind to resist the temptation to drunkenness, and to this baneful influence they surrendered all their prospects of advancement. There were a few individual exceptions, but this was the case with nearly all of them. Soon after this they seemed to have reached a condition in which they abandoned all attempts at improvement, and thought of nothing but the indulgence of their appetite for whisky, to obtain which they were willing to part with everything they possessed: articles of comfort and utility, furs, game, and even their scanty clothing. One of the missionary assistants—Mr. Simerwell—wrote about this time, and in reference to this state of affairs, as follows: "Our white neighbors [meaning the white men who had come among them with the sole purpose of furnishing them with ardent spirits] deal out whisky to the Indians plentifully, with which they purchase anything which the Indians are willing to part with. A silver-mounted rifle, worth twenty or twenty-five dollars, has been purchased of them for seventy-five cents' worth of whisky. The clothing of the Indians, and farming and cooking utensils, are purchased for liquor; and these articles are sometimes again sold to the Indians for furs."

The demoralization of the Indians from this cause was so rapid and complete that the missionaries finally abandoned all hope of their ultimate civilization, and Mr. Lykins, Mr. McCoy's assistant, wrote to the latter (who was then at Detroit, in conference with Governor Cass and others), "I tell you every hope, every prospect, for the welfare of the Indians around us is prostrate, is entirely cut off. I entreat you to plead for their removal." The condition to which the Indians had sunk is further referred to in the mission journal, under date of April 6, 1828, as follows: "Our prospects of usefulness in this country are completely blighted; the wretched Indians around us, without the hope of better condition from any improvements which they may make, daily grow more stupid and indifferent to everything like improvement of circumstances in life or in mind. From intemperance and other evils resulting from the proximity of white settlements they are rapidly wasting away."

Several other missionaries were engaged with Mr. McCoy among the *Pottawattamies* of the St. Joseph, but the rapid demoralization of the Indians caused them to despair of accomplishing any good, and in 1832 the last of them departed in complete discouragement. After their departure the Indians gradually grew more and more degraded and abject. Judge Leib, who annually visited them for the government, relates, in one of his reports to Governor Cass, that he had frequently expostulated with some of the more respectable chiefs of the *Pottawattamies*, urging them to make greater efforts to surround themselves with the advantages of comparative civilization, and, in particular, as a means to this end, to abandon the use of intoxicating liquor. "I shall never forget," he says, "the answer made on one of these occasions by a venerable and interesting chief. . . . After a considerable pause he commenced by stating that what I said was very true; that they were all sensible of the deleterious effects of whisky, and of the ravages it had made and was still making among them; that they



did not seek it, but it was brought to them; that they could not prevent it, nor could they possibly forbear from drinking it when it was within their reach; that they had lost all their manhood with their independence; that *they were a degraded and disgraced race; that they now looked upon the whites as so much their superiors that they would not attempt to resist anything they did or should do.* 'But,' continued the chief, elevating his dignified person, 'if our Great Father feels such an interest to preserve us as you mention, all-powerful as he is, why does he not command his people to abstain from seeking our destruction? He has but to will it and his will will be done. He can punish,—he can save us from the ruin which surrounds us.'" Words could not better have described the utterly abject and hopeless condition to which the tribe had fallen, and in which (with a few exceptions) they remained until the time of their emigration (or rather exile) to the lands beyond the Mississippi, which occurred a few years after the departure of their would-be benefactors, the missionaries.

The chiefs of the tribe had ceded to the United States, by the Chicago Treaty of 1821, a vast scope of country, which may be described as including all of their ancient domain lying east of the St. Joseph River. Again, in 1828, they ceded to the government all of their possessions in Michigan between the St. Joseph River and Lake Michigan, except a tribal reservation of nearly fifty square miles area, which embraced the southeastern part of the present township of Buchanan, including Buchanan village, all of the township of Bertrand except its northwest corner, and all that part of Niles township which lies west of the St. Joseph River. On this reservation nearly all their villages were located, and here was the home of the tribe during the later years of their occupancy. Finally, in September, 1833, this reservation—their last foothold—was ceded by them to the government, and they at the same time agreed to evacuate and remove from their lands within three years from that time. Long before the expiration of the time named in the treaty for their departure, however, they had bitterly repented of their promise to remove to the land of the setting sun, and prayed the Great Father that they might be permitted to remain on the poor remnant of their ancient hunting-grounds, and to be buried near the graves of their fathers. Their request to remain was not granted, but their expulsion (for such it really was) was delayed until the fall of 1838, when the remnant of the once powerful tribe, now reduced to one hundred and fifty in number,\* were called together at the McCoy Mission grounds, near Niles, for a "talk," which was understood as a preliminary to their final departure. At this convocation many protested earnestly against their banishment, but it all resulted in a peremptory order from the government agents (Godfroy and Kercheval) to prepare for removal on a certain day. On that day they were gathered (but not all of them), and in charge of the agents, and escorted by two companies of United States troops, detailed for this duty by order of Gen. Brady, they moved out on the Chicago road, some on foot, but many of the more helpless

ones loaded in wagons, and in this way, dejected and sorrowful, they commenced their weary journey to new homes and hunting-grounds in Kansas. Not a few of them, however, escaped while on the way, and returned to the St. Joseph. These, with others who by some means had avoided being mustered for removal in 1838, were finally collected in the following year by Alexis Coquillard, and under his charge were removed to Kansas, where they joined those who had gone forward in the previous year.

But Pokagon was not among those who emigrated to the West. He and a number of others of his band had embraced the Catholic faith, and they were apprehensive that a removal to the wilderness beyond the Mississippi might in some way deprive them of the enjoyment of their religion, as well as of the benefits of the partial civilization which they had acquired. They were therefore very determined in their opposition to the removal, and Pokagon refused to sign or consent to the treaty by which the reservation was relinquished until he and his fellow-Catholics had received guarantees that they should be allowed to remain in Michigan. After the departure of the tribe, Pokagon removed from his old home to Silver Creek, in Cass County, as has already been mentioned. His death occurred at that place in 1841. Some of the Catholic descendants of the *Pottawattamies* are still living at Silver Creek, and a few have their homes in the western part of Van Buren County.

## CHAPTER V.

### CESSIONS OF INDIAN TERRITORY—ERECTION OF COUNTIES AND TOWNS UPON IT.

Indian Proprietorship of Lands recognized by the United States—Treaty of Greenville, 1795—Treaty of Detroit, 1807—Treaties of Springwells, 1815, and Saginaw, 1819—Treaty of Chicago, 1821—Extensive Cession of Lands in Berrien and Van Buren Counties—Reservations—Carey Mission Tract Ceded—Treaty of Carey Mission, 1827—Treaty of 1828, at Carey Mission—Cession of Lands west of St. Joseph River—Treaty of Chicago, 1833—Cession of the Last of the Indian Possessions on the St. Joseph—Erection of Counties and Towns on the Ceded Lands—Erection of Wayne County—Territory of Berrien and Van Buren Counties attached to Monroe—Same attached to Lenawee—The Old Township of St. Joseph—Erection of Berrien and Van Buren Counties—Niles and Penn Townships.

THE possessory title of the Indian tribes to the lands of which they were found in occupation has always been recognized by the United States government from the time of its formation, and the principle has been established that this title can only be acquired by the government, or with its consent, and can only be alienated from the native Indians by their own voluntary act, done in public and open council, where the tribes are represented by their chiefs and head men, and the government by its accredited agent or commissioner. This principle has always been acted on and this method observed by the government in its treaties with Indians for the acquisition of their possessory rights in the public domain.

#### TREATY OF GREENVILLE, 1795.

The first Indian treaty by which the aboriginal title to lands now within the State of Michigan was extinguished

\* As per pay-roll of 1837, based upon an estimate of Indian population of Michigan, made by Henry R. Schoolcraft, United States Indian agent.



was that which was concluded at Greenville, Ohio, Aug. 3, 1795, by Gen. Anthony Wayne, on behalf of the United States, with representatives of the *Pottawattamie*, *Wyandot*, *Shawano*, *Ottawa*, *Chippewa*, and several other tribes. This treaty ceded to the United States a strip of land six miles in width, on and adjoining the west bank of the Detroit River, and extending from Lake St. Clair on the north to the river Raisin (the present city of Monroe) on the south, including, of course, the post of Detroit. On this treaty, heading the list of chiefs of the "*Pottawattamies* of the St. Joseph," appears the name of Thu-pe-ne-ba (Topinabé), whose name continued to head the list of chiefs of his tribe, in treaties, from this time until 1833.

#### TREATY OF DETROIT, 1807.

The entire southeastern part of Michigan was ceded to the government by the treaty of Detroit, made and concluded Nov. 17, 1807, between Governor William Hull, commissioner and superintendent of Indian affairs, and the chiefs of the *Pottawattamie*, *Ottawa*, *Chippewa*, and *Wyandot* tribes. The territory here ceded extended westward to the line which afterwards became the principal meridian of the State, and northward on that line to the centre of the present county of Shiawassee, from which point the north boundary of the ceded territory was drawn in a straight line to White Rock, on the west shore of Lake Huron.

#### TREATIES OF SPRINGWELLS, 1815, AND OF SAGINAW, 1819.

The three principal Indian nations of Michigan,—the *Pottawattamies*, *Chippewas*, and *Ottawas*,—by the offensive alliance which they made with the British in the war of 1812–15, and their general conduct through that struggle, were regarded as having justly forfeited the lands reserved to them. The government, however, was not disposed to enforce the forfeiture, but rather to adopt a conciliatory and friendly policy towards them; and in September, 1815, Gen. William H. Harrison, Gen. McArthur, and John Graham, Esq., on the part of the United States, held a council with them at Springwells, near Detroit, where, on the 8th of that month, a treaty was concluded, by which it was agreed that "the United States give peace to the *Chippewa*, *Ottawa*, and *Pottawattamie* tribes. They also agree to restore to the said *Chippewa*, *Ottawa*, and *Pottawattamie* tribes all the possessions, rights, and privileges which they enjoyed or were entitled to, in the year 1811, prior to the commencement of the late war with Great Britain; and the said tribes upon their part agree to place themselves under the protection of the United States, and of no other power whatsoever." And, at the same time, the treaty made at Greenville in 1795, and subsequent treaties between these tribes and the United States, were confirmed and ratified.

The treaty of Saginaw, concluded Sept. 24, 1819, ceded an immense territory in Michigan, lying to the north and east of a boundary line drawn due west from the "Indian boundary" (the principal meridian) to a point two or three miles northeast of the village of Kalamazoo, and thence northward to the Thunder Bay River. At this treaty the *Pottawattamies* were not represented, for the reason that they claimed no ownership in the lands there ceded.

#### TREATY OF CHICAGO, 1821.

In August, 1821, Gen. Lewis Cass and Solomon Sibley, commissioners of the United States, met the sachems, chiefs, and warriors of the *Pottawattamie*, *Ottawa*, and *Chippewa* tribes of Indians in council, at Chicago, and there, on the 29th of that month, was made and concluded a treaty, by which those tribes ceded to the United States (excepting certain reservations) "all the land comprehended within the following boundaries: Beginning at a point on the south bank of the river St. Joseph, of Lake Michigan, near the Parc aux Vaches, due north from Rum's village, and running thence south to a line drawn due east from the southern extreme of Lake Michigan, thence with the said line east to the tract ceded by the *Pottawattamies* to the United States by the treaty of Fort Meigs, in 1817, if the said line should strike the said tract,\* but if the said line should pass north of the said tract, then such line shall be continued until it strikes the western boundary of the tract ceded to the United States by the treaty of Detroit, in 1807; and from the termination of the said line, following the boundaries of former cessions, to the main branch of the Grand River, of Lake Michigan, should any of the said lines cross the said river, but if none of the said lines should cross the said river, then to a point due east of the source of the said main branch of the said river, and from such point, due west to the source of the said principal branch; and from the crossing of the said river, or from the source thereof, as the case may be, down the said river, on the north bank thereof, to the mouth; thence following the shore of Lake Michigan to the south bank of the said river St. Joseph, at the mouth thereof, and thence with the said south bank to the place of beginning."

To this treaty of cession were signed the names of Commissioners Cass and Sibley and the totemic signatures of Topinabé, Weesaw, and fifty-three other *Pottawattamie* chiefs and head men, affixed in presence of John R. Williams, adjutant-general of Michigan militia, Alexander Wolcott, Jr., G. Godfrey, and Whitmore Knaggs, Indian agents, John Kenzie, sub-agent, H. Phillips, paymaster United States army, Jacob Visger, Henry I. Hunt, R. Montgomery, John B. Beaubien, Conrad Ten Eyck, J. Whipple, George Miles, Jr., Henry Conner, James Bernard, and Jacob B. Varnum, United States factor.

The territory to which the Indian title was extinguished by this treaty included all of the present county of Van Buren and all that part of Berrien which lies east and north of the St. Joseph River (except nine individual reservations named below), with a tract one mile square on the west side of that river. Besides these, it embraced nine entire counties, and parts of five other counties, all in the southwest part of Michigan, and a strip ten miles wide south of the Indiana line.

All the southern portion of the territory (about four-fifths of the whole) ceded at this treaty belonged to the country of the *Pottawattamies*; and in consideration of the cession the United States agreed to pay five thousand

\*It did not, however, strike the line named, but passed north of it: the territory ceded at Fort Meigs, in 1817, lying entirely south of the south line of Michigan.

dollars in specie,\* yearly, to that tribe, for the term of twenty years, and also to appropriate annually, for the term of fifteen years, the sum of one thousand dollars, to be expended under direction of the President for the support of a blacksmith and a teacher among the Indians. The cession of one square mile of land on the west side of the St. Joseph was designated as the residence of the teacher and the blacksmith of the tribe, and it was to be selected and located under direction of the President of the United States.

The selection so made was nearly on the western boundary of the present city of Niles, and the tract became the seat of the "Carey Mission," which is mentioned more fully in the history of Niles.

The individual reservations from the tract ceded by this treaty, within the county of Berrien, were described as follows:

"To John Burnett, two sections of land.

"To James Burnett, Abraham Burnett, Rebecca Burnett, and Nancy Burnett, each one section of land; which said John, James, Abraham, Rebecca, and Nancy are children of Kawkeemee, sister of Topinabé, principal chief of the *Pottawattamie* nation.

"To John B. La Lime, son of Nokenoqua, one-half of a section of land adjoining the tract before granted, and on the upper side thereof.

"To Jean B. Chandonai, son of Chippewaqua, two sections of land on the river St. Joseph, above and adjoining the tract granted to J. B. La Lime.

"To Joseph Dazé, son of Chippewaqua, one section of land adjoining the tract granted to Jean B. Chandonai."

The above-named reservations were to be laid out on the north bank of the St. Joseph, commencing "about two miles from the mouth," and to be laid out in succession up along the bank of the stream. The ninth and last of the individual reservations, within the present county of Berrien, was "To Madeline Bertrand, wife of Joseph Bertrand, a *Pottawattamie* woman, one section of land at the *Parc aux Vaches*, on the northeast side of the river St. Joseph."

The treaty provided for a number of other individual reservations, none of which were within the present county of Berrien, but farther up the river. Among these, there were reservations "to Joseph Bertrand, Jr., Benjamin Bertrand, Laurent Bertrand, Theresa Bertrand, and Amable Bertrand, children of the said Madeline Bertrand, each one-half of a section of land at the portage of the Kankakee River." These were the half-breed children of the trader Bertrand, who located on the upper St. Joseph soon after the Revolution, and whose name was given to one of the townships of Berrien County.

#### TREATY AT CAREY MISSION, 1827.

A treaty was held by Governor Cass at the Carey Mission† on the 19th of September, 1827, at which time and

\* For the part ceded by the *Ottawas* that tribe was to receive one thousand dollars in specie, annually. The *Chippewas*, although two of their chiefs signed the treaty, received nothing; hence it appears that no part of the ceded lands belonged to that tribe. The lands ceded by the *Ottawas* were those to the northward, along the Grand River.

† This treaty is mentioned in the Revised Treaties of the United States as being held at "St. Joseph," by which is doubtless meant

place a number of small reservations were ceded to the United States, "in order to consolidate some of the dispersed bands of the *Pottawattamie* tribe in the territory of Michigan, at a point removed from the road leading from Detroit to Chicago, and as far as practicable from the settlements of the whites." A number of the reservations ceded at that time were situated on the upper St. Joseph, in the present county of St. Joseph, but none of them were located in Berrien or Van Buren.

#### CAREY MISSION TREATY, 1828.

A treaty council was held and a treaty concluded on the 20th of September, 1828, "at the Missionary Establishments upon the St. Joseph, of Lake Michigan" (meaning the Carey Mission, near Niles), between Lewis Cass and Pierre Menard, on the part of the United States, and the chiefs and head men of the St. Joseph *Pottawattamies*, on the part of their tribe. By this treaty, signed by Topinabé, Pokagon, and sixty-seven other *Pottawattamie* chiefs and head men, there was ceded to the United States a tract of land described as "Beginning at the mouth of the St. Joseph, of Lake Michigan, and thence running up said river to a point on the same river, half-way between *Lavache-qui-pisse* and *Macousin* village; thence in a direct line to the nineteenth-mile tree, on the northern boundary line of the State of Indiana; thence with the same west to Lake Michigan; and thence with the shore of the said lake to the place of beginning."

The ceded territory within the boundaries thus described embraced all that part of the present county of Berrien which lies west of the St. Joseph River, except a tract of irregular shape, bounded on the south by the south line of the county, on the east and north by the St. Joseph River, and on the west and northwest by a right line drawn from the point which forms the southwestern corner of Bertrand township and the southeastern corner of Galien township, on the south boundary of the county, to the point where the south line of section twelve of the township of Buchanan intersects the west bank of the St. Joseph River. This unceded tract (generally, though incorrectly, mentioned as a reservation) embraced an area equal to about forty-nine square miles of territory, on which were located the villages and settlements of this division of the *Pottawattamie* tribe.

It was stipulated in the treaty, in the usual form, that the tribe should receive certain annuities—goods and cash—in consideration of the ceded lands. Also, that there should be delivered to them annually a quantity of iron, steel, and tobacco; that the sum of one hundred dollars per annum in goods should be paid to the chief Topinabé, during his life; that a blacksmith should be kept permanently among them at the expense of the United States; and

that it was held on the river of that name. The Rev. Isaac McCoy, in his History of Baptist Missions, says, on page 319, "On the 17th of September, 1827, His Excellency Lewis Cass and suite arrived at Carey, for the purpose of holding a treaty with our *Potawattamie* neighbors, whom, by runners sent before him, he had assembled at our house. At this treaty several small reservations on the north side of the St. Joseph's were consolidated into one; five hundred dollars' worth of goods were paid them, and an annuity of twenty-five hundred dollars."

that the government should also provide three laborers to work for the St. Joseph tribe four months in the year for ten years. To Madeleine Bertrand, wife of Joseph Bertrand, was granted one section of land, but it was not located nor described. Her claim on account of this grant was afterwards purchased by Obed P. Lacey, of Niles, who, after several years' delay, obtained lands at West Niles under the grant.

#### TREATY AT CHICAGO, 1833.

The last of the Indian land in Berrien County (being the tract mentioned above as bounded east by the St. Joseph River and south by the south line of the county) was ceded to the United States by articles supplementary to a treaty made at Chicago, Sept. 26, 1833. The supplementary articles were signed on the 27th of the same month by George B. Porter, Thomas J. V. Owen, and William Weatherford, commissioners on the part of the United States, and by Topinabé, Pokagon, Weesaw, and forty-five other chiefs and head men, on the part of the *Pottawattamies*. This last relinquished possession of the St. Joseph Indians is described in the article of cession as "the tract of land on St. Joseph River, opposite the town of Niles and extending to the line of the State of Indiana, on which the villages of To-pe-ne-bee and Po-ka-gon are situated; supposed to contain about forty-nine sections."

The stipulation made for the final removal of the Indians from the ceded tract was embraced in the third supplementary article, as follows: "All the Indians residing on the said reservations in Michigan [having reference not only to this tract, but also to small reservations farther east, in the county of St. Joseph and elsewhere] shall remove therefrom within three years from this date, during which time they shall not be disturbed in their possession, nor in hunting upon the lands as heretofore. In the mean time no interruption shall be offered to the survey and sale of the same by the United States. In case, however, the said Indians shall sooner remove, the government may take immediate possession thereof." This was the beginning of the end of the Indian occupation. It has been told in preceding pages how they were allowed to linger for a time after the expiration of the period named in the treaty of 1833, but were (with the exception of Pokagon and a number of others who had become converted to the Catholic religion) finally gathered together and removed beyond the Mississippi.

#### ERECTION OF COUNTIES AND TOWNS ON THE CEDED LANDS.

The county of Wayne was erected by proclamation of Lewis Cass, Governor of the Territory of Michigan, Nov. 21, 1815,\* to embrace "that part of the Territory of Michigan to which the Indian title has been extinguished." As the first extinguishment of Indian title to any part of the

territory now embraced in the counties of Berrien and Van Buren was accomplished by the Chicago treaty of Aug. 29, 1821, nearly six years after the establishment of Wayne County by Governor Cass, consequently that county, embracing only territory to which the Indian title had then been extinguished, included no part of Van Buren or Berrien County, though a contrary belief has prevailed to some extent.

By executive act dated Sept. 10, 1822, it was proclaimed by Governor Cass that† "all the country within this territory to which the Indian title was extinguished by the treaty of Chicago shall be attached to, and compose a part of, the county of Monroe." By the same executive act the county of Lenawee was erected, and also attached to Monroe.

The territory thus attached to the county of Monroe included all of the present county of Van Buren, and all that part of Berrien which lies north and east of the St. Joseph River; and it continued to be a part of that county until Dec. 31, 1826,—the date of operation of an act of the Legislative Council‡ (approved Nov. 20th of that year) by which the county of Lenawee was organized, and which provided that "all the country within this territory to which the Indian title was extinguished by the treaty of Chicago shall be attached to, and compose a part of, the county of Lenawee."

The (old) township of St. Joseph was erected by act of the Legislative Council (approved April 12, 1827), to include all the lands within the Territory of Michigan which were ceded at the treaty of Chicago.

In an act (approved Sept. 22, 1829) amendatory to the act organizing the county of Lenawee, it was provided§ "that all the country within this territory to which the Indian title was extinguished at the treaty held at the Carey Mission in 1828 shall be attached to the county of Lenawee, and the said district shall compose a part of St. Joseph township." This added to the county and township named all that part of the present county of Berrien lying west and south of the St. Joseph River, except the tract which still remained in possession of the Indians, embracing the southeast corner of the township of Buchanan, nearly all of Bertrand, and the part of Niles lying on the south and west side of the St. Joseph River.

The counties of Berrien and Van Buren were erected by act approved Oct. 29, 1829, and one week later an act was approved forming the towns of Niles and Penn, the former including all the territory of Berrien, and the latter all that of Van Buren, both of which had, up to that time, been included in (old) St. Joseph township. In the separate histories of Berrien and Van Buren a more extended account will be given of the erection and organization of the two counties, and also of the several townships which have been formed within them.

† Ibid., pp. 335, 336.

‡ Ibid., vol. ii. p. 292.

§ Ibid., p. 709.

\* Territorial Laws, vol. i. p. 323.



# CHAPTER VI.

## NAVIGATION—HARBOR IMPROVEMENTS.

The Lake Coast and Harbors of Berrien and Van Buren Counties—St. Joseph the Port of Destination of the first Vessel that ever sailed the Upper Lakes—The first Ship-Timber ever cut on the Shores of Lake Michigan sawed at St. Joseph—Vessels running to and from the Mouth of the River before the Year 1800—Vessels bringing Supplies for the Carey Mission as early as 1823—Capt. Hinckley "jumps the Bar" at the Mouth of the River in 1827—Rapid Increase of Commerce and Shipping—Navigation by Lake Steamers running to St. Joseph—The Steamer Line from Chicago connecting with Stages at St. Joseph—Decrease of Trade at the Mouth of the River on Completion of the Central Railroad—Rapid Increase of Steam Navigation caused by Development of the Fruit Interest—Ship-Building on the St. Joseph River—Inland Navigation on the St. Joseph—Keel-Boats, "Arks," Pirogues, and River Steamers—The "St. Joseph Navigation Company"—Destruction of the Trade by the Central Railroad—Navigation at New Buffalo—First arrival of a Sailing Vessel there, in 1835—Steamer Line in connection with the Michigan Central Railroad—Shipping Facilities at South Haven—Lake Steamers at that Port—Ship-Building at the Mouth of the Black River—Harbor Improvements at St. Joseph, New Buffalo, and South Haven.

THE counties of Berrien and Van Buren, of which Lake Michigan forms the western boundary, have, together, a coast line of about sixty miles in length, beginning at the extreme southwestern corner of the State of Michigan, and extending thence in a general northeasterly direction. On this section of coast line there are situated three lake harbors. Near its southwestern extremity is the harbor of New Buffalo, and equally near its northeastern termination is the port of South Haven, at the mouth of South Black River, in the northwestern corner of Van Buren County. About midway between these two is the port of St. Joseph, at the mouth of the river of the same name, in the county of Berrien.

Of these three harbors St. Joseph is the most important, as it is also by far the oldest in its use as a port for vessels navigating the lake. More than two hundred years ago it was known as a harbor, and when, in the summer of 1679, the first vessel that ever floated on the upper lakes—the little "Griffin"—left her anchorage in the Niagara River, and, spreading her sails to the breeze for the first time, bore away westward through the bright waters of Erie, she was bound for a haven at the mouth of the "river of the *Miamis*," which is now known as the St. Joseph. Her commander, La Salle, in planning his expedition of discovery to the Mississippi, had decided on this place as his base of operations on Lake Michigan, for he had learned from the men who had previously passed this way with Marquette that here was a practicable entrance from the lake, and that here his vessel could lie in safety in the old channel of the river (which was then some distance south of the present mouth), securely moored to the land, behind the sheltering sand-hills, while his canoes, floating in still water by her side, could receive their lading, and then glide away up the stream many scores of miles into the interior on his proposed route to the Illinois and the Mississippi.

It is true that the "Griffin" never reached this port of her destination, for the reason that, on touching at an island near the mouth of Green Bay, she found awaiting

her there a large quantity of furs, which it was necessary to have transported east without delay, and, freighted with these, she sailed back, bound for Niagara, but with orders from the commander to deliver the cargo with all practicable dispatch, and then return immediately to meet him at the mouth of the *Miamis* (St. Joseph); and here, from the high plateau that borders the south bank of the river, he kept long and weary watch for her coming, and built beacon fires at night, and anxiously scanned the dark-blue horizon line of the lake by day, to catch the first glimmer of her white sails,—a sight that never gladdened his eyes, for she did not return, nor were any tidings of her ever received. When all hope of the "Griffin's" safety was gone, his next plan was to supply her place by a second vessel, to be built at the mouth of the St. Joseph, and for this purpose a saw-pit was prepared, and the timber and planks were sawed out ready for her construction; but the adverse fortune which constantly attended La Salle prevented the execution of his plan, and so this first ship-building project on the St. Joseph came to naught.

It is not certain that, during the period of about one hundred years next following these operations, the St. Joseph River was visited by any vessels other than the bark canoes of the Indians and French voyageurs, though it is very probable that sailing-vessels did come here to bring the garrison and armament of the French fort which was afterwards established here, as well as the merchandise and outfits of the trading-post, which was opened here about the same time. But it is certain that after the military post and the trading-station here fell into the hands of the English, in 1761, they were occasionally visited by sailing-vessels bringing supplies. William Burnett, who re-established the trading-post about 1785, is known to have employed sloops and schooners in his traffic, receiving by them small cargoes of goods from Detroit and other points, and sending peltries, sugar, and other articles by them on their return. This is proved by the ledger and journal of Mr. Burnett, which have already been mentioned as covering the period from 1792 to 1802. In these books frequent mention is made of merchandise received and shipped by different vessels, the principal of which appear to have been the sloop "General Hunter" and the "Iroquois." That the first-named vessel made regular (or at least frequent) trips to the St. Joseph is made apparent by entries found in the books, a few of which are as copied below, viz.:

"May 26th, 1801.

"James May, Esqr.:

"To Invoice of 5 Casks and 8 Mokoks of Sugar shipped on board the Gen'l Hunter, Capt. Rough, master, as follows:

No. 1.	1 Cask of Sugar.....	wt.	297	
2.	1 do. ".....	"	266	
3.	1 do. ".....	"	268	
4.	1 do. ".....	"	243	
5.	1 do. ".....	"	282	
I.M.	1 Mokok.....		49	
	1 do. ....		42	
	1 ".....		34	
	1 ".....		38	gross wt.
	1 ".....		43	
	1 ".....		42	
	1 ".....		41	
			1670	
	1 do. ....		43	
			1695	wt. Sugar."

"June 3d, 1801.

"Invoice of 15 Packs consigned to David Mitchell at McKenac [Mackinac] by the sloop Hunter, Capt. Rough, Master, contained, numbered and marked as per margin, viz.:

"W.B. No. 1. 1 Pack mixed cont'g	Rats.....	400	} Skins.
	Minks.....	196	
	covering.....	2	
No. 2. 1 ditto ditto	Raccoons.....	60	} Skins.
	Others.....	38	
	Fishers.....	6	
	Martens.....	9	
	Cubs.....	5	
	Covering.....	2	
No. 3 x 12 10 packs Deer Skins Containing	50 each		
13 x 15 3 " Raccoons	120 "		
	covering	6 skins.	
2 oil-cloths to be returned."			

Same date :

"Invoice of Sundries Packs consigned to Messrs. John McGregor & Co., merchants, Detroit, in the Sloop G. Hunter, Capt. Rough, numbered & marked as per margin, and containing as follows :

G.	L.M. No. 1. 1 Pack of Otter containing	100 and 2 skins.
	2. 1 ditto Beaver "	91 " 2 skins.
	3 x 5 3 packs Rats "	500 " skins.
	" 6 1 " covering	6 "
		Cats 64
		Foxes 60 " skins.
		covering 2
	7 x 14 8 Packs Bucks containing	30 each.
	15 x 21 7 ditto Does "	50 "
	22 x 20 29 " Raccoons	120 } skins.
		covering 58
	51 x 52 2 " Rats	500 } each.
		covering 4 } skins."

"Nov. 21st, 1801.

"J. May, Esq. :

7 Packs of Skins 60 each.....	420 x 21 skins.
163 Raccoons x 4 skins in.....	1 Pack.

"The above shipped on board the Sloop Gen'l Hunter, Capt. Rough, master."

"July 14, 1802.

"James May, Esq. :

"To 4 barrels of Sugar per the Sloop Hunter, Capt. Rough. Wt. as per bill."

As there are none of Burnett's books known to be in existence of later date than those from which these items are taken, of course no memoranda have been found of his vessels and shipments after 1802; but there is no reason to doubt that the sloops and schooners continued to enter the mouth of the St. Joseph River, receiving furs, sugar, and other merchandise, and bringing goods to the trading-post, during the period of more than twenty years that it existed after the time mentioned.

While the Carey Mission was in existence near Niles, from 1822 to about 1830, the people in charge of it frequently received supplies and material from sailing-vessels which came to the mouth of the river. In the Rev. Isaac McCoy's narrative of the operations of this mission (pp. 214-214), he says, "Upon the failure of the vessel in the preceding spring to bring us supplies by way of the lake, as we had contracted, we took measures to have supplies brought to us by another vessel. This latter, carrying four or five hundred dollars' worth of property for us, anchored at the mouth of St. Joseph's River on the 17th of October [1823], and the captain came on shore. About this time the wind became so severe that their cable parted, and the schooner was driven out to sea. About midnight the captain, who was at an Indian house a mile from the lake, was informed that the vessel had again come in sight. He hastened off, directing the men who were

waiting to receive our property to be on the shore early in the morning. Unfortunately, they were able to land only seven barrels of flour, one barrel of salt, and two or three other small articles; the remainder of our property was carried back to Detroit, greatly to our loss and to our serious inconvenience in other respects." Again (p. 222), he says, "We embarked on Lake Erie at Buffalo, on the 25th of May [1824], in the schooner 'Neptune,' Captain Johnson. On the night of the 28th we had a thunder-storm and a pretty severe gale, in which our danger was greater than at the moment we apprehended. The vessel was old, and too much decayed to be seaworthy,—a circumstance which we did not fully understand until afterwards. . . . At Detroit we put on board iron, steel, etc., for our public smitheries. Mr. Simerwell continued on board the vessel and ascended to the mouth of St. Joseph's River, while I hired a horse and rode home through the wilderness." In June, 1825, a schooner arrived at the mouth of the river with supplies for the mission, "forwarded by benevolent persons in different parts of the United States;" and in 1826, Mr. McCoy says that "Mr. Lykins, with a hired Frenchman, left Carey on the 20th of October for the purpose of getting supplies to Thomas [another missionary station on the Grand River]. At the mouth of St. Joseph's River he put his property and a large pirogue on board a schooner, and had them conveyed on Lake Michigan to the mouth of Grand River. The schooner anchored a mile from the shore; the pirogue was lowered into the water, and, being loaded, was towed ashore by the long-boat, while the waves ran so high as to threaten to turn all into the lake." There are other entries of the same kind in the journal of the mission, all showing that there were occasional arrivals and departures of vessels at the mouth of this river, in each year, down to the time when the establishment of permanent white settlements created a demand for more frequent and extensive navigation.

The first entrance of a vessel into the harbor of St. Joseph, mentioned in oral accounts given by the oldest residents now living, was that of the schooner "Savage," in the fall of 1827. This vessel, under command of Captain Hinckley, and loaded with supplies for the garrison of Fort Dearborn (Chicago), being driven off her course by stress of weather, ran for safety into this harbor, though in entering it her captain was compelled to "jump" her over the bar. The place was then entirely uninhabited, but Captain Hinckley, seeing no safe alternative, built a sort of hut in the shelter of the sand-bank, and passed the winter here. The knowledge which he gained of the place during his cheerless stay appears to have been turned to good account; for, believing that the harbor would in time cause the building of a town upon it, he afterwards purchased land here, and became one of the proprietors of the village of St. Joseph.

It was but a short time after settlements commenced along the lower part of the St. Joseph River that the mouth of this stream began to receive frequent visits from sailing-vessels of a small class, principally schooners, and this trade grew constantly greater, of course, with the increase of population in the village and the valley above it. The vessels arriving here from Detroit, Buffalo, and other points below, usually called first at Chicago, and, after un-

loading the freight belonging there, crossed the lake to deliver the part of their cargo destined for the mouth of the St. Joseph.

The harbor was not at that time as easy of access as it is now. The river then entered the lake at a point considerably south of the present mouth, and it was made difficult of approach by a long sand-spit which made out into the lake. The bar extending along its front was covered by about six feet of water, and during the prevalence of strong westerly winds it was often exceedingly difficult to enter. It was a common practice for vessels to anchor outside and have a part of their cargoes lightered, so that they could enter, and some delivered their entire cargoes by lighters. Navigators who came here without any previous knowledge of the location, and attempted to make the entrance in heavy weather, found it not only a difficult but a dangerous undertaking, as is shown by the numerous disasters which occurred here.

When the valley of the St. Joseph and the fertile country contiguous to it became settled and cultivated, and the surplus product of all that region began to be transported down the river highway, on keel-boats and a variety of other craft, to the mouth of the river, then, and for years afterwards, there might always be seen in the harbor of St. Joseph, during the season of navigation, the clustering masts of the numerous vessels which came here to deliver their cargoes of such goods as were required in the region of the upper river, and to load with the flour, wheat, and other produce brought down by the river craft for shipment to Buffalo. This shipping business continued here until the completion of the railroads caused the river to be abandoned for purposes of transportation. With the entire cessation of this traffic the prosperous forwarding houses of St. Joseph closed their business, and the arrivals of sailing-vessels became infrequent, though they have never entirely ceased.

Steam navigation at this point may be said to have commenced in the year 1831, in which year the mouth of the river was visited by the steamer "Pioneer." The cause of her visit is not clearly explained, for it does not appear that she made regular trips here afterwards. At the time when the "Davy Crockett" was brought here (as will be mentioned hereafter) for the purpose of running on the river, she was conveyed by the "Pioneer," which latter vessel grounded on the bar at the mouth of the St. Joseph, and, being caught in that position by a gale which suddenly arose, became a total wreck and went to pieces. This was in July, 1834. The "Pioneer" was built at Erie, Pa., and on her first and last trip to this place was under command of Capt. John F. Wight, who was well known on the lake and on the St. Joseph as "Bully Wight." Material taken from the wreck of the "Pioneer" was used by Capt. Curtis Boughton to build the schooner "Drift," which he ran hence to Chicago for several years.

The steamer "William Penn" came to the mouth of the river as early as 1832, and it is said that she transported a detachment of regulars hence to Chicago during the "Black Hawk war" excitement of that year. The "Penn" was then under command of Capt. Wight, who had previously commanded the "Pioneer." He purchased the latter vessel

in 1833, and was, as before stated, in command of her when she was wrecked at St. Joseph, in 1834.

The side-wheel steamer "Chicago," owned by John Griffith & Co. and Capt. John F. Wight, was built on the St. Joseph River, near the mouth of Hickory Creek, in 1834-35, and in the last-named year was put on the route between St. Joseph and Chicago. She was one of the earliest steamers (if not the first one) which made regular trips between the two places. She continued to run on this route until she was sunk in "the bayou" at St. Joseph, near Wells' basket-factory. After lying there some two or three years she was raised, refitted, and taken to Lake Erie, where, after running a few years, she was finally wrecked and lost.

The steamer "G. W. Dole" was put on the route between Chicago and the St. Joseph River in 1838. She made three round trips per week, connecting with the eastern stage lines, which had their termini at St. Joseph. Not long afterwards the "Huron" was placed on the line by Capt. E. B. Ward, and ran during the seasons of 1842 and 1843. Next came the "Champion," which ran on the line for several years, owned and commanded by Capt. E. B. Ward. These boats, like the "Dole," ran for passengers, of whom there were frequently twelve or fifteen stage loads in St. Joseph at one time awaiting transportation across the lake. Travelers by this route made the journey from Detroit to Chicago in thirty-six hours.

Besides the steamers mentioned above, others ran at different times upon the line, and among them was the "Samuel Ward." The completion of the Central Railroad diverted both passengers and freight traffic from the river, and then for a time New Buffalo, instead of St. Joseph, was the focus of steam navigation on this part of the lake. Soon after this diversion of freight and passenger business, however, the sudden and wonderful development of the fruit interest in the region tributary to the St. Joseph caused a new demand for steam transportation to Chicago, and from that time the river-entrance was enlivened by more frequent arrivals and departures of steamers than in the earlier days, when stages clattered along the territorial road and keel-boats swarmed on the river. In the recent years the great diminution of the fruit-product, caused by the appearance of a fatal disease among the peach orchards, has proportionately diminished the demand for steam transportation at this point, but steamboat facilities sufficient for the requirements of the trade have been retained. At the present time (1879) the "Corona," of the Goodrich Transportation Company, makes daily trips to Chicago, and the "Skylark" and "Messenger," owned at Benton Harbor, are running.

Ship-building was commenced at St. Joseph as early as 1832 by Deacon & McKaleb, and not long after by John Griffith & Co. and others. During succeeding years a large number of vessels have been built at and near the mouth of the river. Several small vessels were also built on the upper river in early years. Among the first of these was a fifteen-ton sloop, built in 1832 by Dr. L. A. Barnard at La Grange Prairie, and hauled by oxen to Niles, where it was launched. This sloop, named the "Dart," ran from St. Joseph to Chicago. A schooner of about fifty tons was built in 1838,



by Henry Depty, at the south part of Bertrand. She was moved on ways to the river, and then floated to St. Joseph. Soon afterwards another small schooner was built at or near the mouth of McCoy's Creek, in Buchanan. In 1846 or 1847 parties from Chicago built a schooner, of some eighty tons' burden, on the bank of the river, about eight miles above Berrien Springs. There have probably been other lake vessels built on the upper river, but no accounts of their building have been obtained.

Inland navigation upon the St. Joseph River forms an item of considerable importance in the history of this section of country during something more than a quarter of a century from the time when the early settlements were made here. The account of this navigation which is given here is made up mainly of information furnished by Joseph W. Brewer, Esq., of St. Joseph, who was himself engaged in the river trade for many years.

The river transportation was carried on at first by the use of keel-boats, "arks," and flat-boats; but, later, steam-boats were employed, and these, of course, monopolized a great part of the traffic. In the year 1833—the time when Mr. Brewer came to St. Joseph—there were three keel-boats running on the river, viz., the "Antelope," of about thirty-five tons, built by Mr. Johnson, at South Bend, Ind., and commanded by Captain Benjamin Finch; the "St. Joseph," of about the same tonnage, also built at South Bend, and commanded by Captain Benjamin Putnam; and the "Constantine," of about forty tons, built at Constantine, Mich., and commanded and owned by Captain John McMillan. The "Kitty Kiddungo" and the "Three Rivers," both built at Three Rivers by Washington Gascon (and the latter commanded by him), came on the river two or three years later. Most of the freight carried up the river by these boats consisted of salt, groceries, provisions, hardware, and dry-goods. Their downward freight was, of course, rather meagre until the country became settled, and harvests were secured. The first cargo of wheat brought down the river was shipped in 1834, from Three Rivers, St. Joseph County, on board the "Constantine," of which boat Mr. Brewer formed one of the crew. Ten or twelve years later there were between fifty and sixty keel-boats plying on the river between St. Joseph and points on the river as far up as Three Rivers. Many of these were towed by the steamers on their upward trips.

The kind of boats called "arks" made their appearance on the river about 1833. These were simply rectangular cribs about forty by sixteen feet in dimensions, and two of these were usually coupled together. They were devised by Burroughs Moore, of St. Joseph County, and intended for the transportation of produce; but it was found by experience that nothing but flour could profitably be carried in them. The first one of these vessels which attempted the passage of the river started from Three Rivers, under command of James Smith and ——— Knapp, passed successfully down the river (with the exception of two or three minor accidents) until it reached the "Granddad ripple," above Niles, where it was wrecked, and its cargo of wheat became a total loss. This ended the arking business for three or four years; but when flour began to be more plenty, and considerable quantities of it

required transportation, the arks were again called into requisition, and became somewhat popular for that use.

An incident is related showing how, on one occasion, Captain Elisha Millard, being then in command of one of these arks, narrowly escaped serious disaster in St. Joseph harbor. There was a strong and rapid current in the river, and Captain Millard, miscalculating the velocity of his craft, attempted to "snub" it too suddenly at the wharf, when the line parted and the ark moved rapidly on towards the lake. As it floated on past a vessel which lay there a line was thrown to the captain, who at once made it fast; but here a new difficulty arose, for when the momentum of the ark was so suddenly checked, and the strong current began to act against the square perpendicular surface opposed to it, the first section of the awkward craft showed unmistakable symptoms of submersion, and it was only by a prompt slackening of the line, and the hasty transfer of a part of the cargo from the front to the rear section, that both were saved from going to the bottom.

The arks (usually carrying a cargo of four or five hundred barrels) were not brought back up the stream, but sold for what they would bring, or abandoned. But another experiment was tried,—of building a fleet of small arks carrying about twenty barrels each, and returning them over land on wagons, to be reloaded and sent down again. It does not appear that this plan was ever very successful. Flat-boats and pirogues were in early days used on the river to some extent for the transportation of light cargoes.

The "St. Joseph Navigation Company" was incorporated by act of Legislature, approved April 19, 1833, "for the purpose of improving the navigation of the St. Joseph River between the entrance of said river into Lake Michigan at its mouth and the northern boundary of Indiana." Henry B. Hoffman, Jacob Beeson, and Anson P. Brooks were appointed commissioners to receive subscriptions to the capital stock, which was authorized to the amount of fifty thousand dollars. Nothing, however, was done towards accomplishing the objects for which the act of incorporation was obtained.

The first steamboat which ran up the St. Joseph River was the "Newburyport," which was built at Erie, Pa. This steamer came to the St. Joseph and ran up as far as Berrien Springs in 1832, and this was her first and last trip on the river. She was wrecked at or near the Calumet, in 1835.

Next came the "Matilda Barney," which was built especially for this river by Deacon & McKale, at St. Joseph, in 1833. Her dimensions were, length of keel, eighty feet; breadth of beam, sixteen feet; depth of hold, three feet. She was of the class known as "stern-wheelers." Her commander was Captain Daniel T. Wilson, and her pilot Captain Ebenezer Farley. After running for several years she was taken to pieces and her machinery used in another boat.

The "Davy Crockett," another "stern-wheeler," was built at Erie, Pa., and brought to the St. Joseph by Captain John F. Wight for John Griffith & Co., in the summer of 1834, being designed especially for the river trade. She was commanded by Captain Pitt Brown, with Joseph Smith as pilot. The "Crockett" carried a peculiar figure-head, it being a nondescript, "half horse and half alligator," and

this, being connected with the exhaust-pipe of the engine by a smaller pipe, ejected a volume of steam from its mouth at every stroke of the pistons. The boat did but little business in the first year. In 1835 she ran on the river again, but with Captain Benjamin Putnam as commander, and J. W. Brewer and Moses D. Burke as pilots. In this year she did a prosperous business until August, when she ran on a rock, seven miles above Berrien Springs, broke in two, and sunk.

Soon after, the steamer "Patronage" was built by Hull & Co., and received the machinery of the "Crockett." She was placed on the river, under command of Captain Hull, and after running here a few seasons under him and Captain D. Farley went into the Grand River trade in 1841.

The "Pocahontas," a considerably larger boat than any of her predecessors on the river, was built in 1838, by Wheeler & Porter, forwarding merchants, of St. Joseph. Her builder was James Randall, and her master Captain Ebenezer Farley. Her career on the river was not very successful. She was found to draw too much water, and was withdrawn on that account. She was afterwards dismantled, and her engines transferred to the "Algoma."

The "Indiana" was built by Captain John McMillan in 1843. She was a side-wheeler, larger even than the "Pocahontas," and, being the most powerful, was also the swiftest, boat which had ever been on the river. Under command of Captain J. W. Brewer she made the passage from St. Joseph to Niles, against a strong current, and back to St. Joseph,—one hundred miles,—between sunrise and sunset, on three successive days, this being the quickest time ever recorded for any boat on the river.

The next boat on the river was the "Algoma," which was built at Mishawaka by Wheeler & Porter, of St. Joseph, in 1845, and made her first trip on September 14th of that year, under Captain Edward Smith. She was a more costly boat than any which had been put on the river, but, as her machinery was that of the old "Pocahontas," she was inferior in power and speed to the "Indiana." These two boats at this time, on their passages up the river, towed keel-boats to their various loading-places, where they received their cargoes of wheat, flour, pork, whisky, high wines, or other commodities, and then floated back to St. Joseph. There were some twenty or thirty of them which were towed in this way on their upward trips.

The "Mishawaka," also built at Mishawaka, soon after the "Algoma," was commanded by Captain A. Hamilton Smith. This vessel was of very peculiar construction, having on each side two wheels of about five feet in diameter, and placed about sixteen feet apart; and over these ran an endless chain, on which were fastened the buckets or paddles. This was claimed by the builders to be a more economical method of applying the propelling power than the usual one of the single paddle-wheel. Perhaps this may be true in theory, for this boat is represented as having been an unusually fast one,—in fact, so speedy as to render it difficult to steer her. But it was found to be of no practical utility, as the propelling apparatus was almost continually out of order, and often broken. Finally the endless chain of buckets was discarded, and the ordinary paddle-wheel substituted.

The steamer "Niles," a side-wheeler, was built, not far from the same time, by William B. Boeson, of Niles, and placed under command of Captain John Day, of South Bend. Afterwards she was in charge of Captain Darius Jennings. She was one of the most successful boats in the river trade.

The "Union" was a small boat built principally for the passenger trade, by Capt. John McMillan, of Constantine, and came on the river at about the same time as the "Niles." She had an upright tubular boiler, which, after about three months' use, was burned out and ruined. The boat was then sold to Kellogg & Bros., of Mottville, who refitted her, put in a horizontal boiler, and put her again on the river. Before she started from Mishawaka on her first trip down the river she was examined by Captain J. W. Brewer, who pronounced her unsafe, because liable to capsize, and gave it as his opinion that if she started on her trip she would never reach St. Joseph. The warning was disregarded, and the boat started on her trip, but, in passing the Mishawaka bridge, she struck the pier obliquely and capsized, as Captain Brewer had foreseen. In this accident Mr. Charles Kellogg, one of her owners, was drowned. After this disaster the two surviving brothers Kellogg, and Dr. Ingalls, of Mottville, formed a company and built the steamer "Michigan," a small but excellent boat, and placed her on the river, under command of Captain Harlow Gray. She plied between Mottville and St. Joseph until about 1852.

In the fall of 1848, the Central Railroad being pushed through from Kalamazoo to Niles, the St. Joseph owners sold their good steamers. The "Indiana" went to Chicago as a tug-boat, and the "Algoma" to Muskegon. There remained, however, the "Niles," Captain Brewer; the "Mishawaka," Captain Farley; and the "Michigan," Captain L. F. Warner; but in the spring of 1849 the first two named were sold to W. D. Thompson, general freight agent of the Central Railroad, with eight or ten keel-boats of the fleet which the steamers had been accustomed to tow up the river to their loading points (these keel-boats having most of them been owned by the same parties who owned the steamers). After this purchase by the railroad company, the "Niles" (still commanded by Captain Brewer), and the keel-boats were used on the upper river, bringing freight from Constantine and points below, to Niles, where it was elevated by steam-power into the company's warehouse,—a structure one hundred feet in height,—which had been built in 1848 on the bank of the river at Niles bridge. From this building the freight was transferred to the railroad. This traffic was successful during the short time it was continued. The steamer "Niles," however, proved deficient for the amount of towing required, and a new boat was built at Mishawaka expressly for the up-river trade, her dimensions being one hundred and eight feet keel, sixteen feet beam, four feet hold, and eighteen inches draft of water, with two engines of forty-horse power. The name given her was "John F. Porter," in honor of the gentleman of the same name, who was for a long time in the forwarding business at St. Joseph, and who was often mentioned by river men as "the boatman's friend." Mr. Porter, on examining this steamer, pronounced her construction perfect, and correctly prophesied that she would prove a success. The "Porter," under command of Captain Brewer,

previously of the "Niles," plied between Constantine and Niles until the fall of 1851, when the Michigan Southern Railroad, having extended its line westward to South Bend, cut off nearly all the up-river trade, and the boats were sold to parties in Grand Rapids for use on the Grand River. During all this time the steamer "Michigan" had struggled to keep up a transportation business on the river between Mottville and St. Joseph, and had continued running between those points; but on the completion of the Michigan Southern Railroad her owners gave up the contest, and sold the steamer and two keel-boats to parties in Chicago.

Besides the steamers above named, there have run upon the river at various times several others, among which were the "Pilot," Captain John McMillan; the "St. Joseph," Captain Charles F. Howe; and the "Schuyler Colfax," Captain Ezekiel Reynolds. The last-named steamer ran on the upper river, connecting with the Central Railroad at Niles, during the time in which the company carried on that branch of its business.

At the present time a small steamer makes daily trips during the season of navigation between St. Joseph and Berrien Springs.

Excepting the mouth of the St. Joseph River, New Buffalo properly claims the earliest navigation of any point on the coast of Berrien and Van Buren Counties. The discovery of a practicable haven for small vessels at that place was made by Wessel Whittaker in the fall of 1834, when traveling on foot to reach St. Joseph from State Creek, where the vessel which he commanded had been driven ashore and wrecked. Observing what he regarded as excellent natural harbor facilities, he purchased a tract of land there, plotted a paper village upon this purchase, and returned in the following spring. A few weeks afterwards there arrived a party made up of Russell Goodrich and others, who had purchased some of Mr. Whittaker's "village lots." This party came on board a schooner of which the name has not been ascertained, but which is said to have been—and undoubtedly was—the first vessel that ever made her port at that place. In June, a little later, another schooner arrived, bringing the families of several of the settlers. This was the beginning, but no results in the way of navigation of any importance followed. For a number of years, while the country was being cleared of its forests, wood droghers ran to and fro from New Buffalo, and a considerable business was done in the transportation of wood to Chicago. Some shipments of oats, corn, and other produce were made from here by schooner as early as 1837. About 1846 the steamer from St. Joseph to Chicago began touching at New Buffalo and Michigan City, and continued to do so for three or four seasons afterwards, but beyond this, and the occasional arrival and departure of small craft, very little use was made of the water facilities of the place, until the Central Railroad made its western terminus here, in 1849.

The railroad company had already made extensive improvements of the harbor by the construction of costly piers and other preparations for the projected steamer connection between the trains and the city of Chicago. These improvements made by the company cost about the sum of

two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. When the road was completed to the lake, and the trains commenced running, two steamers—the "Samuel Ward," Captain Thomas Buntline, and the "Pacific," a larger boat, under Captain Charles Cooper—were placed on the line which formed the Chicago connection. The "Pacific" lay at her dock, and received the passengers brought in by the first train. Both these steamers left daily for Chicago; so that New Buffalo suddenly found herself transformed from an out-of-the-way landing-place for occasional sloops and schooners to an important steamboat rendezvous. This state of affairs continued through the navigation seasons of 1849, 1850, and 1851, and then ceased, because the railroad company had extended its track into Indiana, and in the last-named year established its terminus (temporarily) at Michigan City. The "St. Joseph" steamer had discontinued her trips here with the close of the season of 1849, and now, with the withdrawal of the railroad steamers, the navigation interests of New Buffalo received their final extinguishment.

At South Haven, on the South Black River, at its mouth, where excellent navigation facilities are now afforded, and where the largest lake vessels can enter with ease, and lie in safety, there was really no harbor in existence prior to 1862, and for five years after that time the entrance was practicable for only the smallest sailing-vessels. In 1852 the village was plotted, and improvements were commenced, including the erection of extensive saw-mills, which required better facilities than then existed for the shipment of their lumber; but, although something was done with a view to make the mouth of the river more accessible, no substantial results were accomplished, and vessels loading here continued to receive their cargoes from lighters while lying outside the bar in the lake. The improvements made here by the combined action of South Haven and neighboring towns, in 1862 and following years, as well as the work done by the government in 1867, 1868, and afterwards, will be more fully mentioned in succeeding pages. By the improvements first mentioned the harbor was made practicable for the entrance of vessels, though only those of the smallest class; but the later operations by the government have made it accessible to the heaviest lake steamers.

Steam communication with Chicago has been enjoyed by South Haven since the improvement of the harbor by the government has made such navigation possible. The steamer "Ira Schaffer," owned in Saugatuck, touched here on her trips for about ten years. Later steamers running to and from South Haven have been the "Monitor," owned by Hannahs & Hale; the "Huron," owned by the same firm; the "Riverside," by J. P. Clark, of Detroit (ran in 1877); the "Metropolis," which ran here in 1878 until condemned; and the "Grace Grummond," which took the place of the "Metropolis," and is still (1879) running.

The arrivals at South Haven during the navigation season of 1879 were one hundred and seventy-one steamers and ninety-eight sailing-vessels. The clearances from the port during the same season were of one hundred and sixty-nine steamers and one hundred and two sailing-vessels;



being a total tonnage of sixty-five thousand three hundred and forty tons. The deputy collectors at this port have been B. H. Dyckman, William E. Stewart, and Charles Delamere, the present incumbent.

Following is a list of sailing-vessels which have been built and owned at South Haven, viz., "South Haven" (built in 1865), "Hattie Earle," "George L. Beaver" (three-mast), "Lillie Grey," "D. G. Wright," "L. Painter," "Marvin Hannahs," "O. Shaw," "William Smith," "Pascagoula," "S. P. Wilson" (three-mast), "Mary Ludwig," "Mary E. Packard," "C. J. Smith."

#### HARBOR IMPROVEMENTS.

The first of the harbors on the coast of Berrien and Van Buren Counties, as it was also the first on the east shore of Lake Michigan, on which improvements were made, either at the expense of the government or otherwise, was the harbor of St. Joseph, where a lighthouse was built in 1831. This structure—circular in form, and eighteen feet in diameter at the base—stood on the top of the bluff, on or very near the site of the present lighthouse and tower, which succeeded the old one after it had stood for twenty-eight years, a beacon to navigators upon the lake.

In 1834 a preliminary survey for bettering the condition of the harbor was made by Lieut. J. M. Berrien and a corps of engineers under his charge, and, upon his report, Congress, in 1835, made an appropriation of twenty-six thousand dollars to build a breakwater and to do other work necessary for securing a harbor of easier access and larger capacity. In reference to the improvements made here under this appropriation, the following extract is taken from an official report of harbor improvements on Lake Michigan: "The river, previous to any improvement, made a sharp bend to the southwest, near its present outlet, and entered Lake Michigan about 1200 feet from its present outlet. The improvement of the harbor was begun by the United States in 1836, and the work constructed from that time to 1866 was about 1312 feet of piling, of which 1100 feet constituted the north and 212 feet the south pier, embracing the revetment of the cut through the narrow tongue of sand."

A survey was made in 1863 by Col. W. F. Reynolds, preliminary to further improvement. "At that time the channel was 240 feet wide; confined by the north pier 1100 feet, and south pier 212 feet, the river spreading into a basin 800 feet wide. Two channels were formed, one by the Paw Paw River and the other by the St. Joseph, with depth of water not less than 12 feet at the entrance of the harbor, and nine feet water-way inward." Plans of further improvement were made in 1866, embracing the extension of the south pier 200 feet, which was completed during the fiscal year of 1867-68. Surveys were made in November, 1868, and August, 1869, but nothing was accomplished beyond the surveys.

The annual reports of harbor improvements show appropriations for St. Joseph harbor as follows: For 1870, \$15,000; 1871, \$10,000; 1872, for repairs, \$3000; 1873, repairs, \$2000; 1875, \$35,000; 1876, \$12,000; 1878, \$12,000; and the appropriation for 1879 is \$10,953. In

1871 the south pier was extended 416 feet, and in 1872-73 the appropriations were used for repairs and protection of work. In 1876, on account of the increased tonnage of Benton Harbor and the necessity of protecting and fostering the fruit interest, an appropriation was asked to dredge away the bar, build a wing-dam, and construct a revetment in Paw Paw River.

The operations for 1878-79 were to construct and sink two cribs in extension of the north pier, one 50 by 24 by 22½ feet, the other 50 by 30 by 22½ feet. The operations for 1879, with the appropriation of \$10,953, were the construction for north pier, of a crib 50 by 30 by 26½ feet, the completion of a wing-dam at the mouth of Benton Harbor canal by extension 200 feet, and the building of a trimming wall or dam of brush and stone 300 feet, at root of wing-dam, to confine Paw Paw River to its channel.

The harbor of New Buffalo was first known and visited in 1834, as has been mentioned. At about the same time Lieut. Eveleth, who was engaged in a survey of the southeastern shores of Lake Michigan, was drowned, at or near the entrance of this harbor. Some time after, Lieuts. Berrien and Rose were sent by the government to make a survey and examination of this part of the coast and of the mouth of Galien River, in regard to its adaptation for harbor purposes. Lieut. T. B. W. Stockton, of the regular army (afterwards colonel of the 1st Michigan Regiment, in the Mexican war, and colonel of the 16th Michigan, in the war of the Rebellion), was also detailed in the spring of 1838 to make an examination into the advisability of erecting a lighthouse and making some harbor improvements at this place. The reports of these officers were favorable, and an appropriation was finally made for the erection of a lighthouse at this point.

The place had then scarcely been heard of as a lake-port, and the Secretary of War wrote letters to several persons, inquiring as to where the proposed lighthouse was to be located. The site was decided on in September, 1838, and the lighthouse was built in the following year. The structure appears to have been located without much judgment, for about eighteen years after its erection its foundation became undermined by the action of the water, and it toppled and fell. No new light-tower was erected in its place, for the reason that the navigation centering at the harbor was no longer of sufficient importance to require a light.

For the purpose of improving the harbor and rendering it more accessible, an appropriation of ten thousand dollars was made about 1854. A part of this appropriation was used in the purchase of timber, but beyond this nothing was done at that time, and the unexpended balance of the ten thousand dollars was covered into the treasury. A further appropriation, however, was secured, in or about 1865, to the amount of thirty thousand dollars, and this, or a large portion of it, was expended in crib-work at the harbor entrance. This was the last money expended on the harbor of New Buffalo. Previously (1847 to 1849) the Michigan Central Railroad Company had expended here five times the amount which has ever been appropriated by government for the improvement of the harbor.

The total amount expended by the government and the company at this place is fully three hundred thousand dollars, the results of which have long since ceased to be of any practical utility.

South Haven Harbor was first improved (or rather it may be said to have been created) by work which was commenced in 1862 and continued through several following years, and which was paid for with funds voted by South Haven and other townships interested in the securing of harbor facilities at this point. Prior to the time named, and after the erection of the lumber-mills at South Haven, something had been done towards improvement, but the results were of very little importance, and the mouth of the river remained virtually closed against navigation.

In 1861 the Legislature passed an act (approved February 25th) "to provide for the laying of a special tax in certain townships in Van Buren and Allegan Counties, herein named, for the improvement of South Black River, in the county of Van Buren." This act provided "that the legal voters of the townships of South Haven, Deerfield, Bangor, Arlington, Columbia, and Geneva, in the county of Van Buren, and the townships of Casco, Ganges, and Lee, in the county of Allegan, are hereby authorized and empowered to vote annually for ten years, at the annual township-meetings for the election of township officers, for a special tax, not exceeding one per cent. on the taxable property of each township, to be expended in improvement of the harbor of South Black River, in the county of Van Buren." Emory O. Briggs, of Arlington, Daniel G. Wright, of South Haven, and Timothy McDowell, of Casco, were appointed commissioners "to receive orders drawn on township treasurers for all moneys, and to appropriate the same for the improvement of said harbor."

The aggregate amount raised by the several townships under the provisions of this act was nearly twenty thousand dollars. The improvements made by aid of this fund consisted of piling, piling for the protection of the river banks, and other work. Two piers were built, extending into the lake, diverging from each other at an angle of thirty degrees, and the north one being the longer. These piers were of crib-work, except about eighty feet of the north one, which was of piles. The banks of the river, for a distance of five hundred feet on each side, were protected by close piling. This work was done in 1862 and a few succeeding years, but, although a comparatively large sum was thus expended, the harbor was not made accessible, except for vessels of small size.

Repeated petitions for a government appropriation for this harbor finally resulted in an order for a preliminary survey, which was made in November, 1866, and a plan was reported by the engineer for the construction of two parallel piers, one hundred and eighty feet apart, to be extended into the lake to a depth of twelve feet of water. Upon this report an appropriation of forty-three thousand dollars was made in 1867, and the work was commenced in the same year. In November, 1868, there had been constructed three hundred and fifty-two feet of piling on the north side of the channel, and three hundred and twenty feet on the south side. In August, 1869, another survey was

made, and under this survey work was commenced June 14, 1870. While the operations were in progress another survey was made (Aug. 17 to 24, 1871); and when the work was completed, in 1872, the north pier had been extended four hundred feet and the south pier four hundred and fifty-two feet. In soundings made April 10th to 19th, in that year, an average depth of eight and one-half feet of water was found at the entrance, and not less than seven feet in any part of the channel, though the lake level was at that time about a foot lower than in previous years.

In a report made by O. C. Lathrop, H. E. Bidwell, and A. S. Dyckman,\* in 1871, these gentlemen, in referring to the harbor and shipping facilities of South Haven, make this remark: "It is a village of about two thousand inhabitants, having increased to that number from four hundred in the last four years. Four years ago she had no harbor, the shifting sands of Lake Michigan blockading the mouth of the river, so that it was accessible only to the smallest sailing-craft. Now, by means of piling, she has a harbor capable of accommodating the largest vessels and steamers that ply on the great lakes."

In 1871 a lighthouse was built on the south pier, mounting a Funk hydraulic lamp of the fifth order. It was first used in 1872. The first keeper was Capt. William P. Bryan, who was succeeded in 1874 by Capt. J. A. Donahue, the present keeper.

In the spring of 1873 repairs were made on the south pier, and both were extended. Up to August of that year the north pier extension had reached two hundred feet, and the south pier fifty feet. On the 18th of November, 1873, a heavy northwest gale drove the crib at the head of the north pier from its place, and on the 13th of March, 1874, the crib at the end of the south pier was displaced. These cribs were re-sunk in 1874, and soundings made at that time developed a depth of nine feet of water from the lake to the warehouse dock.

In the winter of 1875 a breach was made through the south pier, which increased during the winter and spring to a length of ninety feet. From this cause the channel was filled so that but six and one-half feet of water was found at that point, which prevented vessels from entering, and obliged them to load and unload at the pier outside the obstruction. The breach was repaired in the spring of 1876, and five hundred and twenty-five feet of pile revetment was added to the north pier during the same season.

The operations of 1878-79 were confined to the construction of four hundred and fifty feet of revetment, extending the north revetment in an easterly direction, with dredging of the channel, and necessary repairs.

The appropriations which have been made for this harbor since the first appropriation of \$43,000 have been as follows: In 1870, \$10,000; 1871, \$15,000; 1872, \$12,000; 1873, \$20,000; 1874, \$10,000; 1875, \$10,000; 1876, \$10,000; 1878, \$12,000; 1879, \$12,400. The appropriation of 1879 was applied to extension of the north pier by the sinking of cribs and to the dredging of the channel.

\* A committee appointed by the South Haven Pomological Society to prepare a report on the advantages of this section for the growing and shipment of fruit.

The lake coast of Van Buren and Berrien Counties has proved a dangerous one to navigators, as is shown by the great number of wrecks with which it has been strewed during the past half-century. A few of the earliest disasters occurring here were, the loss of the steamer "Pioneer," before mentioned; of the large schooner "Bridget," Capt. Peter Druyca, which foundered eighteen miles north of the mouth of the St. Joseph and was lost, with all hands (fourteen in number, including passengers), in the fall of 1834; the wreck (but not total loss) of the schooner "Juliet," in the same year, just north of the mouth of the St. Joseph; the drowning of the captain, four sailors, and a passenger of the schooner "Austerlitz," in attempting to land at St. Joseph in 1833; the total loss of the steamer "Champlain," on the coast of Berrien, in 1838; the wrecking of the three-masted schooner "Laporte," Capt. Webster, at the entrance of South Haven harbor, in the fall of 1838; and the loss of the schooner "Florida," near the same place, in 1842. If the various disasters on this section of the coast, from that time to the present, were enumerated in detail, the list would be a long and formidable one. One of the most heartrending of the disasters was the loss of the steamer "Hippocampus" on her passage from St. Joseph to Chicago, in 1868. The loss of this vessel is more fully mentioned in the history of St. Joseph.

## CHAPTER VII.

### INTERNAL IMPROVEMENTS.

Early Routes of Travel—The River Highway—Indian Trails—Roads cut by Pioneers—The "Chicago Road"—Territorial Roads—State Roads—Plank-Roads—Stage Routes—Railroads—The Detroit and St. Joseph Railroad Company—The Michigan Central Railroad—The Michigan Southern—Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad—The Constantine and Niles Canal or Railroad Company—St. Joseph Valley Railroad Company—Elkhart and Lake Michigan Railroad—Chicago and West Michigan Railroad—Paw Paw Railroad—Toledo and South Haven Railroad—Michigan Air-Line Railroad.

In all countries and regions where the first settlers are of the Anglo-Saxon race, their earliest labors are directed to the securing of practicable routes of travel; and the opening of these, however rude and primitive they may be, is the first step in the direction of public internal improvement. The immigrant, in traveling towards his prospective home in the wilderness, must bestow some labor—be it more or less—in opening a route over which to reach it with his family and the few household necessities which he brings with him. In heavily-timbered countries—such as was a large part of the region to which this history has especial reference—this task is often a heavy one, while it is comparatively trifling in such a country as was found in other portions of Berrien and Van Buren Counties,—a country more thinly wooded, where access could be had to almost any spot through the convenient openings. But even in these parts the new-comers were obliged to have frequent recourse to the axe to open a path through intervening thickets, or to fell a few trees to make a solid way across streams or marshy places. And this work, though light and insignificant, was road-building,—an improvement

which it was necessary to make before the settler could reach the spot where his cabin was to be reared.

Those who came to settle in the valley of the St. Joseph, entering the country from the south and southeast, found a practicable highway in the river, down which they could float in pirogues and other light craft, and thus reach their destinations (if these chanced to be in the vicinity of the stream) with comparative ease. But this was the case with only a small proportion of the settlers even in Berrien, while in Van Buren County, nature had prepared no such convenient water-way, and routes of travel could only be had by opening them through the heavy forest-growth which sprang from the fertile soil.

The first land highways were the Indian trails, of which there were several passing through this region. One of these, coming from the Ottawa settlements at L'Arbre Croche (at Little Traverse Bay), passed southward through the wilderness to the rapids of the Grand River, and thence through the present counties of Kent, Allegan, and Van Buren to the villages of the *Pottawattamies*, on the St. Joseph. Another, starting from Saginaw, passed up the Saginaw and Shiawassee Rivers, and through the forests to Ionia (or where Ionia now is), and thence southwestwardly through Barry and Van Buren Counties to the *Pottawattamie* headquarters. These trails, branching, led both to the mouth of the St. Joseph and to the more numerous villages in the vicinity of Niles. There were other trails leading from the dominion of old Topinabé in various directions, including those running south to the Wabash and eastwardly to the Kalamazoo and the head-waters of the Grand and Huron Rivers. But the principal one—the one over which there was more Indian travel than any, and probably more than on all the others—was that which, leading southward from Green Bay and the rivers of Wisconsin, passed round the head of Lake Michigan, thence northeasterly by way of Pokagon's village in the southeast part of Berrien, and on through the wilderness to the Detroit River. It was over this trail that from time immemorial the warriors of the *Sauk*, *Outagamie*, *Winnebago*, and other tribes had passed in their expeditions, and it was along this great path that for many years following 1815 almost entire tribes—men, women, and children—traveled on their way from the northwest to Malden, in Canada, where once a year the British government disbursed the annuities (a small sum per capita to Indians of both sexes and all ages), promised in payment of the services rendered by the savages in the war of 1812. The route of this ancient Indian highway was almost identical with that of the later "Chicago road,"\* over which many of the early immigrants passed on their way to places of settlement in Southwestern Michigan.

By act of Congress, passed April 30, 1824, the President of the United States was authorized "to cause the necessary surveys, plans, and estimates to be made of the routes of such roads and canals as he may deem of national importance in a commercial or military point of view, or

\* Article VI. of the treaty held at Chicago in 1821 provides that "the United States shall have the privilege of making and using a road through the Indian country, from Detroit and Fort Wayne, respectively, to Chicago."



necessary for the transportation of the public mail." He was also authorized to employ two or more skillful engineers for the purpose, and the sum of thirty thousand dollars was appropriated for the surveys. This was the first of the Congressional acts which resulted in the construction of the old Detroit and Chicago road, this being one of the principal routes which the President "deemed of national importance," and for the survey of which the sum of ten thousand dollars was apportioned from the appropriation made by Congress. The great influence of Gen. Cass was exerted, and was very effective, in procuring the location and construction of this road.

In the survey—commenced at the eastern end in 1825—the chief engineer started on the plan of running on nearly straight lines. He soon found, however, that if he followed this plan, cutting a vista for his compass through the dense woods, and spending a large part of his time in searching out good routes and eligible bridge-crossings, the money would all be expended long before he would have completed his work. So he determined to follow the "Chicago trail,"—the old pathway which the Indians had followed for ages. This he did so faithfully that it is said there is not an angle, bend, or turn of the Indian trail which is not preserved by the present road from Chicago to Detroit, except for a short distance in Washtenaw County. This is a somewhat exaggerated statement, but a glance at the map will show that there are angles enough in the present road to give some color of truth to it.

The Indians had avoided the worst marshes, which were the principal obstructions to road-making, and, what was equally important, they had selected the best fording places of the creeks and rivers. The trail, and consequently the road, passed from Detroit southwesterly, crossing the original southern boundary line of Michigan surveys\* in range 9 west, continuing westward between that line and the present boundary line of Michigan, crossing the St. Joseph River at the mouth of Pigeon River, continuing westwardly, nearly in a direct line, to "Parc aux Vaches," the Bertrand trading post, on the St. Joseph River, and west through the village of the Indian chief Pokagon, passing out of the State of Michigan five and a half miles west of the St. Joseph River. This route was surveyed through Cass and Berrien Counties in 1832 and 1833 by Daniel G. Gamsey, afterwards one of the proprietors of Bertrand village. The road was not completed until 1836.

In the period extending from 1829 to the erection of Michigan as a State, the Legislative Council of the Territory authorized the laying out and establishment of a number of roads leading to the St. Joseph, Black, and Galien Rivers, and to other objective points within the counties of Berrien and Van Buren. The first of these (authorized by act approved Nov. 4, 1829) was a "Territorial road, commencing in the Chicago road, at or near the inn of Timothy S. Sheldon, in the township of Plymouth, in the county of Wayne;

thence west, on the most eligible route through the village of Ann Arbor, by Samuel Clement's, to Grand River, where the St. Joseph trail crosses the same, and also through the Cohgwigiac and Grand Prairies; thence westerly, on the most eligible route to or near the Paw Paw, to the mouth of St. Joseph River, of Lake Michigan." The commissioners appointed by the act "to lay out and establish" this road were Seely Neal, of Panama, Orren White, of Ann Arbor, in the county of Washtenaw, and Jehial Enos, of Grand Prairie of Kalamazoo.

A road was authorized by act approved July 30, 1830, "commencing where the township road laid out by the commissioners of Ontwa township, Cass Co., from Pleasant Lake, in a direction to Pulaski, in Indiana, intersects the southern boundary line between the Territory of Michigan and the State of Indiana; thence on the road laid out as aforesaid until it intersects the Chicago road a few rods east of the post-office, near the house of Ezra Beardsley, running thence, on the most eligible and practicable route to the entrance of the river St. Joseph, into Lake Michigan." The commissioners appointed to lay out and establish this road were George Meachem, John Bogert, and Squire Thompson.

By act of the Legislative Council, approved in June, 1832, two Territorial roads were authorized to be laid out and established partially in Berrien County, viz.:

A road "commencing at the county seat of Branch County, running westerly, on the most direct and eligible route, through the seats of justice for St. Joseph and Cass Counties, to the mouth of St. Joseph River." Squire Thompson, C. K. Green, and Alexander Redfield, commissioners. And "a territorial road commencing at Jacksonburg, in the county of Jackson, thence running southwesterly, on the most direct and eligible route, to or near the north bend of St. Joseph River, in range 5, west; thence westerly, on the most direct and eligible route, through Big Prairie Ronde, to the mouth of St. Joseph River." Lyman J. Daniels, Edwin H. Lathrop, and William E. Perrin were appointed commissioners to lay out and establish this road.

In March and April, 1833, the council passed acts authorizing and directing the laying out of the following Territorial roads:

1. "A road beginning at the village of Niles, in Berrien County; thence running, on the most direct and eligible route, through the county-seat of Kalamazoo County, to the village of Saginaw, in Saginaw County." Lucius Lyon, Jacob Beeson, and Ephraim S. Williams, commissioners.

2. "A road commencing at or near the mouth of the St. Joseph River, in the county of Berrien, thence to the northern boundary of Indiana, on the most direct and eligible route, towards South Bend, in Indiana; provided the commissioners appointed to lay out the road do not cause it to be laid through the reservation belonging to the *Pottawattamie* Indians without their consent." James F. Law, Lemuel L. Johnson, and Jehial Enos were the commissioners appointed to lay out and establish.

3. A road "from at or near the mouth of St. Joseph River, in Berrien County, thence running to the northern boundary of Indiana, on the most direct and eligible route

\* The south boundary of the original surveys of the public lands of Southern Michigan was three and a half miles north of the present southern boundary of the State. This line, as well as the route of the Chicago road, is shown on a "Plat of the Northern Boundary of Indiana, Surveyed in Conformity to Act of Congress, 'To authorize the President of the United States to ascertain and designate the Northern Boundary of Indiana,' passed March 24, 1825."

to Chicago, in the State of Illinois." John Wittenmyer, Jehial Enos, and Fowler Preston, commissioners.

4. "A road from the village of Schoolcraft, in Kalamazoo County, on the most direct and eligible route, by the Paw Paw Landing, to the mouth of Black River, between the mouth of St. Joseph and Kalamazoo Rivers." Joseph A. Smith, John Perrine, and Abiel Fellows, commissioners.

5. Sterling Adams, Charles Jones, and Lyman J. Danils were appointed commissioners "to lay out and establish a road from Adamsville, in Cass County, on the most direct and eligible route, to the Paw Paw River, at or near the centre of Van Buren County."

6. George Meachem, Elijah Lacey, and Fowler Preston were appointed commissioners "to lay out a road from Edwardsburg, in Cass County, through the village of Niles, to the mouth of St. Joseph River, in Berrien County."

On the 7th of March, 1834, the three following-named roads were ordered laid out and established, viz.:

1. A road "to be laid out from Mottville, through St. Joseph, Cass, and Berrien Counties, to the mouth of St. Joseph River." Henry H. Fowler, Hart L. Stewart, and John Woolman, commissioners.

2. "A road from Niles, in Berrien County, on the most direct and eligible route, to the mouth of Galien River, in that county." Erasmus Winslow, Jacob Beeson, and Benjamin Redding, commissioners.

3. A road "from Marshall, in Calhoun County, through Climax Prairie, on the most direct and eligible route, to the county-seat of Van Buren County." Michael Spencer, Benjamin F. Dwinnell, and Nathaniel E. Matthews, commissioners.

An act, approved Jan. 30, 1835, appointed James Cowen, Michael Beedle, and D. McCamly commissioners "to lay out and establish a road from Jacksonburg through Cassopolis to the mouth of St. Joseph River;" and by the same act, James Newton, Henry Jones, and Elijah Lacey were authorized to lay out a road from Cassopolis to Galien River.

A large number of State roads were authorized by the first Legislature of Michigan, at the session of 1835-36, several of which were laid out in the counties of Berrien and Van Buren, or across some parts of their territory. An act approved March 26, 1836, provided that "there shall be laid out and established, a State road from Edwardsburg, in Cass Co., *via* Cassopolis, Volinia, and Paw Paw Mills, to Allegan, in Allegan County." David Crane, Jacob Silver, and John L. Shearer were appointed commissioners for the purpose. The same act appointed Albert E. Bull, Nathaniel M. Thomas, Alexander Copeley commissioners "to lay out and establish a road from Schoolcraft, in Kalamazoo County, to the village of St. Joseph, in Berrien County." A State road was also authorized at the same time "to be laid out from the mouth of the Galien River to the mouth of the St. Joseph River, Berrien County." John Wittenmyer, John F. Porter, William G. Baller, commissioners.

The following roads were authorized by act of July 26, 1836, viz.:

1. A State road "from Paw Paw Mills, in the village of Paw Paw, Van Buren County, leading through the village of Otsego, to the falls of Grand River, in the county of

Kent." Samuel Foster, Oka Town, and John Brackett, commissioners.

2. A State road "from French's tavern, on the Chicago road, at the crossing of Prairie River, to Constantine, in St. Joseph County; thence to Cassopolis, crossing the river at Buck's tavern, and from thence to the mouth of St. Joseph River." Thomas Langley, George Buck, and E. B. Sherwood, commissioners.

3. A road "from Constantine, in St. Joseph County, through Berrien, to New Buffalo village." Wessel Whittaker, R. E. Ward, and Thomas Charlton, commissioners.

4. A road from Constantine to Niles. William F. House, H. W. Griswold, and Robert S. Griffin, commissioners.

5. A road "from Detroit River through the centre of township 4 south of base line to Clark's Lake, and thence to St. Joseph River." Daniel C. Vreeland, Abraham C. Truax, and Eli Bradshaw, commissioners.

6. A road "from Centreville, in St. Joseph County, through Cassopolis, and through Berrien, to the entrance of Galien River into Lake Michigan." E. P. Toll, Robert E. Ward, and Wessel Whittaker, commissioners.

7. "A State road from Geneva, on the most direct and eligible route, to the entrance of St. Joseph River into Lake Michigan." H. L. Stewart, John Wittenmyer, and E. P. Sanger, commissioners.

8. A road "from Constantine, in St. Joseph County, to the mouth of the St. Joseph River, by the most direct and eligible route." William F. House, James Odell, and Moody Emerson, commissioners.

The following-named roads were authorized by legislative act, approved March 17, 1837:

1. A State road from Whitmanville to the State road, at or near Bainbridge. Charles J. Martin, C. Whitman, John P. Davis, and Jehial Enos, commissioners.

2. A State road from Whitmanville to St. Joseph. Eleazer Morton, John Wolver, and E. H. Spaulding, commissioners.

3. A road from Cassopolis through Berrien to New Buffalo. Abiel Silver, Isaac Sumner, and Pitt Brown, commissioners.

4. A State road from Liverpool, in Berrien County, to Berrien. Pitt Brown, William Huff, and E. P. Deacon were appointed commissioners.

5. A road "from Berrien, in Berrien County, through Bainbridge, to South Haven, in Van Buren County." Pitt Brown, John P. Davis, and E. P. Deacon, commissioners.

6. A State road from St. Joseph, in Berrien County, to the southern boundary of the State, on the most eligible route, towards South Bend, Ind. Joseph Bertrand, John K. Finley, and John Wittenmyer, commissioners.

7. A road "from St. Joseph to the southern boundary of the State, on the most direct and eligible route, towards Lakeport, Ind." John Wittenmyer, Hart L. Stewart, and Sampson Stanberry, commissioners.

8. A road "from the village of Berrien, running westwardly until it intersects the State road leading from St. Joseph to New Buffalo." William F. St. John, James T. Lord, and Joseph F. Barnum, commissioners.

The fever for laying out State roads appears to have

abated during 1838 and 1839, but again, on April 1, 1840, an act was approved, which authorized the establishment of the following:

1. A road commencing at some point at or near the north bank of the river St. Joseph, in the county of Berrien, in the vicinity of the village of St. Joseph; thence running in an easterly direction, on the most eligible route, to the village of La Grange, formerly called Whitmansville, in Cass County.\* L. L. Johnson, Morgan Enos, and Jacob Allen, commissioners.

2. A road "commencing at the village of St. Joseph, in the county of Berrien, running in a southerly direction, on the most eligible route, to New Buffalo, in the same county." The commissioners on this road were Fowler Preston, Isaac O. Adams, and William C. Hammel.

3. A road "to commence at the village of St. Joseph, or at some point on some of the highways leading to or from said village, and to run in a southerly direction till it intersects the southern boundary of the State." E. A. Morton, William Huff, Eleazer Lord, commissioners.

4. A State road "commencing at or near the north bank of the river St. Joseph, in the vicinity of the village of St. Joseph, in the county of Berrien; thence in a southeasterly direction to the village of Niles, in the same county." Daniel Olds, Jr., David S. Rector, and Job Brookfield, commissioners.

Other State roads were authorized April 7, 1846, as follows: One "commencing at the village of Buchanan, in the county of Berrien, running thence to New Buffalo." Hezekiah Mitchell, Nathaniel Stratton, Samuel Garwood, and John P. Johnson, commissioners. Another, "commencing at Buchanan, running on the most eligible route to the village of Berrien." Joseph Demont, John Engle-right, Jesse Helmick, and Jacob Stotter, commissioners. Also, "a road from the village of Buchanan, on the most eligible route, to some point at Terre Coupee Prairie on the State line best suited to connect with the Chicago turn-pike." John Reynolds, Hezekiah Mitchell, and Joseph G. Ames, commissioners.

On April 3, 1848, an act was passed appropriating seven thousand acres of the internal improvement lands of the State "for opening and improving of the State road from Constantine, in St. Joseph County, to Paw Paw, in Van Buren County."

It is to be borne in mind that to "lay out and establish" a road—particularly in the earlier years—was not equivalent to opening and making it ready for travel, but that in many instances years intervened between the time when a highway was laid out by the commissioners and the time when it was made passable for vehicles, and that it was not unfrequently the case that roads which had been authorized and laid out were never opened. This was the case with regard to a number of those mentioned in preceding pages.

#### PLANK-ROADS.

About the year 1848 the construction of plank-roads began to come into general favor in Michigan, and nearly

An act was passed March 28, 1848, appropriating three thousand acres of the internal improvement lands of the State for the purpose of opening and improving this road.

every county in the settled portion of the State had some part of its territory traversed by the routes of these highways,—projected, if not actually constructed and put in operation. The first project of this kind, the proposed route of which would cross any part of the counties of Van Buren and Berrien, was that of the "Paw Paw Plank-Road Company," which was incorporated by act of the Legislature, approved April 3, 1848. This company was empowered "to lay out, establish, and construct a plank-road and all necessary buildings, from the village of Paw Paw, in the county of Van Buren, on the most eligible route, to some point on the Central Railroad, at or near where the Little Prairie Ronde road crosses the Central Railroad." Isaac W. Willard, James Crane, and Nathan Mears were appointed to receive subscriptions to the capital stock, which was authorized to the amount of ten thousand dollars. The incorporation was for sixty years, but subject to repeal at any time, under certain conditions; and it was so repealed by act approved Feb. 12, 1855.

The New Buffalo and La Porte Plank-Road Company was incorporated by act of Feb. 13, 1849, with an authorized capital stock of five thousand dollars. Commissioners, Isaac O. Adams, George W. Allen, Alonzo Bennett, L. N. Bowsby, and Edwin Ballengee.

The Niles and Mottville and the Decatur, Lawrence and Breedsville Plank-road Companies were incorporated March 22, 1849. The stock of the latter company was placed at forty thousand dollars, and the proposed route of its road was as indicated by its title. Aaron W. Broughton, Marvin Hannahs, William B. Sherwood, Henry Coleman, J. N. Hinckley, Milo J. Goss, B. F. Chadwick, H. N. Phillips, Israel Phelps, and John Andrews were named as commissioners. The Niles and Mottville Company was empowered to construct a plank-road between these termini, "by way of Edwardsburg, Adamsville, or Cassopolis." The commissioners named to receive subscriptions were James L. Glenn, H. P. Mather, J. M. Finley, H. B. Hoffman, Nathaniel Bacon, George Meachem, Ezra Hatch, Moses Jay, Hiram Hollibard, Orrin E. Thompson, H. Follett, and Norman Sage. Capital stock authorized, one hundred thousand dollars.

The Lake Michigan and Terre Coupee Plank-Road Company was incorporated March 31, 1849. Capital stock authorized, twenty-five thousand dollars. Commissioners, H. E. Crosby, E. N. Shead, J. P. Johnson, Moses Chamberlain, A. Emery, and Elkanah Ryther. The route over which the company was empowered to build its road was "from the State line, near the village of Terre Coupee, Ind., to the village of New Buffalo, or to some point on the Michigan Central Railroad."

The following plank-road companies were incorporated by acts of March, 1850, viz:

1. The Niles and State Line Plank-Road Company. Capital, twenty thousand dollars. Commissioners, Jacob Beeson, Nathaniel Bacon, Richard P. Barker, and William McComber. This company was empowered to build a road from Niles to the Indiana State line, running on the east side of the St. Joseph River.

2. The Breedsville and South Haven Plank-Road Company, to build between the points indicated. Capital,



twenty-five thousand dollars. Commissioners, Marvin Hannahs, Elijah Knowles, Joseph B. Sturges, Smith Brown, and Jonathan Hinckley.

3. The Paw Paw and Lawrence Plank-Road Company. Capital, twenty-five thousand dollars. Commissioners, Fitz H. Stevens, J. R. Baker, and Nelson Phelps. This company was empowered to build "from any point in the village of Paw Paw, on the most eligible route, to the village of Lawrence, in Van Buren County."

4. The Paw Paw and Schoolcraft Plank-Road Company, "to construct a plank-road from the village of Paw Paw Station, on the Central Railroad, in the county of Van Buren, on the most eligible route, to the village of Schoolcraft, in the county of Kalamazoo." Capital authorized, twenty thousand dollars. Commissioners, Edward A. Parks, Uriah Kinney, Evert B. Dyckman, and Isaac W. Willard.

5. The Paw Paw and Allegan Plank-Road Company, to construct a road "commencing at the village of Paw Paw, in the county of Van Buren, and terminating and intersecting with the Kalamazoo and Grand River Plank-Road, at the most eligible point, in the county of Allegan." Capital, twenty thousand dollars. Commissioners, J. W. Willard, James Crane, and J. R. Baker, of Van Buren County, and Henry H. Booth, Joseph Fisk, Abraham Hoag, Joshua Hill, Charles Parkhurst, D. W. C. Chapin, Eber Sherwood, and A. Rossman, of Allegan County.

6. The Decatur and St. Joseph Plank-Road Company, to construct a road "commencing at the village of Decatur, in Van Buren County, on the most eligible route, and terminating at the village of St. Joseph, in Berrien County." Capital, thirty thousand dollars. Commissioners, Solomon Wheeler, B. C. Hoyt, Henry C. Morton, and Samuel McRoys, of Berrien County, and William Sherwood, Henry Coleman, and W. H. Keeler, of Van Buren County.

7. The Lawrence and St. Joseph Plank-Road Company, empowered to build "from such point in the township of Lawrence, in the county of Van Buren, as the commissioners may determine, to St. Joseph, in the township of St. Joseph, in Berrien County." Commissioners, H. W. Phelps, John Andrews, Isaac N. Swain, John R. Haynes, Talman Wheeler, B. C. Hoyt, Henry C. Morton, and Gelson Osgood. Capital authorized, fifty thousand dollars.

A number of other companies became incorporated afterwards under the general law, but no plank-roads were built and put in operation within the counties of Berrien and Van Buren except three of the above-mentioned, viz., that from Paw Paw to the Central Railroad, which was controlled by Isaac W. Willard and kept up until 1853; the road from Paw Paw to Lawrence, of which John R. Baker was the leading spirit, and which was also kept in operation till about 1853; and a section of about five miles of road extending from Niles, on the Niles and Mottville Company's route. All of these three roads were failures as to the realization of any profit to their stockholders.

The mention made above of the numerous companies which accomplished nothing beyond the obtaining of acts of incorporation is made for the purpose of showing how general was the plank-road mania at that time in these counties, as in other portions of the State. It also shows that the several projects were and the names of their originators.

## STAGE-ROUTES.

The first stage-line which entered the territory to which this history has reference was that which was started in the spring of 1831, by Col. Alamanson Huston, to run between Niles and Detroit. Col. Huston was soon afterwards succeeded in the proprietorship of this line by Jones & Avery, of White Pigeon, who continued to operate it until the end of 1832. At this time the stages made the round trip between Niles and Detroit in about seven days.

With the opening of 1833, immigration to the western part of the State began to increase rapidly, and in that year, De Garmo Jones, Benjamin B. Kercheval, Maj. Robert A. Forsyth, of Detroit, and Joseph W. Brown, of Tecumseh, established a line of stages from Detroit to Chicago, running tri-weekly, with Concord coaches and stage-wagons, and changes of teams at the end of every section of twelve or fifteen miles. The route passed from Detroit by way of Ypsilanti, Jonesville, Coldwater River, White Pigeon, and Niles, to Chicago. The stage-station at Niles was the "Council House." In 1834 an interest in this line was purchased by Saltmarsh, Overton & Boardman, the last-named gentleman acting as general superintendent, with headquarters at Detroit. The concern was then known as the "Western Stage Company." Soon afterwards the line was divided into sections, and that part of the road extending from Jonesville to Chicago was placed under charge of Maj. William Graves, who located at Niles, as superintendent, June 15, 1835. He had previously been employed in the office of the company at Detroit.

In the spring of 1835 the travel had so much increased that daily stages were put on the line, and even then travelers were compelled to secure seats in advance, and places in the coaches were not unfrequently subjects of speculation. Later in that season the stock of the company was increased, a double daily line was put on the road, and it was not an uncommon thing for the agent to be compelled to purchase an extra team and wagon, fill the latter with passengers, and send it on to Chicago. This was the only stage thoroughfare through the State, east and west, and being the direct route to Chicago and other Western points, was very liberally patronized. From Michigan City (which was laid out in 1835) the stage-route followed the lake beach to within twelve miles of Chicago.

About 1836, what is called the "Territorial road" was surveyed through the townships of Van Buren County, and soon after the opening of this road the first line of stages was put on by John Allen. Upon his failure, the business was carried on by others, and about 1840 it had attained considerable magnitude. When the Central Railroad was completed to points west of Ann Arbor, cross-lines began to be put on; and from Kalamazoo, D. Humphrey, of Batavia, B. F. Haddock and Granville Kimball, of Buffalo, had charge of and owned the route through Paw Paw, Keeler, Bainbridge, and Benton to St. Joseph. The completion of the railroad to New Buffalo destroyed the business of this route as well as the others, and the road became no more than an ordinary township highway.

A contract for the delivery of the mail from the railroad terminus to St. Joseph was held by D. Humphrey & Co.,

who afterwards united with the Western Stage Company, and both routes were continued. Fifteen or sixteen stages ran daily to St. Joseph, and the steamboat "John F. Porter" was also used in the service. Later, the stages met the lake boats at Michigan City in summer, and in winter continued to Chicago. The divisions of the road were broken up as the contracts expired and railroad facilities were increased. Overton & Graves purchased eighty miles of the route (from Niles to Coldwater), and sold the route from White Pigeon to Coldwater to Lockwood & Raymond, and the remainder was kept till the mail contract expired, when the railway-trains superseded the stages. The Concord coaches-and-four, the gathering of the loitering crowd at the tavern when the horn of the driver was heard in the distance, the alighting, changing of horses, and the crack of the long whip, are all events of the past.

#### MICHIGAN CENTRAL RAILROAD.

On the 29th day of June, 1832, the Legislature of the Territory of Michigan passed an act incorporating the Detroit and St. Joseph Railroad Company. This was the first official movement towards the construction of a railroad in Michigan, and the company thus organized was the legitimate ancestor of the present powerful corporation, the Michigan Central Railroad Company.

The act just mentioned named twenty men, including Calvin Brittain and Talman Wheeler, of St. Joseph, as commissioners to open subscriptions and attend to the election of the first officers. The capital stock of the company was fixed at one million five hundred thousand dollars. It was authorized to build a single or double railroad from Detroit to St. Joseph, through the village of Ypsilanti and the county-seats of Washtenaw, Jackson, Calhoun, and Kalamazoo Counties, and to run cars on the same "by the force of steam, of animals, of any mechanical or other power, or of any combination of these forces." The company was bound to begin work within two years from the passage of the act, to build thirty miles of track within six years, to complete half of the road in fifteen years, and to finish the whole of it within thirty years, under penalty of the forfeiture of its franchises.

The proposed line was surveyed by Lieut. Berrien, of the regular army, and some work was done on it near the eastern ends, so as to hold the corporate rights of the company past the two years prescribed in the act. The question whether the company could have built thirty miles of road within the six years prescribed by the act was not solved, for before that time expired new, and important official action was taken.

Michigan, after a long contest, having been admitted by Congress as a State early in the year 1837, one of its first movements under the new government was to inaugurate a grand system of internal improvement, doubtless designed to keep up the good times prevalent during several speculative years, and to disperse the cloud of financial disaster already looming over Michigan, as well as the rest of the country.\*

\* A board of commissioners of internal improvements was established to carry the system into effect, and plenty of work was soon given them to do.

On the 20th day of March, 1837, an act of the Legislature was approved by the Governor, which provided for the construction of three railroads, by the State government, across the whole breadth of its territory, to be called the Northern, Central, and Southern Railroads. Of these the Central Railroad was to run from Detroit to the mouth of the St. Joseph River. The act also provided for the purchase of the rights and property of railroad companies already established, and especially of those of the Detroit and St. Joseph Company.

We have said that the act provided for the construction of the three railroads mentioned, but it did so in a very indirect and covert way. It first authorized the survey of the three routes, then the purchase of roads already begun on either route, and then appropriated five hundred and fifty thousand dollars for the "survey and making" of the three roads, viz.: for the Southern road, one hundred thousand dollars; for the Central, four hundred thousand dollars; and for the Northern, fifty thousand dollars.

By another act, approved the following day (March 21, 1837), the Legislature authorized a loan of five million dollars. With the money obtained from this and other sources the board of commissioners proceeded in the work of constructing the Central and Southern roads. The work, however, was but slowly carried forward, and it was not until the 2d day of February, 1846, that the Central Railroad was constructed as far as Kalamazoo.

In the mean time the State had run out of money, and the people had become thoroughly sick of the experiment of having politicians build railroads at their expense. Accordingly, an act was passed by the Legislature, approved March 28, 1846, which, so far as the Central road was concerned, provided for an entire change in the existing system. By that act, William Sturgess, John Elliot Thayer, Alexander Duncan, William F. Weld, Josiah Quincy, Jr., David A. Neal, John Bryant, James K. M. Mills, Erastus Corning, Thomas H. Perkins, John P. Cushing, George Griswold, John M. Forbes, R. B. Forbes, Dudley S. Pickman, John W. Brooks, Cyrus Butler, Moses B. Ives, Robert H. Ives, Edward King, John Carter Brown, Thomas H. Perkins, Jr., Marcus T. Reynolds, Garrett Y. Lansing, John Townsend, Rufus H. King, and their associates, were constituted a body corporate, by the name of the Michigan Central Railroad Company.

It was authorized to purchase, and the State agreed to sell to it, all of the interest of the State in the Central Railroad and its appurtenances for two million dollars,—half a million within six months from the passage of the act, and the remaining amount within a year later. On making the first payment the company was authorized to go into possession of the road and to proceed to its completion. But, while it was required to substantially follow the old line to Kalamazoo, it was not compelled to build the road from the latter point to the mouth of the St. Joseph River, but "to some point in the State of Michigan, on or near Lake Michigan, which shall be accessible to steamboats on said lake, and thence to some point on the southern boundary line of the State of Michigan."<sup>†</sup>

<sup>†</sup> It is said that the men of whom the company was expected to consist insisted on having this provision in the act, in order that they

It was likewise enacted that the franchises of the company should be forfeited if the payments were not made as before provided, that it should not charge over three cents per mile for the carriage of each passenger, and that no more should be charged on the principal articles than the average price on the chief New England railroads, the average to be obtained by a commission. The corporate stock of the company was fixed at five million dollars, with the privilege of increasing it to eight millions, to be divided into shares of one hundred dollars each.

The State reserved the right to alter or repeal the act at any time after thirty years by a vote of two-thirds of both houses of the Legislature.

As soon as the company had made its payment and taken possession of the road, it determined to take the nearest route by which it could obtain all communication with Chicago, and began surveying a route from Kalamazoo to New Buffalo, running through the southeast part of Van Buren County, the northwest part of Cass, and the whole south part of Berrien County. This route was adopted, engineers and laborers were employed, and the work was pushed forward with what was then considered remarkable speed. The road was finished to Niles, Oct. 7, 1848, and to New Buffalo in the spring of 1849, where the steamer "Pacific" was waiting to receive the passengers on the first train.

There a halt was made, piers were built and the harbor was improved, and two steamers ran in connection with the road to Chicago. For more than three years railroad business made New Buffalo a very lively place. In the winter of 1851-52 the road was opened for traffic to Michigan City, and in the spring of 1852 it was completed to Chicago.

Since then the business of the Michigan Central Railroad has been steadily increasing, and it has long been one of the principal lines in the United States. The following facts in relation to its business are taken from its last published report: Whole length of the road, including lines operated by this company, 520 miles; whole number of employees, including officials, 4450; locomotives of over 30 tons' weight each, 168; locomotives of less than 30 tons, 51; twelve-wheel passenger cars, 87; eight-wheel passenger cars, 29; express- and baggage-cars, 35; box freight-cars, 2780; stock-cars, 849; platform-cars, 1291; conductors' way-cars, 129; all other cars, 457. Miles run by passenger trains in the year before report (1878), 1,464,299; miles run by freight trains in the same time, 3,075,613; by mixed trains, 165,402; number of through passengers carried, 133,148; number of local passengers, 1,300,789; number of tons of through freight, 1,530,757; of local freight, 2,033,994.

The tonnage of articles passing over the road is as follows: grain, 1,202,372; flour, 272,189; other provisions, 108,860; animals, 216,128; other agricultural products, 54,918; lumber and other forest products, 457,764; plaster, 26,804; salt, 94,289; merchandise and non-enumerated articles, 1,131,407.

might have a choice of destination, but sedulously repelled the idea that they had selected a location. They might want to go to St. Joseph or New Buffalo or Grand Haven, or possibly some other point. But as soon as this law was passed they took possession, their doubts all ceased, and they at once pushed their road towards New Buffalo.

The American Express Company pays two hundred dollars per day for the privilege of sending its freight over the road, and in some cases still more, and the United States pays two hundred and twenty-three dollars per mile each year for the carriage of the mails. The following fast freight companies operate on this road: Erie and North Shore Dispatch, Blue Line, International Line, Canada Southern Line, Hoosac Tunnel Line, and Merchants' Dispatch Transportation Company.

Seventeen miles of the Central Railroad lie in Van Buren County and thirty-three in Berrien. Among the roads operated by this company are the Kalamazoo and South Haven, which runs through the north part of Van Buren County, and the Michigan Air-Line, of which a small portion is in the southeast corner of Berrien. Of both these separate sketches will be given.

#### MICHIGAN SOUTHERN RAILROAD.

Although this road was not built so as to touch any part of either of the counties embraced in this history, yet it was originally intended to pass through Berrien County, and for many years the hopes and fears of the people of the southern part of that county were earnestly affected by the prospects of that road.

The same act of March 20, 1837, which provided for the construction of the Central road, also authorized the building of a railroad from the navigable waters of the river Raisin, in the county of Monroe, to New Buffalo, in the county of Berrien, to be called the Southern Railroad. The line was surveyed and established through the southern part of Berrien County, not far from the present line of the Central road, and the inhabitants of that region looked for its completion in a few years.

By strenuous exertion the State built the road westward as far as Hillsdale in 1843, but was unable to continue it. For nearly three years nothing was done, but on the 9th of May, 1846, an act of the Legislature was approved which entirely changed the situation. By this act the Michigan Southern Railroad Company was duly incorporated, and the State agreed to sell the Southern Railroad to it for five hundred thousand dollars, fifty thousand dollars to be paid in three months, and the remainder in eighteen equal semi-annual instalments of twenty-five thousand dollars each. The company was required to continue the road westward from Hillsdale to Coldwater, but from that point it was permitted to choose its own route to Lake Michigan, either "on the line heretofore established as the line of the Southern Railroad by the State, or anywhere farther southward than that line." The company was nevertheless required to build the road from Hillsdale to Coldwater within four years from the passage of the act, from Coldwater to some point on the St. Joseph River, in St. Joseph County, in eight years, and thence to the village of Niles, in Berrien County, in twelve years; but the only penalty provided for non-performance was the forfeiture of the company's charter as to the part not built.

As previously stated, the Michigan Central Railroad Company had already been organized, and its road had been built to Kalamazoo by the State. Considering New Buffalo as the most desirable point to reach Lake Michigan, and



being allowed to go there by its charter, that company pushed over on to the Southern route, and built its road from Kalamazoo, by way of Niles to New Buffalo, long before the Southern Railroad Company could reach the eastern boundary of Berrien County. Consequently, the latter company was practically compelled to avail itself of the provision of its charter which permitted it to take a more southerly route, and when the Southern road was built from Jonesville, Hillsdale Co., to Chicago, which was in 1851 and the first part of 1852, it was made to leave the State in St. Joseph County and proceed westward through the northern tier of Indiana counties, thus acquiring the name which it long bore of the Southern Michigan and Northern Indiana Railroad. Berrien County thus lost all further interest in this great work, and our concern naturally ceases with that of the counties whose fortunes we record.

#### KALAMAZOO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD.

The first movement to build a railroad over the line of the above work was made during the flush times of 1835 and '36, when nearly every man expected to have a railroad through his farm. On the 28th of March, 1836, an act was passed by the Legislature incorporating the Kalamazoo and Lake Michigan Railroad Company, and authorizing it to construct a railroad "from the mouth of the South Black River, in the county of Van Buren, to the county-seat of Kalamazoo County." The point at the mouth of the South Black River is now the location of the village of South Haven, and the county-seat of Kalamazoo County, originally called Bronson, has long been known as Kalamazoo.

The incorporators of the Kalamazoo and Lake Michigan Company were Epaphroditus Ransom, Charles E. Stuart, Edwin H. Lothrop, Horace H. Comstock, Isaac W. Willard, and their associates, and the capital stock was fixed at four hundred thousand dollars. Before, however, anything of any consequence was done in relation to the proposed work the "hard times" of 1837 superseded the "flush times" of 1836, and the construction of the Kalamazoo and Lake Michigan Railroad was indefinitely postponed. The powers of the company lapsed, and, although the project may occasionally have been talked of, nothing more was actually done in the matter for over thirty years.

In the winter of 1868-69 a determined effort to accomplish the desired object was made at Kalamazoo, at South Haven, and in the intervening townships. On the 14th of April, 1869, articles of association were filed, organizing the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad Company, and on the same day the following gentlemen were elected as directors: Allen Potter, Lucius B. Kendall, John Dudgeon, David Fisher, Stephen W. Fisk, Charles D. Ruggles, Amos S. Brown, Samuel Hoppin, Stephen Garnet, John Scott, Samuel Rogers, Daniel G. Wright, and Barney H. Dyckman. Allen Potter was elected the first president of the company, but resigned after holding the position a few months, when James A. Walter was chosen in his place.

Mr. Walter held the presidency until his death, on the 5th of April, 1870, and during his administration arrangements were made with the Michigan Central Rail-

road Company to guarantee and sell the first mortgage bonds of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Company to the amount of six hundred and forty thousand dollars. Besides this, fifty thousand dollars was voted and subscribed in Kalamazoo by the township and the citizens, and nearly two hundred thousand dollars was also voted and subscribed by the townships and residents along the line of the proposed road. The Supreme Court, however, decided that the bonds voted by the townships were unconstitutional, and consequently very little was derived from that source. After the decision in question, seventy-five thousand dollars' worth of second mortgage bonds were sold, and some new subscriptions were obtained.

By these various means the road was built. It was opened for business to Pine Grove on the 3d of January, 1870, and was completed to South Haven on the 17th of December, in the same year. The road was operated about a year by the company owning it, but at the end of that time it was leased to the Michigan Central Company, which has ever since controlled it as a branch of the Central road. It has done a very considerable amount of business, and it is expected that it will in time become a part of a through line of rail and boat communication between Detroit, Milwaukee, and the great Northwest.

The following is the present board of directors of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad Company: James F. Joy, of Detroit; Allen Potter, Lucius B. Kendall, Hezekiah G. Wells, and William A. Wood, of Kalamazoo; Augustus Haven and David Anderson, of Bloomington; George Hannahs, Samuel Rogers, A. S. Dyckman, N. Conger, D. G. Wright, and B. H. Dyckman, of South Haven. The officers are Allen Potter, President; Lucius B. Kendall, Treasurer; and George L. Seaver, Secretary.

#### CONSTANTINE AND NILES CANAL OR RAILROAD COMPANY.

On the 26th of March, 1836, the Governor of Michigan approved an act of the Legislature incorporating the Constantine and Niles Canal or Railroad Company. The amount of the capital stock was fixed at two hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and the company was duly authorized to construct either a canal or railroad from Constantine, St. Joseph County, to Niles, Berrien County. The first directors were William Meek, George W. Hoffman, Welles T. House, Watson Sumner, John G. Cathcart, Edward N. Bridge, J. C. Lanman, Jacob Beeson, and Vincent L. Bradford.

Nothing was done under the law, except that possibly a survey was made, and the record on the statute book is the only memento of this one of the numerous abortive schemes of that period.

#### ST. JOSEPH VALLEY RAILROAD.

By an act approved the 3d day of April, 1848, the Legislature of Michigan incorporated the St. Joseph Valley Railroad Company, and appointed John F. Porter, Talman Wheeler, Rodney C. Paine, Benjamin C. Hoyt, Jacob Compton, and Thomas Fitzgerald commissioners to receive subscriptions to its stock. The capital stock was fixed at one million dollars, in ten thousand shares of one hundred dollars each, and it was provided that, as soon as

four hundred shares should be subscribed, the subscribers should become a body politic, by the name of the St. Joseph Valley Railroad Company, with the usual powers granted to such incorporations.

The company thus created was authorized to "construct a railroad, with a single or double track, from the village of St. Joseph, in the county of Berrien, *via* the village of Cassopolis, in the county of Cass, to any point in the county of St. Joseph, upon the most desirable route, with power to take, transport, and carry property and persons upon the said railroad, or any part thereof, herein authorized to be constructed, by the force and power of steam or of animals, or of any mechanical or other power, or of any combination of them, which the said company may choose to apply."

It was also provided that if the company should not begin work in five years, and complete the road in ten years, its powers should become void. There was a large number of elaborate provisions concerning the manner in which the company should act, but as the company did not act at all it is not necessary to consider them. In fact this scheme appears to have been given up in less than two years, and a new one adopted, of which mention is made below.

#### ST. JOSEPH RAILROAD COMPANY.

This project was a less ambitious one than the foregoing, but was evidently originated by the same men and aimed partially at the same purpose. By an act of the Legislature approved April 2, 1850, Shubael Conant, Junius H. Hatch, Calvin Britain, Talman Wheeler, Rodney C. Paine, Benjamin C. Hoyt, Jacob Compton, Thomas Fitzgerald, Warren Chapman, Jesse E. Stevens, and Henry C. Morton were appointed commissioners to receive subscriptions to the stock of the St. Joseph Railroad Company. The amount of stock was modestly limited to five hundred thousand dollars, in five thousand shares of one hundred dollars each, and the subscription of two hundred shares (twenty thousand dollars) was declared sufficient to authorize the organization of the company.

It was empowered to construct a railroad, with a double or single track, "from the village of St. Joseph, in the county of Berrien, on the most direct and eligible route, to some point on the Michigan Central Railroad track, in the counties of Berrien, Cass, or Van Buren," with the usual power to transport persons and property "by the power and force of steam, or of animals, or of any mechanical or other power." As in the case of the St. Joseph Valley road, this company was allowed five years to begin the road and ten to complete it.

The provision that the road might terminate at any point on the Central road, in Berrien, Cass, or Van Buren Counties, certainly gave ample range, as under it the track might have run northeast to Lawton, or southwest to New Buffalo, or to any intermediate point, and was probably intended to obtain a large number of subscribers, each of whom would hope to bring the St. Joseph Railroad to the place of his own residence. But the plan did not work, and ere long the St. Joseph Railroad Company followed the St. Joseph Valley Railroad Company into the list of abortive schemes.

#### ELKHART AND LAKE MICHIGAN RAILROAD.

Shortly after the close of the war a company was organized, called Elkhart and Lake Michigan Railroad Company, for the purpose of building a railroad from Benton Harbor, Berrien County, Mich., to Elkhart, Ind. The line as surveyed was to run through Berrien County, entirely on the east and northeast side of the St. Joseph River, passing a short distance east of the city of Niles. Besides the survey, no work was done on the road until about 1870, when four or five miles were graded southeast from Benton Harbor. It was found impracticable, however, to carry on the work, and it was accordingly abandoned, the unused embankment alone remaining to tell the tale of "one more unfortunate" project doomed to disappoint the hopes of its projectors.

#### CHICAGO AND WEST MICHIGAN RAILROAD.

Notwithstanding the previous failures, already narrated, to procure the construction of a railroad to St. Joseph, the people of that place did not give up the hope and determination to secure such a convenience. In May, 1869, a company was organized at St. Joseph, under the general law of the State, called the Chicago and Michigan Lake-Shore Railroad Company, for the purpose of building a railroad from New Buffalo northward along the western shore of Lake Michigan. A. H. Morrison, Warren Chapman, Benjamin C. Hoyt, Curtis Boughton, George Bridgman, David Ballentine, and Robert A. Conolly were elected the first directors. A. H. Morrison was President; Horace W. Guernsey, Secretary; David Ballentine, Treasurer; Fitz H. Stevens and Horace W. Guernsey, Commissioners; and R. A. Conolly, Chief Engineer.

As St. Joseph then controlled the work, and as the people of that place had been so often deceived by the expectation of railroads which were either not built or were built elsewhere, it was determined that this one should not slip through their fingers. The work was begun at St. Joseph, the grading was rapidly carried southward from there, and when, in October, 1869, the road-bed was ready for the rails, the locomotive "Swallow," two platform-cars, and a supply of rails were brought by steamer from Chicago to St. Joseph, where track-laying at once commenced. These efforts were crowned with success, and on the 28th day of January, 1870, the road was completed from St. Joseph to New Buffalo, a distance of twenty-eight miles; being formally opened for traffic on the 2d day of February, 1870, when a grand celebration was indulged in by the long-desponding but at length jubilant citizens of St. Joseph.

The road was subsequently continued northward, reaching Grand Junction (Van Buren County) on the 28th of February, 1871, and Pentwater, its present terminus, on the 1st day of January, 1872. A branch was also built from Holland to Grand Rapids, which was completed on the 1st day of January, 1872; and one from Muskegon to Big Rapids, which was finished on the 21st day of July, 1873. The total length of the road with its branches is two hundred and forty-six miles. The distance traversed in Berrien County is forty-four miles; in Van Buren County, nineteen miles.

The road was managed by the original company until

1874. It was then given up to the bondholders, who operated it about three years and then foreclosed their mortgage. On the sale the stock principally passed into the hands of citizens of Boston, and the road is now controlled by them. The new company changed its name to the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad. The present directors are all Boston men, except James F. Joy, of Detroit.

The cost of construction was \$6,225,802, and that of equipment, \$899,220. The funded debt of the company amounts to \$6,630,000, the unfunded to \$2,517,218. The receipts for carriage of passengers during the year previous to the last annual report of the railroad commissioners was \$175,921; from freights, \$333,809; from other sources, \$28,293; total, \$538,023. The total of running expenses for the same period was \$500,479.

Seventy miles of the road are laid with steel rails, weighing from fifty to sixty pounds per yard; the remainder with iron rails, weighing from forty-five to fifty-six pounds per yard.

There are employed on the road 21 locomotives weighing over thirty tons each, and 5 which are under that amount. There are 3 twelve-wheel and 10 eight-wheel passenger-cars. There are 9 express and baggage and 114 box freight-cars, 376 platform-cars, 7 conductors' way-cars, and 1 pay-car. The miles run by passenger-trains in the year were 232,328; by freight-trains, 209,442. The number of through passengers was 35,640; of local passengers, 182,506. The highest rate per mile paid by passengers was four cents.

The total number of tons of freight carried over the road during the year was 266,701, distributed as follows: grain, 14,055; flour, 1949; other provisions, 1225; animals, 2375; other agricultural products, 7298; lumber and other forest products, 153,563; coal, 2585; plaster, 12,000; railroad-iron, 189; pig- and bloom-iron, 11,050; ores, 19,499; stone and brick, 2812; merchandise and other articles not enumerated, 38,151.

The American Express Company sends its freight over the road, paying for the privilege one and a half times the price of first-class railroad freight. Thirteen fast-freight lines also run their cars over this road.

The Chicago and West Michigan road has been unfortunate in the fact that, just as it had completed and equipped its line to Pentwater, largely through a new country, and a heavy debt had been incurred for the purpose, the "hard times" of 1873 supervened, with especially unfavorable results to a corporation thus situated. Now, however, that the dark clouds of financial trouble are at length dispersed, and the sunlight of prosperity gladdens the land, and now, too, that emigration is rapidly pouring into the country along the northern part of this road, there is every reason to believe that it will soon take its place among the important thoroughfares of the Northwest.

#### PAW PAW RAILROAD.

This road was built from Lawton to Paw Paw, Van Buren Co., a distance of four miles, in 1867, and was originally of the standard gauge. In 1878, however, it was reduced to a gauge of three feet, in order that it might be run in

connection with the Toledo and South Haven road, making a continuous line from Lawton to Lawrence.

Short as it is, it is one of the most profitable roads in the State, in proportion to its cost. The last published report of the railroad commissioners shows that the cost of construction was \$30,000. The equipment is furnished by the Toledo and South Haven road, which operates it. Its earnings from passengers in 1878 were \$3453.72; from freight, \$498.91; from other sources, \$1668.46; total, \$9221.09.

The total expenses were \$3949.28, which leaves a net balance of \$5271.81,—pretty good interest, for a dull year, on \$30,000. The number of passengers carried during the year was 13,760; the number of tons of freight, 4756.

The directors are F. B. Adams, G. W. Longwell, E. O. Briggs, and C. A. Harrison, of Paw Paw, and J. Ihling, Henry Ford, and J. C. Ford, of Lawton. F. B. Adams is the president and treasurer; G. W. Longwell, the vice-president; J. C. Ford, the secretary; and J. Ihling, the superintendent.

#### TOLEDO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD.

The track of this ambitiously-named railroad extends from Paw Paw to Lawrence, a distance of nine miles, but it also operates the Paw Paw Railroad, giving it a total length of thirteen miles. The company was organized during the winter of 1876-77, the construction of the road and laying of the track—of three-foot gauge—were pushed forward during the following summer, and on the 1st of October, 1877, the road was opened for traffic. In January, 1878, the Paw Paw road, having been reduced to the same width of track, was taken in charge by the same company.

Though the Toledo and South Haven road is not so profitable as its shorter associate, yet its balance-sheet shows quite well in comparison with many institutions of far greater pretensions. The number of passengers carried in 1878 was 10,372, and the number of tons of freight, 1146. The receipts from passengers for the year were \$2812.14; from freights, \$1871.75; from mails, \$270; total, \$4953.89. The expenses were \$2863.80, leaving a balance in favor of the company of \$2090.09. As the cost of construction is set down at \$44,435.73, and that of equipment at \$12,461, making a total of \$56,896.73, the net earnings amounted to a little less than four per cent. on the cost. This was a reasonably fair result for that year, and will doubtless be greatly improved in the future.

The directors are J. Ihling and G. W. Lawton, of Lawton; F. B. Adams, E. Martin, J. W. Free, and L. C. Hurd, of Paw Paw; J. B. Johnson and R. Titlow, of Lawrence. The president is F. B. Adams; the vice-president, J. W. Free; the secretary, J. C. Ford; the treasurer, E. Martin; and the superintendent, J. Ihling.

#### MICHIGAN AIR-LINE RAILROAD.

This road was built and is owned by parties living along its line, its object being to open to traffic a fertile region in the counties of Cass, St. Joseph, Calhoun, and Jackson, and also to form a more direct route from Jackson to Niles than by the old one by way of Kalamazoo. It was opened for travel to Homer in the summer of 1870, to Three Rivers in the autumn of the same year, and to Niles in February, 1870. At Niles it dropped its "air-line" character, made



a sharp turn, and ran nearly due south to South Bend, Ind.\*

The capital stock is \$4,000,000, but of this only \$350,000 is paid up. The total cost of construction was \$3,166,759, and the amount of the funded debt is \$2,100,000. The earnings from passengers in 1878 were \$49,085.15; from freight, \$60,423.37; from other sources, \$8384.07; total, \$117,892.59. The road is now leased and operated by the Michigan Central Railroad Company, yet a separate organization is necessarily maintained. The thirteen directors being all located along the line of the road, and one of them, R. W. Landon, being a resident of Niles, Berrien Co.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### MILITARY HISTORY—THE SAUK WAR—THE GREAT REBELLION.

The Indian War of 1812—Rendezvous of Troops at Niles—Their Movement towards Chicago—End of the War—The Mexican War—Opening of the Great Civil War in 1861—The Second Michigan Infantry—Capt. Breitschneider's Company—Flag Presentation—Departure of the Regiment—Bull Run—The Peninsula Campaign—Seven Days' Fight—Second Bull Run, Chantilly, and Antietam—Fredericksburg—Transfer to the West—Vietsburg and Jackson—Cumberland Gap—Siege of Knoxville—Veteran Re-enlistment and Furlough—Return to the Army of the Potomac—Wilderness Campaign—Petersburg—Campaign of 1865—Return to Michigan and Disbandment—Members of the Second Infantry from Berrien and Van Buren—The Lafayette Light Guard—Capt. Edmunds' Company—Sixth Infantry—Service at Baltimore—Transfer to Ship Island—New Orleans and Baton Rouge—Assault on Port Hudson—Incidents of the Siege—The Sixth, as Heavy Artillery—Veteran Furlough—Return to Port Hudson—Services at Vietsburg and in Arkansas—The Regiment on Duty at Mobile—Muster Out at New Orleans—Members of the Sixth from Berrien and Van Buren Counties.

THE series of Indian hostilities usually known as the "Black Hawk war" was the first public emergency requiring the muster of troops after the beginning of settlements in Berrien and Van Buren Counties. The news of this savage outbreak, which came in the spring of the year 1832, startled and alarmed the few inhabitants of these counties, and for a short time seemed likely to put an entire stop to their settlement. This was the outbreak of the celebrated "Black Hawk war." The scene of actual strife was in Western Illinois and Wisconsin, but the white population was very sparse between these counties and the theatre of actual war, and Indians bent on vengeance have long arms. Besides, no one could tell whether the *Pottawattamies* scattered through Southern Michigan might not make common cause with the warriors of Black Hawk, and turn their tomahawks on their white neighbors. No hostile disposition, however, was manifested by these ancient enemies, and the whites seem to have generally trusted their friendship.

Scarcely had the first news of the trouble arrived when a dispatch went through from the government agent at Chicago, asking for the aid of the Michigan militia to defend that

place, then an insignificant hamlet. The brigade of militia in the southern part of the territory was commanded by Brig.-Gen. Joseph W. Brown, a near relative (we believe a brother) of Maj.-Gen. Jacob Brown, the hero of the war of 1812, and at one time commander-in-chief of the United States army. Gen. J. W. Brown possessed much of the martial fire of his kinsman, and promptly responded to the call. He ordered his brigade to take the field, the rendezvous being appointed at Niles, in Berrien County. The militiamen of the southern counties readily obeyed, and in a few days company after company came trooping into Niles from the east, each man clad, not in bright-blue clothes with brass buttons, but in the rude garb of the backwoodsman, with rifle, musket, or shot-gun on his shoulder, as chance might determine, and with accoutrements equally varied at his side. Berrien County turned out what few men it could, but its quota was a very small one.

In strong contrast to these patriotic but rough-looking soldiers were three companies of regulars, which marched through Niles on their way to the seat of war. They reached that place about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, and as the commander desired to make his way as speedily as possible to St. Joseph, there to take boat for Chicago, Thomas Huston (who was then carrying the mail from St. Joseph to Niles) was sent forward in hot haste to detain any vessels which might be at St. Joseph. He galloped over the rough forest road in a few hours, and found two vessels on the point of leaving the harbor; one, in fact, was already over the bar into the lake, and the other was just weighing anchor. He notified the captain of the latter, who made signals to the other, and both awaited the arrival of the troops. These marched to Berrien Springs that afternoon, where they camped. The next morning they went down to St. Joseph on the steamer "Matilda Barney," embarked on the vessels detained by Mr. Huston, and set out for the seat of war.

The militia assembled at Niles were mustered into service—at least all who had then arrived—on the 24th of May. Soon after the assembled companies were formed, as well as might be, into a brigade, and took up the line of march for the West. As their ranks included nearly every man capable of bearing arms in Southern Michigan, and as no one knew what the enemy was doing, the women, children, and old men were left for a few days in a state of great dismay, lest their friends and they themselves should be destroyed by the bloody Indians, and terrifying rumors flew through the scattered settlements by the score.

The militia, however, had only marched as far as LaPorte, Ind., when they received the welcome news that Black Hawk had been completely routed, and his warriors killed, captured, or driven across the Mississippi. The troops returned to Niles, where they were dismissed to their homes about the 3d of June.

The campaign under consideration was not very long, nor very bloody, but it was a very exciting one, and from 1832 until 1861, the great military era of Southwestern Michigan, from which the people dated their martial recollections, was that of the Black Hawk war.

In the war against Mexico, 1846-48, there was no regiment or command raised here, though a considerable num-

\* There are only about seven miles of the road in Berrien County, one and a half miles between the east line of that county and the depot at Niles, and the remainder between the depot and the Indiana State line.

ber of enlistments of men from Berrien and Van Buren helped to fill companies raised in other parts of the State.

The real military history of these counties commences at that memorable time, in the spring of 1861, when the startling news was flashed over the telegraphs that an organized band of malcontents at Charleston, S. C., had turned their guns on Fort Sumter, and fired on the starry flag that floated above its brown ramparts. Then the patriotic fire blazed out, and from the time when the President's first call for men was made, until the time when the death of the great rebellion made further calls unnecessary, the young men, the middle-aged, and not a few of the old men of Berrien and Van Buren, responded to each appeal with an alacrity and patriotism not excelled in any part of the State or Union. The names of these soldiers are found on the rolls of about seventy regiments and batteries of Michigan and other States; and such of those regiments as were most noticeable for the number of Berrien and Van Buren County men serving in their ranks are especially mentioned here, in historical sketches of their organization and services in the great war for the Union.

#### SECOND INFANTRY.

At the first call for troops, in April, 1861, a company of infantry was raised at Niles, from that city and vicinity, for the three months' service. Within three days after the roll was open for signatures the company was full to overflowing. The first officers were Robert Brethschneider, captain; Benjamin Brownell, first lieutenant; and Jerome Beales, second lieutenant. A beautiful flag was presented to the company by the ladies of Niles, and it then proceeded to Cantonment Blair, on the fair-grounds at Detroit, where it was assigned to the 2d Michigan Infantry as Company E. There were also a few men from Berrien and Van Buren Counties in other companies of that regiment. The flag of Company E, being in accordance with the regulations of the army, was adopted as the flag of the regiment, and after being borne on many a bloody field and mutilated by scores of bullets, is now to be seen, among other relics of the war, in the adjutant-general's office at Lansing.

Before the regiment could be mustered into the United States service, the government declined to receive any more three months' soldiers. Nearly the whole regiment then volunteered for three years, and the places of those who declined to go were instantly filled by those who were anxious for a chance to do so.

The 2d left for Washington on the 5th of June, 1861, being the first three years' regiment in the field from this State. Its first battle was at Bull Run, on the 18th of July. On approaching that field, Capt. Brethschneider was chosen to lead a detachment of two hundred men, selected from all the companies of the brigade, with whom he skillfully unmasked Gen. Beauregard's batteries at Blackburn's Ford, being heartily praised for his courage and good management by Gen. Tyler. The 2d was principally engaged in skirmishing during the battle, and was not affected in the least by the rout which demoralized a portion of the Union army. After the battle, the regiment encamped on the heights of Centreville. At one o'clock of the following night it was aroused and ordered to retreat to Washington,

which it did in perfect order, without hearing anything of the enemy.\*

During the winter of 1861-62 the 2d lay near Alexandria, Va., and in April, 1862, it moved with the Army of the Potomac to the Virginia peninsula. After taking part in the siege of Yorktown it marched up the peninsula, and at Williamsburg was very sharply engaged. It moved with its brigade three miles on the double-quick, and relieved Gen. Sickles' Excelsior Brigade, which was very hardly pressed. The 2d Michigan had fifty-five men killed and wounded.

It was again engaged at Fair Oaks, where it had fifty-seven killed and wounded.

In the great "seven days' fight" before Richmond, the 2d was more or less engaged, in all of the conflicts, holding, with the rest of the army, the successive positions taken up, keeping the enemy at bay every day until nightfall, and then retreating under cover of the darkness to a new position. At Malvern Hill it supported the Union batteries in the southwest portion of the field, and aided in repulsing with heavy loss several desperate charges made by the enemy. It had fifty-seven officers and men killed and wounded in that conflict.

The regiment then returned with the Army of the Potomac to Northern Virginia, and was engaged at the second battle of Bull Run and at Chantilly. It was in the division commanded by Gen. Phil. Kearney, and was holding a piece of woodland at Chantilly when that gallant officer rode out in front of it to reconnoitre and was killed. The first commander of the 2d Infantry, Gen. Israel B. Richardson, was killed at Antietam while in command of a division, but the regiment was not actively engaged.

When Gen. Burnside attacked Fredericksburg, on the 12th of December, 1862, this regiment crossed the Rappahannock, but was held in reserve, and though under fire from shells did not suffer serious loss. In February, 1863, it moved to Newport News, but in March returned to Baltimore, moved thence to Kentucky, and in June, with the 9th Corps, reinforced Gen. Grant's army in Mississippi. On the day of the surrender of Vicksburg it moved eastward, and on the 11th of July attacked the enemy's works at Jackson, but was obliged to retire, after forty-eight of its officers and men had been killed and wounded. Jackson, however, was soon after occupied by the Union troops.

On the 4th of August, 1863, the regiment set out on another long journey, making its way up the Mississippi and Ohio to Cincinnati, and thence by way of Cumberland Gap to Knoxville, Tenn., where it arrived on the 26th. After various movements in the valley of the Tennessee until the 17th of November, 1863, it fell back with the army to Knoxville, and during the succeeding three weeks was engaged in the defense of that place against the legions of Longstreet.

The regiment, if so the oft-decimated little band of veterans could be called, suffered severely, as did the rest of the army, from lack of food and clothing, but gallantly repelled the assaults of the foe, and finally, on the 4th of December, had the pleasure of seeing the baffled enemy

\*Statement of Maj. Evans, of Niles, then a private in the 2d Infantry.

retire in complete defeat. During the siege, on the 24th of November, a detachment of the 2d charged the enemy's works, but was repulsed; the casualties numbering eighty-six,—more than half the number engaged.

On the 16th of December the regiment was at Blain's Cross-Roads, northeast of Knoxville, where, notwithstanding all its hardships and losses, a sufficient number of the men re-enlisted to make it a regiment of veteran volunteers. It did not set out for home, however, until the 4th of February, 1864. After enjoying a thirty-days' furlough and receiving over five hundred recruits, the command rendezvoused at Mount Clemens, and proceeded to join its corps at Annapolis, Md., that corps being on its way back to the Army of the Potomac.

When the great Virginia campaign of 1864 opened, the 2d took its usual active part. In the battle of the Wilderness, on the 6th of May, it had thirty-eight officers and men killed and wounded; at Spotsylvania Court-House, on the 12th of May, it had eleven killed and wounded; and at Bethesda Church, on the 3d of June, it had thirty-eight killed and wounded. Having crossed the James River, on the 12th of June, it took part in the severe battle before Petersburg, on the 17th and 18th of that month, having, in the two days, one hundred and sixty-five officers and men killed and wounded. During the attack which followed the springing of the mine, on the 30th of July, the regiment had twenty killed and wounded.

It took part with its corps in the raid on the Weldon Railroad in August, and also in the movement on the right flank of the Confederate army in September, having seven wounded in the engagement near Poplar Spring Church, on the 30th of the latter month. After being stationed near the left of the Union line before Petersburg until the 29th of November, 1864, it moved with its corps ten miles to the right, where it remained on trench and picket duty until the 25th of March, 1865. On that day it aided in repelling the attack on Fort Steadman, suffering heavy loss. On the 3d of April it took part in the capture of Petersburg. After some unimportant service near Petersburg and at Washington, the regiment set out for Detroit, where it was paid off and disbanded on the 1st day of August, 1865.

Not a regiment in the service made a better record than the 2d Michigan Infantry. Very few, indeed, of the original Company E, which left Niles in the spring of 1861, returned home at the close of the war; and of those who did come there was hardly one who had not been wounded in the service.

#### MEMBERS OF THE SECOND INFANTRY FROM BERRIEN AND VAN BUREN COUNTIES.\*

##### *Field and Staff.*

Serg. Evan J. Boine, Niles; com. Sept. 23, 1861; res. Aug. 31, 1864.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Q.M.-Sergt. Wm. H. Seward, Niles; enl. April 19, 1861; pro. to 2d Lieut. Co. I, Dec. 4, 1861.

\* Great care has been taken in transcribing these military lists for this, and other regiments, from the rolls in the Adjutant-General's office, and in verifying them, when practicable, by surviving members of the regiments to which they have reference. If, notwithstanding this, they are found (as they doubtless will be, to some extent) incomplete, it should be remembered that it is on account of the neglect of officers whose duty it was to return full and complete lists to the Adjutant-General's office.

#### *Company E.*

Capt. Robt. Brethschneider, Niles; com. May 25, 1861; res. Dec. 14, 1861; capt. 12th Inf.  
 Capt. Benj. Brownell, Niles; com. Dec. 14, 1861; 1st lieut. April 25, 1861; res. Aug. 30, 1862.  
 Capt. John S. Moore, Niles; com. July 30, 1863; 1st lieut. Feb. 24, 1863; 2d lieut. Aug. 9, 1862; must. out at end of service, Sept. 30, 1864.  
 Capt. Sylvester Keyser, Niles; com. Sept. 30, 1864; brev. maj. U. S. Vols. for gallant and meritorious services before Petersburg; must. out July 29, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Jerome Beals, Niles; com. April 25, 1861; res. Aug. 7, 1861.  
 Sergt. Henry Kellogg, enl. May 25, 1861; disch. Dec. 1, 1861, for disability.  
 Sergt. Plowden Huggins, enl. May 25, 1861; must. out at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 Sergt. John N. Shanahan, enl. May 25, 1861; killed in action at Williamsburg, Va., May 5, 1862.  
 Corp. Wm. H. Delano, enl. May 25, 1861; must. out at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 Corp. Chas. H. Houghland, enl. May 25, 1861; disch. for disability, Dec. 6, 1861.  
 Corp. Wm. Thayer, enl. May 25, 1861; disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 Corp. John Moore, enl. May 25, 1861; color sergt.; pro. to 2d lieut.  
 Corp. Sylvester Keyser, enl. May 25, 1861; re-enl. as veteran, Dec. 31, 1863; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. F, July 7, 1864.  
 Wagoner John B. Richardson, enl. May 25, 1861; absent, sick; not must. out with company.

#### *Privates.*

Uriah Arnold, disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 Theodore F. Brown, disch. at end of service, Sept. 10, 1864.  
 Hartley Boswell, disch. for disability, May 21, 1862.  
 James W. Brown, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; must. out May 25, 1865.  
 Geo. Covert, disch. to enlist in regular army, June 11, 1863.  
 Wm. Covert, disch. to enlist in regular army, June 11, 1863.  
 James H. Delano, disch. for disability, Oct. 7, 1862.  
 Franklin Farnsworth, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; disch. for disability, July 20, 1865.  
 Geo. H. Genung, disch. for wounds, Sept. 12, 1862.  
 Philo H. Gallup, killed in action at Williamsburg, Va., May 5, 1862.  
 Edward Hartman, died of disease at Georgetown, D. C.  
 Alfred A. Houghland, disch. for disability.  
 Marvin Hillicker, disch. for disability.  
 Benjamin Hess, disch. to enlist in regular army, Dec. 4, 1862.  
 Charles Hulín, disch. to enlist in regular army, Dec. 4, 1862.  
 Samuel P. Hulín, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; sergt.; pro. to 2d lieut.; must. out as sergt., July 25, 1865.  
 Wm. H. F. Holston, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; sergt.; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. G; capt. Co. K.  
 Wm. H. Harrison, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; sergt.; pro. to 2d lieut.; must. out as sergt., July 25, 1865.  
 Wm. Jay, disch. for disability, July 4, 1862.  
 Wm. Jones, disch. for disability.  
 Wm. Jackson, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; must. out July 28, 1865.  
 John McKown, killed in battle at Williamsburg, Va., May 5, 1862.  
 Benj. F. Loop, died Aug. 4, 1862, of wounds received at Fair Oaks, May 31, 1862.  
 James Leech, disch. for disability.  
 John T. Lamon, disch. at end of service, Sept. 3, 1863.  
 Wm. Lambert, disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 John Noel, disch. for disability, Sept. 29, 1862.  
 James H. Phillips, disch. for disability, May 21, 1862.  
 G. Prossard, disch. to enlist in regular army.  
 Wm. Park, disch. at end of service, May 25, 1865.  
 Gilbert Parish, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; disch. for disability, Dec. 25, 1865.  
 Wm. Redick, disch. for disability.  
 Chas. Richardson, disch. for disability, July 4, 1862.  
 Wm. Roach, disch. for disability, Aug. 13, 1862.  
 Joshua B. Richardson, died of disease at Washington, Feb. 17, 1863.  
 Watson Ready, disch. at end of service, May 25, 1864.  
 John Rutledge, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; must. out July 28, 1865.  
 Wm. B. Randall, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; must. out July 28, 1865.  
 Anthony Rolla, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 Wm. Rucker, disch. for wounds, October, 1862.  
 Elias Shockley, died of wounds, Nov. 27, 1863.  
 Martin Stafford, veteran; enl. Dec. 3, 1863; died of wounds, June 19, 1864.  
 B. Steinbach, disch. at end of service, May 25, 1864.  
 Wm. W. Smith, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; must. out July 11, 1865.  
 Wm. Thayer, disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 Edwin Trumburn, disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 Geo. W. Vandevent, disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.  
 Alfred A. Van Vliet, disch. at end of service, June 6, 1864.  
 John M. Wilson, disch. at end of service, Sept. 8, 1863.  
 John Ward, disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.

#### *Company F.*

1st Lieut. Sylvester Keyser, Niles; com. July 7, 1863; pro. to capt., Co. E, Sept. 30, 1864.



*Company G.*

1st Lieut. Wm. H. F. Holston, Niles; com. Nov. 21, 1861; pro. capt., Co. K, April 25, 1865.

*Company H.*

Capt. Chas. H. Rogers, must. out July 28, 1865.

1st Lieut. John S. Moore, pro. capt., Co. E, July 30, 1863.

*Company I.*

2d Lieut. William H. Seward, res. Aug. 30, 1862.

Stephen G. Colvin, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; died of wounds in Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864.

Ossian L. Moody, disch. at end of service, July 21, 1864.

Wm. Hadlock, veteran; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; must. out July 28, 1865.

*Company K.*

Capt. Wm. H. F. Holston, com. April 25, 1865; must. out July 25, 1865.

Corp. Roscoe D. Dix, enl. May 25, 1861; disch. at end of service, July 2, 1864.

Stevens Dickinson, disch. at end of service, May 26, 1864.

Theodore W. Snell, died of disease at Fortress Monroe, Va., Dec. 20, 1864.

## LAFAYETTE LIGHT GUARD (Co. C, 70th N. Y. INF.).

In the year 1859 a number of the young men of Paw Paw (Van Buren County) and vicinity organized themselves into a militia company (infantry), under the name of the Lafayette Light Guard. On the outbreak of the Rebellion, in April, 1861, the members of the Guard were almost unanimous in their desire to enter the field against the enemies of their country, and the ranks were speedily filled to the maximum strength of an infantry company by eager volunteers. The regiments called for from Michigan were completed so soon, however, that it was found impossible to find any place in either of them for the Lafayette Light Guard. In the hope that a place would ere long be found for them in a Michigan regiment, they were supported for nearly two months by the voluntary subscriptions of the citizens of Van Buren County, but still no more troops were called for from the Peninsular State.

At length the company tendered its services to Gen. Daniel E. Sickles, who was engaged in raising his "Excelsior Brigade," in New York City. They were gladly accepted, and on the 13th of June the first company from Van Buren County set out for New York.

Below is given a list of the officers and soldiers who went to the front with the company, transcribed from the Paw Paw *True Northerner* of June 21, 1861, by the permission of Mr. Adelbert Cummings, who preserved a copy.

Captain, Wm. H. Hugo, of Paw Paw; First Lieutenant, J. M. Longwell, of Paw Paw; Second Lieutenant, Wm. H. Carroll, Decatur; Sergeants, Wm. H. Drake (Decatur), Don C. Rodgers (Paw Paw), Wm. W. Kilbourn (Paw Paw), Harry R. Brown (Decatur); Fifer, Adelbert Cummings, Paw Paw; Drummer, Wm. H. Bullard, Paw Paw.

*Privates.*—From Paw Paw: Alfred G. Wright, Carlton Coon, W. H. H. Price, John Williams, James E. Abrams, Barney Parkman, Andrew Loveland, Lyman Robinson, Charles W. Miner, Edward J. Crofoot, David Dolliver, Frank Constable, William Lewis, Charles W. Morse, John Serrine, Art. Serrine, Florence McGill, Edward E. House, Alexander Harrison, Hiram G. Saxton, A. H. Lamphear, Richard Hayes.

From Decatur: Henry B. Myers, Elva F. Moon, John Chavalle, Charles S. Cochet, Albert Priest, H. Chamberlin, Francis M. Swift, Leonard Dutton, Cyrus H. Butler, W. L. Sherman, Stephen W. Berry, Hiram S. Case, Wm. McDonald, Edward Carney, George W. Hathaway, Porter A. McGhan, James Fitch, George W. Davidson.

From Schoolcraft: J. M. Burson, George W. Orem, Aaron Burson, Henry Beals, Emory Chapman, John Sprague, R. McKinstry, George W. Beals, M. J. Foot.

From Lawrence: D. W. Rowe, A. J. Roundy, Wm. Van Fleet, P. F. Simmons, Herrick Hodge, Elam Branch, Elias Robb.

From Lawton: Samuel Garver, Horatio Burnham, Herman S. Parrish, Albert H. Ransom.

From Hartford: John Loder, W. H. Lewis, C. E. Van Ostran, Draper Decker.

From Waverly: H. F. Covey, T. J. Chafey, Aaron J. Covey, W. A. Hathaway.

From Hamilton: Ira W. Putnam, Willard Glace, Davis Briggs, J. Hartman.

From Kalamazoo: O. C. Knapp, M. Ryan, N. L. Deremor.

From Alpena: A. H. Barnum, Parker C. Story.

From Prairie Ronde: H. H. Maybe, A. Edmunds.

From Keeler: Lewis G. Timons, Henry Crandel.

From other localities: A. J. Richmond, of Lafayette; Percival Warner, Big Prairie; J. W. Bangor, F. Melvin, Bloomingdale; George B. Goodell, Cheshire; J. McMann, Grand Rapids; Dexter Patrick, Antwerp; A. P. Tucker, Arlington; W. H. Nitingale, Prairie Grove; Henry Reese, Porter; Mark Worthington, Brady; A. Ferdie, Milwaukee; O. F. Windsor, Dearborn; P. C. Diedrick, Rochester, N. Y.; Justus V. Alden, Breedsville.

The Board of Supervisors of Van Buren County appropriated twelve hundred dollars to pay for the transportation of the company to New York. In their official proceedings they speak of it as the Van Buren County Light Guard, but it was generally called, and is still commonly known as the Lafayette Light Guard. The board also adopted a memorial commending the Guard to the care of Gen. Sickles, of which the following is a copy:

"The Board of Supervisors of the County of Van Buren, and State of Michigan, to the Hon. Daniel E. Sickles, commanding Excelsior Brigade, New York City.

"At a session of said board, held June 12, 1861, at the court-house in the village of Paw Paw, in said county, the following memorial was adopted, to wit: We, the Board of Supervisors, in behalf of said county and the citizens thereof, tender to you for the service of our country the Van Buren County Light Guard, a company of infantry organized and sustained during the past two months at the expense of the county, but who have been unable to procure a position in any of the regiments called from this State, and, being desirous that our county should be represented and take a part in the conflict so unjustly waged against our beloved Union, we have at our own expense forwarded this company to you, in accordance with your acceptance, as communicated to Adjutant-General Robertson on the 27th ult.

"We place them, our patriotic young men, under your charge, with the fullest confidence that they will find in you a friend and commander, under whose guidance and counsel they will have an opportunity of giving unmistakable evidence of that patriotism which has prompted their offer of service to our country."

On arriving at Staten Island, near New York City, the Guard was assigned, as Co. C, to the 70th New York Infantry, one of the regiments of the Excelsior Brigade, and thenceforth it was no longer known as the Lafayette Light Guard, except among its old friends in Michigan. The regiment arrived at Washington on the day of the first battle of Bull Run. During the following autumn and winter the regiment was partly employed on the Maryland side of the Potomac, to guard against rebel incursions across

that river. In the spring of 1862 it went with its brigade and the Army of the Potomac to the Virginia peninsula, and took part in the siege of Yorktown. After the surrender of that stronghold the army advanced up the peninsula, and on the 5th of May attacked the enemy at Williamsburg. In this, its first battle, the Excelsior Brigade was in Gen. Hooker's division, which bore the brunt of the fight. A long, fierce, infantry conflict took place on ground covered with heavy timber and "slashing," and when the battle was won it was found that three hundred and sixty-five men had been killed and wounded in the 70th New York, out of eight hundred which went into the action.

At the battle of Fair Oaks, on the 31st of May, Casey's division was surprised and driven from its works, when Hooker's was ordered up to its assistance. The latter drove the enemy back and captured the works. The 70th was actively engaged, but not as severely as at Williamsburg.

The brigade was in nearly all the conflicts of the celebrated "seven days' fight;" but previous to Malvern Hill the 70th was not in the heaviest part of any of the battles. At Malvern it was in the reserve until about dark, when it was brought up to strengthen the lines which were about to advance on the baffled foe. Through the darkness, lighted up only by the glare of artillery and musketry, the division fought its way slowly but steadily forward until nine o'clock, at length overcoming all resistance and occupying the ground piled thick with the enemy's slain.

In a short time the brigade was ordered to join Gen. Pope in Northern Virginia, and was warmly engaged in the battles at and near Bull Run during the last days of August, 1862, meeting with serious loss.

From this time the 70th New York was found engaged in nearly all of the long list of battles fought by the Army of the Potomac,—at South Mountain, at Antietam, at Fredericksburg, at Chancellorsville, at Gettysburg, in the Wilderness, at Spottsylvania Court-House, at Cold Harbor, and in the earlier struggles around Petersburg,—sometimes defeated, sometimes victorious, but always gallantly maintaining the honor of the flag. The regiment was mustered out in the summer of 1864, at the expiration of their three years' service, but there were but few of the Lafayette Light Guard returned at that time to their homes in Van Buren County.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE LAFAYETTE LIGHT GUARD.

Capt. Wm. H. Hugo, Paw Paw; com. April 22, 1861; pro. to maj., May 17, 1863; must. out as capt., July 1, 1864.

1st Lieut. Jas. M. Longwell, Paw Paw; com. April 22, 1861; pro. to capt., June 12, 1862; mustered out.

2d Lieut. Wm. H. Carroll, Decatur; enl. May 1, 1861; res. Nov. 20, 1861.

3d Lieut. Dan C. Rogers, Decatur; enl. as sergeant, May 1, 1861; pro. to 2d Lieut., Dec. 1, 1862; to 1st Lieut., Feb. 23, 1864.

4th Lieut. Wm. W. Kilborn, Paw Paw; enl. as sergeant, May 1, 1861; pro. to 2d Lieut., Nov. 12, 1861; killed at Williamsburg, May 5, 1862.

Sergt. Henry Chamberlain, Decatur; enl. May 1, 1861; pro. to 2d Lieut. of Co. E, Nov. 21, 1862.

Sergt. Jos. W. Crow, Hartford; enl. April 26, 1861; died of wounds received at Williamsburg, May 5, 1862.

Corp. Herriek Hodges, Lawrence; enl. April 29, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 21, 1861.

Corp. Alex. M. Harrison, Paw Paw; enl. April 25, 1861; disch. for disability, July 26, 1862.

Corp. Alvah H. Moor, Decatur; enl. April 26, 1861; killed in battle at Williamsburg.

Corp. Eliam Branch, Lawrence; enl. April 20, 1861; disch. for wounds, July 24, 1862.

Corp. Francis M. Swift, Decatur; enl. April 29, 1861; trans. to 16th U. S. Inf.

Corp. Henry B. Myers, Decatur; enl. April 30, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf. Corp. Wm. H. Ballard, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; trans. to Invalid Corps. Corp. Adelbert W. Cummings, Paw Paw; enl. April 6, 1861; disch. for disability, Jan. 22, 1862.

Corp. Henry R. Brown, Decatur; enl. April 30, 1861.

#### Privates.

Justin A. Alden, Columbia; enl. May 2, 1861; died of disease in Camp Scott, N. Y., June 29, 1861.

James Abrams, Paw Paw; enl. May 29, 1861; trans. to 2d U. S. Cav., Oct. 28, 1862.

Alfred Barnum, Paw Paw; enl. May 29, 1861; died in action at Williamsburg, Va., May 5, 1862.

David Briggs, Hamilton; enl. May 29, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

Horatio Burnham, Lawton; enl. April 30, 1861; died of disease at Wooster, O., Aug. 15, 1863.

Cyrus H. Butler, Decatur; enl. April 30, 1861; disch. for disability, March 15, 1862.

John H. Banners, Decatur; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; disch. for disability.

Steph. T. Brown, Waverly; enl. Sept. 18, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf.

John W. Barber.

Theodore Clark, Almena; enl. Sept. 18, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf.

Harvey Case, Decatur; enl. May 1, 1861; must. out July, 1864.

Amon D. Covey, Waverly; enl. April 27, 1861; died of disease at Georgetown, D. C., Nov. 28, 1861.

Hiram F. Covey, Waverly; enl. April 29, 1861; disch. for disability, Jan. 20, 1863.

Edward S. Crofoot, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf., June 22, 1864.

Carlton Coon, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; disch. for disability, Jan. 5, 1862.

James Clark, Almena; enl. Oct. 22, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 18, 1862.

John F. Clavilier, sergt., Decatur; enl. April 30, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

Henry Crandall, Keeler; enl. May 29, 1861; trans. to U. S. Cav., Oct. 28, 1862.

Charles D. Crockett, Decatur; enl. May 20, 1861; pro. to com. sergt., N. C. S., Nov. 1, 1862.

Wm. Constable, Paw Paw; enl. May 29, 1861; disch. Dec. 31, 1862, for wounds received at Williamsburg, Va.

Philip C. Dedrick, Lawrence; enl. April 29, 1861; disch. for disability, Aug. 3, 1861.

Leonard Dutton, sergt., Decatur; enl. May 1, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

John Emery, Paw Paw; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf.

Anthony Emmerling, Paw Paw; enl. Oct. 28, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf.

Philip Fitzsimmons, Lawrence; enl. May 13, 1861; died in battle at Spottsylvania, Va., May 12, 1864.

Andrew H. Fertig, Lawrence; enl. May 23, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

Samuel Garver, Lawrence; enl. May 27, 1861; trans. to 2d U. S. Cav.

Allen Gorham, Almena; enl. Oct. 18, 1861; disch. for disability, Aug. 23, 1862.

Richard Hayes, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf., June 22, 1864.

Jeremiah Hartman, Hamilton; enl. May 29, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf., June 22, 1864.

Gilman Hinckley, Antwerp; enl. Nov. 1, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf., June 22, 1864.

Nathan Hulbert, Waverly; enl. Oct. 18, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf., June 22, 1864.

Edward E. House, Paw Paw; enl. May 29, 1861; disch. for disability, July 20, 1861.

Benj. Holt, Paw Paw; enl. Oct. 28, 1861; disch. for disability, March 4, 1863.

Edward Kearney, Decatur; enl. May 1, 1861.

Albert H. Lapman, Paw Paw; enl. May 1, 1861; died of disease in Maryland, Nov. 21, 1862.

William H. Lewis, Hartford; enl. May 1, 1861; detached at Harwood Hospital, Washington, D. C.

Charles W. Miner, Paw Paw; enl. Aug. 25, 1861; died in battle at Gettysburg, July 2, 1863.

Charles Moose, Paw Paw; enl. Aug. 22, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

Porter McGlan, Decatur; enl. Aug. 29, 1861; disch. Jan. 23, 1863, for wounds received at Antietam.

Frederick Melvin, Bloomingdale; enl. Aug. 23, 1861; died in action at Fair Oaks, Va., June 25, 1862.

William McDonald, Decatur; enl. May 20, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

Seth P. Newcomb, Almena; enl. Oct. 29, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf.

Steph. W. Perry, Decatur; enl. April 27, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf.

Heman Parish, Lawton; enl. May 20, 1861; trans. to Invalid Corps.

Willard Place, Hamilton; enl. May 20, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

Dexter D. Patrick, Almena; enl. April 22, 1861; died June 3, 1862, of wounds received at Williamsburg.

William H. Price, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; died May 22, 1863, of wounds.

Albert Priest, Decatur; enl. May 1, 1861; disch. for disability, March 15, 1862.

Byron Parleman, Paw Paw; enl. April 27, 1861; disch. for disability, Jan. 26, 1863.

Averill S. Roundy, Lawrence; enl. April 26, 1861; disch. Oct. 20, 1862, for wounds.

Lyman Robinson, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; trans. to 2d U. S. Cav., Oct. 28, 1862.

Henry Reese, Porter; enl. April 30, 1861; trans. to 2d U. S. Cav., Oct. 28, 1862.

John Rickard, Paw Paw; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 12, 1863.

Steph. Remedios, Almena; enl. Nov. 1, 1861; drowned at Harrison's Landing, Va., Aug. 8, 1862.  
 Michael Ryan, Decatur; enl. May 22, 1861; died in battle at Gettysburg, Pa., July 2, 1863.  
 Daniel W. Rowe, Lawrence; enl. May 29, 1861; died in battle at Williamsburg, May 5, 1862.  
 Elias Robb, Lawrence; enl. May 29, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 14, 1862.  
 John Service, Paw Paw; enl. April 25, 1861; trans. to 2d U. S. Cav.  
 Arthur Service, Paw Paw; enl. April 29, 1861; trans. to 2d U. S. Cav.  
 Walter Sherman, Decatur; enl. May 1, 1861; died of disease in Maryland, Jan. 2, 1862.  
 Silas Sanders, Paw Paw; enl. Oct. 30, 1861; died of disease at Falmouth, Va., Feb. 4, 1863.  
 Hiram Saxton, Paw Paw; enl. April 27, 1861; trans. to 86th N. Y. Inf.  
 Lewis G. Timmins, Keeler; enl. May 1, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.  
 Augustus P. Tucker, Columbia; enl. May 3, 1861; died in action at Williamsburg Road.  
 Clara E. Van Astran, corp., Hartford; enl. April 24, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.  
 William Van Fleet, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; disch. for disability, Sept. 29, 1862.  
 Byron Walrath, Paw Paw; enl. Oct. 17, 1861; died in action at Williamsburg, May 5, 1862.  
 John W. Williams, Paw Paw; enl. April 22, 1861; must. out July 1, 1864.

## CAPT. EDMUNDS' COMPANY.

One of the first companies raised in this part of the State assembled at St. Joseph in May, 1861, its one hundred and five members being enlisted by Hon. A. H. Morrison, of that village, mostly from the townships of St. Joseph, Benton, Sodus, and Royalton, in Berrien County. It organized by the election of W. W. Edmunds, captain, — — —, first lieutenant, and Eugene Howe, second lieutenant.

The officers then requested Governor Blair to commission them and to assign the company to a Michigan regiment, but all the Michigan regiments then authorized were already full and "running over" with the patriotic sons of the Peninsular State. This company was supported over a month by the voluntary contributions of the citizens of St. Joseph and vicinity, in the hope that a place would yet be found for it in the ranks of the Michigan soldiers. Capt. Edmunds visited the Governor, at Lansing, in order, if possible, to bring about such a result, but in vain. On his return, the unfortunate young officer fell from a steamboat into the St. Joseph River, about half-way between Niles and Berrien, and was drowned.

Soon after that, as the company had no real organization, and as the members had abandoned all hope of securing a place in a Michigan regiment, they gave up their attempts in that direction, and most of them sought service in other States. About a third of them joined the 6th Wisconsin Infantry, some enlisted in the 7th Missouri Infantry, and the remainder united themselves with the Douglas brigade at Chicago. In these commands the fragments of the original company gallantly sustained the honor of their State, but, decimated again and again by disease and battle, there were but few of them who returned after the war to become citizens of Berrien County.

Jay J. Drake, a private in this company, now chief clerk in the general office of the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad, at Muskegon, became a captain in the 7th Missouri. H. C. Matraw, another private of the same company, then of Bainbridge, now of Holland, Ottawa Co., became a captain in the 6th Wisconsin before he was nineteen years old. He fought in every battle of the Army of the Potomac but one, and in each of three engagements his senior officers were killed and he commanded the regiment through the remainder of the fight. Doubtless many others

made gallant records, but in our country the fortunes of peace, scarcely less than those of war, scatter the people far and wide,—far beyond the notice of the most zealous and industrious historian.

## SIXTH INFANTRY.

The 6th Regiment of Michigan Infantry was raised in the summer of 1861. The commissioned officers were selected by the Governor; these then selected the non-commissioned officers of their respective companies; and both commissioned and non-commissioned officers, together with those of the 5th and 7th Infantry, then went into a camp of instruction at Detroit, where they were thoroughly drilled for nearly two months. They then returned, and very speedily enlisted the necessary number of privates. Company A, which was raised at Niles, was composed of men from the southeastern part of Berrien County; while Company B, raised at St. Joseph, was from the northwestern section. Company G was partly from Van Buren and partly from Berrien County. Company K was partly from Berrien and partly from Cass County.

The regiment rendezvoused at Kalamazoo, and left that place for the East, with nine hundred and forty-four men, on the 30th of August, 1861. Arriving at Baltimore, it was detained there on garrison duty about six months. Being a well-behaved regiment of patriotic young men, remarkably free from the "bummer" element, the 6th became a great favorite with the citizens of Baltimore, who were very anxious for its retention. The Baltimoreans also treated the men with much generosity, and are still kindly remembered by them. The stay at Baltimore was only interrupted by an expedition down the eastern shore of Maryland, where nothing more exciting occurred than an event known as the "Turkey Review," when the whole brigade was ordered out for inspection by Gen. Lockwood, on account of a solitary turkey which had mysteriously disappeared from the premises of a neighboring farmer.

In February, 1862, the 6th proceeded to Newport News, near Norfolk, Va., and on the day before the celebrated battle of the "Merrimac" and "Monitor" it embarked with Gen. Butler's expedition, and set sail for the Gulf of Mexico. A terrific gale assailed the fleet as it passed that celebrated home of storms, Cape Hatteras, and for three days the great ships reeled and staggered under the blast until death seemed nearer to the soldiers packed below the decks than it would have appeared on a field of battle.

All the ships, however, escaped without serious damage, and in due time the expedition landed at Ship Island, Miss. From that point the 6th proceeded with the other troops to the mouth of the Mississippi River, and when the gallant Farragut forced his way past thundering forts and gunboats, and rams and fire-ships, the land forces sailed up the river to New Orleans.

The 6th Michigan Infantry was the first Union regiment which occupied New Orleans in the day-time (a few had entered it during the previous night), and as it formed line on the dock, which was covered with sugar and molasses up to the ankles of the men, they began to think they had got a sweet thing, if nothing more, in the metropolis of the Southwest.



On the 15th of May, the 6th, with a large number of other regiments, proceeded up the Mississippi, landing and taking formal possession of various places, but meeting with no opposition until they reached Warrenton, a short distance below Vicksburg. The enemy was there fortified in force, and refused to surrender. The Union troops spent considerable time in the vicinity, trying to circumvent the rebels by digging canals, etc., but more than half of them fell sick, and on the 5th of June they returned to Baton Rouge, where the 6th was encamped during the greater part of the summer.

On the 5th of August, 1862, about four o'clock in the morning, the rebel Gen. Breckenridge, ex-Vice-President of the United States, attacked the Union lines with a heavy force. He had been expected for three days, but, either from lack of experience, or for some other reason, the Union commander, Gen. Williams, did not order the erection of any breastworks. Later in the war the men would have been likely to put up some kind of defensive works, even without orders. The enemy was warmly received, however, and for two hours a severe battle raged, in which Gen. Williams was killed, but in which the Union troops steadily repulsed their assailants. The 6th Michigan was on the extreme left, and was not in the thickest part of the fight, yet its casualties numbered sixty-two killed and wounded, and six missing. At length some new regiments gave way, and the rest of the command was then ordered to fall back towards the river. In a short time the lines were again advanced, when it was found that the rebels had been so severely handled that they had all fled, leaving their dead and many of their wounded on the field of battle.

A heavy fog prevailed during the battle, and perhaps tended to prevent any very energetic movements on either side. Capt. David Bacon, of Company A, afterwards lieutenant-colonel of the 19th Infantry, was severely wounded, and was left on the ground when the Union troops fell back. The rebels found him when they advanced, and a soldier of the 4th Louisiana was posted to guard and take care of him. The fog was so heavy that he could not see what was going on, and when the firing ceased he supposed the Confederates were victorious, and waited patiently to be relieved by one of his comrades. When the Unionists found themselves in possession of the field, they sent out squads of men to bring in the wounded of both sides. A squad from Company A, of the 6th, while moving through the fog on this duty, came upon a solitary Confederate standing by a tree.

"Hello, reb," cried the sergeant in command, as his men brought their pieces to a "ready," "come in out of the wet; we want you."

"All right, Yank," replied the grayback; "but here is one of you'uns officers you had better see to."

The squad advanced, and sure enough there was the wounded Capt. Bacon, the fog having prevented both guard and prisoner from learning that the supposed victors were in reality the vanquished.

On the 20th of August the 6th was ordered to New Orleans, where it was stationed in the defenses on Metairie Ridge, near a piece of swampy ground a short distance out of the city. Here nearly the whole regiment became sick, and many a hardy son of Michigan was here laid beneath

the unfriendly soil of Louisiana. One hundred and thirty-eight men died of disease during the first year of the regiment's service, the greater part at this point. At length, on the 6th of December, 1862, when there were but one hundred and ninety-one men for duty out of seven hundred and fifty-five, the regiment was removed to Carrollton, a short distance above New Orleans, where its health was soon, to a great extent, restored.

The 6th remained in the vicinity of New Orleans through the ensuing winter and spring, being engaged during that time in an expedition to Ponchatoula in the latter part of February, 1863, where it drove out the rebels and captured a number of prisoners with slight loss; also in a raid up the Jackson Railroad in the early part of May, when it burned a gun-carriage factory and a large amount of other property belonging to the rebels.

On the 23d of May, 1863, the regiment joined Gen. Banks' army before Port Hudson, where it was placed in one of the most exposed positions in front of the enemy's lines.

On the 27th of May came the celebrated and deadly assault on Port Hudson. The ground in front of the fortifications was cut up by numerous ravines, and for a thousand yards the trees had mostly been cut down, forming an almost impenetrable "slashing." Still the 6th moved gallantly forward under a storm of cannon and rifle balls, followed with more or less closeness by the other regiments of the column. The killed and wounded fell fast at every step, but still the depleted regiment struggled on until it arrived within twelve rods of the rebel works. But the men were unable to go any farther, and those who were left sheltered themselves in a plantation ditch and kept up a sharp fire on the rebels whose heads appeared above the parapet. No other regiment advanced as far as this, and the assault was given up. But the 6th could not be withdrawn from its position, and remained until nightfall, when it moved quietly back to the Union lines, having had over a third of its number killed and wounded during the assault.

In front of Gen. T. W. Sherman's division (who must not be confounded with W. T. Sherman, the present general-in-chief), however, there was a narrow, open field running up to the enemy's works. The division lay in column of regiments, the 6th Michigan, not over three hundred strong, in front. Three divisions had been successively repulsed during the forenoon, and about one o'clock P.M. an order came for Gen. Sherman's division to charge the works. Probably knowing it would be useless, after what had occurred, Gen. Sherman appeared very angry. Riding to the head of his column, where Gen. Dow, the leading brigadier, was attending to some matters on foot, he said, somewhat brusquely,—

"Gen. Dow, mount your horse!"

That officer hastened to his steed, and Sherman said to the commander of the regiment,—

"We are ordered to charge those works; 6th Michigan, forward!" and then, attended by near twenty staff-officers and orderlies, he rode out into the open field already mentioned, closely followed by the regiment. Twenty pieces of rebel artillery at once concentrated their fire on the head of the column. Ere long Gen. Sherman was brought to the ground by a wound which caused the loss of a leg.

Then began the siege of Port Hudson. The Unionists steadily dug their way towards the defiant fortress, and the 6th Michigan, which was on the extreme left, took its full share in the hardships and dangers of that period. On the 5th of June it took part in another assault on the rebel intrenchments. This, too, was unsuccessful, so far as entering the works was concerned, but the Union lines were in some places advanced to within fifty yards of the fortifications. The loss of the 6th in this affair was but slight.

By the 29th of June the regiment had worked its way up to within a short distance of a fortified bluff, known as "the citadel." On that day thirty-five men of the 6th, acting as a forlorn hope, attempted to storm the "citadel." They reached the ditch, but were driven back, after eight of them had been killed and nine wounded. Then the digging process was resumed. During this approach towards the citadel an incident occurred, which was related to us by Capt. Edwards, of Company A, and which is worthy of special notice. There was a small ravine in front of the pickets of the 6th Michigan, on the other side of which were the Confederate pickets. Col. Bailey, afterwards celebrated in connection with the great dam across Red River, desired to get possession of the rebel picket-line, in order to set a body of negroes to digging on the other side of the ravine, and ordered Capt. Craig, of Company K, who commanded the pickets of the 6th during the following night, to make the effort. The captain knew that if he made an attack with his men the rebels would be quickly reinforced from the fortress, many lives would be lost, and perhaps the attempt would fail. So he determined to try strategy. Knowing when the rebels relieved pickets, he led about twenty men quietly through the ravine just before relief time, and gained a place near the beat of the sentry farthest from the "citadel." Gliding upon the beat between him and the fortress with two or three men, he advanced to meet him. The sentry was naturally expecting the relief, and carelessly allowed him to approach until he was able to seize the luckless Confederate's musket and whisper a command to yield under penalty of instant death,—a command enforced by the leveled rifles of his comrades. In this way he relieved five posts in succession, placing one of his own men upon each of them. Then came the most difficult of all,—to capture the relieving corporal with his guard. The captain arranged his men close behind him, and himself took a rifle and occupied the post usually first approached by the corporal. Presently the tramp of half a dozen men was heard, and Craig called out,—

"Halt! Who comes there?"

"Corporal of the guard, with relief."

"Advance, corporal, and give the countersign."

The corporal approached, with "arms apart," to within a few feet of the supposed sentinel, who suddenly exclaimed:

"Ready!"

Fifteen rifles clicked behind him.

"Surrender!"

The corporal did so without a word.

"Call in your guard."

"Come in, boys, it's no use," said he; and they quite agreed with him, for it was not so dark but that they could see that fifteen rifles were aimed at their luckless breasts.

The prisoners were then sent into camp, and a strong guard was established on that side of the ravine. The Confederates could not depress the guns of the citadel so as to injure the Unionists in their new position, and they could not afford to make a sally, as that would have brought on a general engagement, in which the advantage of both numbers and position would have been with the Federals. So Col. Bailey and his negroes crossed the ravine and continued their work, and by the 8th of July they had burrowed directly under the "citadel," and placed a mine there ready to be exploded at a moment's notice. But ere the firing of the mine was ordered there came the news of the capture of Vicksburg by Gen. Grant, and on the 9th of July, 1863, knowing further resistance to be useless, Gen. Gardner surrendered Port Hudson and its half-starved garrison to Gen. Banks.

This surrender gave a large amount of heavy artillery to the Unionists, which it was desirable to use, but which there were no artillerists to man. Gen. Banks accordingly issued an order the next day after the surrender (July 10, 1863) converting the 6th Michigan Infantry into a regiment of heavy artillery. It retained its old number, but was thenceforth designated as the 6th Michigan Heavy Artillery. The men were organized as artillery, and trained to the use of the heavy guns, and received the pay, clothing, and equipments of artillerists. They also retained their muskets and bayonets, and frequently left their cannon and made long marches as infantry. The order in question was approved by the Secretary of War on the 30th of July, 1863.

The regiment remained on garrison duty at Port Hudson until the early part of March, 1864, when a sufficient number re-enlisted to make it a veteran regiment. After the men had spent their furlough in Michigan, where their number was increased by over six hundred recruits, they returned South, reaching Port Hudson on the 11th of May, 1864. On the 6th of June the regiment proceeded to Morganza Bend, where it served as infantry until the 24th of the same month. It then moved to Vicksburg, and served with the engineer brigade about a month. It then went up White River to St. Charles, Ark., one detachment being fired on by a rebel battery on the way, and several men being killed and wounded.

After a short stay at St. Charles, the 6th returned to Morganza Bend, where the men served for a short time as engineers, but soon returned to duty as heavy artillery. In a short time the regiment proceeded by way of New Orleans to Mobile, and was present at the bombardment and capture of Forts Morgan and Gaines, at the time of Admiral Farragut's brilliant exploit in forcing his way into Mobile Bay.

On the 1st of October half of the regiment, including Companies A and B, was stationed in Fort Gaines, and the other half in Fort Morgan. Though the 6th had gone through but little hard fighting after it was transformed into artillery, it had suffered very severely from disease, one hundred and fifty-five men having died during the year closing on the 30th of November, 1864.

In the latter part of December, Company B and four other companies were attached to Gen. Gordon Grauger's

division, which was operating against Mobile from the direction of Pensacola. They returned to Forts Morgan and Gaines in the latter part of January.

On the 31st of March, Companies A and K were each furnished with a battery of ten-inch mortars, and ordered to operate against Spanish Fort and Fort McDermott, in the immediate vicinity of Mobile.

Mortars look a good deal like cauldron kettles, with very thick sides and small interiors. They are fixed at an elevation which is not changed, and the shell is thrown to a greater or less distance by varying the charge of powder. Lieut. Beardsley, then commanding Co. K, was very anxious to know the exact distance from his battery to Fort McDermott. So, the night before he was to open fire, he paced the distance to a high stub of a tree, only a little way from the fort. The next morning he estimated the distance from the stub to the fort, added it to the distance ascertained by pacing, and was ready for accurate work. Just before the time for opening fire, Maj.-Gen. Granger rode up.

"Lieut. Beardsley," said he, "how far do you think it is to that fort?"

"Four hundred and eighty-five yards," promptly replied the lieutenant.

The general looked a little surprised at his minuteness, and inquired,—

"Hadn't you better call it five hundred yards, and be done with it?"

"No, four hundred and eighty-five," persisted Beardsley.

"Oh, very well," said the general; "how much powder and fuse have you used?"

The lieutenant told him.

"Well, that's right for four hundred and eighty-five yards,—fire away!"

The mortar was fired, and the shell was seen to burst on the parapet of the fort. A few grains more of powder were used, and the following shells all landed in the fort with the most demoralizing effect. The general warmly congratulated the lieutenant on his talent for guessing distances, and rode off to another part of the field.

After Fort McDermott and Spanish Fort were captured, Companies A and K manned the immense one-hundred-pound Parrots and other heavy guns of those fortresses, and turned them against the other rebel works, which they battered till all were reduced and Mobile surrendered. These companies remained on duty at Spanish Fort until the 20th of April, when they returned to Fort Morgan. Company B was on picket duty at "Navy Cove" until about the 9th of July, 1864, when it rejoined the regiment, which then proceeded to New Orleans. It was newly equipped and expected to go to Texas, but the orders to that effect were countermanded, and on the 20th of August, 1865, it was mustered out of service at New Orleans. On the 23d it started up the Mississippi for home, and on the 5th of September it was paid off and disbanded at Jackson, Mich.

The 6th Infantry lost 542 men by death (disease and battle), this being the largest loss sustained by any Michigan regiment during the war.

#### OFFICERS AND ENLISTED MEN OF THE SIXTH INFANTRY FROM BERKEN COUNTY

##### *Field and Staff*

Col. Edward Bacon, Niles; com. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. to lieutenant-col., June 21, 1862; must. out Oct. 16, 1864.

Chaplain Elizur Andrews, Niles; com. Aug. 20, 1861; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Serg't. Maj. William J. Edwards, Niles; enl. Aug. 20, 1861; appointed 2d lieut., Co. K, Sept. 1, 1862.

Q. M. Serg't. Andrew C. Merrill, Niles; enl. Aug. 20, 1861; must. out at end of service, Aug. 19, 1864.

Com. Serg't. Richard D. Kennedy, Niles; enl. Aug. 20, 1861; must. out at end of service, Aug. 19, 1864.

##### *Company A.*

Capt. Eli A. Griffin, Niles; com. Aug. 19, 1861; resigned July 17, 1863; com. maj., 19th Inf., Oct. 22, 1863.

Capt. Seldon F. Craig, Niles; com. July 17, 1863; com. 2d lieut., Aug. 19, 1861; pro. to 1st lieut., April 1, 1862; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

1st Lieut. William W. Thayer, Niles; com. Aug. 19, 1861; resigned March 28, 1862.

2d Lieut. James Russey, Niles; com. April 1, 1862; enl. as sergt., Aug. 20, 1861; resigned Dec. 18, 1862.

Serg't. Stephen S. Smith, Oronoko; veteran; enl. March 2, 1861; pro. to 2d lieut., Nov. 25, 1864; must. out as sergt., Aug. 20, 1865.

Serg't. Hiram McMichael, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died on Mississippi River steamer, May 20, 1862.

Serg't. Henry P. Glenn, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died of wounds at New Orleans, Sept. 4, 1862.

Serg't. James M. Smith, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died on Mississippi River steamer, May 22, 1862.

Serg't. George M. Fenton, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. G, July 21, 1864.

Corp. Lawrence Horgan, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; discharged for promotion, Sept. 18, 1863.

Corp. Arthur Daily, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; discharged for promotion to 2d lieut., Sept. 1, 1863.

Corp. George B. Tatman, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; sergt.; disch. June 20, 1864.

Corp. James W. Penrose, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. to enter regular army.

Corp. John W. Chesterman, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; veteran, Feb. 1, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. D, March 12, 1865.

Corp. William W. Smith, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. Oct. 5, 1863.

Jason Bunker, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 11, 1862.

Musician Walter G. Cutting, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. to principal musician; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Musician Bethuel S. Lingrel, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died of disease at Baton Rouge, La., July 20, 1862.

Wagoner Enos F. Curtis, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; must. out Aug. 23, 1864.

Fridolin Alley, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Robert Atwood, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

George B. Ashcroft, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Abram O. Bennett, disch. by order, June 20, 1864.

Joseph J. Breck, mustered out Aug. 20, 1865.

William H. Curtis, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

John R. Cowles, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Julius Cook, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Mills Crippen, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Daniel L. Closson, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

William J. Closson, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

James M. S. Coder, disch. for disability, Oct. 27, 1862.

Joseph Cherry, disch. by order, May 3, 1865.

Milton W. Doty, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.

Charles Evans, disch. for disability, Dec. 7, 1861.

Freeman Evans, died of wounds, Oct. 14, 1862.

Albert Edwards, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Uriah Greers, disch. for disability, Dec. 31, 1862.

Samuel Halleck, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.

Christopher Hahn, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.

Edward Harrington, disch. by order, March 23, 1862.

Dwight Hunt, disch. to enter regular army, Nov. 10, 1862.

Nathan H. Heath, died of disease at Baton Rouge, June 17, 1862.

John Hall, died of disease in regt. hospital, Nov. 25, 1862.

Lewis Horn, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Andrew J. Hawkins, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Henry H. Jackson, disch. for disability, Oct. 21, 1862.

George L. Kimmel, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.

Wilson D. Kinsey, disch. to enter regular army, Nov. 14, 1862.

James H. Kill, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Joseph F. Kirk, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Henry Lazelle, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

Clarence McCoy, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

J. N. Mendenhall, disch. for disability, Oct. 27, 1862.

Alex. McManamy, disch. for disability, Dec. 21, 1862.

Charles Milner, disch. for disability, Aug. 2, 1865.

Schuyler C. Morris, died of disease at Port Hudson, La., Dec. 30, 1863.

James P. Norris, died of disease at Port Hudson, La., July 29, 1863.

Wilson Potter, died of disease at Vicksburg, Oct. 5, 1864.



Aaron Porter, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Joseph Partridge, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 John S. Perkins, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Frank Rood, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Monroe Redding, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Henry Redding, died of disease at regimental hospital, Nov. 9, 1862.  
 Daniel Rittenhouse, disch. for disability, June, 1863.  
 David Salsbury, disch. for disability, Oct. 8, 1861.  
 Harvey Skinner, disch. by order, Dec. 5, 1862.  
 Frank R. Swift, disch. by order, Aug. 13, 1863.  
 James H. Smith, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 John J. Stone, disch. for disability, March 23, 1865.  
 John H. Southwell, died of disease at Port Hudson, Jan. 4, 1864.  
 Duncan Smith, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; died of disease at New Orleans, Oct. 6, 1864.  
 Eaton D. Shanton, veteran; enl. March 2, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Jeremiah Thompson, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Alfred Turner, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Hiel Truefit, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Jeremiah Van Horn, disch. for disability, Dec. 31, 1862.  
 Clark Walters, disch. for disability, Oct. 13, 1862.  
 Henry Walters, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Charles Wells, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 James A. Wilson, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Porter Whitney, died of wounds, Oct. 14, 1862.  
 Mark Williams, died of disease, Oct. 22, 1862.  
 Wm. W. Williams, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

#### Company L.

Capt. Wm. W. Wheeler, Niles; com. Aug. 19, 1861; pro. to maj., 23d Inf., April 6, 1863.  
 Capt. Charles Moulton, St. Joseph; com. Nov. 25, 1864; 1st lieutenant, Aug. 23, 1864; 2d lieutenant, Oct. 1, 1863; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 1st Lieutenant Augustus W. Chapman, St. Joseph; com. Aug. 20, 1861; capt., Co. K, Dec. 1, 1862.  
 1st Lieutenant Patrick H. Lawler, St. Joseph; com. Dec. 1, 1862; 2d lieutenant, Aug. 19, 1861; capt., Co. E, Aug. 12, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 1st Lieutenant William H. Conley, Berrien Springs; com. Nov. 25, 1864; 2d lieutenant, Aug. 23, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 2d Lieutenant Le Grand W. Perce, St. Joseph; com. q.m., Aug. 19, 1861; capt., Co. D, June 21, 1862; appointed asst. q.m. U. S. Vols., March 10, 1863; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Sergt. Patrick H. Lawler, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. to 2d lieutenant.  
 Sergt. Orrin K. Pomeroy, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; killed in action at Port Hudson, May 27, 1863.  
 Sergt. Wm. S. Witherell, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. Aug. 31, 1862.  
 Sergt. Edwin F. Kimmel, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. into 25th Inf.  
 Sergt. George W. Keeler, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. into U. S. C. T.  
 Corp. Gilbert Ackley, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; 1st sergeant; died of disease, Nov. 21, 1862.  
 Corp. Charles Moulton, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; 1st sergeant; pro. to 2d lieutenant.  
 Corp. Greenleaf Odell, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; sergeant; disch. at end of service, Aug. 19, 1864.  
 Corp. Samuel Jamison, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for disability.  
 Corp. George W. Hemingway, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died of disease at New Orleans, Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Corp. Joseph Boughton, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 20, 1862.  
 Corp. Daniel H. Reese, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for promotion in U. S. C. T., 3d Regt.  
 Corp. Lorenzo H. Teetzel, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. at end of service, Aug. 22, 1864.  
 Musician Wm. H. Conley, veteran; enl. March 20, 1861; sergt.; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Musician John Burke, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; trans. to band.  
 Wagoner James Whitney, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1863.  
 Matthew Anderson, disch. by order, March 21, 1864.  
 John Anderson, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 John Ayliffe, veteran; enl. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Elijah Ayliffe, killed in action at Port Hudson, May 27, 1863.  
 Sylvester Ayliffe, disch. by order, Jan. 6, 1865.  
 Lafayette Brant, died of disease at Ship Island, April 3, 1862.  
 Levi P. Brown, died of disease at Port Hudson, Sept. 26, 1862.  
 James Boughton, disch. for promotion, Sept. 26, 1862.  
 Henry L. Beach, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 George Brown, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Samuel J. Bernard, disch. for disability, July 23, 1865.  
 Elias Bailey, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Enoch Campbell, died of disease at New Orleans, June 12, 1862.  
 George W. Closson, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.  
 James Campbell, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.  
 W. A. Cleveland, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Robert L. Dehay, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Charles A. Dilts, disch. for disability, Sept. 18, 1863.  
 Charles Davidge, died of disease in Louisiana, Nov. 12, 1862.  
 Peter Desterler, veteran; must. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 George Forbes, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.

Edward Francis, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Nelson Gardner, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Martin Gubbit, disch. by order, March 21, 1864.  
 Merritt Geary, disch. for disability, Oct. 30, 1863.  
 Vintry Green, disch. at end of service, March 7, 1865.  
 William E. Garrison, veteran; must. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Joseph Gubbit, died of disease at Port Hudson, Aug. 19, 1863.  
 Sylvanus Gano, died of disease at Jefferson City, March 4, 1863.  
 Henry Headley, died of disease at Jefferson City, Nov. 13, 1862.  
 Cornelius W. Hutchinson, died of disease at Jefferson City, Oct. 31, 1862.  
 John E. Hall, disch. for disability, May 5, 1864.  
 Jacob Helmick, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Charles W. Haskins, disch. by order, July 22, 1865.  
 Albert Haskins, veteran; must. Feb. 10, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Elias W. Jay, veteran; must. Feb. 10, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Daniel L. James, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.  
 Prentiss Jewell, disch. for disability, Jan. 8, 1863.  
 John Johnson, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Abram Lafayette, disch. to enter regular army, Nov. 14, 1862.  
 Arnold Latham, disch. for disability, Sept. 1, 1863.  
 Barzilai W. Loucks, died of disease at regimental hospital, Oct. 22, 1862.  
 John Lane, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 James Lamonion, veteran; must. Feb. 10, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Anson Mathews, veteran; must. Feb. 10, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Chauncey Miller, veteran; must. Feb. 10, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 George W. McFee, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Orrin Miller, died of disease at Baton Rouge, July 8, 1862.  
 Charles Morey, died of disease at New Orleans, Aug. 11, 1862.  
 Edward Mason, died of disease at regimental hospital, Oct. 8, 1862.  
 George Metcalf, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 George W. Palmer, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Myron Pangborn, died of disease at New Orleans, Feb. 3, 1863.  
 Waite Risley, died of disease at Ship Island, March 26, 1862.  
 Eli Robinson, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.  
 Charles Tobie, disch. for disability, Jan. 29, 1863.  
 Lewis B. Tryon, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Byron B. Taylor, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 George F. Taylor, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 William H. H. Wheaton, veteran; must. Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Franklin S. Walters, died of disease at New Orleans, July 7, 1864.  
 Alexander L. Waterman, died of disease at Baton Rouge, June 18, 1862.  
 Samuel L. Walton, died of disease in Louisiana, Sept. 19, 1862.  
 Francis Wood, disch. for disability, Oct. 30, 1863.  
 Rodman M. Warden, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Joseph F. Yaw, died in action at Port Hudson, May 27, 1863.  
 Franklin Yaw, veteran; must. Feb. 10, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

#### Company D.

Sergt. John G. Allison, pro. to 2d lieutenant; must. out as sergt. Aug. 20, 1865.

#### Company E.

Isaac Hamilton, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
 Edward Hands, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
 Mark Horman, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
 Riley Higginbotham, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.

#### Company K.

Capt. David Bacon, Niles; com. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. to lieutenant-col. 19th Inf., Aug. 8, 1862.  
 Capt. Horace W. Cummings, Niles; com. 1st lieutenant, Aug. 19, 1861; pro. to capt., Sept. 1, 1862; died of disease in Louisiana, Nov. 13, 1862.  
 Capt. Augustus W. Chapman, St. Joseph; com. Dec. 1, 1862; died in action at Pleasant Hill, La., April 27, 1864.  
 Capt. William J. Edwards, Niles; com. 2d lieutenant, Sept. 1, 1862; pro. to 1st lieutenant, Oct. 1, 1863; to capt., July 21, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 2d Lieutenant Chas. W. Wood, Niles; pro. to corp. (veteran), March 29, 1864; to 2d lieutenant, March 10, 1865; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Sergt. Robert Farrell, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 26, 1862.  
 Musician James A. Grimes, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; re-enl. as vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Charles H. Adams, disch. for disability, Oct. 26, 1862.  
 George Atkinson, died in action at Port Hudson, La., May 27, 1863.  
 Lewis Bost, died in action at Port Hudson, La., May 27, 1863.  
 Charles W. Bennett, disch. for disability, Oct. 26, 1862.  
 Smith Benjamin, disch. for disability, Oct. 26, 1862.  
 Nicholas P. Bratt, disch. for disability, Jan. 5, 1863.  
 F. E. Bohmunkamp, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Andrew J. Bratt, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Nathaniel Bratt, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Henry C. Buckles, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Simon P. Boyce, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Frederick Barkway, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 John P. Bloom, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 John Chatterton, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Eliza Chilson, disch. by order, Dec. 18, 1862.  
 George N. Cottrell, disch. by order, Nov. 4, 1864.  
 James W. Cutchaw, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1863.

John Carl, killed in action, Oct. 11, 1863.  
 Wyman A. French, disch. for disability, Oct. 26, 1862.  
 David E. French, died of disease at Baton Rouge, Nov. 10, 1862.  
 Martin S. Green, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1864.  
 Tobias Hensler, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1864.  
 Henry R. Howard, disch. to enter regular army, Dec. 1, 1862.  
 Arthur J. Hamilton, disch. by order, Sept. 8, 1865.  
 Milton Hutshaw, died in action at Port Hudson, May 23, 1862.  
 Levi A. Logan, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; disch. for disability, July 4, 1864.  
 Henry Miller, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1864.  
 William E. Milton, must. out Aug. 20, 1864.  
 Thomas B. McClure, died of disease at New Orleans, May 5, 1862.  
 Charles Meyers, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Henson Molden, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Ansel J. Noble, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.  
 Hiram Prouty, disch. for disability, Jan. 20, 1862.  
 Uzziel F. Putnam, disch. by order, Jan. 26, 1864.  
 Thomas W. Rutledge, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Abram W. Reese, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Patrick Rourke, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Harrison Shead, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Gilbert Shead, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 David H. Serviss, vet., Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Elsiea Sullivan, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Godfrey Shneide, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 James H. Smith, disch. for disability, June 30, 1862.  
 Henry Stratton, disch. Dec. 11, 1862.  
 Theodore C. Sachse, disch. by order, Nov. 4, 1863.  
 David M. Williams, died of disease at New Orleans, Jan. 29, 1863.  
 Edward Williams, disch. for disability, April 14, 1862.  
 Wallace Wood, disch. for disability, Oct. 19, 1861.  
 John H. Wisner, disch. by order, Sept. 18, 1861.  
 Marion Wade, disch. by order, March 1, 1864.  
 Caleb S. Williams, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 John Worley, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.

## MEMBERS OF THE SIXTH INFANTRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

*Company C.*

James Ball, disch. to re-enl. as vet., Feb. 1, 1864.

*Company D.*

Sergt. Eugene E. Smith, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, June 25, 1863.  
 Corp. Nathan V. Finch, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; pro. to sergt.; disch. for disability, May 7, 1864.  
 Corp. Francis M. Scott, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died of disease at New Orleans, Aug. 12, 1862.  
 Corp. Geo. W. Alford, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died of wounds received at Port Hudson, June 30, 1863.  
 Corp. William J. Argabrite, enl. Aug. 10, 1861; disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Corp. Nicholas S. Parish, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, Dec. 1, 1861.  
 Corp. Charles H. Finch, enl. Aug. 20, 1861; died of disease at Port Hudson, Nov. 20, 1863.  
 Charles R. Bachman, died of disease at Baltimore, Md., Dec. 21, 1861.  
 William Broadwell, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Bradford Brooks, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Silas W. Brown, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 John H. Crabbe, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Alanson H. Cogswell, disch. for disability, Oct. 18, 1861.  
 Meeker M. Culver, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Edward Curtis, died of disease at New Orleans, La., Nov. 30, 1862.  
 Harrison H. Dupp, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1861.  
 Orescans Green, disch. by order, Sept. 11, 1865.  
 John Halsey, disch. Feb. 10, 1863.  
 Horace H. Hurlburt, vet., Feb. 1, 1864.  
 William O. Hawley, accidentally killed on steamboat, May 18, 1862.  
 George F. Heath, must. out Aug. 20, 1865.  
 Andrew Jackson, died of disease at Camp Williams, Sept. 4, 1862.  
 Abner L. Johnson, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Nathaniel H. King, disch. for disability, Oct. 14, 1862.  
 William R. Kellogg, vet., Feb. 1, 1864.  
 Oscar Morrison, vet., Feb. 1, 1864.  
 William McDowell, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 George W. Mathew, disch. for disability, Oct. 14, 1862.  
 Samuel D. Mullen, died of disease at Baltimore, Md., Nov. 22, 1861.  
 Charles R. Perkins, disch. for disability, March 24, 1862.  
 Thomas R. Palmer, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Tobias Porter, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 George Pierce, died in action at Port Hudson, La., May 27, 1863.  
 John W. Pease, died of disease at Baton Rouge, La., July 3, 1862.  
 Joseph Smith, died of disease at New Orleans, La., Feb. 22, 1863.  
 George E. Stevens, died of disease at Port Hudson, La., Aug. 2, 1863.  
 John J. Steadman, died of disease at Baton Rouge, La., June 23, 1863.  
 Thomas O. Sweet, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.  
 Hobley Van Ostran, disch. for disability, Oct. 21, 1861.  
 Orlando Vontheis, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1861.

George White, died of disease at Baton Rouge, La., June 5, 1862.  
 Seth D. Wilcox, died of disease at Camp Williams, Sept. 18, 1862.

*Company F.*

Benj. F. Davis, died of wounds at New Orleans, La., Aug. 21, 1862.  
 C. Schermerhorn, disch. to enl. in regular service, Nov. 12, 1862.  
 George W. Spurling, disch. at end of service, Aug. 23, 1864.

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE NINTH, TWELFTH, AND THIRTEENTH INFANTRY REGIMENTS.

Organization of the Ninth Infantry—Campaigns in Kentucky and Tennessee—The disastrous Fight at Murfreesboro' Provost Duty at Army Headquarters—Veteran Re-enlistment and Furlough—Georgia Campaign of 1864—The Regiment on Duty at Atlanta, Chattanooga, and Nashville—Muster Out and Discharge—Twelfth Infantry—Rendezvous at Niles—Battle of Shiloh—Battle on the Hatchie—Siege of Vicksburg—Service in Arkansas—Veteran Re-enlistment—Muster Out and Discharge—Heavy Losses of the Regiment—Officers and Soldiers of the Twelfth from Berrien and Van Buren Counties—Thirteenth Infantry—Services in Alabama—Marches through Tennessee and to Kentucky—Battles of Stone River, Chickamauga, and Mission Ridge—Veteran Re-enlistment—Duty on Lookout Mountain—March to the Sea—Battles of Averysboro' and Bentonville—Grand Review at Washington—Muster Out at Louisville, Ky.—Members of the Thirteenth from Van Buren and Berrien Counties.

## NINTH INFANTRY.

THE 9th Regiment of Michigan Infantry was raised in the late summer and early autumn of 1861; its members coming from nearly all portions of the State. About half of Company B was from Berrien, and there were nearly fifty officers and men scattered through the other companies.

The regimental rendezvous was Fort Wayne, near Detroit, and there the regiment was mustered into the United States service on the 23d and 25th days of October, 1861. On the last-named day it left for Kentucky, being the first Michigan regiment which reached that part of the seat of war lying west of the Alleghanies. It went up Salt River, Ky., constructed defensive works on Muldraugh's Hill, and remained in that vicinity until February, 1862.

Immediately after the capture of Fort Donelson, the 9th was ordered to Nashville, and after a few weeks, to Murfreesboro', Tenn., where it was on garrison duty, at Murfreesboro', nearly all of the time until the 13th of July, 1862. During that period, however, it formed a part of Gen. Negley's command, which marched as far as the Tennessee River, opposite Chattanooga, and then returned to Murfreesboro'. Four companies were sent to Tullahoma, while the other six, under Lieut.-Col. Parkhurst, remained at Murfreesboro'.

On the 13th of July, at four o'clock in the morning, the force at the latter point was attacked by three thousand rebel cavalry under Gen. Forrest. The 3d Minnesota Infantry, with a battery, was encamped two miles northwest of town. The first attack on the camp of five companies (one company was at the court-house) was repulsed with loss. Gen. Forrest then attacked the single company in the court-house. Col. Parkhurst sent to the commander of the Minnesota regiment for aid, which the latter, perhaps

for good reasons, declined to give. The one company in the court-house held the foe at bay two hours, but was obliged to surrender.

Forrest then returned to attack the camp. The men had meanwhile thrown up some slight defenses, behind which they fought vigorously until past noon; having just one hundred officers and men (out of less than three hundred) killed and wounded. Finding themselves outnumbered ten to one, and receiving no assistance, they finally yielded to the inevitable, and surrendered.

The enlisted men were paroled at McMinnville, but the officers were not released until several months later.

In the latter part of December, 1862 (the prisoners taken at Murfreesboro' having been exchanged and returned to duty), the regiment was detailed as provost-guard of the 14th Corps, with Col. (afterwards General) Parkhurst as provost-marshal. Gen. Thomas remarked when he made the detail that he had fully acquainted himself with the conduct of the regiment in the defense of Murfreesboro', and that he needed just such a force for provost-guard.

The 9th acted in that capacity throughout the remainder of the war. Its services at the battles of Stone River and Chickamauga in stopping runaways and maintaining order were arduous in the extreme, and were warmly complimented by Gen. Thomas. When that gallant officer assumed command of the Army of the Cumberland, after Chickamauga, Col. Parkhurst was made provost-marshal-general of the department, and the 9th became the provost-guard of that army.

In December, 1863, two hundred and twenty-nine of the regiment re-enlisted as veterans, and returned to Michigan on furlough. In the latter part of February, 1864, they again appeared at Chattanooga, with their numbers increased to about five hundred men. The regiment was again ordered to act as provost-guard of the Army of the Cumberland, and during the summer and autumn participated in all the movements of that army in Georgia and Tennessee. It entered Atlanta on its evacuation by the enemy, and was there engaged in provost duty until that city was abandoned by the Union forces, when it returned to Chattanooga. It was largely recruited during the season, and, notwithstanding the muster out of non-veterans whose terms had expired, had eight hundred and ninety-seven enlisted men on the 1st of November, 1864. It remained in Chattanooga until the 27th of March, 1865, when it was moved to Nashville. There it stayed on duty at headquarters, and as guard at the military prison until the 15th of September, when it was mustered out of service. The following day it set out for Michigan, arriving at Jackson on the 19th, and on the 26th day of September, 1865, the 9th Michigan Infantry was paid off and disbanded.

#### MEMBERS OF THE NINTH INFANTRY FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

##### *Non-commissioned Staff.*

Q.M. Sergt. James W. Higgins, Niles; enl. May 1, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. K, Aug. 1, 1864.

Q.M. Sergt. Gilbert A. Watkins, Niles; enl. Oct. 28, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. E, Oct. 15, 1864.

Principal Musician George H. Newell, Niles; enl. Aug. 21, 1861; veteran, Nov. 23, 1865; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

##### *Company A.*

Capt. James G. Huntley, Niles; com. Nov. 23, 1864; 1st lieut., Aug. 5, 1863; 2d lieut., Co. E, Dec. 19, 1862; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

William Millard, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

##### *Company B.*

Capt. Oliver C. Rounds, Niles; com. Aug. 12, 1861; res. Aug. 7, 1863.

1st Lieut. Moses A. Powell, Niles; com. Aug. 12, 1861; res. Feb. 2, 1862.

1st Lieut. Leonard J. Wright, Niles; com. Dec. 13, 1861; 2d lieut., Aug. 12, 1861; capt., Co. D, Feb. 27, 1863.

Sergt. Thomas H. Gaffney, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. C, March 25, 1862.

Sergt. James G. Huntley, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. E, Dec. 19, 1862.

Sergt. Ebenezer A. Burnett, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 4, 1864.

Sergt. James W. Higgins, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 7, 1863; appointed q.m. sergt., May 1, 1864.

Sergt. John L. Allen, enl. Aug. 12, 1861.

Corp. William H. Loshbough, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 7, 1863; disch. by order, Sept. 28, 1864.

Corp. Joseph Reynolds, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; died of disease at Buchanan, June, 1863.

Corp. James H. Sharp, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; disch. Feb. 3, 1862.

Corp. Gilbert A. Watkins, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 7, 1863; pro. to q.m. sergt., Oct. 28, 1864.

Corp. James Gallagher, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 7, 1863; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Corp. Le Grand A. Swift, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; died of disease at Nashville, Feb. 9, 1865.

Corp. Silas York, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 7, 1863; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Musician George H. Newell, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 7, 1863; pro. to principal musician, March 6, 1864.

Wagoner David Bell, enl. Aug. 12, 1861; absent, sick, at muster out.

Elliott Burton, must. out June 20, 1865.

William A. Boswell, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Hezekiah Buck, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Motimer M. Cutshaw, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

James Clark, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

George W. Curtis, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Patrick Carl, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Hiram Carpenter, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

John A. Cox, must. out June 20, 1865.

Jacob Eastman, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Ambrose Gephart, died of disease in Tennessee, March 24, 1865.

Jacob Platt, disch. by order, Sept. 28, 1865.

Edwin M. Pressly, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Lewis Platt, disch. by order, Aug. 10, 1865.

William Reider, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Abner Reams, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

John Richardson, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Alex. Sweeney, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Sylvester Sherman, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

George W. Wells, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

##### *Company C.*

2d Lieut. Thomas H. Gaffney, com. March 25, 1862; res. April 9, 1863.

John C. Dick, must. out June 20, 1865.

Elisha Everett, must. out June 20, 1865.

Zabedee Everett, must. out June 20, 1865.

Charles Everling, must. out June 20, 1865.

Amos Feather, must. out June 20, 1865.

Frederick J. Forsyth, must. out July 5, 1865.

##### *Company D.*

Capt. Leonard J. Wright, Niles; com. Feb. 27, 1863; must. out at end of service, Nov. 24, 1864.

##### *Company E.*

2d Lieut. James G. Huntley, Niles; com. Dec. 19, 1862; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. A.

2d Lieut. Gilbert A. Watkins, Niles; com. Oct. 15, 1864; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. I, Jan. 8, 1865.

##### *Company G.*

Fritz Klag, must. out June 20, 1865.

Gottlieb Kramer, must. out June 20, 1865.

George W. Lake, must. out July 5, 1865.

Frederick J. Forsyth, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

##### *Company H.*

Corp. Joel Kerr, Niles; enl. Aug. 16, 1861; died of disease in Kentucky, Nov. 18, 1861.

Zacheus Meade, died of disease at Nashville, May 19, 1865.

George Markley, must. out June 20, 1865.

Edward McVeigh, must. out June 20, 1865.

John Murray, must. out June 20, 1865.

Walter F. McCracken, must. out June 20, 1865.

Richard Pressley, died of disease at West Point, Ky.

And. J. Richardson, must. out Aug. 10, 1865.

Alonzo Rice, veteran, Dec. 7, 1863; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Samuel Summers, disch. for disability.

Daniel R. Shalier, disch. at end of service, Oct. 14, 1864.



Richard H. Wirts, disch. Aug. 7, 1862.

Miles Woods, died of disease at West Point, Ky.

*Company I.*

1st Lieut. Gilbert A. Watkins, com. Jan. 8, 1865; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

Charles Stauwell, died of disease at Nashville, June 21, 1865.

Charles H. Smith, must. out June 20, 1865.

Joel Starr, must. out June 20, 1865.

Almon G. Stoddard, must. out June 20, 1865.

*Company K.*

1st Lieut. James W. Higgins, Niles; com. Nov. 23, 1864; res. July 15, 1865.

Henry Russell, must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE NINTH REGIMENT.

*Company G.*

Reuben Lee, disch. for disability, March 14, 1865.

*Company I.*

James St. Clair, died of disease at Chattanooga, Tenn., Oct. 25, 1864.

TWELFTH INFANTRY.

This regiment had a larger representation than any other from the two counties which are the subject of this history, there being over four hundred men in its ranks from Berrien County and about one hundred from Van Buren. Company B was raised at St. Joseph and vicinity; Company C, at Buchanan and vicinity; Company E, and parts of Companies F and K, at Niles; and Company I, at and around Berrien Springs. There were also many from Berrien County in the other companies. Company H and part of K were raised in Van Buren County, and there were thirty or forty more from that county in other companies.

The regimental rendezvous was at Niles. It remained there in camp of instruction, busily preparing for its duties in the field, until the 18th of March, 1862, when it set out for St. Louis, with a thousand men and officers on its rolls. From St. Louis it was hurried forward to Pittsburg Landing, and was stationed in the extreme front of the Union army, about eighty rods from Shiloh Church.

Much has been said about the Union troops being surprised at Shiloh; but Maj. (then lieutenant) S. W. Pearl, of Benton, who was with the 12th at the extreme front, says there was nothing of the kind. The advanced regiments knew from the reports of reconnoitering parties that there was a large Confederate force not far off, and were expecting its approach.\* About two o'clock in the morning of the 6th of April, 1862, a reconnoitering party was sent out, met the enemy, and fell back before him to the Union picket line. Meanwhile the 12th and other regiments were put in line of battle, and moved to a point about one hundred rods in front of their color-line, and there, about six o'clock in the morning, they began the fight with the advancing enemy.

The Confederate commanders hurled heavy columns against the comparatively few regiments at the front of the field, and steadily drove them back. All day long the battle raged in the forests of Tennessee, the Union troops being slowly but steadily forced back until six o'clock in the evening, when they stood near the banks of the Tennessee River, and saw across that stream the welcome reinforcements of Buell.

That night a portion of Buell's army crossed the Tennessee, and in the morning the Union forces took the of-

fensive, and drove back the enemy over the same ground which he had triumphantly traversed the preceding day. During the battle of the 7th this regiment was most of the time in the rear of Buell's army, but it took part in the final charge in the afternoon, when the rebels were driven from the field. In this battle the 12th suffered severely having about forty men killed and eighty wounded.

After the surrender of Corinth the 12th was ordered to Jackson, Tenn., and was on duty at that place and Bolivar during a large part of the summer and autumn of 1862. When Gens. Price and Van Dorn were defeated in their attempt to recapture Corinth, on the 3d and 4th of October, the 12th was a part of the force sent by Gen. Grant from Bolivar, under Gen. Hurlbut, to cut off the retreat of the defeated army. Gen. Hurlbut's command met the retreating Confederates at the bridge over the Hatchie River, some fifteen miles west of Corinth, on the 5th of October, the point being sometimes called Metamora.

A very sanguinary battle ensued, which, for the numbers engaged, was one of the hardest of the war. The portion of the Confederate army which had crossed the river were attacked on the west side and driven back, and then, amid a storm of shot and shell, the 12th and other regiments crossed the bridge, and drove the enemy from his position on the west side. His attempt to escape at this point was completely foiled, though the greater part of his army made their way across the river at a point several miles farther south.

After the battle of the Hatchie the 12th returned to Bolivar, where it remained until the 4th of November. From that time until the 31st of May, 1863, it was engaged in guarding the Mississippi Central Railway from near Bolivar to Hickory Valley, the regimental headquarters being at Middleburg, Tenn.

On the 24th of December, 1862, one hundred and fifteen of the men, who were in a block-house at Middleburg, under the command of Col. William H. Graves, were surrounded by a whole division of rebel cavalry under Gen. Van Dorn, who had captured over a thousand Union troops at Holly Springs, Miss., and had thence made his way into Tennessee. He demanded the surrender of the post, which was promptly refused by Col. Graves. The rebels then opened fire, and during two hours made desperate efforts to capture the little garrison. The latter, however, gallantly maintained its position, and, as it was well protected, it was able to inflict on the enemy a much greater loss than its own. Finally the assailants withdrew, leaving nine killed and eleven wounded on the field, besides the less severely wounded, whom they took away with them. Fifteen rebel prisoners, including ten officers, were captured. The garrison had six wounded, and lost thirteen prisoners, most of whom were captured while on picket.

In general orders issued from the headquarters of Gen. Grant, the 12th Michigan, and other regiments which had successfully defended their posts, were declared to be "deserving of the thanks of the army, which was in a measure dependent on the road they so nobly defended for supplies."

The regiment remained on duty in West Tennessee during the ensuing winter and the beginning of the spring, but about the last of May embarked on transports at Memphis,

\* True, there were no intrenchments, which would certainly have been built under such circumstances at a later period of the war.

and proceeded down the Mississippi, arriving at Chickasaw Bluff, near Vicksburg, on the 3d of June, 1863. It disembarked at Sartatia, on the Yazoo, and marched to Haynes' Bluff, and then closed in towards Vicksburg. Though it formed a part of the Union line which prevented escape from, or succor of, the doomed city, and though the men could hear the continual roar of the cannon and see the shells circling gracefully on their mission of death, yet they were not themselves brought under fire during the siege.

On the 28th of July the regiment embarked for Helena, Ark., where it remained until the 13th of August. It then marched with Gen. Steele's army to Little Rock, the capital of Arkansas. Arriving on the 10th of September at a point six miles below that city, on the north side of the Arkansas, the Union troops found the way stopped by Gen. Price with a large Confederate army, strongly intrenched on the north side of the river, with several batteries on the south side. During the night of the 10th this regiment and others were placed close to the river. Early on the morning of the 11th the command was rapidly crossed on pontoons to the south side of the stream, and immediately drove the rebels from their intrenchments on that side. A running fight was maintained all day, the enemy constantly retreating before the advancing Unionists, who entered Little Rock just before nightfall. The 12th suffered no loss during the movement.

On the 26th and 27th the regiment moved from Little Rock to Benton, Ark., but on the 1st of November it returned to the former place. It remained there until the 14th of January, 1864, during which time the larger part of the men re-enlisted, constituting it a veteran volunteer regiment. It then returned to Michigan, arriving at Niles on the 1st day of February, when the men were furloughed for thirty days.

Rendezvousing at Niles in the first part of March, with a large number of recruits, the regiment left on the 21st for Little Rock, where it arrived on the 1st of April. On the 26th it set out for Pine Bluff, marching forty-eight miles in two days, and arriving there on the 28th. Two days later it returned to Little Rock. On the 17th of May it moved to Brownsville, and from Brownsville to Springfield, reaching that place on the 25th, and returning to Little Rock on the 31st; the object of this and many similar marches being to drive away the guerrilla bands which infested the State, but who were extremely difficult to come up with.

On the 25th of June the regiment proceeded by rail to Duvall's Bluff, and thence by steamer to Clarendon, on White River. It engaged the enemy, under Gen. Shelby, on the 26th, having a running fight with him, and chasing him all that day and the next. It then returned to Duvall's Bluff, where it remained encamped until the 30th of August following.

The next move of the 12th was up White River by steamer. It was fired on by guerrillas, on the 4th of September, from the banks of the river, six of its men being killed and wounded. The regiment disembarked as soon as possible, but the chivalry had fled. The next day the regiment moved up the river to Austin, but returned to Duvall's Bluff on the 7th of September.

From this time until the 6th of June, 1865, the headquarters of the regiment were at Duvall's Bluff, the men being stationed there or in the immediate vicinity, and being employed on picket, scout, provost, and fatigue duties, and especially in guarding the railroad which preserved the communications of troops more advanced.

On the 6th of June the regiment broke camp, and moved by way of Little Rock to Washington, Ark., where it arrived on the 31st. The war was now over, but it was necessary still to employ troops at various points to prevent the depredations of guerrillas, and assure the maintenance of the power of the Union. The 12th was accordingly broken up for that purpose. Companies A, B, C, and F were sent to Camden, where they were under the command of Maj. S. W. Pearl. Company E was stationed at Arkadelphia, and Company D at Paraclita. The other companies remained at Washington with the headquarters of the regiment. On the 30th of September, Company F was sent from Camden to Champagnolle, on the Washita River, and about the same time the headquarters of the regiment, with Companies H and K, were removed from Washington to Camden.

The various detachments remained at the positions first noted until the forepart of February, when they all assembled at Camden, and on the 15th of that month were mustered out of the service. The regiment then proceeded by steamer down the Washita and Red Rivers to the Mississippi, and up that stream to Cairo, and thence by rail to Jackson, Mich. It was paid off and discharged on the 6th day of March, 1866.

The fortunes of war were such that the 12th Infantry did not meet the enemy on as many fields of battle as did some of its comrade organizations, but it performed faithfully all the duties intrusted to it, and its record from first to last was a credit to its members and to the State. The losses of the 12th during its term of service numbered four hundred and thirty-two deaths by disease and in battle, this being the largest death-record of any Michigan regiment excepting only the 6th Infantry, in which the corresponding loss was five hundred and forty-two.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE TWELFTH INFANTRY.

##### *Field and Staff.*

Col. Francis Quinn, Niles; com. Oct. 5, 1861; res. Aug. 31, 1862.  
Maj. Geo. Kimmel, Niles; com. Oct. 5, 1861; res. April 22, 1862.  
Maj. Lewis W. Pearl, Benton; com. June 10, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
Adj. John Graham, Oronoko; com. Oct. 5, 1861; res. June 9, 1864.  
Adj. Wm. E. Stewart, Niles; com. March 19, 1864; pro. to capt., Co. D, June 14, 1865.  
Q.M. Geo. S. Bristol, Niles; com. Feb. 10, 1862; res. June 14, 1862.  
Q.M. Wm. B. Perrott, Buchanan; com. Aug. 4, 1862; died March 14, 1864, at Buchanan, Mich.  
Surg. Jas. S. Randall, Niles; com. Oct. 8, 1862; asst. surg., April 25, 1862; must. out Oct. 12, 1865.  
Chaplain Rev. And. J. Eldred, Niles; com. Oct. 5, 1861; res. Sept. 10, 1863.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergt. Maj. Wm. E. Stewart, Niles; enl. Oct. 9, 1861; veteran, Feb. 27, 1864; pro. to 1st lieutenant and adjutant.  
Sergt. Maj. Richard H. Burke, Berrien; veteran, Dec. 20, 1863; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. G, June 10, 1865.  
Sergt. Maj. Stephen J. Weaver, Niles; veteran, Jan. 21, 1864; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. C, Jan. 7, 1865.  
Q.M. Sergt. Hiram L. Brown, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 29, 1864; private, Dec. 28, 1863; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. I, June 7, 1865.  
Com. Sergt. Chas. A. Houghland, Niles; pro. to 1st lieutenant, Co. E, March 19, 1864.  
Hosp. Stew. Harvey R. Buckus, Niles; veteran, Jan. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Principal Musician Willard Bostwick, veteran, enl. Dec. 24, 1863; pro. capt., to Co. E, July 1, 1863.

Principal Musician Chas. W. Holcomb, Oronoko; trans. to Co. C.

Principal Musician Silas Soules, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

*Company A.*

Capt. Chas. E. Howe, Berrien Springs; com. Sept. 14, 1862; brev. maj. U. S. Vols., March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious services during the war; app. acting adj.-gen. U. S. Vols., April 10, 1865.

Capt. John C. Welch, com. April 15, 1865; pro. to 1st lieutenant, Jan. 7, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

1st Lieut. Wm. M. T. Bartholomew, Oronoko; com. July 3, 1864; pro. capt., Co. I, Dec. 20, 1864.

1st Lieut. Samuel L. Hull, Benton; com. April 15, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

2d Lieut. Geo. L. Antisdale, Niles; com. April 14, 1865; disch. for disability, Aug. 25, 1865.

2d Lieut. Ezekiel P. Spaulding, Buchanan; com. Aug. 23, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Sergt. John N. Wooley, disch. for disability, Aug. 31, 1863.

John Adams, missing at battle of Shiloh, April 6, 1862.

Wm. Beams, died of disease at Jackson, Tenn., July 10, 1862.

Oliver Brockway, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Wilson Claybourn, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

John H. Clark, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Charles E. Davis, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Lewis P. Graham, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, July 29, 1864.

Bonaparte Hyland, died of disease at Little Rock, May 18, 1864.

John Higgins, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Elon M. Ireland, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Geo. G. Jenkins, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Ezra M. Keyser, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Richard Landon, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Andrew Mershon, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Jan. 15, 1865.

Sylvester P. Smith, died of disease at Macon, Ga., Aug. 11, 1862.

Jonathan W. Stephens, died at Pittsburg Landing, Tenn., May 16, 1862, of wounds.

Silas Soules, veteran; enl. Dec. 25, 1863; pro. to principal musician, and trans. to F and S.

Sanford Wentworth, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

*Company B.*

Capt. Thos. Wallace, St. Joseph; com. Oct. 10, 1861; res. May 7, 1862.

Capt. Lewis W. Pearl, Benton; com. Sept. 1, 1862; 1st lieutenant, Sept. 20, 1862; pro. to maj. June 10, 1865.

Capt. Wm. A. Deuel, New Buffalo; com. June 10, 1865; 2d lieutenant, Oct. 11, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

1st Lieut. Robt. B. King, St. Joseph; com. Sept. 1, 1862; 2d lieutenant, Oct. 10, 1861; res. April 14, 1865.

2d Lieut. Thos. A. Walker, St. Joseph; com. March 19, 1864; sergt., corp.; res. Oct. 11, 1864.

Sergt. Leonard K. Jilison, Benton; enl. Sept. 3, 1861; veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. H, Jan. 20, 1865.

Sergt. Saml. L. Hull, Benton; enl. Sept. 3, 1861; veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. D, Oct. 19, 1864.

Sergt. Chas. M. Van Horn, Benton; enl. Sept. 7, 1861; died of disease at Quincy, Ill., June 25, 1862.

Sergt. Wm. H. Long, Benton; enl. Sept. 10, 1861; veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Corp. Dustin Woodin, Benton; enl. Oct. 19, 1861; veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Corp. Lyman A. Burke, Hagar; enl. Oct. 20, 1861; died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.

Corp. Joshua L. McKean, Coloma; enl. Sept. 6, 1861; disch. for disability, Sept. 28, 1863.

Corp. Wm. H. Brown, Benton; enl. Sept. 3, 1861; died of wounds received at Shiloh.

Corp. Hiram L. Brown, St. Joseph; enl. Nov. 1, 1861; veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; pro. to q.m. sergt., Aug. 20, 1864.

George F. Allen, disch. for disability, Nov. 14, 1862.

Edwin Arndt, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., Aug. 5, 1864.

George Adams, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

James Benton, died of disease at Atlanta, Ga., July 12, 1862.

Albert A. Benton, disch. for disability, Nov. 11, 1863.

Augustus Beyer, disch. for disability, Dec. 9, 1863.

Charles Barnes, died of wounds at Pittsburgh, Pa., received at Shiloh.

Thos. J. Bassford, died of disease at Benton, Mich.

James R. Bunly, disch. for disability, Aug. 30, 1862.

David W. Brownell, disch. by order, June 17, 1865.

Geo. W. Brown, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Alonzo Betts, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Benj. Bishop, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Wm. Becker, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Lewis Bessey, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Richard H. Bell, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Hiram L. Brown, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Geo. R. Bury, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Melvin Collace, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., April 19, 1864.

George W. Closson, disch. by order, Sept. 9, 1865.

William M. Curtis, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 5, 1866.

Michael Casey, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Thomas Denims, veteran, Dec. 30, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

John Donahue, veteran, Dec. 30, 1863; disch. by order, Oct. 12, 1865.

Martin Donahue, died of wounds received in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.

Lorenzo J. Delfeld, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., July 24, 1864.

Henry Delfeld, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Amber A. Doan, disch. by order, March 6, 1866.

Norman B. Emerson, disch. by order, Nov. 25, 1862.

Oscar Epley, disch. by order, Nov. 9, 1862.

Christian Eisele, disch. by order, July 3, 1862.

Ananias Ellis, disch. for disability, Sept. 3, 1862.

Amos P. Evans, disch. by order, May 18, 1865.

William H. Epley, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Lawrence Earl, must. out Oct. 15, 1866.

Henry Farnham, disch. for disability, July 22, 1866.

Lyman H. Frisbie, disch. for disability, June 27, 1865.

Peter Flynn, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Dewitt C. Guy, veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Seth S. Gregory, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

William Garrett, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Leonard J. Goulet, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Leonard K. Jilison, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; pro. to sergt.; pro. to 2d lieutenant.

John Garrett, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

George F. Granville, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Henry C. Harris, died of disease at Atlanta, Ga., June, 1862.

Andrew Hicks, died of disease at Atlanta, Ga., June 8, 1862.

Philetus Hazard, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., April 19, 1864.

James C. Hull, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., June 26, 1864.

John L. Handy, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Sept. 10, 1864.

John Harris, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., May 16, 1862.

Myron Higbee, veteran, Dec. 30, 1863; disch. for disability, 1864.

William D. Huyck, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; disch. for disability, 1865.

Samuel L. Hull, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. H.

Norman Ivory, died of wounds at St. Louis, Mo., May 9, 1862 (Shiloh).

Guardian Jacques, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Nathan Kelley, disch. for disability, July 1, 1862.

James G. Krine, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.

John Krause, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.

John King, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Florence B. Ketchum, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Morris Lyons, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Carlton Lloyd, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Morris La Mott, disch. for disability, Jan. 5, 1866.

Joseph La Mott, disch. for disability, Jan. 31, 1862.

Michael Larkin, disch. from Vet. Res. Corps, April 15, 1865.

George W. Lee, disch. by order, June 9, 1865.

John C. Lorimer, died of disease at Memphis, Tenn., Jan. 26, 1864.

John W. Murphy, died of disease at Helena, Ark., Aug. 16, 1863.

Stephen Musselman, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Aug. 13, 1864.

James Mills, died in rebel prison at Macon, Ga., July 10, 1862.

William Miller, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

William Mull, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Zerah Moore, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

James W. Morrow, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Patrick McLaughlin, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Edwin A. McClave, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

William C. Norris, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., Aug. 1, 1864.

John D. Nason, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; disch. for disability, March 14, 1865.

Ora O. Nutting, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Elon P. Osgood, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; disch. for disability, Jan. 22, 1866.

Henry C. Plumb, disch. for disability, Aug. 18, 1862.

Jasper Pitcher, disch. for disability, Nov. 26, 1862.

William H. Pierce, disch. for disability, Dec. 15, 1864.

George C. Post, killed in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.

William Parkerton, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

W. S. Quackenbush, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Morton Quackenbush, disch. by order, July 19, 1865.

Solomon Quint, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.

Chauncey Reese, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

John Rogers, disch. May 10, 1863.

Gilbert Rogers, disch. for disability, July 1, 1862.

George Riley, disch. for disability, July 18, 1862.

Joseph Rokely, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Robert Robertson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

John D. Rose, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo.

Edward Sutton, died of disease at Camden, Ark., Sept. 7, 1862.

Huey M. Sweet, died in rebel prison at Richmond, Va., Oct. 19, 1862.

Alvah Smith, died of wounds received at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.

Francis E. Shiver, disch. for disability, June, 1862.

George Stanley, disch. for disability, July 27, 1862.

Levi Sherman, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.

Lorenzo D. Schofield, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

Charles G. Sheets, disch. by order, May 22, 1865.

Elijah Spink, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.



Monett Shippey, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Sherrard, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Harmon Schmul, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Charles Seales, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Amos Stout, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Nathan Stanley, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Kellogg Stanley, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Charles H. Schmul, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William H. Shiver, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Turner, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Teachout, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Oliver C. Timmins, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Troy, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Albert Teachout, disch. Dec. 5, 1862.  
 Ezra Teachout, disch. Aug. 10, 1863.  
 William H. Thatcher, disch. by order, Oct. 12, 1865.  
 William Turner, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Alfred A. Teachout, died of disease in Michigan.  
 Gates Upson, died of disease at St. Joseph, Mich.  
 Charles M. Van Horn, died of disease at Quincy, Ill.  
 Julius Valentine, disch. for disability, Sept. 18, 1862.  
 John W. Van Hazen, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jared H. Vincent, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Nelson Wheeler, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Welber, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Theodore Waddel, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Sylvanus E. Whitehead, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Otis A. Win-low, died of disease at Montgomery, Ga., June, 1862.  
 Forrest F. Woodward, died of disease at Memphis, Tenn., Sept. 11, 1863.  
 Lafayette Wood, disch. for disability, Nov. 14, 1864.  
 Orlando H. Wright, disch. for disability, Sept. 24, 1862.  
 George Williams, disch. Nov. 15, 1862.  
 William Wheaton, disch. by order, July 19, 1865.  
 Charles Warner, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.

\* \* \*

Capt. John M. Albert, Buchanan; com. Oct. 10, 1861; res. April 27, 1862.  
 Capt. Benjamin E. Binnis, Buchanan; com. Oct. 1, 1862; res. Feb. 15, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. William F. Molsberry, Buchanan; com. Oct. 14, 1861; res. Oct. 15, 1862.  
 1st Lieut. Richard A. Demout, Bertrand; com. March 19, 1864; pro. to capt., Co. H, June 9, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. John Perrott, Buchanan; com. June 9, 1864; res. Jan. 20, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. David J. Whitten, Niles; com. June 6, 1864; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. F, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Stephen J. Weaver, Niles; com. Jan. 20, 1863; res. June 12, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Dion B. Keltner, Niles; com. June 12, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Sergt. Richard A. Demout, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; pro. to 2d lieut.  
 Sergt. Charles E. Brong, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 23, 1861; disch. June 21, 1863.  
 Sergt. John Perrott, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 15, 1861; pro. to 1st lieut.  
 Sergt. Herbert M. Reynolds, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 15, 1861; wounded at Shiloh; disch. June 6, 1862.  
 Corp. James K. Woods, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; disch. Aug. 30, 1862.  
 Corp. Van R. C. Howe, Buchanan; enl. Nov. 11, 1861; died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, April 3, 1862.  
 Corp. Francis Conroy, Wee-saw; enl. Oct. 18, 1861; disch. Aug. 20, 1861.  
 Corp. James S. McCoy, Gallien; enl. Oct. 20, 1861; disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Corp. Charles Smith, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; absent, sick; not must. out with company.  
 Corp. Zimri Moon, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 30, 1861; disch. Oct. 18, 1862.  
 Corp. George Merrill, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Musician James Boswell, Wee-saw; enl. Nov. 19, 1861; disch. for disability, Aug. 30, 1862.  
 Simon P. Aldrich, disch. Feb. 15, 1862.  
 Asa C. Alexander, disch. for disability, June 8, 1865.  
 David Allen, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Nov. 24, 1864.  
 Amos P. Atwood, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Edgar Atwood, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Emory Atwood, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William H. Bachelor, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Y. Birge, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Benjamin Brown, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Frederick Brown, died May 22, 1862, of wounds received at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 William T. Brown, died of disease at Niles, Mich., March 14, 1862.  
 Daniel Brown, disch. March 1, 1862.  
 James Boswell, disch. July 10, 1862.  
 Harvey Backus, Niles; trans. to non-commissioned staff, hospital steward.  
 Hezekiah Branch, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Daniel P. Beattie, died of disease at Mobile, Ala.  
 Charles Baldwin, disch. Sept. 26, 1862.  
 Joel Blackman, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; disch. for disability, Jan. 4, 1865.  
 William H. Beach, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Thomas Bristley, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Isaac Batten, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 George W. Brewer, disch. by order, May 22, 1865.

John E. Barrymore, disch. by order, July 29, 1865.  
 James R. Burns, veteran, Feb. 25, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Wesley A. Burrows, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Sept. 3, 1864.  
 Benjamin Chandler, died of disease at Buchanan, Oct. 7, 1864.  
 Perry W. Cottrell, died of wounds at Shiloh.  
 John S. Curtis, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Sylvester Considine, veteran, Feb. 25, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jerome Chamberlain, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Usher B. Collins, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Amos Cook, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jeremiah Courtney, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jackson Dalrymple, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Alonzo Drinkle, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Abram S. Dempsey, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Austin A. Durand, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George G. Dwoal, disch. for disability, Aug. 16, 1862.  
 James S. Davis, disch. for disability, Dec. 4, 1862.  
 John Dilts, disch. at end of service, March 10, 1865.  
 Joseph Elwell, disch. at end of service, Oct. 20, 1863.  
 Francis W. Elliott, disch. for disability, May 28, 1862.  
 John H. Egbert, disch. for disability, Aug. 2, 1864.  
 Ralph Fuller, disch. by order, Jan. 15, 1865.  
 William H. Fisher, disch. by order, Nov. 3, 1865.  
 Wilbur W. Fuller, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Otis J. Fenton, veteran, Feb. 18, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Samuel J. Griffith, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John A. Graham, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Groves, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Eliza H. Goldman, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Gathergood, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Andrew Graham, disch. for disability, Aug. 12, 1865.  
 Charles Helms, disch. July 8, 1862.  
 Victor H. Helms, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; disch. by order, June 17, 1865.  
 James Hemingway, veteran, Feb. 25, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Lewis Hahn, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Wallace E. P. Hunt, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Samuel K. Hazen, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Hudson, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Charles T. Harris, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Dec. 4, 1864.  
 John S. Ingersoll, disch. for disability, Feb. 2, 1865.  
 Christopher Hider, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Johnson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Y. Kickenhall, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Frank B. Kelley, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Kinney, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Kinney, discharged.  
 Charles H. Knight, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., May 4, 1864.  
 Erwin Knight, died of disease at Cairo, Ill., Aug. 9, 1864.  
 William Lemon, disch. for disability, Sept. 2, 1862.  
 Nicholas W. Miller, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; disch. for disability, Dec. 21, 1865.  
 Thomas A. Morley, disch. May 15, 1862.  
 Warren Martin, disch. May 25, 1862.  
 Alfred Murray, disch. June 30, 1862.  
 James H. Martin, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., May 25, 1862.  
 R. Maxwell, died of disease at Niles, Mich., March 13, 1862.  
 Elisha Marshall, died of disease at Niles, Mich., Nov. 20, 1862.  
 James S. McCoy, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Charles McCracken, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 John F. Miller, veteran, Feb. 25, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George W. Merrill, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 E. Motinger, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 D. Motinger, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 M. N. Mansfield, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William H. Martin, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Samuel Miller, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Mudge, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Platt, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Samuel Potter, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 James Painter, disch. for disability, Sept. 5, 1862.  
 Arminius Penwell, died of disease at Little Rock, May 31, 1864.  
 Oscar Reed, died of disease at Niles, May 28, 1862.  
 Herbert M. Reynolds, disch. for wounds, June 6, 1862.  
 Francis C. Roe, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John M. Roe, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John C. Shelman, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Horace Salisbury, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Salisbury, veteran, Feb. 25, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Howard F. Smith, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James O. Smith, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Sanders, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Nathaniel R. Seely, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Edgar Sanford, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 How-ell Strong, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Charles Snyder, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Christopher Swalen, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Moses Shamp, died of disease in Ohio, May 19, 1862.  
 George Smith, died of disease at Macon, Ga.

Eri O. Smith, disch. Jan. 1, 1863.  
 Samuel Smith, disch. Nov. 8, 1862.  
 James Smith, disch. for disability, July 15, 1862.  
 John Scott, disch. for disability, Aug. 6, 1862.  
 Leonard Simmons, disch. for disability, Aug. 16, 1862.  
 Lewis Sanford, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.  
 John Shamp, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.  
 Frederick Taylor, disch. for disability, Nov. 5, 1865.  
 Joseph Taylor, disch. by order, June 17, 1865.  
 James Tallman, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Morgan Wynn, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Thomas B. Wynn, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Simon L. Wilbur, veteran, Jan. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Alexander Wilbur, veteran, Jan. 2, 1864; died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Nov. 20, 1864.  
 Nelson Wilbur, died of disease at Niles, March 19, 1862.  
 James K. Woods, disch. Aug. 30, 1862.  
 Francis Watson, disch. Feb. 15, 1862.  
 David A. White, disch. Jan. 19, 1863.  
 Wilson E. Wells, disch. for disability, June 7, 1862.  
 Orlando Wilson, disch. for disability, June 12, 1865.  
 Delos D. Wilson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry H. Wybert, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

#### Company D.

Capt. William E. Stewart, Niles; com. June 14, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 1st Lieut. Charles H. Dye, Niles; com. Dec. 31, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 2d Lieut. Samuel L. Hull, Benton; com. Oct. 19, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. A.  
 2d Lieut. Otis J. Fenton, Buchanan; com. April 15, 1865; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. H.  
 Daniel W. Allen, died May 7, 1862, at Louisville, Ky., of wounds received at Shiloh.  
 Cassius Chipman, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Isaac J. Frame, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., July 1, 1864.  
 John Green, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Rinaldo Reed, disch. for disability, July 23, 1863.  
 Frederick Rem, disch. for disability, July 15, 1862.  
 Calvin Smith, disch. April 21, 1862.  
 Miles W. Stubbs, accidentally killed at Duvall's Bluff, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 George Stilwell, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

#### Company E.

Capt. Henry Gephart, Niles; com. Oct. 9, 1861; res. Dec. 10, 1862.  
 Capt. Willard S. Bostwick, Niles; com. July 1, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 1st Lieut. Thomas Bradley, Three Oaks; com. Oct. 9, 1861; wounded at Shiloh; res. Oct. 15, 1862.  
 1st Lieut. Charles A. Hoagland, Niles; com. March 19, 1864; res. June 18, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. William A. Deuel, New Buffalo; com. Feb. 15, 1865; pro. to capt., Co. B, June 10, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. Benton Stearns, Galien; com. June 10, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 2d Lieut. John Crofoot, Niles; com. Sept. 14, 1862; disch. for disability, April 28, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. James Adams, Niles; com. April 28, 1864; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. H, Nov. 15, 1864.  
 Sergt. Charles W. Barrett, Niles; enl. Oct. 9, 1861; disch. July, 1862.  
 Sergt. Frank M. Johnson, Niles; enl. Oct. 9, 1861; disch. at end of service, Dec. 9, 1864.  
 Sergt. Erasmus N. Shread, Three Oaks; enl. Nov. 26, 1861; disch. April 9, 1863.  
 Sergt. Simon Bierbauer, Niles; enl. Oct. 9, 1861; disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Corp. Thomas Swobe, Niles; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; veteran, May 1, 1864; sergeant; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. K.  
 Corp. Charles Naumett, Three Oaks; enl. Nov. 25, 1861.  
 Corp. James Adams, Niles; enl. Oct. 24, 1861; veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. E.  
 Corp. John N. Harder, Niles; enl. Oct. 9, 1861; disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Corp. Abram Parmenter, Niles; enl. Nov. 2, 1861; disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Corp. William E. Stewart, Niles; enl. Oct. 9, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; app. sergt. maj., Nov. 1, 1863.  
 Corp. Ebenezer Harris, Galien; enl. Oct. 22, 1861; disch. for disability, April 21, 1862.  
 Musician John A. Slater, Niles; enl. Oct. 19, 1861; disch. for disability, July 17, 1863.  
 Henry D. Austin, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Alsbaugh, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Orlando Allen, disch. Nov. 8, 1862.  
 John Brihl, disch. for disability, July 22, 1862.  
 Lyman Barnes, disch. for disability, Feb. 27, 1865.  
 Charles W. Baird, disch. by order, Feb. 17, 1865.  
 Joseph Bramhall, disch. for disability, June 2, 1865.  
 Thomas Broom, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Richard Buck, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Emil Bachman, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Robert Bloom, missing in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.

Henry Corcoran, killed at Louisville, Ky., by the cars, Nov. 12, 1862.  
 Albert Crossman, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Joshua R. Crosby, veteran, Dec. 28, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Newton W. Cottrell, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Dingman, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Harvey A. Daken, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William A. Deuel, veteran, Jan. 21, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. D.  
 Edgar H. Durand, missing at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Morris Dulin, disch. for disability, July 24, 1862.  
 John Dulin, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Patrick Dulin, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Allen Dolph, disch. by order, Sept. 14, 1865.  
 Martin Dallon, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Joseph Deuel, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Francis Darling, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Dean, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Lewis Fench, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Augustus Fetterly, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George S. Foster, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Benjamin Franklin, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Andrew Finch, died of disease in Arkansas, May 24, 1865.  
 Alex. D. Finch, disch. by order, May 6, 1865.  
 John Greiner, disch. by order, Sept. 15, 1865.  
 William Gray, died of wounds at Bertrand, Mich., May 28, 1862.  
 Logan Gardner, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., June 12, 1862.  
 Edward George, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George M. Gunn, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Gleason, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Hess, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Ebenezer Harris, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James F. Hunt, veteran, Jan. 21, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Clark Hough, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Francis W. Hurd, missing in action at Shiloh, April 2, 1862.  
 John Hoyt, disch. for disability, July 17, 1862.  
 John N. Harder, died at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Peter Henkel, disch. by order, Oct. 13, 1865.  
 Edward M. Hawley, disch. by order, Jan. 24, 1866.  
 Samuel D. Hammond, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Charles A. Hoagland, veteran, Dec. 31, 1863; died at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., May 3, 1865.  
 George Ives, disch. for disability, May 7, 1865.  
 David O. Ingleswright, disch. May 8, 1863.  
 Magnus Imboden, disch. by order, June 13, 1865.  
 John C. Ingling, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.  
 Monroe Ingersoll, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William S. Inman, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Frank M. Johnson, disch. from Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
 Samuel Johnson, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Joseph Johnson, died of disease at Niles, June 29, 1862.  
 Cornelius Kirkstead, died at Louisville of wounds, May 28, 1862.  
 William H. Kelly, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Oct. 18, 1864.  
 George W. Knowlton, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Kirchener, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Larch, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Edward Lewis, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William McDonald, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William L. Moody, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Joseph Mosbroogter, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John McNally, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Philip May, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Andrew Miller, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; died of disease, Oct. 11, 1864.  
 V. H. Matchett, died of disease in Tennessee, June 27, 1862.  
 Abram Morris, missing in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 John McDonald, disch. May 9, 1863.  
 John McDermott, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 William Maudlin, disch. for disability, Sept. 26, 1862.  
 Charles Naumett, disch. May 9, 1863.  
 John W. Perkins, disch. for disability, July 8, 1862.  
 Simon Potter, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., Oct. 3, 1863.  
 Charles M. Powell, veteran, Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Collins Phelps, veteran, Jan. 21, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Frederick Powell, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William F. Page, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Lowell M. Page, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Abram Parmenter, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Calvin Penderbaugh, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William D. Repogle, died of disease at Detroit, Dec. 16, 1864.  
 Wilder M. Robbins, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 John P. Rau, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
 Luther Sage, disch. by order, Sept. 14, 1865.  
 Loren Shad, disch. by order, Sept. 15, 1865.  
 Ferdinand Swartz, disch. by order, Aug. 22, 1865.  
 John A. Sence, disch. by order, Sept. 15, 1865.  
 Joseph Swartz, disch. by order.  
 George W. Shad, disch. July 12, 1863.  
 Harvey Simons, disch. for disability, Feb. 12, 1863.  
 Michael Sullivan, disch. from Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.

William H. H. Skinner, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Lewis Smith, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Albert Stenbeck, missing in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Valentine Shaffer, died of disease at Memphis, Aug. 29, 1863.  
 John G. Schurz, died of disease at Niles, Mich.  
 Daniel Shodder, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, May 24, 1865.  
 John J. Sutter, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Stephen Scott, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John W. Smith, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Alphonzo Straul, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Perry Sumner, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Benanil Swartz, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 David Terwilliger, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Charles Toffenmyer, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, May 3, 1865.  
 Peter Tansey, must. out Sept. 14, 1865.  
 Jacob Ugea, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 William Van Campen, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Vanderhoof, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Cyrus C. Whaley, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William C. Williams, veteran, Jan. 4, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Elijah Warren, died of disease at Macon, Ga., Aug. 1, 1862.  
 James E. Walling, died of disease at Little Rock, Dec. 16, 1864.  
 Menzies Webster, died of disease.  
 Frederick P. Warner, disch. by order, May 27, 1865.  
 Joseph Yaw, died of disease at Galien, May 30, 1863.  
 William Yawkey, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

#### Company F.

Capt. Russell M. Weston, Niles; com. Oct. 10, 1861; res. May 7, 1862.  
 Capt. James Adams, Niles; com. Aug. 25, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 1st Lieut. David I. Whitten, Niles; com. Jan. 7, 1865; res. Nov. 18, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Charles H. Dye, Niles; com. March 19, 1864; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. D.  
 2d Lieut. William Horton, Jr., Pipestone; res. June 12, 1865.  
 Sergt. Newell Cleveland, Berrien; enl. Nov. 20, 1861; died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, May 8, 1862.  
 Sergt. John B. Cochran, Niles; enl. Nov. 18, 1861; disch. July 15, 1862.  
 Sergt. Henry M. Bryant, Niles; enl. Sept. 1, 1861; disch. for disability, June 17, 1862.  
 Corp. Hubert L. Putnam, Niles; enl. Nov. 10, 1861; disch. for disability, May 26, 1862.  
 Corp. James Manny, Niles; enl. Sept. 21, 1861; disch. for disability, May 28, 1862.  
 Corp. William Dillon, Niles; enl. Dec. 4, 1861; disch. for disability, March 16, 1862.  
 Corp. Edwin F. Crandall, Niles; enl. Nov. 9, 1861; disch. July 18, 1862.  
 Corp. John B. Martin, Royalton; enl. Oct. 21, 1861; died in rebel prison in Alabama, June 25, 1862.  
 Stephen M. Bonnell, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Henry E. Brown, died at St. Louis, Mo., Oct. 27, 1862.  
 Martin C. Burt, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Armstead Claspie, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., June 17, 1862.  
 Benjamin F. Cahow, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Nov. 24, 1864.  
 William E. Davis, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., June 15, 1862.  
 Charles H. Dye, veteran, March 8, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., March 19, 1864.  
 William C. Eviack, disch. by order, May 22, 1865.  
 Milton Hazard, died in rebel prison at Montgomery, Ala., June 20, 1862.  
 Renben Hart, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Daniel B. Martin, veteran, Dec. 30, 1861; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Abner Marckle, disch. by order, May 22, 1865.  
 Isaac Marckle, disch. by order, June 9, 1866.  
 William E. Patterson, disch. by order, June 27, 1865.  
 Charles H. Parketon, disch. June 27, 1862.  
 Nathan S. Page, disch. for disability, Sept. 13, 1864.  
 Mahlon Pearson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Myron Parrhall, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Preston Parmeter, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jesse Painter, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Lewis Purdy, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Shockley, died of disease, June 25, 1862.  
 James D. Taggart, died in rebel prison at Macon, Ga., Aug. 12, 1862.  
 Stephen J. Weaver, veteran, Jan. 21, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. C, Jan. 7, 1865.

#### Company G.

2d Lieut. Alex. G. Davis, Niles; com. Oct. 23, 1861; died of wounds received at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 2d Lieut. Benton Stearns, Galien; com. March 21, 1865; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. E.  
 2d Lieut. Richard H. Burke, Coloma; com. June 10, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Calvin H. Crowley, disch. by order, Aug. 22, 1865.  
 Jasper Finch, died of disease at Little Rock, July 22, 1864.  
 Erwin J. Fancher, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George King, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry L. King, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

#### Company H.

Capt. John Graham, Oronoko; com. Oct. 8, 1862; res. June 9, 1864, as 1st lieut.  
 Capt. Richard A. Demont, Buchanan; com. June 9, 1864; res. Nov. 15, 1864.

1st Lieut. Henry T. Kimmel, Niles; com. March 15, 1864; com. 2d lieut. May 5, 1862; pro. to capt. in 30th Inf.  
 1st Lieut. James Adams, Niles; com. Nov. 15, 1864; pro. to capt., Co. F.  
 1st Lieut. Otis J. Fenton, Niles; com. Aug. 26, 1865; must. out as 2d lieut., Feb. 15, 1866.  
 2d Lieut. Leonard K. Jilison, Benton; com. Jan. 20, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Anstice, veteran, March 8, 1864.  
 Charles Burrows, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 Wesley Buckmaster, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 Joshua Rogers, disch. at end of service, March 1, 1865.  
 George R. Rogers, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Hiram F. Strong, disch. by order, Sept. 20, 1865.  
 James F. Vallean, disch. at end of service, Feb. 25, 1865.

#### Company I.

Capt. Darius Brown, Niles; com. Oct. 5, 1861; must. out at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Capt. William M. T. Bartholomew, Oronoko; com. Dec. 20, 1864; com. 2d lieut. March 29, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 1st Lieut. John Graham, Oronoko; com. Oct. 5, 1861; pro. to capt., Co. H, March 19, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. William H. Miller, Berrien; com. March 19, 1864; res. May 3, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Charles E. Howe, com. Oct. 8, 1861; pro. to capt., Co. A.  
 2d Lieut. Hiram B. Hipp, Berrien; com. Sept. 14, 1862; disch. for disability, March 29, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. John C. Welch, com. July 3, 1864; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. A.  
 2d Lieut. Josiah C. Murphy, Buchanan; com. Jan. 7, 1864; resigned June 7, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Hiram L. Brown, St. Joseph; com. June 7, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Sergt. William H. Hall, Niles; enl. Sept. 1, 1861; disch. July 25, 1862.  
 Sergt. Hiram B. Hipp, Berrien; enl. Oct. 5, 1861; pro. to 2d lieut.  
 Sergt. William H. Miller, Berrien; enl. Oct. 11, 1861; veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; pro. to 1st lieut.  
 Sergt. Charles H. Parketon, Oronoko; enl. Oct. 12, 1861; disch. for disability, June 27, 1862.  
 Sergt. Henry L. Johnson, Berrien; enl. Oct. 11, 1861; killed in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Corp. John E. Elison, Oronoko; enl. Oct. 7, 1861; disch. Nov. 12, 1862.  
 Corp. William M. T. Bartholomew, Oronoko; enl. Oct. 12, 1861; sergeant; veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; pro. to 2d lieut.  
 Corp. David K. Hubbard, Oronoko; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; disch. for disability, June 8, 1865.  
 Corp. Daniel G. W. Gangler, Oronoko; enl. Oct. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; disch. Nov. 13, 1865.  
 Corp. Henry R. Smith, Pipestone; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; died of wounds received at Shiloh, May 4, 1862.  
 Corp. William W. Leader, Oronoko; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; killed in battle, Sept. 4, 1864.  
 Corp. Israel M. Allen, Pipestone; enl. Nov. 6, 1861; disch. by substitute.  
 Corp. Charles S. Reese, Pipestone; enl. Oct. 9, 1861; died in rebel prison in Alabama, May 11, 1862.  
 Musician Daniel E. Clark, Berrien; enl. Nov. 8, 1861; died of disease at St. Louis, May 11, 1862.  
 Musician James R. Ackerman, Oronoko; enl. Oct. 12, 1861; veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John A. Aumick, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., June 12, 1864.  
 William Brayman, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., May 8, 1864.  
 Francis Bartholomew, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Aug. 6, 1865.  
 Elieha M. Blakeman, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., June 18, 1862.  
 Lemuel S. Barlow, Jr., disch. Feb. 1, 1862.  
 George Brown, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 George W. Balcock, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 James C. Bedinger, disch. at end of service, March 28, 1865.  
 Ephraim Black, disch. by order, Feb. 11, 1865.  
 John Barber, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 William V. Baker, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Raymond Brosius, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1865.  
 Alonzo Brayman, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Joel Benson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Charles Brownell, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Isaac Crawford, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George B. Crandall, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Albert D. Crandall, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Edward J. Curtis, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James D. Curtis, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John E. Curtis, disch. Nov. 11, 1862.  
 Andrew Covert, disch. for disability, Aug. 8, 1862.  
 Van B. Clendenin, disch. by order, Aug. 16, 1865.  
 James Conkwrite, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., June 16, 1864.  
 Orlando A. Cook, died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, May 20, 1862.  
 Jacob Cool, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., May 24, 1864.  
 Hiram Clawson, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Aug. 5, 1864.  
 Ezra N. Cleveland, died of disease in Tennessee, Sept. 16, 1862.  
 Levi Chase, died of disease at Chickasaw, Oct. 31, 1863.



William Calhoun, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 James C. Donnell, died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, May 20, 1862.  
 Calvin H. Davidson, died of disease at Macon, Ga., Sept. 5, 1862.  
 Samuel L. Davis, died of disease at Raleigh, N. C., Oct. 12, 1862.  
 Lyman I. Davidson, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; disch. at end of service, March 28, 1865.  
 Silas Davidson, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; disch. at end of service, March 28, 1865.  
 Wayne B. Delong, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; disch. by order, July 29, 1865.  
 Jesse P. Delong, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James W. Delong, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Delong, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Charles D. Donnelly, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Thomas T. Elliott, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Noble Fisher, disch. by order, Nov. 28, 1862.  
 John Fisher, Jr., must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Ephraim Fairbanks, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William H. Faulkner, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 David Foster, died of wounds at Pittsburg, Pa., May 2, 1862.  
 Amos Goff, died of disease at Jackson, Tenn., July 7, 1862.  
 John Gilbert, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., July 20, 1864.  
 Japhet Godfrey, disch. at St. Louis.  
 Ira Gorham, disch. for disability, July 25, 1864.  
 Luther Graham, disch. for disability, Dec. 19, 1864.  
 Frederick Goodrich, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Franklin Grande, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Armingo Gifford, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Isaac Horton, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Horton, Jr., veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Nathan Harrington, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; disch. by order, Jan. 6, 1866.  
 William M. House, disch. by order, Aug. 30, 1865.  
 William H. Hall, disch. July 26, 1862.  
 Lewis J. Hunnston, disch. by order, June 21, 1863.  
 George W. Hatfield, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 Perry G. Hatfield, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.  
 John W. Haverna, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.  
 Levi Horner, transferred to Vet. Res. Corps.  
 Aaron Hiser, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., July 20, 1864.  
 Elias Hartline, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Nov. 16, 1864.  
 Samuel Jasper, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Nov. 25, 1864.  
 Jacob Johnson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Royal Jacobs, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Jones, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jacob Lauer, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Thomas Lightfoot, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 A. Lightfoot, disch. for disability, Aug. 22, 1865.  
 Albert Lombard, disch. for disability, Oct. 29, 1862.  
 Alex. Lowrey, disch. July 14, 1862.  
 George W. Lake, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Dec. 12, 1863.  
 Hugh McClelland, died of disease at Niles, Jan. 11, 1862.  
 George F. Murphy, died of disease in Tennessee, Sept. 8, 1862.  
 George W. Murphy, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Dec. 16, 1864.  
 John Marsh, died of disease in Arkansas, July 2, 1864.  
 Jasper N. Murphy, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 William Murphy, disch. Nov. 28, 1862.  
 Nicholas Michael, disch. July 12, 1862.  
 Elijah Michael, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Albert McMichael, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Adam Michael, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Daniel Miller, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William W. Morris, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James O'Connor, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John B. Odell, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., June 9, 1862.  
 Aaron Renbarger, died of disease in Arkansas, Jan. 30, 1866.  
 Patrick Reagan, disch. for disability, Sept. 2, 1864.  
 William Ryan, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Robinson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Reagan, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Daniel Redpath, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Ensley Rakestraw, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry R. Smith, died of wounds at St. Louis, Mo., 1862.  
 Alonzo Stroch, died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, May 18, 1862.  
 Thomas Strick, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; died of disease at Berrien, Mich., Jan. 1, 1865.  
 Sebastian Shafer, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; disch. by order, Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Luther St. John, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Stringer, disch. for disability, Nov. 16, 1865.  
 John Templar, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.  
 Clark Toland, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 John Treadwell, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Royal J. Tuttle, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Aug. 12, 1864.  
 Julius Teich, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Vanseau, disch. at Detroit, 1862.  
 Matiland Wilson, disch. July 18, 1862.  
 William E. Willis, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Jasper F. Willis, died of disease in Alabama, May 24, 1862.  
 Charles H. Willard, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Jan. 6, 1865.

## Company K.

Capt. Robert Brethschneider, Niles; com. Oct. 10, 1861; res. Oct. 3, 1862.  
 Capt. Byron B. Rockwell, Niles; com. Sept. 3, 1862; res. April 12, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. Andrew P. Collins, Niles; com. Sept. 30, 1861; must. out Jan. 7, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. Thomas Swobe, Niles; com. April 12, 1865; com. 2d Lieut., Dec. 20, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 2d Lieut. William E. Stewart, Niles; pro. to 1st Lieut. and adjt.  
 Sergt. Dion B. Keltner, Niles; enl. Oct. 7, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. C.  
 Sergt. James A. Parish, Niles; enl. Nov. 21, 1861; missing in action at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Sergt. Ezekiel Spaulding, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. A.  
 Corp. Granville M. Willis, Berrien; enl. Oct. 8, 1861; died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, May 7, 1862.  
 Corp. Almon Richardson, Niles; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., May 13, 1862.  
 Corp. John E. Curtis, Niles; enl. Nov. 11, 1861; disch. Nov. 11, 1862.  
 Corp. Albert V. B. Lombard, Pipestone; enl. Oct. 10, 1861; disch. Oct. 29, 1862.  
 Corp. Lorenzo Drake, Niles; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; disch. by order, Aug. 10, 1865.  
 Musician Zalmon A. Distrow, Chickaming; enl. Nov. 1, 1861; died of disease at Pittsburg Landing.  
 Musician Thos. M. Stewart, Pipestone; enl. Oct. 10, 1861; disch. for disability, July 29, 1863.  
 Wagoner David Hof-tetter, Niles; enl. Oct. 25, 1861; died of disease at St. Louis, June 21, 1862.  
 David Anglemeyer, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Thomas Brown, must. out.  
 George Bowers, must. out.  
 Husea Clemens, must. out.  
 William R. Campbell, must. out.  
 Robert Charlton, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
 Charles Denend, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John N. Denend, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Almon A. Doane, disch. for disability.  
 George Drago, died of disease at Fort Smith, Ark., June 20, 1864.  
 James Finnell, died of disease at Helena, Ark., Aug. 17, 1863.  
 Patrick Finn, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Alvin A. Godfrey, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Harvey Green, died of disease.  
 John Green, died of disease at Corinth, Miss., September, 1862.  
 William Higgins, died of disease in Alabama, May 25, 1862.  
 Orlando Hoadley, died of disease.  
 Aaron H. Hoadley, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Rodney Holst-in, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Robert Hawkins, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Haumer, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Abram J. Hudson, disch. by order, Nov. 16, 1865.  
 Elias B. Kendy, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Abram O. Kendy, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Luke Lavanway, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Lavanway, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William H. Lavanway, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Anson Lewis, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Ansel Lewis, veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Dorus M. Lewis, died of disease in Arkansas, Dec. 13, 1865.  
 Charles C. Luce, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 John Large, disch. for disability, July 16, 1862.  
 John Lynn, drowned at St. Louis, Mo.  
 Addison McCoy, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Daniel McGee, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James McGurk, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John H. Morrison, disch. for disability.  
 Noel Matchett, disch. at Detroit, July 9, 1862.  
 Sylvester B. Nolan, disch. by order, June 17, 1865.  
 James Norris, disch. for disability, Dec. 28, 1864.  
 Jeremiah Puterbaugh, disch. Nov. 25, 1862.  
 Lewis M. Pope, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Daniel Price, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James D. Parish, missing in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 William Parish, missing in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Ferdinand P. Row, died in battle at Shiloh, April 6, 1862.  
 Almon Richardson, died of disease.  
 James R. Riggins, died of disease at Niles, Sept. 9, 1864.  
 Oscar Rood, disch. by order, July, 1862.  
 Jerome Roseman, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 Samuel H. Smith, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 Alfred Sherwood, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Bernard Scanlon, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Christopher Stephens, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John H. Strackengast, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Nelson Sinkler, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Chauncey E. Sinkler, died of disease.  
 Adelbert R. Tabor, died of disease.  
 Henry Teesdale, died of disease at Macon, Ga., July 13, 1862.

Charles D. H. Trowbridge, disch. at Detroit, July 9, 1862.  
 Oliver D. Trowbridge, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jacob Tibbs, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Tilroe, veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; disch. by order, Sept. 27, 1865.  
 James E. Vandemark, disch. for disability, July 19, 1862.  
 Benjamin Van Patten, disch. for disability, Aug. 25, 1862.  
 Granville M. Willis, died of disease.  
 Nicholas W. Webber, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.  
 Isaac Wilson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George Williams, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

#### MEMBERS OF THE TWELFTH INFANTRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

##### *Company A.*

Alonzo H. Allen, died of disease at Bolivar, Tenn., Sept. 30, 1862.  
 Horace N. Alexander, disch. by order, May 22, 1865.  
 Caleb J. Brown, veteran, Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John Buckley, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Joseph Freelove, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Samuel Horton, disch. by order, Jan. 24, 1866.  
 Calvin Hess, disch. by order, Jan. 24, 1866.  
 John Welcher, disch. May 31, 1862.  
 Albert Welcher, disch. May 31, 1862.

##### *Company B.*

2d Lieut. James H. Hall, Lawton; com. Feb. 15, 1865; pro. to 1st Lieut., Co. C, June 14, 1865; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Franklin Beal, disch. by order, Nov. 11, 1865.  
 Uriah Bucknell, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Thomas Denims, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Robert K. Evans, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Franklin D. Gates, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William W. Lamson, died of disease at Camp Prentiss, Tenn., April 2, 1862.  
 Morgan Matran, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Oliver C. Timmins, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Bedient Timmins, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Henry Teachout, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.

##### *Company D.*

Porter Dougherty, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., May 11, 1865.  
 Andrew L. Davidson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Nathaniel Keyes, disch. for disability, June 12, 1865.  
 John McMillan, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Estell D. Smith, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

##### *Company E.*

David G. Crippen, disch. by order, May 22, 1865.

##### *Company F.*

Charles Barrett, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Shadrack H. Hamblin, disch. at end of service, Sept. 9, 1865.  
 Elias V. Johnson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Elzer A. Smith, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
 Israel D. Tryon, died of disease at Washington, Ark., July 21, 1865.

##### *Company G.*

Andrew Bratton, disch. for disability, June 9, 1865.  
 Robert Barnes, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

##### *Company H.*

Capt. Gilbert D. Johnson, Lawton; com. Oct. 14, 1861; res. Oct. 8, 1862.  
 1st Lieut. Stephen Bitely, Lawton; com. Nov. 11, 1863; app. q.m. March 15, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. Runyan Van Hise, Lawton; res. Dec. 31, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. Jonathan L. Chase, Lawton; com. Oct. 10, 1861; res. May 15, 1862.  
 2d Lieut. Wm. H. Debolt, Lawton; res. Aug. 20, 1864.  
 Sergt. Lucius R. Robinson, Lawton; enl. Oct. 14, 1861; disch. for disability, July 7, 1863.  
 Sergt. Orion R. Hight, Lawton; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; disch. July 11, 1862.  
 Sergt. Wm. H. Debolt, Lawton; enl. Nov. 6, 1861; veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; pro. 2d Lieut.  
 Corp. Wm. A. Nash, Lawton; enl. Oct. 31, 1861; died of disease at Pittsburgh, Pa., April 27, 1862.  
 Corp. Luther D. L. Follett, Lawton; enl. Nov. 6, 1861; died of disease at St. Louis, June 6, 1862.  
 Corp. Wesley M. Hall, Lawton; enl. Oct. 29, 1861; disch. for disability, Aug. 25, 1862.  
 Corp. Saml. F. Stainbrook, enl. Oct. 30, 1861; veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Corp. Stephen Bitely, Lawton; enl. Nov. 1, 1861; app. commissary sergt. Sept. 1, 1862.  
 Musician Wm. Beals, Lawton; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Wagoner Richard Monroe, Lawton; enl. Oct. 23, 1861; disch. Nov. 10, 1862.  
 William E. Atkinson, supposed to have been taken prisoner and murdered by guerrillas, May, 1863.  
 Richard Armatago, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Wallace W. Andrews, disch. at end of service, Feb. 4, 1865.  
 Nelson Arnell, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Owen L. Allen, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Joseph Barrell, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 David Burgess, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Franklin Baker, must. Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James M. Bowman, died in action at Shiloh, Tenn., April 6, 1862.  
 George Barnes, died in action at Shiloh, Tenn., April 6, 1862.  
 Wilson Burch, disch. Jan. 29, 1863.  
 Cyrus Bitely, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William H. Brott, disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 Randall Z. Case, veteran, Dec. 26, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 John J. Cole, supposed to have been taken prisoner and murdered by guerrillas, May, 1863.  
 Danford D. Cole, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Benjamin F. Dine, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Charles J. Dibble, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., Nov. 13, 1863.  
 Lewis Dine, disch. from Vet. Res. Corps by order, Nov. 17, 1865.  
 Albert Doolittle, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Adam Dine, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James E. Durden, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
 Harvey Eggleston, disch. by order, Aug. 22, 1865.  
 George Eastman, disch. May 8, 1863.  
 John Farron, disch. for disability, May 5, 1865.  
 William Fuller, disch. to re-enlist as veteran, May 8, 1864.  
 Edwin Flanders, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Milan Flanders, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Clinton J. Gustin, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Harvey Harper, missing in action at Shiloh, Tenn., April 6, 1862.  
 James H. Hall, pro. to commissary sergt.; veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. B, Feb. 15, 1865.  
 Daniel Hawkins, veteran, Feb. 6, 1864; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Eli J. Hinchner, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Cyrus Hopkins, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George K. Kenney, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Kennard, disch. for disability, June 20, 1866.  
 Henry W. Lee, veteran, Dec. 26, 1863; disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 Franklin Lett, died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, Tenn.  
 Nicholas Miller, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo.  
 William Minnick, died of disease at Atlanta, Ga., June 17, 1862.  
 Livingston McNeil, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., July 21, 1864.  
 Lyman Mayo, disch. for disability, Oct. 24, 1862.  
 Alpheus D. Munger, disch. at Detroit, July 18, 1862.  
 Alfred Myers, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Samuel D. Nash, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., July 12, 1864.  
 Dyro Parker, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., Oct. 17, 1863.  
 James W. Parker, died of disease in Michigan, March 25, 1864.  
 James Parker, died of disease at Lawton, Mich., Jan. 11, 1865.  
 Daniel Prince, died of disease at Lawton, Mich., Nov. 21, 1864.  
 Christopher Parsons, disch. for disability, July 14, 1862.  
 Walter P. Robinson, disch. for disability, Dec. 11, 1862.  
 Uriah W. Rough, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James B. Reynolds, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Edward H. Rice, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 George Stephens, died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, Tenn., April 6, 1862.  
 Thomas J. Scott, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., July 26, 1864.  
 Luther D. Sheldon, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Nov. 21, 1864.  
 James Stilwell, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; disch. by order, Sept. 30, 1865.  
 William Sternberg, disch. by order, Aug. 22, 1865.  
 Samuel A. Sidney, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, May 2, 1865.  
 Isaiah Stilwell, veteran, Dec. 26, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Sams, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Jacob Showers, Jr., must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Allen Smith, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Bennett Smith, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 James Tomlinson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Clanson Tomlinson, died of disease at Pittsburg Landing, Tenn., June 6, 1862.  
 James P. Tyler, disch. for disability, Oct. 24, 1862.  
 Runyan Van Hise, veteran, Dec. 19, 1863; sergeant.  
 Samuel Vought, disch. by order, June 17, 1865.  
 Gerald Van Hise, disch. by order, June 17, 1865.  
 William Vannetten, missing in action at Shiloh, Tenn., April 6, 1862.  
 William R. Van Hise, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Thomas A. Vought, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Adelbert Wright, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Stephen E. Wait, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 William Wilson, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Burney O. Wilson, died at Shiloh from wounds received there.  
 Charles Wilson, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Aug. 23, 1863.  
 William Wilson, died in action at Shiloh, Tenn., April 6, 1862.

##### *Company K.*

Sergt. Othniel H. Field, Hamilton; enl. Nov. 13, 1861; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Sergt. Russell L. Chubbuck, Lawrence; enl. Nov. 4, 1861; veteran, Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.  
 Corp. Barney O. Wilson, Hamilton; enl. Nov. 15, 1861; died May 30, 1862, of wounds received at Shiloh.

Corp. Allen J. Jordan, Hamilton; enl. Nov. 15, 1861; veteran, Dec. 29, 1861; must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Roswell Ames, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.

David C. Blackmer, died of disease at Little Rock, Ark., Sept. 24, 1863.

John R. Blackmer, veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; disch. for disability, June 1, 1865.

Amos Barnum, died of disease at Washington, Ark., July 3, 1865.

William Barnum, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Eli M. Corder, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

John Code, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

John L. Earl, disch. to re-enlist as veteran, Dec. 29, 1863.

Samuel E. Earl, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Charles M. Geer, died of disease.

William A. Geer, died of disease at Camp Tyler, Texas, Dec. 22, 1864.

Conrad R. Hartman, disch. by order, June 21, 1863.

William H. James, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Jan. 15, 1864.

Charles C. Luce, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.

John Morrison, disch. for disability.

John A. Peck, disch. at end of service, Jan. 7, 1865.

David E. Fletcher, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Henry C. Parker, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

John D. Redding, must. out Feb. 15, 1866.

Russell H. Roberts, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Sept. 1, 1864.

William B. Rider, died of disease at Keeler, Mich., July 15, 1862.

Barney L. Roberts, veteran, Jan. 1, 1863.

Allen Sweet, disch. for disability, June 12, 1865.

William W. Sterns, disch. for disability, Sept. 5, 1865.

## THIRTEENTH INFANTRY.

This regiment, raised during the autumn and winter of 1861, had its rendezvous at Kalamazoo. It left that place for the front on the 12th of February, 1862, with nine hundred and twenty-five officers and men, to which seventy-four were added by enlistment before the 1st of July following. Company K was from Van Buren County, and so were considerable portions of Companies C, D, E, and H. There were also some from that county in other companies, and the regiment contained a few from Berrien County.

From Kalamazoo the regiment proceeded through Indiana, Kentucky, and Tennessee to Pittsburg Landing, which it reached, after a forced march, near the close of the second day's battle, too late to take part in the conflict. From that time until the evacuation of Corinth, the 13th was engaged in the arduous picket and fatigue duties performed by Gen. Halleck's army. It then moved with Gen. Buell's forces into Northern Alabama, and was the last of the command to leave that locality when the general fell back towards Louisville. It shared all the hardships of that long march through Tennessee and Kentucky, and immediately on reaching Louisville, in October, 1862, retraced its weary steps in pursuit of the rebel Gen. Bragg. It aided in chasing him and his motley forces out of Kentucky, but did not happen to be present at any heavy battle. It suffered severely from disease, however, the deaths from this cause during the first year of service (closing on the 1st of November, 1862) numbering seventy-one, while the number discharged for disability during the same time was one hundred and twenty.

After a short stay at Silver Springs, Tenn., the regiment advanced and aided in driving the enemy from Lebanon. Proceeding to Nashville, it was on duty in that vicinity until the 26th of December, when it marched with Gen. Rosecrans' army towards Murfreesboro'. On the 29th it was engaged in skirmishing with the enemy, and had several of its men killed and wounded. On the 31st of December and 1st and 2d of January the regiment was hotly engaged in the battle of Stone River, having twenty-five killed, sixty-two wounded, and eight missing, out of two

hundred and twenty-four who entered the conflict. On the 31st of December it recaptured, by a bayonet charge, two Union cannon which had fallen into the hands of the enemy.

After the victory at Stone River, the 13th was engaged in building fortifications at Murfreesboro', and in scouting through the adjoining parts of Tennessee until the 24th of June, 1863, when it advanced with Rosecrans against Bragg. After various marches and countermarches in rear of the retreating forces of the latter general, the regiment, with its division, moved from Hillsboro', Tenn., to cross the Cumberland Mountains. By a march of four days over mountains three thousand feet high, along roads so steep that the cannon and baggage often had to be hauled by hand, the division reached the valley of the Sequatchie. It then crossed the Tennessee and marched upon Chattanooga, the 13th being one of the first regiments to occupy that place.

On the 19th and 20th of September, 1863, the 13th was warmly engaged in the disastrous battle of Chickamauga, going into action with 217 officers and men, and having twenty-five killed and mortally wounded, fifty-seven others wounded, and twenty-five missing, some of whom were probably killed. The total number of those killed or mortally wounded in action during the year ending Nov. 1, 1863, was fifty-one, while there were ninety-two others wounded, sixty-six who died of disease, and one hundred and sixty-two who were discharged for disability.

On the 5th of November this regiment, with the 21st and 22d Michigan Infantry, and the 18th Ohio Infantry, was organized into a brigade of engineers and assigned to duty at Chattanooga, being attached to the headquarters of the Department of the Cumberland.

The 13th was present at the battle of Mission Ridge, but was not seriously engaged. During the months of December, 1863, and February, 1864, it was stationed on the Chickamauga, engaged in picket duty and in cutting logs for building warehouses at Chattanooga.

The regiment re-enlisted as a veteran organization on the 5th of February, 1864, and in the early part of February returned home. After the usual veteran furlough, the men rendezvoused at Jackson, in this State, their number being increased by over four hundred new recruits. On the 26th of March they again set out for the field, reaching Chattanooga on the 20th of April. For five months from that time the regiment was stationed at Lookout Mountain, engaged in the construction of military hospitals and guarding the sick and wounded sent back from Sherman's army. It was then relieved from engineer duty, and assigned to the 2d Brigade, 1st Division, 4th Corps. After a severe march in pursuit of the rebels, under Forrest and Roddy, through Northern Alabama, the regiment joined the brigade at Rome on the 1st of November.

In a few days it joined Gen. Sherman's army near Atlanta, and set out on the celebrated "march to the sea,"—that renowned but comparatively easy achievement, when sixty thousand men, the flower of the whole Western army, swept in a resistless mass through Georgia, brushing contemptuously aside the few feeble detachments of home-guards and conscripts which endeavored to oppose them,



without delaying for a moment their own mighty and majestic advance. Having reached Savannah on the 16th of December, 1864, the regiment was on duty in the trenches before that city until the 21st of the same month, when the enemy evacuated the place. On the 17th of January, 1865, the regiment advanced with the army through the Carolinas, being slightly engaged at Catawba River, S. C., on the 28th of February, and at Aversyboro', N. C., on the 16th of March.

At Bentonville, N. C., on the 19th of March, 1865, the 13th took part in one of the severest battles of the latter part of the war. By this time Gen. Joseph E. Johnston, one of the best officers in the Confederate service, had collected all the rebel troops in North and South Carolina, and was prepared to make a desperate effort to stop, or at least to delay, the advance of Sherman's army towards the "last ditch" which encircled Richmond. Down to this time there had been hardly any opposition worthy of the name since the army left Atlanta, and when the 1st Division was ordered to drive the enemy from the position which he had taken up near Bentonville, the men advanced with confident steps to what they expected would be a repetition of their former easy victories. But when they arrived on the ground they were met by a withering fire from a large force of veteran soldiers, heavily intrenched and ably commanded.

The division advanced gallantly, their men falling by scores, and at one time the 13th gained a position within six rods of the enemy's breastworks, but the storm of lead was too severe to be withstood; the regimental commander, Lieut.-Col. Willard G. Eaton, was shot dead at the head of his men, and at length the whole division was compelled to fall back to the shelter of a low acclivity within easy musket range of the rebel intrenchments. Here the fight was continued during a considerable part of the day, until at length heavy reinforcements came up, and the breastworks were captured without serious difficulty. In this battle the 13th Michigan Infantry had one hundred and ten officers and men killed, wounded, and captured.

After the surrender of Gen. Johnston's army the 13th left its camp on the Cape Fear River on the 30th of April, 1865, participated in the grand review of Gen. Sherman's army at Washington, on the 24th of May, left that city on the 9th of June, and reached Louisville, Ky., on the 15th of the latter month. It was mustered out in that city on the 25th of July, and on the 27th of July arrived at Jackson, Mich., where it was paid off and disbanded.

#### MEMBERS OF THE THIRTEENTH INFANTRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

##### *Field and Staff.*

Col. Joshua B. Culver, Paw Paw; com. May 26, 1863; lieutenant-col., Feb. 26, 1863; maj., July 4, 1862; 1st lieutenant and adj., Nov. 9, 1861; must. out Feb. 23, 1865.

Q.M. C. Edwin Dunbar, Decatur; com. Aug. 18, 1862; app. q.m. U. S. Vols., Dec. 5, 1863; bvt. maj. and lieutenant-col. U. S. Vols. for gallant and meritorious services during the campaign in Georgia and the Carolinas; must. out Nov. 22, 1865.

Chaplain Rev. Lewis Whitcomb, Paw Paw; com. Aug. 7, 1863; disch. for disability, March 17, 1865.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Com. Sergt. John Kirby, Mattawan; enl. Dec. 10, 1861; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. A, May 7, 1865.

##### *Company A.*

2d Lieut. John Kirby, Mattawan; com. May 7, 1865; pro. to 1st Lieut., July 5, 1865; must. out 2d Lieut., July 25, 1865.

Jesse Brown, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

Dewey D. Chapman, must. out July 25, 1865.

Benjamin F. Hoyt, must. out July 25, 1865.

Fred. Waldron, must. out Feb. 6, 1866.

##### *Company B.*

William F. Austin, died of disease, June, 1865.

James C. McVey, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

##### *Company C.*

2d Lieut. G. Edwin Dunbar, Decatur; com. May 15, 1862; sergt., Oct. 9, 1861; pro. q.m., Aug. 18, 1862.

2d Lieut. Smith G. Williams, Antwerp; com. March 19, 1864; veteran, Jan. 18, 1864; sergt.; pro. expt., July 5, 1865; must. out 2d Lieut., July 25, 1865.

Musician Geo. W. Eldick, Decatur; enl. Nov. 2, 1861; veteran, Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.

William W. Arnold, must. out July 25, 1865.

William D. Butler, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., May 20, 1863.

William H. Britton, must. out July 25, 1865.

Orlando W. Calkins, died of disease at Mattawan, Mich., May 10, 1862.

Stephen A. Calburn, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

Andrew J. Davis, disch. by order, May 31, 1865.

William S. Dailey, must. out July 25, 1865.

Ira Dailey, must. out July 25, 1865.

Henry Fox, died in action at Chickamauga, Tenn., Sept. 19, 1863.

Miles Greenman, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., April 27, 1862.

Collins D. Griffith, disch. by order, June 6, 1865.

Henry Huff, disch. by order, July 11, 1865.

Marion Huff, disch. by order, June 9, 1865.

Alden S. Hand, died in action at Stone River, Tenn., Dec. 31, 1862.

Champlin Lent, disch. by order, June 30, 1865.

Elbridge G. Lynden, must. out July 25, 1865.

Augustus Niles, disch. by order, May 30, 1865.

Warren Pratt, disch. by order, July 30, 1864.

Lawrence E. Prindle, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

William Van Sickle, disch. by order, June 6, 1865.

John Varnum, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

John A. Wacha, disch. by order, June 15, 1865.

Cantine R. Williams, must. out July 25, 1865.

##### *Company D.*

Anson S. Allen, must. out July 25, 1865.

Ephraim M. Bell, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., March 28, 1864.

Sylvester Bush, disch. by order, July 12, 1865.

William H. Burkhardt, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

Levi Caldwell, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

Willis C. Cook, disch. for disability, Nov. 3, 1862.

William Doran, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.

Cortes F. Foot, disch. for disability, July 16, 1862.

Orange T. Howard, died of disease at Lookout Mountain, Tenn., Aug. 13, 1864.

Andrew J. Joy, died of disease at Stevenson, Ala., Feb. 10, 1864.

Abner Lull, died of disease at Hillsboro', Tenn., Aug. 4, 1863.

George Steadman, died of disease at Bridgeport, Ala., Jan. 14, 1865.

Harmon Timerson, disch. by order, June 15, 1865.

George W. Vaughan, disch. by order, May 20, 1865.

Oscar D. Vanderveer, disch. by order, June 28, 1865.

##### *Company E.*

Sergt. James Wilson, Paw Paw; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; trans. to Invalid Corps, Sept. 30, 1865.

Sergt. Elisha Tyler, Paw Paw; enl. Sept. 14, 1861; veteran, Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.

Charles W. Acker, disch. for disability, July 12, 1862.

George W. Berridge, died of disease, Oct. 26, 1862.

Ora S. Brown, must. out July 25, 1865.

James Cannon, disch. by order, Aug. 29, 1863.

Corey Davis, disch. by order from Vet. Res. Corps, Sept. 29, 1865.

John R. Fowler, disch. at end of service, Jan. 16, 1865.

William Henry, disch. for disability, Sept. 12, 1862.

Andrew J. Johnson, disch. for disability, October, 1863.

Henry Jay, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Sept. 1, 1863.

Ephraim Lewis, must. out July 25, 1865.

Arthur L. Lillie, must. out July 25, 1865.

David McNeil, disch. for disability, Sept. 14, 1862.

Nathaniel C. Parrish, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., April 4, 1862.

Henry A. Rogers, disch. for disability, Oct. 5, 1862.

William Robbins, disch. at end of service, Jan. 18, 1865.

Henry E. Stocomb, disch. for disability, July 22, 1862.

George W. Sams, disch. for disability, Nov. 21, 1862.

Byron Saxton, disch. for disability, Jan. 20, 1863.

Harry Smith, died of disease, April 20, 1862.

William S. Tattman, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864.

Guy E. Trumbull, disch. July 29, 1862.

John V. Wetherbee, died of disease at Savannah, Ga., Dec. 19, 1864.

##### *Company F.*

Azor Barnum, died of disease at Savannah, Ga., Jan. 19, 1865.

Philip Cady, must. out May 15, 1865.

Nathan DeLong, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
John H. Hannah, disch. by order, June 27, 1865.  
Hiram L. Stratton, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.

*Company G.*

2d Lieut. William Murch, Paw Paw; com. Jan. 11, 1864; resigned May 26, 1864.  
Corp. Wm. H. Johnson, Columbia; enl. Oct. 16, 1861; veteran, Feb. 13, 1864; disch. by order, July 29, 1865.  
Corp. George W. Bewley, Columbia; enl. Nov. 16, 1861; sergt.; disch. at end of service, Jan. 16, 1865.  
Corp. George W. Belden, Columbia; enl. Oct. 23, 1861; sergt.; disch. at end of service, Jan. 16, 1865.  
Albert Adams, died of disease at Detroit, Mich., May 3, 1865.  
William H. Ashley, disch. June 8, 1865.  
Timothy P. Bewley, disch. for disability, Feb. 25, 1863.  
Levi Bush, must. out July 25, 1865.  
James Bell, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Lucius Cleveland, must. out July 25, 1865.  
James Cleveland, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864.  
Hiram S. Coovry, died of disease at Savannah, Ga., March 18, 1865.  
Walter H. Campbell, disch. by order, May 26, 1865.  
Willard N. Campbell, disch. June 8, 1865.  
Marshal Dean, disch. by order, July 29, 1865.  
Embert Dean, died in action at Bentonville, N. C., March 19, 1865.  
John H. Davis, died of disease at Indianapolis, Ind., Oct. 24, 1864.  
James Fox, disch. May 15, 1865.  
Simon P. Foster, disch. at end of service, June 28, 1865.  
Enos Huey, died of disease at Millen, Ga., Dec. 4, 1864.  
Daniel F. Hayes, must. out Feb. 25, 1865.  
Obadiah Joy, must. out Feb. 25, 1865.  
Henry B. Johnson, must. out July 25, 1865.  
George Johnson, must. out July 25, 1865.  
George Kent, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Nathaniel Kent, disch. by order, June 20, 1865.  
Byron H. Kidney, disch. for disability, Aug. 4, 1863.  
John W. Niles, disch. at end of service, Jan. 16, 1865.  
Andrew A. Price, disch. for disability, July 31, 1862.  
Charles H. Rice, disch. for disability, July 8, 1862.  
James S. Randall, died of disease at Gallatin, Tenn., Dec. 9, 1862.  
John T. Robinson, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Ezekiel V. Taylor, disch. for disability, Oct. 20, 1862.  
William Vallien, died of disease at David's Island, N. Y. Harbor, March 8, 1865.  
Robert Walker, disch. May 15, 1865.  
Martin J. Wescott, disch. May 15, 1865.  
Joel S. Wait, disch. May 15, 1865.

*Company H.*

Sergt. Wm. R. Sirrine, Paw Paw; pro. to 2d lieut.; must. out as sergt. July 25, 1865.  
Sergt. Alvin P. Holmes, Antwerp; enl. Oct. 5, 1861; must. out July 28, 1865.  
Wilson Burch, disch. for disability, May 4, 1864.  
James Bennett, disch. by order, July 18, 1865.  
James H. Bovier, disch. by order, June 13, 1865.  
George W. Brooks, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Edward M. Coon, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
William D. Dutton, must. out July 25, 1865.  
George De Long, must. out May 6, 1865.  
Edwin Dutton, must. out May 15, 1865.  
Mortimer J. Edson, must. out July 25, 1865.  
James Ellison, disch. for disability, Nov. 17, 1863.  
Martin V. Erhenback, disch. by order, May 28, 1865.  
Charles Gibson, disch. by order, July 14, 1865.  
Philemon Holmes, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Ira M. Hill, disch. by order, June 16, 1865.  
Jerome D. Hall, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
John H. Hannah, disch. June 8, 1865.  
Ashbel Heron, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Van Rensselaer Hozainin, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Irving W. Lane, must. out July 25, 1865.  
John Loveridge, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Malcolm McGregor, must. out May 27, 1865.  
Spencer Mather, died of disease at Lookout Mountain, Tenn., July 20, 1864.  
George W. Myers, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Francis P. Myers, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Eugene F. Osborne, missing on march near Sebastopol, Ga., Dec. 1, 1864.  
Charles Rhel, died in action at Bentonville, N. C., March 19, 1865.  
Orrin Rhodes, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Elijah Strong, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Addis Wolcott, must. out July 25, 1865.  
George Wood, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Charles Welch, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Jerome C. Warner, disch. by order, June 22, 1865.

*Company I.*

James A. Byers, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Alvin Chapman, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Arris B. Culver, disch. by order, June 19, 1865.

David Freeman, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Draper Fish, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Bradford Gorham, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Zenas Kidney, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Warren B. Kinney, must. out July 25, 1865.  
James S. Lee, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
James Martin, died of wounds at Newbern, N. C., April 23, 1865.

*Company K.*

Capt. Dewitt C. Fitch, Mattawan; com. Oct. 3, 1861; pro. to maj., 25th Inf., Sept. 17, 1862.  
1st Lieut. Harrison Balfour, Mattawan; com. July 13, 1862; pro. to 2d lieut., Oct. 3, 1861; res. March 5, 1862.  
2d Lieut. Hiram Reed, Mattawan; com. July 5, 1865; must. out as sergt., July 25, 1865.  
William Anderson, veteran, enl. Feb. 13, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Erastus V. Allen, disch. for disability, Nov. 15, 1863.  
Edmund R. Allen, disch. at end of service, Jan. 16, 1865.  
George E. Anderson, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Demick Butler, must. out July 25, 1865.  
William R. Berzley, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Elmore A. Byington, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Tenn., Nov. 22, 1862.  
Alverson Baker, died of disease at Hamburg Landing, Tenn., June 26, 1862.  
Chester Baker, veteran, enl. March 19, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Joshua Bishop, disch. at end of service, July 5, 1865.  
Othaniel H. Blandon, disch. for disability.  
William Boss, disch. for disability, Sept. 9, 1862.  
Jeremiah Brick, disch. by order, June 9, 1865.  
Charles A. Barker, disch. by order, July 19, 1865.  
Andrew J. Boss, disch. by order, June 25, 1865.  
Charles L. Curtis, disch. for disability, Nov. 8, 1862.  
George Clugston, disch. for disability, Nov. 10, 1862.  
Joseph A. Cook, disch. for disability, July 12, 1862.  
Cyrus J. Clark, disch. for disability, July 8, 1863.  
William Cleveland, disch. at end of service, Jan. 15, 1865.  
Danford Daggett, disch. at end of service, Jan. 18, 1865.  
Michael J. Dykeman, died of disease at Savannah, Ga., Feb. 1, 1865.  
Horace Dyer, must. out July 25, 1865.  
William W. Dean, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Albert W. Earl, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
James L. Earl, died in action at Chickamauga, Tenn., Sept. 19, 1863.  
Adelbert L. Earl, died in action at Chickamauga, Tenn., Sept. 19, 1863.  
Alexander R. Griffin, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
William T. Gilpin, disch. at end of service, Jan. 18, 1865.  
Franklin Hoppin, disch. at end of service, April 4, 1865.  
William C. Hamblin, missing in action at Chickamauga, Tenn., Sept. 19, 1863.  
Julius P. Hamlin, died of disease at Chattanooga, Tenn., Nov. 25, 1864.  
Chester Hurlburt, died of disease at De Camp Hospital, N. Y. H., March 7, 1865.  
Joel Hudson, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Frederick J. D. Hamlin, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Charles Hudson, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Milon Hudson, must. out July 25, 1865.  
William P. Johnson, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., June 7, 1862.  
Aaron H. Johnson, disch. for disability, Sept. 27, 1862.  
Joshua Jackson, disch. at end of service, March 15, 1865.  
James F. Kidder, disch. at end of service, Jan. 16, 1865.  
John Ketchum, disch. by order, July 25, 1865.  
Oliver Ketchum, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Sherburn Kidder, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Samuel J. King, died of disease at Shiloh, Tenn., April 22, 1862.  
Harvey E. Leighton, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 1, 1862.  
Aguila Lett, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Richard Monroe, disch. by order, Aug. 9, 1865.  
William McPherson, disch. for disability, Aug. 20, 1862.  
Nelson S. Marshall, disch. for disability.  
George F. Miller, disch. for disability, Sept. 8, 1862.  
Andrew Marcellus, veteran, Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Jeremiah Miller, veteran, Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Francis M. Nelson, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Aug. 5, 1862.  
Edmund R. Nichols, died of wounds at Nashville, Tenn., Nov. 10, 1863.  
Anthony Nightingale, disch. for disability.  
Alfred B. Palmer, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
Timothy Parks, disch. by order, July 18, 1865.  
Leonard Parks, must. out July 25, 1865.  
William H. H. Robinson, died of disease at New Albany, Ind., Nov. 9, 1862.  
Clark Randall, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Rufus M. Rowe, disch. at end of service, Jan. 16, 1865.  
Charles F. Spencer, disch. for disability, June 20, 1862.  
Reuben C. Smith, disch. for disability, Oct. 2, 1862.  
William R. Storey, disch. for disability, Jan. 26, 1864.  
Edwin P. Samson, disch. at Detroit, July 25, 1862.  
John L. Stanton, disch. by order, May 15, 1865.  
Samuel H. Smith, must. out July 25, 1865.  
Lorenzo D. Story, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1865; must. out July 25, 1865.  
Timothy Stover, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1865; disch. for disability, June 25, 1865.  
David H. Shelters, died in action at Bentonville, N. C., March 19, 1865.  
Edgar Story, died of wounds, Oct. 18, 1865.

Isaac Shower, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Sept. 29, 1862.  
 Noble Sumner, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Tenn., Nov. 19, 1862.  
 George A. Taphin, disch. at end of service, Jan. 30, 1865.  
 Hawley Van Osrum, disch. for disability, Dec. 15, 1862.  
 Benjamin Van Sickle, veteran, enl. Jan. 15, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.  
 Clark Vandervort, died of disease at Savannah, Ga., Jan. 18, 1865.  
 Abram R. Ward, died of disease at Town Creek, Ala., June 27, 1862.  
 Henry C. Wallace, died of disease at De Camp Hospital, N. Y. H., May 29, 1865.  
 John Walker, died in action at Stone River, Tenn., Dec. 31, 1862.  
 James White, Jr., disch. for disability.  
 Hopkins West, disch. by order, June 8, 1865.  
 Amos Wait, veteran, enl. Jan. 18, 1864; must. out July 25, 1865.

#### MEMBERS OF THE THIRTEENTH INFANTRY FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

##### *Company B.*

Lawrence Hand, must. out July 25, 1865.  
 Peter Higgins, must. out July 25, 1865.

##### *Company C.*

Thos. W. Brown, disch. for disability, May 26, 1862.  
 Edward A. Johnson, disch. for disability, May 26, 1862.

##### *Company E.*

2d Lieut. Levi Brown, Pokagon; com. March 19, 1864; veteran, Jan. 18, 1864; sergeant; corporal; res. January, 1865.  
 Wm. Morris, must. out June 8, 1865.  
 Leander Tallman, must. out June 8, 1865.  
 Wm. S. Tallman, must. out July 25, 1865.

##### *Company K.*

Wm. W. Dean, must. out July 25, 1865.

## CHAPTER X.

### SEVENTEENTH, NINETEENTH, AND TWENTY-FOURTH INFANTRY.

The Seventeenth Infantry at South Mountain and Antietam—Transfer to the West—Services in Mississippi, Kentucky, and East Tennessee—Return to the Army of Potomac—Campaign of the Wilderness—Before Petersburg—Muster Out—Members of the Seventeenth from Berrien and Van Buren Counties—The Nineteenth Infantry—"Morrison Guards"—Campaign in Kentucky and Tennessee—Desperate Fight and Surrender at Thompson's Station, Tenn.—The Georgia Campaign of 1864—March to the Sea—Avery's-boro' and Bentonville—Close of Service—Van Buren and Berrien Members of the Nineteenth—The Twenty-Fourth Regiment at Hatcher's Run—Before Petersburg—On Duty at Springfield, Ill.—Close of Service and Discharge—Berrien and Van Buren County Members of the Twenty-Fourth.

#### SEVENTEENTH INFANTRY.

THIS regiment had about forty men from Berrien County, and about half as many from Van Buren. It was raised in the summer of 1862, and left Detroit for Washington on the 27th of August. Scarcely had it arrived at the latter place when it was assigned to the Army of the Potomac, and in less than three weeks from the time of leaving Michigan these raw recruits were gallantly battling for their country at South Mountain. The victory gained there by the Union army cost the regiment the lives of twenty-seven of its officers and men, besides one hundred and fourteen who were wounded. On the 17th of September it was again hotly engaged at Antietam, where it had eighteen of its members killed and eighty-seven wounded.

After following Lee's defeated army through Northern Virginia, and camping for a while at Falmouth, the regiment crossed the Rappahannock at Fredericksburg, but did not participate in the battle of that place. It remained in the Army of the Potomac through the winter, but in the

spring was ordered to Kentucky. After a short stay in that State, it proceeded with the 9th Corps to Mississippi, and joined Gen. Grant. It was stationed at Haynes' Bluff and Milldale, and was slightly engaged before Jackson on the 10th of June.

It soon returned to Kentucky, and moved thence with Burnside's army into East Tennessee. It took part in numerous movements and counter-movements, for which the forces in East Tennessee became famous, and on the 16th of November was acting as the rear-guard of the army, which was falling back towards Knoxville. While it was crossing Turkey Creek, near Campbell's Station, the enemy attacked in force, and a sharp engagement followed. The 17th, with its brigade, steadily covered the rear of the army, having twenty-six officers and men killed and wounded during the fight.

That night the whole Union force moved into Knoxville, and from then until the retreat of the enemy, on the 4th of December, the 17th was busily engaged in the defense of that place, suffering greatly from want of rations, but gallantly performing its duty. After the defeat of the Confederates, the marching up and down the Tennessee Valley was resumed, and was kept up, with some intervals of rest, throughout the winter.

On the 20th of March, 1864, the regiment set out with the 9th Corps from Knoxville, and marched over the Cumberland Mountains to Nicholasville, Ky., whence it moved at once to Maryland.

With the same corps the 17th passed through the great campaign of 1864. It was sharply engaged in the Wilderness on the 6th of May, having forty-six men killed and wounded. At Spottsylvania, on the 12th of May, the regiment charged gallantly on the rebel works, but was surrounded by a superior force in the dense woods, and had twenty-three killed, seventy-three wounded, and ninety-three taken prisoners, out of two hundred and twenty-five engaged. So small a squad remained for duty that on the 16th of May it was detailed for engineer service, though still retaining its regimental number.

It served throughout the winter of 1864-65 either in this capacity or as provost-guard. During the Confederate attack on Fort Steadman, however (March 25, 1865), the 17th advanced as skirmishers, drove back the enemy's skirmishers, and captured sixty-five prisoners. After the capture of Petersburg and the surrender of Lee, the regiment moved north to Washington, set out for Michigan on the 4th of June, 1865, reached Detroit on the 7th, and was forthwith paid off and discharged at the latter place.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE SEVENTEENTH INFANTRY.

##### *Company B.*

1st Lieut. John Cunningham, Niles; com. June 2, 1862.  
 Sergt. William H. Marston, Niles; enl. June 2, 1862; lost a leg at Petersburg, Va., June 18, 1864; disch. for wounds, May 5, 1865.  
 Corp. Samuel H. Case, Buchanan; must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Corp. Allen B. Myers, Sodus; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; killed in battle at Spottsylvania, Va., May 12, 1864.  
 Alonzo G. Bigelow, disch. for disability, Sept. 13, 1862.  
 Albert Bixby, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 John Beauwain, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 George W. Chase, disch. for disability, Feb. 9, 1863.  
 Jonathan Day, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
 Rock Edwards, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Jesse Foster, disch. for disability, March 3, 1863.  
 Daniel A. Gates, disch. for disability, Feb. 26, 1863.



John Hazlett, disch. for wounds, Sept. 14, 1862.  
 Henry Hinman, died of disease in Tennessee, Jan. 21, 1863.  
 Nutter M. Halsted, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 John R. Haynes, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 George Isham, died in action at Campbell's Station, Tenn., Nov. 16, 1862.  
 Lewis Jones, accidentally killed at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Henry Jackson, died in action at Campbell's Station, Nov. 16, 1862.  
 Sylvanus McManus, disch. for disability, Dec. 3, 1862.  
 Ferdinand Metzger, disch. for disability, Oct. 3, 1864.  
 Stephen Mead, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Benjamin Norris, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Columbus Paddock, disch. for disability, Feb. 6, 1863.  
 Edward F. Rice, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Chester J. Walser, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Lorenzo D. White, disch. for disability, Sept. 17, 1863.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE 19TH

*Company B.*

Musician John Slover, Waverly; enl. July 22, 1862; must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Wagoner Daniel A. Gates, Lake; enl. Aug. 4, 1862; disch. for disability, Feb. 1863.

*Company C.*

Stephen B. Hodsill, disch. Jan. 4, 1864.

*Company D.*

2d Lieut. George Galligan, Lawrence; com. June 17, 1862; killed in action at South Mountain, Md., Sept. 14, 1862.  
 Sergt. Herrick Hodges, Lawrence; enl. May 29, 1862; disch. for disability, June 1, 1863.  
 Corp. Orrin W. Hodges, Lawrence; enl. May 29, 1862; disch. for disability, April 14, 1863.  
 Wagoner Uriah Woods, Lawrence; enl. May 29, 1862; disch. by order, April 28, 1865.  
 Frederick Brotherton, died of disease at Washington, D. C., Sept. 12, 1862.  
 Harry Bailey, died of disease at Newport News, Va., March 8, 1863.  
 William Coombs, disch. for disability, Sept. 12, 1862.  
 John T. Dunning, missing in action, April 30, 1862.  
 John S. Dunning, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Norman Dexter, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 Hezekiah Dills, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 James Grey, died of disease at Camp Nelson, Ky., Nov. 11, 1863.  
 Ross A. Griffin, disch. for disability, Nov. 5, 1862.  
 Floyd Lindley, disch. for disability, Jan. 5, 1864.  
 Patrick McGann, disch. by order.  
 John Nichols, must. out June 3, 1865.  
 George Pritchard, disch. Nov. 27, 1863.  
 John Robb, trans. to V. R. C., April 10, 1864.  
 Philip J. Smith, disch. for disability, Dec. 30, 1862.

## NINETEENTH INFANTRY.

The 19th Regiment of Michigan Infantry was raised from the counties of Branch, St. Joseph, Kalamazoo, Cass, Berrien, Van Buren, and Allegan, in the summer of 1862, under the President's call of July 2d, for three hundred thousand men. Its rendezvous for recruiting and organization was at Dowagiac, Cass Co. Company I, of this regiment, was from St. Joseph, Royalton, and vicinity, and was, when first raised, known as the Morrison Guards. There were also a number of the soldiers from Berrien County in other companies. Company G was principally from Van Buren County.

The 19th broke camp at the rendezvous on the 14th of September, 1862, proceeded to Cincinnati, Ohio, thence to Nicholasville, Ky., and later, towards the close of the year, to Danville, Ky. It had been assigned to duty with the 4th Brigade of the 1st Division of the Army of Kentucky, which, on the formation of the Department and Army of the Cumberland, was transferred to that army as a "reserve corps." As a part of that corps the regiment moved from Danville early in February, 1863, and reached Nashville on the 7th, proceeding thence to Franklin, Tenn.

On the 4th of March, 1863, the brigade, consisting of the 19th Michigan, the 33d and 85th Indiana, and the 22d Wisconsin Regiments, numbering fifteen hundred and eighty-seven men, strengthened by two hundred men

of the 124th Ohio, with detachments of three regiments of cavalry, about six hundred strong, and a full battery of artillery, all under command of Col. Coburn, moved out from Franklin on a reconnaissance in force. After a march of about four miles the enemy's outposts were encountered, but they retired before the Union skirmishers, and the brigade bivouacked there for the night.

Resuming the march on the following day, the Union column found the enemy in force and strongly posted at Thompson's Station, nine miles from Franklin. At the point where the railroad crosses the turnpike the enemy opened fire on the forces of Col. Coburn, who immediately formed his men, and ordered a section of the battery to occupy a hill on the left of the road, sending the 19th Michigan and 22d Wisconsin to support it. The 33d and 85th Indiana, with the other guns of the battery, took position on a hill at the right. The enemy had two batteries posted on a range of hills, three-fourths of a mile in front and south of the position of the Union troops. The 33d and 85th Indiana made a demonstration on the left of the enemy, to draw him out or charge his batteries, as circumstances might dictate. This movement was made under a most galling fire from the enemy's batteries, and, when the position was reached, two entire brigades of dismounted rebel cavalry were disclosed strongly posted behind stone walls and other defenses.

As it was found impossible to advance farther under the severe and incessant fire, the regiments were ordered to return to their former position on the hill, supported by a squadron of cavalry; but for some unexplained reason the cavalry failed to occupy the supporting position, as intended. No sooner had the two regiments commenced to fall back than they were pursued by two rebel regiments, firing rapid volleys into the retiring Union force, which was at the same time under fire from the enemy's batteries. But as soon as they reached the hill the Indiana regiments turned upon their rebel pursuers and drove them back at double-quick, killing Col. Earle, of Arkansas. The enemy rallied and charged desperately, and was handsomely repulsed; but it soon became evident that the command of Col. Coburn had here encountered the entire cavalry force of Bragg's army, consisting of six brigades, commanded respectively by Gens. Forrest, Wheeler, French, Armstrong, Jackson, and Martin, all under the command of Gen. Van Dorn.

On the left the enemy, under Gen. Forrest, advanced on the position occupied by the 19th Michigan and its companion regiment, the 22d Wisconsin. At the time the attack was made the section of artillery posted with these regiments hurriedly left its position, and at the same time three companies of the Wisconsin regiment abandoned the field without orders, moving off by the left flank, and joining the retreating Union cavalry and artillery. The 19th and the remainder of the 22d Wisconsin, however, bravely poured in their fire, and held the assailants at bay fully twenty minutes. Forrest, checked in his advance, made a circuit with his whole force beyond the ground occupied by Col. Coburn to the east, with the intention of turning his left flank. The 19th and 22d were then moved to the west side of the turnpike, leaving the 33d and 85th Indiana to protect the southern acclivity of the hill. The

four regiments had scarcely formed in line behind the crest when Armstrong's rebel brigade charged from the east and the Texans from the south. The fighting now became terrific. Three times the enemy charged gallantly up the hill, and thrice was he forced back with severe loss. In one of these charges the colors of the 4th Mississippi were captured by the 19th Michigan.

The fighting became desperate. The enemy, having gained possession of the hill on the east of the road, was sweeping the Northern ranks with canister, and, bravely as the Union troops fought, it soon became evident that the struggle was hopeless. Their ammunition was nearly exhausted, and Forrest, who had already cut them off from Franklin, was advancing on their rear. Col. Coburn faced his command to the north to repel this new danger, and thus Forrest was held in check until the Union men had expended their last round of ammunition. Then the brave band fixed bayonets, determined to charge through the enemy's lines and escape; but just then it was discovered that still another line lay in reserve, and still another battery opened on them from an unexpected quarter. Escape was now hopeless, and to avoid a further and useless loss of life the command surrendered. Col. Gilbert had had his horse shot under him in the early part of the fight, and throughout all the fierce engagement had borne himself most gallantly. When he offered his sword to the Confederate commander the latter declined to receive it, with the remark that "so brave an officer, commanding so gallant a regiment, deserves to retain his arms."

A part of the 19th had escaped capture at Thompson's Station. This small body, with those who had been left in camp at Franklin, were sent to Brentwood, organized with the remaining fragments of the brigade, and placed under command of an officer of another regiment. This force was surrendered to the rebel general Forrest on the 25th of March, 1863, without the firing of a gun. The enlisted men were soon paroled and sent North; the commissioned officers were exchanged on the 25th of May following.

The 19th was reorganized at Camp Chase, Ohio, and on the 8th of June, 1863, left Columbus to engage once more in service at the front. It reached Nashville on the 11th, and from that time was employed in ordinary camp and picket duty until July, when it formed a part of Rosecrans' column, advancing on Tullahoma. The regiment was ordered back to Murfreesboro' on the 23d of July, to do garrison duty in the fortifications at that point and along Stone River, where Company D was captured on the 5th of October by a rebel cavalry force, under Gen. Wheeler. After having been plundered, the men were released on parole.

About the last of October the 19th was ordered to McMinnville, Tenn., where it remained engaged in the construction of fortifications and similar duty until the 21st of April, 1864, when it was ordered to join its division, and march with the strong columns of Sherman into Georgia. It reached Lookout Valley on the 30th, and moved forward with the army on the 3d of May, being then in the 1st Brigade, 4th Division of the 20th Army Corps. Moving by way of Buzzard Roost and Snake Creek Gap to Resaca, it was, with its brigade, desperately engaged in the battle at that place on the 15th, on which occasion it gallantly

charged and captured a battery of the enemy, afterwards holding the position against all efforts to retake it. It was in that charge that Col. Gilbert received the wound from which he died at Chattanooga on the 24th of May. The total loss of the 19th in killed and wounded was eighty-one.

The regiment was also engaged at Cassville, Ga., on the 19th of May, at New Hope Church on the 25th, at Golgotha on the 15th of June, and at Culp's Farm on the 22d of June; having in these engagements eighty-three officers and men killed and wounded. Joining in the pursuit of the enemy after his evacuation of the position and works at Kenesaw Mountain, the 19th, then under command of Maj. John J. Baker, crossed the Chattahoochee and took part in the battle of Peach-Tree Creek, on the 20th of July, in which its loss was thirty-nine killed, among the latter being its commander, Maj. Baker. During the remainder of the siege of Atlanta the regiment was constantly on duty, much of the time under artillery fire, its loss during that time being eight killed and wounded.

In the early days of November, 1864, the 19th was quartered in the city of Atlanta, and on the 15th of that month moved with its brigade (the 2d of the 3d Division, 20th Corps) on the storied march to Savannah, taking an active part in the siege of that city, until its evacuation, on the 21st of December. It remained near Savannah until Jan. 1, 1865, when, with the companion regiments of its command, it moved across the Savannah River into South Carolina. It crossed the Pedee River at Cheraw on the 2d of February; arrived at Fayetteville, March 11th; destroyed the arsenal and other public buildings at that place, and moved thence towards Raleigh. On the 16th the enemy was found in heavy force at Averysboro'. Here the 2d Brigade was ordered to assault the works, and carried them with great gallantry, capturing the guns and a large number of prisoners, the loss of the 19th being nineteen in killed and wounded. During the conflict of Bentonville, on the 19th of March, the regiment stood in line of battle, but was not ordered to engage.

From Bentonville the regiment moved to Goldsboro', arriving there on the 24th of March, and then marched to Raleigh. Here it remained until the war was virtually closed by the surrender of Johnston's army. Then, with its corps, it faced northward, and marched through Virginia to Alexandria, where it arrived on the 18th of May. Six days later it marched with the bronzed and battered veterans of Sherman's army, on the 24th of May, through the streets of the national capital. From that time it remained in camp near Washington till June 10th, when it was mustered out of the service and ordered to Michigan. Covered with honor, the men of the 19th returned to Jackson, and were there paid off and discharged, on or about the 15th of June, 1865.

#### MEMBERS OF THE NINETEENTH INFANTRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

##### *Company A.*

2d Lieut. Reuben B. Larzelere, Hamilton; com. Aug. 9, 1862; res. Aug. 7, 1863.

Daniel W. Beaulieu, must. out June 10, 1865.

Frank Frost, must. out June 10, 1865.

George Lee, must. out June 10, 1865.

Charles E. Stever, died in action at Thompson Station, Tenn., March 5, 1863.

##### *Company F.*

Benjamin Grosdent, must. out May 29, 1865.

*Company G.*

Capt. Chas. W. Bigelow, South Haven; com. July 28, 1862; died May 29, 1864, of wounds received at Dallas, Ga.  
 1st Lieut. John A. Stafford, Decatur; com. Jan. 6, 1863; 2d Lieut. July 28, 1862; res. July 27, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. John Wilson, South Haven; com. Dec. 17, 1864; sergt. July 14, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. A. J. McLachlin, Bangor; com. Jan. 6, 1863; sergt. July 16, 1862; res. May 25, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. A. J. Nymman, Bangor; com. Sept. 6, 1864; sergt. Aug. 1, 1862; res. April 24, 1865.  
 Sergt. Augustus Bailey, South Haven; enl. July 16, 1862; died of disease at Marfreesboro', Sept. 6, 1863.  
 Sergt. Orlando Van Hise, Decatur; enl. July 31, 1862; pro. into U. S. C. T., Dec. 3, 1864.  
 Sergt. John Graham, South Haven; enl. July 31, 1862; pro. to 2d lieut.; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Corp. Newton Chapman, Decatur; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; must. out June 5, 1865.  
 Corp. Isaac K. Evans, Keeler; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; disch. for disability, April 19, 1863.  
 Corp. Albert J. Olds, Hartford; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Corp. John Rea, Bangor; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; absent, wounded; not must. out with company.  
 Musician Phineas Watson, Geneva; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Musician Solomon B. Stone, Decatur; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Wagoner Wm. H. Hubbard, South Haven; enl. July 14, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 William Breed, died of disease at Richmond, Va., March 29, 1863.  
 John Beechner, died of disease at Lynchburg, Va., March 22, 1863.  
 Charles H. Brown, died of disease at Nicholasville, Ky., Dec. 12, 1862.  
 Clark D. Brainard, died of disease at Nicholasville, Ky., Dec. 25, 1862.  
 Erastus P. Brown, disch. for disability, Oct. 24, 1863.  
 Chester Clark, disch. for disability, Feb. 1863.  
 William M. Chambers, disch. for disability, June 8, 1863.  
 Thomas W. Carroll, died of disease at Covington, Ky., Nov. 22, 1862.  
 John A. Dunham, died of wounds at Resaca, Ga., May 17, 1864.  
 Silas De Long, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Henry Delongay, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Cyrus Dopp, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Selah J. Evans, disch. for disability, June 17, 1863.  
 Moses E. F. Eaton, disch. for disability, June 22, 1863.  
 Charles Freeman, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Jonathan W. Foster, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Elias E. Gilpen, died in action at Aversyboro', N. C., March 16, 1865.  
 George Gowers, died of disease at Annapolis, Md., April 5, 1863.  
 Gershon Hineckley, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., March 29, 1863.  
 James Heald, disch. for disability, Jan. 20, 1863.  
 James Hughes, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Philip Hughes, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Patrick Hand, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Thomas Horton, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Thomas W. Harvey, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Charles W. Jones, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 John W. Kingston, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Frederick Kleckner, must. out June 27, 1865.  
 Osmer Lester, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Jacob H. Lewis, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Manley B. McNitt, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Aaron Missinger.  
 Olin O. Olds, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Almon Olds, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Ephraim R. Page, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 John Page, died of wounds at Nashville, Tenn., June 14, 1864.  
 Almon J. Pierce, disch. for disability, Jan. 20, 1863.  
 Henry D. Root, disch. for disability, Nov. 18, 1862.  
 Uriah Reams, disch. for disability, July 19, 1863.  
 Samuel Sweet, disch. for disability, April 23, 1863.  
 Aaron Sweet, disch. for disability, April 25, 1863.  
 William S. Stone, disch. for disability, Nov. 14, 1862.  
 Benjamin C. Sayles, died of disease at McMinnville, Tenn.  
 John W. Shearer, must. out July 19, 1865.  
 Jerome Stone, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Lyman S. Sweet, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Andrew S. Shuff, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Sears J. Shepard, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Charles D. Smith, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Azariah D. Surveysant, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 George W. Tuttle, accidentally killed at Porter, Mich., June 2, 1863.  
 Gilmore Todd, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 John W. Vincent, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Jared Van Horn, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., March 12, 1863.  
 Henry White, must. out June 10, 1865.

*Company H.*

William Graham, died of wounds at Richmond, Va., March, 1863.

*Company I.*

Oliver Boyd, Norman Davis.  
 George M. Kleet, died of wounds at Chattanooga, Tenn., Aug. 8, 1864.

## BERRIEN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE NINETEENTH INFANTRY.

*Filled out Staff.*

Lieut.-Col. David Bacon, Niles; com. Aug. 8, 1862; wounded in action at Baton Rouge; res. April 3, 1863.  
 Lieut.-Col. Eli A. Griffin, Niles; com. April 20, 1864; maj., Oct. 22, 1863; capt., 6th Inf., Aug. 19, 1861; died in action at Golgotha, Ga., June 15, 1864.  
 Adj't. Henry M. Brown, St. Joseph; com. May 1, 1863; com. 1st lieut., Co. I; res. Oct. 4, 1864.  
 Q.M. Warren Chapman, St. Joseph; com. Aug. 2, 1862; res. Nov. 17, 1862.

*Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Q.M. Sergt. Lysander J. Brown, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; died May 20, 1863.  
 Principal Musician Charles E. Bort, Royalton; trans. to Co. I.

*Company A.*

1st Lieut. Herbert M. Reynolds, Niles; enl. May 25, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut., July 27, 1863; com. sergt.; disch. for disability, July 20, 1864; 2d lieut.  
 Lyman Carney, died in action at Thompson's Station, Tenn., March 5, 1863.  
 Lee Chapman, disch. for disability, Aug. 27, 1863.  
 Edward C. Dix, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 M. D. L. Peters, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Milford Tice, died in action at Thompson's Station, March 4, 1863.

*Company B.*

George M. Kirk, died in action at Frederick, Md.

*Company C.*

Albert Newton, trans. to 10th Inf.; must. out July 19, 1865.  
 Emanuel Rinehard, trans. to 10th Inf.; must. out July 19, 1865.

*Company D.*

Jeremiah Van Horn, must. out Sept. 8, 1865.

*Company G.*

William L. Black, trans. to 10th Inf.; must. out July 19, 1865.  
 Francis Cooper, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 William H. Cook, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Orange Hutchins, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 William Moore, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Aaron Messenger, died March 5, 1863, in Columbia, Tenn., of wounds.  
 Isaac A. Williams, died in rebel prison at Salisbury, N. C., Jan. 27, 1865.  
 Winfield Wilson, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 Franklin E. Wilson, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 Albert H. Wheeler, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 Eli Wittfery, must. out June 4, 1865.

*Company I.*

Capt. Richard Lysaght, St. Joseph; com. July 25, 1862; res. June 6, 1863.  
 Capt. Charles H. Calmer, St. Joseph; com. May 1, 1863; pro. to 2d lieut., July 26, 1862; died in action at Resaca, Ga., May 15, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. Henry M. Brown, St. Joseph; com. Aug. 11, 1862; app. adj't., May 1, 1863.  
 Sergt. Aaron F. Brewer, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; pro. to 2d lieut.  
 Sergt. Marvin Beaman, Royalton; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; must. out July 10, 1865.  
 Sergt. George W. Livingston, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 21, 1862; died July 1, 1864, of wounds received at Golgotha, Ga., June 15, 1864.  
 Sergt. Charles A. Cronkrite, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; disch. for disability, March 11, 1865.  
 Sergt. George Brown, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; disch. for disability, April 23, 1863.  
 Corp. D. H. Stevenson, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; disch. March 6, 1863.  
 Corp. George W. Riley, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; must. out June 8, 1865.  
 Corp. Asher Lane, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; disch. for disability, June 17, 1863.  
 Corp. Frederick Clay, Royalton; enl. Aug. 13, 1862; died in action at Golgotha, Ga., June 15, 1864.  
 Corp. Thomas Riley, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Corp. George F. Stewart, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 22, 1862; pro. to sergt.; 1st lieut., Co. F, March 29, 1865.  
 Musician Charles E. Bort, Royalton; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Wagoner John Wilson, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; must. out June 15, 1865.  
 Silas W. Allen, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., April 11, 1863.  
 William Bundy, died of disease at Danville, Ky., Jan. 13, 1863.  
 James M. Boswell, disch. for disability, April 21, 1863.  
 Henry L. Beaman, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 John Bradley, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Charles Chambeck, died of disease at Danville, Ky., Jan. 8, 1863.  
 Edward Cronan, disch. for disability, June 11, 1863.  
 Daniel Calmer, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Joseph Clamfoot, must. out May 30, 1865.



Daniel E. Dopp, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Peter T. Dopp, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Oscar Dee, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 William A. Deppes, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 William G. Ensley, must. out July 13, 1865.  
 John H. Fikes, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Benj. Fikes, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Benjamin Green, disch. for disability, May 13, 1863.  
 Milo Hyde, must. out May 26, 1865.  
 Alexander Hunter, died of disease at Annapolis, Md., June 2, 1863.  
 George Koof, died of disease in Indiana, Feb. 14, 1865.  
 William Keley, died in action at Thompson's Station, March 5, 1863.  
 Charles McCain, died in rebel prison, Richmond, Va., March 22, 1863.  
 William Morelock, died of wounds at Big Shanty, Ga., June 24, 1864.  
 Theodore Morelock, trans. to 10th Inf.; must. out July 19, 1865.  
 Peter Mooth, trans. to 10th Inf.; must. out July 19, 1865.  
 Horace M. Pitcher, died while a prisoner, March 20, 1863.  
 Joseph Penland, died while at work on fortifications, Aug. 11, 1864.  
 Charles J. Peterson, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Sept. 17, 1863.  
 Jerry Robicho, disch. for disability, June 1, 1863.  
 Martin V. Sherman, disch. for disability, June 17, 1863.  
 Timothy H. Spelman, died of disease at Annapolis, Md., April 11, 1863.  
 James Snyder, died at Knoxville, Tenn., April 20, 1864.  
 George Thompson, disch. for disability, April 23, 1863.  
 William Wiese, disch. for disability, April 11, 1863.  
 Thomas Waterman, disch. for disability, July 18, 1863.  
 William W. Webster, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Sept. 17, 1863.

#### TWENTY FOURTH INFANTRY.

In the earlier parts of its career there were no members of the regiment from Van Buren or Berrien Counties. In the summer of 1864, however, its commander, Col. Henry A. Morrow, now of the regular army, found that his regiment was below the minimum number, and was likely to be consolidated with some other organization. To avoid this he obtained, by the aid of Edgar A. Kimmel, of Niles, nearly fifty recruits, who joined the regiment before Petersburg in September and October, 1864, bringing it up to the required number and saving its organization. Mr. Kimmel was commissioned as first lieutenant. Afterwards more recruits joined the regiment from Berrien County, making the whole number of members from that county near one hundred.

The Berrien County men first mentioned, as well as those who followed, were distributed among the various companies. The first fight of the regiment, after the arrival of the Berrien County squad, was at Hatcher's Run, on the 27th of October, 1864. It was not in the thickest of the fight. The division to which it belonged—the 3d in the 5th Corps—lost its way in the dense forest, and about dark ran almost against a rebel breastwork. Falling back a trifle, the men bivouacked within musket-range of the foe. Soon after, a rebel division, which was also at a loss as to its location, marched in behind the Union division. In the confusion which ensued some of the men of the latter were captured, but the division succeeded in taking a much larger number from the enemy.

After its return to Petersburg the regiment was engaged on trench and picket duty until the 5th of December, when it moved with its corps and other forces against the Weldon Railroad, which was destroyed for about twenty miles. There was no general engagement, but continuous fighting for several days.

The usual siege duties before Petersburg occupied the time of the regiment until the 5th of February, 1865, when it moved with the army to Hatcher's Run, and on the 6th and 7th it was hotly engaged with the enemy at Dabney's Mills. Col. Morrow was shot through the body, and one other officer and twenty men were killed and wounded.

On the 11th of February, the 24th left Petersburg and proceeded to Springfield, Ill., where it was on duty at the draft rendezvous until the end of the war, being principally occupied in guarding conscripts and taking them to the front. When the body of President Lincoln was brought home for interment, the 24th acted as the escort at his funeral. On the 19th of June, 1865, the regiment left Springfield for Detroit, and on the 3d of the same month was mustered out of service at the latter place, being soon after paid off and disbanded.

#### MEMBERS OF THE TWENTY-FOURTH INFANTRY FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Hosp. Steward Owen Churchill, Niles; enl. Aug. 24, 1864; must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company A.*

Richard Burr, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Selah House, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Alex. P. Manamy, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Geo. F. Niles, must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company B.*

Calvin W. Aiken, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Charles Brunko, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Wm. H. Emmons, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Burkhardt Freund, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Luther Hennigway, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Wm. Sullivan, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Lorenzo Smith, must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company C.*

James Bourdon, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 James Breen, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Wm. Burlingame, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Arra Cook, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Patrick English, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 John R. Field, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Thos. Genderson, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Jerome Head, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 John Hutchinson, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 John J. Hart, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Davis L. Hurlburt, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Alexander Lamond, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Walter S. Mizner, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Andrew E. Mitchell, died of disease in Illinois, April 22, 1865.  
 James M. Noel, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 James St. John, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Oscar St. John, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 James L. Sharp, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Theodore Swain, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 James S. Stafford, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Gideon B. Stiles, died of disease at Niles, Nov. 5, 1864.  
 Amos A. Thompson, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Frank Verbaum, must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company D.*

Charles A. Champion, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Henry Varsop, must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company E.*

Henry Aldridge, died of wounds at Baltimore, Feb. 22, 1865.  
 Henry Bradley, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Frederick H. Eisenhardt, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Dayton Fuller, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 James S. Gender, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 John H. Hawkins, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Ephraim P. Stanton, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 John Talbot, must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company F.*

Thomas W. Rutledge, Galien; must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company G.*

2d Lieut. Andrew J. Bucklin, Niles; com. Sept. 27, 1864; resigned May 3, 1865.  
 Wm. B. Flanagan, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Harvey B. Hall, must. out June 30, 1865.

##### *Company H.*

Frank Higbee, must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Frederick W. Holmes, must. out June 30, 1865.

*Company I.*

Thos. Evans, must. out June 30, 1865.  
James H. Nostrand, must. out June 30, 1865.  
John O'Connor, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Jackson Robertson, must. out June 30, 1865.

*Company K.*

1st Lieut. Edgar A. Kimmel, Niles; com. Sept. 27, 1864; must. out June 30, 1865.  
Wm. H. Ames, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Wm. Breen, must. out June 30, 1865.  
David Boyd, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Wm. L. Condit, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Franklin Calbretzer, died of disease in Illinois, April 23, 1865.  
Henry Griffith, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Henry L. Morse, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Anson Miller, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Charles Pike, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Henry Smith, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Wm. W. Serviss, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Silas J. Tomlinson, died of disease at Alexandria, Dec. 5, 1864.

VAN BUREN SOLDIERS IN THE TWENTY-FOURTH INFANTRY.

Anthony Hawkins, Co. B; must. out June 30, 1865.  
Peter A. Dean, Co. H; must. out June 30, 1865.  
Isaac F. Parrish, Co. K; must. out June 30, 1865.  
Elijah J. Rhinehart, Co. K; must. out June 30, 1865.  
Richard A. Ward, Co. K; must. out June 30, 1865.

CHAPTER XI.

TWENTY-FIFTH AND TWENTY-SIXTH INFANTRY.

Berrien Companies in the Twenty-Fifth Infantry—Departure for Kentucky and Winter Quarters at Bowling Green—Fight at Tibbs' Bend, Ky.—The "Green River Boys"—Siege of Knoxville—The Atlanta Campaign—Pursuit of Gen. Hood—Transfer to North Carolina—Muster Out of Service—Berrien and Van Buren Soldiers in the Twenty-Fifth—Organization of the Twenty-Sixth Infantry—Service at Suffolk, Va., and on the Peninsula—Transfer to New York Harbor—Return to Army of the Potomac—Mine Run, the Wilderness Campaign, and Petersburg—Appomattox—Muster Out—Soldiers from Berrien County in the Twenty-Sixth.

TWENTY-FIFTH INFANTRY.

DURING the general uprising of the people which followed McClellan's disasters on the Virginia peninsula, in the summer of 1862, six regiments of infantry were raised from the several Congressional districts of the State. Upon the organization of these, there was still found a surplus of companies, raised by the patriotic young men of Michigan, and the 25th Infantry was constituted from that surplus. Three of its companies were from Berrien County,—Company C, from Berrien Springs and vicinity; Company F, from Niles and vicinity; and Company K, from Buchanan and vicinity.

The regiment rendezvoused at Kalamazoo, and on the 29th of September left that place for Louisville, Ky. It moved thence to Munfordsville, Ky., on the 8th of December, 1862, where it remained until the 8th of January, 1863. It then proceeded to Bowling Green, Ky., and remained there during the rest of the winter. On the 20th of March, 1863, the regiment moved to Lebanon, Ky., and took part, under Gen. Manson, in the pursuit of the rebels under Gen. Pegram. It then went to Louisville, where it was employed as provost-guard.

On the 10th of June five companies (including Companies F and K of Berrien County), under Col. O. H. Moore, the commander of the regiment, were ordered to Green River. They took post at Tibbs' Bend, near Co-

lumbia, a place where that river makes a circuit, inclosing a peninsula united by a narrow neck to the main land. Many details had been made from the five companies of the garrison, so that there were only about two hundred men of the 25th present for duty. There were also about twenty bridge-builders detailed from various other regiments. There was no artillery.

On the 2d of July, Col. Moore learned that the celebrated partisan, Gen. John H. Morgan, was approaching with a division of rebel horsemen. A breastwork was immediately built across the neck before mentioned, and then the little band quietly awaited the result.

About three o'clock in the morning of the 4th of July, 1863, just as the first flush of dawn was beginning to tinge the sky, the long column of the enemy appeared and formed a line of battle in front of the breastwork. The Confederates opened on the Unionists with two guns, doubtless for the purpose of letting them know that the former had artillery, for immediately afterwards several horsemen rode up with a flag of truce. Capt. Spencer S. Lansing, of Company F (now city marshal of Niles), who was in command at the front, received the bearers, and sent back to Col. Moore the written communication which they presented. Ere long the colonel, who was an officer of the regular army, came riding up.

"Ah, captain!" said he to Lansing, "I see you have some visitors this morning."

"Yes," replied the captain; "allow me to introduce Maj. Elliott, of Gen. Morgan's command."

The major was the bearer of dispatches, but Col. Basil Duke, Morgan's right-hand man, was also one of the party. Col. Moore courteously saluted his enemies, and at once began chatting with them on indifferent subjects, without mentioning the communication from Morgan. Presently, however, Col. Duke said to Elliott,—

"This won't do; we are losing time. Ascertain immediately what answer we are to take back to Gen. Morgan."

"Oh, excuse me, gentlemen," said Col. Moore; "I believe I did receive a communication from Gen. Morgan; let us see what it says."

He took the paper from his pocket, and read nearly as follows:

"TO THE COMMANDER OF THE UNITED STATES FORCES AT TIBBS' BEND:

"I, John H. Morgan, major-general in the army of the Confederate States, hereby demand the immediate and unconditional surrender of the troops and post under your orders.

"JOHN H. MORGAN, Maj.-Gen. C. S. A."

"Well, major," said Col. Moore, smiling as he folded up the paper, and speaking as pleasantly as if he were conversing with a friend at the breakfast-table, "please present my best compliments to Gen. Morgan, and say to him for me that this is the Fourth day of July,—a day held sacred in the feelings of every American. If it were any other time I might possibly take his demand into consideration; but on this day be kind enough to say to him, with my compliments, that I'll see him damned first."

"Let us be off," said Duke, sharply, and the next moment the party of Confederates was galloping swiftly back towards Morgan's line.

Col. Moore then ordered Capt. Lansing to hold the right of the position with Company F, while he himself took charge of the left and centre. The colonel ordered all his men to lie down behind the breastworks, and then, standing erect in their rear, spoke to them in a low but clear voice:

"Now, men, this is the Fourth of July, and we must die right here in our tracks before we let those fellows whip us. You must all lie perfectly quiet until I order you to rise and fire. There are two pieces of artillery directly in front of you, which you can't see now, but which you will see when you rise up, and there are thirty or forty rebel officers around them. I want every man of you, when the command is given, to fire at that artillery and those officers. Do you all hear me?"

"Yes, yes," replied the men.

"Attention, battalion! stand up! ready! aim! fire!"

With the last word nearly two hundred rifles cracked at once, all aimed at the group around the rebel guns. It was afterwards learned that twenty-three Confederate officers were killed and wounded by that discharge. This disastrous opening greatly depressed the spirits of the rebels, and contributed largely to their defeat.

Gen. Morgan then sent a large force of dismounted men to flank the right of the Union line. They got as far as a gorge cut out by the rains in the bank of the river near the breastwork, but they could get no farther. The men of Company F, who were mostly excellent marksmen, cut them down by the score, and at length they gave up the attempt. Then the whole Confederate force, dismounted, made a grand charge on the breastwork, but the rifles of the men of Michigan blazed with pitiless aim and incessant fury; the killed and wounded among the assailants fell at every step, and at length this effort was also abandoned.

During a lull in the combat, Col. Moore rode back for a few moments to bring up his little reserve, and when he returned he found that, through some mistake, all of his first line except Company F had retired to the second line of defense, which was a slashing, stretching across the peninsula. Company F was then ordered back to the second line, and slowly retired, fighting as they went, under the direction of Capt. Lansing. The latter especially noticed Lieut. Tennant, since deceased, setting the example of stubborn resistance, retreating step by step, and firing in rapid succession at the enemy from the revolver which he held in either hand.

Col. Moore, having arranged his little command at his second line, firmly awaited the advance of the enemy. The Confederates came on, and again and again essayed to carry the position, but in vain. Notwithstanding their overwhelming numbers, they could not make head against the rifles of the Michigan boys, and at length gave up the attempt in despair after the fight had lasted four or five hours.

After there had been a long silence on the part of the assailants, Col. Moore ordered Capt. Lansing to make a reconnaissance. He advanced cautiously with a small detachment, and at length reached the point used by Morgan as a hospital. There he found some of the wounded rebels, who, mostly severely injured, were in charge of a Confederate surgeon, who gave his word that Morgan had left, and

handed Capt. Lansing a written message to Col. Moore from Gen. Morgan, requesting permission to bury his dead. This was granted, and the task was no slight one, for the Michigan rifles had killed and wounded more men than there were in the Union ranks, or nearly two hundred and fifty. It is doubtful if any other conflict of the war showed as severe a loss inflicted by so few defenders. One colonel (Chenault), two majors, five captains, and six lieutenants were killed outright. The Union loss was about eight killed and twenty wounded.

Morgan moved forward from Tibbs' Bend, and captured, without difficulty, two or three other bodies of troops, each much larger than the one which defended that post. In fact, the Confederate chieftain, who seems to have had a spice of humor in his composition, was so much impressed with the extraordinary character of the defense that he sent back a communication to Col. Moore, brevetting him a brigadier-general in the United States army.

The Legislature of Kentucky unanimously passed a resolution thanking Col. Moore and his men for their gallant defense, and Gen. Hartsuff, the commander of the department, ordered that a flag should be erected on the field of battle, which should fly as long as there was a tatter left, in commemoration of Michigan valor. The Fourth of July, 1863, was distinguished as the day of the surrender of Vicksburg, and also as witnessing the retirement of the beaten foe from the field of Gettysburg; but the battle of Green River, though less important, was certainly no less honorable to those engaged. Its fame spread throughout the Army of the Cumberland, and thenceforth the 25th Michigan Infantry was almost universally known by the name of the "Green River Boys."

The five companies which had remained at Louisville joined the rest of the regiment at Lebanon on the 19th of August, and on the same day the regiment began its march with the 23d Corps, being in the 1st Brigade, 2d Division, over the Cumberland Mountains into East Tennessee. After various movements back and forth through the valley of the Tennessee, it was stationed at Kingston, a few miles from Knoxville, on the 9th of November, to aid in defending the latter town, then threatened by the enemy. The 25th remained at Kingston during the celebrated siege of Knoxville, and on the 26th of November aided in repulsing a sharp attack by the Confederates under Gens. Wheeler and Armstrong.

Leaving Kingston on the 4th of December, it was occupied during the winter of 1863-64 in numerous tedious marches up and down the valley of the Tennessee, being stationed for brief periods at Mossy Creek, Knoxville and Morristown, and other places, again camping at Mossy Creek on the 12th of March, 1864. It remained there until the 26th of April, preparing for the summer campaign, and then moved into Georgia, where it joined Gen. Sherman's army in its advance on Atlanta.

At Rocky-Face Ridge the 25th was ordered forward against the almost impregnable position. It advanced with great gallantry, and two companies, extended in skirmish-line, dashed forward, drove the rebels from their rifle-pits, and occupied them themselves. The troops on both flanks of the 25th, however, fell back, and the regiment was ordered



to lie down. Capt. Lansing, finding himself the ranking officer of the force thus circumstanced, moved it back without loss to the shelter of the woods. The division to which it belonged then climbed a portion of the ridge, and reinforced Gen. Harker. The next day Gen. Harker's division carried the main position of the enemy by assault, losing six hundred men killed, among whom was its gallant commander.

Skirmishing all the way, the regiment advanced with the army to Resaca. There Gen. Judah ordered the brigade to which it belonged to charge one of the enemy's forts with the bayonet. The brigade did so, but the 25th was the only regiment which reached the foot of the intrenchments, having many of its men killed and wounded on the way. Alone, and decimated every moment by the fire of the well-protected foe, it could go no farther, and was obliged to seek shelter in the bed of a creek, where the men remained, half under water, until night, when they returned to their comrades.

At Lost Mountain the enemy, as usual, had the choice of position, and was heavily intrenched. After his skirmishers had been driven back to his main line, a Union battery, which was supported by Gen. Cooper's brigade, to which the 25th belonged, opened on the foe, principally to ascertain his strength. The cannon-balls and shells, however, were pitched with such rapidity and accuracy into the rebel breastworks that the occupants swarmed out *en masse* and scampered up the hill in the rear. Gen. Cooper saw that was the time to strike, and immediately ordered his brigade to advance. The men went swiftly forward; the Confederates continued to retreat; a gap was opened in their lines, into which the brigade entered; the news of the break spread right and left among the Union commanders; brigade after brigade, division after division, swept forward to the attack; the Confederates gave way at every point, and were pursued eleven miles.

The regiment was also engaged, though less prominently, at Pine Mountain, June 15, 1864; at Culp's Farm, June 22d; and at Nickajack Creek, July 1st. On the 9th of July it crossed the Chattahoochee, and on the 22d appeared before Atlanta. It took an active part in the siege of that place, and on the 6th of August it aided in carrying, by a gallant charge, the enemy's works near East Point. It also participated in the flank movement to the rear of Atlanta at Jonesboro', which resulted in the evacuation of the former place. During the campaign it had been under fire fifty-eight days.

After a short stay at Decatur, Ga., the 25th moved north with its corps in pursuit of Gen. Hood. Reaching Johnsonville, Tenn., on the 5th of November, it remained there until the 14th, when it marched with its brigade to Centerville, where it was engaged in guarding important fords across Duck River. Still moving northward, it was engaged, though not very severely, at the battle of Franklin, on the 30th of November, 1864.

Soon after, it was ordered with its brigade to Nashville, but, as Gen. Hood had invested that city and lay directly in front of the command in question, the latter was obliged to make a long circuit by way of Clarksville, during which it was at one time entirely within the rebel lines. Under

cover of a dark night, however, it made its way out, reaching Nashville on the 8th of December, and on the 15th and 16th was slightly engaged in the battle before that city, having eight men killed and wounded.

The regiment then marched with the 23d Corps in pursuit of Hood. With that corps it was afterwards transported from Columbia, Tenn., over a circuit of thousands of miles, by way of Washington, D. C., to North Carolina, where it took part with Gen. Schofield's army in extinguishing the last remnants of life in the expiring hydra of treason. After the surrender of the Confederate army commanded by Gen. Johnston, the regiment remained at Salisbury, N. C., until the 24th of June, 1865, when it was mustered out of service and set out for Michigan. It arrived at Jackson on the 2d of July, 1865, where it was paid off and discharged.

BERRIEN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE TWENTY-FIFTH INFANTRY.

*Field and Staff.*

Adj. Chas. Woodruff, Niles; com. April 7, 1864; sergt. maj., Jan. 14, 1864; 2d Lieut. Co. K, must. out June 24, 1865.

*Company C.*

Capt. Chas. E. McCollister, Oronoko; com. Aug. 10, 1862; res. May 11, 1863.  
Capt. Jacob Ewald, Oronoko; com. March 14, 1863; 1st Lieut. Aug. 10, 1862; disch. for disability, Oct. 10, 1864.  
Capt. Clarence H. Howe, Oronoko; com. Nov. 1, 1864; 2d Lieut. March 14, 1864; sergt., Aug. 12, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
1st Lieut. Edwin F. Kimmel, Oronoko; com. March 13, 1863; 2d Lieut. Aug. 1, 1862; res. Sept. 24, 1864.  
2d Lieut. Jos. L. Carli-le, Oronoko; com. Feb. 24, 1865; 2d Lieut., Nov. 1, 1864; sergt., Aug. 11, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
Sergt. Ezra E. Dunn, Buchanan; enl. Aug. 9, 1862; died of disease at Bowling Green, Ky., March 20, 1863.  
Sergt. Marion W. Jennings, Pipestone; enl. Aug. 13, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
Sergt. Benj. F. Feather, Oronoko; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; trans. to Inv. Corps, July, 1863; must. out July 8, 1865.  
Sergt. Reuben H. Richardson, Oronoko; corp., Aug. 1, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
Corp. James W. Grainger, Oronoko; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
Corp. Sylvester P. Mason, Buchanan; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; disch. for disability, Feb. 24, 1863.  
Corp. Francis M. Dougherty, Oronoko; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; disch. for disability, Sept. 21, 1863.  
Corp. Abram Long, Oronoko; enl. Aug. 13, 1862; trans. to Inv. Corps, Dec. 15, 1863.  
Corp. Alfred O. French, Royaltan; enl. Aug. 9, 1862; disch. by order, May 29, 1865.  
Corp. Eli Helmick, Oronoko; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; must. out June 25, 1865.  
Musician Wm. H. Dennison, Oronoko; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; died of disease at Bowling Green, Jan. 16, 1863.  
Wagoner Elliot Chamberlain, Oronoko; enl. Aug. 18, 1862; died of disease at Louisville, July 27, 1863.  
James B. Alden, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Orange L. Blake, must. out June 24, 1865.  
John A. Burke, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Samuel C. Burke, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Lavinius Bratt, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Josephus Brownell, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Porter H. Buckley, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Peter Buve, disch. by order, July 16, 1865.  
Reuben Cullbreter, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Eli N. Crabbe, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Milton Cowley, must. out July 4, 1865.  
Dorman Curtis, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Ralph Denn, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Alanson Dickerson, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Ambrose Dickerson, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Thos. Daker, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Wm. Desler, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps.  
Jesse Fisher, must. out June 24, 1865.  
R. P. Ferris, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Bethuel H. Friley, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Stephen E. Gilbert, died of accidental wounds, March 31, 1863.  
Abel Goddard, disch. for disability, June 16, 1863.  
Edwin S. Hall's k, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Wm. B. Hartman, must. out June 24, 1865.  
Wm. Hunter, must. out June 24, 1865.

Peter Humphrey, died of disease at Bowling Green, Ky., March 9, 1864.  
 Frank Jern, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. H. Jones, trans. to 28th Inf.; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Geo. H. Kimmel, must. out May 31, 1865.  
 Samuel Kimmel, must. out June 29, 1865.  
 John A. Kehler, must. out July 1, 1865, from Vet. Res. Corps.  
 Albert Kuzles, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Ludovic Leeds, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Isaac Long, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Stephen Lappen, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Richard Lawrence, disch. for disability, Jan. 9, 1863.  
 Nott Lockman, disch. for disability, June 16, 1863.  
 Jonathan Mosier, disch. for disability, May 9, 1863.  
 Geo. D. Mather, died in action at Resaca, Ga., May 14, 1864.  
 Geo. W. Myers, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Simeon McOmber, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Henry P. Movier, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Isaac Maddox, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Chas. S. Mead, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 George Madison, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Henry Near, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., Feb. 6, 1865.  
 Merritt Nichols, must. out from Vet. Res. Corps, June 12, 1865.  
 Patrick E. O'Brien, must. out from Vet. Res. Corps, July 7, 1865.  
 Wm. F. Olds, must. out July 2, 1865.  
 Joel Panglurn, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Benj. F. Potter, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Aaron Pantivers, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. B. Place, trans. to 28th Inf.; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Wm. E. Patterson, disch. for disability, May 8, 1863.  
 Delos Reed, disch. by order, July 18, 1863.  
 John P. Rooney, died of disease at Bowling Green, Ky., Feb. 16, 1863.  
 Galen R. Rogers, died of disease at Bowling Green, Ky., Feb. 17, 1863.  
 Jonathan R-sler, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Myron H. Roberts, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Reuben H. Richardson, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Frederick Simons, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Samuel Stuller, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Nathan Smith, must. out Oct. 28, 1865.  
 Wm. H. Shankwiler, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 J. Shankwiler, died of disease at Knoxville, Tenn., April 21, 1864.  
 Stephen Simons, died of disease at Bowling Green, March 29, 1863.  
 Noah St. John, disch. for disability, June 16, 1863.  
 John A. Sperrin, disch. for disability, July 21, 1864.  
 Andrew J. Tebb, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Jan. 15, 1864.  
 James M. Taylor, must. out June 25, 1865.  
 Chas. E. Terriere, must. out June 25, 1865.  
 Peter M. Van Husan, must. out June 25, 1865.  
 Michael Van Husan, disch. for disability, March 10, 1863.  
 Solomon Wirrick, disch. for disability, Dec. 21, 1863.  
 Benj. Wirrick, disch. for disability, May 22, 1865.  
 John Williams, disch. by order, July, 1863.  
 David H. Whipple, trans. to 28th Inf.; must. out June 5, 1866.

#### Company F.

Capt. Spencer L. Lansing, Niles; com. Aug. 10, 1862; disch. for disability, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Capt. Irving Paddock, Three Oaks; com. May 8, 1865; 1st lieutenant, Nov. 1, 1864; sergt., Aug. 14, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. Gideon Frisbie, Avery; com. Aug. 10, 1862; disch. for disability, Sept. 24, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. Henry Bond, Niles; com. May 8, 1865; 2d lieutenant, Nov. 2, 1864; sergt., Aug. 11, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Arthur Twombly, Niles; com. Aug. 10, 1862; res. Sept. 18, 1864.  
 Sergt. Chas. Woodruff, Niles; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; pro. to sergt. maj., Jan. 14, 1862.  
 Sergt. James B. Adams, Niles; enl. Aug. 7, 1862; died of disease at Knoxville, Tenn., Feb. 20, 1864.  
 Sergt. Julius C. Webb, Niles; corp., Aug. 14, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Corp. Don A. Clark, Niles; enl. Aug. 13, 1862; died Dec. 25, 1864, of wounds received Aug. 6, 1864.  
 Corp. Peter G. Cuddeback, Berrien; enl. Aug. 13, 1862; died July 4, 1863, of wounds received at Tibbs' Bend.  
 Corp. Henry T. Kimmel, Niles; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; disch. by order, Feb. 27, 1863.  
 Corp. Joel F. Warner, New Buffalo; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Corp. Byron W. Earl, Niles; enl. Aug. 7, 1862; trans. to Inv. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
 Corp. Thos. Quigley, Niles; enl. Aug. 13, 1862; disch. for disability, Jan. 26, 1865.  
 Musician Isaac McDaniel, Niles; enl. Aug. 9, 1862; died of disease at Murfreesboro', Jan. 16, 1864.  
 David C. Bachelor, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, May 1, 1864.  
 Henry Bowman, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Thos. D. Bines, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John Bourke, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Chas. H. Burbank, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Kellison Collins, disch. for disability, Feb. 24, 1865.  
 Frederick W. Doune, disch. for disability, April 23, 1863.  
 Jerry Duolan, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 10, 1864.  
 John Davis, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 James Ediz, from Vet. Res. Corps; must. out July 3, 1865.

James Fallon, disch. for disability, Feb. 18, 1863.  
 Morris Friabee, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. Gray, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John J. Garrison, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Francis W. Gano, must. out June 10, 1865.  
 Nathan Gilbert, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Thos. J. Gilbert, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Justus H. Hastings, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Levi Hoover, disch. for disability, April 4, 1863.  
 Geo. C. Inman, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
 Edwin G. Loucks, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Leroy Lamonion, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. Lahey, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John W. McKee, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John McClarey, disch. by order, July 20, 1863.  
 James McGurk, disch. for disability, Aug. 28, 1863.  
 Arbut M. Nott, disch. for disability, Sept. 4, 1863.  
 Philo Norton, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Thos. O'Callaghan, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. M. Otwell, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Emory Otwell, disch. by order, July 20, 1863.  
 Andrew J. Painter, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Horatio H. Richardson, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Lewis Quick, died of disease at Louisville, Feb. 8, 1863.  
 Jesse Sheridan, died of disease at Bowling Green, Feb. 18, 1863.  
 Wm. Slater, died of disease at Bowling Green, March 16, 1863.  
 Rowland Soper, died at Chattanooga, June 29, 1864.  
 Isaac Smith, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1863.  
 Thos. E. Sheridan, disch. for disability, Nov. 21, 1863.  
 Chas. T. Servis, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Thos. P. Starr, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John P. Tittsworth, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Frederick L. Thaldorf, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Marcus Tuttle, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Jan. 15, 1864.  
 Thos. Wood, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Dec. 15, 1864.  
 Michael Wood, disch. for insanity, Oct. 28, 1863.  
 Nathan Williams, disch. by order, March 20, 1863.  
 Ephraim Wellwood, disch. by order, July 20, 1863.  
 John Wright, died at Resaca, Ga., May 14, 1864.  
 Orson S. Warner, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John Wing, must. out June 24, 1865.

#### Company K.

Capt. M. V. McKinney, Buchanan; com. July 23, 1862; res. July 26, 1863.  
 Capt. John Tennant, Buchanan; com. July 26, 1863; 1st lieutenant, Aug. 4, 1862; disch. for disability, June 14, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. Frank D. Weaver, Buchanan; com. July 26, 1863; 2d lieutenant, Aug. 15, 1862; died of disease, April 2, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. Chas. Woodruff, Niles; com. April 2, 1864; pro. to 1st lieutenant and adj., April 7, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. Norris H. Merrill, Buchanan; com. June 1, 1864; sergt., July 22, 1862; disch. for wounds, Nov. 4, 1864.  
 Sergt. Rodney Knight, Buchanan; enl. Aug. 13, 1862; died of disease at Knoxville, Jan. 4, 1865.  
 Sergt. Abram Welles, Weesaw; enl. Aug. 11, 1862; disch. for disability, Sept. 1, 1863.  
 Sergt. Jos. C. Harris, Buchanan; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; disch. for disability, Jan. 3, 1865.  
 Sergt. John A. Sperry, Royalton; enl. July 12, 1862; disch. for disability, Jan. 15, 1863.  
 Corp. Jas. L. Slater, Weesaw; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; died in action at Tibbs' Bend, Ky., July 4, 1863.  
 Corp. Emmet S. Totien, Buchanan; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; must. out May 31, 1865.  
 Corp. Solomon Utley, Buchanan; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; absent, sick.  
 Simon P. Aldrich, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John Boyce, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Henry Beaucham, disch. for disability, March 3, 1863.  
 Chas. Cochran, disch. for disability, Sept. 10, 1862.  
 Oliver J. Chin, died of disease at Bowling Green, March 31, 1863.  
 Charles Carr, missing in action in Tennessee, Jan. 22, 1864.  
 George W. Colvin, must. out June 15, 1865.  
 James A. Cook, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. Conrad, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. W. Compton, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Nathan Dodds, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Ambrose Dickerson, disch. for disability, Jan. 6, 1863.  
 Hiram Dunham, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 20, 1864.  
 A. Ewats, disch. for disability, July 21, 1863.  
 Joseph Fuller, disch. for disability, Sept. 10, 1862.  
 Franklin B. Fancher, disch. for disability, Jan. 15, 1863.  
 Emory F. Ferry, disch. for disability, February, 1864.  
 Lewis B. Force, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Chas. W. Fancher, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, July 26, 1863.  
 George Furay, must. out May 7, 1865.  
 Wm. R. Gonder, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 J. L. Gorham, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 10, 1864.  
 Jacob Garlinger, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Jan. 15, 1864.  
 Andrew Graham, disch. by order, July 21, 1863.

J. S. Gordon, disch. by order, July 21, 1863.  
 F. G. M. Holmes, disch. for disability, Sept. 10, 1862.  
 Wm. J. Henderson, disch. for disability, Sept. 11, 1863.  
 Wm. H. Hanover, disch. for disability, March 3, 1863.  
 Warren J. Harris, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Henry Homer, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Martin V. Hulmes, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 David Hill, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Marvin H. Haskins, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. Ingelwright, Sr., disch. by order.  
 Wm. Ingelwright, Jr., trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
 Harvey C. Judson, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
 Andrew Judy, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., Oct. 8, 1862.  
 James S. Lee, disch. for disability, Jan. 15, 1863.  
 James Meeker, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Robert Norris, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 James Penwell, died of disease at Bowling Green, Ky., March 11, 1863.  
 George Pierce, died of disease at Knoxville, Tenn., May 25, 1864.  
 Nathan Pratt, disch. by order, July 29, 1863.  
 A. Randall, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
 Henry Rundell, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Benj. N. Redding, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 James M. Rose, must. out May 30, 1865.  
 John Z. Swanger, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Chas. W. Strong, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 James H. Snodgrass.  
 John C. Spinetta, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., Oct. 7, 1862.  
 Jacob Shruler, disch. for disability, Sept. 10, 1862.  
 Zenith Strong, disch. for disability, Sept. 10, 1862.  
 John Taylor, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Volney O. Van Denburgh, died of disease at Bowling Green, Ky., Feb. 11, 1863.  
 Frank Watson, died of disease at Knoxville, Tenn., May 11, 1864.  
 John Weaver, died of wounds at Resaca, Ga., May 14, 1864.  
 Evert Wirt, died in action at Rocky Face, Ga., May 9, 1864.  
 Alvertus Wray, died in Indiana, March 10, 1865.  
 Philip Walworth, disch. for disability, Sept. 10, 1862.  
 H. Wells, disch. for disability, Sept. 1, 1863.  
 Oscar Woodworth, disch. for disability, Jan. 15, 1863.  
 Emery Wray, disch. by order to Vet. Res. Corps, July 21, 1863.  
 Samuel Washburn, disch. by order to Vet. Res. Corps, July 21, 1863.  
 Hiram Walcott, disch. for disability, Feb. 10, 1863.  
 W. P. Wood, disch. for disability, Feb. 6, 1863.  
 J. J. Wade, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 David Washburn, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 John Washburn, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Wm. H. Walworth, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Noah Weaver, must. out June 24, 1865.  
 Noah M. Witter, must. out May 18, 1865.  
 Geo. H. Watson, must. out May 26, 1865.

OFFICERS AND MEN OF THE TWENTY-FIFTH INFANTRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

*Field and Staff.*

Maj. Dewitt C. Fitch, Mattawan: com. Sept. 17, 1862; res. April 12, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. and Q.M. John M. Riddon, Paw Paw: com. Aug. 27, 1862; res. March 16, 1863.

*Company C.*

Jonathan Ryder, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., Feb. 6, 1865.

*Company D.*

Stephen H. Kenney, must. out June 19, 1865.

*Company F.*

Franklin C. Snow, disch. for disability, Feb. 5, 1863.

*Company G.*

William Ryan, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Forice Rhodes, must. out Sept. 13, 1865.  
 Philo M. Russell, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Stephen Root, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Reuben Root, must. out June 5, 1866.

*Company H.*

Leander Vining, died of disease at Washington, D. C., March 9, 1865.

TWENTY-SIXTH INFANTRY.

This regiment was raised during the summer and autumn of 1862, in Berrien, Muskegon, Ingham, Livingston, and other counties. Over half of Company G was from Berrien County.

The regimental rendezvous was at Jackson, where it was mustered in by Capt. Mizner of the United States army, with Judson S. Farrar as colonel, Henry H. Wells as lieutenant-colonel, and William O'Donnell as major.

The regiment, nine hundred strong, left Jackson on the 13th of December, and proceeded at once to Washington. After a few unimportant marches it was stationed in the suburbs of Alexandria, Va., as provost-guard of that place, Lieut.-Col. Wells being appointed provost-marshal. The 26th remained at Alexandria about four months, a period which is remembered by the survivors of the regiment as one of the most pleasant in their war experience. On the 1st of April, 1862, a small newspaper called *Our Camp Journal* was issued by members of the regiment, and it appeared occasionally (or, perhaps, it were allowable to say, "semi"-occasionally) afterwards. But such pleasant intellectual work was soon interrupted, for on the 20th of April, 1862, the 26th embarked on a steamer, and the next day landed at Norfolk, Va. On the 22d it moved to Suffolk, and remained there till the 16th of May, when it advanced to "Deserted House," ten miles out from Suffolk.

On the 23d of May the 26th became engaged in its first conflict, near a place called Windsor. The rebels charged on a post occupied by a part of the regiment, yelling like devils, in hopes to intimidate the Michigan Yankees. The latter, however, who then met the "gray-backs" for the first time, stood their ground like veterans. Although the assailants were in large force, yet, on seeing the firmness of the Union line, they retreated faster than they came, and their flight was accelerated by a counter-charge of the men of the 26th, which drove them out of sight in a very brief time.

On the 19th of June, 1862, the regiment was moved to Yorktown, proceeding thence in Gen. Keyes' corps by way of Williamsburg to the "White House," on York River. On the 1st of July it marched to the vicinity of Bottom's Bridge, on the Chickahominy, where it remained eight days on the plantation of ex-President Tyler. About the 10th of that month it returned to Yorktown, and at once proceeded by way of Washington to New York to keep watch over the disloyal element of that city, which showed some of the same disposition to resist the laws which resulted a year later in the trouble and the well-known draft riots of 1863. It was not, however, found necessary to use a military force there at that time. After a brief stay in the city the regiment was encamped on Staten Island.

About the middle of October, 1863, the regiment returned to Virginia and joined the Army of the Potomac at Warrenton, being assigned to the 1st Brigade, 1st Division, 2d Corps. After changing its position to Stevensburg, it advanced with the army on the 26th of November, and on the 29th arrived in front of the hostile works at Mine Run. In the morning of that day the 1st Brigade moved forward in skirmish-line, driving the enemy's pickets to within a mile of his main works. Eighty rods in front of the brigade a piece of pine woods was held by a force of the enemy superior both in numbers and position. After a half-hour's halt the brigade was ordered to charge it, and did so, rushing swiftly, with wild shouts, across the open space of a quarter of a mile, exposed to a fierce fire of musketry from the woods and of shells from the batteries, and in ten minutes they held the wood, within easy musket range of the rebel intrenchments. The Confederates repeatedly endeavored to dislodge the brigade from its position, but amid



bursting shells, hissing balls, and falling boughs the men of the 1st Brigade coolly held their position, and all of the foemen's efforts were easily repulsed. An officer present attributed to the bad practice of the enemy's gunners and infantry the fact that only ten of the regiment were wounded during the charge.

The Mine Run expedition was but a reconnaissance in force, and on its completion the 26th returned to its camp at Stevensburg, where it remained in winter quarters until the opening of the campaign of the Wilderness.

On the 3d of May, 1864, the regiment advanced with the Army of the Potomac, and on the 5th was in hearing of the roar of battle, though it did not then take any part. That night and the next day it was busy throwing up intrenchments. On the 7th the regiment was slightly engaged, driving back the enemy without serious loss. On the 8th it had a slight skirmish with the foe near Todd's Tavern, on the 9th and 10th was not engaged, but on the 11th had a sharp, brief fight, in which eighteen men were killed and wounded.

On the 12th of May, 1864, came the memorable and successful attack by the 2d Corps on the enemy's works at Spottsylvania, in which the 26th Michigan took a most active and gallant part. At the word of command the regiment swept steadily forward, amid a storm of bullets and cannon-balls, charged with the bayonet, fought hand to hand with the desperate Confederates, drove them from their position, captured two guns with their gunners, and was the first regiment to place its colors on the hostile works. It was also engaged in the desperate fight which followed the exploit just mentioned, and assisted in the capture of a large number of guns, colors, and prisoners. In this day's work the gallant regiment had one hundred and twenty-five men killed and wounded and fourteen missing, most of the latter being afterwards found to be among the slain.

The next engagement of the 26th was at Jericho Bridge, on the 24th of May, where it crossed the North Anna River under a heavy artillery fire, and drove the enemy into his works, having fourteen men killed and wounded. On the 29th of May it was slightly engaged near Tolopotomoy Creek. At Cold Harbor, on the 2d and 3d of June, the 26th had fifteen wounded and five missing. Ten more were killed and wounded during the skirmishes of the next nine days.

On the 16th of June the regiment reached the front of Petersburg, and the same day aided in carrying by assault the first line of Confederate rifle-pits, twelve of its members being killed and wounded, among the mortally wounded being its commander, Capt. Lothian. On the 17th it helped to carry a line of works, having nine men killed and wounded. It was also heavily engaged on the 22d near the Williams House.

Our space will not allow us to describe in detail the incessant labors, skirmishes, and minor combats of the gallant 26th during the long investment of Petersburg; we can barely mention some of the principal events. On the 27th of July it participated in the assault on and capture of the enemy's works at Deep Bottom, and the next day, while on a reconnaissance, routed a large force of Confederates and

drove them into their intrenchments. On the 16th of August it had a sharp fight with the enemy near White Oak Swamp, seventeen of its members being killed and wounded, and seventeen taken prisoners.

On the 25th of August the regiment, while at work destroying the Weldon Railroad, was furiously assaulted at Ream's Station and driven from its defenses, which were, however, retaken by a gallant charge, in which the 26th suffered considerable loss. From this time until the 25th of March, 1865, the regiment in question was almost constantly employed in constructing earthworks or in other fatigue duty, and on picket in front of Petersburg.

On the day last named, immediately after the furious Confederate attack on Forts Steadman and Hancock, the 26th with its brigade charged the works in front, and captured a part of them, with a considerable number of prisoners. On the 31st of March it was heavily engaged in skirmishing in front of the enemy during the great flank movement to the left, and continued in pursuit of the enemy during the four following days. On the 6th of April it captured a train of two hundred and sixty wagons, loaded with ammunition and provisions. The 26th was in the extreme advance at the time of Lee's surrender, having captured four hundred prisoners since the 28th of March, and having during the same period had about sixty men killed and wounded,—more than a fourth of the number present for duty.

The regiment started for home on the 2d of May, arrived at Washington on the 13th, took part in the grand review of the Army of the Potomac on the 23d, was mustered out on the 4th of June, and was paid off and disbanded at Jackson, Mich., on the 14th day of June, 1865.

#### SOLDIERS FROM BERRIEN COUNTY IN TWENTY-SIXTH INFANTRY.

##### *Company C.*

2d Lieut. Sylvester R. Wilson, Gallien; com. Jan. 2, 1863; pro. to 1st Lieut.; must. out as 2d Lieut., June 4, 1865.

##### *Company G.*

Capt. Asa G. Dailey, Dayton; com. Aug. 4, 1862; resigned April 27, 1865.

1st Lieut. Wm. M. Cady, Dayton; com. Aug. 11, 1864; resigned April 9, 1864.  
Sergt. James M. Price, Weesaw; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; disch. for disability, Nov. 28, 1863.

Sergt. Sylvester R. Wilson, Gallien; enl. Aug. 7, 1862; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. C.

Sergt. William Hulmes, Dayton; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; died in rebel prison, Salisbury, N. C., Jan. 12, 1865.

Sergt. John Landon, Dayton; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; must. out June 3, 1865.

Sergt. Albert O. Ewen, New Buffalo; enl. Aug. 8, 1862; must. out June 2, 1865.

Corp. Henry Howland, Dayton; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; must. out June 3, 1865.

Corp. David Bryant, Niles; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; must. out June 19, 1865.

Corp. Winfield Wilson, Gallien; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; must. out June 4, 1865.

Corp. William De Armand, Bertrand; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; died of wounds received at Spottsylvania, May 12, 1864.

Corp. George Day, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 12, 1862; died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Feb. 15, 1863.

Corp. Reuben H. Rice, Gallien; enl. Aug. 15, 1862; must. out June 10, 1865.

Corp. Alvah H. Spalding, Gallien; enl. Aug. 22, 1862; must. out June 4, 1865.

Corp. Albert H. Wheeler, Dayton; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; must. out June 4, 1865.

Chauncey E. Ashcroft, must. out June 29, 1865.

Charles E. Bradley, must. out June 29, 1865.

Selah Baxter, must. out June 29, 1865.

F. A. Burras, must. out June 29, 1865.

Milford L. Brightford, disch. for disability, April 20, 1865.

William L. Bennett, died in Andersonville prison, Nov. 20, 1864.

Uri M. Barber, died in Andersonville prison, Sept. 23, 1864.

John Bowen, missing in battle, May 12, 1864.

John A. Davidson, must. out June 4, 1865.

John F. Eddy, died of disease at Weesaw, Mich., May 8, 1864.

T. J. Green, died of disease, Dec. 21, 1864.

Joseph F. Grooms, must. out June 4, 1865.

Joseph V. Grooms, disch. for disability, Feb. 17, 1865.

John Haggerty, disch. for disability.

Joseph Happe, died in battle at Spottsylvania, Va., May 12, 1864.  
 Daniel Harris, died in Salisbury prison, Jan. 12, 1865.  
 Samuel Hills, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 Gilbert F. Kinney, disch. for disability, May 2, 1863.  
 Nelson Kinney, disch. for disability, Nov. 17, 1863.  
 Robert Lambon, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 James Lavelle, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 Olaf Look, died of disease, Nov. 7, 1862.  
 Elkannah A. Parish, died of disease at Dayton, Mich., Feb. 20, 1864.  
 Edgar Potter, died of disease at Alexandria, April 9, 1863.  
 Aaron Perks, died in battle at Spottsylvania, Va., May 12, 1864.  
 James R. Ross, died of disease at Dayton, Mich., Feb. 20, 1864.  
 Joseph Rouse, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 David Stoner, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 Alvin C. Spaulding, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 Abner P. Spaulding, must. out June 4, 1865.  
 George W. Spengelburch, died in rebel prison at Salisbury, Dec. 9, 1865.  
 George W. Stoner, disch. for disability, June 17, 1863.  
 Nicholas Shoop, died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Jan. 21, 1864.  
 Hiram A. Sackett, died in battle at Spottsylvania, Va., May 12, 1864.  
 William Seward, died in battle at Spottsylvania, Va., May 12, 1864.  
 Benjamin F. Yaw, disch. for disability, Dec. 16, 1863.  
 Jonathan Yaw, disch. for disability, Dec. 16, 1863.

FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

George Snow, must. out May 30, 1865.

CHAPTER XII.

TWENTY-EIGHTH INFANTRY—FIRST ENGINEERS AND MECHANICS—FIRST SHARPshooters.

Organization of the Twenty-Eighth at Kalamazoo—Short Service in Kentucky and Tennessee—Transfer to North Carolina—Fight at Wise's Forks—Railroad Duty—Close of Service—Berrien and Van Buren Soldiers in the Twenty-Eighth—First Engineers—Fight at Laverge, Tenn.—Severe Duty in Tennessee, Alabama, Georgia, and the Carolinas—Muster Out—The First Sharpshooters—Fighting John Morgan in Indiana and Ohio—Services with the Army of the Potomac—Members from Berrien and Van Buren Counties.

TWENTY-EIGHTH INFANTRY.

The colonel of this regiment was William W. Wheeler, of Niles, and there were about one hundred and fifty men in it from Berrien and Van Buren Counties. Company H had over thirty men from Berrien County, and a few from Van Buren. Company G had nearly fifty from Van Buren County, and about a dozen from Berrien. The other representatives of the two counties were scattered through the different companies. The regiment was raised in the summer and early autumn of 1864, its rendezvous being at Kalamazoo, and it was completed in October of that year by the consolidation with it of several partially formed companies intended to form the 29th Infantry.

The new regiment left Kalamazoo on the 26th of October for Louisville, Ky., arriving in that city on the 29th. On the 10th of November it was ordered to Camp Nelson to guard a wagon-train from that place to Nashville, Tenn. Arriving at that city on the 5th of December, it was assigned to temporary duty at Nashville until Jan. 14, 1865, when it was embarked on steamboats, under orders to proceed to Eastport, Miss. But on reaching Paducah, at the mouth of the Tennessee River, orders were received, changing its destination to Louisville, Ky. Arriving at Louisville on the 18th of January, 1865, it was ordered to Annapolis, Md., but while on its way to that place another change of orders was made, under which it was moved to Alexandria, Va. There, having been assigned to the 2d

Brigade, 1st Division, of the 23d Army Corps, it embarked on ocean transports for Morehead City, N. C., where it arrived on the 24th of February, leaving at once by railroad for Newbern, and reaching that point on the following day.

On the 2d of March the regiment moved with its command on the road to Kinston, but encountered the enemy, under the rebel Gen. Hoke, at Wise's Forks, and was there engaged on the 8th, 9th, and 10th of March, having twenty officers and men killed and wounded. After this affair the march was continued, the regiment reaching Kinston on the 14th and Goldsboro' on the 21st of March. It was then, with its brigade, assigned the duty of guarding the railroad line, and so continued until the 9th of April, when it was moved by way of Goldsboro' to Raleigh, arriving there on the 13th of that month.

After the substantial closing of the war by the surrender of Johnston, the 28th remained in North Carolina, engaged on duty at Goldsboro', Raleigh, Charlotte, Lincolntown, Wilmington, and Newbern, till the 5th of June, 1866, when it was mustered out of service. It was paid off and disbanded at Detroit, on the 8th of June, 1866.

BERRIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE TWENTY-EIGHTH.

*Field and Staff.*

Col. Wm. W. Wheeler, Niles; com. Aug. 15, 1864; lieutenant-col. and maj. 23d Inf.; must. out July 12, 1866.

*Company B.*

S. F. West, died of disease at Nashville, Jan. 9, 1865.

*Company C.*

Andrew Baer, must. out June 12, 1865.  
 Wilson J. Norton, must. out June 12, 1865.  
 Willis S. Norton, disch. by order, July 26, 1865.  
 Charles E. Perry, disch. by order, May 26, 1865.  
 Paul Pasch, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Abram Packard, died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Feb. 13, 1865.  
 James E. Sprang, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 James A. Shelden, must. out Sept. 12, 1865.

*Company E.*

John Brott, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Charles L. Cummings, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Lawson T. Humphrey, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 George Hamilton, must. out Oct. 6, 1865.  
 Wm. W. Jordan, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Zephaniah Linsey, disch. by order, Aug. 26, 1865.  
 Frank Matron, must. out Aug. 23, 1865.  
 Michael Rohrer, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Archibald Schoonover, disch. by order, Sept. 5, 1865.  
 Luman Wireman, must. out June 14, 1865.

*Company G.*

Wm. Allen, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 John A. Hunt, must. out May 22, 1865.  
 Henry D. Kirland, disch. for disability.  
 Ira Olds, died of disease at Detroit, March 4, 1865.  
 Daniel Quinn, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Charles H. Stevens, must. out Sept. 13, 1865.  
 James P. Tilton, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Wm. S. Williams, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Cornelius Williams, must. out Jan. 3, 1866.  
 Wm. Wittier, must. out May 25, 1865.

*Company H.*

Sergt. Orrin W. Crossman, Benton; enl. Sept. 3, 1864; died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Feb. 16, 1865.  
 Sergt. Orange C. Burlbank, Benton; enl. Oct. 1, 1864; died of disease in North Carolina, Aug. 16, 1865.  
 Corp. Anthony Jerrue, Benton; enl. Sept. 16, 1864; disch. by order, Sept. 6, '65.  
 Corp. Delmont J. Coboneau, Berrien; enl. Sept. 10, 1864; sergeant; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Corp. Francis H. Taylor, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 13, 1864; disch. for disability, Sept. 23, 1865.  
 Corp. James Hanna, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 1, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Corp. Uriah Gress, Benton; enl. Sept. 19, 1864; disch. by order, May 19, 1865.  
 Perry J. Ashley, died at Kalamazoo (shot), Dec. 6, 1864.  
 David Abbey, disch. by order, May 17, 1866.  
 Wm. Annable, must. out June 5, 1866.

W. S. Atkins, disch. at end of service, March 1, 1866.  
 Frederick Barney, disch. by order, May 26, 1865.  
 Richard W. Brown, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Smith B. Baker, must. out June 5, 1865.  
 Wm. W. Fenne, must. out June 5, 1865.  
 George G. Gamby, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Lewis Herbert, must. out Sept. 13, 1865.  
 Wm. E. Jakeway, must. out Dec. 1, 1865.  
 Richard S. Lawrence, died of disease at Louisville, Nov. 21, 1864.  
 Charles F. Mowry, must. out June 12, 1865.  
 George W. Odell, died of disease at Indiana, Nov. 23, 1864.  
 Gain O. Robinson, died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Feb. 10, 1865.  
 Humphrey Stokes, must. out May 29, 1865.  
 Harvey Smith, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Pardon D. Taylor, died of disease at Nashville, Jan. 10, 1865.  
 Edmund Tappen, must. out June 5, 1865.  
 Hiram Tubbs, must. out Sept. 13, 1865.  
 Merrick Vincent, died of disease in North Carolina, June 5, 1865.  
 Henry Weber, disch. by order, May 19, 1865.  
 Calvin S. Warren, disch. for disability, Oct. 19, 1865.  
 Arthur Worden, must. out June 5, 1866.

#### Company I.

Washington S. Blowers, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 10, 1865.  
 Fred. N. Bachman, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 John Buchanan, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 John J. Baxter, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 George A. Cook, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Frederick M. Cook, must. out July 14, 1865.  
 William C. Conklin, disch. by order, May 27, 1865.  
 Amos L. Herrick, disch. for disability, Dec. 21, 1865.  
 Daniel D. Havens, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Stephen R. Thayer, must. out Sept. 13, 1865.  
 John B. Woodward, died of disease at New York City, June 30, 1865.

#### Company K.

Corp. Warren Beckwith, Watervliet; enl. Oct. 11, 1864; died of disease in North Carolina, June 8, 1865.  
 Daniel Aspinwall, must. out May 11, 1865.  
 Perry Converse, must. out May 16, 1865.  
 Silas J. Chapman, died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Feb. 16, 1865.  
 Alexander Fisher, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 David W. Felton, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Albert E. Heaton, must. out May 15, 1865.  
 Richard A. Lawrence, must. out May 20, 1865.  
 Edward Measure, must. out May 29, 1865.  
 John H. Mesure, must. out June 5, 1865.  
 William H. Morey, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 James P. Versan, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Samuel Versan, must. out June 5, 1866.

### MEMBERS OF THE TWENTY-EIGHTH INFANTRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

#### Field and Staff.

Q.M. John B. Upton, Lawrence; com. Aug. 27, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Q.M. Sergt. Augustus H. Draper, Lawrence; disch. by order, May 22, 1866.  
 Com. Sergt. William H. Clay, Lawrence; must. out Sept. 13, 1865.

#### Company C.

John Gamby, disch. at end of service, Feb. 6, 1866.  
 Charles A. Woodward, must. out May 12, 1865.

#### Company D.

Isaac Graham, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., March 30, 1865.

#### Company E.

Corp. Barker C. Storey, Bloomingdale; enl. Sept. 15, 1864; disch. for disability, Feb. 18, 1865.  
 Thomas J. Draper, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Thomas B. Draper, must. out May 25, 1866.  
 Henry M. Freeman, disch. for wounds, June 5, 1866.  
 Edward M. Wetmore, must. out June 5, 1866.

#### Company G.

Capt. Eri Barber, Bangor; com. Sept. 30, 1864; resigned Sept. 12, 1865.  
 Capt. Edwin R. Farmer, Lawrence; com. Sept. 12, 1865; 1st lieut., Sept. 30, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 2d Lieut. Daniel Spicer, Antwerp; com. Sept. 30, 1864; must. out May 15, 1865.  
 Sergt. Orville F. McNitt, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 5, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Sergt. Washington I. Bird, Decatur; enl. Sept. 2, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Sergt. Erasmus V. Allen, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 3, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Sergt. Andrew Bartlett, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 9, 1864; disch. by order, April 20, 1866.  
 Sergt. John Maynard, Antwerp; enl. Sept. 13, 1864; disch. by order, April 16, 1866.  
 Corp. Robert H. Privits, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 6, 1864; disch. by order, Aug. 25, 1865.

Corp. Orlen F. Olcott, Decatur; enl. Sept. 30, 1864; disch. by order, June 12, 1865.  
 Corp. John G. Youngs, Decatur; enl. Sept. 1, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Corp. Wallace H. Page, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 5, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Corp. Charles Kelley, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 3, 1864; must. out Sept. 13, 1865.  
 Corp. Lewis Herrington, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 12, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.

Sherman Andrews, died in action, Wise Forks, N. C., May 8, 1865.  
 Charles C. Butcher, died of disease at Newbern, N. C., March 26, 1865.  
 Daniel Hancock, died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Feb. 14, 1865.  
 James L. Cooper, must. out May 31, 1865.  
 Joseph C. Cook, must. out May 26, 1865.  
 James Cannon, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 James M. Drake, disch. for disability, Dec. 6, 1864.  
 Isaac M. Drake, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Charles Doty, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 John M. Dowejer, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Larue Dyer, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 James E. Depilds, must. out June 16, 1865.  
 George H. Eaton, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Pulaski Easton, must. out May 29, 1866.  
 Edward Forman, must. out June 7, 1865.  
 John Fitzpatrick, died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Feb. 1, 1865.  
 Amos Gibbs, died of disease at Pittsburgh, Pa., Feb. 10, 1865.  
 Justice A. Irish, must. out May 31, 1865.  
 Ezra McAllister, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Russell W. Menton, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Lyman A. McNitt, must. out Sept. 13, 1865.  
 Thomas S. Nesbitt, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Harvey Potter, must. out May 26, 1865.  
 Joseph Salisbury, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Morris Steidman, must. out June 8, 1865.  
 Lyman F. Smith, died of disease at New York City, Aug. 22, 1865.  
 Cassius M. C. Traver, died of disease at Charlotte, N. C., Aug. 28, 1865.  
 George W. Wells, must. out June 13, 1865.

#### Company H.

1st Lieut. George Platts, Bloomingdale; com. Feb. 2, 1866; 2d Lieut., March 2, 1865; sergt., Sept. 10, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Sergt. Dyer Newcomb, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 6, 1864; must. out May 27, 1866.  
 Corp. Wm. H. Braman, Hamilton; enl. Aug. 30, 1864; died of disease at Alexandria, March 12, 1865.  
 Corp. Jefferson Slaybaugh, Hamilton; enl. Aug. 30, 1864; died of disease at Kalamazoo, Mich., Oct. 11, 1864.  
 Charles C. Craler, must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Newcomb Dyer, must. out May 27, 1866.  
 Reuben Drake, must. out July 6, 1865.  
 Lewis Wise, must. out June 12, 1865.

#### Company I.

Sergt. Wm. H. Nichols, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 12, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Amos Gibbs, died of disease at Pittsburgh, Pa., Feb. 10, 1865.  
 Abram A. Smith, must. out June 8, 1866.  
 Miles Spicer, disch. by order, May 24, 1865.

#### Company K.

Sergt. Allen Gorham, Alma; enl. Oct. 4, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.  
 Corp. Freeman Vanlieu, Waverly; enl. Sept. 30, 1864; must. out June 5, 1866.

### FIRST ENGINEERS AND MECHANICS.

About half of Company G of this regiment was from Van Buren County, and there were a few in other companies from Berrien County. The regiment was raised in the summer and autumn of 1861, and left Marshall for Louisville, Ky., with ten companies, of one hundred men each, on the 17th of December in that year. It was soon divided into detachments, which were principally employed throughout the following year in building bridges and making repairs on the railroads between Louisville and Nashville, Nashville and Chattanooga, Nashville and Columbia, Corinth and Decatur, Huntsville and Stevenson, and Memphis and Chattanooga. In June, 1861, alone, it built seven bridges on the Memphis and Charleston Railroad, varying from eighty-four to three hundred and forty feet in length. During that year the regiment was increased by law to twelve companies, of one hundred and fifty men each, arranged in three battalions, but the men were not recruited till the next year.

On the 1st of January, 1862, the regiment was attacked



at Laverne, Tenn., by from three to four thousand rebel cavalry, with two pieces of artillery, under Gens. Wharton and Wheeler. The assailants were repulsed with serious loss. During the year 1863 the Engineers and Mechanics were engaged at their former work of building bridges and repairing railroads in Tennessee and North Alabama, for the benefit of Gen. Rosecrans' army. The one over Elk River, Tenn., was four hundred and sixty feet long, and the one over Duck River three hundred and fifty feet.

During the winter of 1863-64 the regiment, divided as usual into detachments, was engaged in building trestle-work and bridges, and also in constructing store-houses, etc., at Chattanooga and Bridgeport. Part of the time the men at Chattanooga were refitting saw-mills, and in March and April, 1864, they were running saw-mills, getting out railroad ties, working on the defenses. Other detachments were erecting block-houses on the Nashville and Chattanooga and other railroads.

The greater part of the regiment followed Sherman's army during the summer of 1864, building block-houses with which to hold the railroad from Chattanooga to Atlanta, the great artery which preserved the life of the army.

Although the time of the regiment expired in October, 1864, there were enough re-enlisted veterans and new recruits to maintain its full strength. During the latter part of the fall of 1864 it was very busily engaged in destroying rebel fortifications, rolling-mills, foundries, etc., and in constructing defenses for the small Union force which Gen. Sherman intended to leave behind him.

On the 16th of November the regiment, except two companies retained with the Army of the Cumberland, set out with Sherman's army on the great march to the sea, during which its duties were probably harder than that of any other regiment in the service. It had to keep pace with the army, marching over twenty miles a day, and performed an immense amount of extra service in destroying railroad tracks and bridges and in building bridges and corduroy roads for the use of the army. On the 10th and 11th of December it built a dam across the Ogeechee Canal, near Savannah, under the fire of rebel batteries. After the capture of that city, the regiment began work on fortifications there, which were completed in six days.

Having been carried to Beaufort, S. C., on transports, it set out with the army on its northward march on the 31st of January, 1865. Its course through the Carolinas was marked by its old work of alternate destruction and repair. At Edisto Station the men built a bridge under fire from the enemy's sharpshooters. At Lynch Creek they constructed a crossing a mile long in the night, when the water was waist deep, and corduroyed it the next day for the trains. The regiment reached Goldsboro', N. C., on the 23d of March, 1865, and two days later was joined by the two companies which had been left in the Army of the Cumberland.

After the surrender of Gen. Johnston's army, the 1st Engineers and Mechanics moved north to Washington, participated in the grand review of Sherman's army on the 24th of May, was sent West early in June, and arrived at Nashville on the 1st of July, 1865. It was employed on the defenses there until the 22d of September, when it

was mustered out of service. It was paid off and disbanded at Jackson, Mich., on the 1st day of October, 1865.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE FIRST ENGINEERS AND MECHANICS.

##### Company G.

Sergt. Bradley W. Stanton, enl. Sept. 10, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 29, 1864.  
 Corp. David H. Gault, enl. Sept. 16, 1861; disch. July 12, 1863.  
 Corp. Alva Hayes, enl. Sept. 14, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 29, 1864.  
 Corp. Newland Nash, enl. Sept. 11, 1861; sergt.; disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 Corp. Edmund N. Hayden, enl. Sept. 12, 1861; died of disease, March 22, 1864.  
 Darius F. Austin, disch. for disability, July 23, 1863.  
 Reuben H. Allen, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 James C. Brown, disch. for disability, Aug. 18, 1862.  
 Eli Bush, disch. for disability, April 28, 1862.  
 Cynerus Brown, died of disease at Louisville, Ky., March 13, 1862.  
 Barnabas Brown, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Oct. 30, 1863.  
 Clark K. Brewer, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 David D. Brown, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 Robert B. Bishop, veteran, Jan. 1, 1861.  
 William Craver, died of disease at Bridgeport, Ala.  
 William H. Carr, must. out Sept. 22, 1864.  
 Sylvester Dyer, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 Lewis Fosherry, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 Ezra H. Fosmire, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 Elial L. Goble, disch. for disability, Sept. 16, 1862.  
 David H. Garrett, disch. for disability, July 23, 1863.  
 Alonzo Libbie, disch. for disability, July 24, 1862.  
 William Murch, disch. for disability, April 21, 1862.  
 Edwin R. Murch, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 John M. Palmer, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 Stephen A. Root, disch. for disability, June 23, 1862.  
 John Richardson, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 James H. Root, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.  
 William Reed, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Tenn., April 23, 1863.  
 Uriah Stephens, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Tenn., Jan. 10, 1863.  
 Jesse Stevens, disch. by order, June 6, 1865.  
 John M. Vossburg, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Oct. 31, 1863.  
 Daniel Van Tassel, veteran, enl. Jan. 1, 1864.  
 David S. Van Tassel, must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Martin A. Wegate, disch. at end of service, Oct. 31, 1864.

##### Company H.

Giles S. Noble, must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY MEN IN THE ENGINEER REGIMENT.

##### Company D.

George Scott, disch. by order, June 6, 1865.

##### Company F.

Addison M. Gustin, must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Reuben F. Gustin, must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

#### FIRST SHARPSHOOTERS.

The formation of this regiment began at Kalamazoo in the autumn of 1862. Ira L. Evans, who had served over a year as a private in the 2d Infantry, recruited about thirty men from Niles and vicinity, and was commissioned as lieutenant. Other recruits were obtained from various parts of Berrien and Van Buren, amounting in all to nearly one hundred.

The incomplete regiment remained at Kalamazoo and Dearborn until the summer of 1863, when it went to Indiana to help drive Morgan's raiders from that State and Ohio. After returning to Dearborn and filling up its ranks, it proceeded to Chicago, where it acted as guard over rebel prisoners until March, 1864, when it joined the 9th Army Corps at Annapolis, Md.

With that corps it went through the Virginia campaign of 1864, taking part in nearly all the battles, and suffering heavy loss. In the Wilderness it had twenty-four officers and men killed and wounded. At Spottsylvania it gallantly charged a rebel battery, but was so terribly cut up by shell and canister that it was ordered to lie down and hold the

ground, which it did until night. During the conflict at Spottsylvania the regiment had one hundred and fifty-one officers and men killed and wounded.

After several sharp skirmishes at North Anna River, Tolopotomoy Creek, and Bethesda Church, it reached Cold Harbor on the 4th of June. It was but slightly engaged there, and on the 16th of June arrived in front of Petersburg. The next day it participated in the successful charge on the enemy's works, and assisted in repelling two efforts to retake them, capturing eighty-eight officers and soldiers and a rebel battle-flag. The Sharpshooters were on the extreme left of the corps, and the Confederates made a night attack on its left and rear, inflicting heavy loss and nearly capturing the whole regiment. The greater portion, however, succeeded in cutting its way through the rebel lines, though several companies were badly shattered. Thirty-one officers and men were reported killed, forty-six wounded, and eighty-four missing.

The Sharpshooters were also actively engaged in the fight which followed the celebrated mine explosion on the 30th of July, capturing fifty prisoners, but also suffering a loss of three killed, twelve wounded, and thirty-three missing. The regiment likewise took part in engagements on the Weldon Railroad in August; near "Peebles' House," on the 30th of September; and on the South Side Railroad, on the 27th of October. After the latter event the regiment served on picket, and in the trenches before Petersburg until the 25th of March, when two companies aided in repelling the Confederate attack on Fort Steadman; and in the final charge, which drove him behind his works, captured more prisoners than they had men engaged, with but slight loss to themselves. The regiment lost heavily, however, on the 2d of April, in making a feint against the enemy's left, in order to facilitate an attack on his right.

On the 3d of April the Sharpshooters advanced, at half-past three in the morning, to reconnoitre, and, finding that the enemy had evacuated his works, pushed forward, and was the first regiment of Union troops to enter the long-contested city of Petersburg. The regiment was at this time commanded by Maj. Ira L. Evans, before mentioned, now of Niles. As the column approached the court-house, Maj. Evans sent his adjutant to hoist the regimental flag upon its tower. Near the top of the tower was the town-clock, and, as the adjutant was determined that no banner should float higher than that of his regiment, he punched the flagstaff through the dial of the clock and fastened it there, with the flag of the 1st Michigan Sharpshooters floating in the morning breeze, the first symbol of the national sovereignty displayed over captured Petersburg.

The regiment was employed in guarding the South Side Railroad until after Lee's surrender, when it returned to Washington, and there remained till the 28th of July. It was then mustered out of service, and set out for Michigan, being paid off and disbanded at Jackson on the 7th of August, 1865.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE FIRST SHARPshootERS

##### *Company A.*

Capt. Ira L. Evans, Niles; com. June 19, 1864; brevet maj. U. S. V., Dec. 2, 1864; "for gallant and meritorious services in the assault before Petersburg."

1st Lieut. Daniel C. Gore, Niles; com. Dec. 3, 1864; must. out July 28, 1865.

##### *Company E.*

1st Lieut. Ira L. Evans, Niles; com. April 16, 1863; pro. to capt., Co. A. Corp. Jacob Barnhardt, Berrien; enl. Jan. 3, 1864; disch. for disability, Oct. 14, 1864.

Corp. Daniel C. Gore, Berrien; enl. Jan. 30, 1864; pro. to 1st Lieut., Co. A. Musician John Jones, Berrien; enl. Dec. 29, 1863; pro. to principal musician, Dec. 1, 1864.

Wagoner Edward Terwilliger, Berrien; enl. Jan. 12, 1863; must. out July 28, 1865.

Luke D. Hatch, must. out of Vet. Res. Corps, Aug. 11, 1865.

Joseph Nichols, died of wounds at Portsmouth, Sept. 8, 1864.

Isaac Odell, must. out July 28, 1865.

Wilson Ryan, died in Andersonville prison-pen, Sept. 1, 1861.

Oscar E. Thompson, disch. for disability, March 22, 1864.

Charles M. Wheeler, trans. to 9th Ind. Vols., January, 1864.

##### *Company G.*

Capt. Thomas H. Gaffney, Niles; com. Aug. 8, 1863; died of wounds received at Petersburg, June 17, 1864.

Sergt. Robert Farrell, Berrien Springs; enl. June 20, 1863; pro. to 1st Lieut., Co. H, Dec. 27, 1864.

Sergt. John Unruh, Galien; enl. July 2, 1863; must. out May 25, 1865.

Corp. Horace B. Seely, Niles; enl. June 27, 1863; must. out May 25, 1865.

Corp. Stephen Teeter, Galien; enl. July 15, 1863; died of disease, Sept. 10, 1864.

Corp. James Jones, Niles; enl. June 6, 1863; died in battle at Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864.

Corp. George J. Davis, Weesaw; enl. Aug. 1, 1863; must. out of Vet. Res. Corps, Nov. 20, 1865.

Musician P. B. Boatwick, Niles; enl. June 1, 1863; must. out July 28, 1865.

Wagoner Charles A. Knoll, Weesaw; enl. June 25, 1863; must. out July 28, 1865.

Sylvester Berry, disch. for disability, Sept. 27, 1864.

Nelson E. Brayman, must. out July 28, 1865.

Dennis Broderick, must. out July 28, 1865.

John H. Countryman, must. out of Vet. Res. Corps, July 28, 1865.

Edward Corey, must. out July 28, 1865.

Noah Cain, died of disease, Aug. 17, 1864.

Simon E. Davis, died of disease, Aug. 17, 1864.

Jairus Davidson, must. out July 28, 1865.

Israel R. Dalrymple, disch. March 9, 1865.

John Harvey, died of disease at Chicago, Dec. 3, 1863.

John Hanover, disch. for disability, Dec. 10, 1864.

Charles Hunstable, must. out July 28, 1865.

John Knoll, must. out July 28, 1865.

Samuel McArthur, died of disease at Chicago, Nov. 26, 1863.

John McCann, must. out July 28, 1865.

Lewis Mathews, must. out of Vet. Res. Corps, March 18, 1865.

George W. Morris, must. out Aug. 18, 1865.

Abram Norris, disch. April 17, 1864.

Munford A. Potter, must. out July 28, 1865.

Jerome Paddock, died of disease, July 6, 1864.

Robert B. Ready, disch. for disability, Dec. 23, 1865.

Wm. A. Roby, must. out July 28, 1865.

Merritt F. Reed, must. out July 28, 1865.

Rossiter Sanford, must. out July 28, 1865.

Albert Shedd, died in battle at Spottsylvania, May 12, 1864.

Alvah Thayer, must. out July 28, 1865.

John Wallace, disch. May 12, 1865.

Wm. Wiseman, died of disease, April 10, 1864.

Joseph Wilson, died in action near Petersburg, June 17, 1864.

##### *Company I.*

Capt. George H. Murdock, Berrien Springs; com. Oct. 1, 1863; wounded in action before Petersburg, June 17, 1864; pro. to brevet maj. U. S. Vols., Dec. 2, 1864, for gallant services in the battle of Spottsylvania and during the campaign before Richmond; res. Dec. 6, 1864.

William E. Andrews, must. out July 28, 1865.

Louis P. Boulford, must. out July 28, 1865.

William Cassell, must. out July 28, 1865.

Andrew J. Davis, must. out July 28, 1865.

Myron Fox, must. out July 28, 1865.

Austin Harmon, died of disease at Chicago, Dec. 22, 1863.

Benjamin Long, must. out July 28, 1865.

Henry Miller, disch. for promotion in U. S. C. T., June 12, 1865.

James M. Waltou, must. out July 28, 1865.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY MEN IN THE FIRST SHARPshootERS.

##### *Company B.*

Albert Garmire, must. out June 2, 1865.

Augustus Taylor, must. out June 8, 1865.

##### *Company C.*

Enos Austin, must. out June 3, 1865.

Benjamin Caswell, must. out July 28, 1865.

Cyrenius Irish, must. out July 28, 1865.

##### *Company D.*

Charles Bonfoey, must. out June 29, 1865.

Charles Y. Briggs, must. out Aug. 14, 1865.

Alvin P. Earl, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 David R. Meacham, must. out June 27, 1865.  
 Kirk W. Noyes, missing in action, rejoined regiment.  
 Nelson A. Storey, died of disease at Hilton Head, S. C., Nov. 21, 1864.  
 Levi H. Waite, died in action near Petersburg, Va., June 17, 1864.  
 Daniel W. Watson, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 George M. Wildey, must. out July 28, 1865.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### FIRST AND SECOND CAVALRY.

Services of the First Cavalry with the Army of the Potomac—The Regiment at Gettysburg and in the Wilderness—The Richmond Raid—Battle at Trevilian Station—Campaign in the Shenandoah Valley—Winter Quarters at Winchester Campaign of 1865—Five Forks and Appomattox—Service on the Plains—Members of the Regiment from Van Buren and Berrien Counties—Second Cavalry—Long and Arduous Service in Mississippi, Tennessee, Alabama, and Georgia—Veteran Re-enlistment—Berrien and Van Buren Representation in the Second Cavalry.

#### FIRST CAVALRY.

THIS regiment, which was raised in the summer of 1861, under Col. T. F. Brodhead, with its rendezvous at Detroit, at first contained thirty or forty men from Berrien County and about an equal number from Van Buren. Subsequently a considerable addition was made from the latter county, as will be mentioned farther on.

The regiment left Detroit for Washington on the 29th of September, 1861. It passed most of the succeeding winter at Frederick, Md., and in the spring of 1862 entered on a season of active service on the Upper Potomac, in the Shenandoah Valley and near the eastern slopes of the Blue Ridge. It was in action at Winchester, March 23, 1862; at Middletown, March 25th; at Strasburg, March 27th; at Harrisonburg, April 22d; at Winchester again, May 24th; at Orange Court-House, July 16th; at Cedar Mountain, August 9th; and at Bull Run, August 30th. In the latter action Col. Brodhead was mortally wounded and the regiment had twenty men killed and wounded. During the season it had thirty men killed in action, fifty-eight wounded, and sixty who died of disease.

After another winter passed near Frederick, Md., the 1st Cavalry again entered the field, and performed grand-guard duty along the front line of the defenses of Washington in Virginia, extending from Edwards' Ferry to the mouth of the Occoquan. On the 27th of June it moved northward, and for fifteen days it was almost constantly engaged in conflicts with the enemy. It formed a part of the celebrated "Michigan Cavalry Brigade," of which Custer was the commander, and which contributed very largely to the renown of that distinguished cavalry general.

At Gettysburg, on the 3d of July, 1863, it met and charged Hampton's legion, consisting of three regiments of rebel cavalry, and defeated it in six minutes, having eleven officers and eighty men killed and wounded out of three hundred who went into the action.

In September, 1863, the War Department authorized the consolidation of the twelve companies into eight, and the raising of a new battalion of four new companies. These were speedily raised, and the new battalion was mustered into service at Mount Clemens, in December, 1863. One

of its companies (K) was largely from Van Buren County. This battalion went to Camp Stoneman, near Washington, in December, 1863, and remained there until the spring of 1864. Meanwhile the two old battalions re-enlisted, came home on veteran furlough, and joined the new levies at Camp Stoneman.

The battalions went to the front together, and in the latter part of March, 1864, joined Gen. Sheridan's cavalry corps at Culpeper, Va., being still a part of the "Michigan Cavalry Brigade," under the fiery Custer, which was made the 1st Brigade of the 1st Cavalry Division. In the first days of May the brigade advanced with the army, and soon became engaged in the great battle of the Wilderness, fighting, mounted, during the first three days with the renowned cavalry of Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, having ten men killed and twenty wounded.

On the 9th of May the cavalry corps set out under Gen. Sheridan, on his great raid towards Richmond. Three divisions, numbering full twelve thousand, turned their horses' heads to the southward; the blue-coated column, as it marched by fours, stretching eleven miles along the road. Towards evening of the same day, the 1st Michigan Cavalry, followed closely by the rest of the column, dashed into the rebel depot at Beaver Dam, driving away almost in an instant the force stationed for its defense. All night long the men were busy destroying the immense amount of rebel supplies accumulated at Beaver Dam, the flames of which rose in lurid columns through the darkness, amid the cheers of the excited soldiers.

At daybreak the next morning the command moved forward, and on the 11th of May reached "Yellow Tavern," ten miles from Richmond. There Gen. Stuart had assembled a large force of cavalry, and a hard battle took place. Again and again the Union horsemen charged, sabre in hand, and scattered the chivalry like chaff before the whirlwind. A single squadron of two companies of the 1st Michigan, one of which was Company K, dashed like lightning upon a rebel battery of two guns, sabred or drove away the cannoniers, and captured both pieces in an instant. A detachment of the 5th Michigan scattered the immediate followers of Gen. Stuart, and ere he could escape a soldier of that regiment mortally wounded the rebel commander. Ere long all the Confederate forces were driven away, and the Union column pursued its unmolested course. The regiment of which we are writing had eleven killed and twelve wounded.

The next day the command arrived within a mile and a half of Richmond, but there were found strongly-manned fortifications, on which cavalry could make no impression, and Gen. Sheridan turned his course towards the Chickahominy. Near that stream a large rebel force occupied a narrow passage through a swamp, along which not more than four men could ride abreast, and where a well-posted battery cut down the head of the Union column, completely checking its advance. The leading brigade vainly endeavored to force a passage. The next one likewise failed, and then Gen. Sheridan sent to the rear for Custer and his Michigan brigade, which at once hastened to the front. There the youthful general dismounted the 5th and 6th Michigan, and sent one regiment on either side into the



swamp, while the 1st and 7th, with drawn sabres, awaited an opportunity to charge. Wading sometimes waist-deep, the dismounted men advanced towards the flanks of the battery, and plied their Spencer carbines on the cannoniers. The latter were obliged to turn their guns on these assailants, to prevent being entirely enfiladed. The moment they did so Custer gave the order, and the two mounted regiments, with brandished sabres and ringing cheers, dashed forward at the top of their horses' speed. The gunners had barely time to limer their pieces and retreat, and the road was at once laid open for the advance of the whole corps. The command then proceeded to Malvern Hill, and thence to White House Landing, whence it marched to rejoin the main army of Gen. Grant.

The regiment was engaged at Hanover Town on the 27th of May, at Hawes' Shop on the 28th, where fifteen of its members were killed and wounded, and at Old Church on the 30th, where fifteen were killed and wounded. On the 31st of May and 1st of June it was engaged, together with other cavalry regiments, at Cold Harbor, where it fought, dismounted, in advance of the infantry, having eighteen men killed and wounded.

Soon after, the Michigan brigade set out, under Gen. Sheridan, to join Gen. Hunter, who was moving from the Shenandoah Valley towards Lynchburg. On the 11th of June the command met at Trevillian Station a large force of the enemy, both cavalry and infantry. During that day and the next, there ensued one of the severest cavalry fights of the war, the men mostly fighting dismounted with the enemy's infantry, and the 1st Regiment losing fifty-one men in killed and wounded. During the first day the Michigan brigade did almost all the fighting, and no less than six commissioned officers of the 1st Regiment were killed. The brigade battery was three times captured by the rebels, but was each time recaptured by the determined efforts of the Michigan soldiers. Gen. Hunter failed to make the passage of the mountains, and Gen. Sheridan consequently made his way to White House Landing, and then joined Gen. Grant at City Point.

After serving on picket and scout duty through July, 1864, the Michigan brigade was taken on transports to Washington, and thence marched to the Shenandoah Valley. Here it followed Custer in many a desperate charge, fully sustaining its old renown. It was engaged at Front Royal, August 16th, where the 1st Cavalry had eleven killed and wounded; at Shepherdstown, August 20th, where it had six killed and wounded; at Smithfield, September 4th, where there were but four of its number in that list; at Winchester, where the killed and wounded numbered thirty-two; and at Cedar Creek, October 19th, when twenty-seven of its officers and men were slain or injured. Capt. Charles Shier, of Company K, was killed in this action.

During the six months closing on the 1st of November, 1864, the regiment had eighty-two men killed or mortally wounded in action, and one hundred and two less seriously wounded, while only thirty-three died of disease.

In December the Michigan brigade went into winter quarters, near Winchester, and remained until the latter part of February, 1865. On the 27th it started, with the rest of the cavalry, under Gen. Sheridan, on a long and

rapid journey up the Shenandoah Valley, past Staunton, over the mountains, and down the James River. The command met with little opposition, and soon joined Gen. Grant before Petersburg.

On the 30th and 31st days of March and 1st day of April, 1865, the Michigan brigade was warmly engaged at Five Forks. During the first two days the men generally fought mounted. On the 1st of April they charged the enemy mounted, and drove him into his breastworks, and then attacked the fortifications, dismounted, with the rest of Sheridan's corps, capturing the fort with several thousand prisoners. The brigade was constantly engaged in fighting with the enemy from this time until the surrender of Lee, on the 9th of April, at which time it was in the extreme advance, the flag of truce to negotiate the surrender being sent through its lines.

After this, the regiment moved into the edge of North Carolina, then returned to Washington, and immediately after the review of the Army of the Potomac, on the 23d of May, 1865, was sent by rail and steamer to Fort Leavenworth, Kan., whence it was ordered across the Plains. There was much dissatisfaction, but most of the regiment set out on the march, reaching Camp Collins, at the foot of the Rocky Mountains, on the 26th of July. Its headquarters remained there until about the 1st of November, when it was moved to Fort Bridger. There it was consolidated with the 6th and 7th Michigan Cavalry, forming an organization known as the 1st Michigan Veteran Cavalry. Company K was distributed among several other companies. After the consolidation eight companies were sent to Camp Douglas, near Salt Lake City, while four remained at Fort Bridger. The regiment garrisoned those two stations until the 10th of March, 1866, when it was mustered out, paid off, and disbanded. The men were given their choice: to be disbanded in Utah then, or remain till June and then be marched to Fort Leavenworth, without horses or tents. All but about seventy made the former choice. The commutation paid them in lieu of transportation, however, was not enough to carry them home, and on representation of the injustice to Congress, that body voted three hundred and twenty-five dollars to each member of the regiment, minus the amount already paid as commutation money. This gave each member about two hundred and ten dollars extra, which was duly paid them by the government.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE FIRST CAVALRY.

##### *Full and Staff.*

Adj. Henry Beach, Decatur; com. Oct. 25, 1861; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. K, Nov. 18, 1863; capt., Co. G, Dec. 4, 1864.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergt. Maj. James S. McElhenny, Mattawan; enl. October, 1862; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. G, Nov. 12, 1862.

Com. Sergt. Henry B. Babcock, Keeler.

Hosp. Steward Watson N. Shilling, Decatur; veteran, Dec. 21, 1863; must. out Dec. 4, 1865.

##### *Company A.*

Amasa Lyon, disch. for disability, April 24, 1865.

George H. Prentiss, must. out Jan. 4, 1866.

Orlando F. Tracy, died of disease at Fort Leavenworth, June 2, 1865.

##### *Company B.*

1st Lieut. Thos. Stephenson, Paw Paw; com. Dec. 28, 1863; disch. for disability, May 28, 1864.

Alonzo Elenwood, disch. by order, July 19, 1865.

Charles E. Galligan, disch. Aug. 10, 1865.

Mathias Michaels, must. out July 10, 1865.

*Company C.*

1st Lieut. Wm. H. Tucker, Decatur; com. March 7, 1865; 2d lieutenant, Oct. 28, 1865; must. out March 10, 1866.

*Company D.*

1st Lieut. John Munson, Decatur; com. 2d lieutenant, Dec. 4, 1864; pro. to 1st lieutenant, March 7, 1865; must. out March 10, 1866.

*Company E.*

Zebulon Cleveland, must. out July 17, 1865.  
William R. Mills, must. out March 2, 1865.  
Coleman P. Rawson, must. out March 10, 1865.  
Henry Stoddard, must. out March 10, 1866.

*Company F.*

Sergt. Henry B. Babcock, Keeler; pro. to com. sergt.  
William H. Burch, must. out March 25, 1866.  
Seth Stults, must. out March 25, 1866.

*Company G.*

Capt. Henry Beach, Decatur; com. Dec. 4, 1864; must. out March 10, 1866.  
1st Lieut. James S. McElheny, Decatur; com. 2d lieutenant, Nov. 12, 1862; pro. to 1st lieutenant, May 18, 1863; died in action at Fairfield Gap, Va., July 4, 1863.  
Floyd Bisby, must. out March 19, 1866.  
David A. Cornell, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Isaac B. Conner, must. out June 2, 1866.  
Ebenezer Daily, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Cassius M. Field, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Albert Flanders, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Joseph Flanders, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Hudson M. Harris, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Benjamin C. June, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Calvin Lee, must. out March 10, 1866.  
John Loberdy, must. out March 10, 1866.  
William J. Manuel, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Ford Orr, must. out March 10, 1866.  
Seth Orr, must. out Jan. 20, 1866.  
Nathan Ryan, disch. by order, July 19, 1865.

*Company H.*

Orlando Hoard, must. out June 30, 1865.  
Charles H. Johnson, must. out June 30, 1866.

*Company I.*

Augustus Bently, died in action at Gettysburg, Pa., July 3, 1863.  
Oscar A. Eastman, died of wounds at Winchester, Va., Oct. 28, 1864.  
Lucius Hungerford, died of disease, Nov. 1, 1861.  
Lucius L. Judson, veteran, Dec. 21, 1863.  
Ira A. Munger, disch. for disability.  
Edward J. Rickard, veteran, Dec. 21, 1863.  
Irrin H. Skinner, disch. for disability, Nov. 14, 1862.  
Alexander L. Whitford, died of disease, July 19, 1862.

*Company K.*

Capt. Chas. Shier, Jr., Decatur; died of wounds received in action, Oct. 19, 1864.  
1st Lieut. Thos. H. Stephenson, Paw Paw; trans. to 1st lieutenant, Co. B.  
2d Lieut. Henry Beach, Decatur; com. Nov. 18, 1863; pro. to 1st lieutenant and adj., Oct. 25, 1864.  
Sergt. John Munson, Decatur; enl. Nov. 18, 1863; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. D, Dec. 4, 1864.  
Sergt. Wm. H. Tucker, Decatur; enl. Nov. 18, 1863; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. C, Oct. 25, 1864.  
Hiram Ayers, died of disease at Harper's Ferry, Va., April 23, 1865.  
Abner Anger, disch. by order, May 3, 1865.  
Charles Amak, must. out July 10, 1865.  
Percy S. Bowers, must. out July 24, 1865.  
John G. Brouson, disch. by order, May 3, 1865.  
Truman R. Bashford, disch. by order, Aug. 21, 1865.  
Charles S. Cary, disch. by order, June 28, 1865.  
Elhannon J. Copley, must. out July 10, 1865.  
Orange Hays, trans. to Invalid Corps, Sept. 25, 1864.  
Cadmus C. Huntley, disch. for disability, May 3, 1865.  
Joseph W. Jones, disch. by order, July 16, 1865.  
Lewis Meecham, disch. by order, May 3, 1865.  
Peter Mannel, died of wounds at Washington, D. C., July 29, 1864.  
Charles H. Mather, must. out June 21, 1866.  
Theodore G. Northrup, disch. by order, May 19, 1865.  
Samuel H. Painter, disch. by order, June 16, 1865.  
Hiram Revere, disch. by order, Aug. 18, 1865.  
Edgar K. Rickard, must. out June 30, 1866.  
De Witt C. Shattuck, must. out Dec. 8, 1865.  
John Sutter, must. out Nov. 14, 1865.  
Topham Smith, disch. by order, July 16, 1865.  
Alexander Winburn, disch. by order, July 17, 1865.  
John West, disch. for disability, Jan. 10, 1865.

*Company L.*

John P. Clay, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.

*Company M.*

Q.M. Sergt. Lorenzo D. F. Poor, Decatur; enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. at end of service, Aug. 22, 1864.  
Sergt. Gilbert Vincent, Decatur; enl. Aug. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, Nov. 1, 1862.  
Sergt. Jas. S. McElheny, Mattawan; enl. Jan. 1, 1862; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. G.  
Corp. Henry B. Babcock, Keeler; enl. Aug. 16, 1861; veteran, Dec. 21, 1863; pro. to sergt., Co. F.  
William Baker, disch. for disability, September, 1861.  
Benjamin F. Bartholomew, disch. for disability, October, 1862.  
Mathew Burgher, disch. for disability, March 24, 1863.  
John F. Barnum, disch. by order, Aug. 8, 1865.  
Charles Johnson, veteran, Dec. 21, 1863.  
Daniel Knight, disch. for disability.  
Isaac N. Lowe, died of disease at Frederick, Md., Jan. 5, 1862.  
Harris Price, missing in action at Gettysburg, Pa., July 3, 1863.  
James W. Randall, missing in action at Gettysburg, Pa., July 3, 1863.  
John N. Shaw, veteran, enl. Dec. 21, 1863.  
Ezra Serrine, disch. for disability, May, 1862.  
Richard L. Shaw, must. out July 23, 1866.  
Albert Vincent, died of disease.  
Enos B. Wilcox, died of disease at Detroit, Mich., Feb. 27, 1863.

## BERRIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE FIRST CAVALRY.

*Company B.*

Isaac R. Johnson, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.

*Company C.*

John Carrier, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
Albert H. Waters, must. out March 10, 1866.

*Company D.*

Anthony Trombly, must. out March 10, 1866.

*Company E.*

Samuel Nolan, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
Theodore Parmelee, must. out Aug. 8, 1865.  
P. K. Sampson, must. out March 10, 1866.

*Company F.*

Mark A. Aiken, must. out March 25, 1866.  
John Abbott, must. out July 15, 1865.  
Chas. Hagerman, must. out May 11, 1865.  
Chas. Pennell, must. out March 25, 1866.

*Company H.*

Shadrach Cole, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.

*Company K.*

Robert Diamond, died of disease.  
John W. Hatfield, must. out Nov. 30, 1865.  
James H. Leland, disch. by order, June 5, 1865.  
Charles Wilson, disch. by order, June 7, 1865.

*Company M.*

2d Lieut. Richard H. Van Atta, Watervliet; com. Nov. 12, 1862; sergt.; corp., Aug. 20, 1861; res. March 24, 1865.  
Alonzo Bullock, died of disease at Strasburg, Va., April 2, 1862.  
Harrison Branch, disch. for disability, Feb. 2, 1862.  
Francis Barclay, disch. at end of service, Aug. 22, 1864.  
Theodore A. Barnum, disch. at end of service, Aug. 22, 1864.  
Solomon Brummer, disch. by order, May 17, 1865.  
Peter Baldwin, veteran, enl. Dec. 21, 1863; must. out Aug. 7, 1865.  
Henry Benchman, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
Harrison H. Cole, disch. at end of service, Aug. 22, 1864.  
Alfred Cook, disch. at end of service, Sept. 24, 1864.  
John C. Cleland, missing in action at Buck's Mills, Oct. 19, 1863.  
Oscar W. Elliott, veteran, enl. Dec. 21, 1863; must. out Nov. 24, 1865.  
Joseph H. Fisher, must. out Nov. 24, 1865.  
Micah W. Grimes, died of wounds, Sept. 2, 1864.  
W. R. Hopkins, must. out July 10, 1865.  
Wilbur Moore, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
George W. Miles, disch. by order, May 15, 1865.  
Edward O'Donnell, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
Simon Shrickengast, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
George W. Walcott, disch. at end of service, Sept. 6, 1864.

## SECOND CAVALRY.

Of this regiment about fifty men, in all, were from Berrien and Van Buren Counties. It left Grand Rapids for St. Louis in November, 1861, remaining at the latter place until March, 1862. It then took part in the operations near New Madrid and Island No. 10. In May, 1862, it proceeded to Corinth, Miss., and was occupied

throughout the summer in cavalry duty in Northern Mississippi and Western Tennessee. Its colonel was then Philip H. Sheridan, now lieutenant-general, who had recently been detailed from duty as a captain in the regular army to receive the colonelcy lately vacated by the promotion of Gen. Gordon Granger. Col. Sheridan commanded the brigade consisting of the 2d Michigan, 2d Iowa, and 7th Kansas Cavalry, and at its head made numerous excursions through the country around Corinth, to keep down guerrillas and learn the movements of the enemy.

Early in the autumn, however, Col. Sheridan was made a brigadier-general of volunteers and transferred to the Army of the Cumberland, and about the same time the 2d Cavalry was sent to Kentucky. In December, 1862, and January, 1863, it was engaged in a movement into East Tennessee, the men being in the saddle twenty-two days and taking part in several sharp skirmishes. Soon afterwards it moved into Tennessee, and for several months its headquarters were at or near Murfreesboro', while it was almost constantly engaged in scouting and raids through Middle Tennessee.

On the 25th of March, 1863, it had a sharp encounter with a large rebel force under Gen. N. B. Forrest, killing and wounding many and capturing fifty-two prisoners. The 2d had seven men killed and wounded. On the 4th of June it had another brisk skirmish between Franklin and Triune, five of its men being killed and wounded.

When the army advanced from Murfreesboro' in June, 1863, the 2d accompanied it in the cavalry division, driving the enemy from Shelbyville, Middletown, and other points. In the autumn it was engaged in scouting around Chattanooga, at one time being part of a force which chased Gen. Wheeler's cavalry one hundred and ninety-one miles in six days (October 3d to 8th inclusive). In November it marched into East Tennessee, and on the 24th of December it participated in an attack on a large force of the enemy at Dandridge, Tenn., having ten men killed and wounded. On the 26th of January, 1864, the 2d with other forces attacked a brigade of rebel cavalry on Pigeon River, capturing three pieces of artillery and seventy-five prisoners, and having eleven of its own men wounded.

Three hundred and twenty-eight of the men re-enlisted as veterans, and in April went home on veteran furlough. The rest of the regiment accompanied Gen. Sherman in his Atlanta campaign, having several sharp skirmishes with the enemy, but being ordered back from Lost Mountain to Franklin, Tenn., where they were rejoined by the veterans in July. During the summer and autumn it was busily engaged in marching through Middle Tennessee, fighting with the horsemen of Forrest and other rebel generals.

On the 5th of November, 1864, the regiment was attacked at Shoal Creek, Ala., by a large Confederate force (a part of Hood's army, then advancing against Nashville), and was forced back with heavy loss. It steadily fell back, skirmishing almost constantly with the enemy, and at Franklin, on the 30th of November, it resisted his advance all day, having eighteen officers and men killed and wounded.

After Hood's defeat before Nashville, the 2d pressed hard

on his rear, and at Richland Creek, on the 24th of December, charged repeatedly, driving the foe sixteen miles, and having seven men killed and wounded. After Hood's final retreat from the State the regiment remained mostly in Middle Tennessee until March 11, 1865, when it set out on a long raid through Northern Alabama to Tuscaloosa, thence through Talladega to Macon, Ga., where it arrived on the 1st day of May, 1865.

After remaining in Georgia, on garrison duty until the 17th of August, the regiment was mustered out and sent home, arriving at Jackson on the 25th of August, where it was paid off and disbanded.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE SECOND CAVALRY.

##### Company L.

- Capt. Bevalvel P. Wells, Niles; com. Aug. 24, 1861; must. out Oct. 22, 1864.  
 Capt. Richard F. Williams, Niles; com. Oct. 22, 1864; 2d lieutenant, March 1, 1864; sergeant; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. Andrew J. Foster, Niles; com. Aug. 24, 1861; res. Aug. 31, 1862.  
 1st Lieut. John Hutton, Niles; com. Sept. 9, 1862; 2d lieutenant, Sept. 2, 1861; res. April 9, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. Joseph N. Stevens, Niles; com. April 15, 1863; 1st sergeant, Aug. 24, 1861; must. out Oct. 22, 1864.  
 Sergt. Robert S. Longreel, Niles; enl. Sept. 7, 1861; pro. to 2d lieutenant; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Sergt. Wm. H. Wynne, Niles; enl. Sept. 14, 1861; veteran, Jan. 5, 1864; pro. to 3d lieutenant; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Mark A. P. Chipman, Niles; enl. Sept. 7, 1861; disch. April 2, 1863.  
 Wm. H. Barnhouse, Niles; enl. Sept. 14, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 22, 1864.  
 John Lamour, Niles; enl. Sept. 7, 1861; veteran, Jan. 4, 1864; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Corp. Frank H. Cross, Niles; enl. Sept. 13, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 22, 1864.  
 Orville D. Carlisle, Niles; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. for disability, Nov. 4, 1862.  
 Ira Hagerty, Niles; enl. Sept. 6, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 22, 1864.  
 James Schram, Niles; enl. Sept. 14, 1861; sergeant; disch. at end of service, Oct. 22, 1864.  
 Farrier Freeman Hitchcock, Niles; enl. Sept. 11, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 22, 1864.  
 John Arnsburgh, must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 John Bee, died July 1, 1862, of wounds received at Farmington, Miss.  
 Harrison L. Baxter, must. out Feb. 16, 1866.  
 Henry D. Benson, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Ransom Bird-ball, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Ashley Carlisle, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 David E. Cook, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
 Nelson W. Corwin, died of disease at Farmington, Miss., July 22, 1862.  
 Getson Clark, died of disease at Rienzi, Miss., Aug. 6, 1862.  
 John B. Cusney, disch. for disability, Oct. 3, 1862.  
 Nelson W. Crippen, disch. for disability, Dec. 22, 1862.  
 Herman Chapman, must. out May 24, 1865.  
 Augustus Conrad, must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 James Dewitt, disch. for disability, July 14, 1862.  
 James Dunn, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Wm. H. Dodge, disch. for disability, Dec. 4, 1863.  
 Delos Ellis, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Chas. W. Granger, disch. for disability, July 16, 1862.  
 Hamilton McKean, must. out Dec. 5, 1865.  
 Orrin Wray, died in battle at Gettysburg, Pa., July 3, 1863.  
 Edward Hollister, disch. for disability, Nov. 27, 1862.  
 Jacob Hand, veteran, enl. Jan. 8, 1864; drowned in Sopsie River, Ala., April 16, 1865.  
 Albert W. Hayward, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1865.  
 Charles Hudson, veteran, enl. Jan. 8, 1864; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Chas. Kennicott, disch. for disability, Sept. 15, 1862.  
 Wm. Kelley, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Joseph M. Lester, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Civilian S. Lee, must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Frank Maxwell, must. out June 19, 1865.  
 Chester Niles, disch. for disability, July 15, 1862.  
 Benj. F. Rugg, disch. for disability, July 16, 1862.  
 Franklin B. Rice, veteran, enl. Jan. 5, 1864; disch. by order, July 4, 1865.  
 Loren A. Rice, must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Edgar Sanford, disch. for disability, Oct. 20, 1862.  
 Marvin E. Scott, disch. for disability, May 14, 1862.  
 John W. Stone, disch. for disability, May 14, 1862.  
 Franklin Stevens, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Geo. S. Schram, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Frank J. Stevens, died of wounds at Thompson's Station, March 4, 1863.  
 Colonel I. Stephens, died of disease at Nashville, Dec. 29, 1864.



Geo. Smith, veteran, enl. Jan. 5, 1864; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Geo. Shear, veteran, enl. Jan. 5, 1864; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Aylmer Taggart, disch. for disability, Oct. 10, 1862.  
 Anthony Turner, disch. at end of service, Oct. 28, 1865.  
 Chas. Vallean, veteran, enl. Jan. 5, 1864; must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Cornelius Young, disch. for disability, Aug. 9, 1862.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE SECOND CAVALRY.

##### *Company I.*

2d Lieut. Alonzo W. Carty, com. Sept. 24, 1864; resigned.  
 Sergt. Frank H. Lamkin, enl. Sept. 11, 1861; died of disease.  
 Sergt. Oscar Caldwell, enl. Sept. 1, 1861; disch. for disability.  
 Sergt. Alonzo W. McCarty, enl. Sept. 11, 1861; veteran, Jan. 5, 1864; pro. to 2d lieut.  
 Sergt. Gilbert Mitchell, enl. Sept. 13, 1861; veteran, Jan. 5, 1864; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. L.  
 Renben A. Lambkin, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., April 1, 1863.  
 George S. Steward, veteran, enl. Jan. 5, 1864.

##### *Company K.*

William H. Brotherton, must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 James Freeman, must. out Aug. 17, 1865.

##### *Company L.*

1st Lieut. Gilbert Mitchell, com. Feb. 20, 1865; trans. to 136th Regt., U. S. C. T., June 22, 1865.  
 John C. Barker, must. out Aug. 17, 1865.  
 Hiram Daily, must. out March 10, 1866.

## CHAPTER XIV.

### THIRD CAVALRY.

Organization of the Third Cavalry at Grand Rapids—Departure for the Front—Capture of Prisoners by Capt. Botham—Long Campaigning in Mississippi and West Tennessee—Veteran Re-enlistment and Furlough—Subsequent Duty in Arkansas, at Mobile, and in Texas—Mustering Out at San Antonio—List of Van Buren and Berrien County Members.

THIS regiment, raised in the southwestern part of the State, contained in all about one hundred men from Berrien County and about two hundred from Van Buren. Capt. Thomas H. Botham, of St. Joseph, in the former county, raised Company L, principally in that place and vicinity, and Capt. Hudson organized Company C from among the young men of Van Buren County. Company A was also largely from the latter county. The regiment was recruited during the summer and autumn of 1861, its rendezvous being at Grand Rapids.

It left that place for St. Louis on the 28th of November, under Col. John K. Mizner. It remained at Benton Barracks, St. Louis, until February, 1862, when it joined the army of Gen. Pope, in the vicinity of New Madrid, Mo. It was then actively engaged in picket duty and other cavalry service, and one battalion supported the heavy guns placed in position before New Madrid.

After the capture of that place and Island No. 10, the 3d was sent to Pittsburg Landing, where it arrived soon after the battle of Shiloh, and took an active part in the advance of Gen. Halleck's army upon Corinth. During this period, about the middle of April, a battalion of the 3d Michigan, containing Companies L and C, and a battalion of an Illinois cavalry regiment were sent out to repel the enemy's horse, which had driven in the Union pickets. A skirmish ensued and the rebels retreated. Company G, under Capt. Botham, an old soldier of the British army, dashed forward on the right to intercept their retreat. Coming to a deep creek, with miry bottom and banks, the

captain plunged in. His mare fell under him, but he urged her up, and with great difficulty made his way through. Some of his men attempted to follow, and as he supposed they would all be able to cross he galloped forward at full speed towards the foe.

As he approached the point where the road he was following struck at an acute angle the one on which the rebels were retreating, he found himself alone, though he could see that at least a few of his men were getting through the creek. Riding into a thick undergrowth in the forks of the road, he saw a hundred or more horsemen dash past him, eager to get out of the way of the Yankees. Then they came in scattering groups of six, eight, or ten men together. Capt. Botham saw that something must be done quickly if any of the rebels were to be caught, and so, relying on the speedy arrival of his men, he spurred out in front of a group of eight, who were making the best of their way to the rear, brandished his sabre and shouted, in stentorian tones,—

"Halt, dismount! You are surrounded by a thousand men. Throw down your arms or you will all be cut to pieces!"

The captain had lost his hat while struggling through the creek, and with his waving sabre and streaming beard, his horse covered with mud and his face with dust, looked decidedly ferocious. The fugitives, too, naturally supposed that he was followed by at least a company, and the group of eight already mentioned at once dismounted and threw down their arms. As they did so, two more of Company L, Lewis Seymour and Cochrane, who were all that had succeeded in getting through the creek, joined Capt. Botham, and aided in guarding the prisoners. Scattering rebels continued to come up, dismount, and throw down their arms until the three Unionists had thirteen captives. Another man dismounted and fled into the brush, leaving his horse, which joined the others and raised the number of captured steeds to fourteen. Others of the fleeing Confederates, seeing what was going on, rode aside into the forest and escaped. The three Unionists then guarded their prisoners until the rest of the company came up.\*

Immediately after the evacuation of Corinth the 3d Cavalry was ordered to Booneville, a few miles south of the former place. Soon afterwards the Berrien County and Van Buren County companies (L and C), under Capt. Botham, were ordered to advance and ascertain the position and strength of the enemy. After finding a rebel force of all arms, halting and remaining out all night, the detachment again advanced the next morning, but halted to get some breakfast. While doing so the enemy was discovered by a scout. The command left their breakfast half eaten, mounted, and hurried forward. They soon found a small body of horsemen, who fled before them.

The Union horsemen advanced at a rapid pace, and soon found an entire regiment of rebel cavalry disputing their progress. There was no time for consideration. If the

\* The writer might possibly have looked with some suspicion on this account, though received from the most authentic source, had he not known beyond question of a similar occurrence, which happened not far from Corinth the following year. Such events were not common, but they did sometimes happen.

little command had then retreated, it would have been attacked and crushed by the elated Confederates. Capt. Botham knew it was essential for cavalry to get the advantage of its own momentum in a combat, and accordingly shouted the order to charge. The detachment dashed forward at the top of its speed, burst through the Confederate lines, and then turned and charged back. The enemy was so demoralized by these movements that no attempt was made to follow. How many of the foe were killed and wounded was not known, but it was certain that at least eleven were dismounted, for eleven of their horses accompanied the Union force on its returning charge. After retreating a short distance, Capt. Botham halted and sent a dispatch to camp. About four o'clock in the afternoon he was relieved by the 2d Michigan Cavalry, under the command of Col. Philip H. Sheridan. The latter drove back the enemy four or five miles, and then rejoined the main army.

The regiment was actively engaged in the usual cavalry duty of picketing and scouting throughout the whole season. Through the month of August it was at Tusculum and Russellville, Ala. On the approach of Price's rebel cavalry it returned to the vicinity of Corinth. Just before the battle of Corinth, while a detachment was scouting in the dark, an advance-guard of two or three, among whom was Mr. Cross, now postmaster at Lawrence, was startled by the question, coming almost from their horses' feet:

"What the devil are you doing? Take care where you ride, or your horses will step on us."

They had ridden unsuspectingly into a group of rebels who seemed to have lain down without a guard. They got out of their dangerous position as soon as possible. After the battle of Corinth the regiment had some sharp skirmishing with the foe at Hudsonville, capturing a whole rebel company at once. The regiment was with the advance of Gen. Grant's army in Mississippi, and shared the defeat inflicted on the cavalry at Coffeeville. During the winter it was on duty in North Mississippi and West Tennessee.

On the 1st of April, 1863, near Lexington, Tenn., Capt. Terry Harvey and Private Malloy, both of Bangor, Van Buren Co., while out together chased and captured seven guerrillas, who supposed there were more Yankees in the rear. The very next day "Del" Cross captured a rebel with a loaded rifle and revolver by drawing an empty pistol on him.\*

During the year 1863 the 3d Cavalry was principally engaged in the arduous service of driving out the numerous bands of guerrillas which infested Western Tennessee and Northern Mississippi, and repelling the incursions of Confederate forces from other quarters, its camp being most of the time at Corinth, Miss. There were few very severe battles in this kind of warfare, and few opportunities for winning martial glory amid the shock of charging squadrons, but it tested to the utmost the endurance, the fortitude, and the patriotism of the hardy sons of the West. Day and night, in sun and rain, the cavalry was kept in motion. Often, when all the camp lay locked in the

deep slumbers of two o'clock in the morning, the silence would suddenly be broken by the stirring sounds of the bugle, and a moment later the officers would be heard going from tent to tent, arousing the half-awakened men with the orders, "Turn out here, Company B." "Turn out, Company F." "Get ready to march, with three days' rations." "Lively now; lively, I say."

Then would follow a hurried drawing of rations, the filling of haversacks and saddle-bags with coffee, pork, and "hard tack," and perhaps the cooking of a hasty meal for immediate consumption. Presently the bugles would sound "Boot and Saddle," the horses would be speedily equipped, mounted, and ridden into line, the voices of a dozen captains would be heard in succession commanding "Fours Right—Column Right—March!" and away into the darkness would go the 3d Michigan, or the 7th Kansas, or the 3d Iowa, or any two of them, or all of them, as the occasion might seem to require.

Nobody would know where they were going except the field-officers, and very frequently they didn't; but all sorts of rumors would pass rapidly among the boys. "Forrest is coming to attack the camp;" "Roddy is out here ten miles;" "Chalmers is raising the devil over at Holly Springs," etc. A ride would follow, perhaps lasting two or three hours, perhaps extending through three or four days and half as many nights, and sometimes embracing a period of one, two, or three weeks, during which the bold riders were generally compelled to live upon the country they traversed. In that half-cleared country there was seldom an opportunity for the dashing charge which one naturally associates with the idea of cavalry service; but whenever they met the foe, which was quite frequently, both sides dismounted, and a lively skirmish with carbines against shot-guns ensued, which lasted until one party or the other retreated. The retreating party was usually, though not always, the rebels, as the best Confederate troops, after the battle of Corinth, in October, 1862, were taken away to other sections, leaving only undisciplined bands of what was called "shot-gun cavalry" in Northern Mississippi and Western Tennessee.

In such tasks the 3d Michigan Cavalry was engaged throughout 1863, taking part in sharp fights, and generally defeating the enemy: at Clifton on the 20th of February; at Panola, Miss., on the 20th of July; at Byhalia, Miss., on the 12th of October; at Wyatt's Ford, Miss., on the 13th of October. At Grenada, Miss., also, on the 14th of August, the 3d led the Union advance, and, after a vigorous fight, drove back the enemy, captured the town, and destroyed more than sixty locomotives and four hundred cars, gathered there by the Confederate authorities.

In the latter part of January, 1864, the regiment being then in winter quarters at Lagrange, Tenn., three-fourths of the men enlisted, and the command became the 3d Michigan Veteran Cavalry. After enjoying their veteran furlough the command went to St. Louis in March, 1864, and in the latter part of May proceeded, dismounted, to Little Rock, Ark. It was not mounted until the 1st of August, when it resumed the work of chasing guerrillas, scouting for information, etc., with an experience similar to that already described.

\*For these and other incidents we are indebted to the diary of Capt. Rowland, of Paw Paw.

From November, 1864, to February, 1865, the 3d was in garrison at Brownsville Station, on the Memphis and Little Rock Railroad, where the men built such a fine-appearing set of quarters and stables that the place was commonly called Michigan City, instead of Brownsville Station. In March, 1865, the regiment, as a part of the 1st Brigade, 1st Division, 7th Army Corps, proceeded to New Orleans, and in April continued its course to Mobile. After the capture of that place the 3d was on outpost duty in that vicinity until the 8th of May, when it marched to Baton Rouge, La. In June it set out for Texas by the way of Shreveport, and on the 2d of August arrived at San Antonio, in that State. Its headquarters remained at San Antonio until the 15th of February, 1866, while successive detachments were scouting the country, protecting the frontier against Mexicans and Indians.

In February, 1866, the regiment was dismounted, mustered out, and sent home, being paid off and disbanded at Jackson, Mich., on the 15th of March, 1866, after a service of four years and a half, unsurpassed as to hardship and fidelity by that of any other regiment in the army. It is claimed to have captured during the time over two thousand five hundred prisoners, besides those taken in co-operation with other regiments.

#### OFFICERS AND MEN OF THE THIRD CAVALRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

##### *Field and Staff.*

Maj. Wm. S. Burton, South Haven; com. Sept. 7, 1861; res. Dec. 2, 1864.  
Maj. Gilbert J. Hudson, Paw Paw; com. Nov. 1, 1862; must. out June 6, 1865.  
Surg. Josiah Andrews, Paw Paw; com. Sept. 7, 1861; honorably disch. at end of service, Oct. 21, 1864.  
Asst. Surg. Lucius C. Woodman, Paw Paw; com. Sept. 7, 1861; pro. to surg. 11th Cav., Oct. 7, 1863.  
Surg. Albert Thompson, Lawton; com. Oct. 4, 1864; asst. surg. March 31, 1864; hospital steward; 2d lieutenant, Oct. 1, 1862; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Chaplain Asa Harmon, Paw Paw; com. Dec. 10, 1862; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

##### *Company A.*

Capt. Barney Dyckman, South Haven; com. Jan. 13, 1862; res. Oct. 24, 1864.  
Sergt. John McDonald, Paw Paw; enl. June 9, 1865; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Corp. Ezra Whaley, Bloomingdale; enl. Aug. 30, 1861; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Musician Benj. F. Bridges, Bloomingdale; enl. Sept. 2, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
James Alger, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Homer E. Boughman, veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Charles M. Brown, disch. for disability, Dec. 9, 1862.  
Cyrus Brown, disch. by order, Feb. 3, 1863.  
Edwin A. Colwell, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
Marcus F. Clark, disch. for disability, July 13, 1862.  
Charles M. Coon, must. out Oct. 7, 1865.  
George Fowler, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., May 27, 1862.  
Charles Ives, must. out Oct. 5, 1865.  
Ford Mauch, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Sherbis Mitchelson, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
James H. Miller, veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
William McMechan, disch. for disability, March 28, 1864.  
Francis M. Pearson, veteran, Jan. 19, 1864.  
Benjamin Parker, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Obed W. Quint, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
William A. Robinson, disch. for disability, Jan. 20, 1863.  
William Rice, disch. at end of service, Oct. 20, 1864.  
Aaron Scott, veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Marion M. Smith, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

##### *Company B.*

John Abbott, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Frank Brauch, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Harrison Hilliard, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Ransom D. Norton, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Uziah Osborn, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
David H. Wiard, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

##### *Company C.*

Capt. Gilbert J. Hudson, Paw Paw; com. Sept. 17, 1861; pro. to maj., Nov. 1, 1862.  
Capt. Orrin W. Rowland, Lawrence; com. Nov. 17, 1864; 1st Lieut., Co. I; must. out June 6, 1865.

1st Lieut. Joseph W. Huston, Paw Paw; com. Sept. 17, 1861; res. Jan. 12, 1862.  
1st Lieut. Barney Dyckman, South Haven; com. Jan. 13, 1862; 2d lieutenant, Sept. 17, 1861; pro. to capt., Co. A.  
1st Lieut. Henry Chatfield, South Haven; com. Nov. 7, 1864; 2d lieutenant; res. June 12, 1865.  
2d Lieut. Albert H. Thompson, Paw Paw; com. Jan. 13, 1862; sergt.; res. Oct. 12, 1862.  
Q.M. Sergt. Henry A. Rogers, Paw Paw; com. Sept. 17, 1861; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. L.  
Sergt. Benj. F. Ewing, Bangor; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. for disability, Nov. 30, 1863.  
Sergt. Noble D. Richardson, Arlington; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. for disability, April 6, 1862.  
Sergt. Minard McNeil, Lawton; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
Sergt. Orrin W. Rowland, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. E.  
Sergt. Charles S. Daskam, Paw Paw; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; pro. to 2d lieutenant, Co. F, Nov. 17, 1864.  
Corp. John Blaisdell, Arlington; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. for disability, Nov. 22, 1862.  
Corp. Arnot Dopy, Lawrence; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. for disability, Dec. 29, 1862.  
Corp. Wm. H. Durker, Paw Paw; enl. Sept. 17, 1861 (sergt.); disch. at end of service, March 3, 1865.  
Corp. Joseph G. Van Dyke, South Haven; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. for disability, March 28, 1864.  
Corp. John Mahard, Lawton; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. for disability, July 27, 1862.  
Corp. John McDonald, Paw Paw; enl. Sept. 17, 1861 (sergt.); trans. to Co. A; veteran, Jan. 18, 1864.  
Corp. Orrin W. Cross, Bangor; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. Sept. 16, 1862.  
Corp. Isaiah L. Bates, Porter; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; sergeant; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Musician Philo N. Ferguson, Paw Paw; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 3, 1864.  
Musician George M. D. Tucker, Arlington; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Farrier Edward D. Ormsby, Porter; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; disch. at end of service, Feb. 7, 1864.  
Farrier Hiram A. Randall, South Haven; enl. Sept. 17, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Archibald Abbott, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
Cornelius Buys, disch. for disability, Feb. 14, 1863.  
Job C. Bunnell, disch. for disability, May 13, 1863.  
Orson M. Baker, disch. for disability, Oct. 16, 1864.  
Eli Beardslee, died of disease at Duval's Bluff, Ark., Aug. 14, 1864.  
Charles Branch, died of disease, March 24, 1865.  
Walter Bowman, missing in action at Lagrange, Tenn., Aug. 28, 1864.  
Isaac L. Bates, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
John G. Bousied, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
George A. Cross, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
John D. Chandler, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Daniel S. Camp, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
Jesse Cooper, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
Burrell A. Cross, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
Joseph Don, Jr., died of wounds, April 29, 1862.  
Andrew J. Dally, died at Corinth, Miss., Nov. 14, 1863.  
Andrew Donovan, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Oct. 23, 1865.  
John H. Dolson, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Roswell Earl, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Ebenezer Ewart, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
William Ewers, missing at Brownsville, Ark., Dec. 22, 1864.  
William Ewart, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
William W. Finley, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Selim P. Fuller, died of disease at Detroit, Mich., Oct. 14, 1862.  
James F. Fussett, died of disease at Corinth, Miss., Nov. 8, 1863.  
Daniel P. Fuller, disch. by order, Jan. 2, 1866.  
Abram F. Foster, disch. for disability, March 28, 1864.  
James Gilbert, disch. for disability, Feb. 3, 1863.  
Ernest Geisen, disch. for disability.  
Oliver E. Goodale, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
John P. Gross, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Delos Gage, must. out June 2, 1865.  
James Harris, disch. for disability, Nov. 8, 1862.  
Spencer N. Hurlbut, disch. for promotion, Jan. 31, 1864.  
Orville O. Hoxie, died of disease at Duval's Bluff, Ark., Aug. 10, 1864.  
Albert Hurlbut, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Samuel P. Harvey, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Edwin S. Hofmeyer, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out June 2, 1866.  
Mitchell H. Hofmeyer, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out June 2, 1865.  
William H. Huston, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
James Hennessey, must. out June 2, 1865.  
Franklin Kelly, must. out June 2, 1865.  
Marvin Kidney, disch. at end of service, Feb. 14, 1865.  
John R. Kinney, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
Julius H. Kelley, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.



John R. King, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1861.  
 Charles O. King, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Samuel Lutz, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
 Loren E. Lamphere, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1861; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Joseph W. Luce, disch. for disability, Nov. 7, 1862.  
 Huns Lamont, disch. for disability.  
 Jerome B. Marshall, disch. for disability, July 1, 1862.  
 Judson J. Moses, disch. for disability, June 27, 1862.  
 William H. Moon, disch. for disability, April 6, 1862.  
 Eugene W. Moon, disch. for disability, July 29, 1863.  
 O. D. Martin, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 Eben W. Monroe, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 Andrew S. Moses, died of disease at Hamburg, Tenn., June 2, 1862.  
 Samuel C. Mallory, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
 Ronald McDonald, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 William M. Nichols, disch. for disability, July 24, 1862.  
 R. C. Nyman, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 George W. Peabody, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 19, 1866.  
 Enoch M. Pease, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 19, 1866.  
 Franklin M. Pierce, disch. for disability, Jan. 10, 1865.  
 James M. Parrish, disch. for disability, Dec. 16, 1863.  
 Lyman S. Russell, disch. by order, Sept. 16, 1863.  
 Clark G. Russell, disch. by order, Sept. 16, 1863.  
 Hiram L. Royall, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John B. Shuler, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
 Stacy N. Stearns, disch. for disability, Nov. 7, 1862.  
 J. Swan, disch. for disability, Jan. 11, 1863.  
 William J. Smith, disch. for disability, Oct. 7, 1864.  
 John Showers, disch. for disability, Oct. 23, 1862.  
 Silas J. Southrell, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., Jan. 12, 1862.  
 Otis Sinclair, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo.  
 James B. Travis, died of disease at New Madrid, Mo., April 5, 1862.  
 Uriah Utley, disch. July 1, 1862.  
 Henry Van Duzer, disch. April 21, 1863.  
 A. Voorhees, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 William H. Wovelhen, disch. for disability.  
 Claudius D. Wright, died of disease at Rienzi, Miss., Aug. 19, 1862.  
 William H. Ward, died at Corinth, Miss., Nov. 15, 1863.  
 Henry A. Wells, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 David M. Ward, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864.  
 R. C. Wyman, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

#### Company D.

Horace B. Buss, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Charles Hilliard, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Talcut Shaver, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

#### Company E.

2d Lieut. Orrin W. Rowland, com. April 29, 1863; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. I, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 Mark Dawson, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Benjamin Sisson, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

#### Company F.

2d Lieut. Chas. S. Daskam, Paw Paw; enl. Nov. 17, 1864, sergt., Co. C; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John Q. Bousted, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Ebenezer Ewers, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Julius Hamilton, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Martin A. House, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Dempster Lamphere, must. out June 19, 1865.  
 Lemuel E. Mallory, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Lyman Mills, disch. Aug. 24, 1862.  
 Fernando Rhodes, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

#### Company H.

1st Lieut. Henry A. Rogers, Paw Paw; com. Dec. 11, 1862; 2d lieut., Co. L, July 12, 1862; res. Aug. 13, 1863.  
 Ezra A. Exceca, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 William Hinkley, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Elbert E. Taylor, died of disease at Jefferson Barracks, Mo., Aug. 20, 1865.

#### Company I.

1st Lieut. Orrin W. Rowland, Lawrence; com. Oct. 24, 1864; pro. to capt., Co. C.  
 2d Lieut. Wm. A. Woodward, Lawrence; com. Oct. 20, 1865.  
 Marion C. Benjamin, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 James Bridges, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Julius F. Kelly, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Truman K. Lamphere, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Otis E. Lamphere, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Samuel Lutz, disch. for disability, Oct. 22, 1865.  
 William Patterson, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Andrew I. Richmond, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Mahan Richardson, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Hiram K. Wells, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 James Widner, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.

#### Company K.

Wm. T. Carpenter, died of disease, Sept. 14, 1864.

#### Company L.

2d Lieut. Henry A. Rogers, Paw Paw; com. July 12, 1862; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. H.

#### Company M.

Redford Boyce, died of disease at Brownville, Ark., Nov. 29, 1864.  
 William Clakes, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Orrin S. Hoag, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Alfred T. Ingram, disch. by order, June 21, 1866.  
 Achilles Long, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., July 6, 1864.  
 Hugh McPherson, must. out Oct. 9, 1865.  
 John McDougall, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Nicholas Newman, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., July 20, 1864.  
 Charles Pratt, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Robert Orr, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Henry Pease, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Wm. S. Parker, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 J. Paul, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., Aug. 6, 1864.  
 Adrian Rathbun, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 William Swick, died of disease at New Orleans, La., April 19, 1865.  
 Jason M. Van Tassel, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 George W. Williams, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., March 25, 1864.

### BERRIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE THIRD CAVALRY.

#### Non-commissioned Staff.

Sergt. Maj. Wm. B. Philips, Niles; pro. to 2d lieut.; died of disease in Missouri, March 25, 1862.  
 Q.M. Sergt. Aaron Rowe, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, April 27, 1862.

#### Company L.

Capt. Thomas H. Botham, St. Joseph; com. Sept. 18, 1861; res. June 18, 1862.  
 1st Lieut. Monroe G. Carlton, St. Joseph; com. Sept. 18, 1861; pro. to capt.; res. June 18, 1862.  
 2d Lieut. Harvey L. Drew, Niles; com. Aug. 13, 1862; pro. to 1st lieut., Co. M, Dec. 20, 1862; res. Nov. 14, 1864.  
 2d Lieut. Samuel W. Boyle, St. Joseph; com. Nov. 4, 1864; trans. to Co. D; pro. to 1st lieut., Oct. 17, 1865; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Sergt. Cornelius Williams, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 21, 1861; disch. for disability, Dec. 16, 1862.  
 Sergt. Theoph. Hardenbrook, Okonoko; enl. Sept. 21, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; disch. by order, Sept. 12, 1865.  
 Sergt. Wm. I. Barber, Berrien; enl. Sept. 20, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; disch. for disability, Jan. 19, 1865.  
 Sergt. Thomas Mackay, Hagar; enl. Sept. 22, 1861; disch. by order, Jan. 15, '63.  
 Corp. Mike Galvin, Niles; enl. Sept. 20, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 Corp. Patrick Daly, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 23, 1861; disch. for disability April 19, 1864.  
 Corp. Nelson Patterson, Sodus; enl. Sept. 20, 1861; veteran, Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Corp. Lewis Seymour, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 18, 1861; disch. for disability, April 7, 1863.  
 Corp. Edward R. Foster, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 22, 1861; died of disease at Macon, Ga., Aug. 14, 1862.  
 Corp. Jesse Jones, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 22, 1861; disch. for disability, Jan. 14, 1863.  
 Musician Andrew J. Acker, Buchanan; enl. Sept. 20, 1861; disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 Musician Leander McDougal, Sodus; enl. Sept. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, June 15, 1862.  
 Farrier Robert Badgely, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 18, 1861; died of disease in Missouri, March 26, 1862.  
 Alonzo Avery, died of disease at Cincinnati, Ohio, June 18, 1862.  
 Joseph Boudin, died of disease in Tennessee, May 31, 1862.  
 Stephen Bailey, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; died of disease in Arkansas, Nov. 4, 1864.  
 Orrin F. Boyle, disch. for disability, October, 1862.  
 Lacey Brant, disch. for disability, Sept. 25, 1863.  
 Andrew Bassford, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 George M. Brant, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 S. W. Bayless, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Andrew D. Barnum, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Wm. Blakesley, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Nicholas Bartling, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Charles D. Case, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Nov. 4, 1865.  
 Ezra Dowell, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.  
 George J. Davis, disch. for disability, Oct. 17, 1862.  
 James Drake, disch. for disability, April 8, 1863.  
 Louis Eckhardt, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 William Freund, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Philletus Farr, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Antoine Geraw, must. out Sept. 1, 1865.  
 Orlando S. Gans, disch. for disability, April 12, 1862.  
 Louis Grabfetter, disch. for disability, Nov. 21, 1865.  
 John Graw, died of disease at Sodus, Mich., Aug. 16, 1864.  
 Jesse Hedges, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., March 26, 1862.  
 Francis M. Hardenbrook, disch. for disability, Aug. 1, 1862.

John Heath, di-ch. for disability, Jan. 30, 1863.  
 Henry Hammer, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Henry Hoffman, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Henry Hedrick, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Asabel I. Howard, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 F. B. Hardenbrook, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Lewis W. Jones, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Lewis Lamb, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 George W. McCormick, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John McLellan, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John E. Madison, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Henry Mellen, died of disease at New Madrid, Mo., April 9, 1862.  
 Charles W. Morse, died of disease at St. Joseph, Mich., June 16, 1862.  
 Patrick Madigan, died of disease at Cincinnati, Ohio, June 13, 1862.  
 Albert Nichols, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John Proper, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Joseph Prickett, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Henry C. Plumb, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Michael Pollock, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Franklin Ryther, died of wounds in Alabama, July 21, 1862.  
 Maurice T. Root, disch. for disability, Oct. 24, 1862.  
 Charles D. Roome, disch. for disability, Jan. 15, 1863.  
 Abram Rosey, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out April 26, 1866.  
 Joseph Rosey, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Jacob Rehl, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 David O. Ramsay, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Lewis B. Rable, veteran, enl. Jan. 20, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Perry W. Roome, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 William Ritchie, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Elmer L. Ritchie, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Orrin Roath, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 Charles D. Stoddard, disch. for disability, Feb. 16, 1862.  
 Wm. B. Smith, disch. at end of service, Oct. 24, 1864.  
 Josiah Simons, died of disease at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., 21, 1864.  
 Jacob Spielman, died of disease in Texas, Aug. 11, 1865.  
 John Stouffer, veteran, enl. Jan. 20, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Gottfried Siefert, veteran, enl. Feb. 2, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Solomon Sofford, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Adoniram Stickland, veteran, enl. Jan. 20, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Winslow Simmon, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John Stearns, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John G. Stinger, must. out July 17, 1865.  
 Francis Versaw, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Nov. 4, 1865.  
 Dolos Vinton, veteran, enl. Jan. 19, 1864; must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 James Vanderbeck, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Philander E. Welch, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 John P. Wood, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Christopher Williams, must. out Feb. 12, 1866.  
 Alfred D. Williams, missing in action at Duvall's Bluff, Ark., June 22, 1864.

## CHAPTER XV.

### FOURTH CAVALRY.

Organization of the Fourth, and its Assignment to Duty in the Southwest—Battles of Stone River and Chickamauga—Wintering in Tennessee, Alabama, and Georgia—The Atlanta Campaign—Pursuit of the Confederate Gen. Hood—Remounting of the Regiment at Louisville—Return to Alabama—Battle at Selma—Capture of Macon, Ga.—Capture of Jefferson Davis—Muster Out—Soldiers of the Fourth from Van Buren and Berrien Counties.

THE 4th Michigan Cavalry was authorized about the 1st of July, 1862. Its rendezvous was at Detroit, and it was mustered into the United States service on the 29th day of August, its colonel being Robert H. G. Minty, and each of its twelve companies being filled to the maximum number of one hundred men. Of these, Company C was almost entirely from Van Buren County, while full half the men of Company M were credited to Berrien County.

On the 26th of September the regiment left Detroit for the seat of war in the Southwest, receiving its arms at Jeffersonville, Ind. It moved at once into Kentucky, and was soon engaged with the redoubtable guerrilla, John Morgan. It was in the advance on the attack on Morgan at Stanford, and pursued him as far as Crab Orchard. It also led

the attack on Lebanon, Ky., on the 9th of November, five hundred and forty of its men pushing in Morgan's pickets at a gallop, entering the town two miles in advance of the infantry, and driving out the guerrilla leader with seven hundred and fifty followers.

After a short stay at Nashville, the regiment marched, on the 13th of December, to Franklin, drove out the enemy, thirteen hundred strong, killed, wounded, and captured a number of them, and also captured their colors. On the 20th of December it moved in advance of the army towards Murfreesboro', and began the fighting at Lavergne. On the 31st of December it had a sharp skirmish with a large force of the enemy, which it drove back in disorder, having ten of its own men killed and wounded.

After the battle of Murfreesboro', the 4th was engaged from the 9th to the 19th of January, 1863, in an important cavalry expedition to Harpeth Shoals, by which Wheeler's, Forrest's, and Wharton's mounted men were driven beyond Harpeth River. During the month of February it made numerous scouts, capturing one hundred and forty-five prisoners, including two colonels and fourteen other commissioned officers.

Numerous other expeditions were made out of Murfreesboro' during the spring, in all of which more or less prisoners were taken and stores destroyed. On the 22d of May a detachment of cavalry, with a part of the 4th Michigan and two companies of regulars in advance, charged into the camp of the 8th Confederate, 1st Alabama, and 2d Georgia Cavalry, and, after a sharp engagement, routed them, taking fifty-five prisoners and destroying their camp. The colors of the 1st Alabama were captured by the 4th Michigan, and are now in the office of the adjutant-general.

The regiment moved in advance of the Army of the Cumberland in June, 1863, charged into the enemy's intrenchments near Shelbyville, and aided in driving the rebels through that town into Duck River, where many of them were drowned. Six hundred prisoners and four cannon were captured by the Union troops. After two or three minor skirmishes, the regiment entered Chattanooga on the 11th of September, 1863. On the 18th, while scouting towards Ringgold, it met a large force of the enemy of all arms and was driven back, eleven of its men being killed or wounded.

The next day it fired the first shots in the disastrous battle of Chickamauga. After doing duty as skirmishers until nearly the close of the battle, it met a rebel brigade in the afternoon of the 20th, and held it in check until dark, while the shattered Union army was making its way off from the field. The 4th bivouacked on the ground it had held, but the next day was compelled to share in the general retreat.

On the 30th of September it was driven by Wheeler's rebel cavalry near Cotton's Ferry, on the Tennessee; but from the 1st to the 3d of October the tables were turned, and the 4th had the pleasure of following its late pursuers with ardor and success.

By the 1st of November, 1863, the service of the regiment had been so severe that only three hundred of the men were mounted. This battalion was actively engaged on picket and scout duty in Southeastern Tennessee, North-

western Georgia, and Northeastern Alabama throughout the winter, the number of mounted men being reduced, by the latter part of March, 1864, to one hundred and twenty-eight. Meanwhile, the dismounted men had been employed in various duties in the same locality and also in Middle Tennessee.

On the 28th of March, 1864, all of the regiment except the one hundred and twenty-eight mounted men set out for Nashville, where the men received new horses and equipments, and were armed with Spencer carbines. On the 14th of April the regiment joined the 2d Cavalry Division, at Columbia, Tenn. Thence it advanced, with eight hundred and seventy-eight men, into Georgia, where the cavalry began its arduous and dangerous labors in co-operation with Sherman's army, which was then advancing on Atlanta.

On the 18th of May seven companies were sent towards Kingston on a reconnaissance. Meeting the enemy's cavalry, they drove them several miles, until at length the pursuers were stopped by the rebel infantry. The opposing cavalry then threw themselves on their flanks and rear, but the men of Michigan drew their sabres and cut their way out, with a loss of twenty-four in killed, wounded, and missing.

Crossing the Allatoona Mountain and the Etowah River, the regiment marched on Dallas, where it had a heavy skirmish and took several prisoners. As a specimen of the incidents constantly occurring, we relate a circumstance told us by Mr. James F. Bullard, a member of the regiment and now a citizen of Paw Paw. He and two others were sent ahead in advance even of the skirmish line. Suddenly they were fired on by a squad of mounted men, who at once dashed forward to kill or capture them. They fled, but Bullard's horse was so exhausted by long service that he could not be urged off from a slow trot, and he was soon left alone. Two mounted rebels, revolver in hand, dashed up on either side of him, with the emphatic and duplicate command,—

"Halt, you d——d Yankee!"

"All right," he replied, bringing his worn-out horse to a stop. Without stopping to take away his weapons they galloped on after his comrades. Mr. Bullard still had his Spencer carbine with two or three loads in the breech. He cocked it and awaited developments. A moment later another horseman rattled up, crying out,—

"Give me that, you d——d Yankee! give me that gun, I say."

Not liking his style, Mr. Bullard lifted his carbine, fired, and the rebel fell from his horse. Others were immediately behind, but without waiting for them. Mr. Bullard sprang from his jaded steed and into the thick and swampy underbrush which lined the sides of the road. Unclipping his belt, he flung aside all his weapons and made the best time possible through the brush. A storm of bullets cut the leaves above and around him, but he escaped unharmed, and made his way by a long and circuitous route to the Union lines.

Soon after, the regiment, with its brigade, moved to the right and rear of the rebel army, driving back the Confederate cavalry, and aiding the flank movements which forced Gen. Johnston's command from one stronghold to another. On the 9th of June it assisted in driving the enemy's

cavalry, supported by infantry, from their intrenchments to the base of Kenesaw Mountain, capturing a number of prisoners. On the 12th the command again encountered the enemy at McAfee's Cross-Roads, where it carried a line of rebel intrenchments.

After continued skirmishing with Wheeler's cavalry, from the 12th to the 20th of June, the 4th Michigan and 7th Pennsylvania Cavalry, on the latter day, went to Latimore's Mill, on Noonday Creek, to secure a quantity of wheat stored there. While there the two regiments were surrounded by three brigades of rebel cavalry. Col. Minty, who was in command of the Union forces, dismounted a part of the men, and charged with the sabre at the head of the rest. Repulsed in their first attack, the rebels made desperate efforts to destroy the little force of Unionists. The 7th Alabama charged seven times on a battalion of the 4th Michigan (including Company C), which lay dismounted behind a knoll, and met the assailants with terrific volleys from Spencer carbines.

At length the rebels gave way, enough so that Col. Minty's command was able to retire and join its supports. Wheeler's whole division of Confederate cavalry then attacked the Union command, and was repulsed with heavy loss. The troops then went to the scene of the first fight to bury their dead, every one of whom they found to have been stripped to the skin by the rebels. Persons living near the field said there was a very large number of rebels piled up on the knoll where the men of the 4th Michigan used their "Spencers;" and it is said that the Confederates themselves fixed the number of their killed and wounded at five hundred. The 4th Michigan had thirty-seven men killed and wounded.

A constant succession of raids and fights occupied the time until the 1st of August, 1864, during which many miles of railroad track and many bridges were destroyed, thus impeding the operations of the enemy and facilitating those of Gen. Sherman, who had steadily advanced to the front of Atlanta. From the 1st to the 14th of that month the regiment was employed as infantry, occupying a portion of the trenches before Atlanta. Being remounted, it participated in Gen. Kilpatrick's raid on the Macon Railroad, when twenty miles of track was torn up, and contributing largely to the fall of Atlanta. While thus engaged, Col. Minty's brigade was caught between two bodies of rebel cavalry, one of them being Ferguson's Texan Rangers. The Unionists at once charged with the sabre, bursting through the ranks of the Texans like a whirlwind, and chasing them off the field. Over two hundred of their number were taken prisoners, nearly all of them with sabre-cuts across the head.

After the fall of Atlanta the regiment moved northward, and on the 4th of October joined the 2d Cavalry Division at Marietta, with which it started in pursuit of Hood's army, then making its way towards Middle Tennessee, and had numerous skirmishes with its rear-guard.

One of the sharpest fights of the regiment was near Rome, Ga., on the 13th of October. A body of Union troops were occupying Rome, and a force of mounted rebels undertook to drive them out. While a brisk skirmish was going on, Minty's brigade crossed the Oostenaula River, and



made a sabre charge on the flank of the Confederates. The latter fled in the utmost confusion. The Unionists ran over a battery of guns and captured it in an instant, and then pursued the enemy several miles, capturing prisoners, and sabring those who resisted. The 4th Michigan alone took one hundred and twenty-eight prisoners, which was about the number of the mounted men in the regiment, nearly all the horses having been worn out by the severity of the service.

Mr. Bullard, before mentioned, who ran down and caught in succession eight of the fleeing rebels, rode up to an ambulance, drawn by four mules, and ordered the driver to halt; but he only urged his team to greater exertions. Spurring his horse up beside the lead team, Mr. Bullard struck one of the mules over the head with his sabre, knocking him down. Another sabre cut dismounted the driver, who rolled to the side of the road with the scalp torn from one side of his head, but not fatally wounded. Sitting up and lifting the loose scalp, he looked up to the victor and drawled out:

"Mister, you cut my head mighty bad."

Similar incidents were constantly taking place as the tide of pursuers and pursued swept tumultuously onward over the hilly road. At length a force of intrenched Confederate infantry was reached, and the Union cavalry retired with its prisoners to join the main command.

The mounted men of the regiment moved thence to Little River, Ala., where the command had a conflict with Wheeler's cavalry, which was forced to retire.

Meanwhile the dismounted men were sent back from time to time as their horses were worn out by the severity of the service, being mostly employed in garrisoning block-houses on the Nashville and Huntsville Railroad. On the 17th of September, 1864, a corporal and seventeen men in a block-house were attacked by a cavalry division with artillery, but although the assailants shelled the block-house over five hours, they could not compel the gallant little squad to surrender, and finally retired, after having eight men killed and sixty wounded. The corporal was promoted to be a commissioned officer, and the names of his men were honorably mentioned in general orders.

After the fight at Little River, before mentioned, the mounted men of the regiment, then numbering but about one hundred, transferred their horses to the 3d Brigade, and proceeded to Louisville, Ky. The dismounted men also concentrated at the same point. They remained there until the latter part of December, being in the mean time remounted and furnished with new Spencer seven-shooting carbines. On the 28th of December the 4th again moved southward, with twenty-six officers and six hundred and ninety-six soldiers. It proceeded by way of Nashville to Gravelly Springs, Ala., where it remained until the 12th of March, 1865. Some of the time the men suffered severely for want of rations, being obliged to live on parched corn for several days.

On the 12th of March the regiment broke camp, and set out on Gen. Wilson's great cavalry movement through Central Alabama. Four divisions of cavalry stretched in an almost interminable line as the command made its way southward over mountains, rivers, creeks, and swamps. It crossed the Black Warrior River, on the 29th of March, by

swimming the horses, losing one man and from thirty to forty horses. On the 31st it crossed the Cahawba River, passing the accompanying battery over the railroad-bridge, which was temporarily floored with ties, five or six horses being killed by falling nearly a hundred feet from the bridge to the river.

On the 2d of May, at two P.M., the Brigade to which the 4th belonged being in the advance, the column arrived in front of the city of Selma. This, the chief city of Central Alabama, was surrounded by two lines of bastioned intrenchments. On the top of the parapet lay a line of large logs, supported by blocks two or three inches above the earth, giving just room for the defenders standing behind the parapet to push their rifles through the interstices. The works were defended by Gen. Forrest with seven thousand men, according to the rebel statement, though the Unionists claimed there were nine thousand.

The 2d Division, in which was the 4th Michigan, was ordered to attack, dismounted, on the Summerville road. For a while the 4th supported a battery which played on the rebel works. Just before the assault was ordered to take place, the rebel Gen. Chalmers attacked the rear of the 2d Division. Three regiments were detached to oppose him; the remainder, including the 4th Michigan, swept forward to the assault. Besides the men holding horses, the force resisting Chalmers, and other detachments, there were about fifteen hundred men of the 2d Division in the assaulting column. These moved forward under a terrific fire from the breastworks, which was followed by a swift succession of volleys from the Spencer carbines of the Unionists, steadily aimed at the top of the parapet.

Col. Long, the division commander, was shot in the head at the beginning of the assault, and Col. Minty, of the 4th Michigan, led the men against the works. Increasing their pace, they dashed forward with resounding cheers, swarmed through the ditch and over the breastworks, killed, captured, or drove away the rebels almost in an instant, and took possession of the enemy's main line in twenty minutes after the first advance. Three hundred and twenty-four out of the fifteen hundred assailants were killed in this brief period.

So close had been the aim of the Unionists, that a considerable number of the Confederates (our informants think as many as twenty) were found standing erect inside the breastworks, but shot through the head and stone dead. Their rifles were held in place by the logs before mentioned, and death came to them so suddenly that they were held upright by the parapet and by their stiffened grasp on their weapons.

The inner line of works was also captured by the 2d Division by the time the 4th Division arrived at the outer line. The result of the whole operation was the capture of one hundred pieces of artillery, two thousand eight hundred prisoners, and an immense amount of ammunition and stores.

On the 7th of April the command moved eastward, passing through Montgomery and Columbus into Georgia. The brigade to which the 4th belonged marched all the night of the 17th of April to save the double bridges over the Flint River, reaching them early in the morning of the

18th, when a gallant sabre charge was made by one battalion of the 4th Michigan, which carried the bridges and captured every man of the rebel force left to destroy them.

On the 20th of April the 2d Division, which was in the advance, after a rapid march of twenty-seven miles, was met some twelve or fifteen miles from Macon, Ga., by a rebel officer with a flag of truce, who informed Col. Minty that an armistice had been stipulated between the contending forces, and requesting him not to enter Macon.

"I have had no notification of any armistice from my superiors," replied Col. Minty, "and shall not stay out of Macon. I will give you five minutes' start (taking out his watch) in returning to Macon, and you had better make good use of it."

The officer and his escort set out on the gallop. Col. Minty sat on his horse, watch in hand, until the five minutes had elapsed, when he returned the watch and gave the order:

"Forward! gallop, march!"

The division dashed forward, in thundering column, towards Macon. Over hill and down dale it pursued its fiery course. The flag-bearers were run down and passed; some small detachments stationed along the road were swept away like chaff, and at six p.m. the division dashed into Macon, where it received the unconditional surrender of Gen. Howell Cobb and about two thousand men, with sixty-two pieces of artillery. Being there officially notified of the surrender of the rebel armies under Lee and Johnston, Gen. Wilson stayed the farther advance of his corps.

On the 7th of May the 4th Michigan, four hundred and forty strong, under Lieut.-Col. Pritchard, left Macon for the purpose of capturing Jefferson Davis and his party, who were known to be making their way towards the coast. Having struck the trail of the fugitives at Abbeville, on the 9th of May, Col. Pritchard selected one hundred and thirty-five of his best-mounted officers and men, and moved rapidly by a circuitous route to intercept them. At Irwinsville, at one o'clock in the morning of the 10th of May, Col. Pritchard learned that a train, which probably belonged to Davis, was encamped a mile and a half distant.

Moving out into the vicinity of the camp, he sent Lieut. Purinton, with twenty-five men, to wait on the other side of it. At daybreak, Col. Pritchard and his men advanced silently, and without being observed, to within a few rods of the camp, then dashed forward and secured the whole camp before the astonished inmates could grasp their weapons, or even fairly arouse themselves from their slumbers. A chain of mounted guards was immediately placed around the camp, and dismounted sentries were stationed at the tents and wagons.

While this was going on, Corp. George Munger, now of Schoolcraft, Kalamazoo Co., and private James F. Bullard, of Paw Paw, Van Buren Co., observed two persons, in women's dress, moving rapidly away from one of the tents. Munger was mounted and Bullard dismounted.

"That ought to be attended to," said one of them.

"Yes," replied the other, and Munger immediately rode around in front of one of them and ordered "Halt!" Bullard mounted and followed a moment later.

"This is my mother-in-law," said one of them. "She is going after some water. Can't you let her pass?"

Her companion, a tall person, much bent, wrapped in a woman's "water-proof," with a shawl over the head and a pail in one hand, remained silent.

"No, you can't pass," replied Munger.

At that moment Bullard rode up, and the hitherto silent personage, seeing that further disguise was useless, straightened up, dropped the pail, threw off the waterproof and shawl, and disclosed a tall, thin, sharp-faced, sour-looking man, with gray hair, gray whiskers under his chin, and one blind eye. Several other soldiers came up immediately afterwards, but no one at first seemed to recognize in this forlorn fugitive the renowned chief of the defunct Confederacy. Mrs. Davis, however (for she was his companion), had her wifely fears aroused by the grim faces and clanking arms around her, and threw her arms around her husband's neck, exclaiming,—

"Don't shoot him! don't shoot him!"

"Let them shoot," said Davis, "if they choose; I may as well die here as anywhere."

But no one was inclined to be his executioner, and the squad with the two prisoners moved back towards the tents. Mrs. Davis, when questioned, admitted that her companion was the ex-president of the Confederacy. As they went along, Mrs. Davis said to Mr. Bullard,—

"Mr. Davis is a very reverend man; I hope he will not be insulted."

"I shall not insult him," curtly replied Bullard, "if he behaves himself."

Meanwhile Col. Pritchard had taken the greater part of the force and gone to the assistance of Lieut. Purinton, in whose front heavy firing was heard. It proved to be a most unfortunate rencontre with a detachment of the 1st Wisconsin Cavalry, which was also in pursuit of Davis, and the advance-guard of which began firing on Purinton's men before ascertaining who they were. After this error was discovered (which was not until several men had been killed and wounded), Col. Pritchard returned to camp and discovered that, besides Davis, his wife, and four children, his command had also captured two of his aides-de-camp, his private secretary, several other Confederate officers, thirteen private servants, waiting-maids, etc., making a total of about thirty persons. As he rode up, Col. Pritchard was accosted by Davis, who asked if he was the officer in command. The colonel said he was, and asked how he should address his interlocutor.

"Call me what or whoever you please," said the rebel chieftain.

"Then I shall call you Davis," replied Pritchard. After a moment's hesitation the former admitted that that was his name. He then suddenly drew himself up with great dignity and exclaimed,—

"I suppose you consider it bravery to charge a train of defenseless women and children; but it is theft; it is vandalism."

Without stopping to inquire whether the distinguished prisoner considered himself a woman or a child, the colonel set out for Macon, joining the rest of the regiment on the way.

The lucky man of the expedition was one Michael Lynch, a deserter from the Confederate army, who had enlisted in

the 4th Michigan. He secured a pair of saddle-bags containing eighteen thousand dollars in Confederate gold. Although vigilant search was made for it by the officers, he managed to conceal it, got out of camp with it, and buried it. He was strongly suspected from various circumstances of being the person who had it, and the acting adjutant-general of the brigade endeavored to persuade him to give it up, saying it would certainly be found, and then he would lose it, but if he would give it up he (the officer) would use his influence to have it, or a part of it, given back to him.

"Well now, captain," said Lynch, with great apparent frankness, "I haven't got that money, but if I had it I shouldn't be green enough to give it up."

"Why, what could you do with it?" queried the officer.

"What could I do with it?" replied Lynch, "why I would bury it, and after I was discharged I would come back and dig it up. But then I haven't got it."

And this was precisely what he had done, and what after his discharge he did do.

From Macon Col. Pritchard, with twenty-three officers and men, was ordered to Washington, as a special escort for Davis and his party. Corporal Munger and Private Bullard were placed on the detail by the adjutant, on account of their having been the first to stop Davis. While this party went to Washington (giving Mr. Davis into the custody of the commandant at Fortress Monroe), the rest of the regiment returned, by way of Atlanta and Chattanooga, to Nashville, where it was mustered out and paid off on the 1st of July, 1865. It reached Detroit on the 10th of the same month.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY MEMBERS OF THE FOURTH CAVALRY.

##### *Field and Staff.*

Maj. Joseph W. Houston, Paw Paw; com. Sept. 1, 1862; res. Aug. 23, 1863.  
Maj. Robert Burns, Lafayette; com. Dec. 11, 1864; must. out July 1, 1865.  
Adj. Robert Burns, Lafayette; com. Dec. 18, 1862; pro. to capt., Co. C, March 31, 1863.  
Com'y John S. Pugsley, com. Jan. 23, 1864; must. out July 1, 1865.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergt. Maj. E. Fitz-Stevens, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Vet'ry Sergt. Silas M. Rawson, must. out July 1, 1865.

##### *Company A.*

2d Lieut. Mortimer Buck, Lafayette; com. Feb. 17, 1863; pro. to 1st Lieut., Co. C, Feb. 25, 1864.  
John Baty, must. out Aug. 15, 1865.  
Rodolphus Moon, died of disease at Cartersville, Ga., June 7, 1864.

##### *Company B.*

2d Lieut. John Bennett, Decatur; sergt., Co. C; brevet 1st Lieut. U. S. Vols., May 10, 1865, for meritorious services in the capture of Jefferson Davis.  
John A. Sullivan, died in action at Noonday Creek, Ga., June 20, 1864.

##### *Company C.*

Capt. Thaddeus W. Melcher, Lafayette; enl. July 8, 1862; res. for disability, March 31, 1863.  
Capt. Robert Burns, Lafayette; com. March 31, 1863; 1st Lieut., July 8, 1862; pro. to maj., Dec. 11, 1864.  
Capt. George W. Lawton, Porter; com. Aug. 23, 1863; 1st Lieut., Jan. 23, 1863; 2d Lieut., July 8, 1862; wounded in action at Dallas, Ga., May 24, 1864; brevet maj. U. S. Vols., March 13, 1865, for gallant and meritorious conduct in action near Dallas, Ga.  
Capt. Mortimer Buck, Lafayette; com. Jan. 8, 1865; 1st Lieut., Feb. 25, 1864; 2d Lieut., Co. A, Feb. 17, 1863; must. out July 1, 1865.  
2d Lieut. Albert H. Marsh, Paw Paw; com. Dec. 24, 1862; res. Feb. 17, 1863.  
2d Lieut. Aaron F. Ismon, Lafayette; com. May 31, 1863; q.m. sergt., Aug. 6, 1862; res. Dec. 19, 1863.  
1st Sergt. Mortimer Buck, Lafayette; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. A. Sergt. Thomas J. McKinney, Porter; enl. July 21, 1862; must. out July 1, 1865.  
Sergt. James C. Crandall, Hartford; enl. July 23, 1862; disch. for disability, Jan. 26, 1863.  
Sergt. Henry Sherwood, Columbia; enl. July 23, 1862; disch. by order.

Sergt. James Dopp, Lawrence; enl. July 31, 1862; died of disease at Murfreesboro', Jan. 17, 1863.  
Sergt. William Moore, Columbia; enl. Aug. 2, 1862; died of disease at Murfreesboro', Feb. 17, 1863.  
Sergt. John Bennett, Decatur; enl. Aug. 5, 1862; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. B.  
Sergt. Thomas D. Smead, Antwerp; must. out July 1, 1865.  
Corp. Henry Loveland, Lafayette; must. out July 1, 1865.  
Corp. Franklin Buck, Keeler; disch. for disability, April 25, 1863.  
Corp. Rolla Dean, Hamilton; disch. March 8, 1863.  
Corp. Gilbert H. Darling, Antwerp; must. out July 1, 1865.  
Corp. Charles H. Leathers, Columbia; sergeant; must. out July 1, 1865.  
Return T. Anderson, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Benjamin F. Austin, must. out July 1, 1865.  
John R. Bryant, must. out July 1, 1865.  
James M. Buckley, must. out July 1, 1865.  
James F. Bullard, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Charles Burrell, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Wesley F. Barker, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Charles W. Barnes, disch. for disability, Dec. 30, 1862.  
James M. Bierce, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 28, 1862.  
Edwin L. Clark, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 13, 1863.  
George W. Collins, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Tenn., Feb. 17, 1863.  
Stephen A. Colburn, disch. for disability, Dec. 27, 1863.  
Luman Conklin, disch. for disability, Aug. 6, 1863.  
James M. Crane, disch. for disability, Oct. 3, 1863.  
Peter Carr, missing in action at Columbia, Tenn., April 17, 1865.  
Lester Crawford, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Edgar A. Crane, must. out July 1, 1865.  
David Q. Curry, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Hiram P. Dake, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Benjamin M. Davis.  
Timothy Darien, disch. for disability, Feb. 3, 1863.  
Harvey Delano, died of disease.  
Eton G. Dalton, disch. for disability, Sept. 30, 1863.  
John Denton, must. out May 3, 1865.  
Egbert O. Dickenson, must. out July 1, 1865.  
David Dillon, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Daniel Eckler, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Allen Engle, must. out May 8, 1865.  
Norman W. Eastman, disch. for disability, March 25, 1863.  
August Freeman, disch. for disability, June 2, 1864.  
William A. Field, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Nov. 1, 1863.  
George N. Fish, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 30, 1863.  
Jeremiah C. Hayes, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 18, 1863.  
H. L. Howard, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Feb. 2, 1863.  
Russell Harrington, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Tenn., March 14, 1863.  
E. C. Hazard, died of disease at Detroit, Mich., July 21, 1863.  
Harry T. Howe, disch. for disability, Feb. 25, 1863.  
Henry A. Holly, disch. for disability.  
George P. Harrison, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Eljah Hazard, disch. for disability, July 1, 1863.  
William G. Irwin, disch. for disability.  
Allen Jones, disch. for disability, Sept. 30, 1863.  
Marcus D. Jenkins, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Dec. 15, 1863.  
George Jenkins, died of disease at Ooltewah, Tenn., Feb. 28, 1864.  
Oliver Jaquays, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 5, 1863.  
William Leonard, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 14, 1862.  
Byron W. Lamphire, died in action at Noonday Creek, Ga., June 20, 1864.  
Edward L. Lane, must. out July 1, 1865.  
John C. McLean, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Stephen B. Munson, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Alfred M. Merryman, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Sept. 15, 1863.  
Henry Merriman, died of disease at Murfreesboro', Tenn., Nov. 22, 1863.  
Gideon P. Niles, disch. by order, May 3, 1865.  
George W. Pierce, disch. by order, May 3, 1865.  
Howland Place, disch. for disability, March 2, 1863.  
John Prince, Jr., trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Aug. 1, 1863.  
John F. Page, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Reuben Palmerton, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Philo Pritchard, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Pomeroy Prince, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Jerome Rockwell, must. out July 1, 1865.  
John Ryan, must. out July 1, 1865.  
George B. Rediker, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Isaac P. Ross, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Dec. 15, 1863.  
Rensselaer Riggs, disch. for disability, Aug. 11, 1863.  
William J. Smith, disch. by order, June 3, 1865.  
Charles H. Smith, must. out July 1, 1865.  
Reuben O. Wilcox, must. out July 1, 1865.  
William Woolsey, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 18, 1863.

##### *Company L.*

John L. Derby, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Feb. 5, 1863.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE FOURTH.

##### *Non-Commissioned Staff.*

Sergt. Major Virgil M. Jones, Niles; com. Feb. 23, 1863; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. E, March 31, 1863; disch. for disability, Aug. 27, 1864.



*Company A.*

Geo. W. Call, must. out Aug. 15, 1865.  
 Albert Killing, must. out Aug. 15, 1865.  
 John Peter Lough, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., April 8, 1864.  
 Orie Shaw, must. out Aug. 15, 1865.

*Company B.*

Enoch Woodbridge, must. out Aug. 15, 1865.

*Company C.*

Daniel V. Brown, disch. by order, May 4, 1865.

*Company M.*

2d Lieut. Aaron Rowe, Niles; com. Aug. 13, 1862; res. Sept. 20, 1864.  
 1st Sergt. Virgil M. Jones, Niles; enl. Aug. 4, 1862; pro. to sergt. maj.  
 Sergt. Andrew S. Pennell, Niles; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; disch. for disability, Jan. 1, 1863.  
 Sergt. Geo. W. Collins, Benton; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Sergt. John H. Primmy, Benton; enl. Aug. 9, 1862; disch. by order, May 26, 1865.  
 Sergt. Daniel C. Bickford, Niles; enl. Aug. 4, 1862; disch. for disability, March 26, 1864.  
 Sergt. Edwin McComber, Niles; enl. Aug. 5, 1862; disch. for disability, Jan. 17, 1864.  
 Edward B. Griffith, Niles; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Sergt. Reuben A. Ray, Niles; enl. Aug. 6, 1862; disch. for disability, July 1, 1865.  
 Homer E. Atkins, died of disease at Nashville, Feb. 21, 1865.  
 Chas. C. Branch, died of disease at Murrensboro', May 11, 1863.  
 Seymour Boyer, disch. for disability, May 5, 1865.  
 Albert Brooks, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Barton J. Curtis, disch. for disability, Jan. 14, 1865.  
 Isaac Curry, disch. for disability, April 22, 1863.  
 Chas. E. Durham, di-ch. for disability, April 22, 1863.  
 Thos. Douglas, died of disease at Coloma, Mich., April, 1864.  
 James Edmonds, disch. for disability, June 24, 1863.  
 J. M. Edwards, disch. for disability, July 28, 1864.  
 B. V. Fashia, disch. for disability, Sept. 21, 1864.  
 Jared N. Gray, disch. by order, May 10, 1865.  
 Watson Gray, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Wm. B. Greene, died of wounds, Dec. 17, 1862, at Nashville, Tenn.  
 Henry E. Gibney, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 30, 1864.  
 Nelson J. Gibney, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Jan. 15, 1864.  
 Jaffrey Godfrey, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Bartlett Huntover, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Samuel Harris, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Henry Hammond, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 30, 1864.  
 S. C. Irwin, disch. for disability, Jan. 15, 1863.  
 Chas. S. Lincoln, disch. for disability, Dec. 6, 1862.  
 Peter S. Ludwig, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 15, 1864.  
 Orville McKean, died of disease at Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 8, 1862.  
 C. McComber, disch. for disability, Feb. 22, 1863.  
 W. W. Mattice, disch. for disability, May 11, 1865.  
 Geo. N. Marshall, missing in action in Georgia, Aug. 19, 1864.  
 Elisha Martindale, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Andrew B. Norris, died of disease at Nashville, May, 1864.  
 Roland Osgood, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Austin L. Smith, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Walker Smith, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 John Silver, died of disease at Chattanooga, Dec. 18, 1862.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## SEVENTH, NINTH, AND ELEVENTH CAVALRY.

The Seventh Cavalry assigned to the Michigan Cavalry Brigade—Service in Virginia in 1863—The "Kilpatrick Raid"—Sheridan's Richmond Expedition—Service in the Shenandoah Valley—March to the James River—Petersburg, Five Forks, and Appomattox—Transfer to Fort Leavenworth—Service on the Plains—Mustering Out and Disbandment—Ninth Cavalry—Pursuit of the Rebel John Morgan—Campaign in East Tennessee—Again in Pursuit of Morgan—Participation in the Atlanta, Savannah, and Carolina Campaigns—Mustering Out at Concord, N. C.—Eleventh Cavalry—Scouting in Kentucky—Raiding with Stoneman in Virginia and North Carolina—Consolidation with the Eighth Cavalry—Mustering Out at Nashville—Berrien and Van Buren Soldiers in the Eleventh.

## SEVENTH CAVALRY.

ABOUT half of Company B of this regiment was from the northwestern part of Berrien County; about a third of Company A was from the central and southern parts; while

several other residents of the same county were scattered through Companies C, D, E, H, I, and L.

The regiment was raised by Hon. T. W. Kellogg, in the fall of 1862 and the ensuing winter, its rendezvous being at Grand Rapids. Two battalions (including Companies A and B) left that place for Washington on the 20th of February, 1863, being joined by the third battalion in May following.

The 7th was assigned to the celebrated Michigan cavalry brigade, consisting of the 1st, 5th, 6th, and 7th cavalry regiments from this State, and commanded successively by Gens. Kilpatrick and Custer, and participated with it in all the glory and excitement of the ensuing campaigns. It took part in minor actions at Thoroughfare Gap, Va., on the 21st of May, 1863; at Greenwich, Va., on the 30th of May; and at Hanover, Pa., on the 30th of June. On the 3d of July it was very hotly engaged, charging the enemy repeatedly, and having fifty-seven of its men killed and wounded, besides twelve missing and twelve taken prisoners. It was also in conflicts of more or less importance at Smithson, Md., July 6th; at Boonston, Md., July 8th; at Falling Waters, Md., July 14th; at Snicker's Gap, July 19th; at Kelly's Ford, Va., Sept. 13th; at Culpeper Court-House, Va., Sept. 14th; at Raccoon Ford, Va., Sept. 16th; Brandy Station, Va., Oct. 13th, and others. Ninety-two men were killed and wounded during the season, besides forty-six reported missing in action, many of whom were killed.

During the winter of 1863-64 the 7th was mostly employed on picket duty in front of the Army of the Potomac, but on the 28th of February, 1864, it started with several other regiments in the "Kilpatrick raid." Arriving before Richmond on the 1st of March, it was placed on picket the following night. During the night it was attacked by a superior force of the enemy, and being unsupported was driven back. Forty-four men were reported missing, among whom was the commander of the regiment, Lieut.-Col. Litchfield. The command soon marched to Yorktown, whence it proceeded by transports to Alexandria, Va.

Having crossed the Rapidan with the Army of the Potomac on the 5th of May, the regiment set out on the 9th in Gen. Sheridan's movement against the enemy's communications. On the 11th it was in the battle of Yellow Tavern, charging the enemy's cavalry and driving it from the field, and having eighteen of its own men killed and wounded. The operations of the Michigan cavalry brigade on that raid have been mentioned in the sketch of the 1st Cavalry, previously given, and the 7th took its full share in them all.

After rejoining the army, it attacked the rebel cavalry on the 27th of May, charging and driving one of their brigades several miles, and capturing forty-one men. The next day it was in a fight at Hawes' Shop, where fourteen of its men were killed and wounded. It also took part in the attack on the enemy's works at Cold Harbor, on the 30th of May, fighting dismounted in advance of the infantry.

With the rest of the Michigan brigade and other regiments, it then moved, under Gen. Sheridan, towards Gordonsville, and on the 11th and 12th of June had a hard

cavalry fight at Trevillian Station, losing twenty-nine killed and wounded during the conflict. On the first day of the fight a small squad of the 7th recaptured from a large force of the rebels a piece of artillery which had been taken from a Union battery.

The command then returned to the main army, and on the 31st of July the Michigan brigade set out for Washington and the Shenandoah Valley. On the 16th of August, the 7th Cavalry was in the battle of Crooked Run, where it had twelve men killed and wounded, and where, according to the official report, "one battalion charged a brigade of rebel cavalry, routing them and capturing nearly a hundred prisoners."

On the 25th of August it was engaged near Shepherds-town, with slight loss. On the 29th, its division being attacked by infantry in force, it covered the retreat to Smith-field, having fourteen killed and wounded.

On the 19th of September the regiment was warmly engaged in the battle of Opequan Creek. It charged across that stream, drove the enemy from the bank, advanced and aided in driving him at headlong speed through the town of Winchester. Twenty-three officers and men were killed and wounded in the 7th, among the mortally wounded being its commander, Lieut.-Col. Melvin Brewer. Five days later the regiment was in another combat at Luray, driving the enemy back in great confusion, and capturing sixty prisoners.

On the 9th of October the 7th took part with its corps in routing the rebel cavalry under Gen. Rosser. Ten days later, at Cedar Creek, while the 7th was on picket, the enemy, by a sudden attack, broke through the line of the Union infantry and struck this regiment in the rear. It made good its retreat, however, without serious loss. When Sheridan galloped up from Winchester and retrieved the fortunes of the day, the 7th Michigan Cavalry took an active part in the conflict, and in the final charge which drove the foe in confusion from the field it captured about one hundred prisoners.

During the year ending Nov. 1, 1864, the regiment had had no less than one hundred and fifty-nine officers and men killed and wounded,—a very heavy loss for a cavalry regiment.

The 7th remained in camp near Winchester most of the time until the 27th of February, 1865, when it moved up the Shenandoah Valley, with its corps, to take part in Gen. Sheridan's celebrated march to the James River. On the 8th of March the regiment aided in routing a portion of Rosser's cavalry near Louisa Court-House, and capturing the town. After destroying a large part of the Lynchburg and Gordonsville Railroad, and the locks, aqueducts, and mills on the James River Canal, the command reached White House Landing on the 19th of March, and was soon, with the cavalry corps, established on the left of the Army of the Potomac. The 7th took an active part in the battle of Five Forks, and was engaged with the enemy almost till the moment of Lee's surrender at Appomattox.

After a short stay in North Carolina, the Michigan brigade returned to Washington, and thence proceeded to Fort Leavenworth, whence it was ordered to cross the Plains and operate against the hostile Indians. There was

much bitterness felt by the men at this extension of their service to another field from what was originally intended. Nevertheless, they crossed the plains to the Rocky Mountains, and were employed until November in guarding the overland stage-route from the Indians. About the 1st of November the regiment transferred two hundred and fifty men, whose term extended beyond March 1, 1866, to the 1st Michigan, the remainder of the regiment returning to Fort Leavenworth, and being there mustered out of the service. It was paid off and disbanded at Jackson, Mich., on the 25th of December, 1866.

#### OFFICERS AND SOLDIERS OF THE SEVENTH CAVALRY FROM BERRIEN COUNTY

##### *Field and Staff.*

Maj. Alexander Walker, Niles; com. capt., Oct. 15, 1862; pro. to maj., Feb. 24, 1864; disch. for disability, Nov. 28, 1864.  
Maj. Linus F. Warner, Royalton; com. capt., Oct. 15, 1862; pro. to maj., Oct. 12, 1864; must. out 1st Cav., March 27, 1866.  
Adj. Charles O. Pratt, Niles; com. March 28, 1864; pro. to capt., Dec. 12, 1865; must. out as adjt., Dec. 15, 1865.

##### *Noncommissioned Staff.*

Q.M. Sergt. Charles O. Pratt, Niles; enl. Sept. 8, 1862; pro. to 1st lieut. and adjt.  
Q.M. Sergt. William W. Brown, St. Joseph; enl. Nov. 1, 1864; must. out Dec. 11, 1865.

##### *Company A.*

Sergt. Edwin D. Cook, P. postone, enl. Sept. 15, 1862; pro. to 2d lieut., May 24, 1865; must. out as sergt., Dec. 15, 1865.  
Sergt. Edward R. Havens, Buchanan; enl. Sept. 12, 1862; pro. to 2d lieut., May 24, 1865; must. out as 2d lieut., Dec. 15, 1865.  
Sergt. William H. O'Brien, Berrien; enl. Sept. 5, 1862; died in Andersonville prison, Sept. 13, 1864.  
Sergt. Edward S. Lang, Niles; enl. Sept. 22, 1862; died in rebel prison, Richmond, Va., Feb. 1, 1864.  
Corp. Harvey S. Reynolds, Berrien; enl. Sept. 8, 1862; taken prisoner; disch. by order, July 5, 1865.  
Corp. Wm. S. Graham, Niles; enl. Sept. 8, 1862; must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
John Alexander, trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 27, 1866.  
Eli J. Briney, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
Edward J. Brickell, died of disease at Gettysburg, Pa., Aug. 10, 1863.  
George Bridleman, died of disease at Grand Rapids, Mich., Oct. 19, 1862.  
Madison Cox, must. out of Vet. Res. Corps, Oct. 13, 1865.  
Calvin Chester, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
David Fulton, died of disease at St. Louis, June 15, 1865.  
C. Hollis, disch. for disability, Oct. 17, 1863.  
Alexander Lowrey, died of disease in Ohio, Feb. 14, 1863.  
E. S. Lenney, died of disease at Annapolis, Md., June, 1864.  
Oliver Marcott, died of disease.  
N. Marchitt, died in action at Trevillian, Va., May 11, 1864.  
George B. Mat-litt, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
Charles Malcolm, must. out June 7, 1865.  
Allen C. Parks, missing in action at Cedar Creek, Va., Oct. 19, 1864.  
A. L. Reins, disch. for disability, Oct. 17, 1863.  
Michael Shrowder, died of disease at Alexandria, Va., Aug. 2, 1863.  
John H. Stead, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
Spencer N. Sparks, from Vet. Res. Corps; must. out Oct. 13, 1865.  
Cornelius Sparks, trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
James Turnbull, died of disease at convalescent camp.  
George W. Vosburg, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.

##### *Company B.*

Capt. Linus F. Warner, Royalton; com. Oct. 15, 1862; pro. to maj., Oct. 12, 1864.  
2d Lieut. James C. Boughton, St. Joseph; com. Oct. 15, 1862; res. June 26, 1865.  
1st Sergt. Riley A. Gregg, Royalton; enl. Aug. 30, 1862; pro. to 2d lieut., Co. M, Oct. 23, 1864.  
Sergt. Ira Enos, Benton; enl. Aug. 29, 1862; disch. by order, Aug. 18, 1863.  
Sergt. Kellogg B. Martindale, St. Joseph; enl. Sept. 29, 1862; must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
James Barney, from Vet. Res. Corps; must. out June 29, 1865.  
James Burnett, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
John J. Burrows, must. out June 20, 1865.  
John Boughton, must. out June 3, 1865.  
Norman H. Badger, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
George Birdsey, missing in action at Trevillian, Va., June 11, 1864.  
Jacob Chant, missing in action and gained no other record.  
James Conley, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
John Drake, disch. for disability.  
William H. Erick, trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
John S. Hagan, died of disease, Dec. 8, 1862.  
George Hartell, died in Andersonville prison-pen, April 2, 1864.  
James Haskins, died of wounds in field-hospital, April 7, 1863.

Isaac Hess, must. out May 23, 1865.  
 William Hawthorne, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Caleb L. Hatch, trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Hamilton Hacks, missing in action at Richmond, Va., March 1, 1864.  
 Ebenezer Jakeway, died in Andersonville prison, July 18, 1864.  
 Henry H. Keller, died in hospital of wounds, June 25, 1864.  
 Joseph H. Miller, must. out June 27, 1865.  
 Lewis P. McBride, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Arthur N. Napier, must. out Aug. 22, 1865.  
 Edwin J. Phillips, missing in action near Richmond, Va., March 1, 1864.  
 Josiah Safford, died of disease at Grand Rapids, Mich., Feb. 15, 1865.  
 Mickle Smith, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 10, 1864.  
 Charles Stevenson, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 William H. Stevens, trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Frederick Scott, trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Hiram Tietzel, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Francis H. Van Pelt, died of disease in Virginia, April 24, 1863.  
 Joseph F. Whitaker, died in Andersonville prison-pen, April 2, 1864.  
 Samuel Whitmore, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.

*Company C.*

George B. Griffith, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Henry Parmenter, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Adam Sinn, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.

*Company D.*

Charles Crysler, died of disease at Washington, D. C.  
 Wesley Griffith, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.

*Company E.*

Joseph C. Cassidy, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.

*Company H.*

William Covert, must. out July 17, 1865.

*Company I.*

2d Lieut. Edward R. Havens, Buchanan; com. June 23, 1865; must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Thomas McIntyre, must. out June 7, 1865.

*Company L.*

George W. Riley, must. out Dec. 8, 1865.  
 Jasper Abbe, must. out Dec. 8, 1865.

VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE SEVENTH CAVALRY.

*Company B.*

Stephen Austin, died of disease on board transport, Dec. 17, 1864.  
 Jerome Gessler, missing in action at Trevillian, Va., June 11, 1864.  
 George H. Hedding, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 John Orford, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Henry C. Russell, must. out Dec. 15, 1865.  
 Jason Russell, died of disease at Richmond, Va., March 5, 1864.  
 Robert Thompson, must. out May 23, 1865.

*Company F.*

David McNeal, must. out Aug. 8, 1865.

*Company G.*

George H. Prentice, trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out Jan. 4, 1866.

NINTH CAVALRY.

More than half of Company E of this regiment was from Van Buren County, and a few men of Company L were from Berrien County. It was raised in the autumn of 1862 and in the winter and spring of 1862-63, having its rendezvous at Coldwater. Except two incomplete companies, it left there for Kentucky about the 20th of May, 1863. After chasing ordinary guerrillas through June, it joined in the pursuit of the famous Morgan on the 4th of July, and followed him through Kentucky, engaging his rear-guard at Lebanon and capturing some prisoners.

On the 12th the regiment was divided at Westport, Ky. One battalion joined Gen. Hobson's command, which followed Morgan's force to Buffington's Island, on the Ohio River, and there captured five hundred prisoners and three cannon. Another battalion went to Portsmouth, Ohio, pursued the enemy to Chester, Ohio, and captured a part of his force, then joined Gen. Shackleford and marched to Eight Mile Island, where the Confederates were again en-

gaged and more than a thousand captured. The third battalion pursued the rebels which had escaped capture at Buffington's Island. It overtook them near Steubenville, Ohio, on the 25th of July, and the next day routed them, killing and wounding sixty-seven, and capturing three hundred and five,—more than were in the Union force.

The regiment was then united, and went with Gen. Burnside to East Tennessee. It reached Knoxville on the 3d of September, but immediately moved on Cumberland Gap, where it took part in the capture of two thousand five hundred men and fourteen pieces of artillery.

It then returned to the Valley of the Tennessee, and until the 15th of January was almost constantly engaged in scouting the country, skirmishing with the enemy in that region. On the 16th it encountered the rebel infantry in heavy force at Kinsbro's Cross-roads, and was repulsed with a loss of thirty-two killed, wounded, and missing. The regiment soon returned to Knoxville with two hundred of its horses worn out and the men dismounted by reason of the severity of the service.

The 9th then returned to Kentucky and received new horses. On the 12th of June it again encountered Morgan at Cynthiana, and aided in routing him, capturing one hundred and ten prisoners.

In July it moved south to join Sherman. It reached the vicinity of Atlanta on the 8th of August, joined Kilpatrick's cavalry division, and was employed around Atlanta until its fall. It afterwards participated in Sherman's great march to the sea, being engaged in numerous minor conflicts with the enemy on the way. At Waynesboro', Ga., on the 4th of December, it charged with the sabre, capturing four hundred prisoners, and receiving special notice from Gen. Sherman and the War Department. It remained near Savannah after its capture until the 27th of January, 1865, when it started on the Carolina campaign. During this campaign it was in fights and skirmishes at Salkohatchie, S. C., February 6th; at White Pond, S. C., February 9th; at Aiken, S. C., February 11th; at Lexington, February 15th; at Broad River Bridge, S. C., February 17th; at Phillips' Cross-Roads, N. C., March 4th; at Wadesboro', N. C., March 5th; at Solemn Grove, N. C., March 10th; at Averysboro', N. C., March 15th; at Bentonville, N. C., March 20th and 21st; at Raleigh, N. C., April 12th; and at Morrisville, N. C., April 13, 1865. The news of Lee's surrender was received on the 14th, and the regiment did no more fighting. It remained in North Carolina until the 21st of July, when it was mustered out of service at Concord, in that State. It then returned home, reaching Jackson on the 30th of July, where it was paid off and disbanded.

MEMBERS OF THE NINTH CAVALRY FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

*Company F.*

Capt. John G. Hinchey, Antwerp; com. Nov. 5, 1862; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. Eugene E. Smith, Antwerp; com. Nov. 5, 1862; disch. for disability, Dec. 28, 1863.  
 1st Lieut. Will H. S. Banks, Porter; com. Jan. 8, 1864; 2d Lieut., Nov. 12, 1862; pro. to capt., Co. C; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Geo. B. A. Hill, Antwerp; com. May, 1865; sergt.; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 1st Sergt. Ellis D. Simmons, Antwerp; enl. Dec. 8, 1862; disch. for disability, June 9, 1865.  
 Com. Sergt. Grant W. Tuttle, Lafayette; enl. Dec. 10, 1862; pro. to 2d Lieut., Co. K; res. Nov. 24, 1864.



Com. Sergt. Chas. W. Brown, Almena; enl. Dec. 5, 1862; disch. by order, June 7, 1865.  
 Sergt. Geo. L. Tuttle, Lafayette; enl. Jan. 10, 1863; disch. by order, May 18, '65.  
 Sergt. Silas A. Smith, Lafayette, enl. March 6, 1863; 1st sergt.; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Corp. John G. Markelle, Almena; enl. Dec. 5, 1862; sergt.; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Corp. Wallace R. Snyder, Antwerp; enl. Nov. 20, 1862; sergt.; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Corp. Edwin T. Phelps, Pine Grove; enl. Dec. 12, 1862; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Corp. Alfred Finch, Pine Grove; enl. Dec. 18, 1862; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Corp. Wm. Brown, Antwerp; enl. Nov. 20, 1862; disch. by order, July 18, 1865.  
 Corp. Manley M. Morse, Pine Grove; enl. Dec. 18, 1862; disch. by order, June 12, 1865.  
 Corp. Uriah Waldo, Antwerp; enl. Dec. 26, 1862; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Corp. Reuben D. Ford, Pine Grove; enl. Nov. 10, 1862; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Merritt Bliss, died of disease at Indianapolis, Ind.  
 George Bilby, died of disease at Andersonville prison, Ga., April 20, 1864.  
 Merritt Binell, missing in action at Dandridge, Tenn., Jan. 16, 1864.  
 Aaron Bott, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Calvin P. Bradford, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Joseph Clark, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Charles Christie, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Willis C. Cook, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Alphonzo Carey, disch. for disability.  
 John Clark, died of disease at Camp Nelson, Ky., June 2, 1864.  
 Joseph Ellison, must. out Aug. 5, 1865.  
 David Earl, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Edward Finch, must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Dewitt C. Goff, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Orvin Holden, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Samuel E. Holden, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Elmore Holden, died of disease at Knoxville, Tenn., March 10, 1864.  
 Bruce Lewis, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Hamilton W. McLean, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 James G. March, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Charles Magoon, must. out June 18, 1865.  
 Jacob Markelle, disch. for disability, Feb. 4, 1864.  
 Truman Rider, died of disease at Andersonville prison, Ga., July 7, 1864.  
 Solomon Shock, died of disease at Coldwater, Mich., April 6, 1863.  
 Joseph Shelson, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Thomas Stevens, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 William Veeley, must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Daniel L. Williams, must. out June 20, 1865.

#### Company L.

Corp. Maurice T. Root, Keeler; enl. Jan. 1, 1863; trans. to Inv. Corps; must. out Aug. 30, 1865.

#### SOLDIERS OF THE NINTH CAVALRY FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

#### Company L.

2d Lieut. Ira B. Riford, Niles; com. Jan. 22, 1863; res. for disability, Jan. 19, '64.  
 Sergt. Wm. Butler, Niles; enl. Dec. 16, 1862; pro. to 2d lieut.; died of wounds at Marietta, Ga., Sept. 7, 1864.  
 Q.M. Sergt. Collins A. Kinsley, Niles; enl. Dec. 16, 1862; must. out July 10, 1865.  
 Com. Sergt. M. M. McClave, Niles; enl. Dec. 16, 1862; sergt.; must. out July 21, 1865.  
 Com. Sergt. Burwell Carmichael, Sodus; enl. Dec. 16, 1862; must. out May 22, 1865.  
 Chas. B. Soule, died in action in Georgia, Dec. 4, 1864.  
 Luke Versaw, disch. by order, Aug. 13, 1864.  
 Wm. N. Wood, died of disease at Knoxville, Feb. 10, 1864.

#### ELEVENTH CAVALRY.

More than half of Company K of the 11th Cavalry was from Berrien County, which also furnished a few men to Companies A and I. There were also a dozen or so from Van Buren County scattered through Companies B, D, E, G, and I. The regiment was recruited during the summer and autumn of 1863, and left its rendezvous at Kalamazoo in December of that year for the scene of war in the Southwest.

After scouting in Kentucky about six months, the 11th, in company with other regiments, came in collision with the noted rebel cavalry leader, John H. Morgan, at Mount Sterling, in that State, and, after a sharp action, utterly routed his command. On the 12th of June, 1864, it came up with the remainder of his force at Cynthiana, Ky., and

again the sons of chivalry were compelled to fly before the men of Michigan. In the latter part of September, 1864, the regiment moved with its division on a long and tedious raid over the mountains to Saltville, Va. The place was found to be fortified and well defended by a large force, under Gen. Breckenridge. The attack failed, and the command returned to Kentucky.

In the latter part of November the 11th was ordered to East Tennessee, where it was engaged in the usual fighting with guerrillas and rebel cavalry until the middle of January, 1865, when it marched with Gen. Stoneman on an important raid into Virginia. On the 16th of January, 1865, it fought with Vaughan's Brigade all day near Abingdon, Va., completely routing it and capturing all its artillery and two hundred and fifty men. After defeating Breckenridge's infantry, destroying the salt-works at Saltville, burning an arsenal, and capturing a large quantity of supplies and artillery, the command passed over the mountains into Kentucky, three-fourths of the horses being worn out and the men dismounted.

In the early part of March the regiment, with new horses, again went to East Tennessee, where it joined another expedition of Gen. Stoneman, bound for North Carolina. At Salisbury, in that State, on the 12th of April, the command defeated a large force of the enemy, capturing eighteen hundred prisoners and twenty-two pieces of artillery. It then passed on through South Carolina into Georgia, and on the 11th of May captured the cavalry escort of Jefferson Davis, near Washington, in that State. It then went back through South Carolina to East Tennessee.

On the 20th of July, 1865, the 11th was consolidated with the 8th Michigan Cavalry, the united body taking the latter name. The consolidated regiment was retained in service in Tennessee for the purpose of suppressing guerrillas, etc., until the 22d of September, 1865, when it was mustered out at Nashville. It immediately returned home, reaching Jackson on the 28th of September, and was soon after paid off and disbanded at that point.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE ELEVENTH CAVALRY.

#### Field and Staff.

Adj. Manley S. Rowley, Niles; enl. Sept. 1, 1863; must. out Aug. 10, 1865.

#### Company J.

Edward Frazer, must. out June 16, 1865.  
 Charles H. Fanow, must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

#### Company I.

Sergt. Joel Turner, Watervliet; disch. for disability, April 13, 1863.  
 Joseph O'Keefe, must. out July 17, 1865.

#### Company K.

Capt. Geo. M. Wells, Niles; com. Aug. 1, 1863; trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Chas. H. Palmer, Niles; com. June 1, 1864; sergt., Oct. 20, 1863; trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Q. M. Sergt. F. M. Cottrell, Buchanan; enl. Sept. 25, 1863; disch. for disability, Jan. 26, 1865.  
 Com. Sergt. Jas. E. Goodman, Niles; enl. Oct. 15, 1863; trans. to 8th Cav.; pro. to 2d lieut.; must. out 1st sergt., Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Sergt. James H. Delano, Niles; enl. Sept. 21, 1863; trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Sergt. Burwell Hickman, Three Oaks; enl. Sept. 2, 1863; must. out May 29, '65.  
 Sergt. Benjamin F. Ralph, Niles; enl. Oct. 23, 1863; trans. to 8th Cav.; pro. to capt. in U. S. C. T.  
 Corp. Wm. Martin, N. Buffalo; enl. Sept. 28, 1863; sergt.; trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Corp. C. D. H. Trowbridge, Pipestone; enl. Sept. 10, 1863; trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Corp. Wm. H. Drew, Niles; enl. Nov. 2, 1863; trans. to Inv. Corps; must out May 18, 1865.  
 Corp. Thos. S. Stewart, Pipestone; enl. Sept. 24, 1863; sergt.; trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Corp. James McOmber, Niles; enl. Sept. 17, 1863; must. out June 16, 1865.  
 Corp. Henry C. Redding, Niles; enl. Sept. 8, 1863; sergt.; trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Musico. Wm. C. Winch, Buchanan; enl. Oct. 15, 1863; died in action at Saltville, Va., Oct. 2, 1864.  
 Farrier Henry L. Beecroft, Niles; enl. Oct. 23, 1863; trans. to 8th Cav.; pro. into U. S. C. T.  
 John G. Allen, disch. by order, July 31, 1865.  
 Chas. Boyce, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out June 16, 1865.  
 Moses Binimian, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 James H. Bayes, must. out June 16, 1865.  
 Chas. E. Cronkite, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 John B. Culstraw, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Sullivan Clawson, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Chas. Dunlap, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Quincy S. Drew, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 James A. Donnelly, disch. May 20, 1865.  
 H. B. Emerson, disch. by order, July 25, 1865.  
 Gilbert Green, must. out July 17, 1865.  
 Wm. Henry, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out.  
 Albert Knappen, missing in action at Saltville, Va., Oct. 2, 1864.  
 George Munjoy, must. out June 16, 1865.  
 John McLogan, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 F. Parmeter, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps.  
 Frank J. Pennell, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Oliver T. Phillips, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Wm. H. Summers, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Harvey Stratton, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Z. E. Strong, must. out July 17, 1865.  
 Isaac Timmins, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Aloysius Tucker, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Aylmer Taggart, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Charles Taggart, died of disease at Detroit, Mich., March 9, 1864.  
 Wm. C. Webb, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Oct. 10, 1865.  
 James W. Webster, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE ELEVENTH CAVALRY.

##### *Field and Staff.*

Surg. Lucius C. Woodman, Paw Paw; com. Oct. 7, 1863; taken prisoner in action at Saltville, Va., Oct. 2, 1864; sent to Libby prison; exchanged Oct. 20, 1864; must. out Aug. 10, 1865.

##### *Company B.*

James E. Donaldson, died of disease at Mt. Sterling, Ky., Feb. 12, 1865.

##### *Company D.*

John Elliot, died at Clinch River, Va., Dec. 6, 1864.

##### *Company E.*

George W. Bush, trans. to 8th Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

##### *Company G.*

Charles W. Acker, trans. to 8th Mich. Cav.  
 Eli Huey, trans. to 8th Mich. Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 Zephaniah Reams, died of disease at Bowling Green, Ky., Feb. 20, 1865.  
 James A. Skinner, died of disease at Lexington, Ky., Feb. 13, 1864.

##### *Company I.*

Sergt. Stephen Randall, Decatur; corporal, disch. for disability, May 26, 1865.  
 Thomas Colton, trans. to 8th Mich. Cav.; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
 John T. Courtwright, disch. for disability, July 15, 1865.  
 Riley S. Plapper, must. out May 22, 1865.

## CHAPTER XVII.

### WESTERN SHARPSHOOTERS AND ONE HUNDRED AND SECOND U. S. COLORED TROOPS.

The Paw Paw Rifle Company—Assignment to the Fourteenth Missouri—Capture of Forts Henry and Donelson—Shiloh and Corinth—Long Stay in Mississippi—The Atlanta Campaign—The March with Sherman—The One Hundred and Second U. S. Colored Regiment—Service in South Carolina and Florida—Return to South Carolina—Mustering Out at Charleston—Berrien and Van Buren Members of the Regiment.

In the spring of 1861 a company was raised in Van Buren County, with its headquarters at Paw Paw, intended

for service under Fremont, as a rifle company. When its ranks were full it joined Birge's "Western Sharpshooters," which was mustered into the service of the United States under the name of the 14th Missouri Infantry, the command from Van Buren County becoming Company D. The regiment was armed with heavy target-rifles, without bayonets, and the men were generally expert marksmen.

The 14th Missouri served in Fremont's (afterwards Halleck's) department during the autumn of 1861, and about the 1st of February, 1862, reported to Gen. Grant, at Cairo. It proceeded up the Cumberland with Grant's army, and on the 9th of February took part in the capture of Fort Henry. Immediately afterwards the whole force marched to attack Fort Donelson.

There, Company D, of the 14th Missouri, occupied the extreme advance and opened the battle. During the succeeding conflict the men were employed as sharpshooters to silence the enemy's batteries, and most efficiently performed their work, gliding forward through the forest beneath a storm of shot and shell until within reach of the hostile guns, and then leveling the cannoniers with shot after shot from their unerring rifles. On two occasions they were thus employed to extricate brigades which were being cut to pieces by the deadly fire of the rebel artillery. Saturday evening, the 14th led the grand assault by Gen. Smith's division, clearing the way and pushing on almost to the edge of the rebel ditch, and then halting while the infantry dashed forward with leveled bayonets, captured a large part of the enemy's works, and brought about the surrender of the whole rebel command the next day.

The regiment then proceeded with the army to Pittsburg Landing. When Gens. Johnston and Beauregard attacked the Union troops on the morning of the 6th of April, the 14th Missouri was turned out at daybreak and ordered to hold the ford across Owl Creek against any force which should attempt to pass it. These orders were faithfully obeyed. Wall's Texas Legion endeavored to cross the ford, but the rifles of the 14th thinned their ranks so rapidly that they gave up the attempt and retreated.

The 14th Missouri was in the skirmish-line all the way from Shiloh to Corinth, and after the capture of the latter place, still in the advance, followed Bragg's army a long distance down the Mobile and Ohio Railroad. The regiment was then stationed at Corinth until after the battle of the 10th and 11th of October, 1862, when the rebel Gens. Price and Van Dorn attempted to recapture that place. On the second day of that battle the 14th was in the skirmish-line in front of Battery Robinett, and when the rebels, under Col. Rogers, of Texas, made their last desperate charge against that breastwork, they broke in solid mass through the thin line of the sharpshooters, and, leaving them behind, swept gallantly on to the assault. But the Union artillery and musketry cut them down by the hundred. Col. Rogers was killed while vainly endeavoring to urge his horse over the parapet, and the shattered column was soon compelled to flee back to shelter, leaving the ground covered with killed and wounded, while its numbers were constantly diminished by the rifles of the vigilant sharpshooters.

After this the regiment remained in camp in the vicinity

of Corinth nearly a year.\* In the autumn of 1863 it was ordered to Chattanooga, where it remained until the spring of 1864, and then set out with Sherman on his great Atlanta campaign. In this campaign the long rifles of the 66th Illinois Infantry were constantly in the advance, not only opening, but taking an active part in, nearly every one of the many battles which marked the course of Sherman's victorious army. The captain of Company D was killed, and both lieutenants and nearly all of the non-commissioned officers and privates were killed or wounded during the campaign. After the flank movement from before Atlanta the company marched into Jonesboro', under command of a corporal, all the commissioned officers and sergeants having been killed or disabled. That night the corporal in command received a commission as a lieutenant, and the very next morning he too was killed at the battle of Jonesboro'.

The decimated regiment also took part in Gen. Sherman's easy march to the sea, accompanied him through the Carolinas, and was finally mustered out in 1865.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE WESTERN SHARPSHOOTERS.

1st Lieut. Albert Gore, com. Sept. 16, 1861; res. June 11, 1862.  
 1st Lieut. Stephen W. Dunscombe, com. June 11, 1862; 2d Lieut., Sept. 16, 1861.  
 Sergt. Philip Dedrick, enl. Sept. 23, 1861; disch. for disability, Aug. 24, 1864.  
 Sergt. John H. Andrews, enl. Oct. 5, 1861; disch. by order, May 15, 1863.  
 Sergt. James M. Arkowe, enl. Sept. 25, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 3, 1862.  
 Sergt. Newton J. Foster, enl. Oct. 15, 1861; disch. for disability, May 10, 1862.  
 Corp. Harlow G. Barnes, enl. Sept. 20, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 8, 1862.  
 Corp. Hiram T. Brees, enl. Sept. 23, 1861; disch. at end of service, Sept. 10, 1864.  
 Corp. Daniel Goodenough, enl. Oct. 11, 1861; died in action at Corinth, Oct. 4, 1862.  
 Corp. Robert D. Irish, enl. Oct. 11, 1861; veteran, Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Corp. Luther E. Sutton, enl. Oct. 30, 1861; disch. for disability, May 10, 1862.  
 Musician Aaron D. Cheney, enl. Nov. 4, 1861; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Wagoner Henry O. Carris, enl. Sept. 23, 1861; trans. to Co. H, 66th Ill.  
 James Balfour, died in action at Corinth, Oct. 4, 1862.  
 George M. Bigelow, died in action at Corinth, Oct. 4, 1862.  
 Henry W. Bridgeford, died of disease at Rome, Ga., Oct. 22, 1864.  
 Omer A. Baird, trans. to Co. H.  
 George Bridgeford, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Dallas Brewster, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 George L. Bliss, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 James Burton, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 George Bidloe, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Albert Barnett, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Aurelius Barney, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Walter H. Baird, disch. for disability, Aug. 3, 1862.  
 Vine Branch, disch. for disability.  
 Hiram T. Bruce, disch. at end of service, Sept. 10, 1864.  
 John Combes, disch. at end of service, June 2, 1865.  
 Charles Cook, disch. at end of service, June 2, 1865.  
 Charles H. Camp, disch. for disability, Feb. 23, 1862.  
 William Crobaugh, veteran, Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Isaac Chatfield, veteran, Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Watson Carly, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Edward Disbrow, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Jefferson S. Dowd, trans. to Co. H.  
 Patrick Doyel, died at Dallas, Ga., May 27, 1864.  
 Willard E. Draper, disch. at end of service, April 4, 1865.  
 Daniel Ellis, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 J. Erwin, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Morris B. Foster, trans. to Co. H.  
 Calvin C. Goodenough, disch. for disability, Feb. 23, 1862.  
 Alonzo D. Gibson, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Bartholomew Hard, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Eber Hardy, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Albert D. Hurlbut, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 William Henry, disch. for disability, May 13, 1863.  
 Asa D. Hazard, disch. for disability, July 13, 1862.  
 Luther W. Hammond, disch. for disability, May 24, 1862.

\* During this time its designation was changed from the 14th Missouri to the 66th Illinois, the majority of the members being from the latter State.

O-car P. Hill, died of disease, April 29, 1862.  
 Francis M. Jones, disch. for disability, Oct. 8, 1862.  
 James H. Kennedy, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 William W. Long, died at Peach-Tree Creek, Ga., July 22, 1864.  
 Martin Miller, died of disease, March 14, 1862.  
 Marcus S. Nelson, died of wounds received at Corinth.  
 Orrin W. Northrup, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Foster T. Newton, disch. for disability, May 10, 1862.  
 William R. Nelson, disch. at end of service, June 2, 1865.  
 Harmon Nelson, disch. at end of service, June 2, 1865.  
 Geres W. Prater, disch. at end of service, June 2, 1865.  
 Seth Polmanter, disch. for disability, June 17, 1862.  
 Henry L. Prosser, died of disease at Camp Davis, July 20, 1863.  
 Geo. Payne, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 George Riley, must. out June 5, 1865.  
 John Rupert, died of disease, April 26, 1862.  
 William Rupert, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; died at Dallas, Ga., May 27, 1864.  
 Alfred Robinson, disch. at end of service, Sept. 16, 1864.  
 Philip I. Ritter, disch. for disability, Feb. 23, 1862.  
 Freeman Stowe, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 James Smith, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Hiram P. Simmons, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Humphrey P. Tyler, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Enos W. Tyler, trans. to Co. H.  
 Mason M. Vernet, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863.  
 John Van Anken, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 John G. Van Ostran, disch. for disability, Feb. 23, 1862.  
 Robert Van Brunt, trans. to Co. H.  
 William Van Fleet, died of disease near Ackworth, Ga., June 9, 1864.  
 Horace Vincent, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 William Wigent, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Elias Whipple, must. out July 7, 1865.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE WESTERN SHARPSHOOTERS.

##### Company D.

Corp. Percival R. Dix, Berrien; enl. Oct. 20, 1861; trans. to Co. H.  
 Corp. Ira Enos, Berrien; enl. Oct. 20, 1861.  
 Musician Franklin Bragg, Berrien; enl. Sept. 30, 1861; died of disease at Paducah, Ky., April 10, 1862.  
 Adelbert D. Allen.  
 Prosper Bowe, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Seth A. Bour, disch. for disability, June 17, 1862.  
 Gilbert S. Bour, trans. to Co. H.  
 Edwin S. Buchanan, trans. to Co. H.  
 Wooster Bryant, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Frank M. Mix, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Joseph Dennis, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Joseph Mendel, disch. for disability, May 30, 1862.  
 Cassius W. Fulgham, died of disease, April 14, 1864.  
 Jesse W. Fulgham, disch. for disability, July 13, 1862.  
 John C. Gates, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Alonzo D. Gibson, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 John D. Hill, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Frederick Hill, died in action at Corinth, Oct. 4, 1862.  
 Willet F. Jaquay, died in action in Georgia, May 6, 1864.  
 Samuel Kilring, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 John Mayo, trans. to Co. H.  
 Lewis A. Merrill, died of disease, Dec. 4, 1861.  
 Henry W. Noble, died in action in Georgia, May 27, 1864.  
 Philip Russell, disch. for disability, Jan. 1, 1862.  
 John Randall, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Murdock Randall, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Ansel A. Stiles, died of disease, April 18, 1862.  
 Jedediah Safford, disch. for disability, Oct. 15, 1862.  
 Joel Turner, disch. for disability, April, 1862.  
 Alonzo Vincent, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.  
 Lysander Vincent, disch. at end of service, Sept. 16, 1864.  
 Jay Wetmore, disch. at end of service, June 2, 1865.  
 Michael Whalen, must. out July 7, 1865.  
 George Yerrington, veteran, enl. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out July 7, 1865.

#### ONE HUNDRED AND SECOND UNITED STATES COLORED TROOPS.

This regiment was first known as the 1st Regiment of Michigan Colored Infantry, but its name was changed by the War Department to the one given at the head of this sketch. It contained about fifty men from Berrien County and twenty from Van Buren, scattered through all the companies, the largest number being in Company G.

The regiment was raised in the winter of 1863-64, and left its rendezvous at Detroit on the 28th of March, 1864. It joined the 9th Army Corps at Annapolis, on the



15th of April was detached and embarked for Hilton Head, S. C., where it arrived on the 19th. For a month it guarded in detachments various points on the coast of South Carolina, and was then concentrated at Port Royal. On the 1st of August it proceeded by sea to Jacksonville, Fla., but only remained in that State during that month. It made several long marches, but was only once engaged with the enemy. Some rebel cavalry attacked it on the 11th of August, but they were easily repulsed.

During the last days of August the regiment returned to Beaufort, S. C., where it was employed on picket and fatigue duty in that vicinity until the 30th of November. Three hundred men then joined Gen. Foster's command at Boyd's Landing. It was engaged with the enemy at Honey Hill, on the 30th of November, at Tullifinny, on the 7th of December, and at Devereaux Neck, on the 9th, having during the three conflicts sixty-five officers and men killed and wounded out of the three hundred.

The whole regiment was concentrated at Devereaux Neck on the 24th of January, 1865. It moved to Pocotaligo, and remained there until the 7th of February. It then took part in various operations against Charleston, and the 27th of that month took post on Charleston Neck. On the 9th of March it went by sea to Savannah, Ga., and on the 1st of April returned to Georgetown, S. C.

On the 9th of April the right wing landed in Charleston, S. C., and on the 11th, 12th, and 13th of that month marched to the Santee River, driving back the enemy's cavalry, which annoyed it on the last day of the march. It also had a skirmish with the enemy on the 18th while marching towards Camden.

The left wing having marched from Georgetown on the 5th of April, under Gen. Potter, reached Manning on the 9th, after heavy skirmishing with the enemy, and then proceeded towards Camden. On the 16th it skirmished with the Confederates at Spring Hill. It reached Camden on the 17th, and the next day returned towards Manchester. About five miles out it met the enemy in force, but with the 54th Massachusetts (colored) it drove them back towards Stateburg.

On the 19th, the two wings having united, the regiment met the Confederates near Singleton's plantation, where it made a flank movement which compelled them to retire in great haste. On the morning of the 21st of April, while Company A was on picket, it was attacked by some two hundred of the enemy, who were handsomely repulsed. The same day the Confederate commander sent a flag of truce stating that Gens. Sherman and Johnston had ceased hostilities. This virtually closed the war, and Company A of the 102d fired and received almost if not quite the last shots in the conflict.

The regiment remained in South Carolina on provost duty until the 30th of September, when it was mustered out of service at Charleston. It reached Detroit on the 17th of October, 1865, where it was paid off and disbanded.

#### BERIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE ONE HUNDRED AND SECOND UNITED STATES COLORED TROOPS.

##### Company A.

Stephen Budroe, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Joshua Emmons, died of disease in South Carolina, July 4, 1864.

Anthony Nash, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Robert Ogden, died of disease in South Carolina, Feb. 5, 1865.

##### Company B.

John Battles, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

James T. Battles, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

George Brown, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Ezekiel Harris, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

William Linsey, disch. for disability, Aug. 11, 1864.

Levi Mitchell, disch. by order, May 24, 1864.

##### Company C.

William Adams, disch. for disability, June 16, 1865.

##### Company D.

Henry Harris, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Abner A. Mitchell, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company E.

Sergt. Eli Smith, Niles; enl. Nov. 30, 1863; absent, sick, at muster out.

Nathan Hall, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

William P. Minnis, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company F.

George Vincent, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company G.

Sergt. Wm. Powers, Niles; enl. Oct. 28, 1863; must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Sergt. Harrison Johnson, Niles; enl. Dec. 26, 1863; must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Corp. John Lett, Sodus; enl. Jan. 2, 1864; died of disease in South Carolina, June 24, 1865.

Corp. Benj. F. Coleman, Sodus; enl. Jan. 24, 1864; died of disease in New York, Jan. 6, 1865.

Corp. Miner Rivers, Niles; enl. Dec. 26, 1863; must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Wm. Buchanan, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Benj. J. Cozzens, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Jos. Dickinson, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Andrew Farmer, disch. for wounds, May 26, 1865.

Lewis Gilney, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Washington Gilney, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Ashberry Hackley, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Marcellus Hackley, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Edward Hicks, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Needham Miller, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Samuel McLean, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Geo. W. Patterson, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

John Stephens, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company H.

Corp. George Jackson, Chickaming; enl. Dec. 31, 1863; must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Thos. Buck, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Steph. A. Douglas, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Geo. H. Hicks, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Willis Littleton, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Jacob Steele, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Benj. A. Woodruff, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company I.

Sergt. Edward Finley, Niles; enl. Jan. 21, 1864; must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Corp. John Wright, Niles; enl. Jan. 13, 1864; must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Edwin Crowder, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Abram Love, died of disease at Detroit, Feb. 13, 1864.

Wm. Norman, died of disease in South Carolina, Feb. 4, 1865.

##### Company K.

Wm. Bailey, absent, sick, at muster out.

Isaac Horden, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

John Metchum, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE ONE HUNDRED AND SECOND UNITED STATES COLORED TROOPS.

##### Company A.

Anderson Lewis, disch. for disability, June 2, 1865.

William Owens, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company B.

John Russell, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

Samuel Sweet, disch. by order, Nov. 11, 1865.

##### Company C.

William Craid, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company D.

John Jones, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

James L. Miller, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company E.

Albert W. Hungerford, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

##### Company F.

Frederick Sherwood, must. out Nov. 11, 1865.

*Company G.*

James Bowlin, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.  
Emanuel Lett, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

*Company H.*

Cassius T. Lewis, must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

*Company I.*

William Shurtie, must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

*Company K.*

James Mumford, must. out Sept. 22, 1865.  
Jeremiah Stafford, Jr., must. out Sept. 30, 1865.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## OTHER SOLDIERS FROM BERRIEN AND VAN BUREN COUNTIES.

Representation of the Two Counties in Twenty Michigan Infantry and Cavalry Regiments—Michigan Provost Guard—First Michigan Light Artillery—Berrien and Van Buren Soldiers in Ohio, Illinois, Iowa, Pennsylvania, and United States Regiments.

BESIDES the regiments which have been mentioned above, there were many others which contained soldiers from Berrien and Van Buren Counties, whose record is equally bright and honorable, though serving in regiments in which these counties were less numerously represented. Of the men who served in these regiments a list is given in this chapter.

## FIRST INFANTRY.

## SOLDIERS FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

Asst. Surg. Andrew Holart, Jr., Niles; com. Aug. 17, 1861; pro. to surg., Dec. 10, 1862; must. out at end of service, Oct. 7, 1864.  
Henry Merikee, Co. D; disch. Feb. 7, 1862.  
James P. Clary, Co. E; died of wounds, Sept. 12, 1862.  
William H. Cash, Co. E; died in action at Jackson, Miss., July 11, 1863.  
Otho Cann, Co. E; must. out April 27, 1865.  
Frank Morehouse, Co. E; disch. for disability.  
Ferdinand Marchefke, Co. E; veteran, Dec. 31, 1861; must. out July 25, 1865.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY MEN IN THE FIRST.

Howard Abbott, Co. H; died of wounds.  
John J. Strong, Co. K; died in action at Gaines' Mill, Va., June 27, 1862.

## THIRD INFANTRY.

## FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

Sergt. James W. Rich, Co. E; enl. Sept. 24, 1861; absent, sick, at time of muster out.  
Randon Keyes, Co. E; disch. at end of service, March 2, 1866.  
Melvin A. Wells, Co. E; must. out Sept. 2, 1865.

## FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

Franklin Pearl, Co. A; died of disease in Texas, June 18, 1865.  
Philip T. Miller, Co. F; must. out May 25, 1866.  
David A. Munson, Co. D; disch. for disability, Aug. 8, 1863.

## FIFTH INFANTRY.

## FROM VAN BUREN.

Russell Everett, Co. A; disch. for disability, Sept. 2, 1862.  
Peter W. Galliger, Co. A; veteran, Dec. 10, 1863.  
Herman B. Haven, Co. A; veteran, Dec. 10, 1863.  
James Sherman, Co. A; died of disease at Camp Michigan, Va., Feb. 19, 1862.  
William Nesbitt, Co. G; disch. at end of service, Aug. 28, 1864.  
James D. Rockwell, Co. H; disch. at end of service, Aug. 27, 1864.  
Frank M. Vought, Co. H; disch. by order, Oct. 21, 1864.

## SEVENTH INFANTRY.

## FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

1st Lieut. Stephen Patterson, Co. I; com. April 20, 1864; died March 29, 1865, of wounds received at Spotsylvania, May 14, 1864.

## EIGHTH INFANTRY.

## BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

Col. Frank Graves, Niles; com. May 1, 1863; lieutenant-col. Aug. 19, 1861; killed in battle at Wilderness, Va., May 11, 1864.  
George Brown, Co. G; disch. by order, June 10, 1865.  
George W. Brown, Co. H; disch. by order, Sept. 14, 1865.  
William T. Davis, Co. K; must. out July 30, 1865.

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

John M. Munson, Co. A; trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Feb. 15, 1864.  
John W. Mouser, Co. C; disch. for disability, March 14, 1863.  
John O'Brien, Co. G; must. out July 30, 1865.

## TENTH INFANTRY.

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

John N. Shearer, Co. B; must. out July 19, 1865.  
Myron Andress, Co. E; must. out July 19, 1865.  
Frederick Penard, Co. E; must. out July 19, 1865.  
William A. Cole, Co. F; must. out July 19, 1865.  
William Linsenmeyer, Co. K; must. out July 19, 1865.

## BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

Charles Quigley, Co. G; disch. for disability, Dec. 6, 1862.

## ELEVENTH INFANTRY (OLD).

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

John Clark, Co. A; disch. at end of service, Sept. 30, 1864.  
Alfred G. Wright, Co. E; disch. at end of service, Sept. 30, 1864.  
Elisha C. Brunson, Co. G; died of disease, Jan. 11, 1862.  
Elkins Bobbitt, Co. G; died of disease, March 18, 1862.  
A. Freeman, Co. G; disch. at end of service, Sept. 30, 1864.

## NEW ELEVENTH INFANTRY.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS.

John Clark, Co. C; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.  
Allen E. Clement, Co. F; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.  
Daniel Duke, Co. F; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.  
Charles H. Crandall, Co. F; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.  
George L. Tyrell, Co. K; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.

## FOURTEENTH INFANTRY.

## FROM BERRIEN COUNTY.

Asst. Surg. Alfred Wyker, Niles; com. Nov. 1862; resigned June 1, 1863.

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

Johannes Johnkerman, Co. A; must. out May 31, 1865.  
Hiram M. Goodale, Co. B; disch. for disability, April 16, 1862.  
James A. Stewart, Co. B; must. out July 18, 1865.  
Merritt W. Barnes, Co. D; must. out July 18, 1865.

## FIFTEENTH INFANTRY.

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

John Coleman, Co. A; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
Henry Fitzsimmons, Co. A; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
Joseph Geetz, Co. A; disch. by order, Sept. 11, 1865.  
Thomas J. Whipple, Co. C; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
Peter Chuginnan, Co. D; disch. by order, June 22, 1865.  
George Hancock, Co. E; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
Stephen Kochry, Co. E; disch. by order, May 30, 1865.  
George McGowan, Co. F; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
David Rupert, Co. F; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
Jesse C. Blas, Co. G; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
Darius Chatfield, Co. G; disch. by order, May 30, 1865.  
Lodwick Disbrow, Co. G; disch. by order, July 3, 1865.  
Moses G. F. Eaton, Co. G; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
Daniel S. Ingersoll, Co. G; disch. by order, Aug. 11, 1865.  
Burse Merriman, Co. G; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
John Buchanan, Co. H; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.  
John May, Co. I; died of disease at Baltimore, Md., June 23, 1863.  
Henry Snyder, Co. K; must. out Aug. 13, 1865.

## SIXTEENTH INFANTRY.

## BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

Edward Barnard, 1st Independent Co.; must. out by order, Jan. 18, 1865.  
Horace Garrison, Co. H; must. out July 8, 1865.  
John W. Redding, Co. H; disch. by order, May 12, 1865.  
Joseph White, Co. H; must. out July 8, 1865.  
M. E. Laughlin, Co. I; disch. for disability.  
Alfred I. Conklin, Co. K; must. out July 8, 1865.  
William H. Doane, Co. K; must. out July 8, 1865.

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

John Shant, Co. G; died of disease at Hall's Hill, Va., March 1, 1862.  
Nel-on H. Cole, Co. G; must. out July 8, 1865.  
Levi Cole, Co. G; must. out July 8, 1865.  
William F. P. Vanscoy, Co. G; must. out July 8, 1865.  
Henry S. Kennicott, Co. I; died in action at Bull Run, Va., Aug. 30, 1862.

## DYGERT'S SHARPSHOOTERS (ATTACHED TO SIXTEENTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY).

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

*For Independent Company.*

Sergt. Edwin R. Farmer, Oct. 14, 1861; disch. by order, Oct. 28, 1862.  
George W. Beebe, disch. at end of service, Oct. 15, 1864.

Robert G. Botsford, disch. for disability, Oct. 22, 1862.  
 Henry S. De Bolt, trans. to Invalid Corps, Nov. 15, 1863.  
 Joseph F. Dick, veteran, Dec. 22, 1863.  
 James B. Long, disch. at end of service, Oct. 15, 1864.  
 Corp. Frederick E. Minnis, veteran, Dec. 22, 1863; must. out July 24, 1865.  
 Charles J. Northrop, veteran, Dec. 22, 1863; must. out July 24, 1865.  
 Michael Werner, veteran, March 3, 1864.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY.

Hoel C. Wright, disch. for disability, Oct. 9, 1862.

#### TWENTY-FIRST INFANTRY.

##### FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY.

George W. Hilliard, Co. B; must. out June 8, 1865.

#### TWENTY-SEVENTH INFANTRY.

##### BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

William W. Chaddere, Co. D; must. out July 26, 1865.  
 Cephas Earl, Co. D; died of disease at Annapolis, Md., April 7, 1865.  
 David Ostrander, Co. D; trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, Jan. 15, 1864.  
 Elias H. Hood, Co. D; died in action before Petersburg, Va., July 30, 1864.

#### TWENTY-NINTH INFANTRY.

##### BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

Jesse Olmstead, Co. H; must. out Sept. 6, 1865.  
 Charles Smith, Co. H; must. out Sept. 6, 1865.

##### FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY

Edward Shields, must. out Sept. 6, 1865.

#### THIRTIETH INFANTRY.

##### BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

1st Lieut. and Adjt. Stephen H. Babcock, Niles; com. April 7, 1865; 2d Lieut., Co. A, March 16, 1865; sergt. maj., Nov. 23, 1864; must. out June 16, 1865.  
 Capt. Henry T. Kimmel, Niles; com. Nov. 28, 1864; 1st Lieut., Co. H, 12th Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 John Campbell, Co. B; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Matthias Hunner, Co. B; died of disease at Detroit, Jan. 4, 1865.  
 John H. Wilson, Co. B; must. out June 30, 1865.  
*Company H.*—George O. Bates, Christopher Delman, Bernard V. Forshee, Theodore Metzger, Roland Tripp, Isaac Welsh, Louis C. Wolfe, must. out June 30, 1865.

##### VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

Guy H. Gregory, Co. A; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Lewis C. Veider, Co. H; must. out June 30, 1865.

#### MICHIGAN PROVOST-GUARD.

##### VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

Elijah Burt, must. out May 9, 1865.  
 John Barnard, must. out May 9, 1865.  
 Asahel B. Culver, must. out May 9, 1865.  
 Hiram A. Chapin, must. out May 9, 1865.  
 Jacob S. Frazer, must. out May 9, 1865.  
 Ernest Henry, must. out May 9, 1865.  
 Christopher Parsons, must. out May 9, 1865.  
 Fayette Rawson, disch. for disability, Oct. 29, 1863.  
 Joseph L. Salisbury, disch. for disability, March 23, 1863.

#### FIFTH CAVALRY.

##### VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

Edwin J. Babcock, Co. D; trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Lawrence Martin, Co. D; trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Coleman P. Rawson, Co. D; trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Cortes Foot, Co. L; disch. for disability, April 15, 1863.

##### OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

Corp. Allen P. Huggins, Niles; enl. Aug. 14, 1862; disch. for promotion, Dec. 15, 1862.

#### SIXTH CAVALRY.

##### BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

Geo. Cornelia, Co. A; trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Theophile Gebeau, Co. A; must. out Dec. 8, 1865.  
 Scofield Ferrier, Co. B; trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 James Mott, Co. G; must. out June 17, 1865.  
 Geo. W. Collins, Co. H; trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.  
 Albert H. Waters, Co. L; trans. to 1st Cav.; must. out March 10, 1866.

##### OF VAN BUREN COUNTY.

Theron S. Bailey, Co. I; must. out Nov. 24, 1865.

#### EIGHTH CAVALRY.

##### BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

Sergt. Maj. Horace E. Woodbridge, Buchanan; enl. July 20, 1865; pro. to 2d Lieut.; must. out as sergt., Co. M, June 10, 1865.  
 Com. Sergt. Allen P. Huggins, Niles; pro. to 1st Lieut., Co. C, May 15, 1864; trans. as 1st Lieut. to Co. D, July 20, 1865; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

2d Lieut. Joseph T. Goodwin, Niles; com. July 20, 1865; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

John C. Horn, Co. F; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

John Philips, Co. F; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Richard Powers, Co. H; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Joseph Palaski, Co. H; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Gottlieb Schroeder, Co. H; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

James Price, Co. I; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Joseph C. Garrison, Co. K; died of disease in Tennessee, June 29, 1865.

##### VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

Thomas Colton, Co. A; must. out Sept. 8, 1865.

Eli Hewey, Co. B; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

George Leonard, Co. D; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

James M. Mastin, Co. D; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

John McIntyre, Co. D; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

John J. Rowley, Co. D; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Alfred Wicket, Co. D; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

James H. Chamberlain, Co. E; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Augustus Smith, Co. E; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

George Perry, Co. F; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Leonard Randall, Co. H; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Louden H. Davis, Co. H; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Hiram Flanders, Co. H; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

George E. Grant, Co. H; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

A. J. Van Brent, Co. H; died of disease at Edgefield, Tenn., March 25, 1865.

Helon McDowell, Co. I; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

Asa Bell, Co. L; must. out Sept. 22, 1865.

#### TENTH CAVALRY.

##### BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

Theo. F. Brown, Co. B; must. out Nov. 9, 1865.

Alonzo Burnett, Co. B; must. out Nov. 9, 1865.

Chas. C. Burnett, Co. B; must. out Nov. 9, 1865.

John Kelly, Co. B; must. out Nov. 9, 1865.

Lawrence Larkins, Co. B; must. out Nov. 9, 1865.

David McKain, Co. B; must. out Aug. 28, 1865.

Daniel Redmond, Co. B; must. out Aug. 28, 1865.

Addison E. Storrs, Co. B; must. out Nov. 20, 1865.

##### VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

Colon D. Manley, Co. A; must. out Nov. 11, 1865.

Randolph B. Osborn, Co. A; must. out Sept. 23, 1863.

J. S. Vaught, Co. A; must. out Nov. 11, 1865.

Philip C. Dedrick, Co. B; disch. by order, July 7, 1865.

Edward D. Ormsby, Co. B; must. out Nov. 7, 1865.

Newton Ormsby, Co. B; must. out Nov. 25, 1865.

Michael Ryan, Co. B; must. out Nov. 7, 1865.

Samuel Sweet, Co. B; disch. by order, Nov. 11, 1865.

John H. Osborn, Co. C; must. out Nov. 25, 1865.

Jacob Dodd, Co. E; disch. by order, June 13, 1865.

Chester E. Kooker, Co. F; must. out Nov. 11, 1865.

Frederick Sherwood, Co. F; must. out Nov. 11, 1865.

#### FIRST MICHIGAN LIGHT ARTILLERY.

This regiment contained a comparatively large number of men from Van Buren and Berrien Counties, but these men were scattered through several of the batteries of which the regiment was composed, and the histories of the batteries are as distinct and as unconnected with each other, or with the regimental organization, as are the histories of the same number of cavalry or infantry regiments. Therefore the 1st Light Artillery cannot be mentioned as a whole; nor is it practicable to give separate histories of the several batteries, in each of which a few men were found from these counties. The lists of these men, as found on the rolls in the adjutant-general's office, are as follows:

##### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN FIRST ARTILLERY.

###### Battery A.

Jacob Carr, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 Franklin W. Hyde, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 John Lemon, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 William Lemon, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 Ira A. Munger, trans. to Vet. Res. Corps, April 10, 1864.

###### Battery B.

1st Lieut. Lovell C. Teed, Antwerp; com. March 14, 1865; 2d Lieut., Feb. 8, 1864; sergt.; must. out July 1, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. William S. Charles, Bangor; com. Oct. 28, 1864; sergt.; must. out July 1, 1865.



Q.M. Sergt. Roswell W. Brown, Antwerp; must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Sergt. Lucius W. Mills, Antwerp; enl. Oct. 28, 1861; disch. for disability, Oct. 25, 1862.  
 Corp. Nelson Plumb, Alma; enl. Oct. 25, 1861; veteran, Dec. 24, 1863.  
 Musician Ransom O. Thayer, Antwerp; enl. Oct. 8, 1861; disch. for disability, Jan. 21, 1863.  
 George D. Austin, must. out June 14, 1865.  
 James Beach, disch. for disability.  
 Earl Deremo, must. out June 14, 1865.  
 Albert H. Freeman, must. out June 14, 1865.  
 Bradd G. Freeman, must. out June 14, 1865.  
 Wesley Holmes, veteran, enl. Dec. 24, 1863.  
 Elijah L. Shepard, veteran, enl. Dec. 24, 1863; must. out Feb. 14, 1865.  
 Charles H. Tilton, disch. at end of service, Dec. 24, 1864.

*Battery C.*

George W. Percival, veteran, enl. Dec. 28, 1865; must. out June 22, 1865.  
 Stephen Percival, veteran, enl. Dec. 28, 1865; must. out June 22, 1865.  
 Sterne L. Ripley, died of disease at St. Louis, Mo., Oct. 10, 1863.  
 Allen C. Sterns, veteran, enl. Dec. 28, 1865; must. out June 22, 1865.

*Battery E.*

Charles D. Clafin, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.

*Battery G.*

Casper Dunham, must. out Aug. 6, 1865.  
 William Killifin, disch. by order, Oct. 24, 1865.

*Battery H.*

Elijah M. Kinney, must. out July 22, 1865.  
 Lewis Sherman, disch. for disability.

*Battery I.*

Stephen Cosh, must. out July 14, 1865.  
 Eben C. Hurl, must. out July 14, 1865.  
 Joseph Skelton, died of wounds at Chattanooga, Tenn., July 24, 1864.

*Battery M.*

William Hare, must. out Aug. 1, 1865.  
 William Steindman, must. out Aug. 1, 1865.

## BERRIEN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE FIRST ARTILLERY

*Battery A.*

Burton Prettyman, must. out July 28, 1865.  
 Albert Weaver, must. out July 28, 1865.

*Battery C.*

Abram Evans, disch. for disability, Feb. 26, 1863.

*Battery D.*

Andrew E. Ruttan, must. out Aug. 3, 1865.

*Battery E.*

Albert S. Bliss, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.  
 L. W. Dragon, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.  
 John Shook, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.  
 Samuel Simpson, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.

*Battery L.*

Archelaus Goddard, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.  
 David Lyon, died of disease at Knoxville, Dec. 20, 1863.  
 Henry Rinker, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.  
 Abram Voorhees, must. out Aug. 30, 1865.

*Battery M.*

Orson O. Bronson, must. out Aug. 1, 1865.  
 Edwin D. Batchelor, must. out May 6, 1865.  
 William F. Hurlburt, must. out May 6, 1865.

## FOURTEENTH MICHIGAN BATTERY.\*

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

Blacksmith Patrick Crowley, Decatur; enl. Oct. 13, 1863; disch. for disability, April 16, 1865.  
 Robert Coon, died of disease at Camp Barry, D. C., March 18, 1864.  
 Benjamin Drake, must. out July 1, 1865.

## BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

1st Lieut. James B. Finley, Niles; com. July 1, 1864; must. out July 1, 1865.  
 Sergt. David S. Lyon, Buchanan; enl. March 20, 1863; died of disease at Knoxville, Dec. 30, 1863.  
 Nathan Morlan, died of disease at Washington, April 28, 1864.  
 Henry F. Summers, died of disease at Washington, March 31, 1864.

## FORTY-SECOND ILLINOIS INFANTRY.

Berrien County was quite numerously represented in the ranks of this regiment, the following being the list, as nearly as it is possible to obtain it:

\* Not a part of the First Regiment of Artillery.

*Company F.*

Capt. Wm. R. Townsend, Niles; com. Sept. 2, 1863; 1st Lieut., July 22, 1861; must. out Jan. 23, 1865.  
 1st Lieut. Edward Hurson, Berrien Springs; com. Sept. 2, 1863; 2d Lieut., May 2, 1865; sergt., July 2, 1861; died May 17, 1864.  
 1st Lieut. Chas. Munger, Berrien Springs; com. April 11, 1865; corp., July 26, 1861; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 2d Lieut. Byron J. Dart, Berrien Springs; com. Dec. 16, 1865; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; sergt.; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Corp. Christopher Harmon, Berrien Springs; enl. July 26, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; sergt.; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Alanson Dickerson, Berrien Springs; enl. July 26, 1861; disch. for disability.  
 Comfort P. Estes, Berrien Springs; enl. July 26, 1861; died in action at Kew-saw Mountain, June 18, 1864.  
 Uriah Elliott, Berrien Springs; enl. Sept. 19, 1861; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Florimond Evans, Berrien Springs; enl. Sept. 19, 1861; disch. for wounds, July 28, 1864.  
 John Leaf, St. Joseph; enl. Aug. 7, 1861; died in Mississippi, July 15, 1862.  
 Robert Morony, Berrien Springs; enl. July 26, 1861; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.

*Company F.*

Sergt. Chas. Stone, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; died at Iuka, Miss., Sept. 9, 1862.  
 Sergt. Ogden H. Paton, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; disch. for disability, July 9, 1862.  
 Sergt. David Ledyard, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Corp. Samuel H. Davis, New Buffalo; enl. July 29, 1861; disch. for disability, Dec. 18, 1862.  
 Corp. Chas. Duval, New Buffalo; enl. July 29, 1861; disch. for disability, May 28, 1862.  
 Corp. Henry A. Merriman, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; disch. for disability, Sept. 22, 1862.  
 Corp. John Harmon, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Corp. Wm. H. Bowen, New Buffalo; enl. Aug. 4, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Reuben Birdsall, New Buffalo; enl. Aug. 4, 1861; disch. for disability, Aug. 9, 1862.  
 Marion Birdsall, New Buffalo; enl. Aug. 4, 1861; died at Big Springs, Miss., July 15, 1862.  
 Geo. Courser, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; absent, sick, at muster out.  
 Jacob Dingman, New Buffalo; enl. July 30, 1861; died in battle at Chickamauga, Sept. 20, 1863.  
 Chas. Lohman, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 John Lieman, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 11, 1862.  
 Charles Ledyard, New Buffalo; enl. Sept. 3, 1861; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.  
 Jos. Newman, Buchanan; enl. Aug. 10, 1861; disch. to enl. in 4th U. S. Cav., Dec. 3, 1862.  
 Owen Pritchard, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; died at Chicago, Ill., Sept. 14, 1862.  
 Stephen E. Randall, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; died at Tipton, Mo., Dec. 18, 1861.  
 Wm. D. Russell, New Buffalo; enl. July 29, 1861; must. out Sept. 19, 1865.  
 James Scroufe, New Buffalo; enl. July 30, 1861; died at Camp Baker, Mo., Nov. 2, 1861.  
 Volney Satterlee, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; died at St. Louis, Mo., Feb. 17, 1862.  
 Wm. A. J. Topping, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; died at Nashville, Tenn., Jan. 31, 1864.  
 Caleb Topping, New Buffalo; enl. July 26, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 3, 1862.

*Company G.*

Sergt. Edward Aiker, Pipestone; enl. July 29, 1861; wounded; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.  
 Peter Barrow, St. Joseph; enl. July 29, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Dec. 16, 1865.  
 Carlton L. Bunker, St. Joseph; enl. July 29, 1861; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.  
 N. B. Cullins, Pipestone; enl. July 29, 1861; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.  
 Hiram A. Chapman, Pipestone; enl. Aug. 4, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 7, 1863.  
 Daniel A. Warrell, Watervliet; enl. Aug. 28, 1861; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.  
 VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN THE FORTY-SECOND ILLINOIS.  
 Corp. Jas. D. Mayberry, Paw Paw, Co. E; enl. July 26, 1861; died at Nashville, Tenn., Sept. 20, 1863.  
 Jesse Miller, Paw Paw, Co. E; enl. July 26, 1861; disch. Dec. 5, 1862.  
 John Tanner, Mattawan, Co. H; enl. Aug. 23, 1861; wounded; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.

## FORTY-FOURTH REGIMENT ILLINOIS VOLUNTEER INFANTRY.

## VAN BUREN SOLDIERS.

*Company H.*

1st Lieut. John W. Pierce, South Haven; enl. June 20, 1864; sergeant; res. May 17, 1865.  
 Corp. George W. Petts, Decatur; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; killed by guerrillas in Missouri, April 18, 1862.

George B. Andrews, Lawrence; enl. Aug. 1, 1861.

John Bliss, South Haven; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; disch. for disability, Jan. 7, 1862.

Sylvester Benton, Antwerp; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; disch. for disability, June 7, 1865.

Algernon S. Barrett, Pine Grove; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 6, 1863.

John A. Bennett, Columbia; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

George W. Clark, Leyoy; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

Martin Garver, Lawrence; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

Wells Graham, Pine Grove; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; died at Rolla, Mo., Jan. 20, 1862.

James H. Harris, Pine Grove; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; died at Rolla, Mo., Feb. 18, 1862.

Ira K. Harris, Pine Grove; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

Jas. W. Harris, Hamilton; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; died of wounds, Sept. 20, 1863.

Job Johnson, Columbia; enl. Sept. 1, 1861; must. out Feb. 28, 1865.

Calvin Meacham, Arlington; enl. Sept. 1, 1861; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

Alvah Orvett, Decatur; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; died at Rolla, Mo., March 7, 1862.

John W. Pierce, South Haven; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; pro. to sergt. and 1st lieut.

Christopher Keegan, South Haven; enl. Sept. 1, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 6, 1862.

George D. Sickendick, Columbia; enl. Sept. 1, 1861; veteran, Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

Eugene D. Tibbets, Pine Grove; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

George H. Thompson, Arlington; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; killed in action at Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862.

Samuel Van Fleet, Lawrence; enl. Aug. 1, 1861; disch. for disability, Feb. 12, 1862.

#### *Recruits.*

Reuben Church, Columbia; enl. March 22, 1864; died at Nashville, June 4, 1864.

Alfred Manson, Columbia; enl. March 31, 1864; corporal; must. out Sept. 25, 1865.

#### BERRIEN SOLDIERS.

George G. Patterson, Co. B; enl. Sept. 3, 1861; disch. for disability, March 31, 1863.

The soldiers named below as having served during the war of the Rebellion in several organizations outside of Michigan were all from Van Buren County, viz.:

#### BATTERY I, FIRST ILLINOIS ARTILLERY.

Joseph H. Bardwell, veteran, enl. Feb. 10, 1864.

Charles J. Pierce, veteran, enl. Feb. 10, 1864.

Horace Reddo, veteran, enl. Feb. 10, 1864.

George Smith, veteran, enl. Feb. 9, 1864.

Wm. H. Sanger, veteran, enl. Feb. 30, 1864.

#### FIRST UNITED STATES SHARPSHOOTERS.

1st Lieut. Edwin A. Wilson, Paw Paw; Co. C; com. Nov. 21, 1863; 2d Lieut., May 23, 1863; corp., Aug. 21, 1861; must. out Aug. 20, 1864.

#### NINTH IOWA INFANTRY.

Lyman A. Roberts, Hamilton; veteran, enl. Jan. 1, 1864; disch. for disability, July 2, 1865.

#### TENTH PENNSYLVANIA RESERVES.

Warren A. Salisbury, Decatur; veteran; trans. to 190th Pennsylvania, June, '64.

#### THIRTEENTH U. S. ARTILLERY (COLORED TROOPS).

Henry Higgins, Lawrence; enl. April 11, 1865.

#### SIXTY-FIRST U. S. INFANTRY (COLORED TROOPS).

Sergt. Lyman G. Russell, Bangor, Co. A; veteran.

Sergt. Clark G. Russell, Bangor, Co. C; veteran.

The following list is of Berrien County men serving in the organizations indicated belonging outside the State:

#### FORTY-SEVENTH OHIO INFANTRY.

Capt. Wm. R. Townsend, Niles; com. Sept. 2, 1861; must. out Aug. 11, 1863.

#### FIFTH U. S. COLORED CAVALRY.

2d Lieut. Henry L. Beecraft, Niles; com. Aug. 9, 1864.

#### THIRTEENTH U. S. ARTILLERY (COLORED TROOPS).

Calvin Hackley, Pipestone; enl. March 18, 1865.

George M. Works, Pipestone; enl. March 18, 1865.

#### TWELFTH U. S. INFANTRY (COLORED TROOPS).

Q.M. Sergt. Theodore C. Sachse, Niles.

#### ONE HUNDRED AND SIXTEENTH U. S. COLORED TROOPS.

Lieut.-Col. George H. Laird, St. Joseph; com. July 15, 1864.

## CHAPTER XIX.

### THE FRUIT BELT.

Location of the Favored Region—Causes of its Peculiar Fitness for Fruit Culture—Influence of Lake Michigan on the Climate of its Eastern Shore—The Earliest Orchards—Early Peach-Growing—First Shipments of Peaches—Discovery of the Peculiar Capabilities of the Lake Shore Region—Rapid Increase of Peach-Growing and Consequent Inflation of Prices of Lands—Commencement of Systematic Peach-Growing for the Market—Extension of the Business Northward from the St. Joseph—Earliest Orchards in the South Haven Region—Rapid Advance of Van Buren County in Fruit Culture—The "Yellows" among the Peach-Trees.

On the extreme western border of the lower peninsula of Michigan, a strip of territory not clearly defined in breadth, but extending along the entire eastern shore of Lake Michigan, from near its head, northward to Grand Traverse Bay, has become widely known and famed as the Michigan Fruit Belt. It has received this designation because it has been found, by an experience of more than thirty years, that this region excels any other portion of the State—and probably any part of the United States—in its natural adaptiveness for fruit culture; particularly for the successful production of those varieties which are most sensitive to sudden and severe climatic changes.

By some, the remarkable adaptability of this belt of country for the purposes of fruit cultivation is ascribed in part to the nature of its soil, but the opinion which is concurred in by the closest and most competent observers—and which, by universal acceptance, has come to be regarded as an incontrovertible fact—is, that it is principally due to the proximity of the broad, unfreezing expanse of Lake Michigan, which acts as a vast regulator; modifying the extremes of heat and cold through all this region; protecting fruit-trees by checking a premature development of their buds in spring, and no less by retarding an unnatural and hurtful growth in the late autumn; preventing in a great degree both fall and spring frosts; disseminating needed moisture in time of drought; and creating, in many ways, the favorable conditions which have made its eastern shores so famed for successful fruit cultivation.

The influences of the great lake on the belt of country under consideration have frequently been explained by gentlemen who are profound students of the subject, and deeply interested in it. Some of the best of these explanations are found in papers which have been read from time to time before the State Pomological Society of Michigan; and it is from one of these papers\* that the following extracts, showing the causes and effects of this lake influence, are taken:

"The spring season finds Lake Michigan a mass of water nearly covered with floating ice. The storms of March and the rains of April having broken up the ice in the rivers, large quantities of ice find their way to the lake. Sometimes there are drifts and gorges of this ice on the west side, but more frequently it hugs the east shore, and is so extensive that the blue open water beyond is scarcely distinguishable from a dark cloud on the horizon. The shore is usually protected by a pile of ice from twenty to fifty feet in height, which has been thrown up during the winter

\* Read by Henry S. Clubb, of Grand Haven, in 1874.

by the action of the waves. The effect of this floating ice, and this pile of ice and snow on the shore, is to retard the season.

"The prevailing winds being from the west, southwest, and northwest, the east shore is kept backward by the cool breezes, which prevent that early expansion of the buds, which is so much deplored on the west side of the lake, and which renders the destruction of fruit prospects so common every spring in the Western and Southern States. Not until summer weather is fairly established, and the danger of late frosts over, does the water of Lake Michigan become warm so as to melt the ice, and the sun dissolve the ice-wall so as to allow the breeze which passes over the lake to permit the expansion of the fruit-buds on the trees of the eastern shore. It is much less changeable in its temperature than the land-breezes. It warms slowly, but when warmed it retains the heat proportionately with its depth and volume. The effect of this warm condition of the lake-water is to prevent sudden changes on the lee shore. Regularly as the tides of the ocean the summer breezes traverse the land and water along the lake-shore. In the forenoon the breeze is usually towards the lake, and in the afternoon a lake-breeze comes over the land, modifying the temperature and making the hottest days of July and August pleasant and agreeable. This is the true system of ventilation, of atmospheric drainage, and where the sloping hill-sides are favorably formed, almost certain is the exemption from summer frosts.

"As summer proceeds with its work of perfecting fruit, the lake is not only a protecting but a fertilizing influence. The intense heat of the sun is exerted on a large expanse of water, and the atmosphere is laden with the moisture drawn up during the day, and in the driest season dew comes to the aid of exhausted nature, and, wherever cultivation of the soil is properly attended to, the cool earth condenses the moisture and absorbs it, producing the best possible condition for growth. In calm summer weather this condition is probably best secured along the lake-shore, as during strong winds the moist air is apt to be carried farther inland before the earth, cooled by cultivation, can condense and absorb the moisture, and immediate proximity to the lake in strong summer winds may be no great advantage; but as summer is the period of calm, and the winds are seldom strong or violent, the moist lake-air is an important element of fertilization. Plunge the hand into the loose sand of our lake-shore during the most severe drought of summer, and you find moisture within a few inches of the surface, while in digging twelve to eighteen inches deep in the plowed field, twenty miles from the lake, you will fail to develop any indications of moisture.

"After serving to enlarge and perfect the fruit by its moistening influence, the lake is still at work. It again assumes the office of protector, but in a different manner. In the spring it protected the fruit by holding it back, by retarding the swelling of the buds by its cold atmosphere; but in the fall it performs its functions by retaining and exerting its acquired heat. The deep water of Lake Michigan is as slow to give up its summer heat as it was in the spring to yield its winter cold. It is to Michigan, in the fall and early winter, what the Gulf Stream of the At-

lantic is to Europe. It prolongs summer and fall weather along its eastern shore, through the western counties of the State, far beyond the period of killing frosts in the interior counties, or on the western shore of the lake, in Wisconsin and Illinois. It keeps off early fall frosts even more effectually than it warded off those of early summer. The fruits—the latest varieties of the peach, and several varieties of grapes—have ample time to perfect to thorough ripeness before the frosts intercept their work, while the young fruit buds for the succeeding season develop, stop their growth, and the young wood ripens so as to withstand the rigors of succeeding winter storms and cold.

"Long after the small lakes and principal rivers of Michigan have become frozen over, Lake Michigan maintains its high temperature and consequent freedom from ice. Its breezes constantly temper the wind to the necessities of the fruit-grower along our western coast. It remains substantially open, in fact, during the whole winter, making a difference, during every cold period, of from ten to twenty degrees in favor of the fruit belt.

"The first effect of a sharp frost on the lake is a matter of peculiar interest. Before ice forms to any extent on the lake, the effect of a frost along the shore is to coat over with ice the beach and everything upon it near enough to be touched by the spray. . . . As winter advances the ice thickens, and snow perhaps mingles with the spray still more abundantly; every day a new aspect is presented by this new-formed shore. If the cold continues, the bulk of ice and snow increases in thickness, until it assumes the form of an immense but somewhat irregular wall, skirting the lake at the point where the force of the waves is usually expended. This wall forms a natural breakwater, against which the waves dash with a violence increased by the stubbornness of the resistance it presents to the course of the waves up the beach. The greater the resistance the more abundant the spray, and, with the temperature of the air perhaps near to zero, every assault made by the waves increases the height and thickness of the barrier. The lake, as the cold increases, becomes partially covered with ice, which is broken up into pieces by every wind-storm. This broken ice, dashed up with great violence against the ice-formed barrier on the beach, and in violent storms thrown completely over the ice-wall, is piled upon it, and greatly augments its breadth and height. Ice is piled upon ice, and the whole dashed with water and frozen, until a solid mass is formed, firm as a rock, rivaling the lake bluffs and hills in their height and dimensions. . . .

"This mass of ice forms one of the principal agencies of the lake in retarding the expansion of the fruit-buds during the spring. It is the great refrigerator or reservoir of cold that holds back the buds until the danger of frost has passed. It is the fruit-grower's ice-store, piled up without any labor, and placed just where it is needed for protection from that sudden transition from winter to summer so remarkable in this latitude. Under its cooling influence the fruit-buds 'bide their time,' and do not burst into bloom until danger of blighting frost is over. This accumulation of cold, so to speak, is just as important in the spring as was the store of warmth in the fall. The whole effect is to prevent sudden transition from cold to heat. The lake is



the great evenness of the temperature at all seasons, counteracting all extremes of temperature and modifying the effect of all sudden changes.

"Nor is the great ice-wall and its accompanying floe of broken ice in the lake, important as they are, the only provision made by the lake to protect the fruit husbandry of the adjacent country. The operations of the lake-breezes on land, during the terrific snow-storms of winter, are of similar importance. The snow that would, were it not for the wind, fall on the lake, is taken over the coast, on and on, from one to six, and frequently ten miles, where it is drifted to great depth. Were it not for the wind, this snow would cover the ground twelve to twenty inches evenly, and the first few days of warm weather would dissolve it; but piled in immense drifts, it continues for weeks, giving forth its cooling influences gradually, retarding vegetation in locations that would otherwise be but little benefited by the lake, and thereby carrying lake benefits farther inland than could be secured without. So important is this snow-drift regarded by some fruit men, that I have heard it claimed as marking the true peach belt. But I am inclined to regard it as a wise provision for widening and increasing the security of that belt. This drift does not form in gullies or on low spots alone. It is just as likely to form on high as on low land, wherever some obstruction to the course of the wind renders the location favorable for a drift. A peach-orchard that is so located as to attract the drift, as is often the case within the limit named, secures almost certain protection from winter and spring frosts. In such localities figs could be grown with almost the same certainty as peaches, the snow being a most perfect protection for these exotics."

In reference to this subject of the peculiar climate of the fruit belt, Mr. J. E. Bidwell\* says, "Unquestionably, our climate cannot be surpassed for its uniformity of temperature, rarely exceeding twenty degrees variation in one or two days; this is of great practical value to fruit culture, in the uniform growth and ripening of wood and fruit. Nor is the moisture deficient so as to produce inferior size, shrinkage, or wilt; nor in excess for the perfect development of vegetable, grain, or fruit. These lasting results are mainly due to the great length, breadth, depth, and position of our lakes, which in summer constantly evaporate, expand, and raise cool, moist vapor, to be gently distilled upon us at night, or showered upon us by day in seeming accident, but through great design. Even in winter the restless waters rapidly absorb the cold, contract and settle, and are as quickly replaced by the warmer waters from below. Fresh water is easily influenced by slight atmospheric changes, one cubic foot of which will affect in one like degree of temperature over three thousand cubic feet of air; how great, then, is the influence of Lake Michigan, three hundred and forty by eighty-five miles in extent of surface, and upwards of one thousand feet in depth! Our prevailing winds are from the west, principally southwest, and so receive the equalizing influences of the water. Who can estimate the quantity of imperceptible vapor rising from sixty-

six thousand square miles of fresh water in extreme warm weather in summer, and those immense, cloud-like masses of dark vapor rising from the unfrozen surface in extreme weather in winter, extending its beneficial influence over our State?"

Facts gained from actual observation are given below, showing the superior advantages in climate enjoyed by the eastern over the western shore of Lake Michigan and other regions. They refer to South Haven especially, but of course apply approximately to other portions of Van Buren, as well as to Berrien County.

Facts presented by A. S. Dyckman to the South Haven Pomological Society in 1871:

"The coldest point ever touched by the thermometer at our place, within the recollection of civilized man, was in the winter of 1856-57, nine degrees below zero; since which time the coldest point was seven degrees below zero, Jan. 1, 1864. The summer following each of these winters brought abundance of fruit on all bearing trees. In ordinary winters the thermometer does not reach zero.

"As a remarkable instance of our lake protection, it is said that when the thermometer was at seven degrees below zero here, in January, 1864, it was as low as twelve degrees below at Corinth, Miss., and twenty-seven degrees below at Milwaukee, Wis."

Facts stated by I. S. Linderman before the South Haven Pomological Society, Jan. 7, 1878:

"I believe that we are favored with a climate unexcelled, if not unequaled, in this latitude, between the Atlantic and the Rocky Mountains. As a basis of the correctness of my belief, I offer the following synopsis of the extremes of cold for the last eight years, taken from my record of extremes:

"December, 1868, to April, 1869, not below zero.  
 " 1869, " 1870, 1° below zero once.  
 " 1870, " 1871, as low as zero once.  
 " 1871, " 1872, coldest 5°; below zero only twice.  
 " 1872, " 1873, coldest winter on record to that date; below zero on nine different days.  
 " 1873, " 1874, coldest day January 31st; 5° above zero.  
 " 1874, " 1875, coldest day February 9th; 16° below zero for a few moments only; during the winter it was below zero seven times.  
 " 1875, " 1876, coldest 5° above zero.

"For the last eight years we have had two winters five degrees above zero the coldest, two winters just zero, and four winters below that point, from one to nine days each. The aggregate number of days below zero for the eight years is nineteen. This subject of the superiority of our climate is of the greatest importance to the whole people of the Northwest, and especially to those engaged or proposing to engage in the business of fruit-growing.

"Beloit, Wis., is directly west of us, about sixty-six miles from the west shore of Lake Michigan. Every winter, for the past eight years, it has been from sixteen to twenty-four degrees colder there than it has been here. I refer to that place particularly, because I receive a daily record of the weather and temperature once a week. I will now revert to the winter of 1872-73, the coldest to that date, but which was duplicated two years later. For convenient comparison, I will place the record of the two winters, also the names of places east and west of us, in juxtaposition.

#### "WINTER OF 1872-73.

"DECEMBER 24TH.

South Haven.....	11° below.
Beloit, Wis.....	40° "
Jamesville, Wis.....	40° "
Grand Rapids, Mich.....	40° "
Lansing, Mich.....	33° "
Self-regist-ing thermome at Lansing.....	43° "
Tiffin, Ohio.....	31° "

\*In an address before the South Haven Pomological Society, Feb. 8, 1873.

St. Louis, Mo.....	16° below.
Centralia, Ill.....	22 to 27 "
Chicago, Ill.....	20° "

"In Minnesota it was believed that over one hundred persons froze to death.

" WINTER OF 1874-75.

" FEBRUARY 9TH.

South Haven (for a few moments, clear and very still).....	16° below.
Grand Rapids, Mich.....	40° "
Kalamazoo, Mich.....	34° "
Battle Creek, Mich.....	34° "
Sparta, Wis.....	48° "

" FEBRUARY TENTH.

Beloit, Wis.....	40° "
Janesville, Wis.....	40° "

"The above shows a remarkable uniformity not only in the two winters but in the degrees of cold east and west of the lake, away from its influence. The degrees, however, do not express the whole of the difference in effect. A very sudden change has a much greater effect on man, beast, or trees than a gradual change of the same number of degrees. West of the lake the changes are much more sudden than they are here. I will introduce one example: Monday night, Feb. 12, 1872, at Beloit, Wis., it was 38° above zero. Tuesday morning, the 13th, 6° below was the score,—a change of forty-four degrees in half a dozen hours.—*Beloit Free Press*. My record for the same time stands: Feb. 12th, 6 P.M., 36 degrees above; Tuesday morning, 13th, 34°, with high west wind, getting cold very fast,—forty degrees warmer than Beloit. Noon, 22° above; 6 P.M., 10°; being a change of 26° in twelve hours against 44 degrees at Beloit in a night,—a difference in our favor of 18 degrees. At St. Joseph, Mo., on the same night, there was a change from 52° above to 2° above zero the next morning,—a change of 50° to Beloit 44° and our 26°.

"I might continue these comparisons indefinitely, but it is unnecessary. I have this to say, however: these comparative differences are not exceptions, but the rule, being nearly as great every winter. Fortunately for us, we are not confined to the record of the thermometer to prove the correctness of our claims to superiority of climate. We have other proof that is conclusive on that point. Notwithstanding the extreme cold of 1872-73 we had a good peach crop the following summer, amounting to about fifty thousand baskets, while the combined production of all other localities in the Northwest was far below that amount. This is conclusive proof of the correctness of our record, and cannot be successfully controverted."

There is great diversity of opinion among fruit-growers, apparently equally well informed, as to what width of territory is properly to be regarded as lying within the great fruit belt. Some, whose locations are near the lake, believe that a strip of not more than two miles in breadth is all that can be regarded as within the belt; while others, respectively, place its eastern limit at three, five, ten, and fifteen miles back from the great lake. "Some claim that it extends only a few miles back from the waters of the lake, and that only in the immediate neighborhood of river outlets, the location of future cities; some, along the whole peninsula, as far as the snow line;"\* while others place it far to the eastward, in the interior of the State. "As I understand this matter," says Mr. B. Hathaway,† of Little Prairie Ronde, "there is a *peach* belt and a *fruit* belt in Michigan that are not identical in their limits, or rather I should say the latter includes the former, but is much more extensive. I believe the limits are not easily defined, but they are to include such territory as can be used for raising peaches, where they are reasonably sure every season;

and this region in Michigan is confined to the western shore, and a narrow belt at that."

Mr. J. P. Thompson, of Detroit, defines its extent‡ as follows: "The special fruit belt is composed more strictly of the counties bordering on Lake Michigan, which are Berrien (including the St. Joseph section), Van Buren, Allegan, Ottawa, and Muskegon Counties, where fruit-growing is most a specialty." On the whole, notwithstanding the variety of opinions as to the extent of the fruit belt, it seems proper to regard the counties of Berrien and Van Buren—or at least a very large portion of their territory—as being embraced within it.

There can be no doubt that the first orchard in all this region was the one situated on the left bank of the St. Joseph River, nearly two miles, by the course of the stream, above its mouth, on the farm of the late Capt. Samuel G. Langley. This old orchard, originally composed of about sixty apple-trees, has been known since the coming of the first settlers as the "Burnett orchard," because, as tradition says, it was planted by Mr. William Burnett, who opened his Indian trading-house on the St. Joseph about 1785. About the year 1836, at a time when the river rose to an unprecedented height, the flood destroyed a part of the trees, some of which exceeded ten inches in diameter. A part of them, however, still remain, and as late as 1876 apples produced by them were exhibited at the fair of the State Society of Michigan, by A. O. Winchester, Esq., of St. Joseph, with the remark by him that they were gathered from trees a century old.

Next in point of date must have been the orchard of the Carey Mission, in the present township of Niles. The Rev. Isaac McCoy, the founder of that mission, says,§ "We early planted peach-seed, and now (1826) had an orchard of two or three hundred trees. By searching in the brush about deserted Indian villages and trading-houses we found here and there a few young apple-trees, which, perhaps, had grown from seed accidentally cast. These we transplanted, and ultimately had nearly one hundred trees growing." Elsewhere he intimates that, as he had from the first foreseen that the Indians would ere long be crowded from their lands by the whites, and that the mission would then be vacated, and the land on which it was located would become the property of the United States.—in which event the board of missions would probably receive from government the value of their improvements,—it had been his policy to make these improvements as valuable as possible; and the raising of this orchard was one of the means used to that end.

The fact stated by Mr. McCoy that he found young apple-trees growing around deserted Indian villages is noticeable as showing that the *Pottawattamies* were not unacquainted with that fruit; and though the missionary makes no mention of having seen any apple-trees of size in their country, it is certain that they did bring some of them to a bearing state, for such trees were found by the early settlers, scattered about in several places. It is not unlikely that the apple was first brought into the Indian

\* State Pomological Society Report, 1872, page 124. It does not seem entirely clear what is the location of the "snow line" here mentioned.

† See pp. 11, 12, State Pomological Society Report for 1878.

‡ In an address before the State Pomological Society at Allegan, in February, 1878.

§ History of Baptist Missions, p. 263.

country by the Jesuits, and there is nothing improbable in the supposition that these priests planted apple-trees on the banks of the St. Joseph when they established their mission here, in about the year 1700, as it is certain that the holy fathers had done thirty years before, at the mission of St. Ignace, of Michillimackinac. Orchards of both apple- and pear-trees were commenced at Montreal by the French founders of the place immediately after its first settlement, and the same practice appears to have been usual with the people of that nation in their settlements around the more remote posts and missions. It was certainly done at Detroit at or immediately after the time of its founding by Cadillac, and one, at least, of the old pear-trees at that place, known to have been planted within the palisades of Fort Pontchartrain as early as 1705, remained standing there until its destruction became necessary to make room for the improvements of the city in modern time.

The statement has been made, and published with the proceedings of the State Society, that peach-trees planted by the Indians were found in the neighborhood of the St. Joseph River, and that they were bearing fruit to some extent about 1837, but the authenticity of that part which credits the planting of them to the Indians is doubtful. The early settlers, upon their arrival in this region, found a few peach-trees growing in the Burnett orchard, but evidently much younger than the old apple-trees found there, and they were without doubt planted by Mr. Burnett. It was stated by Mr. Simeon Wilson, a pioneer of St. Joseph, that when he settled there in 1831 there were some seedling peach-trees in a bearing state on the Burnett orchard; and Benjamin C. Hoyt, Esq., who came there in 1829, said that at that time there were a few peach-trees growing on what was afterwards the village plat. Capt. Curtis Boughton also says that when he came to Western Michigan, in 1834, there were peach-trees, which he thinks must have been planted by Indians, standing on the east bank of Hickory Creek, on section 2 of the present town of Lincoln, Berrien Co. But the fact of the trees being found there is no proof that they had been planted by Indians, for they were standing on land which had been occupied for a number of years by a Frenchman, and in the immediate vicinity Mr. Timothy S. Smith had been located as early as 1827.

The immigrants who made the early settlements in Berrien and Van Buren Counties were not unmindful of the advantage to be derived from fruit culture, and, though there was at that time no little doubt expressed as to the adaptability of the climate of this new region for the purposes of fruit-growing, and though none of the settlers could have had the faintest idea of the importance which this industry was to assume in later years, a large number of them planted fruit-trees, and many brought trees from the East and set them out on their new lands here; but in most instances only in sufficient numbers to secure family orchards, and apparently without much, if any, idea of future fruit production as a source of any considerable pecuniary profit, though it is said that some had this object in view from the first. In regard to the early planting of orchards, Berrien can claim very little priority over Van Buren County, for in the latter, particularly in its eastern

part, a large number of both apple- and peach-trees were planted as early at least as 1835, and from these originated some of the earliest orchards in the western part of the State. This marked the beginning in Van Buren of the orcharding industry, in which the county now takes a high rank.

In view of the early doubts which existed in regard to the adaptability of the climate and soil for successful fruit production, it is not strange that a very large proportion of the orchards planted were the apple instead of the tenderer and more precarious peach. Still, there were a considerable number of peach-trees planted by the early settlers, and the success which, from the outset, attended the cultivation of this fruit, caused its extension,—slowly at first, but afterwards with great rapidity,—until at last it absorbed most of the attention of those who had already engaged in fruit culture in this region, and caused hundreds of others, who were neither orchardists nor farmers, to seize the earliest opportunity to embark in the business, and to bend all their energies to the production of peaches for the market.

In the shipment of peaches to an outside market, from any part of the territory of the counties of Berrien and Van Buren, precedence is claimed, and is unquestionably due, to the port of St. Joseph, as the region lying in the vicinity of that village is also entitled to priority in the raising of the fruit for the supply of the very small home demand. "Before peaches were sold in Chicago from this region, even before St. Joseph could supply itself with fruit, Mr. Brodiss, who lived six miles this side of Niles, brought his seedling peaches by the open wagon load to peddle in St. Joseph. This was in 1834."\* At about the same time Theodore C. Abbe set out a small peach-orchard in the south part of the township of St. Joseph, near what is known as the "Gard School-House," having brought the trees from the nurseries of Rochester, N. Y. Mr. Abbe died soon after, and the trees upon his farm were removed and transplanted on the farm of John Pike, in the northwest part of the township of Royalton. There they flourished well, almost as a matter of course, and fruit from them was brought to St. Joseph village for sale in 1837.

In 1839 the first shipment of peaches to Chicago was made by Captain Curtis Boughton, who purchased the fruit from the few small producers in the vicinity, and transported it from St. Joseph, across the lake to the city, in his vessel, the schooner "Henry U. King." The novel experiment was pecuniarily successful, and was afterwards repeated by Captain Boughton, though of course not on an extended scale, as the amount of peaches which he was able to purchase was very limited. In 1843, David and John Byers, of Bainbridge township, produced their first crop of peaches, amounting to forty bushels, which they brought to St. Joseph and sold to the steward of Captain Ward's steamer for the sum of one hundred dollars. The purchaser sold them in Chicago, but the prices realized by him are not mentioned. It was from these insignificant beginnings that the peach trade of Western Michigan grew

\* From a paper read by Mr. Chamberlain, of St. Joseph, before the State Pomological Society in 1872.



to the immense proportions which it assumed a few years later.

Mr. Benjamin C. Hoyt was one of the early planters of fruit-trees at St. Joseph, and he was the first owner of anything which could properly be termed a nursery. In this nursery he had the first Crawford peach-trees which were seen in Western Michigan. Mr. Hoyt has also been mentioned as being the first shipper of peaches to Chicago, but this seems to be clearly a mistake, though he was a shipper to some extent soon after Captain Boughton led the way. Among the earliest peach-growers in a small way in the neighborhood of St. Joseph was Mr. Eleazer Morton, of Benton (father of Hon. Henry C. Morton, of Benton Harbor), and Lemuel L. Johnson, on the north side of the Paw Paw River, who, with those named above and some others, had, as Mr. Parmelee expresses it, "a few peach-trees of seedling sorts, generally in fence-corner rows, and rarely in orchard form."<sup>\*</sup> These small producers continued in this way, not materially increasing the number of their trees, nor attracting much attention until the time came when a succession of exceptionally cold winters destroyed a large proportion of the peach-trees of the interior, but left those within the fruit-belt unharmed. It was this fact which drew attention to the region contiguous to the eastern border of Lake Michigan, and resulted in the discovery of its superior capabilities for the production of fruit; though at that time, and for some few years succeeding, it was believed that the favored section extended but a few miles at farthest from the mouth of the St. Joseph River. The circumstances above alluded to are mentioned more at length by Mr. T. T. Lyon, as follows:

"Several unusually severe winters occurring during the fifth decade of the present century, and coming upon us after the destruction of the forests of the State had become considerably advanced, gave our people the first clear and unmistakable evidence of an unfortunate modification of climate by inflicting serious injury upon many orchards of the apple, and nearly ruining the peach plantations of the State. Important and obvious as are now the advantages of the eastern shore of Lake Michigan for the cultivation of fruits, up to the period mentioned they were little understood or appreciated. It was not till the loss of their trees had enforced the lesson upon the people, and, moreover, till the growth of the Western cities had created a demand for fruit, that the success of casual experiment here began to draw special attention to these advantages.

"For a considerable period after public attention had become attracted to the importance of this exemption, it was popularly supposed to be limited to Berrien County and to the vicinity of St. Joseph. Hence, there suddenly arose at this point a wonderful inflation in the prices of fruit-lands, and an activity in orchard planting that can scarcely be said to have a parallel in the history of fruit culture. For this reason the history of lake shore fruit culture opens with the development of this interest here."

This demonstration of the superior advantages enjoyed by fruit-growers on the western border of the peninsula,

and the action taken soon afterwards by some of the more energetic ones, to avail themselves of its benefits by the planting of more and larger orchards, is termed by Mr. George Parmelee† "the inauguration of the peach belt in 1847." In this "inauguration" Mr. Parmelee himself took a somewhat prominent part. "About this time," he says, "pits of the peach known as 'Hill's Chili,' 'Stanley,' and other names, were planted by Mr. McKeyes, of Bainbridge. At that time I owned an eighty-acre lot in the same town, and had planted on it that spring a small orchard of budded peach-trees, which I had bought of Col. Hodge's 'Buffalo Nursery.'" He, however, left this Bainbridge farm (believing it would prove unfit for peach cultivation, on account of its elevation, and probably thinking also that the vicinity of St. Joseph was the only place where that fruit could be raised successfully), and in the spring of 1848 he set out, on the north side of the Paw Paw River, some two or three miles from Benton Harbor, an orchard of two and a half acres, comprising peach- and apple-trees, with a few pears, plums, and quinces. Captain Curtis Boughton set out an orchard of one hundred and thirty peach-trees in St. Joseph in 1849; and about the same time Dr. Talman Wheeler set out the "Teetzel orchard," and Mr. Eleazer Morton planted a small orchard in addition to the trees he already had. These orchards began to produce about 1852, and peaches from Captain Boughton's orchard (if not from the others) were sold in that year. "It was not," says Mr. Parmelee, "till after Mr. Boughton and I had sold choice peaches from our imported trees that there was much else than seedling trees planted, or budded trees from the better class of local seedlings. The first great impetus to peach-planting was given when I contracted my first considerable peach crop for fifteen hundred dollars, to be delivered in St. Joseph. The report went over the country, and it was magnified ridiculously, but it did its work;" that is to say, it created a great rush into the peach-raising business through all the country lying within a few miles of St. Joseph and Benton Harbor (which was then believed to be the one pre-eminently favored district), and more than quadrupled the prices of lands‡ in that section.

† State Pom. Soc. Rep., 1874, p. 227.

‡ A few years later the prices of orchard lands in that vicinity had increased to fabulous figures, which really seemed to be warranted by the very large profits which accrued from the business of peach-growing,—the yield of a single year amounting, in some instances, to fully \$5000 per acre. From the small beginning made by Mr. Parmelee in 1848 he had in the course of a few years enlarged his orchard, and had put out ninety-eight acres; had his lands well fenced, and in a high state of cultivation; built a fine residence, costing some \$6000, and corresponding outbuildings. All these improvements were made from his fruit, and from such a small beginning; and his property, so improved, sold for the handsome sum of \$43,000. The "Cincinnati Orchard"—the largest peach-orchard in the State, embracing originally about sixty-five acres in bearing, and located about one mile from Benton Harbor—was planted by Smith & Howell, bankers, of Cincinnati and Lebanon, Ohio, on land leased for twelve years from Eleazer Morton. After securing a succession of heavy and very profitable crops, they sold the trees and lease (when it had but three years to run) for \$12,000, to Hopkins, Edwards & Willard, who the same year netted \$15,000 from the crop, and realized about the same sum annually for the remainder of the lease. In 1871 this orchard produced over 37,000 baskets of peaches, which netted about \$20,000.

Mr. Thresher, of Benton Harbor, stated that "as early as 1865

\* This, however, is not a correct assertion as to Mr. Eleazer Morton, who had planted an orchard of apple, peach, and plum-trees as early as 1840, and in 1845 had sold his peach crop at one dollar per bushel.

"The interest in fruit culture thus excited in the vicinity of St. Joseph\* was not long in finding an echo from other points along the eastern shore of the lake. At South Haven, twenty-two miles north of St. Joseph, the next point affording suitable harbor facilities, orchards were planted about the year 1852, and from that time the interest gained strength slowly till the advent of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad supplied an outlet eastward, and removed many of the serious embarrassments under which the locality had previously labored." The pioneers in orcharding at South Haven were Stephen B. Morehouse and Randolph Densmore, the former of whom removed there for the purpose of engaging in the business, and planted the first orchard in 1852. Mr. Densmore's orchard was planted on a lot adjoining that of Mr. Morehouse and at about the same time; so it was only three or four years after orchard culture to any extent was commenced as a business at St. Joseph and vicinity, that it was also commenced at South Haven. In 1857, Aaron S. Dyckman planted an orchard of four acres in extent, and about the same time James L. Reid commenced one on the lake-shore in the same township. S. G. Sheffer, Joseph Dow, and C. M. Sheffer set out orchards here soon afterwards, and a little later vineyards were commenced by Orris Church, A. S. Dyckman, Aaron Eames, and others. But here, although both soil and climate are equally well adapted to fruit cultivation, the progress made during the first few years was less rapid than it had been at St. Joseph and Benton Harbor, for the reason that in the last-named region there was an abundance of cleared land, ready for the reception of fruit-trees, which was not the case to so great an extent in the South Haven district. This disparity, however, gradually ceased to exist, and the fruit production of South Haven, as in other parts of Van Buren County, has steadily grown in extent and importance.

Concerning the fruit-growing interest of the eastern part of Van Buren County, Mr. Lyon, in his "History of Michigan Fruit Culture," remarks that among the earliest budded peach-trees in that section were a few brought from near Rochester, N. Y., by N. H. Bitely, in 1855. These were planted on a hill and stood the test of a very severe winter, while others on low grounds were killed. This attracted the attention of Mr. Columbus Engle, who owned some of the highest land in this region, and which he regarded as worthless. Observing this exemption, he at once planted these hills with fruit-trees, largely peaches. From this venture has grown one of the most successful fruit-plantations in the county, he having (up to 1878) failed of a crop but twice in eighteen years.

From these, and other similar beginnings in fruit culture, Van Buren has advanced to its present rank among the best fruit counties of the State. This result has been attained by energy and perseverance on the part of the orchard pro-

prietors, and the exercise of intelligence in their methods of cultivation, aided by unrivaled advantages in soil and climatic conditions. The statistics of the ninth census of the United States (having reference to the year ending June 1, 1870) show that the value of orchard products in the county of Berrien was \$561,641, and in the county of Van Buren \$135,910; Berrien standing first and Van Buren eighth in importance in this particular among the counties of the State. Four years later, by the State census of 1874, Van Buren had advanced to the *second* rank among Michigan counties in the value of orchard products. In the matter of peach production, in 1872, Berrien stood first among the counties, the production reported being 140,450 bushels, while Van Buren, producing 62,929 bushels, stood next in rank to Berrien. In 1873, Van Buren advanced to the rank of the first county in Michigan in peach production,—the crop reported being 9072 bushels,—and the adjoining county of Allegan took the second place. This result is shown by the reports of the last census,—that of 1874.

#### THE "YELLOW" AMONG THE PEACH-TREES.

For a period of about twenty years from the time when systematic peach production for the market was commenced by a few enterprising men in the neighborhood of St. Joseph and Benton Harbor, the business continued to spread rapidly over nearly all the favored section of the lake-shore, and was prosecuted with almost marvelous pecuniary profit to the growers. Their success had been uniform and uninterrupted; the possibility of a failure of crops was scarcely thought of, and there seemed to be little reason to doubt that the prosperity of these earlier years would continue indefinitely. But at about the end of the period above named there came a warning of approaching disaster,—the first appearance of that scourge, the "yellows," which was destined to spread havoc among the peach-orchards of this hitherto exempted region to an extent amounting, in many localities, to an almost complete destruction of the business.

This fatal disease to peach-trees proceeds from a cause which may be said to be unknown, inasmuch as it has never been removed or satisfactorily explained;† and there is little more to be said of it than to notice its appearance and operation. The disease shows itself in the premature ripening of the fruit, sometimes that of the entire tree, but more generally that on one or more of its branches. The fruit becomes unnaturally red, especially at the pit, and acquires an insipid and unwholesome taste as it approaches maturity. The first indications are observed in the peach usually about one month before its ripening. In the first year of the disease the fruit grows nearly to its natural size, but is always marked with specks and large spots of purplish red. Internally, there appear small red specks in the part next the pit, first at the stem, and afterwards on every part of the pit. These increase daily in number, and gradually extend, until every cell contains one or more of

there were at St. Joseph and Benton Harbor no less than 207,639 peach-, 40,957 pear-, nearly 70,000 apple-, about 10,000 cherry-, 2500 quince-, and 3000 plum-trees, 35,000 grape-vines, and more strawberry-, blackberry-, and raspberry-plants than could well be enumerated." Afterwards, at the time of heaviest production, the number of peach-trees given above had been trebled within the same limits.

\* History of Michigan Fruit Culture, by T. T. Lyon, of South Haven. Report State Pom. Society, 1878.

† Mr. Thomas Meehan, of the Germantown Nurseries, near Philadelphia, Pa., however, expressed this opinion to Secretary Garfield, of the Michigan State Society: "There is no longer any more doubt about peach yellows being caused by root fungus than there is that the sun shines on a clear day. I fear your friends have not kept pace with the progress of discovery."

the specks. Under the microscope, these specks are seen to be small red globules in the fluid of the cells. When exposed to one hundred and eighty degrees Fahrenheit in a fruit-dryer, these globules become dry, and remain in the cellular tissues. The effect on the peach is to render it unpalatable, unwholesome, and worthless.

On the tree, the presence of the disease is marked by the production, upon the affected branches, of very slender, wiry shoots, a few inches long, and bearing starved, diminutive leaves, which are very narrow, quite distinct from the natural size, and are either pale yellow or are destitute of color. The sap in the affected limbs acquires an orange color, a slimy touch, and a disagreeable, sickish smell. As the disease progresses, it can be traced down the trunk of the tree to the base, where tufts of unnatural growth are frequently found, and the new wood and bark of the tree acquire a softer, lighter, and more spongy growth. The disease does not appear to be either produced or prevented by any peculiarity of soil,\* drainage, or exposure. Trees of all ages are attacked, and the most vigorous and healthy ones are not exempt. Mr. William R. Prince says, "The yellows is a disease which attacks all classes of peaches alike. It is analogous to the yellow fever, which attacks with equal virulence all races of men,—black, white, copper-colored and yellow." The removal of limbs on which the disease first appears, the slitting of the bark, the application of wood ashes, lye, salt, potash, warm water, superphosphates, and many other supposed remedies have been applied, but they have had little or no effect in curing the disease or preventing its spread. Nothing has been accomplished in this direction, except by promptly destroying and removing affected trees as soon as their prematurely ripened fruit gives warning that the blight is upon them. Mr. T. T. Lyon, who is excellent authority in such matters, expresses the opinion that the attempt to discover a specific for the cure of the yellows is as futile as were the efforts of the alchemists to transmute base metals into gold, or the search of the Spanish explorers for the fountain of perennial youth.

For some time after the disease appeared here many doubted that it was contagious, but that doubt has long since passed away. It has been repeatedly demonstrated by experiment that pollen taken from the blossoms of diseased trees, and used to impregnate the pistils of blossoms on healthy trees, conveys the disease to the latter. It is now universally admitted that the disease is contagious, and that its spread is only to be prevented by the prompt destruction of affected trees.

In regard to the origin of the yellows within the Michigan fruit belt, we find it stated† that "the disease is supposed to have been introduced in this vicinity about the year 1862, by means of trees imported from New Jersey, which had been grown from buds of infected trees. But few trees were so affected, and it was several years later when the disease in the vicinity of Benton Harbor first assumed a contagious type." It is proper, however, to note that by many this statement of the manner in which it was first

introduced is pronounced entirely groundless. The diversity of opinion on the subject is, of course, very great.

The disease made its first appearance within the fruit-belt, in 1868, on Crawford trees in the plantations of John Whittlesey and A. O. Winchester, at St. Joseph,—in the neighborhood of the locality where successful peach-growing had its origin. Not more than half a dozen trees on these plantations were attacked by the disease in the first season of its appearance, and its spread was very slow during the three or four years next succeeding. The peach-orchards of the entire region were then bearing enormous crops, and they continued to do so afterwards; the crop of 1869 being unusually large through all the district tributary to St. Joseph, as elsewhere. Four years after the first appearance of the disease it had not reached orchards five miles away from the trees which were first attacked, but about that time it began to spread with greater rapidity, and finally extended over the entire belt, or at least over that part of it which lies within the counties of Berrien and Van Buren (excepting, perhaps, a small area in the extreme southern part of the former), and northward to Allegan and Ottawa.

Its ravages have been greater and far more disastrous in the St. Joseph and Benton Harbor districts than in any other, partly because here were more and larger plantations than in any other section, and partly because, having appeared here first, it had gained a firm foothold and performed much of its destructive work before the fact became known that the only remedy is the prompt destruction of infected trees. "At St. Joseph and Benton Harbor," says Mr. Lyon,‡ "resort was had to experiments looking to the cure of the malady and preservation of the trees, but such experiments have proved futile, at least so far that almost the entire stand of peach-trees seems to have become affected, and to have, in subsequent seasons, either died outright, or been destroyed for the purpose of clearing the ground for plantations of other fruits. Indeed, so generally has this been done, that peach culture can hardly be said longer to be a leading interest here, while the end is not yet reached." It is true that the yellows disease has dealt to the peach-producing interest so staggering a blow that many people, having in mind the enormous production of former years, speak of the business as dead (though not without hope of resurrection) in the region which finds its outlet at the mouth of the St. Joseph River. But it is shown by the report of the deputy collector of the port of St. Joseph that in the past season (1879) there have been shipped from that port 78,299 baskets of peaches, 57,949 crates of berries, and 10,525 barrels of apples; an amount which in itself seems large, and which, as regards the peach item, is only insignificant when compared with the enormous shipments of earlier years.

In the South Haven region, and at other points in Van Buren County, the disease appeared later than on the St. Joseph, and not until some knowledge had been gained as to its character and the only practicable method of preventing its extension. When the first cases of yellows were discovered there (in 1873), the South Haven Pomological Society, thoroughly awake to the danger through the warn-

\* It has, however, been asserted that no damage was ever done by yellows to trees growing on limestone or calcareous soils.

† State Pom. Soc. Rep., 1878, p. 254.

‡ History of Michigan Fruit Culture, State Pom. Soc. Rep., 1878, p. 284.



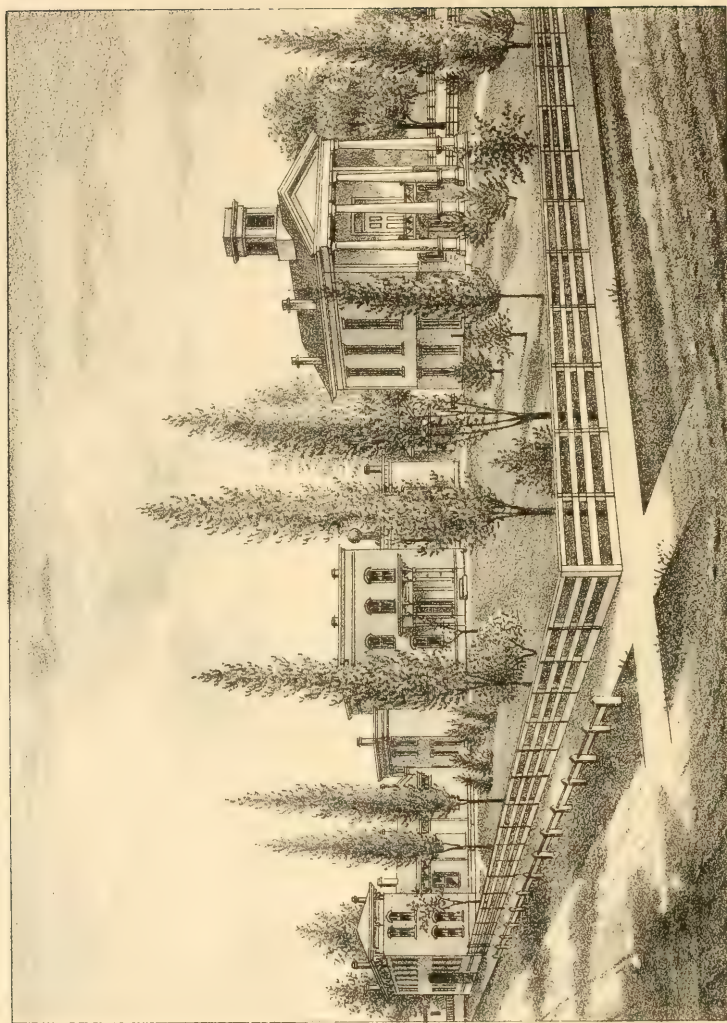
ing which had come down from the devastated orchards of Berrien County, took action at once, by the appointment of a committee, who, with general concurrence, enjoined upon all peach-growers and the community the summary destruction of all infected trees wherever and whenever discovered. Besides this, the society memorialized the Legislature, asking the enactment of a law compelling such destruction; and in this they were joined by producers in Allegan and Ottawa Counties. This resulted, in 1875, in the passage of an act\* which provides "that any and all trees in the counties of Allegan, Van Buren, and Ottawa, whether peach, almond, apricot, or nectarine, infected with the contagious disease known as the yellows, shall be held to be without pecuniary value and their fruit unfit for use as food; and that, as the best known means of preventing the spread of such disease, both tree and fruit so infected shall be subject to destruction as public nuisances." And the law makes it the duty of any township board who shall receive information from five citizens, of the existence of the yellows within the township, to appoint a commissioner, whose duty it shall be, upon discovering such infected trees, "to affix a distinguishing mark to each tree so affected, and immediately notify the owner or occupant of the premises on which such trees shall be standing" to destroy the condemned trees within five days from such notice; also to proceed in the same manner in case of the discovery of any infected fruit, notifying the owner or person in charge of it

to withhold it from distribution, shipment, or sale, and to destroy it; and in case persons so notified refuse or neglect to comply with the mandate within the time named, the commissioner has power "to immediately enter upon the premises, and effectually uproot and destroy such affected or diseased trees or fruit," and certain penalties are fixed by the law for non-compliance on the part of the owner or person in charge. But there is no occasion for the infliction of the penalty, for all willingly and eagerly co-operate to extirpate the scourge by the only known means,—the prompt destruction of all trees bearing the marks of infection. "By the earnest employment of this means of eradication, although the disease is understood to have appeared as far north as Spring Lake, it appears to have gained very little strength, and if not fully suppressed, seems likely to be kept within very narrow limits." This is the opinion expressed in 1878 by Mr. T. T. Lyon in his "History of Michigan Fruit Culture." It seems to have been measurably verified thus far, and it is to be hoped that it will prove correct hereafter.

It is of course impossible to know the future of peach culture in Southwestern Michigan. Most of those engaged in it predict that the blight of the yellows will disappear, as it has from regions once ravaged by it in the East, and that there will succeed another period of as great prosperity as was known here in the days of the "Cincinnati orchard." This supposition seems reasonable enough, but as the subject is more within the scope of prophecy than of history, it seems proper to omit its discussion here.

\* Local Acts, 1875, p. 726.





COURT HOUSE, JAIL AND COUNTY BUILDINGS, BERRIEN COUNTY.  
BERRIEN SPRINGS, MICHIGAN.



# BERRIEN COUNTY.

## CHAPTER XX.

### NATURAL FEATURES—EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

Location of Berrien County—Surface, Soil, and Streams—Commencement and Progress of Settlement—Improvements made by the Early Traders—The Protestant Missionaries—First Immigrants in the several Townships—Population.

BERRIEN, the extreme southwestern county of the State of Michigan, has nearly the form of a right-angled triangle, of which the base, its eastern line, joins the counties of Cass and Van Buren, and the hypotenuse, or western boundary, is the coast-line of Lake Michigan. On the north it is bounded by Van Buren County, and on the south by the State of Indiana. The superficial area of the county is a little more than six hundred square miles, or about three hundred and eighty-five thousand acres.

The surface of Berrien County is greatly diversified, embracing a large proportion of rolling country, a considerable area that is level, wet, and swampy, and some that is broken into ravines and abrupt elevations of land. There is but little prairie land in Berrien. The principal one of these tracts is Wolf's Prairie, of about one thousand acres, lying in the central part of the county, but smaller ones are found in the southeastern part. The lands of the county which more than others suffer from insufficient drainage are those lying within a belt which extends in a northeast and southwest direction nearly parallel with the lake-shore, through the western townships. Marshes also exist along the shores of the St. Joseph River for some distance above its mouth. Elevated rolling lands are found along the eastern border of the county, while farther towards the southwest, in Buchanan and other townships, the swells become sufficiently lofty to be termed hills, not only in the Michigan acceptance of that term, but even by people accustomed to the more rugged surface of the State of New York. Sandy bluffs or hills extend along a large portion of the lake-shore, and high lands, broken in many places into ravines, form the banks of the streams, particularly those of the principal river. From the higher elevations the swell subsides into gentle undulations, which extend over a large proportion of the area of the county.

Nearly every variety of soil is found here, from light and drifting sand, and friable loam intermixed with gravel, to strong and heavy clay lands, excellent for grazing and the production of hay. Much of the soil of Berrien is equal to the best in Michigan for wheat-raising, and nearly every part of the county is excellently adapted for orcharding and fruit culture.

The principal stream of Berrien County is the St. Joseph River, which, taking its rise in the counties of Jackson, Hillsdale, Branch, and Calhoun, passes through St.

Joseph County to its southwestern corner and into the State of Indiana, from which it returns into Michigan on the line between Niles and Bertrand townships, in Berrien County. From this point it flows nearly north for several miles, after which it passes across the county in a general northwesterly direction, and enters Lake Michigan at the village of St. Joseph.

The Paw Paw River, after passing through Van Buren County in a westerly course, enters Berrien near its northeast corner, flows through the county in a southwest course, and enters the St. Joseph River within a few hundred yards of the point where the latter flows into the lake. Blue Creek, a small stream, but one of the principal tributaries of the Paw Paw, enters the latter from the southeast. The Dowagiac River, flowing southwestwardly from Cass County, enters Berrien across its eastern boundary, and, passing only a short distance through this county, enters the St. Joseph just below the city of Niles. Hickory Creek, taking its rise in the central part of Berrien County, flows in a general northerly direction, and enters the St. Joseph River (of which it is one of the principal tributaries) through its southern bank. Pipestone River, another tributary of the St. Joseph, enters the river from the eastward a few miles above its mouth.

The Galien River is formed by streams which unite their waters in the south part of Berrien County. From the point of confluence the river flows past the village of New Troy, and then, making an abrupt turn, flows in a general southwest course to New Buffalo, where it enters the lake.

There are a number of small lakes in Berrien County, mostly in the eastern and northeastern parts. The largest of these is Paw Paw Lake, which is one of the sources of the Paw Paw River. Further mention and a more extended description of these lakes will be found in the histories of the townships in which they are situated.

### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The first settlers in any region or section of country are those who first locate within its boundaries with the expectation and intention of making it a place of residence for themselves and their families. The first persons of European descent who may have come, under these conditions, to the territory which is now Berrien County were the few French Canadians whose dwellings were clustered round the military post and mission at the mouth of the St. Joseph River in the first part of the eighteenth century. Of the subsequent history of this settlement, however, nothing is known beyond the fact that it did not prove to be a permanent one; and the people by whom it was made (who were perhaps many, if not most, of them partly of Indian lineage) must be regarded as having been

merely transient residents here, rather than settlers, as the term is usually applied.

But the same is not true of William Burnett, who came to the St. Joseph River about the year 1785, nor of Joseph Bertrand, who at about the same time established himself on the upper river, near the southern boundary of the present county, for both these men made improvements, and their settlements were of sufficient permanence to continue until white immigrants began to come into this region from the older States. They married women of Indian descent (Burnett's wife being Kawkema, a sister of the chief Topinabé, and the children of both were well known residents of Berrien County. The business of Mr. Burnett, in particular, was quite extensive, and facts gathered from his old books of account give to his trading establishment more of the character of a settlement than has usually been supposed.

From the two books of his which have been found (covering the period from 1792 to 1802), it appears that his post on the St. Joseph was the base of extended trading operations, not only on that stream, but on the Kankakee, Wabash, and Illinois Rivers, as far south as Peoria Lake, and also at Chicago and several other points. A large number of names are found, apparently those of employees who assisted him in his operations, and among these are the following: Pierre Chevellier, Pierre Courville, Louis Cotennoise, Louis Champlin, Louis Chaborliss, Charles Chodonet, Joseph Bertrand, Jean B. Boreseau, François Brissette, Baptiste Barron, Doneau Dequindre, François Ducharme, Jean Lalime, Joseph Lapleur, Laurent Lefevre, Jean Le Clerc (a blacksmith), Joseph Naimenville, and Baptiste Poinssable. Among the English names found recorded are those of John Cook, John Griffin, Joseph Howard, James Graham, John Kinzie, Benjamin Lyon, David Mitchell, and Major Henry Hinfrey. Of these last named, John Griffin and John Kinzie are known to have been employed in trade as agents of Mr. Burnett, but as to several of the others nothing is known in reference to their business with the proprietors of the post.

The entries in the Burnett books show clearly that his trade and connections were widely extended; and some are very curious in other particulars. Some of them are as follows:

"Aug. 17, 1792.

"To Sundries, per J. Lalime, at Chicagou.

"By Peltries, " J. Lalime, at Chicagou.

"May 25, 1795.

"To Sundry Merchandise, per G. Martin, taken to the Wabash.

"Jan. 9, 1798.

"To Cash paid an Indian for carrying an express to Milwaky.

"Sept. 13, 1800.

"Jean B<sup>c</sup> Poinssable, Dr.

"To 7 bottles Spirits paid an Indian, Askie, for going Express with the Spanish commandant and letters to Fort Wayne."

Other entries found in these books furnish some indication of the condition of the people who were then living in

the neighborhood of St. Joseph River, and show that their manner of life and their surroundings were such as to entitle them—to some extent at least—to be considered as settlers. The following items are of this kind, viz.:

"March 12, 1792.

"To Cash paid the Tailor.

"Aug. 21, 1792.

"To Cash paid the Doctor.

"Aug. 23, 1800.

"P. Lesseon, Bought of Wm. Burnett One Cow,  
One Calf, and three large Hogs, for.....£550 0s.\*

"Aug. 23, 1800.

"Joseph Naimenville, Dr.

"To Butter..... £2 10s.

"Nov. 4, 1801.

"Capt. Rough, Dr.

"To one Cow..... £100 0s."

These entries, and many other similar ones which are found in the books, show that the community in the vicinity of Burnett's post supported a physician and a tailor, that some of the people there kept cows and other animals, and that they carried on dairying in a small way. Another item, as follows—

"Nov. 2, 1800.

"J. Naimenville, Cr.

"By 377 boards, sawing"

—suggests the probability that a saw-mill was in operation on some of the neighboring streams, though it may have been the case that these boards were cut in a saw-pit by hand-labor.

Many other items are found similar to those given above, and besides these, charges against various persons for "Loaves of Bread" occur quite frequently; from which it may be inferred that a bakery was carried on by Mr. Burnett or by some other person in the vicinity. But however this may have been, it seems evident that the region around the trading-post was not an uninhabited waste, and that the people who lived there at that time were surrounded by some of the improvements and conveniences which are commonly found among white settlers. As to Mr. Burnett, there can be no doubt that he intended to make his settlement here a permanent one, and he furnished one of the best possible evidences of this by the planting of an apple-orchard, which was quite an extensive one for those days, and a part of which is still standing. Improvements were made (though probably to a less extent) by Joseph Bertrand; and there seems to be no good reason why these men should not be regarded as the first two white settlers in the present county of Berrien.

The Protestant missionaries who commenced their labors among the Indians of the St. Joseph in the year 1822 came with no intention of remaining here permanently, and could not therefore be regarded as settlers, though they made quite extensive improvements in clearing lands, planting orchards, raising crops, and erecting buildings. One of

The prices here carried out appear to have reference to Old Tenor, or Continental money, or to some other greatly depreciated currency.

the most important of their improvements was the construction and putting in operation of a mill for the grinding of grain. Their first mill—operated by hand-power—was started in 1823. Of this rude mill, Mr. McCoy said that one strong man by constant labor was able to make Indian corn meal, of poor quality, sufficient for bread for the family. "Wheat-flour could not be manufactured." He says that at that time the nearest grist-mill was one hundred and ninety miles distant from the place where Niles City now stands. In 1825 the hand-mill at the mission was replaced by one driven by horse-power, which was capable of producing both corn-meal and wheat-flour. In that year the mission people harvested three hundred bushels of good wheat, raised in their own fields.

✓ The first actual settler at Niles (as also the first in Berrien County, if Burnett and Bertrand are not considered as such) was Squire Thompson, who came here from Indiana in 1823, and brought his family to his new home on the St. Joseph in 1824. In the latter year he had a neighbor, in the person of William Kirk, who came there in the spring of that year. In 1825 the population of the neighborhood was increased by the immigration of Benjamin Potter, Nathan Young, John Lybrook, Joel Yard, and others. Eli Ford came in 1827, and built the first grist-mill which was propelled by water-power, and intended for public accommodation.

The next settlement after that at Niles was made on Hickory Creek, in what is now the township of Lincoln, by Timothy S. Smith, at whose house was held the annual election for the (old) township of St. Joseph, in 1827.

In that part of the county which is now the township of Berrien, settlements were made by John Johnson, Jr., in 1827, and by George H. Claypool, in the spring of 1828. In the following year Calvin Britain and Augustus B. Newell pre-empted lands where the village of St. Joseph now is, and in 1829 they became settlers at that place. Mr. Britain and Mr. Newell were usually mentioned as the pioneer settlers at St. Joseph. Daniel T. Wilson, Calvin Bartlett, Benjamin Chandler, and Benjamin C. Hoyt came there, however, at about the same time.

In the central part of the county John Pike made the first settlement, at Wolf's Prairie (Berrien Springs), in 1829. In the same year George Kimmel took up three hundred acres of land near Mr. Pike, but did not settle on it until a year or two later. Francis B. Murdock settled in the same township (Oronoko) in 1830.

In the southern tier of townships the first of the settlers was Benjamin Redding, who came to Bertrand township in 1830, and located at the point now known as Dayton. As the greater part of Bertrand was covered by the Indian reservation, settlements in that township were not numerous until after the cession of the reservation, in 1833.

Royalton received its first settlers in the persons of John Pike and his son William, who had previously located at Wolf's Prairie, but who removed down the river to this township in 1832. In the same year Jehial Enos entered land here, and settled soon after. Some three years later he removed from the township.

In that part of the county which is now Buchanan township the first settler was Charles Cowles, who located on the

site of Buchanan village in 1833. Russell McCoy, John Hatfield, and Hiram Wray came in 1834.

The settlement of Bainbridge township was commenced by Bartholomew Sharral and a man named Ruleaux, two French Canadians, in 1833. Two years later Martin Tice and John P. Davis came in, and the latter located on the Territorial road, where he opened a tavern which became a somewhat noted stopping-place for travelers by stage and otherwise.

In the northeast corner of the county the first improvements were made in 1832 by Job Davis, who made preparations to build a saw-mill, but soon became discouraged and sold out to parties in St. Joseph. These attempted to carry out the mill project, but failed. Levi Ballengee went there intending to board the men who were expected to work in the mills, and after the failure of the project he was compelled to remain. He was there engaged in shingle-making in 1834; and in that year Stephen R. Gilson became a settler, near the present village of Coloma, in Water-vliet township. Rumsey Christy settled near them in the winter of 1834-35, and others were added to the pioneer community in the following spring. In Benton the first settlement was made by Jehial Enos, who had prospected there as early as 1828, and about six years later he became the pioneer settler in the township, where he is still living.

In the southwest corner of the county the first settlers were Wessel Whittaker and several associates, who came from Western New York to New Buffalo, in 1835, with the expectation of founding a city which should be the principal lake-port of Western Michigan. The story of their operations there is told in the separate history of that township and village. In the township adjoining the last-named on the east (Three Oaks) the pioneer settler was Richard Love, who came there in 1835. Sylvester and Erasmus Shead settled there in the following year. The first settlers in what is now Galien were Samuel H. Garwood, John P. Johnson, and James H. Wilson, who came there in 1835 or 1836; and about the same time Phineas Stratton, Timothy Atkins, and others settled farther down the Galien River, in the present township of Weesaw.

The first settlements in Lake and Chickaming were also made in 1836; that in the latter being made by Luman Northrop, and the pioneers in the former being John Harner, Horace Godfrey, Thomas Ruggles, and Thomas Phillips. In the part of the county which is now the township of Sodus, the first improvement was the erection of a saw-mill by James B. Larue on Pipestone Creek in 1835. David S. Rector worked as a sawyer in this mill in 1836, and afterwards became a settler in the town. His father, David Rector, settled there with his family in the fall of 1837, as did also Hiram, a brother of David S. Rector. The owner of the mill, Mr. Larue, did not become a permanent settler in the township until after 1840. In Pipestone (originally a part of Bainbridge) the first settlers were James Kirk and Dr. Morgan Enos, who came there in 1837. In the northwest corner of the county (now Hagar township) the first man who made a clearing was Henry Hawley, a Canadian, who came in the spring of 1839, but soon became discouraged and left. In the same year came Charles Lamb, who was properly regarded



as the first permanent settler, and who remained without neighbors in the township for a number of months. Several other settlers, however, arrived there in the year 1840.

The preceding is intended merely as a notice of the very earliest settlements, and of the dates at which these were made in different portions of the county. Detailed accounts of settlements and settlers form the most important part of the history of townships, and such accounts will be found in subsequent pages, and in their proper connection.

#### POPULATION OF THE COUNTY AT DIFFERENT PERIODS.

The population of Berrien County and of its townships, at different periods from 1840 to 1874, is shown by the several censuses to have been as follows:

TOWNSHIPS.	1840.	1845.	1854.	1860.	1870.	1874.
Bainbridge.....	231	613	574	908	1,327	1,418
Beaumont.....	27	141	1,028	3,116	2,524	
Berrien.....	545	566	999	1,254	1,405	1,381
Bertrand.....	1,298	1,305	1,084	1,540	1,622	1,361
Buchanan.....	264	630	1,282	1,728	2,973	2,880
Chicago.....				430	993	947
Gallen.....	141	404	528	856	1,231	
Hagar.....			209	148	834	823
Lake.....			227	557	1,006	1,083
Lansing.....					1,181	1,122
New Berlin.....	124	416	873	834	1,389	1,444
Niles.....	1,420	1,935	3,174	2,722	1,910	1,795
Niles City.....		1,050		2,788	4,648	4,592
Oscoda.....	393	664	874	1,252	1,617	1,625
Piquette.....		277	875	1,652	1,370	1,405
Royalton.....	246	284	452	964	2,190	959
Sodus.....				673	906	841
St. Joseph.....	489	628	794	1,558	2,994	3,388
Three Oaks.....			369	1,328	1,316	
Waterford.....				545	1,228	1,718
Weesaw.....	142	155	304	753	1,243	1,276
Total pop. of county....	5,111	8,881	12,835	21,801	36,155	35,029

## CHAPTER XXI.

### ERECTION AND ORGANIZATION OF BERRIEN COUNTY—COURTS AND COUNTY BUILDINGS.

The County set off from Lenawee—Election of County Officers—Subdivision of the County into Townships—Establishment of Courts in Berrien County—The County Courts—The Circuit Court and its Judges—Organization and Early Proceedings of the Board of Supervisors—County Commissioners—County Sites and County Buildings—First Location of County Site—The Log Jail at St. Joseph—Removal of County Site to Berrien—The Old Jail at Berrien Springs—Erection of the Court-House—The Present Jail—County Office Buildings—County Poor-House and Farm.

It has been mentioned in preceding pages that the part of Berrien County which was included in the cession made by the Indians at the Chicago treaty of 1821 (being the part lying east and north of the St. Joseph River) was attached to Lenawee County by act taking effect Dec. 31, 1826, and that the part lying south and west of the river (ceded by the Carey Mission Treaty of 1828) was also attached to Lenawee by an amendatory act, approved Sept. 22, 1829. Thus, from the date last named, the county of Lenawee included all the territory of the present county of Berrien, except the tribal reservation, embracing an area of nearly fifty square miles lying on the west side of the St. Joseph, and extending from a point on the river below Niles, southward to the Indiana line.

The county of Berrien was erected by Legislative act,\* approved Oct. 29, 1829, which provided "That so much of the county as lies within the following boundaries, viz.:

beginning on the boundary line between this Territory and the State of Indiana, where the line between ranges sixteen and seventeen west of the meridian intersects the said boundary line; thence west along the said boundary line to Lake Michigan; thence along the shore of said lake to the intersection of the line between townships two and three south of the base line; thence east on a line between said townships to the intersection of the line between ranges sixteen and seventeen west of the meridian; thence south on the line between said ranges to the boundary line between this Territory and the State of Indiana, be and the same is hereby set off into a separate county, and the name thereof shall be Berrien."† The boundaries thus described are identical with the present limits of the county. The same act which erected Berrien also established the counties of Washtenaw, Ingham, Eaton, Barry, Jackson, Calhoun, Kalamazoo, Van Buren, Hillsdale, Branch, St. Joseph, and Cass. Six days after the erection of these counties the territory included in Berrien was, by legislative act, attached to the county of Cass, and on the 5th of November, 1829, the same territory was erected into the township of Niles.

#### ORGANIZATION AND SUBDIVISION OF THE COUNTY.

By an act of the Legislative Council of Michigan Territory, approved March 4, 1831, to take effect Sept. 1, 1831, it was provided "That the county of Berrien shall be organized from and after the taking effect of this act, and the inhabitants thereof shall be entitled to all the rights and privileges to which, by law, the other organized counties of this Territory are entitled." Under this act a special election was held in September, 1832, resulting in the election of Augustus B. Newell as sheriff, Titus B. Willard as county clerk, Obed P. Lacey as register of deeds, and Jacob Beeson as county treasurer. Cogswell K. Green was made judge of probate by appointment. The second election for the choosing of county officers was held at Niles, on the 2d of April, 1832. The only existing record of this meeting is a certificate, of which the following is a copy:

#### "CERTIFICATE TO COUNTY CLERK.

"Thomas K. Green, Alamanson Huston, and Eber Griswold, Inspectors of Election for Coroner and County Treasurer of the County of Berrien held at the 'Council House,' in Niles, April 2, 1832; do hereby certify that Solomon E. Mason was elected coroner and Jacob Beeson treasurer for said county without one disputing vote. B. E. Mason had for coroner 12 votes, and Jacob Beeson 14 votes.

"THOMAS K. GREEN.

"EBER GRISWOLD.

"A. HUSTON."

At that time Berrien County was all included in the township of Niles, the erection of which, in November, 1829, has already been mentioned, as also the previous erection of the (old) township of St. Joseph, covering all of this county except the lands reserved for the use of the Indians.

On the 9th of June, 1832, parts of the territory of Niles were taken from it, and erected into the townships of Berrien and St. Joseph. The latter comprised survey town-

† So named in honor of John McPherson Berrien, LL.D., a native of New Jersey, who removed thence to Georgia, and held the office of Attorney-General under President Jackson, 1829-31.

\* Territorial Laws, vol. ii. p. 737.

ships 3 south, in ranges 17 and 18 west, and township 4 south, in ranges 17, 18, and 19 west, and four tiers of sections in township 5, of ranges 17, 18, and 19 west. This was the second township erected under the name of St. Joseph, and the same which—though now greatly reduced in dimensions—still bears the name. Berrien township, when erected, comprised survey township 6 south, in ranges 17, 18, 19, and 20 west, and two tiers of sections in township 5 south, in ranges 17, 18, and 19 west.

The township of Paw Paw was erected March 7, 1834, and comprised township 3 south, in ranges 17 and 18 west,—the same territory which is now embraced in the townships of Watervliet and Hagar.

Royalton, erected March 17, 1835, embraced all of survey township 5 south, in ranges 17, 18, and 19 west.

Bertrand, taken from Niles March 23, 1836, comprised township 8 south, in ranges 17, 18, and 19 west.

New Buffalo, erected March 23, 1836, comprised townships 7 and 8 south, in ranges 20 and 21 west. It was taken from Niles, and on March 9, 1843, fractional township 8 south, in range 22 west, which had inadvertently been left out in the erection of the township, was attached to New Buffalo.

On the 23d day of March, 1837, the townships of Buchanan, Benton, Bainbridge, and Oronoko, were erected.

Buchanan comprised township 7 south, of range 18 west, except that portion lying east of the river St. Joseph. Benton comprised township 4 south, in range 18 west. Bainbridge, taken from Berrien, embraced township 4 south, in range 17 west, and on the 2d of April, 1838, it was enlarged to embrace townships 3 and 5 south, in range 17 west, the former being that part of Paw Paw township that is now Watervliet. Oronoko comprised township 6 south, in ranges 18 and 19 west.

March 20, 1837, Weesaw was erected, comprising townships 7 and 8, in range 19 west.

Pipestone was erected, Feb. 16, 1842, from Bainbridge and Royalton, and comprised township 5 south, in range 17, and all of township 5 south, in range 18 west, that is east of the river.

March 9, 1843, the land east of the river in township 6 south, in range 18 west, was attached to Oronoko, and the territory west of the river in township 6 south, in range 17 west, was attached to Berrien township.

Galen was erected Feb. 29, 1844, and comprised township 8 south, in range 19 west.

Watervliet and Hagar were erected March 25, 1846. They composed the original township of Paw Paw, which ceased to exist at their erection. Watervliet was attached to Bainbridge in 1839, and comprised township 3 south, in range 17 west. Hagar comprised township 3 south, in range 18 west.

Lake township was erected March 25, 1846, and comprised township 6 south, in range 19 west, and fractional township 6 south, in range 20 west. It was taken from Oronoko.

The following-named towns have been set off by the supervisors of Berrien County, at the dates mentioned, viz.:

Three Oaks, March 10, 1856, to comprise all of township 8 south, in range 20 west (except the west range of

sections), and also sections 32, 33, 34, 35, and 36, in township 7, of the same range.

Chickaming, taken from New Buffalo, March 10, 1856, to comprise the fractional township 7 south, of range 20 west, except the south tier of sections, and also fractional section 25, in township 7 south, in range 21 west.

The township of Sodus was organized the first Monday of April, 1860, and comprised that portion of territory lying east of the river St. Joseph in township 5 south, in range 18 west. It was taken from Pipestone.

Lincoln was set off by act of Legislature, March 7, 1867, and organized the first Monday in April, 1867. It comprised fractional township 5 south, in range 19 west. Jan. 6, 1868, by order of the Board of Supervisors, the east half of sections 1, 12, 13, 24, 25, and 36, in township 5 south, in range 19 west, were taken from Lincoln and added to Royalton.

#### ESTABLISHMENT OF COURTS IN BERRIEN COUNTY.

Of the courts of Berrien County, the first one established was the Probate Court, of which the first term was held at Niles, by the Hon. Cogswell K. Green, Dec. 27, 1831, on which occasion it was "ordered by the court that the regular terms of the Probate Court for Berrien County shall be holden, for the year 1832, at the office of the judge, as follows, to wit: On the first Tuesdays of March, July, and October, and that the register give notice, according to law, of the terms of said court." There being no business before the court, it was adjourned.

At the next term, held at the residence of Judge Green, in Niles, in March, 1832, Ebenezer Reed was appointed administrator on the estate of Abraham Burnett, and was ordered to give the requisite bonds, and to publish notice of his appointment in the *Free Press*, of Detroit, and in the *Northwestern Pioneer*, at South Bend, Ind. This was the only business done at that term, and the first transacted by the Probate Court of Berrien County.

The first will was admitted to probate at a special session held Sept. 24, 1832. This was the will of Ephraim Lacey, of which Elijah Lacey and Obed P. Lacey were appointed executors. At a term held in October of the same year, Pitt Brown and H. B. Hoffman were appointed administrators on the estate of Daniel Dingley, deceased. After October, 1832, all proceedings of the Probate Court are dated at Newburyport (St. Joseph) until 1837. The name of T. B. Murdock as judge of probate first appears on the record under date of March 20, 1833. The names of his successors in the office will be found in the civil list of the county.

By the act organizing the county it was provided: "SECTION 2. That there shall be a county court established in the said county, which court shall be held on the first Tuesday of July and the third Tuesday in December, in the year one thousand eight hundred and thirty-two, and every year thereafter.

"SEC. 3. That a Circuit Court shall also be held in said county, and that the several acts concerning the Supreme, Circuit, and County Courts of the Territory of Michigan, defining their jurisdiction and powers, and directing the

pleadings and practice therein, in certain cases, be and the same are hereby made applicable to the Circuit and County Courts in the aforesaid county of Berrien.

"SEC. 4. That the county of Berrien shall be one circuit, and the court of the same shall be held on the first Thursday in August, in the year one thousand eight hundred and thirty-two, and on the same day in each year thereafter.

"SEC. 5. That all suits and prosecutions, and other matters now pending before the Circuit or County Courts for the county of Cass, or before any justice of the peace for said county, shall be prosecuted to final judgment and execution, and all taxes heretofore levied, or which may be hereafter levied for the year one thousand eight hundred and thirty-one, in said county of Cass, shall be collected in the same manner as though the said county of Berrien had not been organized."

#### THE COUNTY COURT.

The first term of the County Court for Berrien County was held at Niles,\* in July, 1832, by the Hon. Daniel Olds. The following transcript from the court record has reference to the proceedings had at that term, viz.:

"Pleas before the Honorable the Justices of the County Court of the County of Berrien, and Territory of Michigan, on the third day of July, 1832. Present, the Honorable Daniel Olds, Chief Justice.

"Notice was given that on the 21st of April, 1832, Daniel Wilson, Jr., by his Attorneys, filed in the County Clerk's Office the following Precipe, with words and figures following, to wit:

"Daniel Wilson, Jr.,

vs.

Garret Shuert  
and

Elizabeth Shuert.

Trespass on the case of words  
spoken of Plaintiff. Dam-  
ages, \$800."

The case was continued at court till 1834, and then discontinued, at plaintiff's cost.

After October, 1832, all proceedings of the court are dated at Newburyport (St. Joseph) until 1837. The list of grand jurors for December term, 1832, was as follows:

A. S. Amsden, N. B. Starkweather, John Wittenmyer, William Huff, Theodore C. Abbe, Barzillai Webb, Calvin Bartlett, Jehial Eaos, Timothy S. Smith, Benjamin C. Hoyt, Amos Farly, O. P. Lacey, S. Ford, L. Cavanagh, Henry Lemon, Garrett Shuert, Pitt Brown, Martin Hoffman.

The County Court was abolished in April, 1833, the Circuit Courts of the Territory of Michigan taking its business and jurisdiction. The County Court was re-estab-

It has been doubted by many whether the courts were ever held at Niles, but it is proved that such was the case by a bill found among the records of the Board of Supervisors, which was presented to, and allowed by, the board at its annual meeting in October, 1832. It is as follows:

#### "COUNTY OF BERRIEN

To T. B. WILLARD

Dr.

"To issuing venire for jurors to attend the County Court which sat at Niles in the month of July, 1832.....

\$0.25

"Do, for Circuit Court which should have sat in August, 1832.....

.25

\$0.50"

lished in 1847, with one county judge and a second judge, who officiated in the absence of the first judge. The first term of the re-established court was held by Judge Charles Jewett, at the court-house at Berrien Springs, March 1, 1847. The County Court was again, and finally, abolished in 1853.

#### THE CIRCUIT COURT AND ITS JUDGES.

The first term of the Circuit Court for the county of Berrien was held in October, 1833. Present: the Hon. William A. Fletcher, President Judge; Talman Wheeler and Amos S. Amsden, Esqs., Associate Judges. The first case before the court was that of Calvin Bartlett vs. Benjamin Chandler. This was continued to the next term of court. The first bill in chancery was filed March 27, 1833, the case being that of Job Brookfield vs. Bacon Wheeler. The suit was discontinued at the October term next following.

Judge Fletcher, who presided at the first term of the Circuit Court in Berrien, was a native of Massachusetts, and settled in Michigan about the year 1820. He studied law in Detroit, and commenced the practice of his profession in that city. He was at one time attorney-general of the Territory, and was appointed chief justice of the Supreme Court of Michigan after the admission of the State into the Union. He continued to preside over the Circuit Court in Berrien County until the October term of 1836, when he was succeeded by the Hon. Epaphroditus Ransom, who held his first term in this county in April, 1837, and continued on this circuit for eleven years, holding his last term here in October, 1847. Judge Ransom was a native of Hampshire Co., Mass. He graduated at the Northampton Law School in 1825, removed to Michigan about 1833, and was admitted to the bar at Kalamazoo in 1834. In 1836 he was appointed to the bench of the Supreme Court, and became chief justice in 1843. In 1848 he resigned to accept the office of Governor of the State.

The next circuit judge was the Hon. Charles W. Whipple. He presided for the first time in this county at the May term in 1848, and his last term here was held in July, 1855. He died in October of that year. The Hon. Warner Wing presided at the March and June terms of 1856.

The Hon. Nathaniel Bacon was elected to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Judge Whipple, and was also elected for the full term next succeeding. At the close of his full term, the Hon. Perrin M. Smith became his successor on the bench, but served only about two years, when Judge Bacon was elected to fill the unexpired term, and upon its expiration was again elected for a full term, and held the office until his death, July 2, 1869.

The Hon. Worthy Putnam became the successor of Judge Bacon, upon the death of the latter. Judge Putnam presided at the summer and fall terms of 1869.

Judge Daniel Blackman succeeded Judge Putnam, in December, 1869, and he was, in 1871, succeeded by the Hon. Henry H. Coolidge, of Niles, who filled the office during the remainder of the term, and was elected to a full term in 1876. He, however, resigned in 1878, and was succeeded by the Hon. Charles W. Clisby, who was in turn succeeded by the Hon. Andrew J. Smith, the present circuit judge.



ORGANIZATION AND EARLY PROCEEDINGS OF THE  
BOARD OF SUPERVISORS.

The earliest record of proceedings of the supervisors of Berrien County has reference to the annual meeting of the board, held at the "Council House," in Niles, on Oct. 2, 1832; the supervisors there present being Jacob Beeson, for Niles township, Pitt Brown, for Berrien, and Amos S. Amsden, for St. Joseph. "There being a full board for doing county business, the said board appointed C. K. Green clerk, and adjourned till to-morrow at ten o'clock A.M." At the meeting held pursuant to this adjournment, the board allowed the following accounts, viz.:

Of John Pike and Julius Brown, commissioners of highways.....	\$6.75
" A. B. Newell, for services as sheriff of Berrien County.....	26.00
" T. B. Willard, clerk of court.....	.50
" A. Huston, for ballot-box.....	1.50
Total.....	\$34.75

It was by the board "ordered that a tax of three and one-third mills on the dollar be laid for the purpose of defraying the county and township charges for 1832; one mill to be paid into the county treasury, and the balance to the several supervisors of townships." A small amount of business was done at succeeding daily sessions until Oct. 6, 1832, when the board adjourned *sine die*.

A special meeting of the board was held, Dec. 19, 1832, "at the county-seat, recently located at St. Joseph." Present, Pitt Brown and A. S. Amsden, representing the townships of Berrien and St. Joseph. At this meeting bills were audited to the amount of seventy-three dollars and eighty-seven cents, including the bill of S. E. Mason, Coroner, for "view of the body of Nicholas Gordon,\* and taking and returning inquisition, three dollars."

The township of Royalton was first represented in the board, Oct. 6, 1835, by David M. Drum; Bertrand was first represented, Oct. 24, 1836, by John Gilsbee; and New Buffalo, by Alonzo Bennett.

Oct. 29, 1836, the board allowed: "To Wm. Huff, for court room, twelve dollars (this room was in the 'Perkins House');" "to Thomas Conger, salary as district attorney, one hundred and twenty-five dollars."

The valuation from the assessment rolls for 1837 was as follows:

Bertrand.....	\$119,819
Niles.....	319,112
Berrien.....	204,138
Royalton.....	188,458
St. Joseph.....	560,807
New Buffalo.....	148,470
Total.....	\$1571,104

By the provisions of a law passed by the Legislature in 1838 the powers and duties of the Board of Supervisors were transferred to and vested in a Board of County Commissioners. The first commissioners of Berrien County were Erasmus Winslow, of Niles, John F. Porter, St. Joseph, and Joseph G. Ames, of Bertrand, who were elected in November, 1838, and commenced their official terms of service Jan. 7, 1839.

The office of county commissioner was abolished by act of Legislature, approved Feb. 10, 1842. The powers

\* Mr. Gordon was drowned while bathing in the St. Joseph River off Distillery Island, about Nov. 14, 1832.

which had been exercised by that board were then resumed by the supervisors, whose first meeting as a board, under the new law, was held on the 4th of July, 1842. From that time until the present the board has continued to exercise its legitimate powers and functions.

## COUNTY-SITE AND COUNTY BUILDINGS.

By the "Act to organize the County of Berrien," approved March 4, 1831, it was provided: "SECTION 6. That the circuit and county courts shall be holden at the house of Alamanson Huston, in the village of Niles, as the said courts shall deem expedient." And "SECTION 7. That whenever the county-seat is permanently established in the county of Berrien, and accommodations are provided at such place for holding courts, they shall be held at the county-seat at such place as shall be provided for that purpose."

In accordance with these provisions the first term of the Berrien County court was held at the "Council House," in the village of Niles, as has already been mentioned.

During the year 1832 the Governor appointed three commissioners, viz., Talman Wheeler, Enoch Jones, and Calvin Britain, in accordance with the provisions of an act passed by the Legislative Council, and approved July 31, 1830, to establish county-sites. The commissioners located the county-site of Berrien at the village of St. Joseph in the fall of 1832, and the first county business done at that place was on the 18th of December, in the same year, when the courts were held in the log school-house located in the southeast part of the village. Courts were held there until 1835, when the spring term of that year was held in the store owned by William Huff. From that time till the removal of the county-site from St. Joseph the courts were held in what is now known as the "Old White School-House."

The erection of a county jail soon became necessary, and the subject was brought before the Board of Supervisors at a meeting held Nov. 2, 1833. The following is the record of the opinion of the board as to the necessity of erecting a jail, and of the action then and there taken to that end, viz.:

"Through the solicitations of the sheriff and acting clerk and numerous other citizens of Berrien County, the Board of Supervisors have at their term taken into consideration the propriety and expediency of building a county jail, and, after viewing the subject with care and due reflection, they have come to the conclusion that the peace and safety of the county renders it highly necessary that a jail should be built, and having full confidence in the integrity, ability, and sound discretion of Fowler Preston, they have concluded to appoint him agent for that purpose. Therefore, ordered by the Board of Supervisors that the said Fowler Preston be and he is hereby appointed county agent for said county, with all the power necessary to build or contract in behalf of said county for the building of a jail as aforesaid, which shall cost not to exceed two hundred and fifty dollars, to be of such form and dimensions, and be erected on such lot in this village, as he may deem most expedient and best calculated for the promotion of the public interest.

"And it is further ordered that the expenses of said jail shall be paid out of the money and labor subscribed for the erection of public buildings, to be collected by said Preston from said subscribers in such manner that each shall pay a proportionary part of said sum and property such subscribed, or otherwise if he should receive it as voluntary paid."

In accordance with this action, a contract was concluded with Mr. Preston on the 5th day of March, 1834, for the erection of the jail, by Pitt Brown and Amos S. Amsden. The ground on which the jail was erected was a lot belonging to Mr. Preston, which was leased for one dollar for three years from the 1st day of January, 1834, with the privilege of extending the time if it became necessary. The jail was built of hewed logs, about eighteen by twenty feet in size, and one story high. Its location was on the corner of Main and Pleasant Streets. The building was commenced Nov. 9, 1833, and completed Feb. 13, 1834, at a cost of one hundred and ninety-one dollars and fifty-six cents, "which amount was received by Fowler Preston from the public subscription donation for the purpose of building public buildings, which account was approved by the supervisors, and the account entered on file in the office."

On the 25th of February, 1837, the Governor of Michigan approved an act containing the following provisions, directing the removal of the county-site from St. Joseph to the village of Berrien Springs, viz.:

"That the present seat of justice be and the same is hereby vacated from and after the first day of May, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty-seven.

"That from and after the said first day of May, in the year aforesaid, the seat of justice of said county shall be and the same is hereby established at the village of Berrien, in said county, as recorded in the register's office of Cass County; and the Board of Supervisors of said county are hereby authorized and empowered, from and after the said first day of May, to designate and fix the site for the erection of county buildings for said county, in the village of Berrien aforesaid, upon such lots in the said village of Berrien as may be conveyed by the proprietors of said village for that purpose to the supervisors of said county and their successors in office: Provided, always, That this act shall not take effect until after the proprietors of said village of Berrien shall have reimbursed to the former and present proprietors and inhabitants of the village of St. Joseph such sums as they may have expended in the erection of public buildings in said village, and all moneys paid to the commissioners for locating the county-seat at St. Joseph, to be ascertained by the said board of supervisors, at a meeting of said board to be holden on the third Tuesday of April next: And provided further, That the title to said lots, or such other lots as a majority of said supervisors shall elect for public purposes, shall have been previously vested in said county by proper deeds of conveyance.

"All lots in the village of St. Joseph which, agreeably to the original plat of said village, as recorded in the register's office in Cass County, were donated to the county, to enable the county to erect county buildings thereon, shall revert and vest in the persons donating the same and their representation, whenever and as soon as the county-seat shall be removed from St. Joseph; and all title and claim to said lots, either in law or in equity, shall be deemed to be cancelled and extinguished, any deed which may have been made to the county to the contrary notwithstanding."

Acting under the provisions of this act, the Board of Supervisors, at a session held at the county-seat, April 18, 1837, "ordered that lots numbered 255, 256, 301, and 302, in the village of Berrien, be and the same are hereby accepted by this board from the proprietors of the village of Berrien, and that they are declared to be and designated

as the site for the erection of county buildings for the county of Berrien, agreeably to the provisions of the second section of an 'act to vacate the present seat of justice of the county of Berrien, and to establish the same at the village of Berrien in said county.'"

It was also by the board "ordered that the present jail for the county of Berrien, in the village of St. Joseph, shall be carried on and used as the common jail for said county until otherwise directed by the Board of Supervisors." Thomas Fitzgerald, Esq., was appointed agent of the board to receive the deed of the designated lots from the proprietors of the village of Berrien. At the session of the board held on the next day the following claims, presented by the proprietors of the village of St. Joseph for the erection of a jail in said village for the use of the county, were allowed by the board, upon the certificate of Fowler Preston that the same had actually been paid and expended for that purpose, viz.:

Talman Wheeler.....	\$37.50	A. S. Preston.....	\$2.50
Calvin Britain.....	15.00	D. M. Drum.....	.50
Warner Wing.....	15.00	Preston & Lord.....	10.00
Charles Noble.....	15.00	Thomas Fitzgerald.....	2.50
Wm. McKaleb.....	15.00	Jasper Mason.....	2.50
Morain Marsh.....	15.00	L. L. Johnson.....	10.00
William Huff.....	10.00	Enoch Jones.....	20.00
John Wittenmyer.....	5.00	E. C. Hoyt.....	7.50
A. S. Amsden.....	4.00	Shadrach Ford.....	4.00
S. E. Mason.....	7.50		
James Burnett.....	10.00	Total.....	\$211.50
Jeremiah Wilson.....	3.00		

The following claims for moneys paid the commissioners for locating the seat of justice of the county of Berrien at St. Joseph were also allowed, upon the statement of B. C. Hoyt, Esq., that they were just and correct, viz.:

Talman Wheeler.....	\$62.66
Enoch Jones.....	62.66
Calvin Britain.....	62.66
	\$187.98

At the same time the board resolved "that the convenience and welfare of this county require that a jail should be erected as soon as practicable;" and Mr. E. Ballengee was appointed agent "to ascertain on what terms a loan of a sum of money not exceeding three thousand dollars can be effected for this county;" and E. Ballengee, William F. Noel, and Alonzo Bennett were appointed a committee "for the purpose of drafting a plan or plans for a jail, to be submitted to the Board of Supervisors at their next meeting." On the 10th of May, in the same year, the board appointed Edward Ballengee and Robert E. Ward agents "for the purpose of loaning money on the faith of the county and erecting a jail."

The jail was completed and made ready for use June 19, 1838. Its location was a spot in the rear of the present court-house at Berrien Springs. It was a wooden structure, twenty-four by thirty-two feet in dimensions, and two stories in height, containing the jailor's dwelling and two cells on the lower floor, with a number of other cells on the second floor.

"The expediency of building a court-house at Berrien" was taken into consideration by the supervisors at a meeting of the board held June 19, 1838, and it was resolved by that body "that Pitt Brown and Robert E. Ward be authorized to raise seven thousand dollars, on a term of not less than ten years, for the purpose of building a court-

house, and also to superintend the erection of said court-house."

The board examined and adopted the plans offered by M. Avery, for a building sixty feet in length by forty feet in width, and twenty-four feet in height, "with a belfry sixteen feet in height above the edge of the roof." Contracts for furnishing lumber were awarded to Peter Ruggles, J. E. Munger, and Hiram Gould. A contract (dated Aug. 10, 1838) was made with James Lewis to "frame, raise, inclose, and in all respects to finish the carpenter and joiner work, in accordance with the plans and specifications, ready for plastering, on or before the 10th of November, and the whole building to be completed on or before the first of April, 1839;" the amount of this contract being two thousand five hundred dollars. The building was completed and occupied in 1839, and has remained in use until the present time as the court-house of Berrien County.

#### THE PRESENT JAIL.

The jail, which was completed in 1838, proved inadequate to the requirements of the court. Reports were made from time to time by the county buildings committee of the Board of Supervisors, representing that the jail was insufficient, unsafe, and constantly out of repair, and urging the necessity of erecting a new one; but no definite action was taken in reference to building a new county prison until 1868, when it was resolved, at a meeting of the Board of Supervisors, that the sum of thirty thousand dollars was necessary for the purpose of building a jail and county poor-house, and that this sum should be raised upon the taxable property of the county. On the 3d of February, 1869, the board resolved to submit the question of raising money by tax for the erection of county buildings to the people. The question was so submitted, and the result was three thousand and twenty-six votes for and thirteen hundred and ninety-seven against the tax. In April, 1869, the committee on county buildings were empowered to purchase part of a lot opposite the court-house for a sum not exceeding three hundred dollars, and to erect a jail upon it. This vote was, however, reconsidered by the board, and it was then voted to build on land owned by the county. This was carried into effect, and the brick building—the present jail and sheriff's residence—was erected during the summer and autumn of 1869. On the 6th of January, 1870, the committee reported a total expenditure of twenty-six thousand seven hundred and twenty dollars and thirty-four cents, of which eight hundred and fifty dollars and fifty-one cents was for labor and material not embraced in the original estimate. The report was accepted, and the committee was charged with the duty of selling the old jail building.

#### COUNTY OFFICE BUILDINGS.

The offices of the county were first kept at Niles, afterwards at St. Joseph, and in 1838 they were located at Berrien Springs, where office rooms for the county clerk, register of deeds, treasurer, and supervisors were fitted up in the basement of the court-house, and were kept there until 1861.

The first step towards the erection of safe offices for the

keeping of the public records of the county, was taken in January, 1859, when the Board of Supervisors "resolved that we deem it expedient that prompt measures be taken by this board to erect a place of safe-keeping for the records of this county, and for the necessary repairs of the court-house and jail." N. W. Thompson, Thomas Love, Jehial Enos, William S. Maynard, and R. L. Dudley were appointed a committee to ascertain the probable expense of fire-proof offices for the use of the county.

The committee reported Jan. 5, 1859, and recommended repairs on court-house, and asked for time to perfect specifications of office buildings. A committee of three was then appointed, with authority to advertise for proposals and plans in the papers of the county. Thomas Love, Jehial Enos, and William S. Maynard were made such committee. They reported on March 15th of the same year, and on that date the contract for the office building was let to George H. Murdock for three thousand dollars. The building (which is the brick building now occupied by the abstract and treasurer's offices) was erected on lots Nos. 299 and 300, at the corner of Kimmel and Madison Streets, Berrien Springs village. The offices of the county clerk, register of deeds, and treasurer were removed to this building in 1861, as before mentioned.

The fire-proof brick building standing on the east side of, and attached to, the brick office-building erected in 1860, was built in 1873, at a cost (as reported by the building committee) of five thousand six hundred and nine dollars and fifty-two cents, and has since that time been occupied by the county clerk, register of deeds, judge of probate, and Board of Supervisors.

#### COUNTY POOR-HOUSE AND FARM.

The first official action of the supervisors of Berrien County in reference to the support of paupers is recorded under date of Oct. 27, 1837, at which time it was by the board "resolved that no accounts presented to the board for the support of paupers should be allowed, unless their form of presentment is such as is prescribed by law." At the same time Mr. Josiah Pidge's bill for support of a pauper was presented, and after some discussion disallowed, by a vote of seven to two.

The first step towards providing a farm for the county poor was taken at a meeting of the supervisors, Oct. 4, 1838, when Pitt Brown and Darius Jennings were chosen a committee to examine a farm belonging to A. Chapman, with a view to its purchase for poor-house purposes. They reported the title insecure, and advised against purchase.

At a later meeting of the board, in the same month, it was "resolved that in future town paupers should be county paupers, and recommended that the proper authorities take legal steps to cause such change." John F. Porter, of St. Joseph, Frederick Howe, of Bertrand, and Pitt Brown, of Berrien, were appointed superintendents of the poor of the county, according to the revised laws of the State, and directed to report to the county commissioners at their meeting the best mode of taking care of the county paupers.

On the 19th of November, 1838, the question of the purchase of a poor-house farm was again brought up before the Board of Supervisors, who then took this action:



"Whereas the opinion of the county commissioners, as by them expressed, is unfavorable to the purchase of a farm, and a large share of the business attending the purchase of said farm would devolve upon said commissioners, as successors to this board, it is resolved that the said question be indefinitely postponed."

While the county commissioners were in power no steps were taken towards the purchase of a farm or erection of buildings. Later, in 1847, the supervisors passed a resolution instructing the superintendents of the poor to purchase the east half of the northeast quarter of section 17, township 6 south, in range 17 west, of Richard McOmber, on the terms offered by him, viz., nine hundred dollars; also the west half of the northwest quarter of section 16, township 6 south, in range 17 west, eighty acres, provided it could be purchased for four dollars per acre; to make such repairs on the buildings as were necessary for immediate occupancy and use, and to draft plans and prepare an estimate for a suitable building for the use of the county poor. Proposals were received for the erection of a house on the poor-farm, 18 by 26 feet in dimensions, and a contract was made with George R. L. Baker to build it for one hundred and thirty dollars. On July 11, 1847, W. F. St. John and James F. Lord, of the superintendents of the poor, examined and accepted the house then just finished.

It had been the custom prior to 1851 to contract the keeping of the poor to some person giving good security for its faithful performance. John Tate had this contract from May 26, 1847, to April 1, 1848, for the sum of two hundred and ninety-five dollars.

On the first day of February, 1851, the superintendents of the poor resolved to change the system of keeping the county paupers, and to hire a man and family to take charge of the farm and all paupers for whose support the county was liable.

The new system went into effect on the first day of April, 1851, at which time Mr. H. W. Hawley took charge of the farm, under supervision of the superintendents of the poor.

The county poor-house was destroyed by fire in 1867. At a meeting of the supervisors held Dec. 31, 1868, it was "resolved that the requirements of the poor are so urgent that immediate action is demanded;" and "resolved, further, that the sum of two thousand dollars of the general fund and three thousand dollars of the poor-fund be set apart and placed at the disposal of the building committee for the object above specified." At a meeting held on the following day, a committee was appointed "to obtain a plan for a poor-house combining the qualities of economy, durability, convenience, and future necessity, together with the estimated cost of building the same." A plan was reported and adopted Feb. 4, 1869, and it was resolved by the board "that the sum of three thousand dollars, taken from the county poor-house fund, and two thousand from the general fund, be replaced from the building-fund raised from tax." The superintendents of the poor were constituted the building committee for building the poor-house by contract, at a cost not to exceed ten thousand dollars. The building erected was a fine brick structure, two stories in height, and is still in use. It occupies a commanding eminence on the poor-house

farm, which consists of one hundred and sixty acres, located on the northeast quarter of section 17, in Berrien township. The estimated value of the farm, with buildings, furniture, stock, and farm implements, is eighteen thousand dollars. The farm is in charge of Capt. T. Bradley as superintendent.

The amount expended in maintaining the poor-house and farm for the year ending Sept. 30, 1879, is three thousand three hundred and fifty-eight dollars and twelve cents. The number of male persons maintained within the poor-house within the year is fifty-nine, and females thirty-eight, a total of ninety-seven, and an average for the year of fifty-six. Of this number twenty-three were under sixteen years of age; eight insane, six idiotic, two blind, two deaf and dumb. Temporary relief has been furnished by the county to seven hundred and thirty-one persons during the year.

## CHAPTER XXII.

### THE PRESS OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

The Earliest Journals of the County—The *Niles "Gazette and Advertiser"*—The *St. Joseph "Herald"*—Other Early Newspapers at Niles and St. Joseph—Journalism at Buchanan, Berrien Springs, Benton Harbor, New Buffalo, and Watervliet—Newspaper Enterprises in the County during the past Forty-five Years.

#### NILES GAZETTE AND ADVERTISER.

The first newspaper published in Berrien County was the *Niles Gazette and Advertiser*, the first number of which was issued on the 5th of September, 1835. The proprietor was Henry Barns; the price was two dollars per annum; and the motto was "For the Public Good." The office was at the corner of Second and Main Streets, Niles. An almost complete file of the *Gazette and Advertiser* is to be found in the office of the recorder of that city.

The first number is absent, but the second one, dated Sept. 12, 1835, shows the character of the paper. It was a four-page, six-column sheet, each page being 18 inches by 24. The salutatory, which was reprinted from the first number, commented on the remarkable prosperity and rapid increase of Michigan, and declared that it would sustain the principles of Thomas Jefferson, the administration of Andrew Jackson, and the nomination of Martin Van Buren. We infer that the *Gazette and Advertiser* was decidedly Democratic. The publisher also mentioned that he had begun with three hundred subscribers, but that he had sold all of the six hundred copies which he had printed.

Even at this early period in Berrien County journalism the proverbial hot water of controversy had begun to rise around the editorial chair. The second number of the *Gazette and Advertiser* strenuously denied a report, started since the appearance of the first one, that "we" had been bought up and were under the control of certain young "aristocrats" of the village. Who would have thought there were aristocrats in Berrien County in the good old days of 1835?

Besides the salutatory, this number of the *Gazette and Advertiser* contained the message of Acting Governor Stevens T. Mason to the Territorial Legislature, mostly

relating to the far-famed controversy with Ohio, commonly known as the "Toledo war;" also the letter of the Democratic Committee informing Mr. Van Buren of his nomination for the Presidency, and his reply, accepting the nomination. This, it will be observed, was over a year before the election, which occurred in the fall of 1836.

There were also a few items of *distant* news, and a goodly array of advertisements. Of that which constitutes so prominent a feature of the newspapers of the present days—local news—there was not a vestige. The local itemizer was developed some twenty years later.

On the 6th of July, 1836, William Singer and Chauncey C. Britt purchased the office from Mr. Barns, but undertook to publish the paper for him until the end of that volume. On the 7th of September, Mr. Singer withdrew from the firm for causes, as he stated in his valedictory, "not precogitated by me" at the time of purchase. J. N. Chipman took his place, and on the 28th of September, Britt and Chipman began publishing the paper for themselves. They dropped the second name, calling the paper the *Niles Gazette*.

On the 27th of December, 1836, it was again purchased by Mr. Barns, who sold it to Orris Curtis, in February, 1837. Mr. Curtis conducted the *Gazette* until the winter of 1837-38, when the publication ceased, the accounts being transferred to Britt & Brown, the proprietors of the paper next named.

#### NILES INTELLIGENCER.

On the 21st of February, 1838, after the collapse of the *Niles Gazette*, and probably on the same press, Henry Barns, who had been the founder of that paper, issued the first number of a new journal at Niles, called the *Niles Intelligencer*. In two weeks, however, he disposed of his venture to Chauncey C. Britt and John A. Brown, and the third number, dated March 7, 1838, was published in their name. They published it jointly until the 19th of August, 1840, when John A. Brown became the sole proprietor. About 1844 the *Intelligencer* was discontinued, but it was revived in 1845 or 1846 by William P. Abeel. Mr. Abeel carried it on four or five years, but it finally ceased to exist about 1850.

#### NILES REPUBLICAN.

This paper began its career as an exponent of Whig principles, on the 18th of October, 1839, being owned and edited by Van Vliet & Miller. It soon became the property of H. B. Miller, who employed Thomas H. Bassett as editor. In 1842, D. B. Cook entered into partnership with Mr. Miller, and the politics of the paper were changed from Whig to Democratic. In 1844, Mr. Cook became the sole owner, and continued so for no less than eighteen years,—an extraordinarily long period, considering the changeable nature of early Michigan journalism. In April, 1862, Mr. Cook sold the *Republican* to A. J. Shakespeare, who continued its publication by the old name until the spring of 1868. He then changed the name to *Niles Democrat*,—a sketch of which is given below.

#### NILES DEMOCRAT.

This paper, the legitimate successor of the *Niles Republican* (established in 1839), was baptized by its new name in

the spring of 1868. A. J. Shakespeare, who had been for six years the proprietor of the *Republican*, continued the publication of the *Democrat* until the 10th of September, 1870. He then sold it to O. P. Horn. The latter gentleman enlarged the paper from seven columns per page to eight, and it still flourishes under his ownership and direction.

#### A LIBERTY PAPER.

For a short time in 1845 a paper was published which advocated the principles of the "Liberty" or "Abolition" party, but it received so little support that it expired the same year. It is remembered that the editor was Miss Jane Van Vliet, but the name of the paper itself has escaped the recollection of the surviving citizens of that period.

#### NILES COURIER.

This paper (weekly) was established by Thomas W. Freeland on the 1st of January, 1845. In 1846, Mr. Freeland sold it to Charles Jewett and E. A. Graves, and went as an officer to the Mexican war. In 1847 or 1848 the name was changed to the one given below.

#### NILES EXPRESS.

This paper, the successor of the *Courier*, was published a little over a year, when it was sold to Isaiah McCollum, who discontinued it, removing the material to Hillsdale, in this State.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY FREEMAN.

This paper was established at Niles, about the beginning of 1856, by John M. Farquhar, as an advocate of the principles of the Republican party. It warmly supported the election of Fremont and Dayton in the campaign of that year, and was subsequently continued as a Republican weekly until 1866, when it was absorbed in the *Niles Times*.

#### NILES ENQUIRER.

In 1856 or 1857, Monroe G. Carleton published the first number of a weekly paper bearing the above name. It was Republican in politics, and for ten years faithfully advocated the principles of that party. Mr. Carleton left it in 1859. In 1866 it was united with the *Berrien County Freeman* to form the *Niles Times*.

#### NILES TIMES.

The first number of the *Niles Times* was issued on the 1st of March, 1866, by Duncan & Dana. The *Times* was the result of the consolidation of the *Berrien County Freeman* with the *Niles Enquirer*. The new journal—which, like its predecessors, was decidedly Republican—was published weekly by Messrs. Duncan & Dana, until March, 1868, when Mr. Dana retired, and the name of the paper was changed to *Niles Republican*.

#### NILES REPUBLICAN (No. 2).

This continuation of the *Niles Times*, when it took its new name in March, 1868, was enlarged from seven columns per page to eight, and during the twelve succeeding years has steadfastly and successfully upheld the banner of Republicanism. In 1873 it was again enlarged from eight to nine columns per page. The *Republican* is still conducted by Maj. L. A. Duncan.

## NILES WEEKLY MIRROR.

The first number of this paper was issued on the 22d day of March, 1876, by D. B. Cook, who still publishes it. It is a Democratic eight-page sheet, and has a good circulation. Although this is the last paper started in Niles, yet Mr. Cook, its editor and proprietor, is the earliest editor there, and is said to be the oldest living member of the profession who has followed the business continuously in this State, he having begun his editorial duties in 1837, on the *Kalamazoo Gazette*, and having become connected with the *Niles Republican* in 1842.

## ST. JOSEPH HERALD.

The second paper published in the county, and the first one at St. Joseph, began its existence under the above name on the first day of August, 1836, the editor and publisher being A. E. Draper. In a few months Mr. Draper sold the *Herald* to N. W. Fuller, who published it under that name until October, 1837.

The only copy of the *Herald* which we have been able to discover is No. 36, Vol. I., dated April 22, 1837, which is now in the possession of M. D. Gragg, Esq., of Niles. It is a four-page, six-column sheet, each page being sixteen inches by twenty-two. Like the *Niles Gazette and Advertiser*, it has the broad-faced print and the numerous "black-letter" capitals common at that day, and like it is almost devoid of local news. It does mention, however, that the steamer "Matilda Barney" has been making regular trips to Niles for three or four weeks, and also notices the recent organization of Van Buren County.

In October, 1837, Mr. Fuller gave his journal a new name,—

## ST. JOSEPH DEMOCRAT.

The first number of this paper, the successor of the *Herald*, was issued on the 14th day of October, 1837, by N. W. Fuller, editor and proprietor. The fourteenth number, for an examination of which we are also indebted to Mr. Gragg, shows it to have been of the same size and general appearance as its predecessor. The depressed condition of business was clearly shown by the numerous advertisements of mortgage sales, which covered a large part of the space of the number first mentioned. It contained also an essay on slander and a speech delivered by Hon. Vincent L. Bradford, of Niles, then State senator from this district, which was pronounced by the *Detroit Post* to be "unanswerable." The only paragraph with even the semblance of a local item about it, was one which gave notice of the meeting of the St. Joseph Lyceum. The question for discussion was one which had aroused the feelings of Americans on the northern frontier to an extraordinary degree, it being expressed in the following language:

"Are the patriots of the Canadas entitled to the sympathies of the people of the United States in their present struggle for constitutional liberty?"

It is not known what the decision was, but it is safe to presume that the Canadian patriots were awarded a victory on the field of debate, if on no other.

A *Democrat* of a few weeks' later date contains a report of a public meeting of the citizens of Cass County in opposition to the location of the Michigan Southern Railroad;

also a letter from Senator Bradford to the electors of St. Joseph County, vindicating himself from the charge of being unfriendly to the internal improvements of the State. The *Democrat* continued in existence but a little over six months.

## THE WESTERN POST.

At the time of the suspension of the *Democrat*, the press and type with which it was printed were purchased by A. Peabody, and a new paper was issued at St. Joseph called the *Western Post*. The first number was published on the 28th day of April, 1838. It was of the same size as the *Herald* and the *Democrat*, and, like all the other papers of that day, had a fine motto at the top of its columns, viz., "The Rights of the People."

We have examined the fourth number of the first volume of the *Post*, and there appears to have been no change in the character of the journal on account of the change of name. Its principal editorial in that number was entitled "A Protest against Panic,"—a pretty sure indication that those were panicky times. There were also several puffs of the "corporation scrip" of St. Joseph, issued to pay for public improvements, which the *Post* declared to be "better than wild-cat money," a very doubtful compliment.

The *Post* struggled with the "hard times" for a short period and then collapsed.

## ST. JOSEPH COMMERCIAL BULLETIN.

In the latter part of April, 1844, Chauncey C. Britt established a newspaper at St. Joseph, entitled the *St. Joseph Commercial Bulletin*. It was a staunch Democratic sheet, and during the political campaign of that year warmly advocated the election of James K. Polk and George M. Dallas as President and Vice-President of the United States. It was a four-page sheet, of the same size as its predecessors at St. Joseph, and probably printed on the same press. Its motto was "Principles, not Men." There being then no paper published in Van Buren County, the *Bulletin* was selected to publish the tax sales of that county. Mr. Britt continued the publication of the *Bulletin* until the spring of 1845, when the prosperity of St. Joseph was suddenly and severely checked by the diversion of the proposed Chicago and St. Joseph Railroad to Niles and Chicago. Mr. Britt found that he would be unable to continue his paper under the changed circumstances, and he accordingly sold it to the late Judge Henry Fuller. The latter published the *Bulletin* a short time and then discontinued it, removing the press and type to Chicago.

## ST. JOSEPH TRAVELER.

St. Joseph was then without a newspaper until January, 1859, when Monroe G. Carlton established the *St. Joseph Traveler*, a weekly paper, which earnestly supported the principles of the Republican party. At the end of about three years Mr. Carlton sold the *Traveler* to Charles R. Brown, Esq., now of Port Huron, who published it about a year, and then transferred it to Almond L. Aldrich, now of Flint. Mr. Aldrich published the paper, always as an exponent of the Republican cause, until the summer of 1868, when he sold it to the late Theodore L. Reynolds.



That gentleman conducted it until 1875, when it was consolidated with the *St. Joseph Herald*.

## ST. JOSEPH HERALD (No. 2).

In May, 1866, the *St. Joseph Herald* was established by Albert H. Potter. It was a very decided Democratic paper, and for nearly two years made things as warm as it was able for its political opponents. In February, 1868, it was purchased by Horace W. Guernsey, who conducted it in a somewhat more conservative manner, though still as a Democratic sheet. It supported Seymour and Blair for President and Vice-President in 1868. In 1872 it supported Greeley and Brown. In 1874 it was consolidated with the *St. Joseph Traveler*, as before mentioned, and its fortunes have since been merged in those of the *Traveler and Herald*.

## TRAVELER AND HERALD.

In 1874 the *St. Joseph Herald* was consolidated with the *Traveler*, the resulting journal being known as the *Traveler and Herald*. It was owned by Horace W. Guernsey, the former proprietor of the *Herald*, and Charles Stewart, who had become the owner of Mr. Reynolds' interest, under the firm-name of H. W. Guernsey & Co. Subsequently, Mr. L. J. Merchant purchased Mr. Stewart's interest, and the firm became Guernsey & Merchant. In June, 1877, the office of the *Traveler and Herald* was entirely destroyed by fire. Mr. Guernsey then disposed of his interest to Mr. Merchant, by whom the paper is still published under the name last given. Like its predecessor, the *Traveler*, it is a strong Republican journal, and ably advocates the principles of that party.

## ST. JOSEPH PIONEER.

The *St. Joseph Pioneer* was established mainly as a Democratic campaign paper, in 1863. It was owned by a joint-stock company, and was under the management of a board of control. D. A. Winslow, Pincus Herioch, and Thomas H. Botham constituted the board during its publication. D. A. Winslow was chosen editor by the stockholders, and the board of control selected Wallace H. Perkins as the publisher. The first number was issued Feb. 14, 1863.

Mr. Perkins published the *Pioneer* twenty-seven weeks and then withdrew. From Aug. 15 to Oct. 3, 1863, its publication was suspended.

At the urgent solicitation of the stockholders and of his associates in the board of control, Mr. Winslow assumed the publication of the *Pioneer*, and performed the duties of both publisher and editor from Oct. 3, 1863, until after the presidential election of 1864. The last number was issued Nov. 19, 1864.

In his valedictory Mr. Winslow said, "The Union is the one great desire of our hearts, and object of our efforts; and if that object can better be attained by the success of the opposition party, then we sink party in patriotism, and bow a most willing obedience to the will and judgment of the people."

## LAKE SHORE INDEPENDENT.

A weekly paper of this name was established at St. Joseph, in November, 1873, by Charles M. Winslow. In

January following he sold his press and type to William Ricaby and Thomas H. Botham, who began the publication of the paper described below.

## ST. JOSEPH REPUBLICAN.

This paper was established in January, 1874, by William Ricaby and Thomas H. Botham, as an advocate of Republican principles, the material being that of the *Lake Shore Independent*. In June of that year Robert Ricaby purchased the interest of Mr. Botham, and the paper continued under the management of William and Robert Ricaby until January, 1875, when the firm became William Ricaby & Son, by whom the *Republican* is still continued.

It was originally a five-column quarto, but in April, 1876, it was changed to an eight-column folio. In November, 1876, it changed from the advocacy of Republican to that of Democratic principles, but still retains its original name.

## ST. JOSEPH DAILY NEWS.

This little sheet is issued from the office of the *Republican* by K. & W. Ricaby. The first number was dated Dec. 4, 1879.

The *Lake Shore Daily News* is mentioned among the Benton Harbor papers.

## THE VINDICATOR.

In the year 1857, J. M. Patton established a newspaper at New Buffalo, called *The Vindicator*, published it about a year, and stopped. Mr. Patton removed to Buchanan, but the press went into the possession of Alonzo Bennett, and was used for a time for job-work.

## BUFFALO INDEPENDENT.

In 1859, Alonzo Bennett started a paper at New Buffalo called the *Buffalo Independent*. The first number contained the first account in this section (outside of Chicago) of the execution of John Brown. After about a year it was discontinued, and the press was removed to Buchanan.

## NEW BUFFALO INDEPENDENT.

On the 9th day of September, 1875, A. C. & J. R. Hill issued the first number of the *New Buffalo Independent*. This paper maintained a feeble existence about a year and a half, when it was discontinued. The press and type were removed to Three Oaks, where they were employed for the publication of the *Michigan Independent*.

## BUCHANAN VINDICATOR.

The first paper established in Buchanan was started in the early fall of 1858, by J. M. Potter. It was Republican in its politics, and was known as the *Buchanan Vindicator*. It was not very prosperous, and was finally absorbed in the paper next noticed.

## BUCHANAN WEEKLY UNION.

This journal was started in 1862, by Lloyd & Turner. It flourished under their management until 1866, when it was purchased by Daniel A. Wagner. In February, 1867, Mr. Wagner changed its name, as stated below.

## BERRIEN COUNTY RECORD.

On the 28th of February, 1867, Mr. Wagner, in place of the *Weekly Union*, issued the first number of the *Berrien*

*County Record.* In 1869 the *Record* was changed from a quarto to a folio. On the 29th of December, 1870, Mr. Kingery was taken into partnership, the firm-name being Wagner & Kingery. Mr. Wagner's connection ceased on the 30th of April, 1874, when John C. Marble purchased his interest. On the 28th of May, 1874, Mr. Marble sold to Mr. Lindley, who also sold, on the 28th of January, 1875, to John G. Holmes. Upon Mr. Kingery's death, Aug. 18, 1876, Mr. Holmes purchased the interest of the heirs, and has since published the *Record* in his own name. A new steam-press has just been obtained. The *Record* has a circulation of about one thousand.

#### THE INDEPENDENT.

In 1860, Alonzo Bennett established at Buchanan *The Independent*, a weekly paper, in the interest of the Democracy. It expired in 1862, aged two years, one month, and two days.

#### VOICE OF THE WEST.

The village of Buchanan had become, in 1864, the headquarters of the denomination of Adventists in the West, and in the summer of that year Joshua V. Himes, long a publisher and editor in Boston, established the *Voice of the West* (weekly), as the exponent of the views of that class of Christians. The circulation soon reached between five and six thousand. About a year afterwards a company was formed called the "Western Advent Christian Publishing Association," which assumed the publication of the *Voice*, and also issued numerous minor documents. Mr. Himes was chosen president of the company and editor of the paper. Several million pages of tracts were issued by the association and distributed over the land.

#### ADVENT CHRISTIAN TIMES.

About 1870 the name *Voice of the West* was changed to *Advent Christian Times*, and in 1871 the paper was removed to Norwood Park, a suburb of Chicago. The office was at first in the second story of what is now the Dunbar House. Later the association purchased the building now used as a factory, which then stood on the ground now occupied by the Advent church.

#### BUCHANAN NATIONAL.

On the first day of May, 1878, a paper by the above name was established at Buchanan, in the interest of the Greenback party, by M. R. Scullin. It maintained its existence only until the 28th of February, 1879.

#### BUCHANAN REPORTER.

On the day last named Dr. F. H. Berrick, having purchased the material of the *National*, commenced the publication of the *Buchanan Reporter*, of which he is still the editor and proprietor. It is independent in politics, and has reached a circulation of seven hundred and fifty.

#### BENTON HARBOR PALLADIUM.

This paper was first issued on the 9th day of October, 1868, by L. G. Merchant, being then a six-column, four-page weekly. In December, 1869, it was sold to J. P. Thresher, who increased the number of columns on a page to seven. In 1872 it became the property of Alvin Sur-

tevant, who enlarged it to its present size,—four pages, of eight columns each. The *Palladium* is Republican in politics, and since May, 1874, has been edited and published by Charles E. Reeves.

#### BENTON HARBOR TIMES.

The first issue of this paper appeared on the 17th day of July, 1875. It was a seven column folio, of which William and Thomas Hurley were the proprietors. On the 1st of October, 1875, A. H. Potter became the proprietor, and so continued until the 1st of February, 1877, when he sold out to A. C. Webb & Co. These gentlemen continued the publication until the 30th of September, 1877, when William Hurley, one of the original owners, became the proprietor, and has remained so till the present time. Thomas Hurley has been the editor during the same period. The *Times* is independent in politics.

#### LAKE SHORE DAILY NEWS.

This diminutive but enterprising journal was issued at Benton Harbor on the 2d day of May, 1876, by William Dudley and Charles E. Reeves. The latter soon sold his interest to James Jennings. In May, 1879, Frank L. Thresher became one of the proprietors, and the firm-name has since been Dudley, Jennings & Thresher. The press was removed to St. Joseph in the autumn of 1878, but an editorial office is still maintained at Benton Harbor.

#### GOLD AND SILVER.

The first local newspaper of Berrien Springs was a monthly publication called *Gold and Silver* (a four-page, twenty-four-column journal), started in 1873 by Frederick McOmber, the printing being done in Niles. It was discontinued at the end of six months.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY JOURNAL.

In May, 1874, Mr. McOmber, the publisher of *Gold and Silver*, together with L. E. Barnard, founded the *Berrien County Journal*, as a Republican weekly paper. It started with twenty-eight columns, but was subsequently enlarged to thirty-two. In August, 1874, Mr. McOmber withdrew, and Mr. Barnard carried on the *Journal* alone until his death, in April, 1876. It then passed into the hands of G. H. Murdock, who has since then been its proprietor and editor. It is now independent in politics, with Democratic proclivities. It is issued at Berrien Springs every Saturday.

#### BERRIEN SPRINGS ERA.

This is a twenty-eight-column weekly journal, published every Wednesday by Frederick McOmber, who founded it in January, 1876, as an advocate of Republican principles, and such it still remains.

#### WATERVLiet JOURNAL.

In 1876 a Mr. Sheffield, of Indiana, was induced by the promise of liberal support to begin the publication of a weekly newspaper in the village of Watervliet, which he called the *Watervliet Journal*. It was independent in politics, and set out with a promising assurance of success. But, although Mr. Sheffield obtained the respectable number of five hundred subscribers, he found himself unable to make his income equal his expenses; so, after publishing

the *Journal* a year at a loss, he withdrew himself and his paper from that field.

#### MICHIGAN INDEPENDENT.

In April, 1877, J. R. Hill brought from New Buffalo to Three Oaks the press and material with which he had been publishing the *New Buffalo Independent* at the former place. With them, on the 19th of April, he began the publication of the *Michigan Independent* at Three Oaks. The paper still flourishes under that name. It is independent in politics, and has now a circulation of about a thousand.

### CHAPTER XXIII.

#### THE MEDICAL AND LEGAL PROFESSIONS.

Early Physicians of Berrien County—Berrien County Medical Society—Eclectic Physicians—Homoeopathic Physicians—The Bar of Berrien County.

##### EARLY PHYSICIANS OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

In the day-book of Walling & Lacey, headed "Pog-watigue" (now Niles), occurs an entry, June 8, 1829, of the sale to Dr. James M. Martin of one saddle blanket and certain articles apparently to be used in his practice. No further knowledge of this physician can be obtained. In the same book, under date of June 9, 1831, occurs the name of Dr. E. Winslow. He was a native of Vermont, and came to practice in Niles in the spring of 1831. In the next year he became associated with Dr. William B. Beeson. The latter soon afterwards went into partnership with his brother Jacob, in the mercantile business, and gave up practice. Dr. Winslow remained at Niles until 1840, and then removed to Peoria, Ill., where he died.

Dr. James Lewis, a native of Vermont, studied medicine and graduated in that State. He practiced twelve years at Henrietta, Monroe Co., N. Y., before removing West. He came to Niles in 1835, and opened a drug-store, but did not practice his profession here. With the exception of a year or two, he was in the drug business until 1857, when he retired. He is now living in Niles.

Dr. Talman Wheeler came to Niles in 1832, but did not practice in this region. He engaged in commercial pursuits at Niles and St. Joseph, and was prominent in the development of navigation on the St. Joseph River.

Dr. Amos S. Amsden, a native of New York, emigrated to St. Joseph in 1832, but did not practice after coming to Michigan. He was identified with the progress of St. Joseph until his death, which occurred at Millburg, in 1849.

The first physician to locate and practice in St. Joseph was Dr. B. Y. Boyd, from Kentucky, who came in 1834, remained a few years, and went away, not having met with much success.

Dr. Lowell S. Lillibridge emigrated from Ohio in 1836. He commenced practice at St. Joseph, and continued until 1849, when he removed to California. He was interested in town affairs and filled several official positions. He was a successful practitioner, and commanded the respect and confidence of the community.

Dr. J. W. Finley was a physician of considerable emi-

nence before coming to Niles, having previously practiced five years in Chillicothe, Ohio, and filled the chair of chemistry and natural history in Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pa., from 1828 to 1830. He came to Niles in 1835, and commenced a practice which continued without interruption for twenty years. In 1855 he removed to Pittsburgh, and served three years as surgeon in the army during the war of the Rebellion. In the year 1864 he resumed practice in Niles, and in 1870 opened a drug-store, in which he is still interested. Dr. Finley is now in the city of Niles, though he retired from the active practice of his profession several years ago.

Dr. Reuben Pierce came to New Buffalo in 1835, on the first vessel that ran into that port. He practiced there with much success till 1840, when he removed to Terre Coupee, and died in 1858. His son, Dr. Reuben W. Pierce, is now a practicing physician in Buchanan.

Dr. Stillman Richardson studied medicine in the State of New York. He came to Michigan in 1836, and located in Niles, where he continued in practice during the remainder of his life. As a practitioner, he was quick to discern, prompt to act, and excellent in judgment. By these qualities he rose to the first rank in his profession, and by his thorough honesty and sturdy championship of the right on all occasions, he endeared himself in a remarkable degree to the people among whom he lived. He died at Niles in 1875.

Dr. Morgan Enos settled in Pipestone, and commenced the practice of medicine in 1837. He was a good physician, and for many years the only one in the township. He retired from active practice a few years before his death, which occurred in 1868.

Dr. Andrew J. Murray, who came from Pennsylvania about 1836, first opened an office at Berrien Springs, where he practiced till about 1839. He then removed to St. Joseph, and subsequently, in 1848, to Niles, where he died in 1854. He was a man of fine education, good ability, and a successful practitioner. He represented his district in the Legislature in 1849.

Dr. James Bloodgood, a graduate of the New York College, came to Michigan about 1844, and located in practice at Niles, where he remained until 1854, when he removed to Dowagiac, and practiced there until his death.

Dr. Hiram B. Wilcox, a native of Ohio, graduated at Cleveland. In 1836 he came West, settled in Indiana near the line of Michigan, and commenced a practice which extended into the southern towns of Berrien County. In 1860 he removed to Three Oaks, where he still resides.

Dr. Philetus P. Maillard, a native of Philadelphia, Pa., came to Niles about 1840. He was an eminent physician, and had practiced several years in the West Indies before that time, but after his settlement at Niles he did very little in the way of his profession, though he was frequently called to council in dangerous cases. After residing several years at Niles he returned to Philadelphia.

Dr. Samuel Niles, a physician of the eclectic school, graduated at Laporte, Ind. He came to Niles about 1846, and commenced the practice of medicine. He was prominent in educational affairs, and much interested in the public schools of Niles. He died about 1861.



Dr. Joel Loomis, also an eclectic physician, came to Niles about 1848, and practiced there many years. He died in 1876.

Dr. Jabez Barron, an Englishman by birth, came to St. Joseph in 1838, and practiced medicine in that place till December, 1839, when he removed to Niles and continued in practice till his death, which occurred about twenty years later.

Dr. David B. Crane, a native of New Jersey, graduated at Fairfield Medical College, Herkimer Co., N. Y., and practiced in that State for several years. In 1832 he came to Albion, Calhoun Co., Mich., where he practiced till about 1852, when he removed to St. Joseph, where he is still residing, at the age of seventy-seven years. Dr. Crane is a fine scholar, an accomplished linguist, and during the many years of his practice has been regarded as an excellent physician.

Dr. Thomas C. Sachse, a German of fine education and a good linguist, came to Niles in 1854. He practiced here about seven years, and removed to St. Louis, Mo., where he now lives.

Dr. J. H. Crawford came to Watervliet about 1841, and settled on a farm a mile south of Coloma, not intending to follow his profession, but appeals were often made to him for aid, and he finally yielded and practiced for several years. On account of sickness he returned to Ohio, his former place of residence, and was succeeded in Watervliet by Dr. J. H. Wheeler, who came to that place in 1846.

Dr. Charles C. Wallin came in the spring of 1835 to Buchanan, where he lived and followed his profession several years. He removed to Berrien Springs in 1843, opened an office, and practiced until 1849. He is now living in Chicago.

Dr. J. M. Roe, in February, 1851, settled in Buchanan, and is still in practice there.

Dr. Ansel Winslow came to Millburg in 1851, and practiced there till about 1866, when he removed to near Lansing, Mich., where he is still in practice.

Dr. Lyman A. Barnard came to Berrien Springs at the time of its first settlement. He studied medicine, was admitted to practice in 1847, and became one of the village physicians. He is still there, though not in practice. In 1850, Dr. S. C. Bartholomew came to the same place, and practiced till his death in 1858.

Dr. Corydon Parker, who graduated at Geneva, N. Y., came to St. Joseph about 1849, and practiced there until his death, which occurred in 1851. He was succeeded by Dr. Reuben D. Parker, who came to attend his brother in his sickness and remained after his death, taking his practice. Dr. Parker retired in 1874, but is still living at St. Joseph.

Dr. C. H. Bostwick located in the central part of Weesaw township about 1845. He is still in practice, and resides in the same township, near the village of New Troy.

In the above mention of early physicians it has been the intention to include those who commenced practice in Berrien County during the first quarter of a century of its existence. Of most of those who came later the names will be found in the membership list of the medical association and the several township histories.

#### BERRIEN COUNTY MEDICAL SOCIETY.

On the 2d day of April, 1874, a number of physicians met at New Buffalo, for the purpose of organizing a medical society. A committee was appointed to draft a constitution and by-laws, and one was also appointed to notify and request every physician in the regular practice to unite with them at Berrien Springs, April 30, 1874, to complete the organization of a society. At the adjourned meeting an organization was effected, the following being the original members: A. H. Scott, John Bell, W. P. Mason, L. H. Dunning, J. D. Bowman, W. F. Reiber, Thomas W. Anderson, L. A. Barnard. The officers elected were Dr. A. H. Scott, President; Dr. John Bell, Vice-President. Drs. Bell, Anderson, and Greenamyer, Executive Committee; Drs. Bowman, Mason, and Dunning, Committee on Medical Ethics; Drs. Bell, Bowman, and Barnard, Committee on Admission; Dr. L. H. Dunning, Secretary.

The names of the present members of the society are here given, with the colleges at which they graduated, as far as can be ascertained: Alexander H. Scott, B. C. Smith, W. A. Neal, H. G. Clippinger, Henry M. Marvin, Thomas W. Anderson, John D. Greenamyer, Wakeman Ryno, J. F. Berringer, University of Michigan; John Bell, William P. Mason, University of New York; L. H. Dunning, Fred. F. Sovereign, George H. Riley, Rush Medical College, Chicago; John D. Bowman, Queen's College, Ontario; William F. Reiber, Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia; Robert F. Stratton, Medical Department Harvard College; James B. Reeves, Starling Medical College, Columbus, Ohio; Lewis W. Baker, Medical College of New York; R. R. Lawrence, E. J. Bonine, Robert Henderson.

List of physicians not members of the medical society who are practicing in the county: Drs. A. K. Webster, Lyman Collins, David Crane, — Roberts, St. Joseph; J. W. Egbert, A. J. Mead; O. P. Horn, J. Simpson, J. H. Richardson, Simeon Belknap, Niles; Moses Clark, New Buffalo; C. H. Bostwick, New Troy; H. Wilcox, Three Oaks; George Bell, R. Wyman, Benton Harbor; — Warner, Millburg; Platt B. Myers, J. M. Roe, R. W. Pierce, — Van Riper, Buchanan.

Eclectic Physicians: Dr. Samuel W. Holland, St. Joseph; Dr. E. B. Dodd, Dr. Leroy Dodd, Buchanan.

#### HOMŒOPATHIC PHYSICIANS.

The physicians of the homœopathic school have no county organization and are comparatively few in number.

In 1855, Samuel Camp commenced practice in St. Joseph, and remained two or three years. Dr. L. A. Sexton succeeded Dr. Camp, but was there only one year.

Dr. R. Pengilly came to St. Joseph in 1861, and was in practice for three or four years. Drs. Charles Chamberlain and B. M. Pettit came to St. Joseph about 1867. The latter is still in practice there. Dr. Ludwig, a German, and a man of considerable ability, was in St. Joseph prior to 1865. He afterwards went to Michigan City, and is now near Dowagiac.

The first to settle in Niles was Dr. James E. Westervelt. He was a native of Tompkins Co., N. Y., graduated at the homœopathic college in New York City, and removed to Plymouth, Ind. About 1856 he came to Niles and com-

menced practice. He remained until 1864, when he removed. Dr. Craig, a graduate of the same college, came in 1864 and succeeded to the practice of Dr. Westervelt. He remained about ten years, and removed to Grand Rapids, and from there to Detroit, where he is still in practice.

The homœopathic physicians at present practicing in the county are Dr. B. M. Pettit, St. Joseph; Dr. L. I. McLin, St. Joseph; Dr. F. W. Berriek, Buchanan; Dr. H. W. Whitworth, Niles; Dr. E. A. Clark, Benton Harbor; Dr. Allen, Berrien.

#### THE BAR OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

In preparing a history of the Berrien County bar, it is impossible to make it as complete as is desirable. The first court in the county was held in July, 1832, but the court journals prior to 1836, as well as for the fall term in 1839, and for the year 1840, are not to be found in the county, rendering it impossible to ascertain what attorneys were admitted during those years. And as there is no attorneys' roll kept, there is no means of ascertaining the names of the attorneys except by reference to the court journals, and in absence of the journals, to the judgment records. We, therefore, give the names of the attorneys known to have been residents of the county during the time for which no journals are found, yet we trust the record will be very full and complete.

Francis B. Murdock was the first lawyer in the county. He was born in Cumberland, Md., in March, 1804; admitted to the bar of Pennsylvania at Bedford in 1825; came to Berrien County and settled at Berrien in 1830. He immediately entered into practice, and his name appears as attorney in the first judgment records of the county. He was the second probate judge in the county, receiving his appointment from the Governor and Council in 1833. He left the county in 1835, and after practicing his profession three years in Alton, Ill., and ten years in St. Louis, he went to California in 1852, and now lives at San José, in that State. He long since abandoned his profession and entered the field of journalism; and although now seventy-six years old, he yet retains his physical and mental powers in a remarkable degree.

Thomas Fitzgerald was the second lawyer in the county. He was born in Herkimer Co., N. Y., in April, 1796; moved to Indiana in 1819, and was admitted to the bar of that State in 1821. In 1828 he was a member of the Legislature of Indiana. He afterwards came to this county, and settled at St. Joseph in 1832, and his name appears as attorney, with Mr. Murdock's, in the first judgment records of the courts of the county. In 1832 he was appointed lighthouse-keeper at St. Joseph; in 1834 he was appointed, by Governor George B. Porter, clerk of this county; was regent of the State University in 1837, and in 1838 was appointed bank commissioner. In 1848 he was appointed United States senator, to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Gen. Cass, and held the position two sessions, and until Gen. Cass was re-elected in 1850. Col. Fitzgerald moved to Niles in about 1851. In 1852 he was elected judge of probate, which office he held at the time of his death, in March, 1855. In the war of

1812, at the battle of Lundy's Lane, Col. Fitzgerald was wounded by a bullet which shattered his arm. This in a measure crippled him for life, and he always carried the bullet in his shoulder.

As a lawyer Col. Fitzgerald had considerable ability, but soon after he came to this county he abandoned the practice of his profession, and entered other fields more congenial to his taste.

E. Egbert appears as attorney in the judgment records of the county as early as 1832, but he was never a resident of Michigan. He was at one time a judge of St. Joseph Co., Ind.

William H. Welch commenced practice here in 1832, and continued in practice several years. At the fall term of the Circuit Court in 1832, and the spring term in 1833, he was appointed by the court prosecuting attorney for the respective terms. Mr. Welch was never a resident of the county.

N. McGaffy and Marcus Lane appeared as attorneys in the judgment records in 1833. They remained in the county but a short time.

Jerome B. Fitzgerald, son of Col. Thomas Fitzgerald, was born at Boonville, Ind., in September, 1822, and came to this county with his father in 1832. He was educated at Middletown, Conn.; was admitted to the bar in this county in 1844. In 1846 he was elected to the State Senate. With the exception of 1850 to 1864, when he was in New York, his residence was almost exclusively in Berrien County. He died at Niles, June 5, 1878. Mr. Fitzgerald had a fine legal mind, was an excellent scholar, and was a lawyer of more than ordinary ability. Litigation was not to his taste, and he chose the more quiet and less exciting parts of law practice, and hence never acquired a very widespread reputation as a pleader; but among his friends and intimate acquaintances and the business men, who knew him, he possessed their entire confidence as counsel and office lawyer.

Edwin Lawrence was born at Middlebury, Vt., in 1808, and came to Michigan in 1834. He was admitted to the bar in this county in October, 1836. Mr. Lawrence was lately circuit judge at Ann Arbor, but has now retired from the practice of his profession.

Joseph Y. James lived at St. Joseph at an early day. He was admitted to the bar at Berrien, in October, 1837, but remained only a short time after his admission.

Vincent L. Bradford came from Philadelphia, Pa., in 1835, and settled at Niles, where he immediately entered into law practice. Mr. Bradford was a ripe scholar, and a lawyer of eminent ability. He immediately took rank among the first lawyers in the State, and soon acquired a State reputation. The field of labor was at that time too limited for him, and in 1843 he returned to Philadelphia. There he at once took a high position in the profession, and now stands at the head of the bar in that city. In 1838 and 1839, Mr. Bradford was a member of the State Senate from Berrien County. Few men in Michigan, in the profession or out of it, would outrank Mr. Bradford in learning and ability.

Nathaniel Bacon was born at Ballston Spa, N. Y., in July, 1802; graduated at Union College in 1824; was ad-

mitted to the New York bar, at Ballston Spa, and practiced law several years at Rochester, N. Y. He came to this county and settled near Niles, in the fall of 1833. Mr. Bacon intended when he came to Michigan to turn his attention to agriculture, and for that purpose purchased four hundred acres of land a little east of the present city of Niles. He moved upon the land, and continued to own and live on it until his death, in September, 1869. The continued calls upon him for his professional services induced him to open an office in Niles, in the fall of 1834, and he continued in practice, except when he was on the bench, until his death. Mr. Bacon was probate judge in 1837. In 1855 he was elected circuit judge, and was *ex-officio* judge of the Supreme Court. He was again elected to the judgeship in 1857, and again in 1866 he was elected to fill a vacancy caused by the death of Judge Smith, again in the spring of 1869 he was elected for the full term, but died the following September.

Judge Bacon had a clear, comprehensive mind, had great influence with the court as an advocate, and was remarkably successful before a jury. His appearance before a jury seemed to say, "Gentlemen of the jury, I expect, by a calm and dispassionate statement of the facts and the law, to convince you that I am right in what I may say to you," and his calm and cool manner before the jury always told in the case. In addressing a jury he seemed to be unconscious that another person than the jury was in the room.

Charles Jewett was born at Weybridge, Vt., in June, 1810, graduated at Middlebury College, Vermont, in August, 1834, and read law at Middlebury. He came to Niles in the fall of 1836, and in the same year was appointed district attorney for the county of Berrien, then the thirteenth judicial district. He held this office until he resigned, in 1840. He was elected county judge in 1848, held the office four years, and was elected judge of probate in 1860. Mr. Jewett never claimed eminence as a trial lawyer, but for counsel, and as an office lawyer, he ranked among the first in the county.

Joseph N. Chipman was born in Shoreham, Vt., in September, 1803. He was descended from a family in which were some of the most distinguished lawyers in that State. He graduated at Middlebury College with the class of 1823, and was admitted to the bar at Middlebury in 1833, and was in practice there several years. He came to this county and settled at Niles in June, 1836, and continued to reside there, in the practice of his profession most of the time, until his death, in November, 1870. In 1844 he was elected to the State Senate.

John S. Chipman was a practicing attorney in the State of New York; settled in Niles in 1838, and was admitted to the bar the same year; was appointed prosecuting attorney by the court for the April term of the court in 1839. In 1844, Mr. Chipman was elected to Congress from this district. He remained at Niles until 1851, when he went to California, and died there several years ago. Mr. Chipman was a very positive character, and in ability ranked high in the profession.

To distinguish Mr. John S. from Joseph N. Chipman, residing at the same time in Niles, the former was usually

designated as "Black Chip," and the latter as "White Chip."

Cyrus Dana was born at Owego, N. Y. He was a practicing attorney in that State, but came to Niles in 1838, and was admitted to the bar in November of that year. He continued in practice until his death, at Niles, in 1847.

James Sullivan was an attorney from New Hampshire. He came to Niles in 1838, and in the same year was admitted to the Michigan bar at Berrien. He stayed at Niles about three years after his admission to the bar, and then removed to Cass County, where he continued the practice of the profession until his death, in August, 1878. Mr. Sullivan was from a family of eminent lawyers; his father was attorney-general of the State of New Hampshire for over twenty years, and his grandfather for a still longer period, and the credit and character of the family lost nothing in the person of James. He was acknowledged to be one of the finest lawyers in the State. He possessed a legal mind inferior to none, but an unfortunate deafness denied him the honorable positions to which, as a lawyer or statesman, his learning, ability, and sterling worth entitled him.

James Brown—born at Saratoga, N. Y., September, 1814—graduated at Union College in 1836, settled in Niles in 1838, and has ever since resided there. He was admitted to the Michigan bar at Berrien in October, 1839. Mr. Brown was elected judge of probate in 1844, and again in 1848, holding the office eight years. In 1845 he was appointed prosecuting attorney to fill a vacancy; was re-appointed in 1849, and elected to the same office in 1852. Mr. Brown is a fine scholar; has a remarkable command of language, a fine orator, and always made an efficient officer. He has a big heart, that always throbs for the unfortunate and the oppressed.

Cogswell K. Green was an attorney from New Hampshire, who came to Niles at an early day, probably about 1833, and settled at Niles, where he remained in practice for several years. He afterwards returned to New Hampshire, and now lives at Exeter, in that State. He was probate judge in Berrien County in 1831, and held the office about three years.

Thomas Conger was born about 1800. He settled at St. Joseph in May, 1834, and was elected judge of probate in November of the same year. He remained in practice at St. Joseph until 1849, when he went to California. He is now police judge in the city of Sacramento.

Cruzer Walton, a practicing attorney from New York, was admitted to practice in Berrien County in October, 1837. He resided at St. Joseph, and continued to practice law several years in this county.

James Randles came to St. Joseph about 1834. He had but one arm, and for that reason was usually called "one-arm Randles," to distinguish him from James I. Randall, who lived at St. Joseph at the same time. Mr. Randles was a man of fine talents. He died at St. Joseph about 1840.

Jabez N. Rogers came to St. Joseph about 1842, and was admitted to the bar in April of that year. He practiced law several years in this county, and now lives in one of the Western States.



Ebenezer McIlvaine was born in Pennsylvania, and was admitted to the bar of that State at Pittsburgh. He came to Niles in about 1843, and was admitted to the bar at Berrien in October of that year. He was county clerk in 1848, and in 1855 was elected probate judge, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Col. Fitzgerald. He died in Niles several years ago.

Levi B. Taft was admitted to the bar of Berrien County prior to 1850. In that year he was elected prosecuting attorney. He left Niles in 1853, and now resides at Pontiac, Oakland Co. He was at one time circuit judge in that county.

Hiram F. Mather, born in Elbridge, Onondaga Co., N. Y., came to Niles in 1844. In 1853 he went to Chicago, and died there about 1863. Mr. Mather was a member of the Senate of New York four years before he came to Michigan. He was an able lawyer, and very popular as a man.

Alonzo Bennett, born at Addison, Vt., in September, 1807, came to Berrien County in September, 1833, and settled at Niles. In 1836 he moved to New Buffalo, where he has lived most of his time since, and still resides there. He was admitted to the bar in 1843, but never made the practice of law his business. Soon after his admission he turned his attention to other pursuits, principally merchandising.

John M. Barbour came from Chautauqua Co., N. Y., settled at Niles in 1834, and was admitted to the bar here in April, 1842. He remained here eight years and then went to the city of New York. Mr. Barbour is now judge of the superior court of that city.

Thomas W. Freelan lived at Niles, and was admitted to the bar at Berrien in May, 1845. He enlisted in the United States army and served in the Mexican war. He went to California in 1849 or 1850, and has been a judge of a court of record in that State.

Franklin Muzzy was born in Maine in 1816, and graduated at Bowdoin College. He came to Berrien County in 1842, stayed one year at St. Joseph with the family of Col. Fitzgerald, and in 1843 went to Niles, and always lived there until his death, in March, 1878. He was admitted to the bar in Maine, and was at one time a law-partner of Hon. Hannibal Hawlin; he was admitted to the bar of this State at Berrien, in October, 1846, and continued in practice to the time of his death. He was elected State senator in 1858, and was for many years mayor of the city of Niles. In many respects Mr. Muzzy was a remarkable and peculiar man. He lived and died a bachelor, which fact may account for many of his eccentricities. Probably no lawyer who ever lived in the county had as great influence with the court and jury as he; always ready, never showing surprise; an opponent not to be coveted, but in courtesy always meeting an opponent half-way. Before a jury his appearance seemed to say, "No use, gentlemen of the jury. I am going to compel you, in spite of yourselves, to view this case as I do,"—and he generally did. He was not eloquent as an orator, but his earnestness and apparent conviction that he was right gave him great power as an advocate. As a neighbor he was ever kind and obliging. Though not a professing Christian, yet no man in the county gave more liberally to the churches and clergy than

he. Hundreds of poor, did they know their benefactor, would rise up and call him blessed. He never gave to be seen of men, but with a basket or package of necessities would often go forth in the dark and, unseen, leave it at the door of some poor family, or send a delivery-wagon loaded with the comforts of life to be delivered to the needy ones, always with the injunction to not name the giver. Many a family has been warmed and fed by his kindness as an unknown giver.

John Grove was the first lawyer living at Buchanan. He was admitted to the bar in this county in May, 1848; elected to the House of Representatives of this State in 1845 and in 1846. He died at Buchanan some twenty years ago.

N. W. Thompson was admitted to the bar in this county in May, 1846. He never made the practice of law his exclusive business, but combined it with agricultural pursuits. He now lives in Iowa.

George H. Jerome was born at Pompey, Onondaga Co., N. Y., October, 1819. He graduated at Hamilton College in 1842, came to Niles in the fall of 1846, and immediately entered upon the practice of law. He soon retired from practice, and entered upon other pursuits more congenial to his taste. (See biographical sketch elsewhere in this work.)

John A. Thompson came to Niles in 1848, was admitted to the bar in 1849, and appointed prosecuting attorney in 1850. He enlisted in the war of the Rebellion, and was killed in the service.

Ira N. Jerome was born at Pompey, N. Y., in 1822, and graduated at Hamilton College in 1844. He came to Niles in 1848, and in the same year was admitted to the bar, but remained at Niles only about a year. He died at Iowa City in 1865.

Strother M. Beeson—born at Uniontown, Pa., in December, 1816—came to Niles in 1832, but passed much of his time for years in South Bend, where he read law. He was for many years a practicing attorney in Indiana, where he stood high as a lawyer. He was admitted in this county in December, 1850. He died at Niles, Dec. 30, 1878. Mr. Beeson was not fond of litigation, and confined his practice almost entirely to the quieter part of the practice.

Damon A. Winslow—born in Le Roy, Jefferson Co., N. Y., in May, 1819—was educated at Le Roy Academy, and at the Gouverneur Wesleyan Seminary, at Gouverneur, N. Y., under the instructions of the present Bishop Peck. He settled permanently in Michigan in 1844; was admitted to the law courts at Ann Arbor in June, 1845, and in the same month he was admitted to the Court of Chancery at Adrian. After admission to the bar he first settled in Eaton County, this State, and in 1847 was appointed by the Governor prosecuting attorney for that county, and held the office about two years. In May, 1851, he settled at St. Joseph, where he has since resided, in the practice of law. Mr. Winslow never claimed eminence as a trial lawyer; in other respects, as a lawyer, we trust his reputation is not to his discredit. He is still in practice.

David Bacon was born at Ballston Spa, N. Y., in September, 1827; graduated at Jefferson College, Pa., in 1852; came to this county and settled at Niles the same year; was admitted to the bar in October, 1854, and was elected prose-

cuting attorney in 1854. He still lives in Niles. Mr. Bacon served in the war of the Rebellion, and until he received a wound that well-nigh proved fatal. He received a colonel's commission for meritorious service. He is now in practice at Niles.

Seneca N. Taylor was for some years a practicing lawyer in the county. Several years since he moved to St. Louis, where he is now in practice.

Emory M. Plimpton came from Ohio, and was admitted to the bar in September, 1853. He was elected prosecuting attorney in 1856, and elected to the Michigan House of Representatives in 1868. He is now in practice at Buchanan.

Edward Bacon, born at Rochester, N. Y., in April, 1830, came to Niles with his father, Nathaniel Bacon, in 1833. He graduated at the Michigan University in 1850, and was admitted in the Supreme Court at Detroit in 1853. He still lives at Niles, and is in practice. Mr. Bacon enlisted in the late war, and left the service with a colonel's commission.

Ebenezer E. Cady, born at Auburn, N. Y., in May, 1816, came to St. Joseph in 1853. He was admitted at Berrien in June the same year. In 1859 he returned to Auburn, and is now in practice there.

Joseph S. Bacon, born at Rochester, N. Y., in March, 1832, came to Niles with his parents in 1833; was admitted to the bar in April, 1855, and is still in practice in Niles.

James M. Albert came to Buchanan about 1851, was admitted in December, 1858, and practiced law at Buchanan until he enlisted and went into the army, in which he held a captain's commission. He is not now a resident of the county.

Samuel B. Spears, a native of Brooklyn, N. Y., graduated at Yale College; came to Niles in 1848; was admitted in April, 1862, and died at Niles in 1863.

William W. Wheeler, born at Niles about 1836, was admitted at Berrien in September, 1859, and went into practice at St. Joseph, where he remained until he entered the army, in 1861. He went into the service as lieutenant, and held a colonel's commission at the close of the war. He died at Chicago about 1875.

Henry H. Coolidge was born at Leominster, Mass., in August, 1811, and educated at Amherst College. He came to Cass Co., Mich., in 1836; was admitted to the bar in that county in 1844, and elected prosecuting attorney for Cass County in 1850. He came to Niles in 1859; was elected prosecuting attorney for this county in 1862, and as a delegate to the Constitutional Convention in 1867. In 1872 he was appointed circuit judge, to fill a vacancy caused by the resignation of Judge Blackman, and in 1876 was elected to the same office, which he resigned in September, 1878. He is now in practice at Niles.

Charles R. Brown, born in Lorain Co., Ohio, was educated at Berea, Ohio, and admitted in Ohio in 1856. He came to St. Joseph in 1859; was admitted here in September, 1860; elected to the House of Representatives from this county in 1866. He moved to Kalamazoo in 1867, and was elected circuit judge for that circuit in the spring of 1869, and resigned in 1874. He now resides at Port Huron, Mich.

Benjamin F. Chubb, born at Ann Arbor, Mich., came to Niles in 1856, and was admitted in February, 1860, at Berrien, but never fully entered the practice of law. He died at Niles in 1867.

Charles W. Ormsbee, born in Paris, Oneida Co., N. Y., in August, 1831, graduated at Hamilton Law School in the first graduating class. He came to St. Joseph in 1861, was admitted in January, 1862, and in 1872 went to Salt Lake City, where he died in November of that year.

Theodore G. Beaver, born in New Berlin, Union Co., Pa., in 1835, received an academic education at New Berlin, came to Niles in September, 1858, and was admitted to the bar in April, 1862. He is now in practice in Niles.

Cyrus M. Alward, born at Scipioville, Cayuga Co., N. Y., in November, 1825, came to Niles in 1848, was admitted in April, 1862, and is now in practice at Niles.

Frederick O. Rogers came from Elmira, N. Y., to Niles about 1856, and was admitted in July of the same year; was elected prosecuting attorney in 1858, and re-elected in 1860. In 1867 he was appointed United States district attorney for the Western District of Michigan.

George S. Clapp, born at Columbia, Lorain Co., Ohio, in June, 1834, was educated at Berea, Ohio, and admitted to the bar in that State in 1856. He came to St. Joseph in 1862, and was admitted to the bar in October of the same year. In 1864 he was elected prosecuting attorney, and held the office six years. In 1869 he was nominee for circuit judge against Judge Blackman. He is now in practice in St. Joseph.

William R. Lyon, born in Cayuga Co., N. Y., in May, 1834, graduated at Williams College, Mass., in 1858; attended law lectures at the Michigan University in 1860-61, and was admitted at Berrien in May, 1863. He is now in practice at St. Joseph.

J. E. Chamberlain, born at Sandwich Islands in about 1830, graduated at Williams College, Mass., in 1852. After he graduated he returned to the Sandwich Islands, and was for several years judge of the Recorder's Court, and was offered a seat on the Supreme Court bench. He returned to the United States and settled at St. Joseph about 1860. The law was not to his taste, and he soon turned his attention to other pursuits. He again returned to the Sandwich Islands in 1873, and is now living there.

C. D. Hathaway was admitted to the bar in December, 1860. He remained in practice at Berrien about three years, and then went away. His present residence is unknown to the writer.

Nathan G. King was born in Rensselaer Co., N. Y., in February, 1819, and graduated at Williams College. He practiced law several years in Albany, N. Y., but came to Michigan and settled in St. Joseph, where he entered into practice in 1861. On the breaking out of the Rebellion he entered the army and obtained a colonel's commission. After the war he settled at Brooklyn, Jackson Co., Mich., and in 1872 was elected to the State Senate from that county.

Alexander Walker, from Oneida Co., N. Y., and a graduate of the Albany Law School, came to Berrien County in 1862, and in July of the same year was admitted to the bar. He never entered into law practice in this county,

for soon after his admission he entered the army and served during the Rebellion. In 1863 he was captain of Company A, 7th Michigan Cavalry. Mr. Walker was wounded at Gettysburg, but remained in the service till the end of the war, and was mustered out in 1865.

Jerome B. Brown, born in the State of New York about 1815, was admitted in Berrien in November, 1863. He now resides at Willoughby, Ohio.

J. J. Van Riper, born at Haverstraw, N. Y., in 1838, received an academic education in New York City, attended law lectures at Michigan University in 1860 and 1861; was admitted in Cass County, in January, 1863. In 1867 he was elected delegate to the Constitutional Convention from Cass County. He came to Buchanan in 1872; was elected prosecuting attorney in 1876, and re-elected in 1878. He is now in practice at Buchanan.

Cholwell Knox, born at Rhinebeck, N. Y., in 1839, graduated at the law department of Michigan University in September, 1863. In 1865 he came to Niles, where he is still in practice.

Worthy Putnam, born in Madison Co., N. Y., in October, 1811, was admitted to the New York bar at Buffalo, in 1859. He came to this county and settled at Berrien in 1864. He was admitted at Berrien in December of the same year. In 1869 he was appointed circuit judge, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Judge Bacon, and held the office until his successor was elected, in November of that year. The practice of law was not to the taste of Judge Putnam, and he soon retired from practice, and entered more congenial fields.

James H. Fairchild, born at London, Ontario, graduated at Ypsilanti High School in March, 1859. He graduated at the law department of Michigan University in March, 1863, and was admitted at Ann Arbor in March of the same year. He settled at Niles in April, 1865, but in February, 1872, removed to Chicago, where he is now in practice.

Calvin B. Potter was born in Jefferson Co., N. Y., in July, 1837, and graduated at Albany Law School in 1860. At the commencement of the war of the Rebellion he enlisted in the 18th New York Infantry, and served over four years in the Army of the Potomac. He was taken prisoner at the first battle of Bull Run, and was an inmate of Libby Prison for five months and seventeen days, then exchanged and went back to his regiment. After the close of the war he settled at St. Joseph (in June, 1866), and was admitted the same year. He was elected to the House of Representatives of Michigan in 1874. He is now in practice at St. Joseph.

Albert H. Potter, born in Wisconsin in 1840, came to St. Joseph in the spring of 1866, and was admitted in 1869. He is now in practice at Benton Harbor.

David E. Hinman was admitted to practice in May, 1868, and is now in practice at Buchanan, where he has resided for several years.

Wm. D. Kingery is now a resident of Buchanan, where he has been in practice several years. He was admitted in May, 1868.

A. B. Riford was born in Orange Co., Vt., in January, 1840, and graduated at Michigan University, law depart-

ment, in 1864. He came to Benton Harbor in August, 1866; was admitted at Berrien in November, 1865, and elected to Michigan House of Representatives in 1868. He is now postmaster at Benton Harbor.

Orville W. Coolidge, born in Cass Co., Mich., in October, 1839, graduated at Michigan University in 1863, and at Cambridge Law School in 1865. He was admitted in Cass County in 1865, and elected prosecuting attorney for Berrien County in 1870. He is now in practice at Niles.

Samuel M. Finley, born at Chillicothe, Ohio, in 1835, was admitted at Berrien, April, 1869. He practiced law at Niles about six years, but is now out of practice, and engaged in other business.

Wilbur F. Rudd, a native of Jefferson Co., N. Y., was admitted at Berrien, April, 1869. He died in Missouri in 1872.

Frank Dean, a graduate of the law department, Michigan University, came to St. Joseph in 1868, and was admitted in May, 1869. He is now at Hyde Park, Ill.

George F. Edwards, born at Ypsilanti, Mich., came to Niles in 1869, was admitted in April, 1873, and is now in practice at Niles.

Theodore J. De Puy, a native of Mercer Co., Pa., and educated at Alleghany College, Pennsylvania, was admitted to the New York bar in 1867; also in Mercer Co., Pa. He came to St. Joseph in 1869, and was admitted at Berrien in February, 1870. He is now in practice at St. Joseph.

George Miller came to Berrien in 1869, but stayed only about two years.

W. J. Gilbert, born at Cavendish, Vt., graduated at Middlebury College in 1869, came to Niles in 1870, and was admitted the same year. He is now in practice at Niles.

N. A. Hamilton, born in Tompkins Co., N. Y., in 1836, was educated at Whitewater Academy, Wisconsin, and admitted to the Wisconsin bar in 1859. He came to St. Joseph in 1870, was admitted the same year, and elected prosecuting attorney in 1872. He was elected to the Michigan House of Representatives in 1876; was elected Speaker *pro tem.*, and was chairman of the judiciary committee. He is now in practice at St. Joseph.

Alonzo Plummer, born in Somerset Co., Me., in 1842, graduated at Albany Law School in May, 1866, came to Benton Harbor in January, 1870; was admitted at Berrien in November, 1875, and is now in practice at Benton Harbor.

Frederick H. Bacon, a native of Niles, was educated at Michigan University, and admitted here in May, 1871. He is now in practice at St. Louis, Mo.

George W. Bridgman came from Massachusetts to Berrien County, and was admitted here in May, 1871. He is now in practice.

Henry F. Kellogg, born in Genesee Co., N. Y., in 1823, came to Niles in 1871; was admitted in the same year, and is now in practice in Niles.

William H. Breese was born at Edwardsburgh, Mich., in 1840, graduated at the law department of Michigan University in March, 1866, and was admitted at Ann Arbor in the same month. He came to Buchanan in April, 1866,



and was elected prosecuting attorney in 1874. He is now at Michigan City, Ind.

James A. Kellogg, born in Huron Co., Ohio, and educated at Hillsdale College, came to Berrien County in 1872, and was admitted in September, 1872. He is now practicing at Niles.

George S. Payne, born in Kennebec Co., Me., graduated at Colby University, Maine, in 1871, came to St. Joseph the same year, and was admitted at Berrien in March, 1875. He is now at Ottawa, Ill.

James H. Canfield, born in Delaware Co., Ohio, graduated at Williams College in June, 1868; was admitted to the Michigan bar at Mason, Ingham Co., in June, 1872. He came to St. Joseph in September, 1872, and practiced there about five years. He is now professor in the Kansas State University, at Lawrence, Kan.

John A. Eastman, born in Franklin Co., Me., came to Benton Harbor in 1873, and was admitted at Berrien in January, 1879. Mr. Eastman practiced law several years in Wisconsin and in Chicago. He is now in practice at Benton Harbor.

Geo. M. Valentine, born at Pulaski, N. Y., graduated at the law department of Michigan University in 1875; settled in February, 1877, at Benton Harbor, where he is still in practice.

Worth Landon, born at Niles, graduated at Racine College, Wisconsin, in 1872; was admitted to the bar at Berrien in March, 1875; and has always resided at Niles, where he is now in practice.

Frank D. Orcutt was admitted at Berrien in November, 1875, and has been in practice several years at Benton Harbor.

L. Frederick Copeland was admitted in Berrien County in June, 1876, and was in practice several years at Buchanan. He is now in South Bend.

Isaac P. Campbell, born in Centre Co., Pa., graduated at Michigan University, law department, in 1876; came to Berrien the same year, and remained in practice several years.

James W. Orr was admitted in October, 1877, at Berrien. He practiced some two years at Buchanan, but is now in practice at Niles.

A. J. Watson, born in Boston, Mass., came to St. Joseph in 1876; was admitted in June, 1879, and is now in practice in St. Joseph.

Geo. A. Lambert, born at Niles, was admitted in August, 1879, and is now in practice at Niles.

Frank Landon, born at Niles, graduated at Racine College, Wisconsin, in 1875; was admitted at Fort Dodge in 1877, and admitted in Berrien County, in November, 1879. He is now in practice at Niles.

Thornton Hale, born in Fairfax Co., Va., was admitted in Van Buren County in June, 1878. He soon after settled in Berrien, and is now in practice there.

Josephus Turner, born in Lycoming Co., Pa., graduated at Dickinson College, Pennsylvania, in 1865; came to Berrien County in September, 1878; was admitted at Berrien in October of the same year, and is now in practice at Berrien.

David S. Devin, born at Ottumwa, Iowa, graduated at

Marietta College, Ohio; came to Berrien County in 1873, and was admitted at Berrien in January, 1880.

Lawrence C. Fyfe, born at Isle aux Noix, Canada, educated in England and Scotland, settled at St. Joseph in 1874, and was admitted the same year. He is now in practice at St. Joseph.

Albert A. Worthington was admitted at Berrien in July, 1879, and is now in practice at Buchanan.

Alson C. Roe graduated at the law department of Michigan University in March, 1879; was admitted in June, 1879; is now in practice at Buchanan.

The following names appear among those admitted to the bar in this county, but were not residents of the county, and were not recognized as members of the bar of Berrien County: Edward R. Badger, admitted October, 1837; William Xavier, admitted April, 1840; Joseph L. Jernigan, admitted October, 1842; Thomas B. Biddle, admitted October, 1842; Thomas Grove, admitted October, 1843; Dexter Straight, admitted May, 1846; James Hutchins, admitted October, 1846; Enoch A. Ross, admitted September, 1857; Abram H. Smith, admitted July, 1862; Nathan H. Soule, admitted October, 1862; Henry R. Robbins, admitted November, 1863; Jerome H. Ingersoll, admitted August, 1865; Rienzi Knox, admitted May, 1869; Stephen Bacon, admitted May, 1869; Marshal L. Howell, admitted April, 1870; Samuel Hayes, admitted April, 1876; Jay S. Bruitt, admitted February, 1878; Edwin C. Towsley, admitted May, 1878; David H. Gray, admitted December, 1850.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### CIVIL LIST—COUNTY SOCIETIES.

Territorial, State, and National Officers from Berrien County—Berrien County Officers—Berrien County Agricultural Society—Northern Berrien County and Michigan Lake Shore Agricultural Society—Berrien County Pomona Grange—Farmers' Mutual Fire Insurance Association of Berrien County—Pioneer Association of Berrien County—Niles Horse-Thief Association—Reserve Horse-Thief Detectives—Lake Side Horse-Thief Association of Berrien County—Young People's Picnic Association of Berrien County.

### BERRIEN CIVIL LIST.

In this list the names are given of those citizens of the county who have held important positions in or under the State or national government, and also of those who have held county offices in Berrien.

#### MEMBER OF THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL OF MICHIGAN TERRITORY.

Calvin Britain, 1832 to 1835, inclusive.

#### LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR OF MICHIGAN.

Calvin Britain, 1852-53.

#### SECRETARY OF STATE.

William Graves, 1853-55.

#### UNITED STATES SENATOR.

Thomas Fitzgerald, appointed in 1848, to fill vacancy caused by resignation of Lewis Cass.

#### REPRESENTATIVE IN CONGRESS.

John S. Chipman, elected in 1844.

## STATE SENATORS.

Calvin Britain, term of service, 1835 to 1837, inclusive; Vincent L. Bradford, 1838-39; Elijah Lacey, 1840-41; Joseph N. Chipman, 1845-46; Jerome B. Fitzgerald, 1847-48; Royal T. Twombly, elected in 1852; Rodney C. Paine, 1854; Alexander H. Morrison,\* 1856; Franklin Muzzy, 1858; Elijah Lacey, 1860; Rufus W. Landon, 1862; Warren Chapman, 1864, re-elected in 1866; Evan J. Bonine, 1868; Lorenzo P. Alexander, 1870; Levi Sparks, 1872; Francis H. Berriek, 1874; William Chamberlain, 1876, re-elected in 1878.

## REPRESENTATIVES IN THE LEGISLATURE OF MICHIGAN.

Cogswell K. Green, term of service 1835-36; Robert E. Ward, 1837; Elijah Lacey, 1838; Thomas Fitzgerald, 1839; James B. La Rue,\* 1840-41; Alonzo Bennett, 1842; Obed P. Lacey, Joseph G. Ames, 1843; John Grove, James Shaw, 1845; John Grove, 1846; Richard P. Barker, Calvin Britain, James Shaw, 1847; Jehial Enos, Andrew Murray, Albert R. Thompson, 1848; Andrew L. Burk, Henry Chamberlain, 1849; Calvin Britain, Samuel Street, Ezekiel C. Smith, 1850; Calvin Britain,\* John W. Butterfield, 1851; Harrison W. Griswold, Michael Hand, Benjamin Redding, elected in 1852; John D. Ross, James B. Sutherland, 1854; Hale E. Crosby, Jehial Enos, 1856; William B. Beeson, Dr. Morgan Enos, 1858; Lorenzo P. Alexander, Alexander H. Morrison,\* 1860; Nathan Fitch, John C. Miller, Henry C. Morton, 1862; Evan J. Bonine, James Graham, Newton R. Woodruff, 1864; Evan J. Bonine, Charles R. Brown, John M. Glavin, 1866; Emory M. Plimpton, Almond B. Ryford, Julian M. Seward, 1868; John F. Coulter, William J. Edwards, Almond B. Ryford, 1870; Evan J. Bonine, Thomas J. West, William Chamberlain, 1872; Ethan A. Brown, Thomas J. West, Calvin B. Potter, 1874; George F. Edwards, Nathaniel A. Hamilton,\* Silas Ireland, 1876; L. M. Ward, Alonzo Sherwood, Benton R. Stearns, 1878.

## CIRCUIT JUDGES.

Charles W. Whipple, Nathaniel Bacon, Worthy Putnam, Henry H. Coolidge.

## ASSOCIATE JUDGES.

Talman Wheeler, Amos S. Amsden, Thomas Fitzgerald, John M. Baker.

## JUDGES OF PROBATE.

Cogswell K. Green, 1831-33; Francis B. Murdock, 1833; Thomas Conger, 1834-36; Nathaniel Bacon, 1837-39; George Hoffman, elected in 1840; James Brown, 1844, re-elected, 1848; Thomas Fitzgerald, 1852; E. McIlvaine, to fill vacancy, 1855; B. F. Fish, 1856; Charles Jewett, 1860; William S. Merrill, 1864; Daniel Chapman, 1868, re-elected, 1872; Alexander B. Leeds, 1876.

## COUNTY JUDGES.

Daniel Olds, time of service, 1831-33; Charles Jewett, elected in 1846; Thomas Fitzgerald, 1850.

## SHERIFFS.

Augustus B. Newell, elected in 1831, re-elected in 1832; Fowler Preston, 1834; E. S. Chapman, 1836; A. B. Munger, 1838, re-elected in 1840; J. Wittenmyer, 1842, re-elected in 1844; O. R. Willard, 1846, re-elected in 1848; Thomas Comins, 1850, re-elected in 1852; Nathan Fitch, 1854, re-elected in 1856; James Graham, 1858, re-elected in 1860; Charles D. Nichols, 1862; Julius M. Seward, 1864, re-elected in 1866; Linus F. Warner, 1868, re-elected in 1870; Joseph W. Weimer, 1872, re-elected in 1874; Richard A. De Mont, 1876, re-elected in 1878.

## COUNTY CLERKS.

Titus B. Willard, elected in 1831; B. C. Hoyt, 1832; James Randles, 1834; Edwin Richardson, 1836; Alonzo Bennett, 1838, re-elected in 1840 and in 1842; Thomas Love, 1844, re-elected in 1846; E. McIlvaine, 1848, re-elected in 1850, re-elected in 1852; Wm. S. Merrill, 1854, re-elected in 1856, re-elected in 1858; Geo. H. Murdock, 1860; Daniel Terriere, 1862; Geo. H. Murdock, 1864, re-elected in 1866; Charles E. Howe, 1868, re-elected in 1870; D. E. Hinman, 1872, re-elected in 1874; Edwin D. Cook, 1876, re-elected in 1878.

\* Speaker *pro tempore*.

## REGISTERS OF DEEDS.

Obed P. Lacey, elected in 1831; Solomon E. Mason, 1832, re-elected in 1834; A. J. F. Phelan, 1836; Edwin Richardson, 1838, re-elected in 1840; Thomas Conger, 1842; F. D. Johnson, 1844; Charles F. Howe, 1846, re-elected in 1848, re-elected in 1850, re-elected in 1852; Warren Chapman, 1854, re-elected in 1856; Alexander B. Leeds, 1858, re-elected in 1862; Roscoe D. Dix,† 1864, re-elected in 1866, re-elected in 1868, re-elected in 1870, re-elected in 1872, re-elected in 1874; William H. Marston, 1876, re-elected, 1878.

## COUNTY TREASURERS.

Jacob Beeson, elected in 1832; B. C. Hoyt, 1834; R. C. Paine, 1836; William Lemon, 1838; Thomas Love, 1840; R. W. Landon, 1842, re-elected in 1844, 1846, 1848, 1850; Calvin Britain, 1852; Charles D. Nichols, 1854, re-elected in 1856; Thomas F. Glenn, 1858; B. F. Pennell, 1860, re-elected in 1862, 1864, 1866; Samuel Hess, 1868, re-elected in 1870, 1872; John Tate, 1874, re-elected in 1876; George W. Rough, 1878.

## PROSECUTING ATTORNEYS.

The prosecuting attorneys were appointed by the Governor until 1850, when the office was made elective.

Wm. H. Welch,‡ elected in 1832-33; Charles Jewett, 1836; John S. Chipman, 1839; James Brown, 1842, re-elected in 1844; J. N. Chipman, 1846, re-elected in 1848; Jerome B. Fitzgerald, 1849; John A. Thompson, 1850; Levi Taft, 1851; James Brown, 1852; David Bacon, 1854; E. M. Plympton, 1856; F. O. Rogers, 1858, re-elected in 1860; H. H. Coolidge, 1862; G. S. Chapp, 1864, re-elected in 1866 and 1868; O. W. Coolidge, 1870; N. A. Hamilton, 1872; Wm. A. Breese, 1874; Jacob J. Van Riper, 1876, re-elected in 1878.

## COUNTY COMMISSIONERS.

Erasmus Winslow, John F. Porter, Joseph G. Ames, elected in 1838; Austin Stocking, 1840; John Weaver, 1841; Timothy S. Smith, 1842.

## COUNTY SURVEYORS.

J. Wittenmyer, elected in 1836, re-elected in 1838; Jehial Enos, 1840, re-elected in 1842; A. B. Staples, 1844, re-elected in 1846; F. R. Pennell, 1848; James L. Parent, 1850, re-elected in 1852; Amos Grey, 1854; James L. Parent, 1856; Jehial Enos, 1858; Robert Eaton, 1860; Jubal H. Wheeler, 1862; Joseph S. Miller, 1864; O. D. Parsons, 1866; Joseph S. Miller, 1868; A. J. Nowlen, 1870; Thomas Love, 1874; John M. Glavin, 1876, re-elected in 1878.

## CORONERS.

Solomon E. Mason, elected in 1832; Darius Jennings, 1840; William Hammond, 1842; Horace Guernsey, 1844; William Bradford, 1846, re-elected in 1850; Samuel Stratton, 1855; John Enos, 1854; Geo. H. Scott, 1856; Ferdinand Vogel, 1858; Robert Brethschneider, 1860; Cass Chapman, 1862; Wm. H. Tryon, 1864; Wm. H. Tryon, Thomas F. Glenn, 1866, re-elected in 1868; Wm. H. Tryon, Joseph W. Brewer, 1870, re-elected in 1874; Rufus K. Charles, 1876, re-elected in 1878.

## MASTERS IN CHANCERY.

James Brown, John Grove, Thos. Conger, 1848; Ebenezer McIlvaine, 1849.

## CIRCUIT COURT COMMISSIONERS.

Hiram F. Matthews, appointed in 1850; Damon A. Winslow, elected in 1852, re-elected in 1854; Charles Jewett, 1856, re-elected in 1858; Charles R. Brown, 1860; Damon A. Winslow, 1862; Joseph N. Chipman, 1864, re-elected in 1866 and 1868; Joseph N. Chipman, Charles W. Ormsbee, 1870; E. M. Plimpton, N. A. Hamilton, 1872; Fred. H. Bacon, Wm. R. Lyon, 1873, re-elected in 1874; James A. Kellogg, James H. Canfield, 1875, re-elected

† The name of Dexter O. Dix appears in the record of the election returns in the clerk's office, in the record of votes by figures and where written out in full. But Roscoe D. Dix was the person voted for and to whom the certificate of election was issued.

‡ Evidence that Mr. Welch held the office of prosecuting attorney at that time is found in the following bill, now on file in the office of the supervisors, viz.:

"County of Berrien to W. H. Welch, Dr. to services as District Attorney for December Term, 1832, and Spring Term, 1833, \$15.00."

in 1876; James A. Kellogg, Lawrence C. Fyfe, 1877, re-elected in 1878; Wm. J. Gilbert, Lawrence C. Fyfe, 1879.

#### SUPERINTENDENTS OF SCHOOLS.

Henry A. Ford, elected in 1868, re-elected in 1870; E. L. Kingsland, 1872, re-elected in 1874.

#### COUNTY SOCIETIES.

##### BERRIEN COUNTY AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY.

The Agricultural Society of Berrien County was organized in the spring of 1850. The first meeting for the purpose was held, pursuant to a call of citizens, at the courthouse in the village of Berrien, on the 22d day of February of that year. A committee was appointed to draft a constitution and report the same at a meeting to be held on the 13th of March, at which meeting the constitution was read and adopted. At an adjourned meeting, May 4, 1850, officers of the society were elected, as follows: Benjamin C. Hoyt, President; William Smyth Palmer, Recording Secretary; Thomas Love, Treasurer; James L. Glenn, Corresponding Secretary; Joshua Feather, Peter Ruggles, Henry Lardner, Jehial Enos, and Joseph G. Ames, Executive Committee.

It was "resolved that the first county fair be held on the 19th of September next, at the village of Berrien Springs, and that the sum of one hundred dollars be appropriated for premiums and expenses." The fair of 1851 was held at Berrien Springs, that of 1852 at Niles, and, with the exception of the year 1868, the fairs of the society have been held at Niles since that time.

In 1857, the president and secretary were authorized to select a tract of land, not less than five acres, suitable for a fair-ground. In March, 1858, the president reported a piece of ground situated west of the cemetery, belonging to R. C. Paine, for the sum of \$725, and it was resolved to purchase it. A subscription was circulated among the citizens of Niles, for the purpose of raising funds, and the result is shown by the report for 1858, viz.:

" Amount on hand Jan. 1, 1858.....	\$367.65
Received of Berrien County.....	22.00
" from citizens of Niles toward purchasing and fitting up Fair-Grounds.....	725.00
" for membership, admission fees, and rent of dining saloon during Fair.....	501.86
Total receipts.....	\$1819.51

In this year (1858) the grounds were fenced, buildings erected, a track graded, and other necessary work performed. These grounds being found after two or three years to be too small, were sold, and no exhibitions were held until 1868. Afterwards a tract of 25 acres of land, in the south part of the town, was purchased of the Staples estate for \$2500, the deed for which is dated Dec. 31, 1867. A mortgage was afterwards given on the property for the purpose of building the necessary buildings. Exhibitions are now held annually.

The present membership of the society is: life members, 33; annual members, 138. The receipts of the annual fair in 1879 were \$1302.43.

The officers for 1880 are as follows: W. B. Davis, President; C. F. Howe, Vice-President; S. C. Thompson, Secretary; George S. Hoppin, Burns Helmick, H. A. Edwards, J. H. Young, James Badger, Directors.

##### NORTHERN BERRIEN COUNTY AND MICHIGAN LAKE-SHORE AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY.

The organization of this society is due to the exertions of Silas G. Antisdale, James F. Higbee, Dr. John Bell, and A. B. Chivois. Several meetings were held in the fall of 1877 and spring of 1878 before plans were perfected, and on the seventh day of March, 1878, a society was organized bearing the above name. The officers elected were: President, James F. Higbee. Vice-Presidents, S. L. Van Camp, Benton Harbor; Capt. B. F. Rounds, Benton Harbor; A. F. McKee, Watervliet. Secretary, O. S. Willey, Benton Harbor. Treasurer, Dr. John Bell, Benton Harbor. Trustees, A. B. Chivois, Benton Harbor; S. G. Antisdale, Benton Harbor; G. N. Lord, Benton Harbor; Marcus Osgood, Coloma; J. Caldwell, St. Joseph; Juan Guy, Bainbridge; J. Fisher, Sodus. Chief Marshal, S. G. Antisdale.

A tract of twenty acres of land on the southeast quarter of section 19 was leased of James F. Higbee for a term of five years, with the privilege of purchase. The grounds were inclosed with a high fence, a half-mile track was laid out and graded, and a building twenty by one hundred feet was erected for a grand stand. A judges' stand, sixteen feet square, and thirty-two box and twenty-five open stalls were built. These improvements were completed in time for a race on the 4th of July, 1878, which yielded to the society a profit of two hundred and fifty dollars.

After the July meeting additions were made of sixty by one hundred feet, to the grand stand, for a floral hall, and a general exhibition was held on the 24th, 25th, 26th, and 27th days of September, 1878. The receipts lacked but one hundred and thirty-seven dollars of paying the indebtedness of the society.

During the summer of 1879 a floral hall, forty by eighty feet, with a gallery extending on all sides of the building, was erected, and seventeen box-stalls were built. A successful exhibition was held on the grounds September 30th and October 1st, 2d, and 3d, 1879. The society is now in a vigorous and flourishing condition.

Officers for 1880: President, James F. Higbee; First Vice-President, S. G. Antisdale; Second Vice-President, J. F. Fisher; Third Vice-President, L. W. Pearl; Secretary, S. L. Van Camp; Treasurer, Dr. John Bell; Trustees, W. H. Baldwin, William Stewart, Samuel Hannon, Lewis Sutherland, Thomas Evans, R. Winaas, and E. W. King.

##### BERRIEN COUNTY POMONA GRANGE, No. 1.

This has the honor of being the first county grange in the State, having been organized June 11, 1875, with thirty-eight charter members. The officers elected were William Smyth Farmer, Master; William B. Davis, Overseer; William J. Nott, Lecturer; Burns Helmick, Steward; Freeman Franklin, Assistant Steward; Jacob Helmick, Chaplain; C. F. Howe, Treasurer; John S. Beers, Secretary; J. B. Metzgar, Gate-Keeper; Maggie Marrs, Pomona; Mary E. Haslett, Ceres; Georgiana Mason, Flora; Mrs. J. E. Lamb, Stewardess.

William Smyth Farmer remained Master from June till the following January, when Thomas Marrs was elected Master, and has since been elected annually to that posi-



tion until the present time. The grange at present numbers two hundred and seventeen members.

#### FARMERS' MUTUAL FIRE INSURANCE ASSOCIATION OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

This association was formed under act of the Legislature, approved Feb. 15, 1859, with the above name, and for the purpose of insuring against fire or lightning, farmers' dwellings, outhouses, and personal property, including hay, grain, and live-stock, also country churches and school-houses, in the counties of Berrien and Cass.

The articles of incorporation were signed Dec. 17, 1859, by the following-named persons: David P. Gerberich, John D. Hart, Michael Swobe, James Badger, Abraham Correll, Samuel Messenger, Samuel Thompson, Francis Wells, Michael Herkamer, A. P. Knox, Harvey Moore, George S. Hoppin, Mahlon B. Gillett, Reuben Groot, A. C. Mead.

The losses paid by the company in the year 1878 were, from two fires, \$2083.63; in 1879, from nine fires, \$5154; amount paid to officers in 1878, \$584.61; amount paid to officers in 1879, \$614. Number of policies in force Dec. 31, 1879, were 1229, covering \$1,867,464.

The total loss for the year 1879 is four-tenths of one per cent. of amount insured. The policies of the association are limited and cover a period of five years.

The officers for 1879 are as follows: James Badger, President; William Haslett, Secretary and Treasurer; Directors, William R. Rough, Charles F. Howe, Samuel Messenger, Orr Henderson, Burns Helmick, Samuel C. Thompson, C. C. Sutton, Thomas Marrs, of Berrien County, and James M. Truitt and Alexander Cooper, of Cass County.

#### PIONEER ASSOCIATION OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

On the 22d of September, 1875, pursuant to a published call, signed by Dr. L. A. Barnard and many others of the old settlers of the county, a meeting was held at Berrien Springs, "for the purpose of organizing an old settlers' association for Berrien County," to be composed of persons who had become residents of Michigan as early as the year 1850. The Hon. Levi Sparks was called to the chair, and D. A. Winslow and L. A. Barnard were made secretaries of the meeting.

A committee, appointed for the purpose, reported a constitution and by-laws, which were adopted, with the name "The Pioneer Association of Berrien County," and the organization was completed by the election of the following-named officers, viz.: President, Levi Sparks, of Niles township; Secretary, George H. Murdock, Berrien Springs; Treasurer, Lyman A. Barnard, Berrien Springs. Business Committee, A. L. Burke, of Berrien; Michael Hand, Berrien; Hale E. Crosby, New Buffalo; J. B. Sutherland, St. Joseph; E. J. Bonine, Niles City. Vice-Presidents, Peter Merrifield, of Watervliet; Sprague Bishop, of Hagar; Hiram Brown, of St. Joseph; James H. Higbee, of Benton; Francis Johnson, Bainbridge; Robert Cassaday, Pipestone; Josephus Fisher, Sodus; George H. Scott, Royalton; A. D. Brown, Lincoln; John H. Nixon, Lake; Joshua Feather, Oronoko; Thomas Marrs, Berrien; Thomas R. Marston, Niles; D. O. Woodruff, Niles; Charles F. Howe, Bertrand; Capt. A. C. Bartlett, Buchanan; Ebenezer P. Morley, Weesaw; Perry Noggle, Galien; Henry Chamber-

lain, Three Oaks; George Weimer, New Buffalo; John C. Miller, Chickaming.

The first annual meeting was held at the court-house at Berrien Springs, June 7, 1876. After transacting the routine business the meeting adjourned to Dr. L. A. Barnard's grove, where an address was delivered by D. A. Winslow, of St. Joseph; a poem was read by the Hon. Worthy Putnam; and brief accounts of pioneer life were related by Messrs. John Jenkins, Uzziel Putnam, Sr., R. T. Twombly, E. M. Plympton, Rev. J. W. Robinson, and Albert L. Drew.

At that time a piece of ground, owned by Dr. L. A. Barnard, was offered by him for the use of the association as a place of holding future meetings. The offer was accepted, and pioneer meetings have been held upon it until the present time. This ground is situated upon the high plateau which forms the bank of the St. Joseph River at Berrien Springs. It comprises about seven acres, mostly covered by a delightful grove, which has been cleared from underbrush, and beautified and improved by Dr. Barnard for the particular purpose to which it is devoted. The association has a lease of this ground for a term of eighteen years from 1876, and has erected upon it a commodious log cabin in the pioneer style, with speaker's stand, seats, and other necessary fixtures, and a basin, which is kept filled with clear water by means of a hydraulic ram. It is not only a beautiful place but a most appropriate one for the holding of pioneer reunions, and the meetings held here are regarded by those attending them as occasions of great interest and enjoyment.

Following is a list of the names and dates of settlement of those who have become members of the association from its organization until the present time, viz.:

Andrew L. Burke, 1850.	Thomas Love, 1854.
Michael Hand, 1850.	Daniel J. Claypool, March, 1832.
Geo. H. Murdock, 1850.	Hiram Brown, July 4, 1834.
Thomas Marrs, April, 1830.	Royal T. Twombly, April, 1836.
John G. Shurts, April, 1830.	John M. Platt, March, 1843.
Wm. Dougherty, April, 1830.	Otis Stearns, May, 1848.
John Tate, April, 1830.	James F. Higbee, June 7, 1837.
Thos. K. Clyborne, Nov. 1828.	L. P. Alexander, Oct. 1840.
Levi Sparks, Oct. 1828.	Tamour M. Winslow, Oct. 1840.
Maria Sparks, Sept. 1832.	Nellie S. Drew, Sept. 1838.
Jesse Helmick, Sept. 1835.	Asa W. Sherwood, Nov. 1834.
Ezra D. Chilson, June, 1835.	Reed Ferris, Aug. 1850.
A. Van Patten, Nov. 1844.	J. H. Jakeway, Sept. 1840.
H. S. Helmick, 1836.	Matilda Ireland, Oct. 1827.
A. G. Abbe, June, 1832.	John Irwin, March, 1842.
C. A. Hall, Oct. 1832.	Newton R. Woodruff, Aug. 1837.
Alonzo Sherwood, Feb. 1833.	J. S. Weaver, 1838.
Kingsley Olds, Dec. 1833.	James Badger, June, 1843.
C. P. Wray, Feb. 1830.	A. W. Marrs, April, 1830.
Joshua Feather, Jr., May, 1836.	D. C. Higbee, June, 1836.
Francis Johnson, April, 1834.	Wm. B. Davis, Sept. 1817.
Chas. H. Bostwick, Sept. 1817.	Wm. Hazlett, June, 1837.
Silas Ireland, Oct. 1839.	W. H. Breese, Nov. 1840.
W. B. Gilson, Aug. 1844.	C. D. Nichols, Sept. 1829.
John H. Nixon, May, 1836.	D. T. Wilson, May, 1829.
Damon A. Winslow, May, 1838.	Wm. H. Rector, July, 1835.
John DeFeld, Dec. 1842.	H. C. Morton, May, 1834.
Samuel Graham, Nov. 1846.	R. Babcock, June, 1828.
N. Hamilton, June, 1834.	— Griffin, April, 1828.
E. P. Morley, Sept. 1845.	James B. Sutherland, Nov. 1841.
L. A. Barnard, June, 1828.	Samuel Marrs, April, 1831.
C. S. Boughton, May, 1843.	Moses A. Sylvester, Sept. 1844.
Albert L. Drew, July, 1834.	Edwin F. Dickson, Oct. 1828.

B. F. Pennell, April, 1844.  
Augustus Kephart, Philip Kephart, Oct. 1841.  
James M. Platt, Oct. 1846.  
O. W. Rosse, Nov. 1842.  
Richard A. De Mont, May, 1841.  
J. L. Harkins, Jan. 1841.  
Wm. Smyth Farmer, Dec. 1848.  
Joseph Feather, May, 1832.  
Garrett Van Vranken, May, 1837.  
Emily Van Vranken, June, 1836.  
P. W. Guernsey, June, 1838.  
Ann Feather, May, 1832.  
Reuben A. Kibler, April, 1834.  
Susan Irwin, Aug. 1832.  
Rosanna Alexander, Sept. 1836.  
Mary Pennell, Oct. 1832.  
Eliza Brown, Sept. 1831.  
Isabella Platt, Aug. 1843.  
Rebecca Reynolds, Feb. 1830.  
Orrin D. Snow, 1838.  
Fanny Snow, 1838.  
E. M. Pennell, June, 1843.  
Elizabeth Pennell, Nov. 1834.  
Susie L. Dickson, 1837.  
Lucy Ann Brownell, Aug. 1829.  
P. J. Pierce, May, 1840.  
E. M. Scott, Nov. 1850.  
H. W. Guernsey, June, 1838.  
J. Cribbs, Feb. 1839.  
J. Mertzler, July, 1836.  
N. R. Woodruff, Aug. 1837.  
Wallace Taber, Sept. 1833.  
Julia Taber, 1836.  
Nelson Harper, Oct. 1835.  
Henry Chamberlain, Oct. 1843.  
Isaac French, Sept. 1856.  
I. F. Sorell, Oct. 1836.  
Minerva Sorell, Oct. 1836.  
Nathaniel Brant, Oct. 1836.  
Norman Nims, Dec. 1856.  
Joel Layman, Oct. 1837.  
Martha M. Brant, Oct. 1836.  
Mary Higbee, June, 1837.  
Robert Cassidy, July, 1831.  
James A. Kirk, Oct. 1835.  
Nathan Fitch, Nov. 1836.  
M. W. Jennings, April, 1855.  
Levi Logan, May, 1848.  
Jacob E. Miller, June, 1830.  
Sarah Miller, March, 1856.  
George Reynolds, May, 1855.  
John D. Miller, April, 1841.  
Mrs. C. R. Barnard, Feb. 1841.  
— Buckman, April, 1855.  
Charles F. Howe, Nov. 1835.  
John Byers, July, 1836.  
Sarah A. Byers, Dec. 1830.  
M. D. Burk, Sr., June, 1832.  
Michael Hess, Oct. 1855.  
Julia A. Hess, 1840.  
H. P. Keigley, May, 1851.  
C. C. Sutton, Sept. 1836.  
James W. Robinson, Oct. 1833.  
Minerva S. Robinson, 1835.  
Henry Worthington, Sept. 1837.  
Mary Worthington, 1832.  
Cynthia Sutton, March, 1835.  
Hugh Marrs, April, 1830.  
Adam Small, April, 1835.  
George Graham, Oct. 1842.  
William Chamberlain, Oct. 1843.  
Susan Kephart, May, 1843.  
E. M. Plimpton, Aug. 1848.  
John H. Royce, Dec. 1850.

Sophonra C. Royce, Nov. 1853.  
George H. Scott, May, 1837.  
Susan Barnard.  
Chauncey Smith, Sept. 1858.  
Mrs. Abigail Smith, Sept. 1858.  
Mrs. Mary Abaley, Sept. 1859.  
Fred. M. Phillips, April, 1833.  
Samuel Van Vlear, April, 1833.  
Oliver C. Spaulding, April, 1842.  
Roswell Enos, May, 1846.  
Charles H. Walker, Feb. 1835.  
Orlando Hart, 1831.  
Nancy Fisher, Sept. 1844.  
Joseph Fisher, Sept. 1844.  
Daniel Neidlinger, Oct. 1844.  
Royal J. Tuttle, Nov. 1857.  
Susan M. Tuttle, Nov. 1857.  
John C. Miller, Aug. 1835.  
Barbara A. Miller.  
Benjamin Keigley, July, 1834.  
Miles Davis, Oct. 1848.  
Mrs. Helen Saunders, 1837.  
Jerry Painter, 1844.  
John Reiden, Oct. 1835.  
Sidney Spencer, 1844.  
Samuel Simmons, 1832.  
Varna Simmons, 1832.  
Henderson Ballengee, Aug. 1833.  
M. C. Barnes, Aug. 1835.  
Mrs. Maggie J. Spaulding, 1854.  
Mary Rigger, 1832.  
Mrs. Harriet Marrs, 1831.  
B. D. Townsend, 1840.  
Darius J. Barber, 1842.  
Franklin Muzzy, 1846.  
James Farrell, 1845.  
James G. Portman, 1863.  
Jennie A. Portman, 1850.  
W. H. Miller, 1849.  
Mrs. Eva Miller, 1841.  
George F. Weidman, 1856.  
Louisa Weidman, 1856.  
Aaron Church, 1856.  
Jesse Gray, 1855.  
— Gray, 1842.  
Jacob Helmick, 1836.  
Mollie Helmick, 1860.  
W. L. Hogue, 1854.  
Maria Hogue, 1854.  
Josephus Fisher, 1854.  
Phebe A. Fisher, 1854.  
James Smith, 1832.  
Malvina Smith, 1832.  
Roscoe D. Dix, May, 1852.  
Virginia M. Dix.  
Henry Asharp, 1854.  
Elizabeth Asharp.  
Julia A. Hamilton, May, 1836.  
F. F. Clark, May, 1840.  
Celinda Clark, 1840.  
William Burns, May, 1836.  
Mary A. Burns, May, 1836.  
Mabala Mansfield, June, 1842.  
Joseph Mansfield, June, 1832.  
Germon C. Gilson, Sept. 1854.  
Charlotte Gilson, 1854.  
Maria Van Vlear, Oct. 1845.  
George Ewalt, May, 1836.  
Margaret Ewalt, 1836.  
Fleming Boon, Oct. 1848.  
Nicholas Michael, Oct. 1832.  
Samuel Spry, Feb. 1834.  
Elizabeth Michael, 1832.  
Mary R. Small, 1854.  
James Groat, Jan. 1838.

Lucinda Groat, Aug. 1835.  
Reuben M. Shafer, Aug. 1855.  
Rachel Shafer, Aug. 1835.  
Jacob Weaver, 1832.  
Orpha Weaver, 1848.  
Willie Foster, 1837.  
Caroline J. Hildreth, Sept. 1836.  
Abel Garr, Sept. 1832.  
Harriet Garr, Sept. 1836.  
C. C. Kent, Oct. 1840.  
Charles Evans, Nov. 1838.  
Mary Evans, 1847.  
Jacob F. Hahn.  
Mrs. G. Kirk.  
William Green, 1853.  
Cynthia Green, 1857.  
Isaac Smith, 1830.  
B. W. Sutherland, 1839.  
James Brooks, 1850.  
Charles A. Spencer, 1846.  
John Gillespie, 1834.  
Isaac Smoke.  
Godfrey Boil.  
George Boil.  
Samuel Messenger, 1844.  
Francis Bechtel, 1847.  
Richard McOmber, 1834.  
John Johnson, Jr.  
Moses Feather.  
Joseph Marrs.  
Francis Wells, 1831.  
George Smith, 1840.  
Juda Smith.  
Mrs. Amanda Weaver, 1831.  
Jacob Messenger, 1835.  
Thomas Ford, 1841.  
Eliza Ford.  
Mrs. James Brooks, 1853.  
Julia Ann Bechtel, 1854.  
Nelson H. Terry, 1859.  
Mrs. N. H. Terry, 1859.

The officers of the society for 1879 are as follows: President, William Chamberlain; Vice-Presidents, C. C. Kent, Henry Chamberlain, Nathaniel Hamilton; Treasurer, Dr. Lyman A. Barnard; Secretary, Charles D. Nichols; Executive Committee, Thomas Marrs, Ezra O. Wilson, Norman Nims, Aaron Van Patten, O. C. Spaulding.

#### YOUNG PEOPLE'S PICNIC ASSOCIATION OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

"The design of this association is to afford the young people a more favorable opportunity of becoming generally acquainted, and to cultivate a genial feeling towards each other, thereby enabling them to know the traits, character, and ability of those with whom they must some day act in discharging the duties of life and citizenship."

Pursuant to call (issued through circulars and the county press), the young people from all parts of the county met at Dr. Barnard's grove, at Berrien Springs, on Thursday, Aug. 9, 1877, for the purpose of organizing a "Young People's Association" of the county. George M. Valentine was called to the chair, and Gus M. Dudley\* was appointed secretary.

The committee, appointed for the purpose, reported a constitution, which was adopted. By the terms of the constitution, "every person under the age of thirty-five years is eligible to membership." The committee on permanent organization reported, and the following officers were declared elected, viz.: President, George M. Valentine, of Benton Harbor; Vice-Presidents, C. F. Sischo, Berrien Springs; Edward C. Griffin, Niles; Frank Plimpton, Buchanan; H. F. Heath, Benton Harbor; W. B. Plumb, St. Joseph; H. N. Chamberlain, Three Oaks; John A. Crosby, New Buffalo; M. D. Osgood, Coloma; Secretary, Gus M. Dudley, Berrien Springs; Treasurer, Charles A. Johnson, Niles.

The annual meetings are held on the first Wednesday in August in each year, at Dr. Barnard's grove.

At the meeting in 1878 about six thousand people were present. William Hurly, of Berrien Springs, was elected President, and Gus M. Dudley, of Berrien Springs, Secretary.

\*It is understood that Mr. Dudley was in a great degree the originator of the association.

The officers of the association for 1879 are: President, Henry N. Chamberlain, of Three Oaks; Secretary, Fremont D. Nichols, of Berrien Springs; Treasurer, Orin L. Churchill, of Three Oaks; Vice-Presidents, Gus M. Dudley, Oronoko; Charles Harter, Niles; James Hatfield, Three Oaks; C. M. Edick, Benton; George Morrison, Lincoln; John Thursby, Chickaming; John Crosby, New Buffalo; Clarence Tibbs, Pipestone; Joel H. Gillette, Bertrand; Asa Ham, Buchanan; William Hogue, Sodus; C. H. Wheelock, Lake; M. D. Osgood, Watervliet; C. W. Chambers, St. Joseph; Charles E. French, Oronoko; C. N. Valentine, Hagar; Asa Danforth, Royaltan; Merritt M. Wilson, Galien; William Henderson, Weesaw; Isaac Murphy, Berrien; Eugene Cribbs, Bainbridge.

## NILES HORSE-THIEF ASSOCIATION.

This association was organized on the first Saturday in May, 1853, with twenty-three members, and embraced originally the townships of Niles and Berrien. It was afterwards enlarged to include Bertrand, Buchanan, Pokagon, Howard, Jefferson, and Milton. The object of the society is the detection and apprehension of horse thieves.

The first officers were Daniel Fisher, President; Daniel McClung, Secretary; L. Harter, Treasurer; Joseph McClung, Foreman of Riders. The present officers are John H. Young, President; George Lambert, Vice-President; E. Walter, Secretary; E. P. Ely, Treasurer. The present number of members is 41.

The mode of proceeding is to use the telegraph and post-office instead of riders, as formerly, except by special order of the executive committee. Since the organization of the society only one animal has been stolen within its territory, and that one was recovered.

## THE RESERVE HORSE-THIEF DETECTIVES.

This association was organized in April, 1865, by the election of the following officers: President, James Badger; Treasurer, Samuel Messenger; Secretary, Ebenezer McIlvaine. Membership is confined to the city and township of Niles and the townships of Bertrand and Buchanan. Meetings are held once a year.

During the existence of the society two horses have been stolen in their jurisdiction: one was found, and the thief captured, tried, convicted, and sent to the penitentiary; the other was stolen from the fair-ground, in the evening, and was never found. Two-thirds of its value was paid to the owner by the association. The present membership is eighteen. The officers for 1880 are S. C. Thompson, President; Joel N. Gillette, Treasurer; Samuel Messenger, Secretary. There are five riders and three appraisers.

## LAKESIDE HORSE-THIEF ASSOCIATION, OF BERRIEN COUNTY.

This association was organized July 6, 1876, under the State law of 1859, at the brick school-house, district No. 1, Chickaming township, with twenty-eight charter members. The territory included in the range of the association comprises the townships of Chickaming, Galien, Lake, Lincoln, New Buffalo, Royaltan, St. Joseph, Three Oaks, and Weesaw. Its object is mutual protection, the maintenance of law and order, the prevention of thieving, and the detection and apprehension of horse-thieves in particular.

The first officers were John C. Miller, President; Aaron K. Clark, Vice-President; Charles H. Bostwick, Secretary; Richard M. Goodwin, Treasurer. Six riders were elected, and invested with the power of constables.

The following are the officers for 1879: President, Geo. A. Blakeslee; Vice-President, Alonzo Sherwood; Secretary, C. H. Bostwick; Treasurer, Richard M. Goodwin; Executive Committee, Orr Henderson, A. McDaniels, Wm. Chamberlain. The association now numbers two hundred and twelve members and twenty-one riders.

## CHAPTER XXV.

## CITY OF NILES.\*

Early Settlements—Early Public-Houses—Ferry and Bridges Across the St. Joseph River—Post-Office and Postmasters—Plats and Additions—Village Incorporation—City Organization—Union School—Religious Organizations—Cemeteries—Societies and Orders—Water-Works—Fire Department—Railroads—Gas Company—Insurance and Banking—Manufacturing Interests—The Niles Narrative.

THE cause that led to the selection of the site of the village (now the city) of Niles was the excellence of its water-power privileges; but prior to that time settlers had been attracted by the Carey Mission, and located near the river, east of the mission tract, for purposes of trade with the Indians. The route from Fort Wayne, Ind., was the only one in this section of country at that time, except the Indian trails, and along this rude thoroughfare came the advance-guard of the host that in a few years filled this part of the Territory. The first one who followed this track was Squire Thompson, from Union Co., Ind., who came late in the fall of 1822, before the mission buildings were completed. He spent a few days examining the country, and returned to Indiana. In the spring of 1823 he again came to the mission, and, after a few days' survey, made choice of a location, and built a cabin on the bank of the river. He cleared and planted several acres of land, and returned for his family, consisting of his wife and four children. They remained at the new home without neighbors during the winter, but early in the spring of 1824, William Kirk, an old acquaintance of his, emigrated from Indiana, and lived for a time in the cabin with Thompson. Afterwards he erected a cabin on the bank of the river, on section 26, where John Comley now lives, near the depot. He moved West after a few years. Squire Thompson remained on his first location until 1826, when he removed to Pokagon Prairie, and subsequently to California. His daughter Rachel was born in 1825.

During the summer of 1824, Baldwin Jenkins, from Ohio, visited Carey Mission, and selected a home on Pokagon Prairie, now in Cass County. He returned to Ohio, and in the following spring Benjamin Potter and Nathan Young came with him. They cleared land, planted corn, and remained. Benjamin Potter built a cabin and lived for a time on the bluff near Lacey's dam.

\* By Austin N. Hungerford.



John Lybrook, in the fall of 1824, came and worked at the mission, and for Mr. Thompson during the winter, and located where William B. Davis lives. He returned to Richmond in the spring, and persuaded others to go back with him. In company with John Johnson and Joel Yard, they set out on foot, carrying their packs containing clothes and provisions. John Johnson settled on section 29, in Berrien township, and cleared several acres of land and planted it to corn. The family remained at this place, and David Johnson, a son, assisted in scoring the timber for Mr. Ford's dam in 1827-28. John Johnson was a shoemaker, and was employed as such at the mission. The family were also employed to take provisions to the mission on Grand River. The sons of Mr. Johnson are living in this section of country. Joel Yard settled on La Grange Prairie.

In the fall of 1824, John Johnson, Sr., came and settled on the Berrien road, on section 15, in this township. During the years 1825-26, emigrants were settling on the Pokagon prairie, attracted thither by the fertility of the soil.

In the latter part of 1827, Eli Ford emigrated from Ohio, and as the only mill in that region of country was the horse-power mill used at the mission, he determined to utilize the water in the Dowagiac Creek. Finding a suitable location, and getting the assistance of the neighbors in money and labor, he commenced building a dam upon the Dowagiac Creek, at the place now occupied by the "Cascade Mills" of Badger & Barnard.

Garrett Shuerts emigrated in the spring or summer of 1828, and located on section 25, where M. B. Randall lives, and soon after his brothers, Isaac and Samuel, came in and lived with him for a time. Isaac lived in a cabin on the bank of the river near the gas-house. Samuel lived on the east side of the creek from Dodge's machine-shop.

In the spring of 1828, Eli Bunnell and Abram Tietfort emigrated from Ohio, located in what is now Niles, and built cabins. They sold soon after to Walling & Lacey.

During the summer of 1827, Ephraim and Elijah Lacey, Samuel B. Walling, Isaac Gray, William Justus, and A. Thornberry came on a tour of discovery, to find a location affording good water-power and advantages for founding a settlement. They followed the St. Joseph River, and on arriving at Elkhart found that the water-power at that place was occupied, and they kept on down the river until they arrived at the Dowagiac Creek. After an examination they decided to locate at this place. The land in this region on the east side of the river had been ceded to the United States at Chicago in 1821, but was not surveyed and ready for sale until 1829. In October, 1828, Obed P. Lacey, Samuel B. Walling, and William Justus, with the families of the latter two, came to Niles. Walling bought the double log cabin of Eli P. Bunnell, and moved into it with the stock of goods which they had brought with them. William Justus built a double log cabin on the north side of Main Street, near the river, about where Davis' auction rooms now are. Mr. Justus was a carpenter. The first town election was held at his house, in 1829. He lived here several years, and finally moved to Rolling Prairie.

In October, 1828, the books of the first mercantile business in Niles were opened, as follows:

"St. Joseph, Michigan Territory, Oct. 27, 1828.

"The firm of Walling & Lacey."

The first entry was

"S. B. Walling,

"To 1 pr. of Shoes, \$1.75."

The customers whose names appear on these books during the remainder of the year 1828 are as follows: Isaac Shuerts, Samuel Shuerts, Garrett Shuerts, Thomas Thomas, William Justus, Elias Holloway, Cavener Lawrence, William Emmons, William Kirk, Joseph Cruissman, Abram Tietfort, Jr., Wm. Huff,\* John Lybrook, Jacob R. Clawson, Francis Barker, William Wright, and Joseph Simerwell, the last named being the person in charge of the Carey Mission.

In the following year the books of the firm commenced with the heading, "Pog-wa-tigue, Jan. 1, 1829," and the customers to August 1st of that year were Abram Tietfort, Abram Lowks, Thomas Burk, Reef Snodgrass, Antoine Antille, Chester D. Ball, Jacob Inglewright, Thomas Edwards, Joseph Bay, Mr. Adams, Levi Tietfort, Alexis Provencilli, James Kavanagh, Miss Lybrook, Fred Garver, John Johnson, Thomas Kirk, Dr. James M. Martin, Joseph Bertrand, Ezra Beardsley, Eli Bunnell, James Gardner, George Crawford, Sear Adams, John Ritter, Henry Lybrook, Isaac W. Dackett. July 13, 1829, Col. Alamanson Huston purchased a stock of goods to the amount of \$31.52, such as is usually found in a peddler's stock. Alexis Coquillard and Daniel Wilson appear July 29, 1829. Thomas K. Green's name appears in October, 1829; Morgan Wilson, in May, 1830; Benoni Finch, T. Denniston, Titus B. Willard, and Dr. E. Winslow, in June, 1831.

Isaac Gray, a native of Ireland, emigrated to this country and settled in Virginia, and, with Justus and the Laceys, moved to Richmond, Ind. In the fall of 1828 he moved with his family to this place, and lived with Samuel Shuerts in his cabin, on the east side of the creek from Dodge's machine-shop, until his own dwelling could be finished. This was a double house, two stories high, built of hewn logs. In one side the family lived, in the other the store was kept. The family moved in on Dec. 31, 1828. The mails were distributed from Walling & Lacey's store, Mr. Obed P. Lacey acting as postmaster. Early in 1830, Mr. Gray was appointed postmaster. While on a trip to Detroit, in October of that year, he contracted an illness which resulted in his death. Samuel B. Walling died in the same year, and prior to the death of Mr. Gray. They were buried in the cemetery in the rear of the Presbyterian church, where Ephraim Lacey, the father of Elijah, David, and Obed P. Lacey, was buried about 1835. The remains of Mr. Gray were afterwards removed to the City Cemetery. Mrs. Gray, after the death of her husband, returned to Richmond, Ind., where she lived about a year, and then the family returned to Niles. Miss Margaret Gray, a daughter, afterwards married Rufus W. Landon, and William B. Gray is still living at Niles, having served the city at different times as supervisor and recorder.

Ephraim Lacey, and his sons Elijah and David and daughter Asenath, removed to this place in April, 1829.

\* Hotel-keeper at St. Joseph.

They soon built a log house near Dowagiac Creek, a short distance above the bridge.

The lands in this vicinity were thrown upon the market in 1829, the land-office then being at Monroe.

Samuel B. Walling, as agent of the Laceys, purchased 190 acres of land, including the water-power now owned by Badger & Barnard and the land along the Dowagiac Creek, about half a mile above the present dam. He also purchased, as agent for Mr. Justus, the land upon which the business portion of Niles now stands. Justus deeded all that portion of land lying south of Main Street to Elijah Lacey, and Aug. 1, 1829, a village plat was laid out by William Justus, S. B. Walling, and Ephraim and Elijah Lacey. The lots of Mr. Justus were on the north side of Main Street, and Walling's and Lacey's on the south side. Additions were made from time to time to this plat as the village increased. Obed P. Lacey was for several years town clerk and supervisor, and member of the Legislature in 1843. He was active in every movement that tended to advance the interest of the community, and died in 1844. He left a widow and two daughters. Mrs. Lacey afterwards married Thomas Fitzgerald, and one of the daughters married T. G. Wickham. They still live in the city. Elijah Lacey was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1835, member of the Senate in 1840-41 and 1861, and died in 1862. Of his children, Solon and Granville are engaged in the coopering business; David and W. K. Lacey are owners of the Volant and Dakota Mills, in Niles.

Eber Griswold and Rowland Clark came from Lockport, N. Y., in the fall of 1830. Mr. Clark settled on section 23, where Mrs. Brethschneider now lives. Mr. Griswold built a log house on Sycamore Street, in rear of the hardware-store of G. W. Platt. They sent a team back to Detroit after their families, who arrived about the 1st of November, having been eight days on the road.

Mr. Griswold started the first bakery, on the west side of Front Street next below the Woodruff store. Mrs. Crocker, a daughter, and Edward Griswold, a son, are still living in Niles.

In 1829, David and Daniel Wilson, with their father, emigrated from Ohio to Niles, and lived first in a log cabin on the farm afterwards sold to Rowland Clark. The next spring they went up the river and started a tannery that was kept up for several years. David married Malvina Huston in 1835, and after her death moved to Chicago. Daniel soon moved to St. Joseph, and was captain of the "Matilda Barney" on her first trip on the river, in 1833. He afterwards removed to Calumet, Ill. It is stated by Wm. B. Gray, who came in 1829, that when the settlers began to cluster about this place, Joseph Bertrand, Jr., and Job Brookfield lived south of where the dam property now is, on the east side of the river, in a double log house, with several cabins or outhouses, a barn with a thatched roof, under the hill, and half a dozen old apple-trees about 15 inches in diameter on the place. These families cultivated the flat west of the road. Bertrand was the son of Joseph Bertrand, the old Indian trader, and Madeleine (Borasseau), a *Pottawattamie* woman, and was born at Parc aux Vaches, the old trading-post established by his father. The sup-

posed site of the old Catholic mission and "Fort Oola" were near the place where Bertrand, Jr., and Brookfield lived, and were said to have been located on the bluff. Careful research, however, fails to give any proof of the existence of a fort here at any time.

Morgan Wilson emigrated from North Carolina to Ohio, thence to Indiana, and in 1829 still farther West, to Niles, accompanied by his wife and five children. He bought a lot on the river bank, below Main Street. He was a tanner by trade, and in the spring of 1830 erected a tannery, with 10 or 12 vats, about half a mile below his house. John Marks, a colored man, had for a year or two lived here at this place, and tanned deer-skins. After Mr. Wilson came he worked with him six or eight years, then moved to Valparaiso, Ind. Mr. Wilson continued at this place until about 1843, when he retired from active business. His daughter, who married Charles Bond, is still living in Niles. A son, Joseph M., lives in Buchanan township.

Thomas Denniston emigrated from Preble Co., Ohio, in the fall of 1830, when about twenty-seven years of age, with his wife and four children. He bought a lot on which he built a board shanty, where he lived for three weeks, until his log house was completed. He still lives on the spot he first selected forty-nine years ago. He is a carpenter and cabinet-maker by trade, and built a log shop on Front Street, where he manufactured furniture. His wife, Mrs. Sarah Denniston, was one of the members of the first class formed here by the Methodists, in 1832. He joined the church a year or two after, having been converted at a camp-meeting. He was a trustee of the village at one time.

Col. Alamanson Huston came from Madison Co., N. Y., to this State in 1828. He traded with the Indians, and sold goods from Detroit to Chicago. He stopped for a short time at Beardsley's Prairie, afterwards Edwardsburg. At that time Beardsley kept a tavern there. In May, 1829, he came to Niles and bought of William Justus a log house that stood on the north side of Main Street, near the river, and near the house of Isaac Gray. This log cabin was soon fitted up for a tavern, and in the summer following a frame addition was erected and used as a bar-room. Here the first court was ordered to be held in Berrien County. Mr. Huston, the year he came in, commenced running a stage to Detroit. He was appointed colonel of militia, and was prominent in the Sauk war of 1832. He afterwards removed to Texas.

In the fall of 1830, Mr. Huston's father and mother and his brothers Thomas and Robert, with five sisters, journeyed from Madison County to Niles, with a team, covered wagon, and household goods, arriving at Col. Huston's tavern on Sunday morning, September 30th, having been thirty days on the road. Edwin and Angelina, a brother and sister, left Madison County soon afterwards, came up the Erie Canal to Buffalo, thence to Detroit, and from that place came through on their brother's stage, arriving a few days before the party in the wagon. Two sisters remained in Madison County, but they came to Niles in 1832.

The family lived at the tavern during the winter, and in the spring of 1831 built a log house on the site of the brick block now occupied as a marble-shop and meat-market. There they lived many years. In 1835, Thomas Huston

had charge of the ferry across the river, and ran it until the new bridge was completed. Malvina Huston, a sister of Alamanson and Thomas, taught school in May, 1832, and afterwards married David Wilson, who was a tanner, and lived above the village. Angelina married Mr. Evarts. She is now living in Niles with Mr. David H. Freed. Thomas Huston is still living in Niles, on the west side.

Joshua Comley emigrated with his family from Ohio in 1832, and lived near the Ford mill, in which he worked as miller. He moved soon after to near Lacey's mill. His wife was one of the first members of the Methodist class which was formed at their house. Mrs. A. La Pierre is his daughter. John Comley, a son, lives in the north part of the village.

John Meek and family emigrated from Indiana in 1832, and settled a short distance northeast from Niles. His son, Richard E. Meek, became a Methodist minister, and preached in this vicinity a number of years. He subsequently removed to Missouri.

Hiram Chilson came to this place from Ohio, in December, 1829, and built the house known as the "Council House." Col. Daniel Olds, from the same place, and an acquaintance of Mr. Chilson, came in 1830, and purchased an interest in the tavern. He was for several years connected with the hotel interests of Niles. Mr. Chilson is living near the city with Mr. George Babcock.

Capt. Thomas K. Green was an active citizen of the village in 1829, and in 1832 was a justice of the peace. He emigrated from New Hampshire, and built a store and afterwards a residence that eventually became the "Old Diggins." His son, Cogswell K. Green, was a lawyer, and prominent in this section. He was a member of the Legislature at the first session, in 1836. He married Nancy, the daughter of Col. Joshua Howard, of Dearborn. After the death of his wife he removed to New Hampshire, where he still lives.

Titus B. Willard came to Niles in 1830, and built a double log house where Fowler's store now stands. He was one of the tavern-keepers of the early day, was justice of the peace in 1834, and member of the Constitutional Convention in 1835.

Benjamin, Moses, and Charles Finch emigrated from the East about 1830. Moses built a saw-mill at the mouth of Bertrand Creek in 1830, and Benjamin and Moses started the ferry in 1831. Charles commenced the "Pavilion" in 1831. Job Brookfield was here at this time, and was interested in the Pavilion and the ferry.

Jacob Beeson emigrated from Pennsylvania in the winter of 1829 to St. Joseph, where he opened a small store, but soon afterwards came to Niles, where he moved into a part of the tavern of Col. Huston. He sold his goods rapidly, and enlarged his stock. His brother Job came in the fall of 1830, and in 1833 commenced a forwarding and commission business, in a warehouse erected by Jacob and William Beeson. He remained in business until his death, in 1837. Jacob was engaged in the warehouse, and owned large tracts of land. He dealt largely in pork, and in 1858 erected a large store. In 1859 he sold his interest at this place and removed to Detroit, where he engaged in banking. In 1865 he purchased 113 acres on the bank of the

river at Niles, and built a fine residence. Upon the building of the dam the Water-Power Company purchased the farm, and he again returned to Detroit.

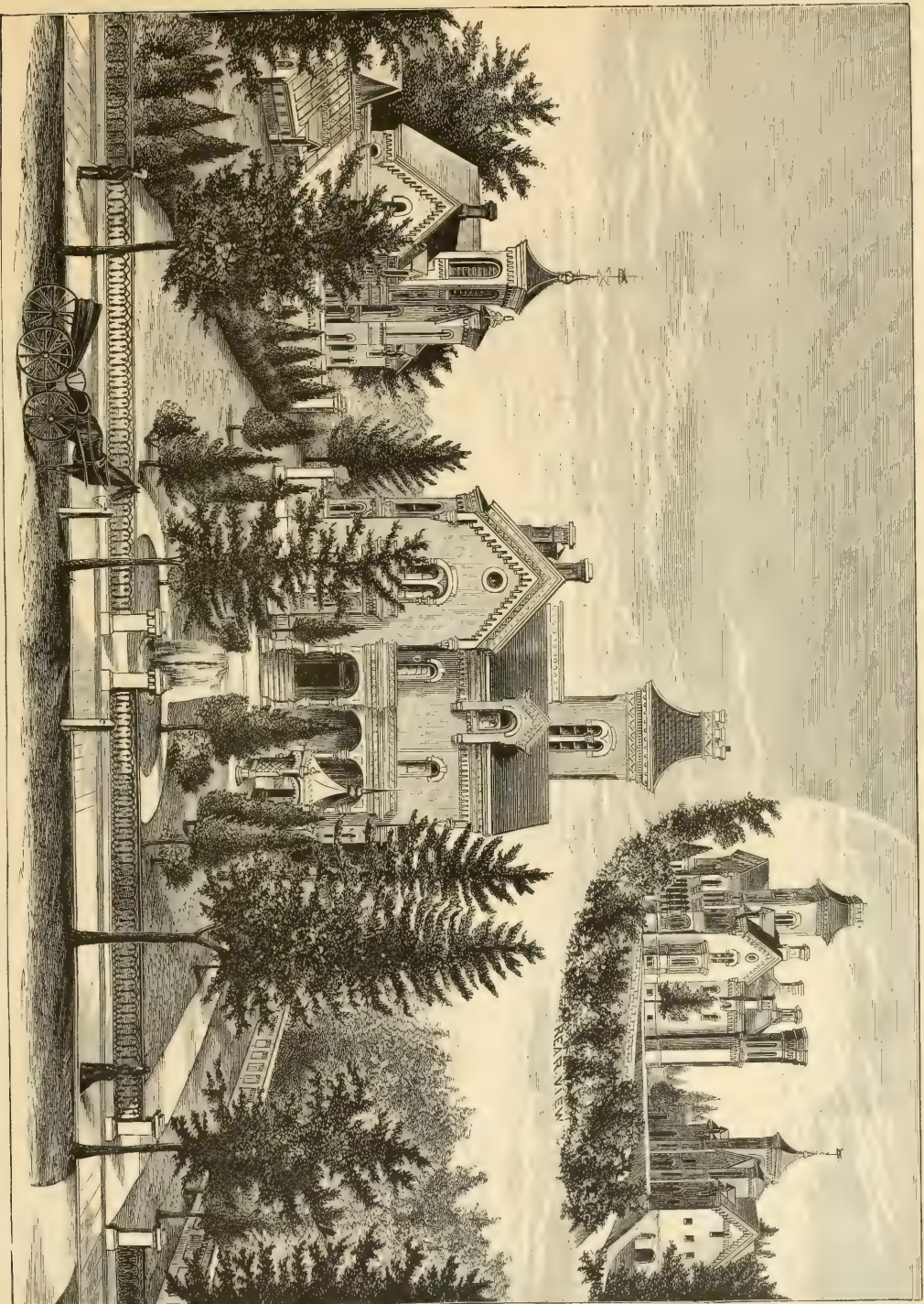
William B. Beeson arrived at Niles in 1831, and united with Dr. E. Winslow in the practice of medicine. He afterwards went into partnership with his brother Jacob, in the mercantile business, and remained until 1849, when he sold to Jacob and went to California. In 1853 he returned and bought out the stock of Bacon Wheeler, and continued in business at that place until his death, in 1872. Strother Beeson, a brother of Jacob and William, came here about 1835, and practiced law until his death, in December, 1878.

In the spring of 1831, George W. Hoffman brought a stock of goods from New York to St. Joseph, where they were landed early in June. He had heard of the business advantages of White Pigeon, and that was his destination. After reaching St. Joseph he remained there for a time studying the advantages of different localities. On the 2d of July, 1832, in company with Jacob Beeson and one or two others, he came to Niles on foot through the woods, following a blazed path. On the 3d of July he took the stage and went to White Pigeon, from which place he returned to St. Joseph, having decided to locate in Niles. A few weeks later he was joined by his brother, Henry B. Hoffman, who was living in Mackinac, where he had a store. They removed their goods to Niles, and bought of George Fosdick the corner where Mr. Beeson afterwards built the brick store. In the vicinity they purchased property known as Hoffman's addition to Niles. Henry B. Hoffman remained in Niles until 1853, when he removed to Davenport, Iowa, where he still resides. George W. Hoffman removed to Detroit in 1857, having lived in Niles twenty five years. He was a volunteer in the Black Hawk war, and moved with the troops to Chicago, where they remained until the arrival of the regulars under Maj. Whistler. These were soon followed by troops under Gen. Scott, who brought the cholera with them, which was more dreaded than the Indians. Mr. Hoffman is still living at Detroit.

Maj. William Hoffman, father of George W. and Henry B., participated in the Florida war as major of the 6th United States Infantry. In 1839 he came to Niles on a six months' leave of absence, and his family lived at Niles at different times while he was in Florida and in Mexico. He died at Corpus Christi. At the time of his death he was lieutenant-colonel of the 7th United States Infantry, previously commanded by Col. Zachary Taylor. The youngest son, Satterlee, was in the army, and was killed at Churubusco, Mexico, while serving under Gen. Scott. Lieutenant-Col. William Hoffman, his wife, and Satterlee, the son, who was killed in Mexico, are all buried in the Silver Brook Cemetery at Niles.

John G. Bond, a native of Keene, N. H., commenced active life as a merchant at that place, but removed to Rochester, N. Y., in 1815, and was one of the founders of Lockport. While residing there he was appointed one of the judges of Niagara County. In July, 1834, he emigrated to Niles, with his family, where his sons, George N. and Henry, bought property that is known as Bond's addition to Niles.





RESIDENCE OF MAJOR W. S. MILLARD, NILES, BERRIEN CO., MICHIGAN.



Rufus W. Landon came to Niles in 1834, and was employed as a clerk in the warehouse of Wheeler & Porter, who were carrying on an extensive business. In 1838 he was appointed postmaster, having previously acted as deputy. He married Margaret, daughter of Isaac Gray. In 1842 he was elected county treasurer of Berrien County, and held the position till 1852. He represented this district as senator in 1863, and has served as mayor of the city four terms.

James L. Glenn came from Philadelphia, Pa., to Niles in 1835, and bought a farm about three miles north, and another on Beardsley Prairie twelve miles southeast. He lived at the latter place twelve years. He was sheriff of Cass County and member of the Legislature. He was by profession a civil engineer, and in 1847 surveyed and laid out the city of Lansing, and in 1852 was appointed assistant superintendent of the Sault Ste. Marie Canal. Upon the death of the superintendent he succeeded to that position, and retained it about three years, at the end of which time he returned to Niles. In 1858 he laid out the cemeteries at Ann Arbor and Ypsilanti. He built the Episcopal church in Niles, and, with Mr. Paine, was vestryman of that church for several years. He died in 1875.

Dr. Erasmus Winslow emigrated to Niles in the spring of 1831, and commenced practice. He went into partnership with William B. Beeson, who soon retired from the practice of his profession. He remained here until about 1840, when he removed to Peoria, Ill., and died there.

Dr. James Lewis emigrated from Vermont to Palmyra, N. Y., where he studied medicine. He then practiced twelve years at Henrietta, Monroe Co., N. Y., and in 1835, at the age of forty-one years, came to Niles and purchased of Hiram Chilson, for \$800, a lot, occupied at that time by a small frame building on the northeast corner. The front of this building he used for a drug-store, the rear for his residence. A blacksmith-shop, kept by Mr. I. Showdy, stood on the corner of Main and Second Streets. The lot which he purchased of Chilson is the same on which his residence and the Arcade building now stand. In 1839 the Arcade building was erected, of brick made from the Rood Swamp. The next year he sold his drug-store to J. C. Larimore, and in 1846 again opened a drug-store in the Arcade, and continued until 1857, since which time he has retired from active business. He was elected president of the village March 28, 1838, and resigned in May of that year.

Rodney C. Paine, born in New Milford, Litchfield Co., Conn., in 1806, removed with his parents to Auburn, N. Y. When about seventeen years of age he left home and passed several years in Auburn, Utica, and Albany, and when about thirty years of age removed from the latter city to Michigan, and in 1836 came to St. Joseph, where he was placed in charge of the branch of the Farmers' and Mechanics' Bank. In 1842 he removed to Niles, where he established an agency of that bank. He afterwards continued a private bank until his death, which occurred in 1862. He was interested in the Episcopal Church in Niles, and one of its vestrymen. He represented the district as State Senator in 1855. He was treasurer of the county in 1836, and was interested in every work that

tended to build up the city. He was director of the Union School when the union building was erected. In 1836 he married Miss Mary Wells, of Utica, sister of Mrs. Professor Douglas, of Ann Arbor. He had ten children, but two of whom are living, viz., John W. Paine, who lives at Niles, and Frederick W. Paine, cashier of the firm of Simmons & Fletcher, of Grand Rapids.

Stillman Richardson was born in Nelson, Cheshire Co., N. H., in 1805. While yet a lad his parents removed to near Boston, in which city his boyhood was spent. Afterwards the family removed to Cortland Co., N. Y., where he completed his education and studied medicine. In May, 1835, he married, and in 1836 removed to Niles, where he at once commenced practice. "He possessed a solid but by no means polished education, with a crisp, brusque form of speech, a contemptuous disregard of unmeaning compliments; scorning to receive as well as bestow flattery, he fought his way steadily onward and upward until ere long he had become, by common consent of both the profession and the community, the foremost practitioner of this region." This is the language of an obituary notice published soon after his death, which occurred at Niles, in March, 1875. Dr. Richardson was opposed to all shams in society, church, or politics. With no political aspirations, he was an earnest politician. An ardent friend of temperance, he was sometimes extreme in his language and measures, denouncing friend and foe alike if they opposed a principle of which he was the champion. This made him many enemies among those who admired his pluck and ability, and prevented his taking his place as a leader among men.

Moses Davis, when about 20 years of age, came from Lafayette, Ind., on foot and alone, and reached Niles in August, 1834. He stopped a short time with a farmer, about a mile north on a cross-road. In the fall of that year he came into the village and commenced the manufacture of pumps, which he continued till about 1873. The first job he did after he located in the village was boring the columns that were being erected in front of Jacob Beeson's residence, now Mr. Reinhart's. Mr. Davis has lived in Niles to the present time, and resides on the west side of the river. His son, M. E. Davis, is a heavy manufacturer of straw goods in Toledo.

Alfred Johnson emigrated from Vermont in June, 1834. He came on foot to Niles, and commenced work with Jacob and Job Beeson in their store. He remained here about three years, and was elected a trustee in March, 1838. He is now living in Niles, where his son, Charles A., is cashier of the First National Bank.

Charles Jewett, with his wife, emigrated from Vermont to Niles in 1836. At that time there were but three persons located on the west side of the river, viz.: David Vanderhoof, about four and one-half miles on the Chicago road; Samuel Street, one mile and three-quarters west on the same road; and a Mr. Ogden, about three-quarters of a mile out from the village. Mr. Jewett was admitted to the bar at Cassopolis (having studied law at Middlebury, Vt.), and opened an office on Front Street, in a building now owned by E. J. Sampson. He afterwards removed to the Arcade building, which he occupied for sixteen years. He was appointed prosecuting attorney in 1837, was elected



county judge in 1848, and was justice of the peace from 1841 to 1849. He is still living. Erwin S., a son, is ticket and freight agent of the Missouri Pacific, at Kansas City. Edward S., another son, is a farmer at Emporia, Kansas.

Nathaniel Bacon, a native of Saratoga Co., N. Y., and a graduate of Union College, New York, emigrated in 1833 to this place and engaged actively in his profession. In 1855 he was elected judge of the second judicial circuit, to fill a vacancy; in 1857 was elected for the full term of six years; in 1866 was elected to fill a vacancy; and in 1869 was elected for the full term of six years. He died July 9, 1869, at the age of sixty-seven years.

Dr. Talman Wheeler, Lucius Hoyt, and Nelson Loudon came to Niles in 1832. Dr. Wheeler built the first warehouse, at the foot of Sycamore Street, on the bank of the river. Mr. B. C. Hoyt was interested in the warehouse and commission business, and during the same year Nelson Loudon built the first foundry, between Front and Water Streets, on Sycamore Street. Mr. Loudon afterwards kept the Pavilion.

James C. Larimore emigrated from Steubenville, Ohio, in 1834, with his wife and two children, and bought the dry-goods store of Alex. J. McDowell, near the "Old Diggin's." He soon erected a building on the southwest corner of Main and Front Street, where he continued in business until 1838, when he purchased the drug-store of Dr. James Lewis, and removed the store below his present one. In 1840 he purchased the present corner, and the store was kept in the old building until 1859. The present block was erected in 1860. Mr. Larimore was postmaster from 1840-44. He has been connected with the banking business in Niles since 1870, when he was chosen vice-president of the First National Bank, and in October, 1871, was chosen president of the Citizens' National Bank, which position he still holds. He was chosen ruling elder of the Presbyterian Church in 1855, and has filled that office to the present time.

Vincent L. Bradford emigrated from Philadelphia in 1835. He was a thorough scholar, and had a profound knowledge of the law. He immediately took rank as the foremost lawyer in the western part of the State, and practiced law in Niles till 1843. He then returned to Philadelphia, where he still lives, and stands at the head of the bar in that city. He was a member of the Senate in this State at the third session of that body, in 1838-39.

Maj. William Graves came to Niles from Detroit June 19, 1835, in charge of two hundred miles of Overton & Co.'s stage line. He was Secretary of State of Michigan in 1853-54, and was the first general superintendent of two thousand miles of the Overland Stage Company, from a point on the Missouri Pacific to California, in 1859. He was general agent at Chicago of the Michigan Southern and Northern Indiana Railroad in 1854, and is now city treasurer of Niles. His son, Col. Frank Graves, was in command of the 8th Michigan Cavalry, with Gen. T. W. Sherman in the South Carolina expedition, and was killed at the battle of the Wilderness, May 6, 1864. His daughter married Gen. Henry A. Morrow, who is now in command of the 21st United States Infantry, and stationed

at Fort Vancouver, W. T. He was judge of Recorder's Court at Detroit; he raised the 24th Michigan Volunteers in thirty days, and commanded that regiment during its term of service.

Dr. J. W. Finley emigrated to Niles, with his wife and two children, in 1835, and commenced the practice of medicine, having previously practiced five years in Chillicothe and filled the chair of chemistry and natural history in Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pa., from 1828 to 1830. He built the house on the corner of Third and Sycamore Streets, now occupied by Dr. A. J. Mead, where he lived twenty years. In 1855 he removed to Pittsburgh, on account of the ill-health of his wife. Under the direction of the United States Sanitary Commission, he was in the army three years, and in 1864 he returned to Niles and resumed practice. He purchased "Oak-Openings," a place of about five acres, where he still lives. In 1870 he opened a drug-store in this city. He has three children living, viz.: S. M. Finley, who is with him in the drug-store; Theodore Finley, editor of the *Colorado Independent*, at Alamo, Col.; and a daughter, living at home.

Thomas Fitzgerald, a native of Herkimer Co., N. Y., emigrated to Indiana; was a member of the Legislature of that State in 1828, and in 1832 was appointed keeper of the lighthouse at the mouth of the St. Joseph River, where he removed with his family in June of that year. He was appointed regent of the university in 1837, bank commissioner in 1838, and was appointed United States senator, to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Gen. Cass, in 1848. After the death of his first wife he married Mrs. Lucy Lacey, widow of Obed P. Lacey, of Niles. Upon his retirement from public life he removed to Niles, and lived there until his death, which occurred in 1855, at the age of fifty-nine years. He was probate judge of Berrien County at the time of his death. He had four children by his first wife; one only survives,—Rodney Fitzgerald, a lawyer, living at Muscatine, Iowa. Jerome B. Fitzgerald, a son, was a lawyer at Niles for several years.

William G. Ferson, a native of Massachusetts, emigrated to Niles in October, 1836. In the spring of 1837 he went to New York and purchased goods, which he sold to merchants in Niles. In 1838 he went into partnership with Bacon Wheeler, on the corner of Main and Second Streets. Mr. Ferson was connected with the business interests of Niles until 1870, and is now living in the city.

#### EARLY TAVERNS.

Col. Alamanson Huston, who came to Niles in 1829, bought a log house of Mr. Justus, near where Mr. Gray lived, on the north side of Main Street, and this he soon fitted up for a tavern. In the spring of 1830 a frame addition was built on, and on the 4th of July of that year the patriotic citizens gathered in front of the tavern and erected a liberty-pole. The Declaration of Independence was read by Col. Edwards, of Edwardsburg, and dinner was served in the open air near the tavern. This tavern was kept by Col. Huston till after the Sauk war, in 1832. The building was afterwards bought by Talman Wheeler, and used as a store and dwelling.

In 1830, Hiram Chilson built a frame house on the ground

now occupied by George W. Platt's stores, between Front and Second Streets. After its erection Col. Daniel Olds bought a half-interest in the building, and it was kept as a tavern by Titus B. Willard, in 1833, and afterwards by Col. Daniel Olds, and in 1836 was opened as a dry-goods, grocery-, and hardware-store by Symmes & Colton, afterwards as a saloon by one Wolcott, and it was then sold to Mr. Platt, by whom the property is still owned. This was the old "Council House," so well known to the old citizens.

Thomas K. Green, in the spring of 1830, built a small house on Main Street below Front, where he lived and kept a store. In the fall of 1830 he erected a large frame house inclosing the small one, and still kept the store in the southwest corner, using the remainder for a dwelling. It was at that time the largest house in the village. A little later he rented it to Pardon Wilder, who kept it as a tavern, and it was known as the "Old Diggins." The old store part was used as a bar-room. Here in 1832 were the headquarters of the officers that commanded the troops in the Sauk war. After Mr. Green's death, his daughter, Mrs. Dickson, sold the property to Solomon Waterman, by whom it was kept for a time. It was also kept by M. Crofoot and others. It was finally torn down in 1864, and replaced in 1868 by the Reading House.

The "Pavilion" was commenced by Charles Finch in 1831, where Montague's hardware-store now is, and subsequently sold to Job Brookfield. It was unfinished in 1832 when the troops gathered in at this settlement, and they used this building and the house on Main Street, now belonging to A. W. Platt, for barracks. In 1834 it was kept by Col. Daniel Olds, was afterwards enlarged and improved, and kept successively by H. Vanderlip in 1844, S. S. Gaylord in 1849-50, J. and H. S. Compton in 1850-51, Henry Gebhart in 1856, later by Caleb Sepple and others, and finally, in 1864, was purchased by B. Frankenburg and torn down, and stores were built on the site.

The American Hotel was built by Nathaniel Bacon in 1835. It was the first brick building in the village, and the largest building in Niles at that time.

The Niles Exchange was built in the summer of 1837, and occupied in the following December by Graves & Davis. It was destroyed by fire in 1842, and succeeded by the banking-house of R. C. Paine.

#### FERRY.

The earliest settlers at Niles had no means of crossing the St. Joseph River with teams except by fording. The fording-place was at the foot of Main Street, from Isaac Gray's house to where the large cottonwood-tree now stands on the west bank of the river, above the Broadway bridge. Foot passengers crossed in canoes. On the 2d day of March, 1831, an act was passed by the Legislative Council to establish a ferry across the St. Joseph River, and empowering the justices of the court to grant a license to Benoni Finch and Moses Finch to keep a ferry at the village of Niles not less than five nor more than ten years. The justices were to determine the hours of crossing and to alter and fix rates. No other ferry was allowed to be established within one mile.

In accordance with this act a ferry-boat was built and

launched in the summer of 1831. There was great hilarity upon this occasion, and whisky circulated freely. It was sufficiently large for two teams, and was "poled" across the stream. The crossing was made from the flat above where the Broadway bridge now is.

The ferry was run by the Finch's as a toll ferry for three years, when a subscription was raised by the people from far and near to make it a free ferry. A sufficient amount was raised to accomplish this result, and Thomas Huston was employed to run it, which he did until the completion of the Broadway bridge, in December, 1836. In the last trip the boat made she was stove by the ice and ruined.

#### THE BROADWAY BRIDGE.

On the 26th of March, 1835, a charter was granted to Obed P. Lacey, Jacob Beeson, Erasmus Winslow, Elijah Lacey, S. White, Cogswell K. Green, Jasper Mason, and Job Brookfield, as a company, on whom was conferred the power to build and support a toll-bridge across the St. Joseph River at Niles; the bridge to be not less than 16 feet wide, with stout railings on either side, and to be completed on or before July 1, 1837, under penalty of forfeiture of charter.

During the summer and fall of that year (1835) there were warm discussions among the people as to the propriety of building a toll bridge, and the opinion was generally expressed that none other than a free bridge should be built. Upon this a subscription paper was circulated to raise funds for the purpose, and this resulted in the raising of a sum sufficient to construct a bridge which should remain free. A committee, composed of Elijah Lacey, Erasmus Winslow, Austin Stocking, Zebulon Mason, and Obed P. Lacey, was appointed to take charge of the funds raised (\$2500), to procure a change of charter, so as to allow the building of a free bridge, and contract for the construction of the bridge. On the 21st of March, 1836, a free-bridge charter was obtained, and under supervision of the gentlemen above named the bridge was built during the succeeding summer and autumn. It was completed and opened for travel in December, 1836, and the first team was driven across it by Moses Davis. The wooden bridge at this point is still in use, and accommodates a large amount of travel.

#### BRIDGE AT MAIN STREET.

On the 8th of December, 1835 (only three days after a similar meeting had been held, and a committee appointed to secure the erection of a free bridge across the river at Broadway), a public meeting was held at Col. Olds' public-house,—the "Pavilion," at Niles,—by which meeting it was "Resolved, That the business, growth, and general prosperity of the town requires the immediate construction of a free bridge over the St. Joseph River at the foot of Main Street." Henry B. Hoffman, Jacob Beeson, J. K. Finley, Daniel Olds, Vincent L. Bradford, J. C. Larimore, and Nathaniel Bacon were appointed a committee to collect subscriptions, advertise for proposals, and let the contract. Ten years, however, elapsed before the object in view was accomplished; but on the 24th of May, 1845, the contract for building it was let to Henry J. Holmes, and the bridge was built and completed in December of that year, at an

expense of about \$2000. This bridge was partially carried away by a flood in the year 1850, and was repaired by the Messrs. Comley, on contract, the work being completed July 12, 1851.

The second bridge at this place was built in 1854. In the *Niles Republican* of August 12th, in that year, is found the following mention of the work: "The Central Company have commenced the erection of a new bridge across the river at this place, a few feet above the old one." The bridge was completed soon after, at a cost of about \$3000.

The present iron structure was erected in 1868. City bonds were issued for \$32,000,—the cost of the bridge. It was completed and accepted by the Board of Aldermen Jan. 4, 1869.

#### POST-OFFICE AND POSTMASTERS.

In 1828 the mail was carried from Chicago to Fort Wayne by Lieut. David Hunter (a major-general in the war of the Rebellion), on horseback, guarded by two soldiers with muskets, on foot.

The first white settlement from Chicago on the road to Fort Wayne was the Carey Mission; the next was Rousseau's trading-post, about four miles southeast from Elkhart.

In the fall of 1828 several families had settled at what is now Niles, and Obed P. Lacey was appointed as acting postmaster; the office was kept in Mr. Walling's house, where Mr. Hunstable's boot- and shoe-store now stands. The settlement was then called Pog-wa-tigue (running water). The mail was carried to Chicago that fall and winter by two soldiers, on foot.

Isaac Gray was appointed postmaster at Niles in the spring of 1830, receiving the first regular commission. The office was kept in his house, situated on the east bank of the St. Joseph River. The ground is now occupied by the lumber-yard of Mr. Tuttle. The ford started from near his house and ran diagonally across the river to the cottonwood-tree, as before mentioned. Mr. Gray died during the year and Mrs. Gray kept the office until the appointment of Obed P. Lacey, in 1831, who kept the office at the store. This year Harmon Griswold carried the mail from Niles to Chicago, on horseback, once a week. There was at that time but one house. The only house on the route at that time was near Calumet River, and owned by a Frenchman.

In 1832, during the summer, Thomas Huston carried the mail from Niles to St. Joseph (being hired by Mr. Britain, of St. Joseph, who had the mail contract), sometimes on foot and sometimes on horseback. It was carried in hat, pocket, or mail-bag, according to circumstances. The route from Niles to Berrien was through a road that was not passable for a wagon; from Berrien to St. Joseph the route was simply an Indian trail.

Mr. Lacey held the office of postmaster for two years, and was succeeded by Titus B. Willard in 1833. Mr. Willard lived in a double log house where Fowler's store now stands. The office was kept part of the time in the "Council House," of which he was proprietor. This tavern was situated on the north side of Main Street between Front and Second, on the spot now occupied by Platt's stores.

In 1835, Cogswell K. Green was appointed postmaster. Under his administration the office was kept where is now the American block.

In 1836, Zebulon P. Mason succeeded Mr. Green, and removed the office to his store, which is known as Beeson's Corner. He was succeeded by Gen. Edwin N. Bridges, and the office was kept in a building that stood east of the express-office. Mr. Bridges was a retired merchant from Philadelphia. Rufus W. Landon was a deputy, and succeeded him in October, 1838. The office was continued in the same place for a time, and then removed to a building below Peak Hall. He continued in office four years, and was succeeded as follows: 1841, J. C. Larimore; 1845, S. W. B. Chester; 1849, Noah Brookfield; 1851, George Goodman; 1853, William H. McOmber; 1861, Francis Quinn; 1863, Harvey Palmer; 1866, William J. Edwards; 1867, Harvey Palmer; 1869, Edward S. Jewett; 1873, Evan J. Bonine, who is the present postmaster.

#### VILLAGE PLAT AND ADDITIONS.

Before this territory became the township of Niles, a plat was laid out where a part of the city now stands and recorded as the plat of the village of Niles. The southwest fractional quarter of section 26, township 7 south, of range 17 west, on the northeast bank of St. Joseph River, was laid off into lots, streets, and alleys by William Justus, S. B. Walling, Ephraim and Elijah Lacey. The lots owned by William Justus were on the north side of Main Street. All on the south side were owned by Samuel B. Walling, Ephraim Lacey, and Elijah Lacey, trading under the name of Walling & Lacey.

The plat and description was signed by William Justus and by Samuel B. Walling, on behalf of Walling & Lacey, on the first day of August, 1829, before Ezra Beardsley, justice of the peace, and was registered in liber A, folios 134 and 135, records of Lenawee County, Saturday, Aug. 29, 1829.

An addition was made by William Justus, Aug. 6, 1831, of land adjoining that already platted by him on the south side of the street.

An addition was made by Elijah Lacey on the 19th day of April, 1832, in which the square marked "Grave-Yard" was given by the proprietor to the public for that special purpose. Also lots Nos. 53, 54, and 72 were appropriated "to the exclusive use of any denomination of Christians that may first erect meeting-houses thereon." The grave-yard here mentioned is on the rear of the Presbyterian church, and Mr. Lacey was buried there. The lots spoken of are now occupied by the Presbyterian and Episcopal churches.

Later additions to the village have been made as follows: By H. B. & G. W. Hoffman, March 19, 1834; C. K. Green, H. B. & G. W. Hoffman, April 28, 1834; Obed P. Lacey, Nov. 28, 1834; H. B. Hoffman, March 16, 1836; G. W. Hoffman (subdivision of Justus' addition), April 13, 1836; G. W. & Charles Bond, May 30, 1836; A. J. Dunbar, May 19, 1836; Obed P. Lacey\*

\* In this addition a public square 16 rods square was laid out, that was afterwards given to the railroad company (in 1848), and now occupied by the passenger depot.





PROPERTY OF MAJ. L. A. DUNCAN, NILES, MICHIGAN



(Wilson's farm), June 18, 1836; — Brown ("addition including Dunbar"), June 28, 1836; Jacob Beeson, Aug. 1, 1838; J. B. Reddick (subdivision, Justus' addition), June 13, 1840; Jacob Beeson (second addition), Aug. 24, 1841; Obed P. Lacey (West Niles), Nov. 28, 1842; J. Brookfield and Nathaniel Bacon (West Niles), Dec. 1, 1846; R. P. Barker (subdivision of Hoffman), Feb. 22, 1849; R. P. Barker, April 28, 1849; G. W. Bond (addition to burying-ground), Aug. 20, 1850; S. M. Beeson (subdivision of O. P. Lacey's, West Niles), Aug. 18, 1857; Moore & Reddick, Feb. 8, 1858; S. Moore, Feb. 8, 1858; S. Moore (second), Dec. 24, 1858; J. Beeson (subdivision of Justus' addition), May 2, 1859; E. McIlvaine (subdivision of Green & Hoffman), March 15, 1859; D. O. Woodruff (West Niles), Aug. 18, 1864; William Bort (West Niles), Sept. 8, 1864; Moses Davis (West Niles), Aug. 17, 1865.

#### VILLAGE INCORPORATION.

The act incorporating the village of Niles was approved Feb. 12, 1835;\* the territory included in the corporation to be as represented in a plat recorded in the register's office, which plat bears date Aug. 1, 1829, and to be designated as a town corporate, by the name of the "village of Niles;" the first election to be held on the first Monday in March, 1835, and annually thereafter on the first Monday in March in each year; the officers of the village to be a president, recorder, and six trustees, who were to be designated by the name and style of "The Town Council of the Town of Niles."

The records of the village from 1835 to 1838 are not in the recorder's office, but in the *Niles Gazette and Advertiser*, bearing date Feb. 27, 1836, occurs this official notice:

"A meeting of the electors of the village of Niles will be held at the Pavilion on the first Monday in March next, for the purpose of electing corporation officers for the year ensuing.

"JASPER MASON, Recorder."

No notice of the election or corporation proceedings are in the papers of the day from that date until March 29, 1838, when there is given the result of an election held March 28th, of the same year, as follows:

	FOR PRESIDENT.		
	Democrat.		Whig.
James Lewis.....	84	Parmenter Collins.....	71
FOR RECORDER.			
Chauncey C. Britt.....	85	William B. Beeson.....	73
TRUSTEES.			
Simeon Berry.....	91	Timothy Symmes.....	70
Obed P. Lacey.....	88	Theo. H. Nevin.....	54
Alfred W. Johnson.....	103	Uriel Enos.....	75
Zebulon P. Mason.....	83	William Dougan.....	66
Royal T. Trombly.....	85	Thomas Denniston.....	72
Parker Howlett.....	78	Jacob Messenger.....	65

From some oversight this election was illegal, and in an amendment to the charter, adopted April 5th of that year, the action of this meeting was legalized, and the acts of the officers then elected declared legal.

A new election was ordered, and was held May 28, 1838, at the house of D. Gephart, where the following officers were elected:

President, E. Winslow; Recorder, Theodore H. Nevin; Treasurer, R. K. Gibson; Trustees, Uriel Enos, Theodore

N. Warren, Jacob K. Brown, David Kirk, Alfred W. Johnson, and Charles Jewett.

The presidents and recorders of the village from that date until the charter of the city was obtained have been as follows:

#### PRESIDENTS.

1839, Erasmus Winslow; 1840, Jacob Beeson; 1841, William B. Beeson; 1842, George Goodman; 1843, John K. Finley; 1844, Cogswell K. Green; 1845, William Graves; 1846, Jasper Mason; 1847, Andrew J. Clark; 1848-54, Rodney C. Paine; 1855, John K. Finley; 1856-58, Elijah Lacey.

#### RECORDERS.

1839-42, George W. Hoffman; 1843-44, James Brown; 1845, Theodore Fowler; 1846, David Aitken; 1847, George S. Babcock; 1848, George W. Hoffman; 1849, Levi B. Taft; 1850, William H. Jones; 1851, George W. Hoffman; 1852-53, Thomas Fitzgerald; 1854, Theodore Fowler; 1855, Thomas T. Glenn; 1856-58, Rufus W. Landon.

#### CITY ORGANIZATION.

The city charter of Niles was granted Feb. 12, 1859. The city at that time was divided into four wards as follows:

First Ward, from Sycamore Street north to the corporation line.

Second Ward, from Sycamore Street to Broadway.

Third Ward, from Broadway south to the corporation line.

Fourth Ward, "all that portion of land belonging to the corporation lying west of the river, and known as West Niles."

Following is a list of the mayors, recorders, and treasurers of Niles, from the organization to the present time, viz.:

#### MAYORS.

1859, Elijah Lacey; 1860-62, Rufus W. Landon; 1863, Henry M. Dean; 1864, A. S. Howard; 1865, Rufus W. Landon; 1866, Evan J. Bonine; 1867, Jacob Geltmacher; 1868, Evan J. Bonine; 1869-72, Franklin Muzzy; 1873, Rodney C. Paine; 1874, Solomon G. Krick; 1875-76, William Graves; 1877, Royal T. Trombly; 1878, George W. Platt; 1879, Solomon G. Krick.

#### RECORDERS.

1859, William B. Gray; 1860-62, William C. Fish; 1863, Theodore Fowler; 1864, Theodore G. Beaver; 1865-68, Jerome B. Fitzgerald; 1869-70, James H. Fairchild; 1871-72, John H. Richardson; 1873-74, Edward G. Hoagland; 1875-76, William J. Gilbert; 1877-79, John H. Richardson.

#### CITY TREASURERS.

1859-61, David Aitken; 1862, William B. Gray; 1863, James E. Cummings; 1864-65, Terrence Dolan; 1866, Sylvester Keyser; 1867, William J. Edwards; 1868-69, Terrence Dolan; 1870, Warren E. Corey; 1871-72, Thomas A. Bunbury; 1873-74, George N. Bond; 1875-76, William J. Edwards; 1877-79, William Graves.

#### NILES UNION SCHOOL.

The proposition to erect a union school building in Niles began to be discussed in 1853. In the following year a union had been made of two districts, and a meeting was held June 6, 1854, at which it was resolved to build a house sufficiently large to accommodate the children of the district, and that Hoffman's Square (being lot 64, Justus' plat) be the site. The sum of \$10,000 was voted for the purpose. June 10th of that year the square was purchased for \$1350. May 5, 1855, work on the building was commenced, and in July the corner-stone was laid. At a

\* Territorial Laws of Michigan, vol. iii. p. 1363.



special meeting held in March, 1855, the board was authorized to borrow \$10,000, to aid in completing the building. Again, in March, 1856, \$8000 more was voted. These votes, passed at special meetings, were confirmed at the annual meetings following.

The first school in the new building was held Monday, Sept. 29, 1856, when 456 scholars were present. Prof. E. W. Spaulding was the first principal, and was assisted by 7 teachers in the different departments. He was succeeded in 1857 by Silas Betts, who remained till September, 1860. Albert Markham was principal from September, 1860, to September, 1864; William H. Paine, to Sept. 5, 1865; C. L. Wells, to September, 1867; C. B. Thomas, to 1869; George F. Edwards, to 1871; Charles D. Gregory, to 1872; Cyrus B. Thomas, to 1878; B. R. Gass, from 1878 to the present time. The number of scholars in attendance in 1861-62 was 736; in 1862-63, 844; in 1863-64, 901; in 1864-65, 995; in 1865-66, 1038; in 1866-67, 1052; in 1867-68, 1075; in 1868-69, 1064; in 1869-70, 1120; in 1870-71, 1057; in 1871-72, 987; in 1872-73, 1080; in 1873-74, 1038; in 1874-75, 1050; in 1875-76, 1045; in 1876-77, 1020; in 1877-78, 1021.

July 2, 1863, a loan of \$10,000 was authorized for the purpose of building two primary school-houses, one in the First Ward and one in the Fourth. At the annual meeting in September the vote was reconsidered, and the board was authorized to build three school-houses in the First and Fourth Wards, and in Davis' addition. These houses were erected in 1864. In the summer of 1867 the union school-house was enlarged. At the annual meeting in September, 1867, the board was authorized to sell the old brick school-house, and to build one for colored children on the corner of Cass and Fifth Streets. This was completed in January, 1868.

The trustees of the union school district from 1854 to 1878 have been as follows:

- 1854.—R. C. Paine, H. Chapin, G. W. Hoffman, William Hurd, Samuel Niles, and N. Bacon.  
 1855.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, J. Bacon, G. W. Hoffman, William Hurd, Samuel Niles.  
 1856.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, H. A. Chapin, William Hurd, N. Bacon, G. W. Hoffman.  
 1857.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, H. A. Chapin, William Hurd, and S. M. Beeson.  
 1858.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, J. B. Reddick, William Hurd, R. W. Landon, William G. Ferson.  
 1859.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, William G. Ferson, William Bort, Charles F. Bentley, Royal T. Trombly.  
 1860.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, Charles F. Bentley, William G. Ferson, R. T. Trombly, William Bort.  
 1861-63.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, R. T. Trombly, C. F. Bentley, William Bort, M. Pettingill.  
 1864-65.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, R. T. Trombly, G. A. Colby, M. Pettingill, A. S. Howard.  
 1865-66.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, M. Pettingill, G. A. Colby, A. S. Howard, John K. Finley, M. D.  
 1866-68.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, M. Pettingill, H. M. Dean, J. B. Fitzgerald, John K. Finley.  
 1868-70.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, J. B. Fitzgerald, H. M. Dean, J. K. Finley, M. D., Thomas Douglas.  
 1870-71.—D. O. Woodruff, R. C. Paine, J. B. Fitzgerald, J. K. Finley, H. M. Dean, J. S. Tuttle.  
 1871-72.—H. M. Dean, J. S. Tuttle, J. B. Fitzgerald, R. C. Paine, D. Bacon, N. B. Reed.  
 1872-74.—Henry M. Dean, Jos. S. Tuttle, R. C. Paine, David Bacon, Norman B. Reed, William T. Dougan.

1874-75.—Henry M. Dean, George F. Edwards, David Bacon, Wm. T. Dougan, Joseph S. Tuttle, S. G. Krick.

1875-77.—David Bacon, George F. Edwards, J. S. Tuttle, H. M. Dean, Alexander A. Jacks, S. G. Krick.

The number of children between the ages of five and twenty years in the year 1879 is 1483; enrollment, 1021; cash value of school building, including grounds, furniture, library, and fixtures, \$75,000.

#### RELIGIOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

*First Presbyterian Church of Niles.*—On Saturday, the 29th day of March, 1834, at the house of Orrin Derby, on the corner of Oak and Fifth Streets, in the village of Niles, there were gathered together ten persons, who had met there for the purpose of church organization. These persons were the Rev. Luther Humphrey, stated supply of the Presbyterian Church on Beardsley's Prairie, Orrin Derby, and Roxanna, his wife, Bacon Wheeler, and Esther L., his wife, Nathaniel Bacon, Eleazer F. Crocker, William B. Copeland, and Miss Lydia A. Widner,—all members of Presbyterian Churches in other places. After consultation it was "Resolved that a Presbyterian Church be organized on the next Lord's day, by the name of the First Presbyterian Church of Niles."

Public services were held at the school-house on the following day, which was the Sabbath. A sermon was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Humphrey, the church was regularly organized, and the sacrament of the Lord's Supper administered. At this meeting, Mr. and Mrs. Derby, Mr. and Mrs. Bacon, Thomas K. Green, and Miss Lydia A. Widner were received into membership. Orrin K., son of Mr. and Mrs. Derby, and Mary Hannah, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Bacon, were baptized at this meeting. About the same time a Sunday-school was organized.

On June, 1834, the Rev. Alexander B. Brown, of Pittsburgh, was sent to the church as stated supply. August 3d of the same year, Nathaniel Bacon and Thomas K. Green were chosen ruling elders. Dr. John K. Finley, Uriel Enos, and Samuel Hunter were soon after admitted to the session.

In the next year (1835), a small, square, frame meeting-house was erected upon the site of the present church, with seating capacity for about 250 persons. In August of this year Mr. Brown was unanimously called to the pastorate, and installed at a meeting of the presbytery held in Niles, September 5th. He remained as pastor until February, 1839, when he resigned and removed to Cannonsburg, Pa.

The Rev. Mr. Whiting, afterwards a professor in the Michigan University, occasionally supplied the church until November, 1839, when the Rev. John W. Parsons began his labors as stated supply, continuing but for a few months, when he removed to Wisconsin, and the church was again served at intervals by the Rev. Mr. Whiting. In July, 1840, the Rev. Peter Boughton was secured as stated supply, and remained until July, 1843, when he removed to Port Huron. He was succeeded by the Rev. Mr. Hickox, as stated supply, in October following, and resigned in April of the next year. The church soon after extended a call to the pastorate to the Rev. Charles E. Lord, of South Berwick, Me. The call was accepted, and he was installed Nov. 17, 1844, and served the church ac-

ceptably until Feb. 7, 1847, when he resigned. During his administration in March, 1845, James S. Alexander and twenty others were granted letters of dismission to form the First Congregational Church of Niles. In the winter of 1845-46, the pastor, assisted by the Rev. Mr. Avery, an evangelist, began a series of meetings, and 76 members were added to the church in the following May.

In March, 1847, a call was extended to the Rev. P. S. Pratt to occupy the pulpit for one year, at a salary of \$500. He remained until October, 1848, and resigned. The Rev. Alfred Bryant, of Edwardsburg, who preached the sermon at the installation of Mr. Lord, in 1844, was next called, and he was installed as pastor Nov. 23, 1848. During his pastorate in 1849 the present church edifice was erected at a cost of about \$16,000, and dedicated Jan. 13, 1850.\* June 5, 1847, Mr. and Mrs. Uriel Enos and seven others were dismissed to form the First Presbyterian Church of Buchanan. An annual report, made April 1, 1848, gave a membership of 180.

In March, 1855, another revival brought an accession of 44 persons to the membership of the church. Again in April, 1863, large additions were made to the church, 57 persons joining it on profession of faith, and 3 by letter. Mr. Bryant resigned the pastorate in the summer of 1863, having served the church faithfully and acceptably for fifteen years. The pulpit was again filled by the engagement of the Rev. John Lailor as stated supply. He remained until the summer of 1865, when the Rev. T. Dwight Hunt, of Waterville, N. Y., was installed as pastor. He resigned the pastorate May 18, 1871. A call was extended, July 31st of the same year, to the Rev. Alfred Eddy, then the pastor of the Ninth Presbyterian Church of Chicago. The call was accepted, and his ministration began in the following December. He was installed April 24, 1872, and is still the pastor of the church.

The church has a present membership of about 360. The total number of communicants during the forty-six years of its history is 1040. The Sunday-school has a membership of 280. The present officers are H. M. Dean, Superintendent; S. C. Thompson, Assistant Superintendent; W. W. East, Secretary and Treasurer; Miss Emma Ferson, Librarian. Number of books in library, 450 volumes.

The elders who succeeded Messrs. Bacon and Green were John Bond, Bacon Wheeler, Allen G. Kellogg, 1841; Hiram Mather, Luther Chapin, and Martin Cleland, 1845; J. C. Larimore, W. G. Ferson, A. G. Chipman, Theodore Fowler, George W. Hoffman, and Daniel Pratt, 1855. The church had previously been without deacons, but at this meeting, Feb. 28, 1855, Dr. James Lewis and Jacob Messenger were chosen to that office.

The church adopted the rotary system of eldership Nov. 11, 1869, and George M. Coan and Robert W. Kay were elected elders for the term of six years, and Dr. J. D. Craig and H. A. Chapin for three years. Dec. 3, 1869, George C. Whitney and James F. Cross were chosen deacons. Dec. 17, 1872, George C. Whitney and J. C. Larimore were elected ruling elders. Dr. J. D. Craig and H. A. Chapin were re-elected.

\*The church was thoroughly repaired and refitted in 1871, at a cost of about \$8000.

The present officers of the church are Rev. Alfred Eddy, Pastor; J. C. Larimore, George M. Coan, J. E. Harder, J. F. Cross, William G. Ferson, H. A. Chapin, and S. C. Thompson, Ruling Elders; George C. Whitney and J. Cross, Deacons; H. M. Dean, J. F. Cross, J. S. Bacon, D. H. Freed, and William Wares, Trustees.

*The First Baptist Church of Niles.*—On the 6th day of August, 1841, the following persons, members of regular Baptist Churches, met at the school-house in the village of Niles for the purpose of forming a Baptist Church, viz.: John Reese, S. S. Lewis, Joseph Howell, Lucy Thompson, William Cotton, Custena Howell, Susanna Carbury, Baldwin Jenkins, J. P. Martin, John Johnson, Sally Bailey, Clarissa Nicholson, Sally Burnett, Louis Fellows, Lucy J. Fellows, William Mead, Jr. The meeting was opened with prayer, and S. S. Lewis was chosen moderator, J. P. Martin, secretary. A covenant and articles of faith were read and adopted. It was resolved to invite delegates from the churches in neighboring townships to meet with them in Niles, on the 14th day of August, for the purpose of examining the covenant and articles of faith, and if approved to extend to them the right hand of fellowship. S. S. Lewis was appointed on behalf of the society to represent them in the council, and John Reese to receive the right hand of fellowship.

The council convened at Niles, in accordance with the request of those mentioned above, and there were present delegates as follows: Pleasant Lake Church, Rev. Jacob Price, Joseph Knapp, and Barah Mead; Kingsbury Church, Rev. Benjamin Sawin and Rev. Elijah Bames; Rolling Prairie Church, Rev. Alexander Hastings, John Whitehead, and Joseph Long; Centreville Church, Rev. William Brown. The Rev. Benjamin Sawin was chosen moderator, and Barah Mead clerk. On motion, Aaron Whitlock, Timothy Jones, and Benjamin Pitman, from the Mission Reserve Church, were invited to take seats in the council. After reading the covenant and articles, the church was recognized as the regular Baptist Church of Niles. The sermon was preached by Rev. Benjamin Sawin, and the right hand of fellowship was given by Rev. Alexander Hastings.

At a meeting held at the school-house Sept. 18, 1841, the church resolved to extend a call to the Rev. Charles G. Hatch to become their pastor, and to raise \$300 for his support. This call was accepted. He commenced his services about October 3d, of that year, and closed his labors March 19, 1842.

April 29, 1843, the Rev. Gershom B. Day became their pastor. May 4, 1844, B. D. Townsend and C. D. Treat were elected deacons. June 1, 1844, the trustees presented a statement of the purchase of two lots, and a contract for building a meeting-house. The records make no mention of the time when the church was first occupied, but a business meeting was held in it Jan. 4, 1845.

A council was called March 28, 1845, to examine George V. Ten Broeck for ordination as pastor of the church. Dec. 7, 1845, the Rev. C. M. Richmond was called to the pastoral charge of the church for one year. The Rev. N. B. Miller was invited to become the pastor of the church Nov. 6, 1847. The Association met with the

church June 13, 1849. A number of meetings were held in December, 1849, and the winter and spring of 1850, in which the Rev. Mr. Miller was assisted by the Rev. Morgan Edwards, and these resulted in the admission of 91 persons to the church by baptism and about 15 by experience.

The Rev. John Booth became the pastor in 1851. Rev. E. Curtis was called July 1, 1854, and continued as pastor eight years. Rev. J. E. Henry became pastor in 1862, and remained three years. Rev. S. B. Gregory came in 1865, and labored one year. Rev. B. P. Russell assumed the pastorate in 1867, and was in charge about two years. Rev. T. B. Cressy was the pastor from 1869 to 1871. Rev. J. Huntington served the church from 1871 to 1878. The Rev. G. S. Bailey, D.D., the present pastor, commenced his labors in May, 1878.

The first house of worship was built in 1843, enlarged in 1855, and was used until the erection of the present church edifice, in 1878-79, at a cost of about \$8000. It is a cruciform structure, 64 by 84 feet in size, and has a capacity for seating about 600 persons. The church is situated on the east side of Fourth Street, corner of that street and Broadway. The dedication of the church occurred on the 9th day of November, 1879, the dedicatory sermon being preached by the Rev. Galusha Anderson, president of the Chicago University.

The present membership of the church is 204. A Sunday-school in connection with the church has 150 pupils. B. S. Reed is superintendent, and William H. Sinclair, secretary.

*The Second Baptist Church of Niles.*—The organization of this church was perfected at the First Baptist church in 1851, with 10 members, under the Anti-Slavery Baptist Association. The Rev. J. W. Hackley and the Rev. D. G. Lett assisted in the organization. The original members were 10 in number. D. Moss and Thomas Wilson were elected deacons.

The pastors from the first have been Revs. J. W. Hackley, D. G. Lett, Samuel Shores, E. Burkit, J. Brown, William H. Waring, J. P. Moss, Edmund Brown, George Washington, J. McAllister, Henry Williams, Daniel Rollins, Jeremiah Phillips, and T. F. Scott, who is the present pastor. The church now numbers 53 members.

The first church edifice was built on the southeast corner of Sixth and Ferry Streets. In 1872 the lot was exchanged for one on the northeast corner of the same streets, and the building was removed to that site, where it now stands.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church of Niles.*—In the spring of 1825 Benjamin Potter came to the valley of the St. Joseph, and settled for a time on the bluff near Lacey's dam, at Niles. His wife, Mrs. Mary Potter, was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and the first one of that denomination in the valley.

The territory now embraced in the Niles district was then under charge of the Ohio Conference; but not until after the Detroit district was set off did any preachers visit this region of country. In May, 1829, the Rev. Zerah H. Coston, who was just closing his term as presiding elder, made an extended trip in the western part of Michigan, visiting the settlements and preaching. During this journey he came to Niles, and preached at the log house of William

Justus, who then lived on the northwest corner of Front and Sycamore Streets. St. Joseph mission was established that year, Curtis Goddard being presiding elder of the Detroit district. The Rev. Erastus Felton was placed in charge of the mission. He preached in Niles once in four weeks, at the house of William Justus.

In 1830, Erastus Felton and Leonard B. Gurley were in charge of the mission. Benjamin Cooper and William Sprague succeeded them the next year. In 1832, Richard S. Robinson and Geo. L. Bestwick were in charge; James Armstrong, presiding elder. During the summer of that year a class was formed by Mr. Robinson at the house of Joshua Comley, who lived near what is known as Paine's Mill. The first members were Mrs. Elizabeth Comley, Mrs. Eber Griswold, Mrs. Sarah Denniston, Mrs. Morgan Wilson, Mrs. Elias Hickman, James Kirk and wife, and Henry Slater and wife. Henry Slater was appointed leader. The class met at the house of Mr. Comley until the school-house was built, late in the fall of that year, when that was occupied as a place of worship until 1839.

In 1834 measures were taken to erect a meeting-house. The lot now occupied by the Episcopal church was first selected, but was abandoned for a site on Fourth Street, corner of Sycamore, donated by the Rev. Richard C. Meek, and a meeting-house was erected, 40 by 45 feet, with galleries on the sides and rear, at a cost of about \$2500. This church was dedicated on Christmas-day, 1839. William H. Sampson was pastor, and John Ercanbrack presiding elder.

In 1832 the western part of Michigan was attached to the Indiana Conference, and embraced in the Laporte district. In 1833, Newell N. Smith was on this charge; in 1834, R. S. Robinson; and in 1835, E. Kellogg. In 1836, Niles appears as a separate charge, under Thomas P. McCool. From this time the pastors are as follows: Sanford S. Williams, James S. Harrison, W. H. Sampson, Richard C. Meek, James V. Watson, and Jonathan Hudson. In 1843, Niles became a regular station, and Ransom R. Richards was the first stationed preacher. At the close of this year the church numbered one hundred and ten members. Mr. Richards was succeeded by F. B. Gage, Jonathan Blanchard, F. B. Bangs, S. Steel, A. J. Eldred, T. H. Jacobes, B. Pengilly, J. Boyington, J. K. Gillette, A. J. Eldred, R. C. Crawford, H. Law, William Sprague, A. J. Eldred, Noah Fassett, B. F. Doughty, L. H. Pearce, George L. Barnes, A. R. Boggs, W. J. Aldrich, H. M. Joy, and H. C. Peck, who is the present pastor.

In 1839 the Michigan district was set off, and embraced Niles. In 1840 the name of the district was changed to Kalamazoo, and in 1860 the western part of the district was set off, and formed the Niles district. In 1852 the Michigan Annual Conference was held at Niles, Bishop Scott presiding.

The church and lot were sold, in 1863, to T. G. Wickham. A lot was purchased on the corner of Third and Cedar Streets, and in 1864 the present church was erected, at a cost of about \$12,000.

A Sabbath-school having 228 pupils is under charge of J. S. Tuttle as superintendent. The library contains 390 volumes.





CHURCH OF THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION.

REV. JOHN CAPRON, PASTOR, NILES, MICH.



*The Roman Catholic Church.*—After the abandonment of the ancient missions on the St. Joseph River, but little endeavor was made here on the part of the Catholics to advance their religion until the advent of Father Louis De Seille, who, about 1832 or 1833, left Belgium and its wealth of literature, art, science, and all that the cultivated mind holds most dear, to become a missionary in this far-off land among the Indians. He was the first resident Catholic missionary in this section of country in this century, and his territory embraced Indiana, Michigan, and Illinois. The Indians' favorite camping-grounds were in the valley of the St. Joseph River, and five *Pottawattamie* villages were but a short distance from the river, and near the *Parc aux Vaches*, the Bertrand trading-post.

Father De Seille soon became a favorite with the Indians, and labored earnestly with them until his death. Shortly after his death the Indians were sent West, and Father Petit went with them.

To him is given the credit of founding Notre Dame settlement. Services were held first in a log house of two rooms, near where the college now is. A log church was erected early at Bertrand trading-post, and in 1837 the brick church was erected at that place, which was organized as St. Joseph church, and Nov. 5, 1838, Joseph Bertrand, Edward Atherly, and Benjamin Bertrand were chosen trustees. The first record of baptism was on May 13, 1841. The University of Notre Dame was regularly founded by the Rev. E. Sorin in 1842, and chartered by the Legislature in 1844.

The pastoral work devolved mostly upon Father Quinet, a Frenchman. The churches or missions in Michigan were under the jurisdiction of Detroit, but on account of the remoteness from that place, the missions in this section of the State were placed under the charge of Notre Dame College. The church at Bertrand was supplied from the college. In July, 1846, the house of the Sisters was erected and blessed by Father Quinet, Father Alexis Granger and Father Shaw, an Englishman, assisting. Nov. 8, 1847, a chapel in the house of the Sisters was blessed, and June 3, 1849, the cemetery adjoining the church of St. Joseph was blessed.

In 1850 the St. Mary's Academy was incorporated. Aglae de la Cheptain, Mathurin Solon, Theresa Dussaux, and Proserpine Chanson were the corporators. The academy remained a few years, and was removed to near the college, at South Bend. The services at the academy and church of St. Joseph were attended from the college by Anthony Kapp, E. Borin, Quinet, Shortis, Schilling, and others. The church is now interdicted, and the members worship at Niles.

The early missions were Niles, New Buffalo, Laporte, Kalamazoo, Michigan City, White Pigeon, Coldwater, Silver Creek, and St. Joseph.

About 1847, Father Quinet built a frame church on lot 14, block 14, Brookfield's addition in West Niles. This building is now used for a school-house. After the death of Father Quinet, Father Flynn succeeded in the charge for a short time, when the missions belonging to Michigan were placed under the care of the Rev. Isadore Lebel, settled at Kalamazoo.

In April, 1857, Bishop Le Fevre appointed the Rev. John De Nevi pastor of Niles and the missions, and purchased four lots and a residence for the pastor. This mission extended over Berrien, Cass, Van Buren, Allegan, and Barry Counties. On the 23d day of October the Rev. John Cappou was sent as an assistant in the mission work. He assumed entire charge of work Nov. 16, 1859. At the end of two years, Father Charles was sent as an assistant, and remained as such for two years, when he removed to the diocese of Natchez, where he died of yellow fever, in September, 1878.

In February, 1863, Father Joseph was sent as an assistant, and remained till his appointment as pastor of St. Joseph parish, in December, 1865.

On one of the lots purchased by Bishop Le Fevre now stands the church, the corner-stone of which was laid by Bishop Le Fevre, Aug. 23, 1866. He was assisted by Bishop Luers, of Fort Wayne, and a great number of the clergy. The name of the church was changed from St. Francis of Assisium to St. Mary of the Immaculate Conception. It was completed in 1870, and blessed on the 11th of December of that year by Bishop Borgers, of Detroit, assisted by the Rt. Rev. John Luers, bishop of Fort Wayne, and a great number of priests, in the presence of thousands of people. The number of families connected with the Catholic Church of Niles is 230, the number of faithful, 1150; the number of communicants, 690.

In the missions attended from there will be found 150 families; the number of faithful, 750; the number of communicants, 450. The mission at present extends over an area of seventy miles. The cemetery used by the congregation, and by most of the missions, is the old cemetery at Bertrand.

*Trinity Church (Episcopal).*—The Rev. James Selkrig came here as a missionary, and preached in the summer of 1834, and in November of that year an Episcopal Church was organized, with five members,—Mr. and Mrs. Philo Sanford, Mrs. Anna Dickson, and two others. The first vestry was composed of Henry Heath, Jacob Beeson, Cogswell K. Green, Ezekiel Redding, James W. Griffin, Erasmus Winslow, Jasper Mason, and Addison W. Griswold; Talman Wheeler, Senior Warden; and William B. Beeson, Junior Warden.

The Rev. James Selkrig was called as rector upon the organization of the church, and remained until June 27, 1838, when he resigned. He was succeeded by the Rev. Samuel R. Crane in 1840; Rev. Foster Thayer, in 1841; Rev. George B. Engle, in 1843; Rev. Hiram Adams, in 1850; Rev. Joseph F. Phillips, in 1858; Rev. William H. Moffatt, in 1866; Rev. Stephen W. Frisbie, in 1869; Rev. William Lusk, in 1870; Rev. John Coleman, in 1874; Rev. Robert McMurdy, in 1876. The latter resigned Sept. 2, 1879. An invitation to the rectorship was then extended to the Rev. C. C. Tate, of Fort Wayne, Ind., November 24, which was accepted Nov. 29, 1879.

The first church was a frame building, and stood on the site of the present church.

In 1858, during the rectorate of the Rev. Joseph F. Phillips, the brick church was erected, at a cost of about \$7000, and was enlarged to its present capacity in 1873,



at a cost of about \$12,000, including organ and church furniture.

*The Congregational Church of Niles.*—A society of this denomination was organized of previous members of the Presbyterian Church about 1844, and in 1845 a church edifice was erected on the rear of the lot now occupied by the Episcopal church. It was built of clay, moulded in blocks about twelve inches square, dried, and laid in mortar. It was opened for worship Jan. 11, 1845, and the first sermon was preached by the Rev. Marcus Harrison. James I. Alexander was a leading member of the congregation.

For a time the church flourished, but afterwards declined and became almost extinct. In 1857 it was revived by Dr. James Lewis, by whose exertions the meeting-house was repaired. The Rev. Eleazer Andrus was installed as pastor, and remained with the church till 1861. Again a spirit of apathy fell upon them, and finally the church was sold by the trustees and taken down. The bell was sold to the Episcopalian Society, and is now used by them.

*German United Evangelical St. John's Congregation.*—This society was founded Feb. 2, 1860, by eight Germans, Rev. C. Bofinger, of New Buffalo, assisting. March 10, 1860, John Hansler, John Schmidt, and Henry Blodgett were elected trustees; Casper Frohlich, Frederick Schorek, and Ludwig Krell, as elders.

The Rev. G. B. Loeffler, of New Buffalo, was engaged to preach to the society every two weeks. June 12, 1862, arrangements were made with Rev. E. Werner to preach every other week, with a salary of \$175 per annum. July 5, 1862, at a meeting of the society, it was resolved to build a church. A lot was purchased on the corner of Sixth and Sycamore Streets, and a church edifice erected upon it. At this time the society numbered 54 members. Aug. 12, 1865, the Rev. Ph. Werheim was called to the pastorate, and in 1866, 97 families were reported. In 1871 the church was enlarged. May 1, 1875, the Rev. J. G. Hoch, the present pastor, was called and accepted the pastoral charge, at a salary of \$700, with parsonage. The society this year purchased the parsonage on Sixth Street, at a cost of about \$1500; and in 1878 repaired the church, adding the tower and putting in a bell, at a cost of about \$700. The church is nearly out of debt.

The congregation now numbers 125 families, and the records of the church from 1862 to 1879 show 720 baptisms, 172 confirmations, 143 marriages, 191 deaths, and a total of 3419 communicants. The Sabbath-school contains 140 pupils, of which the pastor is superintendent.

#### THE NILES YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION.

This association was organized February, 1868, with 50 members, and Henry M. Dean was elected president. At the close of the first year the membership had increased to 71. The society had received from membership fees and other sources \$567.84. A public reading-room had been inaugurated, with three daily and twelve weekly papers on file, also most of the prominent monthly magazines.

At the annual meeting in February, 1869, \$600 was subscribed by the citizens to continue the work. B. S. Reed was elected president. His successors during the following four years were Henry E. Glenn in 1870, E. W.

Post in 1871, S. O. Gardner in 1872, and Capt. Henry A. Ford in 1873.

Up to this date and till the year 1874 the association had met with entire success. A weekly prayer-meeting had been maintained every fall and winter. The reading-room was thoroughly equipped with stoves, tables, chairs, reading-desks, matting, gas-fixtures, maps, etc. But the great financial panic reached Niles; the lectures failed to pay expenses, members neglected their dues, and rather than have the organization die a lingering death, the rooms were closed, and the effects of the association were turned over to other societies.

During the life of the Young Men's Christian Association they were almost exclusively the almoners of the public and private charities of the city. The Chicago fire occurred Sunday and Monday, Oct. 9 and 10, 1871. On Tuesday morning, the 11th, the association's messenger, with between 1000 and 2000 loaves of bread and six barrels of crackers, reached Chicago on an early train, thus being almost the first to furnish food to that stricken people. This system of supply was kept up until the Michigan sufferers by the forest fires demanded help, when the charity of the Niles association was as promptly directed to the alleviation of their distress.

#### CEMETERIES.

In the Elijah Lacey addition to the village of Niles, made on the 19th day of April, 1832, a square piece of ground was reserved for burial purposes, and was used as a place of interment for some years. The remains of Elijah Lacey and wife and one or two children, Obed P. Lacey, and their father and mother, Ephraim Lacey and wife, and S. D. Walling, still lie there. Isaac Gray was buried there, but his remains were afterwards removed to the city cemetery. About 1836 a tract of six acres was purchased of George N. Bond for a cemetery, and this has been added to by a purchase of eleven acres from Mr. Bond, making a total of seventeen acres. By direction of the Common Council of the city in 1838, George H. Starr surveyed the ground into lots, and the sale of these was commenced. Silver Brook passes through a portion of the ground, and it is known as "Silver Brook Cemetery."

#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*St. Joseph Valley Lodge, No. 93, F. and A. M.*—Early in May, 1842, a petition to the Grand Lodge of New York for a dispensation to establish a lodge at Niles was signed by Robert E. Ward, John F. Porter, W. H. McOmber, Frederick Howe, Uriel Enos, J. W. Pidge, Jacob Beeson, C. J. Ingersoll, E. Redding, A. W. Harrison, Austin Stocking, and Ephraim Huntley. A dispensation was issued dated June 8, 1842, and Robert E. Ward was named as Master, Austin Stocking as Senior Warden, and John F. Porter as Junior Warden; signed James Herring, Grand Secretary; William Willis, Deputy Grand Master Grand Lodge of New York.

This was the first lodge established in the State of Michigan west of Jackson. A charter was received from the Grand Lodge of New York to the St. Joseph Valley Lodge, No. 93, dated June 10, 1843, naming Robert E. Ward,

Master; John F. Porter, Senior Warden; and Wm. H. McOmber, Junior Warden. The lodge was instituted and officers installed Oct. 26, 1843.

After the organization of the Grand Lodge of the State of Michigan the charter was surrendered.

*St. Joseph Valley Lodge, No. 4, F. and A. M.*—This lodge, the successor of the older St. Joseph Valley Lodge, was chartered by the Grand Lodge of the State of Michigan, in June, 1845. The names mentioned in the charter as officers are Jacob Beeson, Master; William H. McOmber, Senior Warden; Caleb I. Ingersoll, Junior Warden.

The present officers are Wm. Gilbert, W. M.; Hiram O. Edwards, S. W.; Enoch Flegal, J. W.; John Woodruff, Treas.; Maj. Wm. Graves, Sec.; Cyrus M. Alward, S. D.; M. C. Norris, J. D.; Henry Rounds, Tiler; James S. Reeves, — Norris, Stewards.

The present membership is 100. The meetings are held in Masonic Hall, in the building owned by J. K. Finley.

*St. Joseph Valley Chapter, No. 2, R. A. M.*—A charter was granted by the General Grand Royal Arch Chapter of the United States, on a petition from 19 persons in this section of country. The charter is dated May 16, 1844. Jacob Silver is designated High Priest; John Knapp, King; and Calvin Britain, Scribe.

The present officers are Hiram A. Edwards, High Priest; James Babcock, King; James S. Reeves, Scribe; Enoch Flegal, Captain of the Host; W. J. Babcock, Principal Sojourner; George W. Timmons, Royal Arch Captain; Eugene Lovell, Master of the Third Veil; Alonzo Platt, Master of the Second Veil; Henry Pruynt, Master of the First Veil; William Graves, Treasurer; J. Crocker Brown, Secretary; Henry Rounds, Tiler. The latter was a constituent member of the Grand Chapter of the State in 1847. The chapter has a present membership of 95. Meetings are held in Masonic Hall.

*Niles Lodge, No. 97, F. and A. M.*—In consequence of the large and increasing membership of St. Joseph Valley Lodge, No. 4, it was thought best to organize a new lodge, and on a petition to the Grand Lodge a dispensation was granted, March 18, 1857, to Henry A. Chapin, Erastus Spaulding, David Bacon, William D. Sterling, John H. Richardson, William J. Edwards, William B. Beeson, William B. Gray, and A. E. Tuttle, to organize a lodge under the above name.

A charter was granted Jan. 14, 1858, in which Erastus Spaulding was named Worshipful Master; David Bacon, Senior Warden; and Henry A. Chapin, Junior Warden. Meetings are held in the Beeson block, corner of Main and Front Streets, Niles.

The lodge has at present a membership of 85. The present officers are S. Belknap, Worshipful Master; J. S. Bacon, Senior Warden; A. J. Fox, Junior Warden; H. A. Chapin, Treasurer; William J. Edwards, Secretary; O. McKay, S. D.; Henry Jordan, J. D.; John Dunn, Tiler.

*Harrison Lodge, No. 1, F. and A. M. (Colored).*—This lodge received its charter from the Grand Lodge of Indiana, and worked under it for some time. It was chartered as Harrison Lodge, No. 1, Dec. 5, 1865, with John W. Harrison as Master. He was also Grand Master of the Grand Lodge. In the spring of 1879 the number was

changed, and is now known as Harrison Lodge, No. 9. It numbers at present 30 members, and meetings are held in Coolidge Hall, on Main Street.

The present officers are William Powers, Worshipful Master; Alexander Ramsey, Senior Warden; William Waterman, Junior Warden; C. F. Wilson, Treasurer; Alex. Winborn, Secretary.

*Niles Council of Royal and Select Masters, No. 19.*—Dispensation was granted to this council as No. 18, Jan. 11, 1866, and it was instituted June 6, 1866, as No. 19, with B. F. Doughty, Thrice Illustrious Grand Master; A. S. Cook, Deputy Thrice Illustrious Grand Master. The present membership of the lodge is 33. The officers for 1879 are Hiram A. Edwards, Thrice Illustrious Grand Master; James S. Reeves, Deputy Thrice Illustrious Grand Master; Cyrus M. Alward, Principal Conductor of Works; Wm. J. Edwards, Principal Conductor of Council; John Woodruff, Treasurer; George W. Timmons, Recorder; Charles W. Stowell, Captain of the Guard; William Graves, Steward; Henry Rounds, Sentinel.

*Niles Commandery, No. 12, K. T.*—A dispensation was granted by the Grand Commandery April 29, 1864, and a charter was granted June 28, 1864. Sir Knight Rufus W. Landon, Eminent Commander; Joshua Feather, Generalissimo; and George Kimmel, Captain-General. The present membership is 55.

The present officers are Edward S. Badger, Eminent Commander; John Woodruff, Generalissimo; Mills H. Landon, Captain-General; William Graves, Prelate; George W. Timmons, Recorder; John A. Montague, Treasurer; W. I. Babcock, Senior Warden; J. Crocker Brown, Junior Warden; Brown K. Jones, Standard-Bearer; E. D. Lovelle, Sword-Bearer; Charles W. Stowell, Warden; Henry Rounds, Tiler.

*Scottish Rite.*—Rufus W. Landon, Dr. James S. Reeves, J. R. Cogswell, and Frank W. Wilder are members of the thirty-second degree of the Scottish Rite. Rufus W. Landon is an active member of the thirty-third degree, and J. Eastman Johnson an honorary member. William H. McOmber was Grand Treasurer of the Grand Lodge of Michigan from 1854 till his death, in 1860. R. W. Landon succeeded him, and continued until 1878.

*Berrien County Lodge, No. 6, I. O. of O. F.*—This lodge was instituted Nov. 27, 1844, with 10 charter members, namely: John F. Porter, Cogswell K. Green, A. J. Clark, J. C. Larimore, T. M. Freeland, John B. Goodman, Charles Jewett, Gerard Hoadley, George Goodman, and James M. Stuart. It has at present 42 members. The officers for 1879 are Robert Chambers, Noble Grand; James Kipler, Vice-Grand; William W. Abbott, Sec.; John Cutting, Permanent Sec.; James S. Reeves, Treas.

*Niles Lodge, No. 207, I. O. of O. F.*, was instituted May 26, 1873. The charter members were John G. Hansler, E. Raft, J. Enkel, F. E. Schmidt, and F. Schneewind. The officers for 1879 are George Hegne, Noble Grand; Fred. Zimmerman, Vice-Grand; Aldrich Drenz, Sec.; Fred. Durn, Permanent Sec.; John Hansler, Treas. The meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall.

*Pah-wah-ting Encampment, No. 3, I. O. of O. F.*—Dispensation was granted to this encampment Jan. 6, 1846,

and charter Feb. 10, 1846. The officers for 1879 are Frederick Durm, Chief Patriarch; William Miller, Senior Warden; James S. Reeves, High Priest; John Cutting, Scribe; Enoch Egbert, Treas.

This encampment was united with Michigan Encampment, No. 1, Lenawee Encampment, No. 4, Wilder Encampment, No. 5, and Samaritan Encampment, No. 6, as the constituent members of the Grand Encampment of the State of Michigan, organized at Kalamazoo, Feb. 4, 1847. J. C. Larnimore and George W. Hoffman, Past High Priests, were delegates representing this encampment. The present membership is 49. Meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall.

*Niles Lodge, No. 843, I. O. of G. T.*—This lodge was instituted April 13, 1875, with 28 members. Their meetings are held in Davison Hall. The present officers are Edwin H. Palmer, W. C. T.; Mrs. E. H. Palmer, W. V. T.; Mrs. J. C. Larkin, W. S.; John Davison, W. T.; Maggie Park, W. I. G.; James Cutting, W. M.; Henry Jakwith, T. Sec.; Benjamin F. Park, W. A. S.; Lizzie Dutch, Dep. M.; A. K. Babcock, O. G.; Alma Palmer, R. H. S.; Minnie Palmer, L. H. S. The lodge at present contains 30 members.

*Catholic Knights of America, St. Mary's Branch, No. 17.*—This society was organized June 8, 1878, with 16 members, and has at present 37. Their meetings are held in Wells' Hall, on Main Street. The present officers are F. E. Fenton, President; John Aul, Recording Secretary; John C. Knauss, Treasurer; Paul Skalla, Financial Secretary.

*Order of Imperial Knights St. Joseph, Valley Lodge, No. 10,* was organized June 14, 1879, with 11 members. The present officers are Lewis Augustine, Director-in-Chief; Joseph Greenamyre, Financier; Charles Henderer, Recorder. The lodge contains at present 18 members, and their meetings are held in Davison Hall.

*Knights of Honor, No. 831.*—This lodge was instituted Dec. 3, 1877, having previously organized under a dispensation, and elected officers, viz., Theodore G. Beaver, Dictator; J. P. Howlett, Vice-Dictator; Charles J. Sterling, Reporter. They hold meetings in their rooms over the First National Bank. They have a present membership of 25, and the present officers are D. Sheehan, Dictator; C. N. Smith, Vice-Dictator; John Glenville, Assistant Dictator; F. Schneewind, Reporter; E. B. Leroy, Financial Reporter; W. A. Wetherby, Treasurer; C. J. Sterling, Chaplain; W. H. Snyder, Guide; John Cutting, Guardian; Jacob Mayford, Sentinel; H. Whitworth, Examining Physician.

#### NILES WATER-WORKS.

Four miles east of the city of Niles, in Howard township, Cass Co., at an elevation of 106 feet above the city, lies Barren Lake, a body of the purest water, a mile and one-fourth in length by three-fourths of a mile in width, fed by springs. For many years past this lovely lake was looked to as offering the best possible supply of water for fire purposes and for general use of the city. Several attempts were made to organize a company for its introduction, but no organization was perfected until June, 1877.

In February, 1877, the Common Council of Niles entered

into an agreement with W. P. Hanchett, for the introduction of water from Barren Lake into the city for fire purposes, and for general uses. Under this agreement a company was organized on the 12th day of June, 1877, and articles of association were filed in the office of the Secretary of State, June 14th. During the summer the survey was made and the line definitely settled.

In April, 1878, the work of excavation and laying pipe was commenced in earnest, and by July two-thirds of the work was completed. At this time, the first company becoming peculiarly involved, the work passed into other hands; a new company was organized, and not until the summer of 1879 was the work completed. The water is brought from the lake through a 12-inch main, five and one-half miles in length, emptied into a reservoir of 300,000 gallons capacity, and distributed already through about six miles of pipes. No city in the West can be furnished with such an abundant supply of so pure water more easily and economically than Niles.

#### FIRE DEPARTMENT.

In September, 1838, a petition was presented to the council of the village of Niles by a number of citizens, asking for the organization of a fire company. In accordance with a provision in the charter a company was then organized called "Niles Engine Company, No. 1," and numbering 31 persons. An engine, hose, ladders, buckets, and other equipments were purchased, but no provision was made for cisterns, and the only supply of water was from the river and from private sources. The consequence has been the disbanding of organized companies, an inefficient fire department and discouragement of the firemen. No companies are in existence at the present time, though the city has a chief engineer, Daniel Sheehan, who constitutes the fire department of Niles. Upon the completion of the present system of water distribution, the city will organize hose companies, and Niles will, for the first time, possess adequate facilities for the extinguishment of fires.

#### MICHIGAN CENTRAL RAILROAD.

The route of the Michigan Central Railroad was changed to pass through Niles in 1847, and in 1848, on the 7th day of October, the first passenger train from Detroit came into the village of Niles, at five o'clock P.M., containing about 130 invited guests. The train was greeted by a great concourse of citizens, speeches were made, and great rejoicing was the order of the day, for Niles was linked to the metropolis of Michigan by iron bands. Steamboating business was conducted from this time on the upper river, in connection with the railroad, and placed in charge of B. F. Fish, August, 1849. A warehouse was constructed at the bridge, 100 feet high from the bed of the river, and produce was elevated from vessels below. This continued for about three years, when the boats were withdrawn.

A road was constructed by the Michigan Air-Line Railroad Company from Jackson to Niles, reaching Niles in February, 1871, and continued to South Bend soon after.

#### NILES GAS LIGHT COMPANY.

This company was chartered under the general law in the spring of 1868, with a capital of \$37,000, and during





PREMISES OF MRS. J. B. MILLARD, CITY OF NILES, MICH.

MICHIGAN WOOD PULP COMPANY'S MILL, B. NILES WATER POWER COMPANY'S DAM IN BACKGROUND.



the summer of 1868 works were erected on Front Street below Main. The first officers of the company were James L. Glenn, President; J. C. Larimore, Secretary; R. C. Paine, Treasurer. The present officers are R. W. Landon, President; Mills H. Landon, Secretary; George W. Platt, Treasurer; Directors, J. C. Larimore, Thomas L. Stevens, and J. S. Tuttle.

MUTUAL CITY AND VILLAGE FIRE INSURANCE COMPANY  
OF BERRIEN, CASS, AND VAN BUREN COUNTIES.

This company was incorporated Nov. 13, 1878, with J. C. Larimore, President; J. Eastman Johnson, Secretary. The office is at the corner of Main and Third Streets. There are issued to Aug. 25, 1879, 179 policies, representing \$210,000.

#### BANKING INTERESTS.

On the 6th of February, 1836, a meeting of citizens of Cass, Berrien, and St. Joseph Counties was held at the American Hotel in Niles, and passed resolutions requesting the Legislature of the State to grant a charter to a bank to be called the "Bank of Niles," with a capital of \$250,000, with the privilege of increasing it to \$500,000. The Bank of Niles, having a small capital, was in operation the following year, with Jacob Beeson as President, and George W. Hoffman, Cashier.

The Berrien County Bank also was chartered about the same time, Lucius Hoyt being the first President, and J. A. Noonan, Cashier. These banks were short-lived and soon suspended.

The Farmers and Mechanics' Bank of Detroit established an agency at St. Joseph as early as 1835, with Thomas Fitzgerald in charge as cashier. Rodney C. Paine, a brother-in-law of John A. Wells, the cashier of the Farmers and Mechanics' Bank of Detroit, came from Albany to St. Joseph in March, 1836, and was placed in charge of the agency at that place. He remained until 1841, when he located an agency at Niles, opening an office in the building now occupied as a tobacco-store by James Trudeau. In 1843, Mr. Paine built a banking-office on the northwest corner of Main and Third Streets, where he continued business until his death, which occurred on March 16, 1855. The business of the Farmers and Mechanics' Bank was continued until 1848, when it was withdrawn, and from that time Mr. Paine conducted the business alone. He was also a director in the First National Bank of Niles.

The First National Bank of Niles received its certificate of organization Dec. 15, 1870, with the following-named persons as directors, viz.: Thomas L. Stevens, David Rough, Rodney C. Paine, Joseph C. Larimore, Alonzo Sherman, Rufus W. Landon, and George Kimmel. Rufus W. Landon was chosen President; Joseph C. Larimore, Vice-President; and Thomas L. Stevens, Cashier. The capital of the bank was \$100,000, fully paid up. The banking-rooms were established at No. 156 Main Street, where the business is still continued. The present officers are Thomas L. Stevens, President; Solomon G. Krick, Vice-President; Charles A. Johnson, Cashier; Directors, T. L. Stevens, S. G. Krick, Silas Ireland, W. K. Lacey, E. S. Badger, Geo.

H. Rough, William R. Rough. The bank has a present surplus of \$7500.

*Citizens' National Bank of Niles.*—This bank received its authority to transact banking business Oct. 1, 1861, its capital being \$50,000. The following persons were chosen directors: O. S. Abbott, J. C. Larimore, G. W. Platt, J. S. Tuttle, F. M. Gray, M. D. Matteson, and E. P. Hill. President, J. C. Larimore; Cashier, O. S. Abbott. The bank was located in the present banking-office, corner of Second and Main Streets. The present officers are J. C. Larimore, President; F. M. Gray, Cashier; Directors, J. C. Larimore, F. M. Gray, I. P. Hutton, G. W. Platt, S. B. Shepard, H. F. Kellogg, F. W. Wilder.

#### MANUFACTURING INTERESTS.

*Dowagiac Hydraulic Company.*—On the 18th day of March, 1837, an act was approved incorporating Obed P. Lacey, Elijah Lacey, Erasmus Winslow, and Rodney C. Paine as the Dowagiac Hydraulic Company, with a capital stock of \$50,000, and with power "to hold real and personal estate necessary for the construction of a canal for the use of said company, to be located in the village of Niles, within the limits of Lacey's addition to said village." The canal to be constructed within two years, connecting the waters of the Dowagiac River with the St. Joseph, and to be at least 30 feet in width and 4 feet deep. The canal was not built by the company, but in 1846, Elijah Lacey and Jasper Mason built the raceway that connected with the Dowagiac and furnished the water for the Volant and Dacota Mills.

*Niles Hydraulic Company and Niles Manufacturing Company.*—In the year 1842 a company was incorporated and organized with the above name, and having for its object the development of the water-power of the St. Joseph River at Niles. During that year the company commenced the construction of a dam across the river, at the foot of Main Street, with a lock at the west end, to allow the passage of boats. The contract for building was taken by Seth Hanchett. Before the completion of this work it was partially carried away by a sudden flood in the river, in the fall of 1843, and was damaged to such an extent as to discourage the projectors and to cause a suspension of further operations. The cost of the work had been about \$4000, which was a total loss to the company.

Efforts were made from time to time to raise more funds and resume operations on the dam and lock, but no results followed, though the company at one time proceeded so far as to put the work under contract. In the *Niles Republican* of March 8, 1845, there appeared an article under the heading of "Dam not Completed," in which it was said that "We are credibly informed that Crocker & Mason have the contract," but on the 29th of the same month the *Republican* said, "We are now informed that something has arisen whereby the whole matter is under the command of General Flatout, who, in relation to this work, is highly distinguished." In this the fate of the dam project was truly expressed.

Nothing more appears to have been done until 1849, when (March 31st) an act was passed for the improvement of the navigation of the St. Joseph, and incorporating



James L. Glenn, R. C. Paine, William H. McOmber, and others, as the "Niles Hydraulic and Manufacturing Company," with a capital of \$30,000.

By Legislative act of March 21, 1851, the charter of the Hydraulic and Manufacturing Company was amended, and the name changed to the original one of "The Niles Hydraulic Company." This company remained inactive till 1865, when the incorporators called a meeting, and efforts were made to revive the dam project, and to proceed with the work of construction. Engineers had been employed to examine the river, and their report was made at the meeting held at Kellogg Hall, June 10, 1865. The report embodied facts and estimates as follows: width of river at point selected, 287 feet; average depth,  $4\frac{4}{10}$  feet; length of dam, 350 feet; height,  $11\frac{7}{10}$  feet; estimated cost of dam, including head-gates, waste-weir, and raceway, \$39,085.76. The power to be secured by the construction of the dam was estimated at 1333 horse-power. The site then in contemplation for the dam was at the head of the "Big Island."

Nothing was done at that site, however, and in 1866 another was decided on, it being the present location of the dam. At this place work was commenced in June of the year named, but before it was completed a change was made in the company and its operations in the manner narrated below.

The hydraulic company had become embarrassed in its financial affairs, so that there seemed little probability that it could bring the work to a successful issue. When this became apparent a number of citizens of Niles associated themselves together to take such action as would insure the development of the water-power of the river. On the 26th of February, 1867, 22 persons, having this object in view, held a meeting in Niles, and organized as the "Niles Manufacturing Company," with Rufus W. Landon, Benjamin F. Fish, and William Bort as trustees, and Henry H. Coolidge as secretary. This company became incorporated June 26, 1868.

On the 7th of September, in the same year, the company was organized under the incorporation by the election of the following directors, viz.: Joseph C. Larimore, Rodney C. Paine, Benjamin F. Fish, Joseph S. Tuttle, Rufus W. Landon, Henry H. Coolidge, and James Badger. Rufus W. Landon, President; Benjamin F. Fish, Treasurer; Jerome B. Fitzgerald, Secretary.

Before the incorporation the company had purchased the farm of Jacob Beeson, consisting of 113 acres of land contiguous to the eastern end of the dam which had been commenced by the Hydraulic Company. For this farm they paid the sum of \$22,000, which was the authorized capital of the Niles Manufacturing Company. On the 26th of September of the same year that company purchased a half-interest in "all the rights, titles, and privileges" of the Niles Hydraulic Company, known as "The Dam Company." Oct. 28, 1868, the capital stock of the Manufacturing Company was increased to \$50,000, and on the 18th of June, 1869, that company contracted, for the sum of \$17,000, for the completion of the raceway, head-gates, and other work on the 'dam,' which had been commenced by the Niles Hydraulic Company.

In March, 1870, the capital of the manufacturing company was increased to \$70,000, and in 1871 that company purchased the remaining interest of the Hydraulic Company, which latter practically ceased to exist at that time. In January, 1872, the Manufacturing Company sold a part of their interest in land and water-power, on the west side of the river, to French & Millard for about \$10,000. A site, with power, was also given to Paine & Gitchell for a furniture-factory, and in 1872 the Niles Paper-Mill Company purchased the site and power now occupied and used by their mills. The Niles Manufacturing Company finally sold all their interests and privileges on the river to the Niles Water-Power Company in 1878.

*Niles Water-Power Company.*—This company was incorporated Dec. 24, 1877, with a capital stock of \$25,000. There existed at that time a mortgage of \$20,000 on the property of the Niles Manufacturing Company, and when this property was sold under foreclosure, at Pike's Hotel, Niles, on the 15th of January, 1878, the purchasers were the Niles Paper-Mill Company, and S. M. Beeson, J. C. Larimore, B. F. Fish, Thomas L. Stevens, J. W. French, O. W. Coolidge, M. Pettingill, and David Gitchell; these gentlemen representing and purchasing for the Niles Water-Power Company. This company is still in existence, and owns the property acquired by the purchasers above mentioned. Its present officers are: President, J. W. French; Treasurer, B. F. Fish; Secretary, J. C. Larimore; Directors, A. A. Jacks, M. Pettingill, Thomas L. Stevens, David Gitchell.

*Niles Paper-Mill Company.*—The company was organized Jan. 10, 1872, and the present mill-site purchased of the Niles Manufacturing Company, and buildings erected. The firm have an average of about 35 employees, and manufacture straw wrapping-paper exclusively, shipping it to the Chicago market. The officers are A. A. Jacks, President; B. F. Fish, Treasurer; John Le Clere, Secretary.

*Michigan Wood-Pulp Company.*—This company started business in June, 1872, as the firm of French & Millard. It was organized as a joint-stock company, under the general State law, in August, 1874, name as above, with J. W. French, President; J. B. Millard, Treasurer; and W. S. Millard, Secretary and Superintendent. The company still retain the same officers. Their building is 156 feet long by 52 feet in width, and three stories high. Half this building was erected in 1872, and the remainder in 1875. The stock manufactured is whitewood pulp, for print, manilla, and book papers. Silver-leaved poplar, pine, and basswood is used.

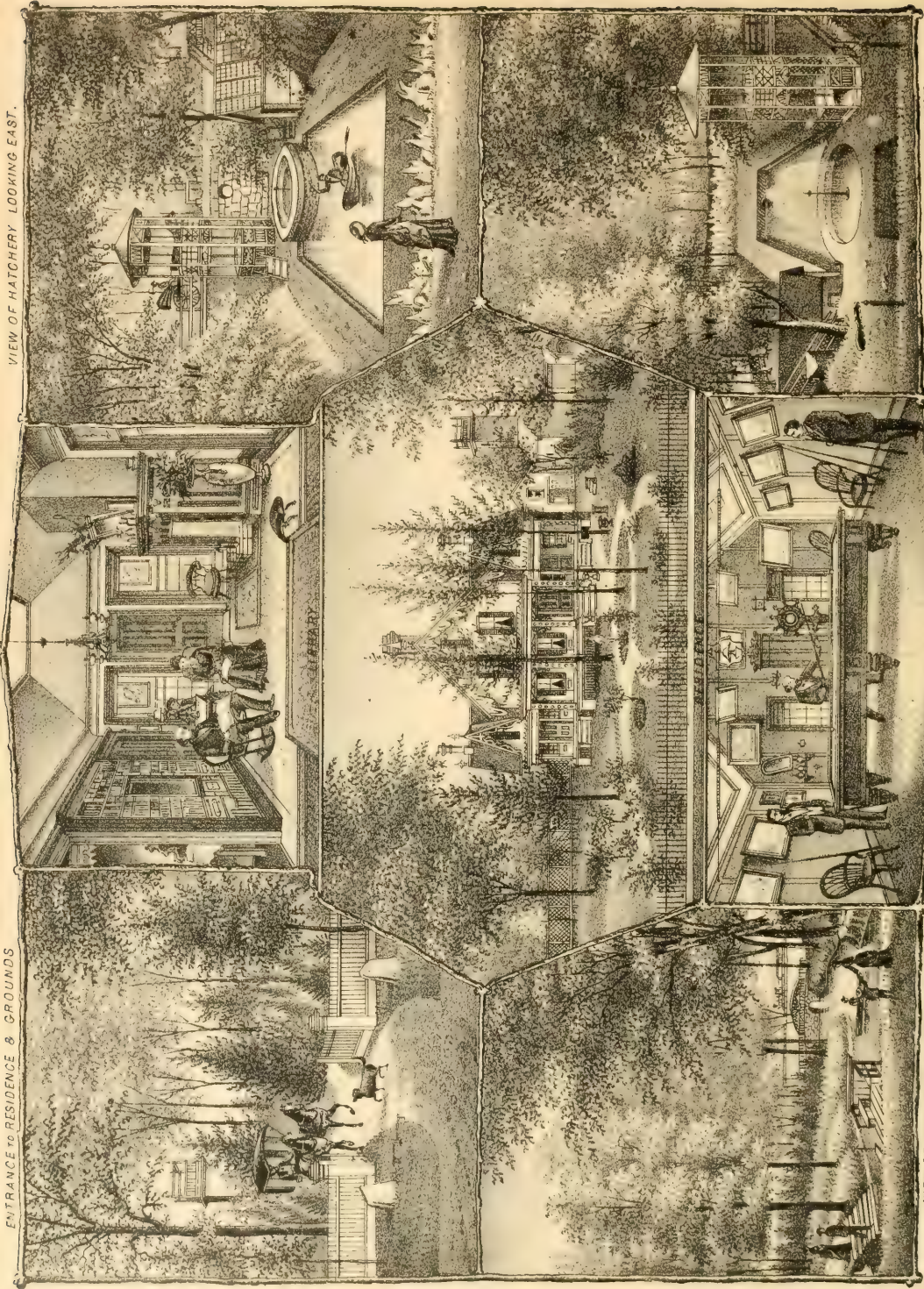
This company owns one-third of the power created by the erection of the dam, to be used exclusively on the west side of the river. The company employs about 38 men and 10 boys, day and night, and furnishes Western paper-mills, exclusively. Its shipments in and out over the Michigan Central Railroad were 648 cars during fourteen months, ending Jan. 31, 1879.

*Lacey's Barrel-Factory.*—About 1849, Messrs. Dare & Barrett started a small coopering business upon the property now occupied by S. & G. Lacey. In 1855 the property passed to Jones & Chapin, by whom it was continued until 1862, when Anson & Lambert came into possession.





ENTRANCE TO RESIDENCE & GROUNDS



VIEW OF HATCHERY LOOKING EAST.

VIEW OF FISH PONDS LOOKING EAST.

VIEW OF HATCHERY LOOKING WEST.

RES. AND SURROUNDINGS OF THE HON. G. H. JEROME, NILES, MICHIGAN.

BILLIARD ROOM.



In 1866, S. & G. Lacey purchased the business, and still continue it. They employ 20 men, and have a manufacturing capacity of 400 barrels a day. In 1871 a cider-mill was built in connection, and in 1873 a brick building, 26 by 110 feet, and 3 stories in height, was erected for the enlargement of the cider-works.

The flouring-mills of Niles will be found mentioned in the history of early mills and mill-sites.

*Krick's Carriage Manufactory.*—In 1872, Messrs. Rice, Griffith & Lambert erected the brick building now occupied by S. G. Krick, and commenced the manufacture of wagons, buggies, etc. The sum of \$28,000 was expended in real estate, buildings, and machinery. The financial difficulties of 1873 caused a discontinuance of the business, and in 1874, Solomon G. Krick purchased the stock, and the First National Bank became owner of the real estate. The property was leased to Mr. Krick, who continued the manufacture of wagons and buggies, and has increased the business to an amount of \$40,000 annual sales. The trade is largely confined to grangers, to whom he offers special inducements. The engine has a capacity of 40 horse-power. A planing-mill and pill-box-factory in connection with the works, are leased to other parties, and supplied with power from the engine of the wagon-factory. About 40 men are employed in the establishment.

*Fanning-Mill Manufactory.*—In 1835, Lucius Scales emigrated from Ohio, and commenced the manufacture of fanning-mills in the village of Niles. After a few years the business passed into the hands of Jerome Walton, and in 1844 or 1845 it was carried on by Barber & Wells. In 1856, Martin Cleland and son purchased the business and continued till 1862, when A. J. Cleland purchased his brother's interest, and since that time he has continued the manufacture of fanning-mills and other agricultural implements. Sales of these are made throughout the Western States.

*Niles Nurseries.*—In 1849, William Bort returned to Niles, after an absence of six years, and established a nursery about one and a half miles up the river on land purchased of Wm. McOmber. This farm he sold to Mr. Gephart in 1855, and purchased 40 acres from the Gephart farm, about one hundred rods west of the river. On this land he erected a good house, and established a nursery of ornamental and fruit trees, but again sold in January, 1866, and purchased the Sampson farm, half a mile up the river from the upper bridge. Here he started a nursery, erected a fine mansion, laid out the grounds, and planted ornamental trees and shrubbery. The nursery was successfully conducted by him till his death. May 1, 1879, a half-interest was sold to William Sigerson and Susan Van Osdol, who have at present 48 acres in nursery stock. They have purchased an additional 80 acres on the east side of the South Bend Railroad, and east of the Hoppin farm. This is to be used as follows: 50 acres to be planted with apple-trees, 10 acres with strawberries, 10 acres of blackberries, and 10 acres of raspberries. The business is now conducted under the name of "the Niles Nurseries," by Wm. Sigerson & Co.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### GEORGE H. JEROME\*

was born at Pompey, Onondaga Co., N. Y., Oct. 23, 1819. His parents, Ira and Irene (Cass) Jerome, were both of American birth and English extraction. The family tree spreads wide and high on Pompey Hill, which has now become classic ground,—an inland Pilgrim Rock,—to which statesmen, poets, and merchant-princes are proud to trace their genealogy.

With sinews toughened in this bracing air and a mind inspired in the old academy, George went to Hamilton College, where he graduated in 1842. He then entered upon



Geo. H. Jerome.

the study of the law. July 9, 1846, he married Miss Charlotte L. Dana, daughter of Eleazer Dana, of Owego, N. Y., and sister of the late Cyrus Dana, of Niles, an accomplished lady of a noted family, including among its members Charles A. Dana, of New York. Soon after his marriage, Mr. Jerome removed to Niles, in the State of Michigan, and entered upon the practice of his profession; but he soon accepted a magisterial office, which he found more lucrative and pleasant than a practice at Berrien, the remote county-seat. As a magistrate he soon achieved the lasting friendship of his brethren of the bar, and the confidence and respect of all his fellow-citizens.

In 1851 the growing greatness of Chicago attracted his attention, and he abandoned a profitable business and the most agreeable social relations and cast his fortunes in the whirl of that city. He remained in Chicago until 1856, engaging in real-estate operations with his proverbial success, when, through some accidental circumstances, he re-

\* The late Hon. Jerome B. Fitzgerald, a life-long acquaintance and friend of Mr. Jerome, contributed this biographical sketch for the recently-published volume entitled "Eminent Men of Michigan." As it is believed to convey a just estimate and appreciation of the subject of his sketch, it is here inserted without abbreviation or alteration in any particular.

moved to the capital of Iowa, and became the proprietor and managing editor of the *Iowa City Republican*, which from the oldest then became the ablest political journal of the State. While in this commanding position Mr. Jerome was also for several years chairman of the Republican State Central Committee, and made himself felt in the affairs of the State, and in the policy of his party in the first years of the war. As an express recognition of his services in this behalf, at the personal instance of President Lincoln, he was appointed assessor of internal revenue for a district embracing twelve counties, a position which he filled for four years in the most creditable manner, and then voluntarily resigned in favor of a meritorious and disabled colonel of the Union army. At this period of his life, feeling a desire to withdraw from public employments and engage in rural pursuits, he recollected the enchanting valley of the St. Joseph, for which, although he had wandered so far, he still retained an affection.

Returning to Niles he selected a home—"Sabine Farm"—in the southern suburb, overlooking the city and river and the magnificent highlands of the *Pottawattamie* reservation. Here, like a Roman patrician, he established his villa and tower, and, in great part with his own hands, embellished the surroundings with gardens, vineyards, cascades, and fountains. Reposing from his toils in the shadow of his broad oaks and gorgeous maples, he studied philosophy and the arts, and entertained the friends who sought him with elegant hospitality. Few men have a more extensive personal acquaintance, and none a more attractive retinue of personal friends, embracing men of almost every political opinion and religious creed, for, although firm and positive in his own views and convictions, he is always considerate and tolerant of opposing opinions. Politically, he is a Democratic Republican. He was a delegate from Iowa to the National Republican Convention at Philadelphia in 1856, and has adhered to that party ever since. In religious association he seems inclined to the Congregational Church, possibly because his wife is a member of that body. It is quite probable that he does not attach much importance to sectarian distinctions, but rather regards honesty and uprightness of life as the essential elements of Christianity. He is a member of the Masonic fraternity, and perhaps of some other civic societies. Mr. Jerome is eminently social in his habits and tastes; always affable, animated, and cheerful, he infuses vitality wherever he goes. Expert in all games and pastimes, it is a positive pleasure to be the victim of his superior skill. Indomitable energy, ceaseless activity, and executive ability are his distinguishing qualities, adequate to every occasion. If by chance he is called upon to address the grangers at a county fair, he showers upon them wisdom and wit in glittering profusion; or when a centennial jubilee occurs, and he is pushed to the front, he astonishes the assembled thousands of his fellow-citizens with a sunburst of magnificent oratory.

In 1873, Mr. Jerome was, as unexpectedly to his friends as to himself, appointed commissioner of State fisheries. He seemed reluctant, but his friends urged him to accept, not dreaming, however, that he had either knowledge or taste in the direction of its duties, but rather regarding the office as a sinecure and the commission as a compliment.

Governor Bagley, however, in urging his acceptance, seems to have had a more serious purpose and a better understanding of the fitness of the appointment, for it is as a fisherman that Mr. Jerome is destined to go down to posterity. No matter what honors or distinctions he may hereafter achieve in other directions, his fate is fixed. The smell of the salmonidae is on his garments.

Once installed as superintendent of State fisheries, he entered upon his duties with his accustomed energy and zeal. Throwing aside the pruning-hook, he grasped the trident of our inland seas, where, like Neptune, "He climbed the chariot-seat and rode upon the waves. The whales came forth from their deep haunts and frolicked round his way; they knew their king."

Addressing himself sedulously to his task, he soon made himself not only master of the science of ichthyology but an expert in all the details of fish-culture. Abounding in fish of the choicest varieties in all her vast waters, Michigan had hitherto given no care to their culture or preservation. The field was an open one, and success or failure depended upon him. He had great ends to accomplish with limited means. In glancing over his reports one is amazed at the magnitude of his labors and the economy of his expenditures.

It is too soon to estimate the exact value of what he has accomplished, but it is undeniable that he has placed Michigan in the front rank of fish-growing States, and reared for himself a monument more enduring than brass,—a fame as a naturalist not to be forgotten as long as trout, white-fish, or grayling swim in the blue waters around the beautiful peninsula.

#### JOSEPH C. LARIMORE.

The parents of the subject of this biography were born in Central Pennsylvania, and resided for some years in Washington County, from whence, in 1802, they removed to Steubenville, Ohio. Here the father engaged in the sale of general merchandise for a time, but afterwards added to his business the manufacture of cotton goods. He also held the office of postmaster for about thirty years. In this village the son was born, and here he remained until early manhood. He attended the village school, and afterwards prosecuted the study of the languages, under the tuition of Rev. George Buchanan, and completed his studies at the academy in his native place. But it was under the careful eye of his father and in association with him that he acquired the strict business habits which have contributed to his success in life. He married a daughter of Judge James Wilson (for many years editor of the *Western Herald*, an able and influential Whig paper), and in 1834, while yet but a young man, he removed to Niles, Mich., where he engaged in the sale of dry goods until 1838, when he disposed of the business and established the drug-store, which still continues, and which is recognized as one of the oldest and most reliable establishments in the State. In 1860 he associated with him in the business Henry M. Dean (who for ten years had been in his employ as clerk), under the present firm-name of Larimore & Dean.

In disposition Mr. Larimore is conservative rather than

aggressive, but firm and decided in all his opinions. In politics he was a Whig until the rise of the Republican party, when he attached himself to it, sympathizing with that party in all its essential measures. He had no political aspirations, but accepted the appointment of postmaster at Niles under Gen. Harrison, which office he held until after the election of President Polk. In religion he is by

at Niles. In 1877 he was again re-elected treasurer, but at his earnest solicitation he was permitted to decline the office. In 1872 he aided to organize the First National Bank, and was its first vice-president, which office he resigned soon after, to accept the presidency of the Citizens' National Bank, to which position he has been re-elected every year since. In addition to his daily attention to the



education and conviction a Presbyterian of the strictest stamp, and to this church he has ever given his aid and influence, while at the same time he has always been ready to extend the warm hand of sympathy and to fraternize heartily and sincerely with all sister denominations. For twenty-five years he has been a ruling elder and for nearly thirty years the treasurer of the First Presbyterian Church

drug business and his duties as president of the bank, he is also an officer or director of the Niles Gas-Light Company, the Niles Manufacturing Company, the Niles Paper-Mill Company, the City and Village Insurance Company, etc.; and he has ever been ready to extend aid and his hearty co-operation to any and all enterprises whose object is to advance the material interests of the city of his adoption.

#### MAJOR L. A. DUNCAN

was born in Columbus, Bartholomew Co., Ind. His father was a native of Leesburg, Va., and his mother of Chillicothe, Ohio. When two years of age his father died, and he, with his mother, went to Charlestown, Clarke Co., Ind., to live with his grandfather, the late Judge James Scott. His grandfather and father being newspaper men and editors, he, it may be said, grew up in the profession.

In 1856 he removed West, stopping in Iowa City, Iowa. In 1858, in connection with G. H. Jerome, he assumed the editorship of the *Iowa City Republican*, and in 1861 was appointed, by the Governor of the State, one of the swamp-land commissioners to settle swamp-land claims of the State against the general government.

While in Iowa he was instrumental in helping that veteran Abolitionist, John Brown, through the State to Harper's Ferry, though ignorant of his destination and full purpose.

In 1862 he resigned his commissionership to enter the Union army. He was appointed adjutant of the 40th Iowa Infantry upon the formation of that regiment, and took part in the siege of Vicksburg and capture of Little Rock, Ark.; in the battles of Prairie D'Ann (where, when on staff duty and leading the 50th Indiana Infantry into action, he had a horse shot under him), Jenkins' Ferry, Little Missouri River, and several minor engagements. He was commissioned major March 17, 1865, this being the highest vacancy occurring in his regiment during the



war. After the surrender of Lee he served some months in the Indian Territory, and was finally mustered out with his regiment at Fort Gibson, Aug. 15, 1865. Though he was three years in his country's service, he claims only an inconspicuous part in the war.

In February, 1866, he came to Niles, and, in connection with E. C. Dana, bought two newspaper establishments,—the *Niles Enquirer* and the *Berrien County Freeman*,—which he consolidated under the name of the *Niles Times*. At the expiration of two years Mr. Dana retired, and the name of the paper was changed to the *Niles Republican*, since which time Maj. Duncan has been sole editor and proprietor. He claims to publish a good, clean, reliable, local paper, and his patrons and readers acknowledge the justness of this claim.

In 1872 he was elected presidential elector for the Fourth Congressional District, and cast a personal vote for U. S. Grant and Henry Wilson. He served four years on the Republican State Central Committee, and was one of the board of visitors to the State normal school in 1879.

Maj. Duncan, since the formation of the Republican party, has always been a warm supporter of that party and its principles. Prior to its organization he was a Whig, having been reared in that political faith.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

### BUCHANAN TOWNSHIP.\*

Location and Natural Features of the Township—Original Land-Entries—Early Settlements and Settlers—Organization of the Township—Early Elections and Census Statistics—Schools—Buchanan Village—Incorporation and List of Officers—Population—Manufacturing Interests—Societies and Orders—Banking—Cemeteries—Religious History.

THIS township is designated on the United States survey as town 7 south, range 18 west. It is a fractional township, and includes that portion of town 7 lying west of the St. Joseph River. It contains an area of 17,813 acres, and its eastern boundary is the St. Joseph River, that separates it from the township of Niles; its southern boundary is the township of Bertrand; its western the township of Weesaw; and its northern the township of Oronoko.

Buchanan contains but little level land, and its surface is generally undulating. The highest point is Moccasin Bluff, situated about two miles north of the village of Buchanan, on the river St. Joseph. The soil is clay loam, with an admixture of sand. It is very rich and productive, and particularly adapted to the growth of cereals.

The township is watered by the St. Joseph River on the east, and its tributary, McCoy's Creek, that rises in Bertrand township, flows northeasterly through the village of Buchanan and empties into the St. Joseph. On the western part of the township, the head-waters of Hickory Creek take their rise, and flow northerly into the St. Joseph. The north branch of Galien River takes its rise in one of the numerous lakes that abound in the township, among which are Clear and Round Lakes, on section 29; Yellow

Lake, section 30; Wagner Lake, section 19; Weaver Lake, section 20; Madron and Moon Lakes, section 9; Coveney's Lake, sections 5 and 8; Juday Lake, section 7; and others not named.

The territory of the township of Buchanan was partly included in the tribal reservation on which the *Pottawattamies* lived during the later years of their residence in Berrien County. The banks of the St. Joseph, and the lands which extend thence southwestwardly through Buchanan and Bertrand townships, were their favorite resorts, and they clung to these lands with great tenacity, for here were their homes and the graves of their fathers. The forests were abundantly supplied with game, the lakes and rivers were well stocked with fish, and much frequented by wild fowl. Moccasin Bluff, situated a short distance below the village of Buchanan, is well known as the site of one of the Indian villages, and numerous burial-places along the river have been found.†

The first cession of land that affected this part of Berrien County was that of Sept. 20, 1828, which embraced the lands lying west of St. Joseph River, except the reservation which has already been mentioned.

The greater part of Buchanan township is in the tract ceded in 1828, but the village is in the reservation. This was ceded in 1833. The best lands in the last cession were chosen by the commissioners as seminary land, and lay mostly along the sides of McCoy Creek to the village. The lands were largely settled upon by those who intended to purchase when they were made subject to entry, but the price of \$20 per acre was placed upon them at first, and those who had taken claims were compelled to give them up. Later they were reduced in price to \$12, and afterwards to \$6. The other lands were taken at 10s. per acre, under the pre-emption act.

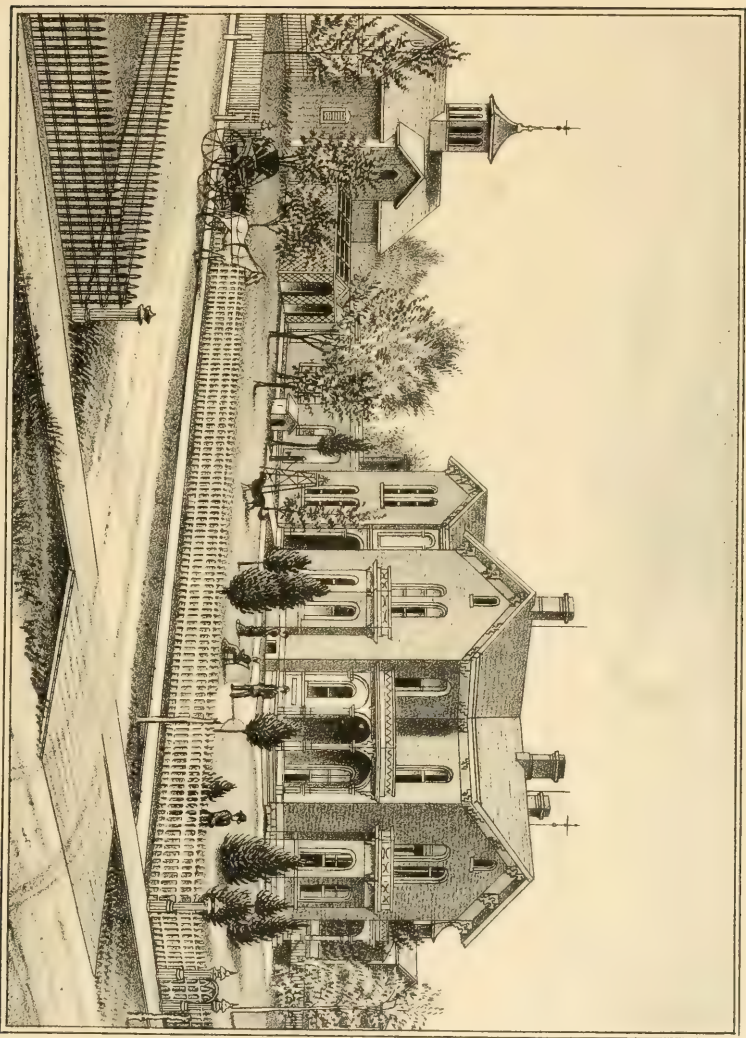
The first land-office in Michigan was established at Detroit, and the first lands were offered for sale there in 1818. In 1822 the Detroit land district was divided, and a second office established at Monroe, at which latter office lands lying west of the principal meridian were entered until 1831, when a land-office was established at White Pigeon for the sale of lands lying west of the meridian. In 1834 this office was removed to Kalamazoo.

The following were the original entries of land in Buchanan, viz.:

- Section 2.—H. Highburger, J. Ingelright, T. J. Griffin.
- Section 3.—P. Poponol, Joseph P. Martin, A. Colvin, S. G. Shuert, J. Johnson, J. Ingelwright.
- Section 4.—W. Colvin, J. Ingelwright, T. J. Patrick, J. Harris, A. Colvin, B. H. Platt, R. Munger.
- Section 5.—James H. Roe, J. Coveney, J. Gordon, Isaac Broadway.
- Section 6.—Peter Watkins, J. Weaver, George Smith, J. Hickman, S. Garr, J. Coveney, A. Trocess.
- Section 7.—R. Babcock, Jr., Godfried Boil, W. Smith, S. Weaver, Joseph Coveney, J. Judd, D. and J. Weaver.
- Section 8.—Charles Stone and J. Weaver, M. P. Irvin, J. and H. Weaver, H. Weaver, E. and W. M. Mason.
- Section 9.—M. P. Irvin, A. Irvin, Isaac Broadway, John B. Mitchell, Leonard Madison.

† Moccasin and Mish-a-qu-a-ka villages were here when the first white settlers came, in 1833 and 1834. Moccasin village was below Moccasin Bluff, and Mish-a-qu-a-ka south of the village, on the farm of H. G. Sampson.

\* By Austin N. Hungerford.



RES. OF CAPT. GEO. H. RICHARDS, BUCHANAN, BERRIEN CO., MICH.





- Section 10.—Weaver and Munger, — Munger, G. Cain, T. J. Hunter, Hoffman and Bacon, J. Weaver, G. Cain.
- Section 11.—J. Ingelwright, Stephen Thomas, S. Thomas and J. Lybrook, — Popenol, John Lybrook.
- Section 12.—S. Thomas, J. Lybrook, C. Sparks, William Justus.
- Section 13.—A. Price, W. Garmood, William Justus, Michael Wade, S. Babcock, J. Stephens, J. Noel.
- Section 14.—John Lybrook, Seth Sherwood, Jacob Ingelwright, J. Lollar, B. Chandler, C. Sparks, E. Brewster, W. Kelley, A. Bronson, L. Cotua.
- Section 15.—J. Lollar, A. Irvin, S. Broadway, — Ailwin, William Kelly, — Sparks.
- Section 16.—School section.
- Section 17.—H. Weaver, D. Weaver, F. Weaver, E. and W. M. Mason, S. Redding.
- Section 18.—D. and J. Weaver, J. Juday, H. B. Hoffman, E. and W. M. Mason.
- Section 19.—E. and W. M. Mason, C. Bruyn, D. Dalrymple, J. Henry, B. Vaughn, W. Hardmans, J. Jack, J. Vaughn.
- Section 20.—W. Wagner, S. Redding, D. Wagner, J. Juday, J. Hoover, N. Wilson, J. Webster and H. M. Connell.
- Section 21.—J. Weaver, Hoffman and Bacon, A. Gordon, H. Mitchell, A. Babcock, D. Dalrymple.
- Section 22.—Samuel Cooper, D. Weaver, J. Ingelwright, J. Weaver, Hooper and Ingelwright, R. and J. Martindale, D. Rolfe, Stevens H. Hoffman.
- Section 23.—Arthur Bronson, David Rolfe, J. Jennings, John Hunter.
- Section 24.—B. Likin, D. Brown, W. Broadhunt, Ralph Camp, N. Cotton, J. Carberry, B. Chandler, R. Camp, W. Cotton.
- Section 25.—J. Stephens, William Broadhunt; remainder of section university lands.
- Section 26.—University land.
- Section 27.—N. Roe, J. R. Brown, T. W. R. Lister, S. Stevens, Daniel Roe, S. Weaver, L. Wilson.
- Section 28.—W. Betson, W. B. Allen, E. Lineback, L. Olds, — Angel, S. Rinehart.
- Section 29.—J. H. Phillips, — Flanigan, J. W. Baldwin, W. D. Jones, J. Vaughn.
- Section 30.—Oliver Dalrymple, J. H. Ives, G. W. Gillett, J. A. Stokes, E. and W. M. Mason, J. Slater, James S. Tanner.
- Section 31.—J. Needham, William Hall, — Egbert, H. Wilson, D. Whitlock, J. Vaughn, James S. Tauner.
- Section 32.—William Proud and McNeal, W. C. Fish, E. Egbert, James Fallow, H. Brown, J. Vaughn, D. Whitlock, C. Egbert, R. W. Landon, J. Ryan, — Briant.
- Section 33.—J. Egbert, S. S. Russell, H. T. Bacon, A. Smith, J. P. Jones, B. Egbert, — McIntire, J. Martindale.
- Section 34.—J. Martindale, Jr., R. Martindale, D. R. Platt, H. Bennett, R. Babcock.
- Section 35.—C. Cowles, A. C. Day, C. Smith, S. M. Blake, G. A. Demont.
- Section 36.—D. Sanford, A. Jordan, W. Smith, A. C. Day, O. Nichols.

The first person to locate land where the village of Buchanan now is, and probably the first in the township, was Charles Cowles, a native of Vermont, who came to Niles in 1832, and in June, 1833, came to this place alone, located his claim, cleared a piece of land, built a cabin, and made his home here. He was a single man, and hired Leonard Madron and his family to take charge of his cabin. In the spring of 1834, John Hatfield, from Wayne Co., Ind., with his family, came in and located a claim of 80 acres adjoining Mr. Cowles'. These two claims were in the southwest quarter of section 25. Charles Cowles built a shingle-mill on the creek where afterwards was the little grist-mill owned by Mr. Wallin, and where Pears' mill now stands, a little way up from the mouth of the creek. Hatfield, with a Mr. Atkins, built a saw-mill a little later on McCoy Creek, where stands the factory now known as "Fort Sumter." Mr. Cowles is still living here. Mr. Hatfield was interested in the church of the United Brethren and one of the

constituent members, and afterwards moved to Minnesota. Mr. Cowles and Mr. Hatfield sold their claims to Dr. C. C. Wallin in 1835.

Russell McCoy emigrated from Virginia to Pokagon Prairie, and boated on the river in the summer season, and in winter worked for the Indians. He was at Niles a short time, and in the summer of 1833 came to the mouth of McCoy Creek, where he cleared a small place, located a claim, and returned to Niles. In the spring of 1834, in company with Hiram Wray, he built a log cabin. The Indians at first did not like it, and tore down the cabin, but soon after became satisfied. The cabin was finished, and in the fall the family of Hiram Wray moved into it. The next year they built a saw-mill at the mouth of the creek. Mr. McCoy married, in 1835, Miss Fanny Kingery, of Pokagon Prairie, who died in 1837, leaving one son, James I. McCoy, who is living West. Soon after her death he sold out, and with his father's family (who lived east of Niles) moved to Missouri, but did not like the country and soon returned. In 1839 he married Esther, daughter of John Weaver. They settled between Niles and Pokagon on a farm, and lived there a year and a half, when Mrs. McCoy's father, John Weaver, having bought a quarter of the school section, they moved upon the farm and remained there fourteen years. He then sold the farm, and kept store in Buchanan. About 1856, in company with David Weaver and his brother, William McCoy, he bought 200 acres on the bank of Clear Lake, and built a steam saw-mill. After about one year and a half he sold out his interest and bought the hotel in Buchanan, which he kept but a short time, and moved to Charlottesville. He afterwards returned, and lived in Buchanan until his death, which occurred in December, 1873. His widow, Mrs. McCoy, still lives in the village.

Andrew C. Day was born in Norwich, Conn., Jan. 11, 1805; he went with his parents when young to Delaware Co., N. Y., where he remained until thirty-two years of age. He owned a grist-mill in that county, and also learned the trade of gang-sawyer, and shipped lumber in large quantities to Philadelphia. When nineteen years of age he had charge of a mill employing 40 men. He emigrated to this township in 1836, and bought the claim of Leonard Madron, it being the place where he still lives. Here he worked on the saw-mill for a time, and in 1839, in connection with John Hamilton, erected a grist-mill about five rods below the present mill of Pears & Rough. This mill had two run of stones. After three or four years he sold to John Hamilton, and became interested in the dry goods and grocery business in the village. He was engaged for about a year with the engineering corps on the preliminary survey of the Michigan Central Railroad. In 1875 he was interested in the manufacture of wagons, in the manufactory now conducted by the Rough Brothers. He is now engaged in farming, and owns a valuable farm east of the village. He still lives, with his wife, on the land they first settled, when the country was almost a wilderness.

John Hamilton, a millwright by trade, came from Virginia to Michigan, and worked a year or two in a mill on the Dowagiac Creek, near Niles. He came to Buchanan in 1839, and with Mr. A. C. Day built the grist-mill. He

laid out the first village plat, which was recorded in 1842. He lived here until his death.

Edward Ballengee, although not as early a settler in the township as some, has been identified with the earliest movements of several of the townships. He emigrated from Virginia to this county in 1833, and located at Berrien Springs when but two houses were there. He erected a dwelling-house and store together, his being the third dwelling there. He moved his stock of goods from Crawfordville, Ind., in April, and his family came in June. He was very instrumental in getting the court-house located at that place, and was elected supervisor two terms. In the fall of 1843 he moved to Buchanan, and was elected supervisor, and justice of the peace in 1844. In 1845 he lived in Lake township, where he was foremost in getting that town set off, and was its first supervisor. In 1850 he removed to New Buffalo, and was general purchasing agent of the Michigan Central Railroad. He went to California in 1853, remained until 1865, and was justice of the peace two terms in Todd's Valley, Placer Co., Cal. In January, 1866, he settled in Buchanan, where he still resides, and has been justice from that time to the present, except in 1878.

L. P. Alexander came from Belfast, Allegany Co., N. Y., with Price Cooper and his family. The latter settled on section 35, where F. F. Clarke now lives. Mr. Alexander afterwards married his daughter. They reached here Oct. 16, 1841, and Mr. Alexander worked at his trade, which was that of a carpenter and joiner, until 1849, when he engaged in the boot and shoe business, and soon after in merchandising. In 1846 he was elected constable and treasurer, and held the position till 1851. In that year he was elected supervisor, and was re-elected in 1852. He served again from 1861 to 1866, and from 1871 to 1878. In 1860 he was elected a member of the Legislature, a member of the Constitutional Convention in 1867, and of the Senate in 1870. He was postmaster from 1863 to 1866. He was again appointed in 1877, and still holds the position.

John D. Ross emigrated from Indiana to Niles in the spring of 1834, where he worked a short time and went to Valparaiso, and in 1847 came to Buchanan. He purchased five acres on the south side of Front Street for \$9000. The north side of Front Street was the village plat. The Day & Hamilton mill, a distillery run by — Hilton, and the dwelling-house now owned by Mr. Terriere were the only buildings south of Front Street, and they were on five acres purchased by Mr. Ross. He opened a store in a building that stood where Roe's block now stands. In 1864 the banking business was commenced by Ross & Fulton, and Mr. Ross still continues in the business.

Garrett Morris emigrated from Ohio with his parents to Terre Coupée Prairie in 1833, but returned to Ohio. In 1837 he went to New Carlisle, Ind., and opened a grocery business, and in 1840 was appointed postmaster. Schuyler Colfax, then a lad of seventeen years, was deputy under him for three years, and at that time Colfax was in the habit of noting down, in an ordinary brown-paper journal, the doings of Congress,—storing up facts that were of benefit to him in after years.

In the spring of 1844, Mr. Morris moved to Buchanan, and in 1846 built on Main Street the first hotel in the village. He also conducted a store where the bank building now stands. About 1856 he sold the hotel to Russell McCoy. He sold the store in 1859 to John C. Dutton, but afterwards repurchased it. He afterwards became agent for Call, Lockwood & Co., book publishers, of Hartford, Conn. He still lives in Buchanan.

David Sanford settled, in 1836, on a small farm near the village of Buchanan, and died in a few years after coming in. His brothers, Philo and Levi, lived in Bertrand.

Watson Roe came from Henry Co., Ind., about 1836, and settled on what is known as the David Gitchell farm, in the township of Bertrand, in section 18. He did not purchase, but a little later came to Buchanan and purchased 160 acres in section 27, now owned by A. Broceus. He removed to Iowa in 1852. His brother, Eli Roe, came to Portage Prairie at the same time, and in 1856 removed to the village of Buchanan. His son, Dr. J. M. Roe, removed to this village in 1851, commenced practice, and is still living there. J. H. Roe, E. J. Roe, and J. J. Roe, sons, are all living in Buchanan.

T. J. Hunter came with his father and family in 1831, and located on the east bank of St. Joseph River, in Niles township, where Mr. Batchelor now owns. Thomas J. came to the west side of the river in 1835, and bought 120 acres on section 10, where Joseph Fuller now lives. He was active in the formation of the Methodist Church. He lived on the farm until 1876, when he moved into the village, and still resides there.

John Weaver emigrated from Ohio, in 1829, to a place about two and a half miles above Bertrand township, on the St. Joseph River; and in 1837 he located a claim of 160 acres, where his son Samuel now lives, on section 28. Jacob Weaver, a son, owns land on sections 7, 8, 17, and 18. Esther, a daughter, married Russell McCoy, who lived for many years in Buchanan. Fanny married Charles Clark, of Indiana. Elizabeth married Andrew Ingleswright, who settled in 1835 or 1836 on section 7. Polly married John Juday. David Weaver, another son, lives in Dayton, Bertrand township.

Joseph Coveny, a native of Ireland, emigrated to this country, and in 1836 located 40 acres, where he now lives, on section 5. He now has 600 acres. Of thirteen children, ten are living,—four are on the farm, two are settled near. John Gordon came from Portage in 1835, and settled on the same section. Absalom Colvin and his brother Wilkinson came from Ohio in 1838, and located on sections 3 and 4, where his son George now lives. He was justice of the peace, and went to California in 1852, and died there. John Ingleswright settled near St. Joseph River, on section 2. He manufactured wooden bowls and sold them through the country. His son Andrew lives south of James Coveny.

Godfrey Boil, in 1834 or 1835, settled on section 6, where his descendants still reside.

John Juday, a tanner by trade, came from Portage in 1834 or 1835, settled on sections 7 and 18, and married Polly, daughter of John Weaver. David and Jacob Weaver, sons of John Weaver, came to this part of the town. Jacob

still lives here. David lives in Dayton. Charles McCracken emigrated in 1837 from Pennsylvania, and located 160 acres on section 5, where he still lives. In 1835, Amos Irwin took up 160 acres on section 16, where Alvan Tomlinson now lives. In 1854 he moved to Dayton, Ohio.

Jacob Dragoo emigrated from Virginia in 1834, and bought a claim of Robert Martindale. He lived here about three years when his wife died, and he soon followed. Uel Dragoo, a son, emigrated in 1835, with his wife and son, and bought a claim of 80 acres, adjoining his father, of — Blake. He lived there two years, when, upon the death of his father, he with his brothers and sisters returned to Virginia. The lands they had located having been selected as seminary lands, \$20 per acre was the price settled upon, and they gave them up. After about two years, or in 1840, John F., Peter, and Michael returned to Buchanan. John F. settled near Wagner's saw-mill, and in two or three years bought on Moccasin Flat on the river, and was boating for several years. Michael went to California. Uel came back from Virginia in 1844, and bought 47 acres on Moccasin Flat of a Frenchman by the name of Louis Cotoway, who married an Indian woman, and had lived there many years. In 1835, Uel went to California, but soon returned, and is now living in the village of Buchanan.

Hiram Weese emigrated from Ohio to Indiana, and in 1837 to Niles township, on the east bank of St. Joseph River, opposite the village of Buchanan, with his wife and three children, and in 1840 crossed the river, bought two acres of land of Jacob D. Dutton, and built a log house and blacksmith-shop where Thomas Long lives. Here he opened the first blacksmith-shop in this section. He afterwards built the log house in which school was kept two terms in 1841 and 1842 by Angelina Bird. Mr. Weese was justice of the peace and postmaster in an early day, and is still living here. At that time Jacob Dutton lived under the hill at a place near the little mill of Rough & Pears. Robert Cathcart lived on the farm where Edward Smith now lives; John Hamilton, where John D. Ross resides; A. C. Day, where he still lives; Charles Cowles, where Horace Black resides; John Hatfield, east of Mr. Day. Dr. C. C. Wallin lived near Dutton, but soon afterwards moved to Terra Coupée Prairie, where he practiced medicine.

Darius Jennings emigrated from the State of New York and lived for a time at St. Joseph, during which time he was boating on the river. He was a captain of the "Mishawaka" at a later date. In 1835 he located on section 26, now owned by Hannah Montague, it being at the foot of Moccasin Bluff. He was well educated, was the first township clerk, and filled other positions of importance. He afterwards removed to Illinois and died there. Seth Sherwood was the first settler on the flats. His son Alonzo is living in Weesaw, and was an early settler in this township.

Sebastian Overacker in 1834 settled up the McCoy Creek, near what became known as the Martindale settlement, on section 34. He afterwards removed to Bertrand. William McIntyre settled in 1835 on section 33, now owned by S. Allen.

Enos Holmes in 1836 emigrated from Attica, N. Y., purchased 135 acres, part of it in the township of Buchanan, but the greater part being that part of section 4 in Bertrand

that was ceded in 1828. He went back to New York State and lived there ten years, but in 1846 returned and lived here till his death, May 23, 1869. He has three sons living—Eli, on the homestead, John G., editor of the *Berrien County Record* at Buchanan, and Daniel, who lives on section 36, in Weesaw.

#### ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIP.

The town derived its name from James Buchanan. At the time of its organization there were about 27 families in its territory. The act by which it was erected (approved March 11, 1837) provided that "all that portion of the county of Berrien, being so much of township seven south, of range eighteen west, as lies west of the St. Joseph River, be, and the same is hereby, set off and organized into a separate township, by the name of Buchanan, and the first township-meeting shall be held at the house of C. C. Wallin in said township."

In accordance with this act the first meeting was held at the house of Charles C. Wallin, near the mouth of McCoy's Creek, on the 3d of April, 1837. C. C. Wallin was chosen moderator of the meeting, and Darius Jennings clerk. Fifteen votes were cast, and the following officers were declared elected: Supervisor, Charles C. Wallin; Township Clerk, Darius E. Jennings; Assessors, S. S. Sherwood, John Hatfield, and D. E. Jennings; Highway Commissioners, Charles Cowles, Absalom Colvin, William Wagner; Constable, A. C. Day; Collector, A. C. Day; Justices, Wm. Wagner, A. Colvin, D. E. Jennings, Charles Cowles.

#### EARLY ELECTIONS.

The second election was a special election for members of Congress. It was held at the house of John Weaver, Aug. 21 and 22, 1837. Twenty-seven votes were cast, 25 for Hezekiah G. Wells and 2 for Isaac E. Crary.

The third election was held Nov. 6th and 7th, and was a general election for Governor, State senators and representative, judge of probate, and register of deeds. At the election 31 votes were cast, of which Charles C. Trowbridge received, for Governor, 24, and Stevens T. Mason 7.

The first Presidential election after the organization of the town was held Nov. 2 and 3, 1840. Sixty-one votes were cast; 31 were cast for the Democratic electors and 30 for the Whig electors, this being the exciting campaign of "Tippecanoe and Tyler, too." Every voter was undoubtedly out, and from 15 votes the number had increased fourfold. At the Presidential election in 1844 it had increased to 124; in 1848, —; in 1852, 215; in 1856, 260; in 1860, 340; in 1864, 410; in 1870, 520; in 1874, 483; in 1876, 739.

The first census taken in the township was in 1840, when the population was 264; in 1845, 630; in 1854, 1282; in 1860, 1728; in 1864, 1974; in 1870, 2973; in 1874, 2880.

The report of the last census (1874) showed 15,613 acres in farms, 179 farm-houses, 2321 acres of wheat growing, and 444 acres devoted to orchards. The same census shows the following crops raised in 1873: 28,481 bushels of wheat, 44,999 bushels of corn, 12,707 bushels of all



other grain, 6896 bushels of apples, 1040 bushels of peaches, 300 bushels of pears.

The valuation of the township by the first assessment (1837) was: real estate, \$45,000; personal estate, \$1377; total, \$46,377. Valuation of real estate, 1876, \$461,730; personal estate, \$92,795; total, \$554,525. Increase in thirty-nine years, \$508,148.

The following-named citizens of Buchanan have represented their districts in the Senate and House of Representatives: Senate, L. P. Alexander, 1870; Levi Sparks, 1873; Francis H. Berriek, 1875. House of Representatives, John Grove, 1845-46; John D. Ross, 1854; L. P. Alexander, 1860; E. M. Plimpton, 1866.

Member of the Constitutional Convention of 1867, L. P. Alexander.

Below is given a list of persons who have held the offices of supervisor, clerk, and justice of the peace in Buchanan, from the organization of the town to the present year:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1837, Charles C. Wallin; 1838-40, Darius Jennings; 1841, Henry Vanderhoff; 1842, John Juday; 1843, Darius Jennings; 1844, Edward Ballengee; 1845-46, John Juday; 1847, George A. Demont; 1848-51, John Juday; 1852, Wm. S. Merrill; 1853, L. P. Alexander; 1854, Wm. S. Merrill; 1855, Darius Jennings; 1856, John Newton; 1857-58, L. P. Alexander; 1859-61, Charles Clark; 1862, John Newton; 1863, George F. Hemingway; 1864-72, Amos H. Clark; 1873, Lorenzo P. Alexander; 1874, Nathaniel B. Collins; 1875-77, L. P. Alexander; 1878, Leander P. Fox; 1879, Benjamin F. Fish.

#### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1837, Darius Jennings; 1838-40, Aaron Chapman; 1841-43, John Martindale, Jr.; 1844, David Sanford; 1845, J. H. Service; 1846, G. W. Reynolds; 1847-48, John Grove; 1849-53, Hiram Weese; 1854-56, Nathaniel B. Collins; 1857-58, Zalmon Lyon; 1859, Hiram Weese; 1860-62, Wm. S. Merrill; 1863, Daniel M. R. Wilson; 1864, Wm. S. Merrill; 1865-67, Norris H. Merrill; 1868, Enoch A. Ross; 1869-72, David E. Hinman; 1873, Wm. H. Epley; 1874, L. P. Alexander; 1875-77, Willie E. Plimpton; 1878, Levi Sparks; 1879, Albert A. Worthington.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1837, John Juday, Robert Cathcart were elected; 1838, Robert Cathcart, Robert Martindale; 1839, Absalom Colvin, Hezekiah Mitchell; 1840, Darius Jennings, John Gordon; 1841, John Martindale; 1842, Hiram Weese, John F. Drago, John Juday; 1843, Edward Ballengee, Absalom Calvin; 1844, Watson Roe; 1845, David Fish; 1846, Hiram Weese; 1847, Absalom Colvin; 1848, David Wagner; 1849, John F. Drago; 1850, Hiram Weese; 1851, Darius E. Jennings; 1852, Nathaniel B. Collins; 1853, Amos Clark; 1856, Nathaniel B. Collins, Hiram Weese; 1858, Jacob Henry; 1859, Amos H. Clark; 1860, Wm. S. Merrill; 1861, John Newton; 1862, Peachy Wray; 1863, Alonzo Sherwood, Enoch A. Ross; 1866, Edward Ballengee, John T. Beckwith; 1867, Enoch A. Ross; 1868, Wm. S. Merrill, David Fisk; 1869, David Fisk, Jacob E. Miller; 1870, Edward Ballengee, Levi W. Spaulding; 1871, David E. Hinman, Levi W. Spaulding; 1872, Levi W. Spaulding; 1873, Nathaniel B. Collins, Lorenzo P. Alexander; 1874, Edward Ballengee; 1875, L. P. Alexander, John T. Beckwith; 1876, Levi W. Spaulding; 1877, J. T. Beckwith; 1878, John W. R. Lister, Henry Bradley; 1879, John C. Dick, Edward Ballengee.

#### SCHOOLS.

School District No. 1 in the township was organized May 12, 1838, and comprised sections 33, 34, 35, 36, 25, 26, 27, and 28, being four miles long and two wide. The first school inspectors were Aram Chapman and John Martindale.

The first school-house was built of logs, and stood on the east side of section 25, on the west bank of McCoy Creek. It was burned in 1841. Another was built in its place. Angelina Bird was the first teacher in the township. She taught in a log house that had been used by Mr. Wallin, near the mouth of McCoy Creek. After the log house was built in the village she taught there. Jane Porter also taught in this house. Eggleston Smith was the first to teach in the frame house built in 1843, and was succeeded by Theron Bordan, Charles Comstock, W. S. Merrill, and others. In 1843 a frame school-house 20 by 40 was erected on lot No. 23, in the John Hamilton plat, at a cost of \$170. The district at that time contained 50 children of school age.

In 1854 the district reorganized, under the law, into a union school district, and erected a two-story brick edifice, 30 by 40 feet in size, at a cost of about \$4800. At this time there were in the district 160 children enrolled. In 1871, the number of children having increased to 570, between the ages of five and twenty years, it was deemed advisable to erect a new school building, and the present edifice was erected, 78 by 80 feet on the ground and three stories high above the basement, containing eight recitation-rooms and one lecture-room, and furnished throughout with modern furniture. It is located on the south side of Chicago Street, on a square containing seven acres, in the southwest part of the village. The lot was purchased of N. B. Collins for \$3500, and the building was erected at a cost of \$36,500, including the furniture and fixtures.

In 1869, \$5000 was raised by tax; in 1870, \$2000; and in 1871 bonds were issued to the amount of \$32,000. The indebtedness is at present \$22,000.

The report of the director of the district (L. P. Alexander) for the year 1878 gives the number of children in the district between the ages of five and twenty years as 620; school attendance, 360; 1 male teacher, 7 female; amount paid teachers, \$2845. Receipts for the year: on hand, Sept. 1, 1877, \$1965.66; 2-mill tax, \$601.04; primary-school fund, \$322; tuition of non-resident scholars, \$39.30; district tax, \$6207.80. Expenditures: on bonded indebtedness, \$4662.79; other purposes, \$1280.47.

The records of the union school district for the years prior to 1870 are lost. From that year to the present time, the list of trustees of the district is as follows:

- 1870.—William Osborne, Charles Clark, William Pears, George H. Richards, John D. Ross, and William S. Merrill.
- 1871.—William Osborne, Charles Clark, William Pears, John D. Ross, George H. Richards, and W. W. Wells.
- 1872.—William Osborne, George H. Richards, Seth Smith, William Pears, John D. Ross, W. W. Wells.
- 1873.—Alfred Richards, W. W. Wells, J. J. Van Riper, George H. Richards, Seth Smith, William Pears.
- 1874.—Alfred Richards, W. W. Wells, J. J. Van Riper, William Pears, J. M. Roe, S. Smith.
- 1875.—Alfred Richards, W. W. Wells, J. J. Van Riper, L. P. Fox, L. P. Alexander, J. M. Roe.
- 1876.—F. H. Berriek, E. M. Plimpton, J. M. Roe, L. P. Alexander, L. P. Fox, William Pears.
- 1877.—L. P. Alexander, L. P. Fox, F. H. Berriek, E. M. Plimpton, J. M. Roe, William Pears.
- 1878.—L. P. Alexander, L. P. Fox, J. M. Roe, William Pears, F. H. Berriek, E. M. Plimpton.
- 1879.—E. M. Plimpton, J. J. Van Riper, L. P. Alexander, L. P. Fox, J. M. Roe, William Pears.

School District No. 2, known as Sherwood District, was organized May 12, 1839, to comprise sections 22, 23, 14, 15, 16, 11, 12, and 13, and the south half of sections 9 and 10, being nearly three miles square. The first school-house in this district was built in 1839. The children in the district at that time between four and eighteen years of age were 9 in number. In 1875 there were 50 children from five to twenty years of age. A frame school-house was erected, at a cost of \$100; wages of teachers, \$158; total expenditure, \$204.47.

William Kelly, director of District No. 2, makes the following report for 1878: number of children of school age, 48; number of children attending school during the year, 58; non-resident pupils, 11; one frame school-house, value, \$1000; teachers employed, 2; amount paid teachers, \$274; total expenditure for the year, \$336.51; no indebtedness.

School District No. 3, known as Marshall District, was organized April 6, 1839, and formed principally from Districts Nos. 1 and 2. It had at that time 13 children between four and eighteen years of age. In 1873 a brick school-house was erected, at a cost of \$1800.

R. Morgan, director of District No. 3, reports for 1878: 55 children of school age, 48 attending school; 1 brick school-house, capacity 60 sittings, value \$1800; 2 teachers employed; amount paid teachers, \$184; received of primary-school fund, \$27; total expenditures, \$268.86. No indebtedness.

School District No. 4, known as Coveney District, was organized March 1, 1845, to comprise sections 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, and the northwest quarter of section 18. The first school-house was built of logs, and was erected in the year of the organization of the district. It then had 14 children enrolled. The present frame building was erected in 1868, at a cost of \$1200.

L. W. Spaulding, director of District No. 3, makes the following report for 1878: 46 children enrolled, 40 attending school; 1 frame school-house, with capacity of 50 sittings, value \$1000; 2 teachers employed; amount paid, \$155; primary-school fund received, \$25.50; total expenditures, \$278.07. No indebtedness.

School District No. 5, known as Wagner District, was organized March 1, 1845, and had at that date within its territory 16 children of school age enrolled. The first building was frame and built in the same year. The present house was built in 1864, at a cost of \$1200.

E. A. Beckwith, director of District No. 5, reports for 1878 as follows: 90 children enrolled, and 62 attending school; 1 frame school-house, capacity of 100 sittings, value \$800; 2 teachers employed; amount paid teachers, \$228.75; received from primary-school fund, \$44.50; total expenditures, \$440.04.

School District No. 6, known as Inglewright District, was organized July 15, 1848, and contained at that time 17 school-children; a frame school-house was erected that year. In 1876 a brick edifice was erected at a cost of \$1000.

Frank Bolton, director for this district, reports for 1878: 38 children enrolled, 30 of whom attend school; 1 brick school-house, with a capacity of 56 sittings, value \$1000;

2 teachers employed; amount paid teachers, \$118; primary-school fund received, \$19.60; total expenditures, \$245.18. Indebtedness, \$500.

School District No. 7, known as Kelsey District, was organized in 1875. A brick school-house was erected in the same year, at a cost of \$900; 35 school-children of school age were enrolled.

In 1878, Erastus Kelsey, director for this district, reported 40 children enrolled, of whom 31 attended school; 1 brick school-house, with 52 sittings, value, \$1000; 2 teachers employed; amount paid them, \$80; received primary-school fund, \$19; total expenditures, \$809.07. No indebtedness.

Besides the districts above mentioned there are three fractional school districts in Buchanan, with houses in other towns.

The first primary-school money drawn from the State funds for this township was in June, 1839, and amounted to \$32.64. At that time there were three school districts, and the apportionment of money was as follows: District No. 1, \$18.56; District No. 2, \$5.76; District No. 3, \$8.32,—being divided on a basis of 64 cents to each scholar.

The office of school inspector in the township of Buchanan has been held, since 1837, by the following-named persons, viz.:

1838, Aram Chapman, John Martindale; 1839, Robert Cathcart, John Martindale; 1840, Darius E. Jennings, Robert Cathcart, Charles C. Wallin; 1841, John Martindale, Darius Jennings, Hiram Bennett; 1842, John Martindale, Robert Cathcart, Hiram Bennett; 1843, Alonzo Bennett, A. B. Staples; 1844, John Grove, John Martindale, Jr.; 1845, John Martindale, Jr.; 1846, John Grove, William C. Harrison; 1847, John Grove, John Martindale; 1848, Daniel B. Mide; 1849, William S. Merrill; 1850, Andrew Foster; 1851, 1853-54, William S. Merrill; 1855, John M. Roe, William B. Perrott; 1856, David Fisk, John Newton; 1857, John Newton, J. M. Roe; 1858, William M. Roe; 1859, Hezekiah J. Home; 1860, William M. Roe; 1861, Elisha B. Sherwood; 1862, William M. Roe; 1863, Stephen P. Bassett; 1866, William M. Roe, Emory M. Plimpton; 1867, Emory M. Plimpton, David Fisk; 1868, David Fisk; 1869, William M. Roe; 1870, Charles H. Parketon; 1871, John M. Roe, John Graham; 1872, Emory M. Plimpton; 1873, John M. Roe; 1874-77, Emory M. Plimpton; 1878, John M. Roe; 1879, George H. Richards.

The office of superintendent of schools was created in 1876. The first superintendent was Robert H. Rogers, elected in 1876, and again in 1877. His successors were Nathan Johnson, in 1878, and Herbert C. Smith, in 1879.

#### VILLAGE OF BUCHANAN.

In the original plat of the township sections 25 and 26 were reserved for university lands, and were not in the market until about 1834.

Charles Cowles and John Hatfield had settled on the southwest quarter of section 25, and in 1834 they sold their claims to Dr. C. C. Wallin. In 1842, John Hamilton pre-empted the southwest quarter of the same section. John Hamilton, Wm. Murphy, David Ralph, Joseph McKnight, and Ira Mansfield purchased the southeast quarter of section 26. David Sanford purchased the northwest quarter of section 36, and Andrew C. Day the northeast quarter of section 35.

On these four quarter-sections and in the valley of Mc-

Coy's Creek the village is built. The creek that passes through it was named from Rev. Isaac McCoy, of the Carey Mission, who, before the permanent settlement of the whites, preached to the Indians on a bluff near here, and for whom they built a wigwam. An Indian village was located in the east part of the present village, and on the small creek that passes through section 36. This village was called Mis-a-qua-kee, and contained about 25 families.

The village plat, bearing date July 21, 1842, was laid out by John Hamilton, and contained about 40 acres. The additions that have been made to its limits are as follows: first addition, A. B. Staples, in 1844; second addition, Joseph De-mont, in 1845; third addition, ———, in 1852; fourth addition, Andrew C. Day, in 1857; fifth addition, Ross and Alexander, in 1864; sixth addition, J. D. Ross, in 1865; seventh addition, A. B. Clark, in 1865; eighth addition, Nathaniel B. Collins, in 1868; ninth addition, Mrs. Wm. Bainton, in 1868; tenth addition, Lewis Bryant, in 1868.

The village now has the St. Joseph River for its northern boundary, and the property of the Michigan Central Railroad for its southern.

At the time the village was laid out John Hamilton owned and operated a flour-mill on the stream. His dwelling was where John D. Ross' residence now is. Andrew C. Day lived where he still resides. A store on the site of Ross block was occupied by Stanley & Staples.

The village of Buchanan was incorporated in 1858, and the first charter election was held March 3d, in that year. The officers elected were James M. Matthews, President; Wm. Rook, C. J. Ingersoll, Dr. J. M. Roe, Alfred Richard, Michael Hess, and Daniel Totten, Trustees; George W. Begole and John W. R. Lister, Assessors; B. R. Blanchard, Treasurer; N. B. Collins, Clerk.

The officers of the village of Buchanan from its incorporation to 1879 have been as follows:

#### PRESIDENTS.

1858, James M. Matthews; 1859, John D. Ross; 1860, Daniel Perrine; 1861-63, John D. Ross; 1864-65, N. B. Collins; 1866, John D. Ross; 1867-71, Charles Clark; 1872, William Pears; 1873-76, Charles S. Black; 1877, William Pears; 1878, Francis H. Ber-  
rick; 1879, John D. Ross.

#### TREASURERS.

1858, B. R. Blanchard; 1859, Nathaniel Hamilton; 1860, George W. Begole; 1861, D. E. Terriere; 1862, Garrett Morris; 1864, J. H. Roe; 1865, Homer N. Hathaway; 1866, Sanford Smith; 1867, L. P. Fox; 1868, S. Miller; 1870, L. P. Fox; 1871, S. L. Estes; 1872, Willis Rise; 1873-75, Orange W. Rose; 1876, Samuel Miller; 1877, A. F. Ross; 1878, Horace H. Kinyon; 1879, George Churchill.

#### CLERKS.

1858-59, Nathaniel B. Collins; 1860, H. B. Strong; 1861, J. M. Albert; 1862, Alonzo Bennett; 1863-66, Enoch A. Ross; 1867-70, N. H. Merrill; 1871-72, W. D. Kingery.

#### RECORDERS.

1873, Daniel Terriere; 1874, D. A. Wagner; 1875-79, Benjamin D. Harper.

#### TRUSTEES.

1858.—William Rook, C. J. Ingersoll, John M. Roe, Alfred Richards, Michael Hess, Daniel Totten.  
1859.—John D. Miller, Charles Clark, Daniel Totten, Lorenzo P. Alexander, William F. Molsbury, John M. Roe.  
1860.—John D. Miller, Michael Hess, J. M. Russell, John M. Albert, William H. Bainton, L. P. Alexander.

1861.—C. J. Ingersoll, P. M. Weaver, John M. Roe, Andrew C. Day, William B. Perrott, Alfred Richards.  
1862.—Andrew C. Day, John D. Miller, William B. Perrott, Julius M. Russell, Charles Clark, Hezekiah H. Howe.  
1863.—G. F. Hemingway, L. P. Alexander, T. L. Ross, R. M. Buseo, M. Hess, J. M. Roe.  
1864.—Daniel Totten, George R. Treat, William G. Boswell, J. M. Roe, M. Hess, L. P. Alexander.  
1865.—Andrew C. Day, L. P. Alexander, John D. Miller, George R. Treat, David Totten, William Pears.  
1866.—Homer N. Hathaway, John M. Roe, Elijah Beck, L. P. Alexander, John D. Miller, A. C. Day.  
1867.—Nathaniel B. Collins, William Pears, Charles S. Black, John M. Roe, A. C. Day, Elijah Beck.  
1868.—Almer S. Harrington, John Graham, Isaac C. Elston, William Pears, Charles S. Black, N. B. Collins.  
1869.—Benjamin E. Bins, Richard A. De Mont, Theoderick F. C. Dodd, John M. Roe, John Graham, Almer S. Harrington.  
1870.—John M. Roe, H. H. Howe, B. E. Bins, ——— Richards, William Pears, R. A. De Mont.  
1871.—Benjamin E. Bins, Hezekiah H. Howe, William Osborne, William Pears, John Graham, John D. Ross.  
1872.—Charles S. Black, Andrew C. Day, John D. Ross, William Osborne, B. E. Bins, ——— Osborne.

#### MEMBERS OF THE COMMON COUNCIL.

1873.—Charles H. Rea, Solomon L. Beardsley, John D. Ross, John Buckles, Benjamin E. Bins, Andrew C. Day.  
1874.—Hiram N. Mowrey, Ezra M. Griffin, B. E. Bins, J. D. Ross, John Buckles, C. H. Rea.  
1875.—Hezekiah H. Howe, Richard A. De Mont, Harrison Glover, B. E. Bins, E. M. Griffin, H. N. Mowrey.  
1876.—B. E. Bins, George Churchill, Horace F. Strong, R. A. De Mont, E. M. Griffin, H. H. Howe.  
1877.—Nathaniel Hamilton, Hiram N. Mowrey, George Richards, B. E. Bins, George Churchill, Horace F. Strong.  
1878.—John M. Roe, Nathaniel Johnson, Charles S. Black, Nathaniel Hamilton, W. D. Kingery, H. N. Mowrey.  
1879.—William Osborne, Orange W. Rose, Charles H. Rea, Nathaniel Johnson, Charles S. Black, John M. Roe.

The population of the village when organized was 860, and in 1878 was 2300. It contains 463 private residences (11 of them of brick), one hotel (the Dunbar House), six churches, one public hall, four three-story brick business blocks, with stores, offices, etc., twenty-two store and business frame buildings, two livery-stables, three flouring-mills (water-power), four smith-shops, broom-handle factory, one cabinet-wareroom, two planing-mills, one machine-shop, three steam saw-mills, one saw-mill, one coffin-factory, three bedstead and furniture-manufacturing establishments, two wagon and carriage manufactories, two paint-shops, iron-foundry, zinc collar-pad manufactory, two carpet-stretcher factories, one cheese-factory, two harness-shops, three shoe-shops, three millinery-stores, three tailor-shops, three dressmaking-shops, three photographers, three dentists, three barber-shops, two bakeries, three markets, one brick manufactory, four dry-goods stores, six groceries, three drug-stores, two clothing-stores, two boot- and shoe-stores, two hardware-stores, two jewelry and watchmakers' stores, one newsdealer, four physicians, four lawyers, and two newspaper offices.\* The number of persons employed in the different manufacturing establishments is over 400; capital invested, \$288,000; value of products per annum, \$375,000.

The *Berrien County Record* and *Buchanan Reporter* are published here. The history of these papers, as well as others which have existed here, will be found in the general history, with the press of the county.





JOSEPH COVENEY.



MRS. JOSEPH COVENEY.

### JOSEPH COVENEY.

Joseph Coveney, whose portrait with that of his wife is given upon this page, was born in Cork Co., Ireland, March 29, 1805. He attended the parish school until thirteen years of age, when he went to learn the trade of weaver. Wishing to see and know something of America, he, at the age of twenty years, without friend or companion, crossed the ocean in the ship "William," and landed in New York May 26, 1826. Here he learned the carpenter's trade, and worked at it four years in that city. He removed to Schuylkill Co., Pa., and worked at the same trade there for two years.

In 1833 he moved to Portage, and continued at his trade at Egberttown or Portage Point. He built a house there; but the project for forming a settlement failing, he removed to the edge of the prairie (Portage), remaining one year. In the fall of 1837 he married Louisa, eldest daughter of William and Polly Roe, and in the spring of the same year settled on forty acres of land on section 5, Buchanan township, having previously purchased it at the land-office at Bronson. Here he decided to stay and make for himself and family a home. This land was not improved. He commenced his work by erecting a log cabin, in which he and his estimable wife commenced life. He has since built a more commodious house and improved his farm, adding to the original forty acres from time to time until he now owns six hundred acres, located northwest of the village of Buchanan. Wheat is the principal product of his farm, three thousand bushels being raised in 1877.

In 1849, when the "gold fever" raged in this part of the country, Mr. Coveney, with two others in company, started for California, going the overland route with an ox-team. Arriving there, they went to work in the mines at Weaver-ville. Mr. Coveney remained only one year, returning home by the way of Panama and the Mississippi River. His stay in California, though short, was not an unprofitable one financially.

He has made two trips to Europe, and visited England and Ireland, the last trip taking with him his little daughter

Leila. He has retired from active life, his sons attending to the farm. Mr. and Mrs. Coveney have had thirteen children, of whom ten are living.

In character Mr. Coveney is industrious, economical, and of a genial temperament. By hard work and prudent management he has become possessed of a fine farm. He is esteemed as a shrewd business man, a good, practical farmer, an intelligent citizen, and is respected by his neighbors. In his religious belief he is an ardent follower of Thomas Paine, and, like Ingersoll, never hesitates to express his views at any time or place. He erected a beautiful monument in Oak Ridge Cemetery at Buchanan, at a cost of nearly three thousand dollars, upon which were inscribed some of his peculiar sentiments. We quote his own words concerning the same and its defacement: "I was raised in a Catholic country, but it remained for a Protestant Christian to try to refuse me the right to maintain this monument in a public cemetery. I had inscribed thereon some of my sentiments on the religious fallacies of the day. These inscriptions, not coinciding with the views of the orthodox element, a minister's son, urged on by Christian hate, marred and defaced the monument in a barbarous manner. His act received the commendation of some of the strictly orthodox, though it is but fair to say that all of the most prominent citizens of Buchanan condemned the act, and used every effort to prevent its repetition."

The monument is a model of workmanship, and an ornament to the cemetery, although at a close view the stain of the tobacco juice mars its beauty.

Mrs. Coveney has labored side by side with her husband in all the vicissitudes of the new country, where they made their early home, and has ever been an industrious and faithful wife; a helpmate, indeed, to her husband, rearing a large family of children. The work of a mother in such a life is no easy task, but with ever willing heart and hand she ministered to all the wants of the family in sickness and health. Hers is a labor of love, receiving its reward in the love and respect of all her family and friends.



## MANUFACTURING INTERESTS.

*Wagon-shops of Rough Brothers.*—Before 1845, Jacob Luther commenced the manufacture of wagons where the large factory stands to-day. He soon sold to Cronymiller Brothers, who in 1849 sold to Alfred Richards. He soon associated with him as partner Nathaniel Collins. John D. Miller purchased the interest of Mr. Collins, and soon after that of Mr. Richards. In the spring of 1865, E. H. Beardsley & Son purchased the Miller works, and increased their capacity. The factory was destroyed by fire, and the red buildings were then built. In 1872 a stock company was formed, including the property of the Beardsleys, called the Buchanan Manufacturing Company, with a capital of \$40,000, and afterwards increased to \$60,000. The stock was taken by all classes in the village, and in the same year the present brick building was erected, 40 by 129 feet and four stories high. In 1875, A. C. Day and Solomon Rough purchased the entire interest, and in June, 1879, the Rough Brothers, consisting of William R. Rough, Solomon Rough, and George H. Rough, purchased the works. About forty hands are constantly employed here in the manufacture of carriages and wagons of all kinds. About 1500 wagons are manufactured annually. Sales are made mostly in Michigan, but to some extent in all parts of the South and West.

*The Buchanan Manufacturing Company.*—In 1872 a stock company was organized in Buchanan, with a capital of \$20,000, for the purpose of manufacturing furniture. It consisted of about thirty stockholders. Andrew C. Day was President, and William Osborne, Secretary and Manager. The buildings now occupied by the company were purchased of Smith & Ellison, who erected them for the manufacture of handles. Business was immediately commenced, and about twenty-five or thirty men were employed. The capital was afterwards increased to \$40,000, the number of men employed was increased to seventy, and the capacity of the machinery was doubled.

The factory is located on Oak Street, near the Michigan Central Railroad, with warehouses near the track. Bedsteads and lounges are a specialty. Goods are shipped to all parts of the West and South. William Pears is President, and William Osborne, Secretary and Manager.

*The Furniture-Factory of Black & Willard.*—This firm was first started in New Buffalo in 1855, and removed to Buchanan in 1860; commenced work on Oak Street, and removed to the building known as "Fort Sumter" in 1872, and in 1875 to the building where they now are. In 1865, Mr. Willard sold to C. S. Black, and the firm continued till 1872, when H. S. Black took the entire business and continued alone till 1875, when Mr. Willard again became a partner, and the business is now carried on by them. They manufacture furniture of all kinds, bedsteads principally. Goods sold West and South.

*The Furniture-Factory of Spencer & Barnes.*—This business was commenced in July, 1874, by B. H. Spencer, with whom A. Willard was associated for a short time. In December, 1875, John E. Barnes became a partner, and the business has been continued by them to the present time. Their specialties are bedsteads, centre-tables, and hat-racks. Their sales are made in Canada, and in the West-

ern and Southern States. Their factory is on the east side of the street leading to the depot.

*The Zinc Collar-Pad Company* was formed in 1870 by Dexter Curtis (the patentee), George H. Richards, and Henry Gilman. They manufactured first near the depot. In 1875 they built the present brick building. Mr. Gilman retired from the firm in 1878. Nearly 2,000,000 pads of the company's manufacture are in use, and they manufacture annually from 7000 to 10,000 dozen.

## SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Buchanan Lodge, No. 68, F. and A. M.*, was instituted Jan. 13, 1854, with Caleb J. Ingersoll, W. M.; S. M. Griswold, S. W.; Nathaniel Hamilton, J. W. The lodge has at present 85 members. Its meetings are held in their hall in Day's block. The present officers are Seth Smith, W. M.; Truman Franklin, S. W.; John Parrott, J. W.; Wilbin Smith, Treas.; L. P. Alexander, Sec.

*Summit Lodge, No. 192, F. and A. M.*, was instituted Jan. 10, 1867, with Nathaniel Hamilton, W. M.; John D. Miller, S. W.; C. C. Bartlett, J. W. The present officers are H. N. Mowrey, W. M.; Frank Munson, S. W.; J. N. Murphy, J. W.; George Churchill, Treas.; and B. D. Harper, Sec. Present membership, 79. Meetings are held in Burns' block.

*Buchanan Lodge, No. 75, I. O. of O. F.*, was instituted Sept. 5, 1855. The present officers are W. W. Smith, N. G.; Leroy H. Dodd, V. G.; John C. Dick, Sec.; W. J. Himes, Treas. Present number, 62. Meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall, corner of Front and Main Streets.

*Buchanan Lodge, No. 186, I. O. of G. T.*, was instituted May 10, 1875, with 49 charter members. The officers were J. H. Roe, W. C. T.; Mrs. A. J. Russell, W. V. T.; J. T. Terflinger, W. C.; Joseph M. Rogers, W. Sec.; Miss Maria Sampson, Asst. Sec.; Walter J. Himes, F. Sec.; L. P. Fox, Treas. The lodge has a present membership of 65. Its meetings are held in Good Templars' Hall, in Roe's block. The present officers are J. H. Roe, W. C. T.; Mrs. A. J. Eykner, W. V. T.; Walter Osborn, Sec.; H. J. Hall, Treas.; Miss Emma Smith, F. Sec.

## POST-OFFICE AND POSTMASTERS.

The post-office was first established at the village of Buchanan in 1848, when John D. Ross was appointed postmaster. The office was kept in the store of Mr. Ross, and the business of the first quarter amounted to \$12. In 1852, Hiram Weese was appointed. His successors have been John D. Ross, Dr. C. J. Ingersoll, William Parrott, L. P. Alexander, Howell Strong, William S. Merrill, and L. P. Alexander, who is the present incumbent. In the first six months of 1876, 19,998 stamps were sold from this office; and in the first six months of 1879, 31,063 stamps and 16,329 postal cards.

## FARMERS AND MANUFACTURERS' BANK.

In 1852, T. M. Fulton and J. D. Ross started a private bank at Buchanan, and in 1869 bought out the banking interest of George M. Colby, at Niles. Mr. Ross took charge of the business at Buchanan and Mr. Fulton at Niles. Later, Mr. Fulton sold the business at Niles and returned to Buchanan. In September, 1872, the bank became the



First National Bank of Buchanan, with a capital of \$50,000; T. M. Fulton, President; A. T. Ross, Cashier; J. D. Ross, William Pears, Jesse Helmick, George Smith, Charles Jewett, Directors. Dec. 31, 1873, the bank again became a private bank, and is now carried on by J. D. Ross & Son. The business was at first conducted in the store of Mr. Ross, but in 1865 the present brick building was erected.

#### CEMETERIES.

In 1844 a few men purchased of Mr. Mitchell an acre of land for a cemetery. The ground was surveyed by Edward Ballengee. The first person buried in it was a child of David Sanford.

July 20, 1863, a committee was appointed to examine locations and report in reference to the purchase of ground for a new cemetery. The committee reported, April 23, 1864, in favor of purchasing Warner Hamilton's lot at \$500. The report was accepted, adopted, the lot was purchased at the price named, and has since been in use as a cemetery.

#### RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS IN BUCHANAN.

*The First Presbyterian Church.*—On the 22d day of May, 1847, the following-named persons, members of the Presbyterian Church, convened at the house of Uriel Enos, in the village of Buchanan, for the purpose of making arrangements to organize a Presbyterian Church, viz.: J. D. Dutton, Jeremiah Ketchum, Warner Hooker, Uriel Enos, Charles Baker, and John Marhoff. Warner Hooker was called to the chair, J. Ketchum was chosen clerk, and the meeting "Resolved that a Presbyterian Church be organized on the 19th of June next, and that Messrs. Enos, Dutton, and Baker be a committee to procure ministerial aid for that purpose." On June 19, 1847, the meeting convened pursuant to adjournment, and proceeded to organize a church, the Rev. Luther Humphrey and Rev. P. S. Pratt being present.

Certificates of membership and dismissal from other churches were presented by the following persons, who were thereupon received as members: J. D. Dutton, Almira Dutton, Jeremiah Ketchum, Phoebe Ketchum, Uriel Enos, Emily M. Enos, Warner Hooker, Charles Baker, Francis Enos, Loretta J. Enos, Benjamin S. Enos, and Franklin B. Wallin. The organization was named the First Presbyterian Church of Buchanan. Warner Hooker, Jeremiah Ketchum, and Uriel Enos were elected elders, and Uriel Enos clerk.

October 2d of the same year the Rev. Porter B. Parry was engaged as stated supply, and remained until February, 1853. While the church was under his care the meeting-house was built. From this time the church was in a low condition until August, 1859, when the Rev. Elisha B. Sherwood was appointed by the Presbytery of Kalamazoo to examine into its condition, and if possible to build it up. It was resolved by the members to resume active and energetic efforts to that end. Several joined the church by letters from other churches. A call was extended to the Rev. E. B. Sherwood to become their pastor, Oct. 9, 1859. He accepted, and entered upon his duties November 1st in the same year, and remained until the latter part of 1861.

Nov. 8, 1863, Rev. William Fuller entered upon the

pastorate for one year, but remained until early in 1870. The Rev. Henry Bridges was pastor during the year 1871. His successor was the Rev. W. W. Wells, who is still the pastor.

Services were held for seven years in private houses. In 1849-50 the first church edifice was built where it still stands. After the Rev. Mr. Parry discontinued his relation as pastor, in 1853, and the church began to languish, the house was leased for five years to the Methodist denomination. In 1859 the church again occupied their house of worship, and have continued to do so to the present time.

During the ministry of the Rev. Mr. Parry 30 members were added to the church. During the discontinuance of services, and until the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Stoddard, the membership declined, and but 16 remained on the church roll at the time of his coming. During his ministry 39 were added to the church. In 1865, 97 members had joined the church from the beginning, and at this writing it has a membership of 120, with a Sunday-school of 100 members, of which R. H. Rogers is superintendent.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—In the summer of 1831, John Hunter, his wife Martha, their son Thomas J., and their daughter Sarah, presented letters from a church in Ohio to the Methodist Church at Niles, then under the charge of the Rev. William Sprague. They lived in the township of Niles, on the east bank of the St. Joseph River. Very soon after their joining the church at Niles prayer-meetings were held at the house of John Hunter, and these soon developed into the formation of a class. The Rev. J. F. Robe, an itinerant minister, was the first to preach in that section, and he was succeeded by Thomas McCool and Richard Meek.

A few years later, in 1842 or 1843, the settlement at Buchanan had become of some importance, and the remaining portion of this class, with others, organized a class at Buchanan, at the house of David Sanford, who was the first class-leader. T. J. Hunter, David Sanford, James Swift and wife, James Slater and wife, Mr. Hobart and wife, and Mrs. Dr. Harrison were among the first members. Services were held at private houses, and at the old school-house, until the new school-house was built, in 1843, when they were held there. In 1853 the society leased the Presbyterian meeting-house for five years. In 1860 the present brick edifice was erected. The ministers succeeding Mr. Meek were the Revs. Hill, Shaw, Lee, Campbell, Osborne, Prouty, Glass, King, R. Pengilly, J. F. Robe, J. W. Robinson, V. G. Boynton, L. M. Edmonds, — Harder, W. G. Hoag, J. Fowler, — Jakeway, T. George, J. B. Berry, William M. Copeland, N. L. Brockway, Levi Tarr, A. J. Rumell, H. Worthington, and A. J. White, who is the present pastor. The church contains 100 members, with a Sunday-school of 150 members, of which W. A. Leveson is Superintendent; Miss Emma Smith, Librarian; Miss G. Michel, Secretary; B. T. Murray, Treasurer.

*Church of the Disciples of Christ.*—The people in the village of Buchanan who were interested in the views of the above denomination met together in the school-house on the 17th day of December, 1854, for the purpose of

organizing a church. The following persons gave in their names, and were constituted a church under the above name, viz.: A. W. McCollum, Elizabeth McCollum, Margaret McCollum, Cornelius Sparks, Susannah Sparks, Newton Baldwin, Sophia Bates, William P. Birdsall, Adelia Birdsall, John M. Roe, Robert M. Roe, Harriet Roe, Jesse J. Roe, Ann M. Roe, Levi Sparks, Maria Sparks, and James Case. A. W. McCollum and William P. Birdsall were chosen elders; Newton Baldwin and Levi Sparks, deacons.

The first pastor was Rev. William M. Roe, who remained in charge until about 1862. He was succeeded by the Revs. — Marsh, — Jackson, D. H. Gary, Jesse J. Roe, A. J. Wilson, H. T. Morrison, and William P. Birdsall, who is the present pastor. Since the organization 536 persons have been admitted to the church. Three hundred names are still on the books. About 100 are in actual attendance. A Sunday-school containing about 75 members is in connection with the church, of which Jesse J. Roe is superintendent. Services were held in the school-house until 1859, when the present church was built.

*Church of the United Brethren.*—This church was organized about 1846, by the Rev. Josiah Terrel and the Rev. Mr. Babcock. The Rev. Mr. Terrel had preached at this place occasionally prior to the organization of the class. The first members were John Hatfield and wife, Mrs. Charles Cowles, Mrs. Hess, Mrs. Capt. Ingersoll, and Mrs. Maria Dutton.

Meetings were first held in John Hatfield's house (that stood across the street from where Andrew C. Day lives), and part of the time in a carding-mill, across the street from where the grist-mill owned by John Kingery now stands. In 1849 the present church was erected, being the first church built in the village.

The church was supplied by ministers on the circuit until Sept. 15, 1866, when it was detached from Berrien circuit, and made a mission station. Rev. George Sickafoose was the first pastor after the change. He was succeeded by J. T. Bartmess, W. Terfingler, George Sickafoose, and Robert C. Barton, the present pastor. The church numbered 57 in 1873, but is now reduced to about 25.

The following are among the ministers who preached while the church was under charge of the circuit: Jesse B. Sleight, Emsley Lamb, — Snip, — Johnson, — Wells, — Freeman, and — Thomas.

*Advent Christian Church.*—In 1851 or 1852 the Rev. D. R. Mansfield and Mrs. M. S. Mansfield, his wife, came to the village of Buchanan from Union Mills, Ind., and preached the views of the Adventists in the church of the United Brethren. From that preaching began the movement that soon culminated in the organization of a society, by Alfred Richard, J. R. Lister, George B. Cottrel, and 12 or 15 others, mostly members of other denominations. Services were held in the church of the United Brethren for a time, afterwards in the ball-room of the hotel. J. R. Lister was the first pastor. Mr. and Mrs. Mansfield were here quite often for a year or two; and in about 1856, Rev. Mr. Mansfield and his wife became settled over the church, and remained for some time. They were succeeded by Darius

Matthewson, Dr. F. H. Berrick, J. S. Mendell, and George Cole.

About 1863 the church membership had increased to 282, and the society was the largest in the West. About this time the *Voice of the West* was started here. A division on doctrinal questions sprang up, and about 100 went off from the main body and organized a society. About 1855 their first house was built, west of the Disciples' church. In May, 1866, the present building was commenced, and was dedicated Nov. 3, 1867. Mrs. M. S. Mansfield delivered the dedicatory sermon.

The church was legally organized April 5, 1866. H. J. Howe, Philip Holler, E. M. Griffin, P. M. Weaver, Sanford Smith, Alfred Richards, and J. V. Himes were elected trustees. In 1875 the membership was 147.

*Baptist Church.*—A church of this denomination was organized in the spring of 1869, with about 40 members. The right hand of fellowship was given by the Rev. Mr. Russell. The services were held in the Methodist church. The regular meetings were held for several years in the hall now known as Kinyon Hall and in the Advent church. The pastors who have served the church are the Revs. — Russell, — Maybin, and — Smith. The church is now without a pastor, and has but few members. Covenant meetings are held once a month.

*Dunkards.*—This denomination was numerous through the northern part of Indiana at an early day, and upon the advent of settlers here some of them held their views. A prominent man among them was John Weaver, at whose house they met as early as 1838–39, he being the minister who preached to them. The society soon increased to 12 or 15 members. Meetings were held in the Berks school-house, Oronoko, and Wagner school-house, Buchanan, and they are still held there, as the society has no meeting-house nearer than the Portage Prairie brick church. They now number about 80 in the county, and communion and soup feast are held once a year at Jacob Weaver's house. The name Dunkard is universally applied to this sect, but they are otherwise known as "The Brethren."

*The Church of God.*—The history of this church is contained in the history of the Advent Church until March 16, 1853, when a division occurred, and from that there were two distinct societies. This one contained 13 members, and they retained the church. J. W. R. Lister and R. Bronson were elders in the old society, and continued to hold the position in this society. J. W. Lister was the first pastor after the division, and he was succeeded by the Rev. J. W. Stevenson, F. H. Berrick, and J. W. R. Lister, who is the present pastor. The society has now 31 members.

*Religious Societies in Buchanan in 1865.*—A report made by the Rev. William Fuller in 1865 showed the numbers and condition of the several religious denominations in Buchanan at that time to be as follows:

United Brethren, about 20 members; a house, and preaching once in two weeks.

Methodist Episcopal Church, about 80 members; a good brick house, and preaching every Sabbath.

Presbyterian Church, about 56 members; a comfortable house, and preaching every Sabbath.

Campbellites, or Christians, about 180 members; a good house, and preaching every Sabbath.

Second Adventists, No. 1, about 135 members; a poor chapel, and preaching two Sabbaths in a month.

Second Adventists, No. 2, about 50 members; the same poor chapel, and preaching every other Sabbath.

Besides, there were two local Protestant Methodist ministers, with a few brethren of that order, and some Universalists.

#### SERVICES OF A BUCHANAN LADY IN THE WAR OF THE REBELLION.

Mrs. Hannah L. Carlisle was born in Phelps, Ontario Co., N. Y., in 1823. The family removed to Orleans Co., N. Y., when she was four years old. In 1850 she came to Cassopolis, and in 1852 married Daniel Carlisle, and in 1854 removed to near Buchanan on a farm. Upon the breaking out of the war of the Rebellion she was strongly impelled to offer her services as nurse, and upon the organization of the 2d Michigan Cavalry she left her home and family and went with the regiment, Nov. 14, 1861, to St. Louis. After reaching the city she was assigned to the regimental hospital, where she remained until the regiment was transferred to Fort Donelson, in February, 1862, when she returned home. On the night of July 14, 1862, she received a telegram from the Sanitary Commission in Chicago, asking her to report for duty the next day. She did so, and was met by a gentleman at the train, and reported at the Massasoit House. Orders were soon received to report at Post Hospital No. 1, Columbus, Ky., under the charge of Dr. Ransom, of Roscoe, Ill., and Gen. Quimby, in charge of Fort Halleck. Mrs. Carlisle remained at this hospital until the close of the war, when she entered the Freedmen's Department as superintendent and teacher, and remained in that connection one year, and returned to the duties of home July 3, 1866. Mrs. Carlisle is now living in Buchanan.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### HON. LORENZO P. ALEXANDER

was born in Angelica, Allegany Co., N. Y., Aug. 10, 1820. His father, Thomas P. Alexander, was a native of New Hampshire; was a soldier in the war of 1812, and a descendant of the Alexanders of Glasgow, Scotland. His mother's maiden name was White; born and raised in Boston, Mass., and was a descendant of the Whites of Belfast, Ireland. When he was seven years old, his parents moved from Angelica to Belfast, in the same county, locating on the Genesee River. His father was postmaster in Belfast from 1833 until 1857. In September, 1841, at the age of twenty-one, he left home and friends for the West, and on the 11th of October following landed in Buchanan, Berrien Co., Mich., where he still resides. At that time, what is now the village of Buchanan consisted of four cabins, a grist-mill, saw-mill, and distillery. Being a carpenter and joiner, he went to work at his trade the following winter, putting up a foot-lathe, and manufacturing splint-bottom chairs and rakes,—this being the first enter-

prise of the kind in that part of the State. In 1824 he married Miss Rachel Cooper, daughter of Price Cooper, and a school-mate in his school-days in the East. Three children were born to them,—two sons and a daughter,—viz., Theodore, who was drowned at the age of ten years; the youngest, Carlton, died of croup at the age of four years; Emily Kate is the wife of Henry C. French, a hardware merchant of Cassopolis, Mich., to whom she was married in 1870; Mrs. L. P. Alexander, died, 1859, at the age of thirty-eight years. He married Miss Helen M., daughter of John Burns, of Belfast, N. Y., Aug. 26, 1860. They have one son, John Burns, now twelve years of age.

In 1846, Mr. Alexander erected a frame dwelling-house on Main Street, Buchanan, in which he resided until 1864. In 1848 he, in company with J. D. Ross, erected a two-story stone building on Front Street, Buchanan, engaging the same year in the manufacture of boots and shoes in company with Dr. C. C. Wallin. In 1850 he engaged in the general mercantile business with J. D. & T. S. Ross, under the firm-name of J. D. Ross & Co. In 1858, T. S. Ross withdrew from the firm, after which the business was conducted in the firm-name of Ross & Alexander. They did a large business, averaging seventy thousand dollars annually for several years. In 1858 they erected the first three-story brick block in the place, on the corner of Front and Main Streets, and occupied it as a store-room. In 1862 they built another brick block, called "Union Block," on the south side of Front Street. During the erection of the second block the first one burned down. In 1862 they purchased forty acres of land within the corporate limits of the village, laying the same out in town lots, being known as Ross & Alexander's addition to Buchanan, which is now a central part of the residence portion of the village. In 1865, Mr. Alexander built a two-story brick dwelling-house on Front Street, which he occupied as a residence until 1873, then selling it for six thousand five hundred dollars. In 1875 he again erected a dwelling on Front Street, in the most central part of the town, in which he now resides. Mr. Alexander was the contractor and builder of the High School building erected in 1871, built of brick, three stories high above basement, costing thirty-five thousand dollars; and personally superintended the work.

Politically, he was in early life a Democrat, voting with that party until 1852. But when the South, aided by Northern Democrats in Congress, repealed the Missouri Compromise, thereby extending slavery into free territory, he ceased to act with that party, and in 1854 took part in the newly-organized Republican party, being one of its first and most active supporters in the place. In 1844, at the age of twenty-three, he was elected captain of Company E, 27th Regiment Michigan militia, to which he was commissioned by Governor Barry; he was soon promoted and commissioned by the Governor, colonel of the 28th Regiment, 14th Brigade, 17th Division of Michigan militia.

Mr. Alexander enjoys the respect and confidence of those around him, as will be seen by the many offices of honor and trust he has been called by them to fill,—all of which he has filled with honor to himself and satisfaction to his friends. From 1847 to 1851 he was constable and township treasurer. In 1851, 1853, and 1855 he was elected



supervisor. From 1848 to 1859, director of schools. In 1860 was elected by the Republicans of the second district of Berrien County (comprising Niles City) representative in the State Legislature, and was, therefore, a member of the House of Representatives during many long and extra sessions, on account of the important legislation during that time of war.

From 1863 to 1866 he was postmaster of Buchanan during Johnson's administration; was removed by Postmaster-General Randall for not complying with a request to sanc-

Niles, one of the most popular men in the county, and the hardest to defeat. In 1873 he was one of the commissioners appointed by the President to receive proposals and locate the site for the government buildings and post-office buildings at Grand Rapids, Mich. He was elected supervisor of Buchanan in 1872, '73, '74, '75, '76, and 1877; was assessor of the village and justice of the peace during the time; and, as the records show, was elected each time by nearly a unanimous vote. All of these offices he resigned in 1877. He is now a member of the school board



Photo. by H. E. Bradley, Buchanan.

*A. Alexander*

tion the so-called Philadelphia Convention, he being opposed to allowing late rebels to occupy front seats in the councils of the nation. In June, 1864, he was chosen one of the Michigan delegates to the Republican National Convention held at Baltimore, Md., which nominated President Lincoln, and was honored by the convention with a position on the committee to wait upon the President and other nominees, and formally notify them of the action of the convention.

In 1870 he was elected State senator from Berrien County, his competitor being the late Hon. R. C. Paine, of

and director of the graded and high school, which position he has held for the past five years.

In 1877 he was commissioned by President Hayes postmaster of Buchanan, which office he now holds. He was for many years one of the village trustees.

After all these years of labor, Mr. Alexander—now fifty-nine years of age—is an active, stirring business man, and it is the earnest wish of his many friends that his days may be long on the earth, and that when, at last, his sun sinks behind the western horizon, it may descend to rise in the first resurrection.

#### JACOB J. VAN RIPER,

of Buchanan, Mich., attorney at the Berrien County bar, was born at Haverstraw, Rockland Co., N. Y., March 8, 1838. His parents were John and Leah Van Riper; his father an inventor of some repute, and a manufacturer of woolen goods. Jacob J. went to New York at an early day, and continued to reside there and at Brooklyn until he was nineteen, then removed to Cass Co., Mich.

He received a good academic education in New York, attending the New York Conference Seminary and Collegiate Institute. After his removal to Michigan he taught school, and in 1860 commenced the study of law, attending law lectures in the University of Michigan in 1860-61, and was admitted to practice in January, 1863, opening an office in Dowagiac, Cass Co., where he practiced until September, 1872, at which time he removed to Buchanan,

where he now resides. Some of the most important cases in this section of the county have been given him. He has also had an extensive practice as a jury advocate, and has in this been eminently successful. While abhorring political rings and trickery, he has been more or less interested in politics.

During the war he held the office of deputy collector of

road aid schemes of the State. These arguments were highly spoken of by the press of Detroit and other places, and he received letters of congratulation from Governor Crapo and others. Since that time he has refused all offices except in the line of his profession. In the fall of 1876 and 1878 he was elected by the Republican party



Photo, by H. E. Bradley, Buchanan.

JACOB J. VAN RIPER.

internal revenue for Cass County, and subsequently that of assistant assessor of internal revenue.

In 1867 he was elected a member of the Constitutional Convention of the State of Michigan, in which he was next to the youngest member. While serving on the judiciary committee and the committee on bill of rights he gained considerable reputation by his arguments against the rail-

prosecuting attorney for Berrien County, which position he now holds.

In November, 1858, he married Miss Emma E. Bronner, an estimable lady of New York Mills. They have one son and two daughters. Mr. Van Riper is a hard student and worker in his profession. He has a large confidential business, and has made his life a success.

#### GEORGE H. RICHARDS

was born in Bristol, England, July 10, 1817. His father, Henry Richards, was a native of Bath, England, and his mother, Sarah Burge, of Bristol, England. Both were of Quaker parentage, his mother still remaining a Quaker, and living at this date, 1879. The family moved to this country when the subject of this sketch was an infant, settling in Delaware, near Wilmington. When he was eight or nine years old the family returned to England on account of the father's health, remaining there about a year and a half. During that time he attended a Quaker school, then returned to New York City. Most of the time during which the family remained in the city he attended an academy between Harlem and Manhattanville, receiving early a fair English education. When he was about thirteen or fourteen years of age his father moved to Pennsylvania. From there he was sent to Wilmington, Del., to attend school.

While in Wilmington he conceived the idea of learning a trade, and served a regular apprenticeship at jobbing blacksmithing at Brandywine village, Del. Shortly after becoming of age he went to New York City, and worked a short time at machine-work. From there he went to Bridgeport, Conn., and worked at carriage-smithing, remaining until the spring of 1839, when he went to Marietta, Ohio, to work at this branch of business, and following it until 1842, when he engaged in engine- and machine-work of various kinds, and also did the iron-work for several vessels; ironing two vessels at Marietta, and two at Point Pleasant, Va. One of the latter was a double-decked bark, loaded at the mouth of the Big Kanawha, W. Va., with corn, for Cork, Ireland, during the Irish famine. Feb. 27, 1845, he married Lucy Wood Rickard, of Marietta, Ohio. His family consists of eight children,—six girls and two boys,—Sarah D. Richards, Joseph L., Martha E., Lucy B., Hattie

L., Kitty F., Mary E., and George H., all living. Lucy Wood Rickard was born at Marietta, Dec. 11, 1821.

Having acquired a good knowledge of machinery, and being a practical master mechanic, he commenced setting up engines on steamboats, and going South on them during the winter. He spent several winters in the South at various places,—New Orleans, Red River, Ouachita, Yazoo River, and many bayous, in the cotton and sugar trade. Tiring of this and of being so much away from his family, he conceived the thought of moving West. Selecting a farm just outside the then small village of Buchanan, he very soon found the change from active life in mechanism and steamboating to opening up a new farm too great, and, as favorable opportunities offered, he again engaged in putting up and working machinery, and in manufacturing; the first work of importance being the running of a large saw-mill at Charlotteville, and doing its general business three summers. Other parts of the years when not compelled to be on the farm were spent in putting machinery in order in mills of different kinds and distilleries. Finding that his business was again leading him from home, and that farming was not suited to his family, he sold his farm and moved to Buchanan, engaging in merchandising. Not liking the confinement of the store, he again engaged in working upon machinery, and took charge of the factory of Smith & Elston, remaining with one of the firm until the fall of 1870, when he engaged with the patentee of the Zinc Collar Pad to mature the pad and introduce it on the market. To speak of their success it will not be amiss to state that they were the largest consumers of zinc in the West for the years 1871, '72, and '73, using in the three years over four hundred thousand pounds of zinc made expressly for them.

During the years of his life spent in Buchanan, he has been one of the representative men of the place, having been early selected in the interests of its schools, occupying the position of president of the school board most of the time, until he declined being a candidate for re-election. He has also identified himself with the prosperity and growth of the village, and its now extensive manufacturing interests, assisting the latter by freely taking stock, and serving the former as one of the members of the board of trustees for a number of years with credit to himself. In January, 1875, he became connected with the First National Bank, occupying the position of vice-president, which he still holds in the organization known as the Farmers and Manufacturers' Bank, which succeeded the First National in January, 1879.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

### BENTON TOWNSHIP.\*

Pioneer Settlers—Civil Organization and List of Officers—Highways—Benton Harbor—Village Incorporation—List of Village Officers—Fire Department—Commerce and General Business of Benton Harbor—Millburg—Societies—Schools—Religious History.

THIS township was named in honor of Col. Thomas H. Benton, of the United States Senate, March 11, 1837. In

\* By John L. Rokey.

the government surveys it is designated as town 4 south, in range 18 west. A small part of the northwestern corner of the township is cut off by Lake Michigan, reducing the area to about thirty-five and a half full sections. It is bounded on the north by Hagar, east by Bainbridge, south by Sodus, and west by St. Joseph. Benton partakes of the general characteristics of this part of the county, the surface being mainly level or slightly undulated by hills of moderate height. A limited portion is swampy, and not susceptible of cultivation without artificial drainage. In other parts the land lies high and is well drained. The principal stream is the Paw Paw River. It enters the township from the north near the centre of section 3, and flows in a tortuous course to the centre of the west line of section 18, where it passes into St. Joseph township. Its banks are low and the contiguous land marshy. Tributary to this stream are Blue and Ox Creeks, both having a general northwesterly course. The former flows from Bainbridge, near the centre of the east line, and for several miles its course in Benton is marked by high and almost precipitous banks, affording, for its volume, good water-power. It derives its name from the bluish tinge of its waters, caused by a peculiar earth found in its banks. Ox Creek is a smaller stream, and has its source in the lowlands of the southern part of the township. The surface of the township was originally covered with heavy forests of the common hard woods, and a considerable portion of pine, which made the work of clearing up the ground slow and burdensome. The soil is corresponding, varying from a light sand to a clayey loam, with small belts of stiff clay and alluvium. It is adapted for a wide range of products, and the greater portion is especially favorable for fruit culture.

### PIONEER SETTLERS.

The sturdy pioneer did not rear his humble cabin in Benton as early as in some of the adjoining townships which offered more favorable conditions for settlement; and for many years after a beginning was made the ratio of the increase of population was very small. In 1840 there were only 237 souls within the bounds of Benton, and ten years later the number had not been doubled. Jehiel Enos first came to this part of the county, with a party of seven land-seekers, in 1828, but returned to Ann Arbor without making a location. In the following year he returned to this part of the State, to assist Lucius Lyon in surveying the country between the St. Joseph and the lake, which had been but recently ceded to the United States by the Indians. In 1830 he moved to St. Joseph, but soon changed his residence to Royalton, where he resided three years. In 1834 he became the first settler of Benton, and since 1836 has resided on his present homestead, on section 13. He is the oldest settler of this part of the county, and one of the few remaining pioneers of this part of the State. Four of his children attained mature years. One of his sons, Buel, died in the army in 1863; another, Rolland, is a citizen of Pipestone; and a daughter is married to Simeon Woodruff. Joab Enos, a brother of the above, came to Benton in 1835, but after a few years moved to Pipestone, and from there to the West.

In 1836, Henry B. Enos, their father, came from New



York, but in a year took up his residence with his son, Dr. Morgan Enos, in Pipestone, where he died in 1849.

James H. Enos came from Cayuga Co., N. Y., in 1835, to look at the country, and in the spring of 1836 moved to Benton with his family, consisting of his wife and two daughters, Juliette and Matilda. The latter has been dead many years, and Juliette is the wife of L. W. Pearl, of this township. Mrs. Enos died in 1871, but James H. Enos is yet living, with Mrs. Pearl, at the advanced age of eighty-two years.

Eleazer Morton came from Medina Co., Ohio, in 1834, and settled in Kalamazoo County. The following year he moved to St. Joseph, and in the spring of 1836 to the Morton homestead, on section 18 in Benton, where he died July 4, 1864. His wife died in September, 1856. At the time of their settlement in Benton they had ten children, one of the daughters being the wife of Thomas Conger, of St. Joseph. Of the five sons, Charles A., James M., and W. E. are deceased; George C. is a resident of Chicago, and Henry C. of Benton Harbor. He is the second oldest living settler in the township, and has been very prominently identified with it from the time when a handful of struggling settlers in the forest were its only inhabitants, until its present advanced position as one of the leading townships of the county.

When the Mortons settled here the only other pioneers in this part of Benton were James Dalton, Joseph Caldwell, and John Loudon. Dalton located on 80 acres of land, on section 19, in 1835, but removed to Chicago soon after. Joseph Caldwell and John Loudon also settled on the north side of the Paw Paw in 1835. The family of the former still resides there, on the land which was improved by them, but Loudon soon after removed to another part of the country.

A year or so later James Higbee came from Ohio and settled on section 14. It is said that he purchased the first wolf-trap in the township, and by its use broke up a very troublesome pack of wolves whose depredations had caused the settlers considerable alarm. Mr. Higbee brought with him a large family, of whom James F., one of the older sons, is yet living in Benton, one of its most respected citizens. Another son, Uriel, was lost on the ill-fated "Hippocampus;" Isaac removed to Missouri; Tyler to Iowa; and Myron to the northern part of the State. Of the two daughters, one married George W. Hess, and the other Garrett Van Branklin. The former came from Ohio in 1839, and has since resided in the Millburg neighborhood.

In 1837, Benjamin Johnson, a blacksmith by trade, settled on the Territorial road on section 14, and died in this locality not many years ago. Here yet live the oldest son, J. L. Johnson, and his brothers, Byron and Benjamin. Mrs. Johnson still lives in the township with one of her daughters, Mrs. T. Walker. North of the Johnsons, Jacob Van Horn settled about the same time, but left the township some years later. Soon after, John D. Bury, Stephen, Richard, and Cornelius Stanley, J. M. Gilbert, and George King became pioneers in the northeastern part of the township, where most of them yet reside, among the most honored citizens of Benton. Jeremiah Wilder, also a New

Yorker, was a neighbor to the foregoing, but afterwards removed to Millburg.

In the fall of 1840, Phineas Pearl came from the eastern part of the State, whither he had emigrated from New York in 1836, and located on section 25 on the Jonas Barrett place. The house, which yet stands, was built the following year, and is the oldest in that neighborhood. Mr. Pearl is yet living at Benton Harbor, ninety years of age, but retaining a remarkable amount of vigor, being as active as most men of threescore years. One of his sons, James, lost his life while boating on the St. Joseph in 1844. Other sons, Lewis W., Warren H., and George N., live in the well-known Pearl neighborhood. One of the daughters is the widow of Selden Hull, and the other married James H. Jakeway, who lived on section 26, and whose family came to Benton about the same time as the Pearls. Several of the Jakeways became well known as Methodist ministers, and the family has always taken a leading part in affairs pertaining to the public good.

In the same period Teddy McCrone settled on section 27, where in the forest wilds he made a home, which he yet occupies. Dennis and Patrick Murphy and Elijah Jennings were pioneers on the same section. The latter's place was afterwards occupied by David Abbe.

On section 29, Daniel Olds was an early settler on the Samuel McGuigan place, but in 1830 he removed to California. On the same section A. J. Lake was a pioneer, and the place was afterwards occupied by Judge A. B. Leeds.

Charles Chauncey, Selden Hull, O. M. Sykes, Thomas Closson, and others came about this period, and took an active part in developing the township.

The assessment-roll of 1843 shows the condition of the settlements at that period to have been as follows:\*

Names.	Sec.	Acres.	Names.	Sec.	Acres.
John D. Bury.....	10	120	Joseph Enos.....	24	80
Jehial Enos.....	13	120	Jonas Inman.....	2	80
James F. Higbee.....	23	80	Ebenezer Jakeway....	13	80
" " ".....	14	200	" " ".....	24	80
" " ".....	22	40	" " ".....	26	110
George W. Hess.....	2	120	Benjamin Johnson....	15	80
" " ".....	13	40	William P. King.....	29	80
Elmer Jakeway.....	24	80	" " ".....	32	80
" " ".....	25	240	" " ".....	33	80
" " ".....	26	50	Barnard Leonard.....	29	40
James Jakeway.....	25	80	E. P. Mann.....	14	160
Teddy McCrone.....	27	80	Eleazer Morton.....	18	190
Phineas Pearl.....	25	160	" " ".....	20	80
" " ".....	26	80	Dennis Murphy.....	33	80
Lewis W. Pearl.....	25	160	D. and A. Olds.....	28	80
Warren H. Pearl.....	26	80	" " ".....	29	80
James Wilder.....	13	56	Francis Pannell.....	5	50
George Wilder.....	13	58	" " ".....	6	40
Thomas Conger.....	19	73	" " ".....	8	20
A. M. Chauncey.....	19	80	Jacob Van Horn.....	10	200
Joseph Caldwell.....	5	206	Nicholas Weckler.....	12	80
Robert Dickinson.....	5	78	Jeremiah Wilder.....	13	44
Joseph Enos.....	13	65			

During the three succeeding years these settlers were joined by the following persons and their families, who settled in this township on the locations as indicated in the following roll:

Names.	Sec.	Acres.	Names.	Sec.	Acres.
1844.					
Theron Graham.....	15	80	William P. Shaw.....	20	80
Myron Higbee.....	14	40	Hale Wakefield.....	16	120
Selden Hull.....	16	120	H. W. Crabb.....	25	80
Charles Hull.....	17	80	Elijah Jennings.....	27	80
Richard Stanley.....	1	124	A. B. Leeds.....	28	80
William P. Shaw.....	17	642	" " ".....	29	80

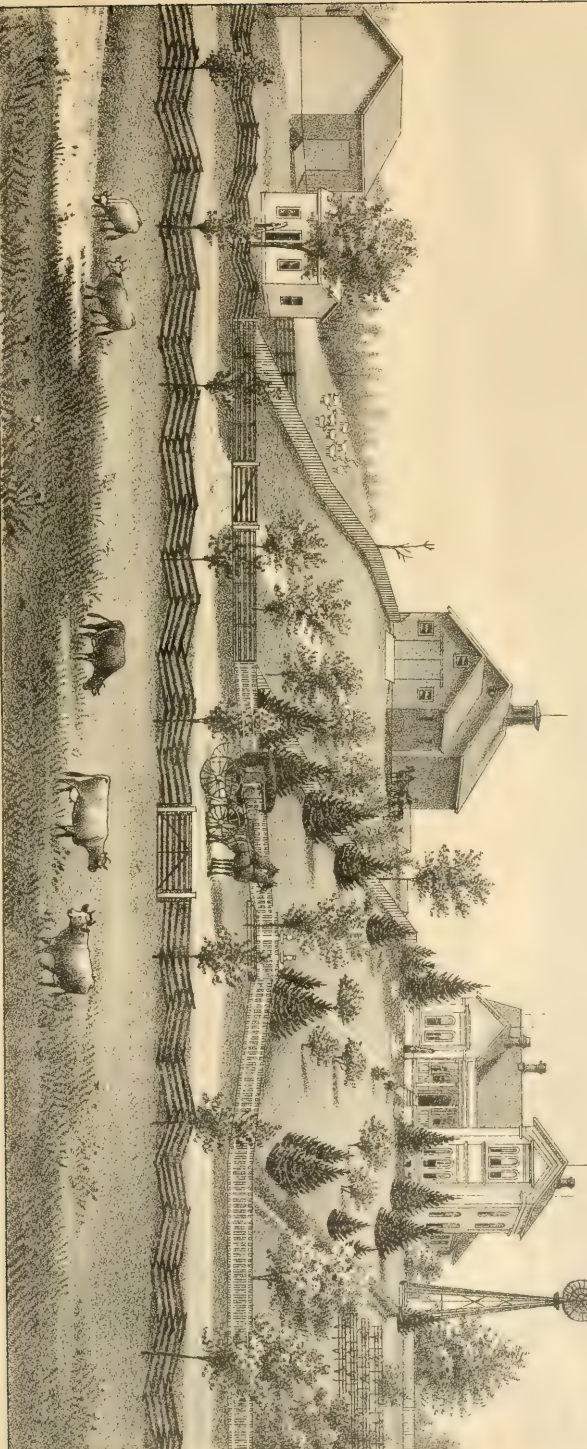
\* E. D. Cooke.



JAMES F. HIGBEE.



MRS. J. HIGBEE.



RESIDENCE OF JAMES F. HIGBEE, BENTON TWP., BERRIEN CO., MICH.





Names.	Sec.	Acres.	Names.	Sec.	Acres.
1845.			1846.		
Micajah Chaucey.....	19	75	Hamilton Carey.....	35	40
D. O. Woodruff.....	30	235	James Garrett.....	6	80
S. Stanley.....	31	40	Daniel T. Hurd.....	28	160
Cornelius Stanley.....	2	80	Marcus O. Hurd.....	28	160
Uriel Higbee.....	14	120	Patrick Murphy.....	28	80
Marvin Kent.....	15	136			

After 1855 the population increased rapidly, the inhabitants, six years later, numbering 1028, and in 1870 there were 3116; while the valuation of property had increased from \$115,893, in 1865, to \$492,854, in 1870.

#### CIVIL ORGANIZATION.

On the 11th of March, 1837, the Legislature of the State enacted that the township should be organized with the name of Benton, and that the first election should be held at the public-house in the village of Millburg; but the population was so sparse that the provisions of the act were not given effect until four years later, the township remaining connected with St. Joseph for civil purposes until 1841. In April of that year the first election for township officers was held, and 13 votes were cast. Ephraim P. Mann was elected supervisor, James F. Higbee treasurer, Jehial Enos clerk, Phineas Pearl and Jacob Van Horn justices of the peace. At the general election in the following November, which was continued two days, 25 votes were cast. The records of Benton from that time until 1863 have been lost or destroyed, making it impossible to produce a complete list of civil officers for that period. Since 1863 the principal officers have been the following:

##### SUPERVISORS.

1863-64, Samuel McGuigan; 1865-68, Isaac J. Hoag; 1869-70, Samuel Jackson; 1871-74, W. L. George; 1875, S. L. Van Camp.

##### CLERKS.

1863, John C. Gates; 1864, E. N. Hatch; 1865, George R. Hopkins; 1866-68, M. G. Lampert; 1869-70, J. P. Thresher; 1871, Wm. H. Kidd; 1872, E. D. Cooke; 1873, Silas G. Antisdale; 1874, Wells Browne; 1875, Frank D. Conger; 1876, A. B. Bisbee; 1877, Calvin M. Edick; 1878-79, George M. Valentine.

##### TREASURERS.

1863, George Peters; 1864, L. A. Hall; 1865-69, William T. Durry; 1870-72, James L. Winans; 1873-74, E. D. Cooke; 1875, Smith M. Wilcox; 1876, A. B. Leeds; 1877, Samuel Stuart; 1878-79, A. J. Kidd.

In 1879 there were 605 votes polled, and there were elected, besides the above, Benjamin F. Rounds, Commissioner of Highways; John C. Lawrence, Superintendent of Schools; George Wright, School Inspector; William Randall, Drain Commissioner; Cushman Burr, George A. Slater, John A. Scott, and L. A. Swisher, Constables.

##### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1863, Leander A. Hall; 1864, George Peters, John C. Gates; 1865, Sterne Bronson, George Parmelee; 1866, J. T. Smith; 1867, L. A. Hall; 1868, Josiah Swisher, H. L. Harris; 1869, G. W. Soles, D. T. Hurd; 1870, Martin Dodge, Jehial Enos; 1871, David J. Morrison, R. E. Hall, Alonzo Plummer; 1872, Josiah H. Swisher; 1873, Wells Browne, Mathias Hunt; 1874, Alonzo Plummer, Allen M. Randall; 1875, Josiah H. Swisher; 1876, D. V. Dix, James F. Higbee; 1877, Wells Browne; 1878, Alonzo Plummer; 1879, James F. Higbee.

##### BENTON HIGHWAYS.

Some of the roads of the township were located and built before it was organized. The well-known Territorial

road was completed in 1835, so as to permit travel. It has since been much improved, and is yet one of the principal thoroughfares. The first road from Millburg south, Mr. Cooke informs us, was built by Phineas Pearl and the Jakeways. In many localities the early roads had to be corduroyed, and for many years they were barely passable. The later roads, and the highways in general, have been improved to an excellent condition, and some of them present the appearance of suburban streets, being lined with comfortable and in many instances costly homes.

The early settlers experienced much difficulty in marketing their produce, on account of the bad roads across the marsh along the St. Joseph, and consequently the township has given liberal encouragement to the various projects for facilitating communication with distant marts. The Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad received aid to the amount of \$16,000 from Benton, and in 1871 built its line through the northwestern part of the township, a distance of about three miles, and located a station at Benton Harbor. But the greatest improvement the township has ever encouraged, and which has done more to develop its rich resources than any other measure, was

#### THE BENTON HARBOR SHIP CANAL,

which extends from the highlands in the western part of the township across the marsh to the St. Joseph River, a distance of nearly a mile. The story of the inception and progress of this enterprise was so well told by Edwin D. Cooke, in his Centennial address, July 4, 1876, that it is here reproduced entire. He said,—

"The idea of dredging a ship-canal and building a village on the present site of Benton Harbor had long been entertained by the early settlers of this township, and was discussed as early as 1834, with the engineers who in that year surveyed through Benton township the route of the Detroit and St. Joseph Railroad. But the discussion had waned, and the subject, though not entirely abandoned, lay dormant, awaiting a favorable breeze to fan it into life, until 1859, when it was revived with increased force by an apparently trivial circumstance.

"Mr. Albert James, then residing with the Hon. H. C. Morton, on returning from a trip to St. Joseph, 'stuck in the mud' about halfway from St. Joseph. Mr. Charles Hull, en route to St. Joseph, assisted in extricating Mr. James, who, covered with mud and dirt, made many discouraging remarks in relation to the future prosperity of this township. Mr. Hull, while seeking to revive his drooping spirits, gave utterance to this prophecy: 'Mr. James,' said he, 'in less than five years from now we shall see the waters of the lake extending in a ship-canal to the highland east of us, and a prosperous village on this flat and those bluffs.' The idea was so ludicrous to Mr. James that he related the prophecy, as a funny incident of his accident, on his return to Mr. Morton's. Mr. Sterne Bronson, who had recently moved into the township from Indiana, was present, and was so impressed with the feasibility of the idea that he immediately commenced the agitation of the subject, and the breeze which he created resulted in the appointment, by the citizens, of the Hon. Henry C. Morton, Sterne Bronson, and Charles Hull, as an executive committee, to take the matter in charge, raise the necessary subscriptions, etc. Mr. Morton and Mr. Bronson proceeded to Chicago and negotiated with Martin Green for the dredging of the canal. Mr. Green returned with them, and after long and careful deliberation, agreed to dig the canal on the following terms: Mr. H. C. Morton gave fifty-five acres of land lying east of Ox Creek. Mr. Charles Hull gave the undivided one-half of forty acres of land lying along the proposed route of the canal. Mr. Sterne Bronson gave the undivided one-half of a nine-rod strip in the village, a building lot on the bluff, afterwards known as the Martin Green place, and a forty-acre seminary lot at the mouth of the canal. The above-named gentlemen also agreed to keep the dredge well supplied with wood, and raise a subscription of \$1500, to be paid in cash, besides a large quantity of material for docking purposes.

The public responded promptly and liberally, and the contract, as above stated, was faithfully carried out. But the history of all *great* works indicates that the progressive road is not a smooth road, and the efforts of the dredge seemed to grow feebler day by day (as was asserted) for want of supplies. The committee were obliged to donate again, which they did, each one liberally, and yet again the work lagged and ceased, and again the committee came to the rescue with liberal donations.

"The people of Benton Harbor and Benton township owe a debt of gratitude to these gentlemen which they will ever find it impossible to pay, and it is a peculiarly gratifying fact that each member of that committee still lives to see and enjoy with us the fruits of their early exertions, and that each one, residing as he does upon a separate bluff overlooking the scene of their early labors, may, from day to day, as they view the growth of our prosperous village and see the daily arrival of steamboats and vessels upon the waters of the canal, enjoy the complete fruition of their hopes. Though their visions may have been grand, their realization is grander still.

"The canal was enlarged by Martin Green in 1868, on a contract with the township (assisted by voluntary contributions from individuals), which gave its bonds for \$10,000, payable in annual instalments, with interest. The bonds and interest have since been paid. It was deepened again during the summer of 1875, the township paying over \$4000, and the village of Benton Harbor \$10,000, which was assessed upon the rolls and raised by tax the same year. It is now capable of floating vessels of the largest size, in witness of which fact, behold the noble steamer, the 'Messenger,' which sails from this port daily."

The canal was first but 25 feet wide, and was finished in 1862. The schooner "J. C. Shank" was the first vessel to enter the canal and come up to the village. The canal was subsequently widened to more than 50 feet.

#### THE VILLAGE OF BENTON HARBOR.

The founding of this village followed in connection with the building of the canal. It was laid out in 1860 by Henry C. Morton, Sterne Bronson, M. G. Lamport, B. C. Lewis, Martin Green, Charles Hull, and others, and was named—after one of the most active promoters of the canal—Bronson's Harbor. In 1865 the name was changed to the present title as being a more suitable term. The original plat of the village has been enlarged by additions made by Windsor & Conger, Sorter & Rackliff, J. S. Kendrick, Boughton & Lewis, and others. The village is favorably located for an extensive trade, about a mile from St. Joseph, sixty-two miles from Chicago by lake and ninety-three by rail. The greater portion of the business is transacted on the flats, the adjacent bluffs being occupied by handsome residences and public edifices. The first building was put up by Fred. Spallinger in 1860, and was occupied as a grocery. It is yet standing near Gates & Bell's brick block. Later in that year, Capt. N. Robbins erected what might be called the first good building, and which also remains, being used as a public hall. The first hall or building for public gatherings was built by the Russells, and was destroyed by fire. In 1868-69 the first good brick block was put up by Bronson, Johnson & Reynolds. It is three stories high, and is generally called the "Reynolds Block." Soon after other substantial business blocks were erected, and from year to year a good class of buildings are taking the places of the wooden structures of the early years of Benton Harbor.

The growth of the village is unprecedented in the history of Berrien County. Where in 1850 was a comparative waste of land, whose assessed valuation was only \$893, with scarcely any signs of habitation, there is now one of the

most prosperous places in the State, populated by more than a thousand enterprising inhabitants. In 1875 the ground-value of Benton Harbor was \$95,310, and the State, county, and township tax was \$6275.83, in comparison with \$6.56 paid in 1850.

The various interests of the village are noted in the following pages.

In the early part of 1866, Sterne Bronson circulated a petition praying the Board of Supervisors to incorporate the village under the general law, as it had the required number of inhabitants and the general good of the place would be promoted by such a measure. At a meeting held by the citizens for this purpose, Henry C. Morton, Samuel McGuigan, A. B. Riford, and Sterne Bronson were appointed a committee to present the petition before the Supervisors, and although some opposition was manifested towards the measure, the prayer was granted and the first election for village officers was ordered to be held at the white school-house, July 7, 1866, under the inspectorship of J. F. Miller, John T. Smith, and N. Robbins. At the appointed time 83 votes were polled, and the following persons were elected as the first village officers of Benton Harbor: President, Samuel McGuigan; Trustees, Sterne Bronson, O. Hubbard, Martin Green, A. Burridge, N. Robbins, G. K. Hopkins; Clerk, N. Babcock; Treasurer, J. C. Gates; Assessors, J. T. Smith, S. C. Martin; Marshal, James Trimble; Street Commissioners, J. Van Horn, C. Hanlin, John Morrison; Fire-Wardens, Loyal Nutting, James Trimble; Poundmaster, B. C. Lewis.

In 1867 the president of the village was Samuel McGuigan, the clerk N. Babcock, and the treasurer, J. C. Gates. In 1868 these officers, in the above order, were Joseph Riford, H. S. Harris, and John Bell.

In this period the village grew rapidly, and as the general law was found defective in some of its provisions, it was deemed advisable to reincorporate Benton Harbor under a special act of the Legislature. Accordingly, the Hon. A. B. Riford, of the village, who was at that time a member from this district in the Assembly, was requested to draft a charter, which, after being approved by the board, received the sanction of the State authorities April 3, 1869. By the terms of this charter, under which the village is at present governed, the limits were fixed to embrace all that tract of land situate in township No. 4 south, of ranges 18 and 19, described as follows: "Beginning half a mile west of the quarter post on the west side of section No. 19, running thence north parallel with a line half a mile east of the west lines of sections Nos. 8 and 19, to the east and west quarter line of section 18, thence west half a mile to the quarter post in the Paw Paw River, thence north on the section line thirty chains, thence west twenty chains to the centre of section 13, thence south one mile to the centre of section 24, thence east one mile to the place of beginning, shall be known as the village of Benton Harbor."

It will be seen that half of the above-described corporation is situated in the township of Benton, and the other half in St. Joseph township.

The qualified voters were to assemble at "American Hall," on the second Monday of April, 1869, to elect a

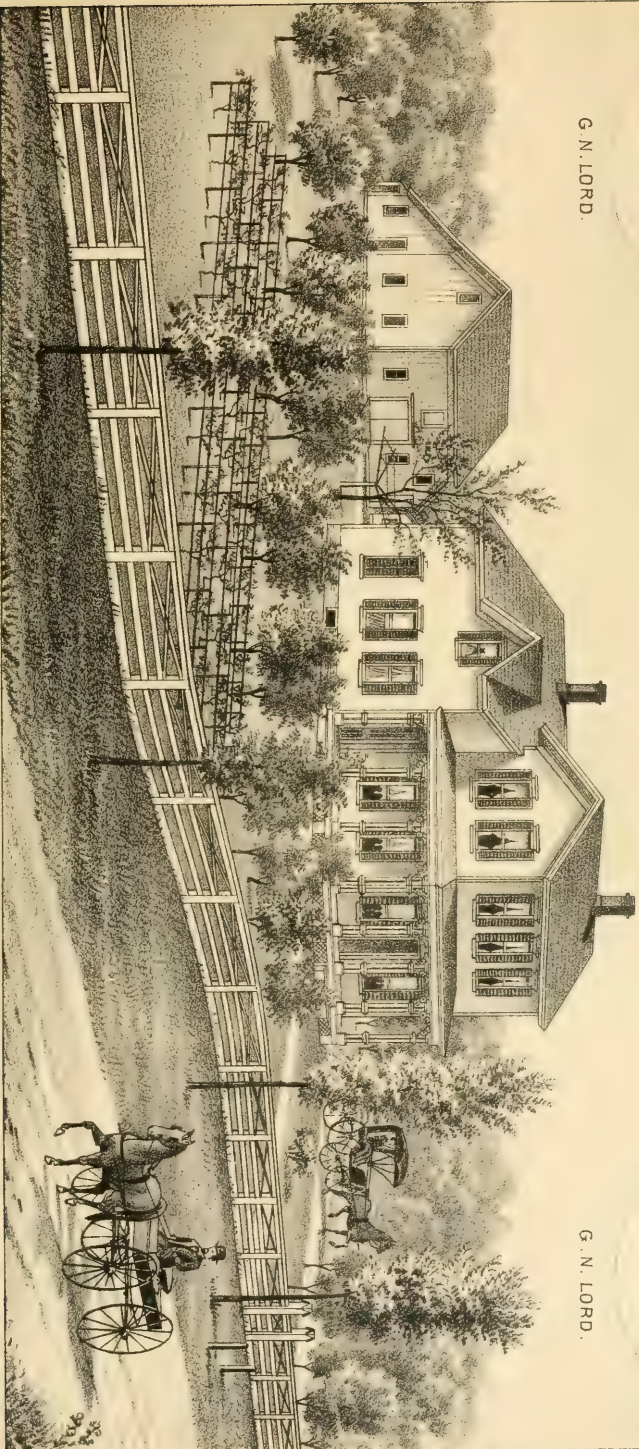




G. N. LORD.



G. N. LORD.



RESIDENCE OF G. N. LORD, BENTON HARBOR, BERREN CO., MICH





president, clerk, marshal, treasurer, assessor, three trustees for one year, and three for two years. The president of the village to be a member of the Board of Trustees *ex officio*, and to be subject to like responsibilities as the other trustees. Power is conferred by the charter to appoint fire wardens and other necessary officers, and taxation limited not to exceed the sum of one-half per cent. on the valuation, exclusive of moneys needed for highway purposes. Special taxes not to exceed two per cent.

At the election, which was held at the appointed time, 80 votes were polled, and the officers elected were: President, Joseph Riford; Clerk, H. S. Harris; Treasurer, J. L. Winans; Assessor, William J. Hess; Marshal, Jesse Johnson; Trustees (one year), H. C. Morton, G. K. Hopkins, Sterne Bronson; (two years), N. Robbins, M. Dodge, W. H. Kirby.

Since 1869 the principal officers of the village have been the following:

## PRESIDENTS.

1870, Joseph Riford; 1871, J. C. Ingham; 1872, Ira C. Abbott; 1873, Sterne Bronson; 1874-75, John Thomas; 1876-77, John C. Ingham; 1878, J. W. Leslie; 1879, H. L. Pitcher.

## CLERKS.

1870, A. B. Riford; 1871, H. H. Kidd; 1872, Alonzo Plummer; 1873-75, Edwin D. Cooke; 1876-78, Henry L. Pitcher; 1879, George M. Valentine.

## TREASURERS.

1870-73, J. C. Winans; 1874-78, John Morrison; 1879, R. M. Kinney.

## TRUSTEES.

1870, Samuel McGuigan, J. C. Abbott, Martin Dodge; 1871, T. A. Walker, E. G. Reynolds, C. Colby; 1872, Patrick M. Kinney, George Rice, John C. Ingham; 1873, N. Robbins, J. H. Darsche, N. Rounds, C. Colby, J. N. Burridge; 1874, R. R. Worden, Patrick M. Kinney, Christopher S. Boyle; 1875, John H. Graham, H. W. Williams, J. N. Burridge; 1876, C. S. Boyle, Henry Worden, John Morrison; 1877, J. N. Burridge, Henry W. Williams, Jackson Russell; 1878, R. M. Worden, B. B. Eldridge, John Almandinger; 1879, R. D. Carnahan, I. W. Conkey, S. G. Antisdale.

The assessor in 1879 was Joseph W. Weimer; Marshal, John McCormick; Deputy Marshal, George F. Rounds; Health Officer, Dr. John Bell; Fire-Wardens, Frank Nichols and John Gilson.

The village has taken a decided position in favor of law and order, and "one of the first ordinances enacted was for the suppression of intemperance within the corporate limits, prescribing as a penalty immediate confinement in the jail, and, upon conviction, the payment of a fine not to exceed \$10, and making it the duty of the marshal to immediately arrest intoxicated persons."

Steps were also taken, in the early history of the village, to insure protection against fire. On the 10th of June, 1872, an election was held to vote a special tax of \$800, to be expended in the purchase of a fire-engine. In due time the necessary apparatus was purchased, and the "Excelsior Engine Company" formed. On the 14th of March, 1874, it reported a list of 33 men, with D. W. Porter, Foreman; J. M. McCormick, Assistant Foreman; T. S. Gaylord, Secretary; P. M. Kinney, Treasurer; and W. D. Waters, Steward.

In the course of a few years the village outgrew the hand-engine which first served it, and demanded apparatus of larger capacity. Accordingly, on the 20th of June, 1876,

the corporation secured a fine Silsby steam fire-engine, at a cost of \$4000. It received the name of "Tom Benton," and in July was placed in charge of F. Van Brickel as chief engineer. Since that period an excellent fire company has been maintained, and at present (1879) the chief engineer is J. M. McCormick. A number of good reservoirs and hydrants have been provided, and the village enjoys an unusual degree of security against fire. No general conflagrations have occurred, but several mills and factories have been burned.

The corporation has greatly promoted the welfare of the village, securing good sidewalks, passable streets, and other desirable adjuncts of a well-ordered community.

## BENTON HARBOR COMMERCE.

A commodious harbor has been constructed at the village, with convenient docks and warehouses, at which a number of boats are laden daily with the products of the township, the chief articles of export being lumber and fruit. The fruit shipments in 1871 were 10,376 bushels of strawberries, 5768 bushels of raspberries, 12,046 bushels of blackberries, 256,524 packages of peaches, 943 packages of pears, 651 packages of grapes, 15,000 barrels of apples. In 1877 the shipments were as follows: 285,003 baskets and 1274 crates of peaches, 1999 baskets of pears, 31,027 baskets of grapes, 55,407 crates of strawberries, 3076 crates and 275 baskets of cherries, 27,610 crates of raspberries, 7909 crates of blackberries, 1291 crates of huckleberries, 53,399 barrels, 1672 sacks, 3399 bushels, and 526 baskets of apples, 2032 barrels of cider.

The shipments of 1879 largely exceeded the foregoing except in the item of peaches. For the week ending June 21st there were shipped by boat 29,942 half-bushel crates of berries, and the subsequent weeks show amounts almost as large.

In 1871, Benton Harbor was made a port of entry, and A. B. Riford appointed collector of customs, entering upon the discharge of his duties in the spring of that year and serving till March 14, 1877. Andrew J. Kidd was then appointed collector, and still holds that office.

Some time about 1864, Green, Allen & Co. (Martin Green, P. P. Allen, and J. P. Edwards) were actively engaged in the shipping business from this port, and had an interest in a line of good steamers to Chicago, among the boats being the "St. Joseph," "Benton," and "Van Raalte." In a few years the company retired from business and the boats were taken to other points. At present the propellers "Messenger" and "Skylark" leave every week-day evening for Chicago. Both boats are owned by citizens of the village. The "Messenger" is of 444 tons burden, carries a crew of 20 men, is owned by Graham, Morton & Co., and commanded by Capt. John Robinson. It was placed on this line in 1876. The "Skylark's" tonnage is 261, her crew numbers 14 men, her owner is H. W. Williams, and her captain John Morrison. The "Shepard" and "Edith," small boats, ply between St. Joseph and Benton Harbor every half-hour for local accommodation.

## GENERAL BUSINESS INTERESTS.

A. M. Collins opened the first store, in 1861, in the building at present occupied by M. G. Lampert, who soon

after engaged in trade and yet continues. The same season Hatch & Durry opened a store in the Robbins building. Charles J. Smith had a general store, and H. L. Harris had a grocery-store. Other early and principal merchants were N. Robbins, B. C. Lewis, Stephen Boyle, Foster I. Parks, A. Burridge, and Gordon Brothers.

The different branches of trade are at present represented by Pitcher, Jones & Sonner, R. J. David & Co., Ferry & Co., and S. B. Van Horn, dry goods; Clark & Hoag, O. S. Willey, M. J. Vincent, P. M. Kinney, C. S. Boyle, Schaus & Burridge, F. G. Rice, S. M. Austin & Co., and W. H. Edwards, groceries; M. G. Lamport and Platt & Bro., hardware; John Thomas and W. L. George, boots and shoes; John C. Gates, A. J. Kidd, J. R. Price, drugs and medicines; Kolman Brothers, notions; Judson Russell, produce dealer; J. H. Darche, fruit dealer; and eight or ten others. Many of these stores are large, and transact a heavy trade.

The first hotel was the present "American House," which was built in 1861, by E. B. Whiting, and for some time kept by him. The house has repeatedly been enlarged and improved, and is at present well kept by Alonzo Vincent. Other landlords have been John Brown, A. M. Collins, Martin Dodge, and E. Nichols.

The "Gartley House" was originally used by the "Excelsior Packing Company," in 1870, but was reconstructed for hotel purposes by Samuel McGuigan, who yet owns it, and has been kept by Samuel Stewart. This is also well patronized. The third hotel, the "Colfax House," has been kept several years by Martin Dodge.

The village was first supplied with mail matter from the St. Joseph office, which was distributed by M. G. Lamport, Charles Hulbard, and others.

In 1865 a government office was established with the name of the village, and Henry C. Morton postmaster. While he held that position the duties of the office were discharged by deputies Jacob Van Horn, John C. Gates, J. S. Morton. In 1873, J. P. Thresher received the appointment of postmaster, and served until 1877, when the present incumbent, A. B. Riford, succeeded to the position. The office has three mails per day by rail, a tri-weekly mail to Eastern points, and a daily mail by stage from Berrien. On the 1st of August, 1870, it became a postal money-order office.

A private bank was established in the village, in 1875, by W. E. Higman, James Baley, and S. F. Heath, which is at present continued by the two first-named members of the firm. A neat office is occupied, and a flourishing business done.

The first newspaper was the *Benton Harbor Palladium*, issued Oct. 9, 1868, by L. G. Merchant, and which is now edited by Charles E. Reeves. The *Times* was founded July 17, 1875, by William and Thomas Hurley, and is yet continued by them. The *Lake Shore Daily News*, also yet here issued, was established May 1, 1876. A full history of the press appears in the general history of the county.

Dr. John Bell was the first physician in the village, and is yet an active practitioner. The other physicians are Drs. George W. Bell, Richard Winans, I. R. Dunning, E. A.

Clark, and J. S. Mortlock, the latter two being homœopaths. A few other physicians have practiced in the place, but removed to other points.

R. A. Kneeland was the first dentist, and was followed by Dr. C. J. Hall.

The first attorney was A. B. Riford, who located here in August, 1866, and yet follows his profession. Alonzo Plummer has practiced law since 1874, and since that period F. D. Orcutt, George M. Valentine, John A. Eastman, and A. H. Potter have established themselves here in practice. Among the lawyers who have removed have been E. F. Hyde, L. C. Fyfe, and A. C. Kingman.

#### BENTON HARBOR MANUFACTORIES.

In 1854, H. W. Williams put up a steam saw-mill on the northwest quarter of section 18, on the Paw Paw River, which had a capacity of 14,000 feet of lumber per day. It was destroyed by fire in 1875.

In the village, J. H. Darche formerly carried on a foundry and plow-factory, which has been discontinued. A grist-mill, which was put up by James and W. H. Kirby, has also passed away.

The *Benton Harbor Custom- and Flouring-Mills*, in the eastern part of the village, were partly built in 1871. Since that time they have been enlarged, and are at present operated by W. E. Bradley. The power is furnished by a 25 horse-power engine, and two runs of stone are in use.

*J. H. Graham & Co.'s Lumber-Mills* were built some ten or twelve years ago, by Green, Allen & Co., in the western part of the village. They are supplied with large double engines and good machinery, giving them a capacity of 3,500,000 feet per year. Sixteen men are employed, and the mills are operated, chiefly on the hard woods, in the production of bill-stuff.

The *Benton Harbor Building and Manufacturing Establishment* was commenced in 1874, by the erection by the citizens of the village of a large factory building, north of the depot, supplied with an engine of 25 horse-power, which was given to George R. Wright & Brother as a bonus, conditioned upon the establishment of a "Washboard and Bung Factory," to give employment to 50 men. After a short period of work, on a small scale, the firm retired from business, and the factory was idle until May, 1879, when S. S. Ware occupied it as the proprietor of the above establishment. A large amount of general work is done, and the lumber-dressing business in all its forms is carried on for builders and contractors. Twelve men are given employment, under the foremanship of J. B. Winchell. The agent of the establishment is George R. Wright.

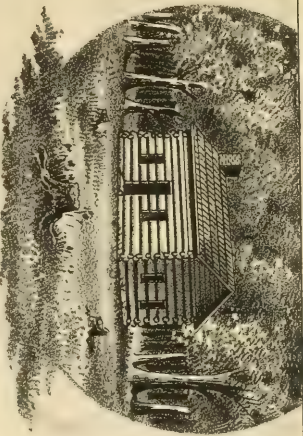
The *Excelsior Factory*, on the west side of the canal, was established at St. Joseph in 1875, by H. W. Miller, and located at the present site in 1877 by a company formed for that purpose, and of which H. W. Miller is the president. A building 32 by 40 feet, two stories high, is occupied by machinery for the manufacture of "Excelsior," a thin, spiral shaving of wood for packing purposes, and for the filling of mattresses. About 3½ cords of basswood logs are consumed daily, and 7 men are employed to carry on the factory.

*John Thomas' Tannery* was built in the spring of 1879,





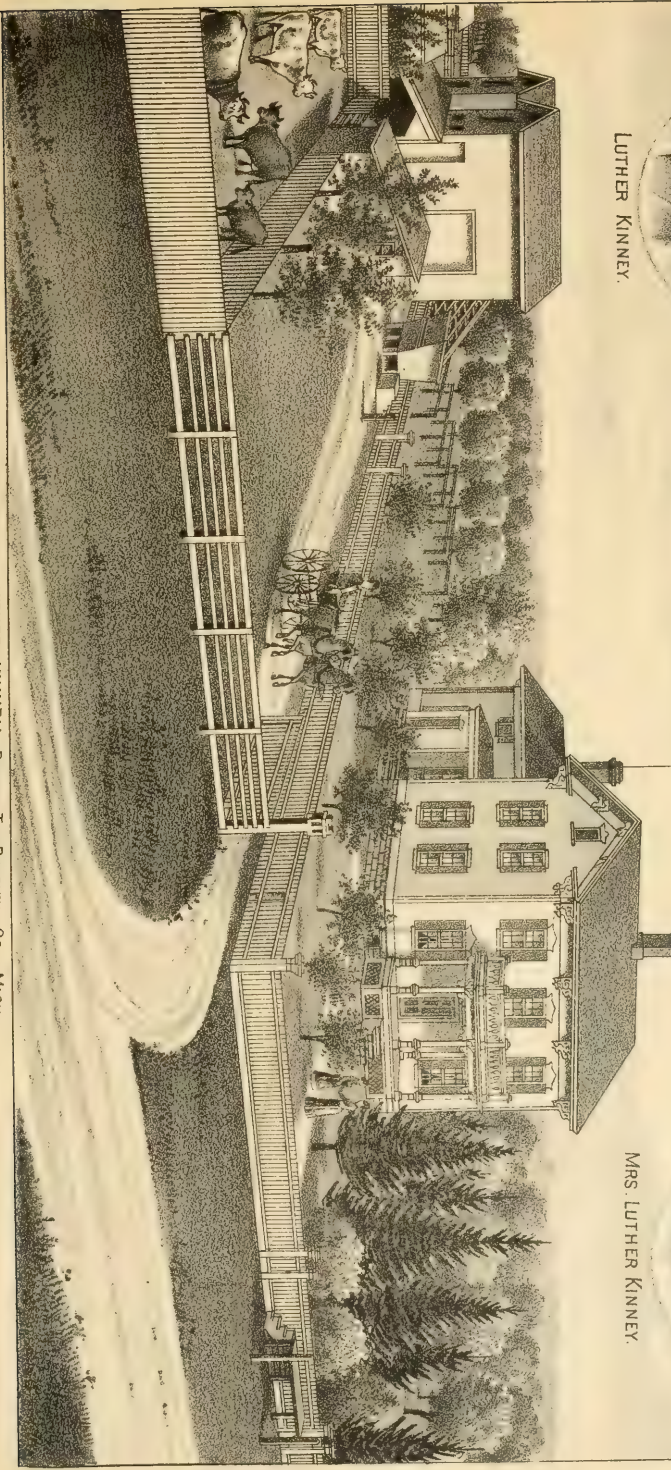
LUTHER KINNEY.



FOREST HOME, PORTER TP., VAN BUREN CO.



MRS. LUTHER KINNEY.



RESIDENCE OF LUTHER KINNEY, BENTON TP., BERRIEN CO., MICH.



and has been in operation a few months. It contains sixteen vats, which are employed in tanning upper-leather with hemlock bark. Steam-power is used, and this tannery is said to be the only one in operation in the county.

*The Benton Harbor Furniture-Factory*, A. Volsteck, proprietor, was established in the fall of 1865. The present factory has been occupied since 1873. It is a two-story building, 75 by 80 feet, and is supplied with power from a good engine of twenty-five horse-power capacity. The factory is operated on general household furniture, and employs five or six hands. In the same building is a part of *C. Colby & Co.'s Fruit-Package and Basket-Factory*, which properly dates from the year 1866, when C. Colby began the manufacture of fruit-packages in the village, using 100,000 feet of veneers that year. The consumption of that article has steadily increased, about 300,000 feet per year being used at the present time. The factory has been located at various points, and at the present place since 1873. The firm manufactures all kinds of fruit-packages, baskets, and veneer work, employing about 50 hands. Among the products are veneer plates, for the use of retail grocers. As many as half a million peach-baskets a year have been made at this factory, and other work in proportion.

*L. Carpenter & Co.'s Fruit-Basket and Package-Manufactory* was established about the same time as the above, by L. & N. Hall, and has been operated since 1870 by the present firm. The appointments of the factory are complete, excellent machinery is used, and the power is supplied by a twenty horse-power engine. The Carpenter factory produces some work of peculiar construction, which is used with great favor by fruit-growers and dealers, and their wares have attained a wide reputation. Employment is given to 25 men.

*Ingham, Leslie & Co.'s Fruit-Package Factory*, near the railroad depot, was established about 1870, by Colby, Ingham & Co., in the southern part of the village. The present firm took the factory in 1875, and in February, 1876, the old factory was burned. The present factory has been occupied since March of the same year, and embraces several large shops, the main building being 75 by 125 feet. It is supplied with good machinery, and the lathes were constructed after patterns prepared by J. W. Leslie. In addition to the ordinary fruit-packages, the firm also manufactures cigar-box lumber, head-lining for barrels, and veneers for various purposes. The factory employs from 25 to 75 men, and is operated the entire year. The present members of the firm are J. C. Ingham, J. W. Leslie, and E. L. McNitt.

*Samuel Genthe's Cooperage* was established in 1872, for the manufacture of all kinds of barrels and casks. Ten men find steady employment in this factory. The village is also well supplied with the ordinary mechanic shops and smaller manufacturing interests.

*Benton Harbor Fruit-Packing and Canning Establishments*.—In 1870 the "Excelsior Packing Company" began putting up fruit and vegetables in the building which is at present used as the Gartley House, putting up 35,000 cans that year, and increasing the product to 125,000 cans the second year. The company then retired from business, and two other companies were formed to pack vegetables and

fruit: the "Phoenix Packing Company" and the "Benton Harbor Packing Company." The latter was composed of Albert James, O. E. Mead, W. C. Hunter, and A. Plummer. They put up 800,000 cans that year. The following year the company dissolved. The "Phoenix Company" had as its members E. Nickerson, N. Robbins, and C. H. Tarbell; but in 1873 the first two members of the firm disposed of their interests to A. B. Riford and N. B. Hall, and the "Victor Packing Company" was formed. This firm put up the large packing establishment in the eastern part of the village, which is at present the place of business of the establishment next named.

*The Alden Evaporating and Canning Company* was formed in 1877. The present officers are Alfred Russell, President; W. E. Higman, Secretary; C. M. Edick, Treasurer; and N. B. Hall, Superintendent. The establishment embraces a number of buildings,—the principal ones being 38 by 120 feet, 26 by 150 feet, 30 by 80 feet, and 80 by 100 feet, which are devoted to the various purposes of the company, including the manufacture of tin cans. This department gives employment to 15 men nine months per year. In the canning department 200 persons, chiefly women, are employed, working about fifteen hours per day during the canning season.

The principal articles canned are the "Victor" and "Benton" tomatoes, about 500,000 3-pound cans per year; string-beans, about 25,000 2-pound cans; and apples, 4000 dozen 1-gallon cans. These goods are sold to the trade by C. E. Roe & Co., of Chicago, and large quantities are furnished to the government. Most of the vegetables consumed are grown on contract by parties living in the vicinity of the village, about 300 acres of tomatoes and 25 acres of beans being subject to the demands of the company.

The present firm also controls the dry-houses and property of the old "Alden Evaporating Company." The buildings stand on several acres of ground, and embrace a large four-story structure, with an L wing containing two dryers, arranged after the Alden method, whose capacity is 600 bushels of apples per day. They were erected in 1874, by O. E. Moore and Ralph Grove, and subsequently used by A. R. Nowlen and John Thomas & Co., and when in operation gave employment to 75 persons. Since 1877 they have not been in use, the energies of the company being directed more to the canning than the evaporating process.

#### THE FRUIT INTERESTS OF BENTON

may be appropriately noted in this connection. Fruit-trees were set out, soon after the settlement of the township, by the pioneers to supply their own wants, but fruit was not much cultivated for market until after 1850. In 1848, George Parmelee set out an orchard of two acres of budded peach-trees, of which the fruitage was so satisfactory that attention was directed to this business as the probable future industry of the people of the township. Larger orchards were planted with equally satisfactory results, the trees not only growing with remarkable thrift, but their products being a source of much revenue to their owners. The favorableness of the soil, climate, and other essential conditions being established, the population of the township was augmented with wonderful rapidity by those anxious



to engage in fruit culture. The price of land appreciated from a nominal price to fabulous figures, as much as \$1000 per acre being paid; and the larger lots were subdivided into gardens of from three to ten acres, on many of which cottages were built, until many parts of the western half of the township bear the appearance of a vast straggling village. Others engaged in the business on a scale of greater magnitude. In 1857, Smith & Howell planted 60 acres of peach-trees, which was known as the Cincinnati orchard, and was for several years the largest in the State. The Parmelee orchard was increased until it comprised 90 acres. In 1873, when fruit-growing was at its best, there were 2677 orchards in the township. Of the lands devoted to this purpose, 214 acres were set to strawberries; 109, to raspberries; 134, to blackberries; and there were 32,110 grape-vines, 5427 cherry-trees, 204,721 peach-trees, 10,935 pear-trees, 67,092 apple-trees, 1223 plum-trees, and 1453 quince-trees. In most respects Benton headed the list of the fruit townships of the county, the excess of peach-trees especially being very large. In a few years after this list was prepared the peach-trees were attacked by a disease popularly known as "the Yellows," which caused most of the orchards to die out, and this fruit at present forms a comparatively small amount of the products of the general interest, apples and the small fruits being the staples. In 1873 those who cultivated 15 acres or more of fruit in Benton were the following: George W. Antisdale, D. Boynton, M. E. Burrige, J. N. Burrige, Jacob Burrige, L. Canfield, George Carley, N. Castle, F. A. Chapman, H. C. Collins, E. G. Curtis, William Gates, H. H. Garland, Gates & Bell, O. Harmon, S. F. Heath, J. F. Higbee, U. Higbee, H. Hilton, G. K. Hopkins, W. C. Hunter, J. C. Ingham, Samuel Jackson, A. James, J. L. Johnson, H. H. Kidd, A. B. Leeds, O. Lozier, S. E. Martin, J. McAllister, E. A. Clave, George Meech, F. Morley, L. G. Moulton, E. Nickerson, A. R. Nowlen, A. J. Nowlen, Alfred Osborne, P. O. Osborne, C. J. Owen, George Perkins, C. K. Pierce, George Powell, R. C. Reed, F. J. Ripley, W. D. Sherwood, Ezra Smith, C. C. Sutton, James Vanderveer, George Wright, J. W. Rose, S. Perkins, Mary Robinson, James Silvers, S. Snyder, T. N. Terry, L. M. Ward, R. Winans, P. Yore, W. Rose, W. S. Rowe, George Smith, J. M. Sortor, J. P. Thresher, H. F. White, J. Withey, I. J. Hoag, B. Fish.

Since 1873 a number of changes in the ownership of the orchards have taken place, which cannot be here given. The general fruit products of the township can be seen from the shipments as given in the article on the commerce of Benton Harbor. Fruit-growing yet constitutes the chief industry of the people of Benton.

#### MILLBURG.

This is the oldest village in the township. It was platted in 1835, by Jehial Enos, of Benton, and Amos S. Amsden, of St. Joseph, and received its name on account of the water-power at this place, which was improved about that time for milling purposes. It is located on the north bank of Blue Creek, in the eastern part of section 13, on the Bainbridge line, a part of the village being in that township. Originally, about twenty acres were platted for a village,

and years ago the place promised to become a point of greater importance than it is at present. The canal and railroad have diverted whatever trade it had to Benton Harbor, and it is now simply a hamlet, having a post-office, mill, a few shops, about twenty houses, and a Disciples' Church.

The Bainbridge post-office was established here about 1836, and had as the first postmaster James H. Enos. John T. Tabor was the next appointee, keeping it some distance from the village. The present post-office, which bears the name of the village, was established about 1852, with Enos Fenton as postmaster. His successors were Mrs. Fenton and the present Mrs. Hill. The office has a tri-weekly mail from Benton Harbor.

The first store was kept by James H. Enos, about 1851. He sold to Ansel Winslow, who in turn was succeeded by Dix & Wakefield and D. D. Hurd, the latter being the last in trade in that building. Another store was opened in 1852, by Enos Fenton, who was in trade until about 1871, when William Randall & Brother engaged here as merchants, and continued until a few years ago. Only a small grocery-store is carried on at present.

The first regular tavern was kept by the Winslows, in the former store building, which had been remodeled for this purpose. Subsequently, William Piersoll, Samuel Buchanan, and others entertained the public, but at present there is no tavern.

Dr. Ansel Winslow was the first physician to locate at Millburg to practice his profession, about 1851, and had a contemporary soon after in Dr. Enos Fenton. Other practitioners for short periods were Drs. Cook, Fowler, Ross, King, etc. The present in practice is Dr. Bowman.

At the village, James H. Enos put in operation the first saw-mill, about 1836, and eighteen years after, sold the property to Ansel Winslow. In a few years the latter erected a grist-mill, which is yet operated by Wm. Randall & Brother. The Hall Brothers were intermediate owners, and here also had a factory for making staves and bent work. The water-power was supplemented by steam, but the engine was soon after removed to Benton Harbor.

Farther down Blue Creek, Jehial Enos and James Sutherland erected a saw-mill, which afterwards became the property of James F. Higbee, who operated it until it was discontinued.

On section 21, Samuel McGuigan had a steam saw-mill, which was successfully operated many years, and about twenty years ago W. H. Pearl erected a similar mill on section 26, which is yet worked to a limited extent.

A small basket-factory was operated on section 36, by James S. Moore, a few years, but has been discontinued.

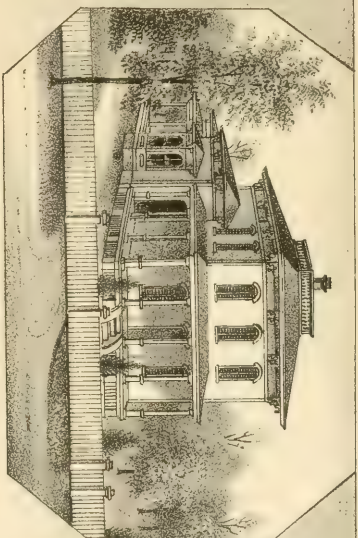
#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

Repeated application for information concerning "Benton Lodge, No. 132, I. O. O. F.," has failed to elicit the desired data. Its meetings are held in a hall over Ferry & Co.'s store, and F. G. Rice was reported as Noble Grand, and J. E. Wright, Secretary.

*Lake Shore Lodge, No. 298, F. and A. M.*, was instituted Jan. 10, 1872, with A. B. Leeds, P. D. Montgomery, C. S. Boyle, John Bell, J. P. Thresher, John Fin-



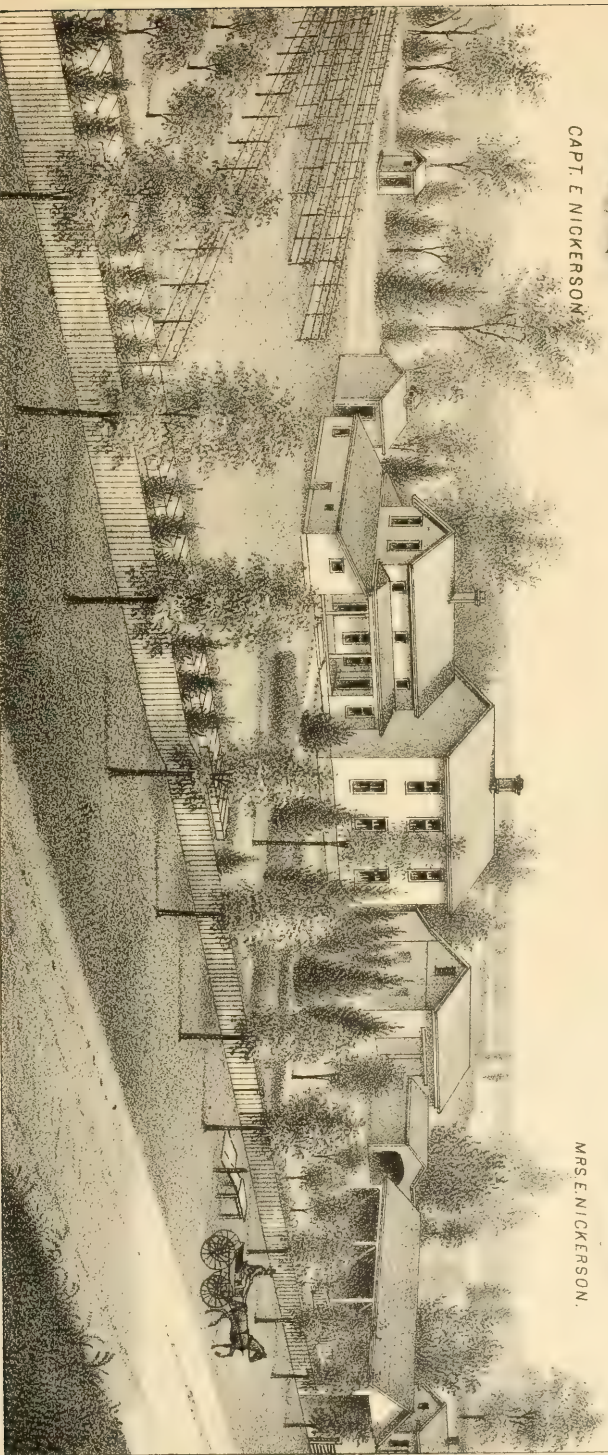
CAPT. E. NICKERSON.



PROP. OF L. KELLEY.



MRS. E. NICKERSON.



RES. OF CAPT. E. NICKERSON, BENTON Twp, BERRIEN CO., MICH.





ney, and Edwin D Cooke as original members. In 1879 the lodge reported 41 members, and had as principal officers John Bell, W. M.; B. Fonger, S. W.; C. J. Hall, J. W.; and F. Morley, Sec. The meetings are held in a comfortable hall at Benton Harbor, and the lodge is in a flourishing condition.

*Benton Lodge, No. 844, I. O. G. T.*, was instituted April 15, 1875, with 60 charter members, and O. S. Willey, Worthy Chief Templar. The lodge has prospered, having at present 95 members and the following principal officers: C. E. Reeves, W. C. T.; Mrs. J. H. Darche, W. V. T.; A. Bonine, R. S.; W. W. Watson, W. F. S.; Mrs. E. M. Hipp, W. T.; and S. G. Antisdale, Lodge Deputy.

*Lily of Benton Temple, Juvenile Templars*, was organized in April, 1879, with 33 members and Harry Hopkins, C. T.; Ed. Heath, R. S.; Carrie Bryant, F. S. Although of recent organization, the Temple has become very flourishing, and promises to accomplish much good among the young people of the township.

*Benton Harbor Library Association* was formed Dec. 17, 1877, and has at present (August, 1879) the following officers: R. M. Jones, President; Mrs. O. S. Willey, Vice-President; S. R. Hughes, Secretary; James Bailey, Treasurer; Ed. Kolman, Librarian; and A. B. Riford, Mrs. R. Winans, R. J. David, C. E. Reeves, J. W. Leslie, and S. H. Antisdale, Directors.

The association maintains a library of several hundred well-selected standard and popular books, and is a useful agent in promoting the general culture of the village.

*Pearl Grange, No. 81, Patrons of Husbandry*.—This society was organized in the Pearl neighborhood, Sept. 29, 1873. In the summer of 1874 a small but neat hall, for the use of the grange, was built on the east line of section 26, where the meetings have since been held. The grange has prospered, and has a large and active membership. The present principal officers are C. A. Spencer, W. M., and E. Spencer, Sec.

The grange has sustained a supply store for a number of years, which has been very beneficial to the members. The purchasing agents have been R. Morrill, C. A. Spencer, and L. Sutherland.

*Benton Harbor Grange, No. 122, P. of H.*, was instituted Nov. 7, 1873, with 30 charter members, and C. C. Sutton for the first Master, and H. A. Rackliff, Sec. At present the grange meets in a hall over Clark's grocery, and has 52 members, with J. K. Bishop, Master, and Wm. J. Holt, Sec. Both granges have promoted the interests of the agricultural portion of the township, and are useful bodies.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school-house in the township of Benton was erected at Millburg, and it was some years before school buildings were provided in the western part of the township. In 1867 a large two-story frame house was erected in Fractional District No. 5, in the Heath neighborhood, on half an acre of ground, in which excellent schools have since been taught; and in most of the other districts good houses have since been provided, and a commendable interest taken in education. At Benton Harbor the original school building—the old white house—has been adapted

as a place of worship for a Universalist society. In 1868 the people of that district voted \$20,000 to erect a new school edifice, and on the 28th of September, 1868, Joseph Riford, S. E. Martin, and W. H. Kirby were appointed a building committee. The house is 60 by 80 feet, 3 stories and basement, of brick trimmed with sandstone, and presents a very attractive appearance. The upper story forms a large hall, and the other floors have been divided into seven rooms which are large and well furnished.

On the 6th of September, 1869, the district was organized as a union school, with C. K. Parce, Wm. J. Hess, Joseph Riford, M. G. Lamport, A. B. Riford, and J. P. Thresher as a board of education. As a union school it has since been ably conducted, at a yearly expense of about \$3000. In 1879, R. M. Jones was moderator of the board; M. G. Lamport, director; C. S. Boyle, J. C. Ingham, Allen Bronson, and W. L. George, associate members. The district had 452 children between the ages of five and twenty years, from which were enrolled in the high school, 62 pupils; in the grammar school, 28; in the intermediate, 56; and in the three primary schools, 144 pupils. There were, besides, in the township 13 districts whose bounds were irregular, and all of them, except Nos. 2, 3, 8, 12, and 14, joint districts. The children of school age in each district were as follows: No. 1, 135; No. 2, 59; No. 3, 97; No. 4, 36; No. 5, 123; No. 6, 42; No. 7, 61; No. 8, 60; No. 11, 35; No. 12, 44; No. 14, 75.

The entire number of children of school age in the township, including Benton Harbor, was 1217.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*The Church of Christ of Millburg*.—Many years ago a Methodist class was formed at Millburg, which prospered for a time, then suffered a declining interest, and finally became altogether extinct. At a later period the Disciples effected a temporary organization here, and held meetings with good effect, but as there was no suitable place of worship they were soon discontinued, and the interest died out. But in the fall of 1868, under the preaching of the Rev. William R. Roe, a permanent organization of 55 persons was made, and this afterwards became known as the Church of Christ of Millburg. James Adams and J. W. Rose were elected the first elders, and J. K. Bishop and C. C. Potes deacons. Mr. Rose has served as deacon continuously since, and J. K. Bishop was elected to fill the vacancy caused by the removal of Mr. Adams. A. L. Schofield and J. Hess have been elected as additional deacons.

Under the pastoral labors of the Revs. Hurd, Jackson, Reese, Lucas, and the occasional services of the Revs. Carpenter, Sias, and others, the church has prospered. Its present membership is 100, but the aggregate of members has been much larger. The present minister is the Rev. Henry Burton. J. W. Rose is the superintendent of the Sunday-school, which has at present 75 members.

The present house of worship at Millburg—a frame structure, 36 by 60, with a shapely tower—was commenced in 1870, but was not completed until three years later. It is a very neat edifice, of which the value is reported at \$5000. The building was consecrated by the Rev. William M. Roe.

*The First Congregational Church of Benton Harbor.*—

This church was organized June 13, 1866, in the old white school-house, by a council called for this purpose, and at which were present as delegates Rev. P. B. Parry and S. Hess, of Three Oaks; Rev. J. B. Fairbanks and L. Whitney, of St. Joseph; and A. J. Nowlen, in behalf of the society at Benton Harbor. The latter acted as secretary, and P. B. Parry served as chairman. The following persons assented to the articles of faith and covenant, and became the constituent members of the church: Enoch Osborne, Ira Nowlen, Ralph Grow, Amos Eastman, Alfred Osborne, Martin Green, David Hurd, Zistorene Nowlen, Fanny Osborne, Clarinda Nowlen, Sophronia C. Eastman, Sarah A. Winans, Mary Ann Grow.

A. Eastman, Ralph Grow, and E. Osborne were elected the first Deacons, and A. J. Nowlen, Clerk. These officers in 1879 were H. F. White, R. Grow, and A. R. Nowlen, Deacons; and J. H. Darche, Clerk. Other deacons have been R. E. Winans, J. H. Darche, S. Devereaux, Charles E. Hull, Horace H. Garland, and G. K. Hopkins; and clerks, A. Osborne, George W. Toles, and H. F. Colby.

In 1868 the society built the church edifice which is yet occupied as a place of worship, and which was the first meeting-house in the township. It is a plain but inviting frame, and is at present controlled by a board of trustees composed of J. C. Ingham, V. A. Shankland, George Wilson, J. H. Darche, C. J. Hall, and R. Grow. The first named is the clerk of the society.

The church has had the following pastors and supplies:

1867, Rev. S. Morton; 1868-69, Rev. S. S. Hyde; 1870, Rev. George A. Dieckerman (supply); 1871, Rev. H. P. Welton; 1872, Rev. N. A. Willard; 1873, occasional supplies; 1874-75, Rev. S. B. Goodenow; 1876-77, E. L. Hurd, D.D.; 1878, J. C. Thompson.

Since April, 1879, the Rev. Abel Wood, of St. Joseph, has supplied the pulpit, and ministers to the 70 members who compose the church.

As soon as the church building was completed, a Sunday-school was opened there, under the superintendency of J. P. Thresher, although a union Sunday-school had been organized in the village at the school-house two years earlier. The present superintendent of the school at the church is V. A. Shankland. One hundred and nineteen members are enrolled, from which an average attendance of 80 is secured. A good library is maintained.

*The First Baptist Church of Benton Harbor.*\*—This body was organized at Heath's Corners, May 30, 1863, under the title of the "St. Joseph Baptist Church." There were 28 persons who associated themselves into church membership, namely: S. F. Heath, Julia Heath, Omi Simms, Sophia Simms, Henry A. Simons, Arthur E. Simons, Sarah Simons, Clara Swartwout, Sarah Woodin, A. F. Stiles, Lucinda Stiles, Emily Stiles, Caroline Rowley, Ellen Jones, Mrs. McAllister, Thomas Swartwout, Nancy Swartwout, John H. Swartwout, Sarah Swartwout, Imogene Swartwout, William A. Coats, Maria Coats, Anna Coats, Deborah Hayward, William Boughton, Eliza Hopkins, John P. Edwards, and Maria Edwards.

At the time the church was organized S. F. Heath was

elected clerk, and has since been annually re-elected to perform the duties of that office, being the present clerk.

The deacons also are elected annually, and the following have been ordained to that office: J. P. Edwards, William A. Coats, A. F. Stiles, Samuel Rockafellow, E. St. John, Henry A. Simons, M. A. Harrington, Hiram Dusenbury, Jerome F. Smith, Charles Fisher, E. V. Green, E. S. Fox, A. B. Carmichael, Jadutha Withey, E. A. Clark, William Edwards, S. F. Heath, Joseph Watkins, James Lason, William J. Barrett, and E. H. Bovee.

The church has had the pastoral services of six clergymen, as follows: Rev. Arthur E. Simons, from August, 1863, till June, 1866; Rev. Stephen Wilkins, from October, 1866, till October, 1867, when the Rev. Wm. Gates acted as a supply for one year, serving very acceptably. Rev. Thomas Allen began his ministry October, 1868, but at the end of eight months retired, and the pulpit was again supplied by Rev. Mr. Gates till January, 1869. In January, 1869, the Rev. J. G. Portman began a pastorate which was continued until October, 1873, followed by a vacancy of three months, at the end of which the Rev. C. W. Palmer became pastor for eight months. In September, 1874, the present pastor, the Rev. J. D. Pulsis, began his labors with the church, and for more than five years has served the church worthily and well.

The church has prospered, and at present reports 260 members. Four houses of worship have been built at as many different places. The first was the "Brown Chapel," at Heath's Corners, which is still owned by the church, and used in summer for a mission Sunday-school. It is a frame house, and was erected in 1864, at a cost of \$1000, by S. F. Heath, J. P. Edwards, and J. H. Swartwout, as a building committee. It has accommodations for 150 persons.

The second was a brick lecture-room, which was built at the village of St. Joseph in 1865, by a committee composed of the Rev. A. E. Simons, L. F. Chapman, and Thomas Swartwout. It cost \$2000, and was used by the Baptists until 1868, when it was sold to the Evangelical Association, and has since served that body as a place of worship.

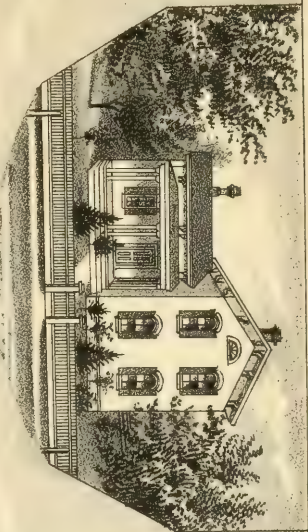
In order to accommodate some of the members residing in Bainbridge, the church united with the Methodists, in 1866, to build a frame meeting-house in that township for mutual occupancy, each incurring an expense of \$1000. On the part of the Baptists the building committee were A. F. Stiles and Riley Merrill.

The fourth building was erected at Benton Harbor, in 1869, by S. F. Heath, E. St. John, and J. P. Thresher, as a building committee. In February, 1868, it was decided by the church, in view of the fact that the larger portion of the membership resided on the east side of the St. Joseph River, that the property in St. Joseph be sold and the interest transferred to Benton Harbor. In accordance with this determination, the name of the "First Baptist Church of Benton Harbor" was assumed, and the present beautiful and commodious house begun. It is built of Racine brick, in an imposing style of architecture, and cost \$16,000. It seats 600 worshipers, and its general appearance is seldom surpassed in villages of the size of Benton Harbor. The trustees are S. F. Heath (chairman), W. E. Higman, E. A. Clark, J. P. Thresher, John Ingham, and A. J. Kidd.





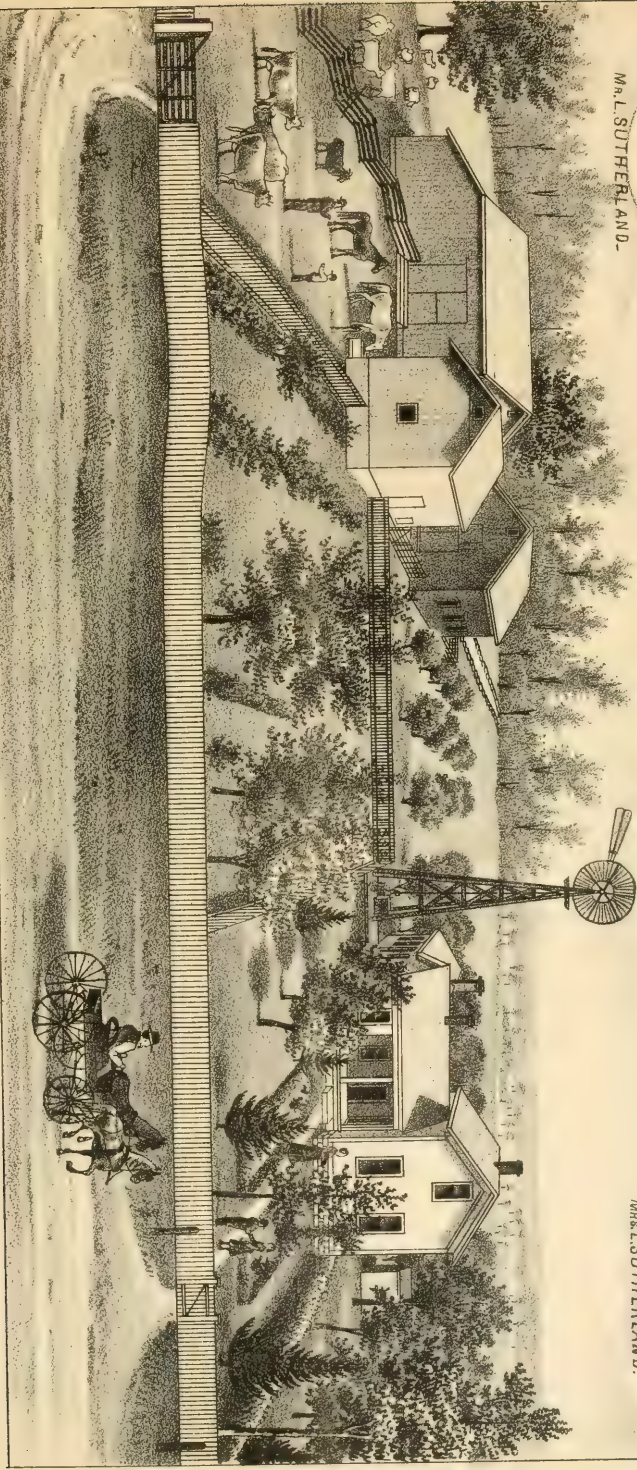
MR. L. SUTHERLAND.



RES. IN BENTON HARBOR.



MRS. L. SUTHERLAND.



RES. OF LEWIS SUTHERLAND, BENTON TWP., BERRIEN CO., MICHIGAN.





The Sunday-school (sustained by the church) was organized at Benton Harbor in 1870, and is at present superintended by H. W. Miller. It has 245 members.

*Benton Harbor Methodist Episcopal Church.*—Previous to 1868 there were a few adherents of Methodism at Benton Harbor, who were supplied with occasional preaching by the ministers from St. Joseph, but no organization appears to have been effected until September, 1868, when a separate charge was here formed, with 46 members. A board of trustees was chosen, composed of James F. Miller, Aaron H. Smith, Wm. D. Sherwood, J. M. Sorter, and E. G. Reynolds, and the work of building a church edifice begun. In 1870 it was completed and appropriately consecrated. It was a very handsome brick house, 40 by 75 feet, two stories high, and cost about \$16,500. In this the church worshiped and prospered until June 1, 1875, when the beautiful edifice was struck by lightning and almost totally destroyed. This calamity, added to the depression in business which prevailed in the township in consequence of the failure of the peach-trees, was so heavy a blow to the church that it was almost crushed, and for several years was obliged to live a struggling existence. The American Insurance Company refused to pay the amount of its insurance, and obliged the society to compromise at the loss of several thousand dollars; some of the members removed, and other circumstances prevented the work of rebuilding from going on until the summer of 1879. At this time a one-story edifice is being reared upon the foundations of the old church, which will cost about \$5000, and will, when completed, be a comfortable place of worship. The trustees in 1879 were B. F. Rounds, James Bailey, Joseph Richards, E. N. Hoe, and W. L. Hague.

In spite of its financial difficulties the church has been measurably prosperous, and at present reports 140 full and 15 probationary members, who are under the tutelage of the Rev. E. A. Whitwam. Other pastors, from the formation of the church till Mr. Whitwam's accession, have been the Revs. J. P. Force, A. J. Van Wyck, T. H. Jacobes, H. Worthington, H. Hall, G. W. Gosling, William Prouty, E. H. Sparling, and J. K. Stark. The Rev. John Atkinson is a local elder, and Rev. J. R. Oden a supernumerary preacher.

There is an excellent Sunday-school of 150 members connected with the church, which is doing a good work, under the superintendence of the pastor, the Rev. E. A. Whitwam, and the future of the church is rich with promise. The struggle for a place among the many churches of the land has nearly ended, and ere long this much-afflicted people will pass from under the cloud into the full light of prosperity, to perform its allotted work with the success that attended it before its troubles came on.

*The First Universalist Church of Benton Harbor.*—This society was organized in April, 1870, with 8 members, 6 of them being Sterne Bronson, S. Ogden, W. T. Dury, Allen Bronson, E. Nickerson, and Alonzo Plummer. The first meetings were held in Masonic Hall, but in the latter part of 1870 the old white school-house was adopted as a place of worship and has been the house of the society

ever since. The church having but a small membership at the time of its organization, has been somewhat hampered by the expenses necessary to maintain an existence, but has lately discharged its debts, and now enters anew upon a career of prosperity and usefulness. The number of members is reported at 30.

The church has had but one settled minister, the Rev. A. H. Laing, who left several years ago, and since then there have only been occasional services by visiting clergymen.

In some of the school-houses of the township religious meetings have been held by various denominations, but, so far as we have been able to learn, no organizations followed the efforts of those who conducted them.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### ELEAZER AND HENRY C. MORTON.

Eleazer Morton, a native of the State of Massachusetts, was born Aug. 1, 1786, and when about twenty years of age removed to Syracuse, N. Y., purchased a farm, and began the manufacture of salt. About 1811 he was married to Joanna Cotton, a native of Vermont, who had been



ELEAZER MORTON.

engaged in teaching at Syracuse. The wedded couple removed soon after to Alexander, Genesee Co., N. Y., where Mr. Morton engaged in farming and the manufacture of cloth. In the spring of 1831 he sold out his interests at Alexander, and removed to Brockport, Monroe Co., where he became interested in matters pertaining to the Erie Canal. Excessive competition and the cutting of rates rendered the season disastrous, and in the fall of the same year Mr. Morton changed his place of residence to Medina, Ohio, where he opened a hotel, and carried it on until the spring of 1834, when he finally removed to Michigan, and located near Toland Prairie, near what is now Galesburg,

Kalamazoo Co. He had conceived the idea of founding an establishment for the manufacture of sugar from potatoes, and for that purpose came to Michigan. In the fall of 1835 he abandoned the project, and removed with his family to St. Joseph, Berrien Co., where they passed the winter. During the few succeeding months he purchased, of different parties, 160 acres, on sections 18 and 20. In the spring of 1836 he built a log tavern on the Territorial road, which was the only house for a distance of seven miles eastward from the mouth of the river St. Joseph. He cleared his farm, started a nursery, and commenced to raise fruit; his orchard, which was set out in 1840, containing apple, peach, pear, plum, nectarine, and apricot trees. The principal variety in the peach line was the "Yellow Rare-ripe," which was to a great extent superseded by the "Crawford," the latter becoming a general favorite, and still enjoying an enviable reputation. The first peaches from this market to Chicago were shipped by B. C. Hoyt, and the second by Mr. Morton.

In his political views Mr. Morton was an old-line Whig, and subsequently a thorough Republican, and was decided in his opposition to the principles and encroachments of slavery. He was a deep thinker, and was possessed of an ardent desire to benefit his fellow-men. He was in correspondence with Horace Greeley and other philanthropists, and furnished articles for the press upon his favorite topics. He was also the author and publisher of a volume entitled "Morton's Guide to True Happiness." His wife died in September, 1856, and Mr. Morton's death occurred July 4, 1864.

Mr. and Mrs. Morton were the parents of ten children. Sarah M. married Thomas Conger, who practiced law from 1834 to 1849 in St. Joseph. He finally removed to California for the benefit of his health, and is now police judge of Sacramento. His wife died in California in 1850. One of their daughters became the wife of Senator Jones, of Nevada. Charles A. was in the forwarding business, with Britain, Sawyer & Co., at St. Joseph, and died in 1838. Henry C. Morton, now living on the old homestead at Benton Harbor, was in the Legislature in 1863, and was also largely interested in the construction of the canal at the Harbor. William E., who was engaged in the lumber business at Chicago, died in that city in 1859, and his brother, George C., is now engaged in the same business at the same place. Jane E. became the wife of William Hammell, and lived for some time at St. Joseph and Niles. Mr. Hammell was connected with the Michigan Central Railroad. He subsequently removed to Morris, Grundy Co., Ill., and engaged in the lumber business, and his wife died in that place in December, 1859. Joanna D. Morton married William Raymond, a merchant of St. Joseph, and died in 1849. James M. Morton made an overland journey to California, with a party from St. Joseph, in 1849, and died in December following, of typhoid fever. Mary A. married S. A. Raymond, a merchant of St. Joseph, and subsequently removed to Toledo, Ohio, where she was president of the Soldiers' Aid Society during the war, and is now living at San Francisco, Cal. Caroline D. married S. G. D. Howard, a Chicago lumber merchant, and is now widowed and living in that city.

HENRY C. MORTON,

son of Eleazer and Joanna (Cotton) Morton, was born in Genesee Co., N. Y., Jan. 27, 1817. He attended the district school at home, and in 1834 came to Michigan with



HENRY C. MORTON.

his parents. Upon his arrival at manhood he became interested, with his father, in the development of Benton Harbor, with which place he has since been prominently identified. His father once remarked, "*Henry lived with me until I lived with him.*" One-half the property of the father was deeded to the son, the former retaining the remainder until his death, although the affairs of the farm were managed by Henry during the last few years of his father's life. Henry C. Morton was married, Feb. 8, 1848,



JOSEPHINE MORTON.

to Josephine Stanley, of Bainbridge, a native of Le Roy, Genesee Co., N. Y. Four children were born, of whom but one, James S., is now living. He is a member of the steamboat firm of Graham, Morton & Co. Mrs. Morton died Aug. 1, 1859. Mr. Morton still resides on the old



homestead, and has been prominent in politics as well as in other connections. In 1863 he was the representative from this district in the State Legislature. The famous "Cincinnati Peach-Orchard" was upon leased land belonging to Mr. Morton.

#### JEHIAL ENOS.

To this gentleman belongs the distinction of being the first settler in the township of Benton; therefore no one is better qualified to relate tales of pioneer life, with its attendant hardships and struggles to obtain a livelihood and build a home in the midst of a wilderness. Mr. Enos was born in Norwich, Chenango Co., N. Y., Oct. 24, 1799, and is the only one now living of a family of seven children, of whom he was the oldest. He worked during summers on his father's farm, and in the winter attended district school, until he was eighteen years of age, when from a pupil he



JEHIAL ENOS.

became a teacher, and spent his winters in the endeavor to inculcate knowledge into the minds of those less advanced than himself. As he grew older, the desire to be more of a scholar obtained strong hold upon him, and, while pursuing his duties as a teacher, he also took up the study of surveying, and applied it practically whenever opportunity offered until 1825. In that year he came to Michigan, and located at Ann Arbor, Washtenaw Co., where he remained four years. During the time he assisted Lucius Lyon in his duties as deputy United States surveyor. In the year 1828, before many white persons had settled in the State west of Dexter, Mr. Enos, in company with a party of explorers, visited what is now Berrien County. In 1829 he was again here, and assisted Mr. Lyon in surveying that portion of the county lying south of the river. The same year, Major Britain made the first permanent settlement in St. Joseph. In 1830, Mr. Enos was married to Miss Nancy Kavanaugh, who was born in Ohio. Her parents were natives of Ireland. The fruit of this marriage was nine children, of whom but two are now living. In

1844 four of their children died of scarlet fever, within the space of three weeks. A son, who had "gone at his country's call" to do battle for freedom, fell in the field of strife in 1863.

Soon after his marriage Mr. Enos built and occupied a house in St. Joseph, where he remained one year. He then sold out and purchased a lot of wild land in Royalton township, and began the task of hewing out a homestead in the midst of the forest. About three years later he again disposed of his property, and located in the village of Millburg. In 1836 he settled on the place he now occupies, section 13, Benton township. His wife, who was a most kind and amiable lady, died in March, 1855, and in December, 1856, he started on a second matrimonial journey with Mrs. Wilcox.

Mr. Enos was originally a Democrat, but has been a Republican since the formation of the latter party. He has twice represented the county in the State Legislature, as a Democrat in 1847, and as a Republican in 1856. He was one of the organizers of Benton township, and was its supervisor for several years. He has also been several times chosen to the position of county surveyor. He has been a member of the Baptist Church since 1823, and has always been among the foremost in the advancement of public interests.

#### STERNE BRUNSON

was born in Genesee Co., N. Y., in 1806. About 1812 the family removed to Cincinnati, Ohio, where they remained three years, changing their place of residence to

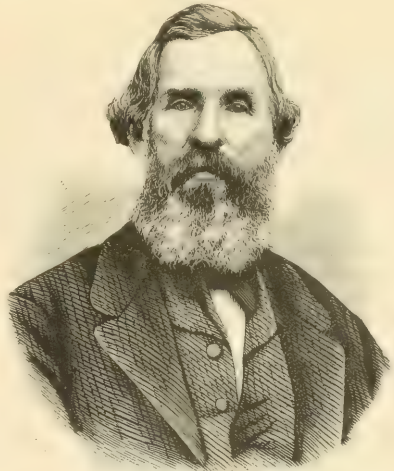


Photo. by H. L. Bingham, Kalamazoo.  
STERNE BRUNSON.

Wayne Co., Ind., where they remained eighteen years. In the latter county, on the 27th of April, 1826, Mr. Brunson was married to Sarah Shank, with whom he lived for more than fifty years, and who survives him. Their children were six in number,—five sons and one daughter,—of whom all are living except the oldest son, who died May 17, 1835.

From Wayne Co., Ind., Mr. Brunson moved to Elkhart, in the same State, where he remained till 1859. In the latter year he came to the site of Benton Harbor, and soon after his arrival conceived the idea of building a town on the east side of the St. Joseph River, which should be connected with the lake by a canal, nearly a mile in length, and of sufficient width and depth to admit of the passage of large steamers. Despite the un concealed ridicule of many, he, with the aid of a few friends, accomplished the enterprise.\* The village received the name of Brunson Harbor, which was afterwards changed by others to Benton Harbor. Mr. Brunson lived a sufficient length of time to witness the wonderful growth of his village and see it ranking among the important commercial centres of Western Michigan. He was always extremely liberal towards every project tending to the public benefit. In his habits he was strictly temperate, never tasting intoxicating drinks nor indulging in the use of tobacco, which he rightly considered as hardly a lesser evil. His health, therefore, was always excellent, until his career was suddenly terminated by a stroke of paralysis. His funeral drew a larger attendance than any before held in the village, the ceremonies being held under the auspices of the Odd-Fellows, to which he belonged, and in which body he was prominent.

Mr. Brunson's parents were both natives of New York, and those of his wife were born in Pennsylvania. Mrs. Brunson is living with her daughter, Mrs. Antisdale, whose husband causes this brief sketch and the accompanying portrait to be inserted in this work, as a slight token of the esteem in which he held the person for whom this is written.

#### LEWIS SUTHERLAND

is of Scotch descent, the son of Lot Sutherland, and was born in Barker, Broome Co., N. Y., Feb. 28, 1831, being the sixth in a family of nine children. His mother died when he was but seven years of age. In 1836 he came with his father's family to Michigan, and lived with them near Kalamazoo. About 1839 his father removed to Bainbridge township, Berrien County, and purchased one hundred acres of land on section 27, and there the boyhood days of the son were passed, without incident save such as are common in the lives of farmers' boys. He acquired a fair education, enabling him to engage in any ordinary business. When nineteen years of age he took up his residence at the home of John Morgan, in Bainbridge, and remained with him three years. Being desirous of witnessing life in the mining region of California, Mr. Morgan went to that State, leaving Mr. Sutherland to care for his family, and promising to pay him one-fourth of his net earnings in the land of gold. When the time for settlement arrived the sum amounted to five hundred and sixty-two dollars and fifty cents, and with it Mr. Sutherland purchased one hundred and sixty acres on section 23 in Benton township. In 1860, when twenty-nine years of age, he was married, at Battle Creek, to Miss Matilda

Howard, who was born in Kane Co., Ill., March 12, 1843. She is the daughter of Joseph and Anna D. Howard, and the oldest of seven children. Her parents settled in Bainbridge township, Berrien County, when she was but four years of age. Mr. and Mrs. Sutherland have been the parents of six children, of whom but four are living.

Sterling L. Sutherland was born Feb. 23, 1861; Edgar B., born April 17, 1864, died Aug. 14, 1866; Grace C., born Jan. 1, 1866, died Aug. 18, 1866; Addie E., born Aug. 4, 1867; Darwin B., born May 16, 1869; Lot F., born May 16, 1871. In 1860, Mr. Sutherland sold his farm on section 23 and purchased eighty acres on section 36, and has since purchased an equal amount adjoining it. He also owns real estate in various other localities, and is the possessor of three hundred and ten acres in all. At the death of his father, in 1866, Mr. Sutherland received as his share of the estate two hundred and fifty dollars.

Mr. Sutherland is, politically, a Democrat; has held the position of highway commissioner for three years, and has filled other minor offices. On religious subjects his views are liberal. He is a man of strictly temperate habits, thoroughly upright in his business transactions, and by his fellow-townsmen is classed among their most valuable citizens. He is a most successful farmer, and has triumphed over all difficulties since his humble beginning in the battle-field of life.

#### G. N. LORD.

This gentleman, who was born in Pennsylvania, Aug. 14, 1826, was the fifth in a family of eight children. His father was a native of Vermont, and a farmer and lumberman by occupation. His mother was born in Connecticut. When twenty-one years of age Mr. Lord left home, and lived two years with his uncle, G. N. Smith, learning the carpenter's trade. In the spring of 1850 he emigrated to Rockford, Ill., arriving there with his chest of carpenter's tools and four dollars in money. He remained at Rockford, working at his trade, until March, 1859, when he removed to St. Joseph, Berrien Co., Mich., but a short time afterwards changed his residence to Benton Harbor, the site of which was then a wilderness. In the fall of 1859 he, in company with his partner, Joseph Bowman, built the first frame house in Benton Harbor. Mr. Lord was married, July 5, 1852, to Miss Cornelia M. Morrison, whose parents were natives of New York, the fruit of the union being six children, of whom four are now living. Mr. and Mrs. Lord were finally divorced, and Mr. Lord married, July 3, 1874, Mrs. Maria C. Starr, widow of Horace Starr, by whom she had two children, both still living. Mr. Starr's death had occurred in Ohio, in June, 1854, and his widow had remained with her children on the farm, instilling into their minds all that was good and noble in herself. In 1865 she removed to Deatur, Mich., where she remained until her marriage with Mr. Lord.

Mr. Lord worked at his trade twenty-three years, subsequently engaging in fruit culture, in which his success has been marked. In religious matters he is independent, and in politics a Republican. His education was mainly acquired in the common schools of his boyhood. A view of his home is inserted in this work.

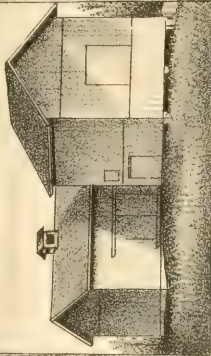
\* Upon the completion of which those who had assisted said to Mr. Brunson, "One thing we have forgotten, and that is to name the village." His reply was, "I don't care what, so that you have Harbor attached to it." Thereupon it was named Brunson's Harbor.



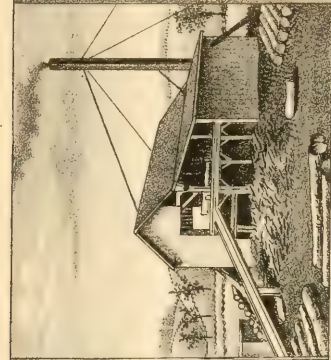




W. R. PEARL



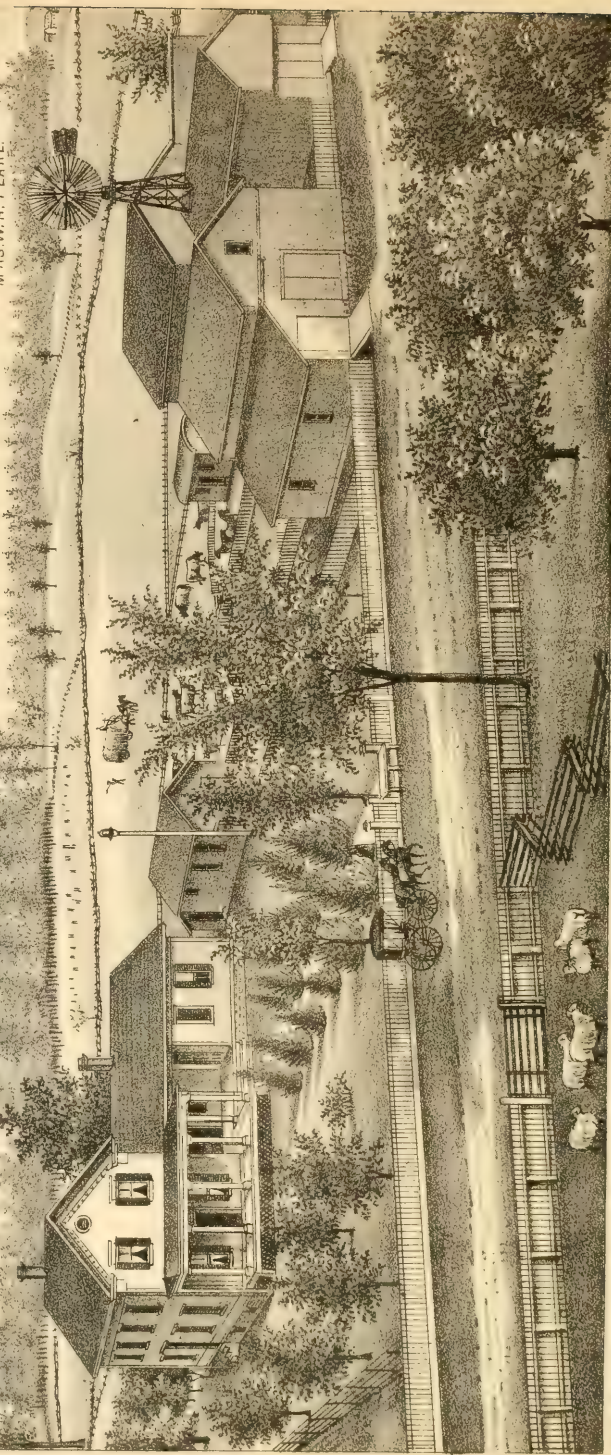
VIEW OF FARM BARN.



VIEW OF SAW MILL.



MRS. W. H. PEARL



RESIDENCE OF WARREN H. PEARL, BENTON T<sub>2</sub>, BERRIEN CO., MICH., 1879.



PHINEAS PEARL.

## PHINEAS PEARL.

This gentleman, a true son of New England, was the youngest in a family of five children, and was born in Windsor Co., Vt., May 12, 1789. At the age of fourteen he began to learn the carpenter's trade, and worked at it eight years. He then removed to Little Falls, Herkimer Co., N. Y., and learned the trade of wagon-making, at which he worked about seven years, and removed to Jefferson Co., N. Y. During the ten or twelve years spent in the latter, his time was occupied in farming and clearing land by contract, but not being successful at the business, he emigrated with his family to Monroe Co., Mich., in 1830, and purchased a small farm. About 1840, having exchanged his place for six lots in Benton township, Berrien Co., he removed to the latter and settled on section 25.

Mr. Pearl was married in March, 1813, in Vermont, to Miss Fannie Hatch, whose parents were natives of Connecticut. To Mr. and Mrs. Pearl were born nine children, of whom but four are now living. Three were buried in New York, when small, and two in Benton township, Michigan,—a son and a daughter, the son meeting his death by drowning. Mrs. Pearl died Aug. 23, 1866. Mr. Pearl is now the owner of about one hundred acres of land in this town, finely improved. He is now ninety-one years of age, and his character is of that rugged type inherent in the famed "Green Mountain boys." Those of his children who are living occupy farms near their father. Although of so great an age, Mr. Pearl attends to all his own business with as much ease, apparently, as in his younger days.

Politically, he is a Democrat; has been twice supervisor of his township, and has held minor offices. He is not a member of any religious organization. His early advantages for obtaining an education were those afforded by the straggling schools of the time, held in the log school-houses or in barns, when, though discipline was strict and the rod



MRS. PHINEAS PEARL.

was never spared, the children indulged in various characteristic pastimes, and the "big boys" turned the master out if they could, or obeyed him fearfully if they could not. Mr. Pearl's father died when the son was about five years old, and his mother remained a widow until her death, which occurred in 1825. She was a true New England mother, and strove for her children's welfare, teaching them, by her own example, habits of industry, economy, honesty, and sociability, and of them she never had cause to complain, for they all became prosperous and respected citizens.

## WARREN H. PEARL.

Warren H., son of Phineas Pearl, was born in Little Falls, Herkimer Co., N. Y., and was the second in a family of seven children. His parents were both natives of Vermont. His mother died Aug. 23, 1866. His father is yet living, at the age of ninety-one years. About 1830, Mr. Pearl, Sr., removed to Michigan with his family and settled in Monroe County. In 1840 he changed his residence to Benton township, Berrien County.

Warren Pearl spent his time upon his father's farm until he had reached his majority, attending the common schools of his neighborhood and taking advantage of whatever educational advantages they afforded. Nov. 6, 1847, he was married to Miss Minerva Randall, daughter of Joseph and Lucretia Randall. Mr. and Mrs. Pearl are the parents of nine children, as follows: Fannie L., born Sept. 3, 1848; Ellen L., born Sept. 24, 1850; Gilbert P., born Nov. 6, 1854; James W., born Jan. 25, 1857; Josephine, born March 26, 1860, died Aug. 5, 1861; Jessie W., born Aug. 26, 1862, died Aug. 12, 1866; Addie M., born March 16, 1865, died Aug. 16, 1865; Ervin R., born May 20, 1866; Nancy B., born July 17, 1867. In 1850, Mr. Pearl went to California and sought fortune among the gold mines of that region, but in 1852 he returned to Michigan. His



original homestead in the town of Benton consisted of one hundred and sixty acres, since increased to one hundred and ninety. He also owns one hundred and ten acres in other localities.

Mr. Pearl is a man of generous principles, and his honor and integrity are not to be questioned. In politics he is a staunch Democrat. He has served twice as highway commissioner, but has never sought for office. He is a member of no church organization, and entertains liberal views on religious subjects. From a small beginning in life he has amassed a comfortable property, and deserves great credit for his persevering efforts towards success. A view of his home will be found in this work.

#### J. F. HIGBEE.

Among the worthy pioneers of Berrien County is the gentleman above named. He was born May 7, 1818, in Ontario Co., N. Y., and was the seventh in a family of thirteen children. His father, James Higbee, was also a native of the State of New York, but removed to Ohio when the son was small, and remained there thirteen years. In June, 1837, another removal was made, and the family found a home in the wilds of Western Michigan, locating in Benton township, Berrien County, on section 14. At the age of twenty-one, J. F. Higbee, who had remained at home until that time, went to Iowa, and stayed about eighteen months, working a breaking-team in the summer and teaching school in the winter. He then returned to Michigan and remained one summer, spending the time in clearing and improving the farm upon which he now resides. In the fall of 1841 he returned to Iowa, to collect his pay for his previous winter's teaching, and while there was married to Miss Mary Lewis, daughter of John A. and Salome Lewis, natives of Virginia and descendants of English ancestry. Mr. and Mrs. Higbee became the parents of nine children, of whom six are now living. After their marriage Mr. Higbee and his wife came to Michigan, and settled in a log house on the farm which has since been their home. The log house and the sturdy forest have disappeared, and a fine residence and smiling and fertile fields have taken their places. Mr. Higbee's first purchase included one hundred and sixty acres, of which twenty acres have since been sold. Mr. Higbee is the owner of real estate in different localities, amounting in the aggregate to four hundred and ninety-one acres, and this has been accumulated through years of patient toil and economy. Mr. Higbee has during his residence here evinced great public spirit, and has aided to the extent of his ability in all public improvements, interesting himself in the construction of railways and harbors, and appreciating the advantages of everything calculated to add to the wealth and prosperity of his town and county. He is now president of the Northern Berrien County Michigan Lake Shore Agricultural Society, and the owner of the fair-grounds. Previous to Fremont's struggle for the executive seat of the nation Mr. Higbee was a Democrat, but his fortunes have since been cast with the Republican party. He has been earnestly interested in local politics, and has held numerous offices in the gift of his townsmen. He was the first treas-

urer of Benton township, and was elected five times, and is now serving his third term as justice of the peace. His education was acquired in the district schools of his early years, except that after coming to Michigan he attended the high school at Niles for about six months. Mr. and Mrs. Higbee united with the Disciples' Church in 1859.

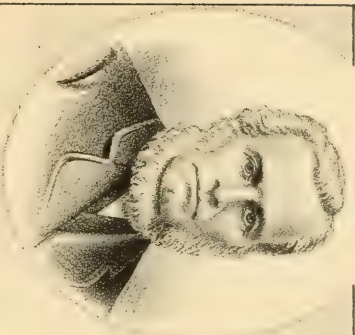
#### J. D. BURY.

Prominent among the pioneers of Berrien County is the gentleman whose name appears above. He was born in Pennsylvania Aug. 18, 1804, and was the sixth in a family of fourteen children. His father was a native of England, but was married in Pennsylvania, and when the son was an infant his parents went to Canada. The youth grew up "after the manner of those days," remaining beneath the parental roof until he had attained his majority. In 1830 he was married to Miss Martha Green, who was born in Canada Aug. 24, 1810. This union was blessed with eleven children, of whom but one is now living. In 1835, Mr. Bury removed to St. Joseph, Mich., and in 1837 located upon the place he now occupies, in Benton township, Berrien Co., having purchased one hundred and twenty acres from government. He subsequently became a large landholder, owning at one time fifteen hundred and twenty-one acres. About seven hundred and sixty-one acres are still in the hands of different members of the family. Mr. Bury has twice entered the matrimonial state, the second time with Miss Fannie Beyers, August 18, 1860. Her parents were Jacob and Elizabeth Beyers, natives of Pennsylvania. The fruit of this union is three children,—C. Beyers Bury, born June 17, 1862; J. D. Bury, Jr., born May 12, 1864; and Elsie J. Bury, born Dec. 23, 1865. Mr. Bury's present wife was the oldest in a family of eight girls, and came to Michigan in 1857. Her father died in 1863, and her mother is yet living, in the State of New York. Mrs. Bury is a devoted wife and mother, and a true woman. Mr. Bury, who has reached an advanced age, has been through life devoted to his family, and has striven to place them in comfortable circumstances. His farm has received the closest attention, and he has labored energetically, in common with others, to bring the township to its present substantial level. In politics he is a Democrat, and, aside from minor offices held by him, he has four times been elected supervisor of his town. His religious views are of a liberal nature.

#### LUTHER KINNEY,

who was born in Erie Co., N. Y., June 29, 1807, is the oldest in a family of eleven children,—six sons and five daughters—of whom three sons and one daughter now survive. His father, Elijah Kinney, was a native of New York, as was also his mother, whose maiden name was Lucretia Calvin, and who married the elder Kinney in 1806. Previous to the war of 1812, Mr. Kinney, Sr., had settled in Huron Co., Ohio, but at some time during the continuance of hostilities was driven out by the Indians. In 1814, however, he returned thither and made a permanent settlement.





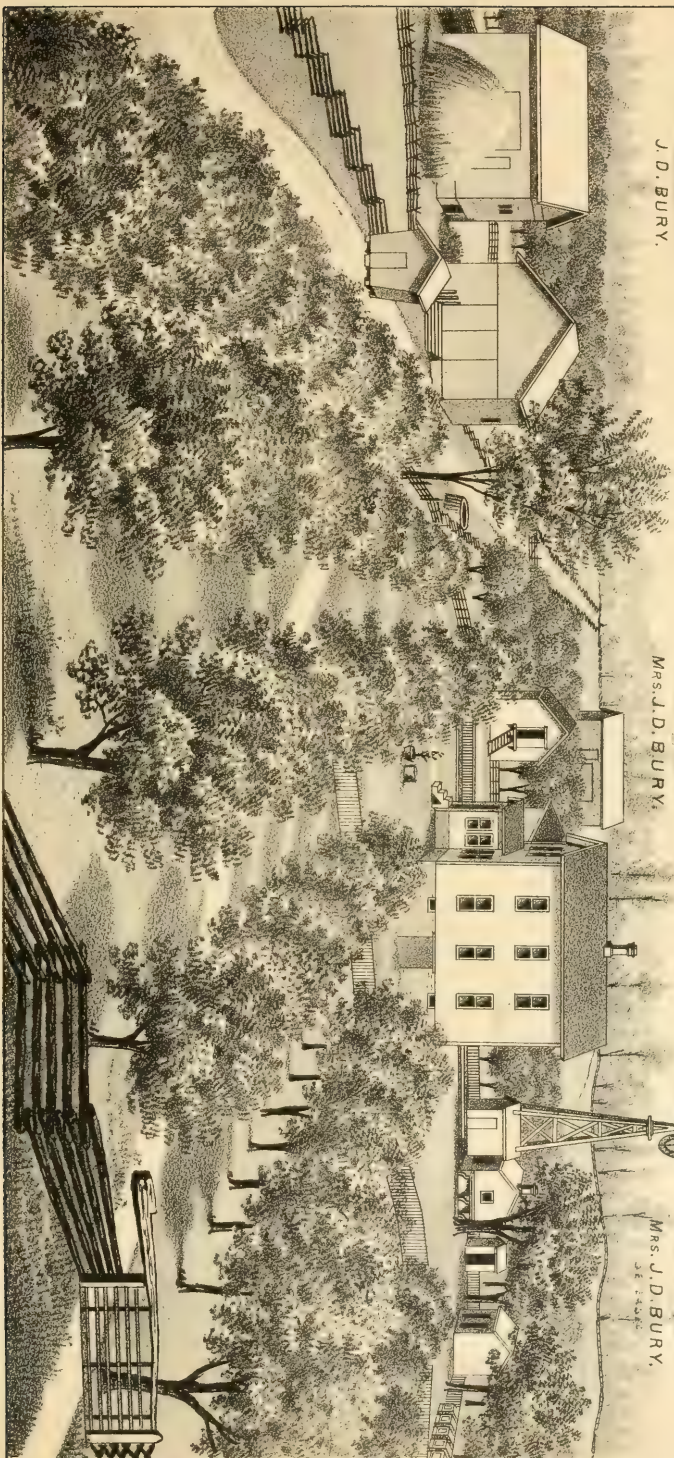
J.D. BURY.



Mrs. J.D. BURY.



Mrs. J.D. BURY.  
DE 1886





Luther Kinney remained at home, assisting his father, until he was twenty-three years of age, when he made an independent start in life. On the 2d of December, 1830, he was married, in Huron Co., Ohio, to Miss Emily W. Adams, daughter of Bildad and Mary Adams, who were—as was also their daughter—born among the rugged mountains of Vermont, and who had emigrated to Huron County when the daughter was six years old. Mrs. Kinney was the tenth in a family of eleven children,—eight girls and three boys. Of these, Mrs. Kinney and one sister, who resides in Branch Co., Mich., are all who are living. Their mother died in Ohio when Mrs. Kinney was but eleven years old, and her father when she was seventeen. In the fall of 1835, Mr. Kinney and his father, accompanied by their families, migrated to Michigan, and settled in Porter township, Van Buren County, where Mr. Kinney purchased one hundred and sixty acres of government land on section 24, to which he afterwards added forty more, and improved one hundred and fifty acres of the whole. In 1864 he sold his farm and removed to Lake City, Minn., where he invested in property and remained four years. In 1868 he disposed of his interest in Minnesota and returned to Michigan, and located in Benton township, Berrien County, where he now resides. His attention has since been given to fruit culture, and with gratifying success. He finally, owing to the death of many of his trees, returned to his vocation as a farmer, and his premises, a view of which will be found in this work, evince the taste and thrift of their owner.

Mr. and Mrs. Kinney have no children. In their earlier years they united with the Baptist Church, and are now members, in good standing, of the Congregational Church at Benton Harbor. Mr. Kinney's politics are in accordance with the principles of the Republican party. While a resident of Porter, Van Buren Co., he was its supervisor, and has held other offices. His advantages for obtaining an education were those afforded by the district schools of the early days. Mr. Kinney's father died in 1862, and had been preceded to the mystic land by his faithful partner ten years, her death occurring in 1852. They sleep peacefully after a rugged experience in life, and after having twice been pioneers.

#### ELKANAH NICKERSON

was born Nov. 13, 1806, in Harwich, Barnstable Co., Mass., and was one of a family of ten children, of whom five sons and one daughter survive. The parents and the ancestry, as far as it can be traced, claim Massachusetts as their native land. Mr. Nickerson's parents were married in 1803. His father, besides being a farmer, was a tanner and currier, and a licensed minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church. When Mr. Nickerson was fourteen years of age he left home, and went to sea as cook with his uncle, his father holding his earnings until he became of age. At the age of twenty-two he had reached the position of captain. He sailed for about thirty-six years, visiting many of the important seaports of the world. Jan. 29, 1829, when in his twenty-third year, he married Miss Hannah Doan, daughter of Benjamin and Hannah Doan, she being one of a family of nine children; her parents

were natives of Massachusetts. To Mr. and Mrs. Nickerson were born six children, as follows: Hannah D., born Dec. 4, 1829; Adelia, born Sept. 21, 1833; Zemira D., born Nov. 17, 1838; Elkanah, born Feb. 1, 1843; Arthur H., born Aug. 2, 1849, drowned from the steamer "St. Joseph," Aug. 13, 1867; Angeline, died at birth, March 8, 1858. During the years Mr. Nickerson was sailing, his wife remained most of the time ashore, taking a voyage with him occasionally, however. In 1856, having abandoned a seafaring life, Mr. Nickerson entered the mercantile business in New York City. In 1860 he chartered a vessel at New York for Chicago, placing his son-in-law, Capt. Robbins, in command. The vessel went ashore in a gale, at a place known as Grand Mere. Mr. Nickerson, who came out to look after it, visited St. Joseph and purchased twenty acres of wild land in what is now Lincoln township, and settled his son upon it. Mr. Nickerson remained East—visiting this place occasionally, with his wife and daughter, and making various purchases of property—until 1867, when he sold his home in Massachusetts, closed up his business, moved to Michigan, and settled where he now resides, the locality, even at that date, being in the midst of a dense forest. The homestead, finely improved, now consists of sixty acres, although Mr. Nickerson is the owner of various parcels of land in other localities,—in all three hundred acres. He has been greatly interested in fruit-raising. His daughter, now Mrs. Wisner, has, with her two sons, taken charge of the place since the death of Mrs. Nickerson, which occurred April 20, 1863. Mrs. Wisner's first husband, Mr. Kelley, who was also a sea-captain, died Aug. 5, 1862, of yellow fever, contracted in a voyage to the West Indies. Mr. Nickerson's educational advantages were limited, consisting only of the facilities afforded by the district schools, which he attended until he went to sea,—and then voyaging summers and attending school winters. Beginning when he was nineteen years of age, he taught three winter terms, and steadily increased his own fund of knowledge. He was always opposed to slavery, and took a stand against it when such a step was very unpopular. In 1856 and 1857 he represented his town in the Massachusetts Legislature. Politically he is a strong Republican, though never taking an active part in any political canvass. He is a member of no religious organization, but is a believer in the "True Spiritualism." He at present occupies the position of director of the First National Bank of St. Joseph.

#### CHAPTER XXVIII.

##### BERRIEN TOWNSHIP.

Early Settlements and Pioneers—Early Roads—Township Organization and List of Township Officers—Churches—Cemeteries—Schools—Societies and Orders.

BERRIEN was surveyed in 1826, by Noah Brookfield, and designated as township 6 south, range 17 west. It is bounded on the north by Pipestone and Sodus townships, on the south by Niles township, on the east by the Cass County line, and on the west by Oronoko township.



The surface of the country is undulating, and the soil rich and fertile. Less attention is paid to fruit culture than in some of the adjoining townships, but in general farm products the yield is bountiful, especially of wheat and corn. There is much excellent timbered land, and in various portions of the township may be found sheets of water designated as lakes, but in reality nothing more than large ponds. The largest of these—Smith Lake, on portions of sections 12 and 13—covers about 600 acres. Large and small together, there are 18 of these lakes in the township. In the west, three small streams discharge their waters into the river, but water-power is scarce.

Berrien is strictly an agricultural town. It boasts of no village, has but one store,—that at the post-office at what is known as the Centre,—and is limited in its manufactories to four saw-mills. The assessed valuation in 1879 was \$379,000. The population in 1870 was 1405.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENT.

Berrien was among the earliest townships in the county in point of settlement, and dates the period of its earliest permanent settlement back to the year 1827, when John Johnson located with his family upon section 29, where he still resides.

In the winter of 1824, John Johnson, John Lybrook, Joel Yard, Jacob Johnson (who were all young unmarried men), and Squire Thompson, left the southern part of Indiana, near Richmond, for Michigan, making the journey on foot. John Johnson was employed by Lybrook, and Jacob Johnson (his brother) by Thompson, to clear land near Niles. Yard went to Carey Mission. In the spring of 1825 the Johnson boys cleared 12 acres, and then Lybrook and Jacob Johnson went back to Indiana, leaving John Johnson to look after the crops that had been put in. John worked in that way until the summer of 1827, when he located 80 acres on section 29, in what is now Berrien township. He had married John Lybrook's sister, and having come over in the summer and put up a log house, brought his wife to it in that fall, and then entered upon the hardy experience of a pioneer. The country was of course simply a vast forest; the track of civilization stopped far short of their new home, and, besides themselves, no white inhabitants had penetrated those wilds, yet this brave and determined pair faced the hardships and trials of such an existence, and nobly held to their purpose of making a home. They saw that wilderness bloom as a garden, and witnessed the populous growth of a region of which they were at one time the only Christian tenants. With his son, John, Jr., Mr. Johnson still lives on his old place, a hearty and active old gentleman of seventy-six, and loves to talk of the events of his pioneering days, which, although not fraught with serious danger, glowed with adventurous incident, and illustrated to the fullest measure the struggles, privations, and heroic efforts that marked the path of the earliest settlers.

Late in the fall of the same year (1827), George H. Claypool, who was then living in Niles township (where he married a sister of John Johnson), went over into Berrien, where, on section 27, adjoining Johnson, he had entered 80 acres of land. He put up a log house, and in the spring

of 1828 he brought his wife to their new home. Johnson and Claypool were, as remarked, near neighbors, and for nearly two years the only dwellers in what is now Berrien township. Mr. Claypool died in December, 1873, aged sixty-seven. His children now living are Noah, of Berrien (living on the old farm), Samuel J., of Berrien, Daniel J., of Texas, John J., of Buchanan, and Mrs. James P. Dean, of Oronoko.

In the fall of 1829, John Smith, a young man residing in Union Co., Ind., journeyed from that section to Cass Co., Mich., in company with Samuel Witter, by whom he was engaged to assist in the transportation of Witter's family. Smith returned without delay to Indiana, and in the spring of 1830, entering 96 acres of land near what is now Smith's Lake, Berrien township, came out on foot and remained in the country three months. At the end of that time he journeyed on foot again to Indiana, to help his brother Isaac and family out from Indiana to Berrien, where Isaac had located a tract of 240 acres, on section 24, adjoining John's farm. All hands made the trip with an ox-team, and without the occurrence of startling incident reached their Michigan home. When they settled there there was no inhabitant in the region between them and the river, on a straight line, and northward their nearest neighbor was fifteen miles distant. Indians were plentiful but not troublesome, although wolves did annoy them and give much concern. The two brothers still live on their places of early settlement,—John, aged seventy-two, and Isaac, aged seventy-nine.

In the spring of 1831, Michael Hand and his nephew, Thomas Hand, of Butler Co., Ohio, visited Michigan for the purpose of locating land. They selected a tract, now on section 30 of Berrien township, where a single tree had been felled by one Harter, who had previously examined the place with a view of locating, but had finally settled near Pokagon. Michael and his nephew went back to Ohio, and in November of the same year returned to Michigan, with the family of the former. Thomas Hand, the nephew, located a farm adjoining his uncle, and there died in 1844. Besides Thomas, the neighbors of Michael Hand were Peter Hickman, Shadrach Ford, Luke Webster, George H. Claypool, and John Johnson. As showing the density of the wilderness in which they lived, it is related that Michael went out one morning to shoot a squirrel for breakfast, and, after he had gone but a few rods from his house, killed a deer. Undertaking to drag it home, he soon found himself bewildered and moving about in a circle, while there came upon him the distressing conviction that he was lost in the woods, although probably within ear-shot of his home. A snow-fall added to his perplexity, and it was not until his shouts summoned his wife that he was able to find his way home, very near which he had been aimlessly and hopelessly wandering for an hour. Mr. Hand died in January, 1877, upon his old farm, where his widow still resides.

Mrs. Hand relates in graphic detail the stern experiences of their pioneer life; how, between the howling of wolves, apprehensions touching the near presence of savages, and the consciousness that they were far from neighbors, life was far from pleasant. Days and nights were filled



PHOTO BY J. B. LIVES.

MRS. S. IRELAND.

SILAS IRELAND.



RES OF SILAS IRELAND, BERRIEN TP, BERRIEN CO, MICH.





with fears; privations and hardships attended upon every hand; and only stout hearts and unflinching determination enabled them to hold to their purpose.

Luke Webster was a settler of 1831, in Cass County, but did not locate in Berrien until 1833. In September, 1831, he started from Franklin Co., Va., with his wife and six children, for Michigan, with his family and effects in a wagon drawn by six horses. With them came also David Sink and family, with a four-horse team. They reached Niles township on Christmas Eve, and there Mr. Webster remained until 1833, when he moved, with his family, to Berrien, and settled on section 32, where his son, W. C. Webster, now lives. Mr. Webster died in 1841. Four of his children—W. C., Ezekiel, Adeline File, and Arbelia Wright—live in Berrien township.

In the autumn of 1830, Adam Michael, of Green Co., Ohio, started from that place with a youth named Isaac Murphy, and two other men, for Lafayette, Ind., where they proposed to locate land. Reaching there they disliked the country, and kept on westward. They reached Pokagon Prairie, Mich., in October of that year, and there wintered. In the spring of 1831, Michael took young Murphy with him into Berrien, and concluded to locate a farm upon section 21. Adam Michael brought his family out soon afterwards, and set up a blacksmith-shop, in which he was assisted by Murphy. Michael died upon that place in 1835. Two of his daughters—Mrs. Silas Ireland and Mrs. John Kibler—live in the township.

The first preaching in the township was heard at the house of Adam Michael, whose friend, Rev. Thomas P. McCoole, a Methodist Episcopal preacher of Cass County, used to hold services there quite often.

As before related, Isaac Murphy worked in Adam Michael's blacksmith-shop. After passing two years there—in he entered a farm upon section 15, where he still resides.

In 1834, William Michael, father of Adam, moved from Ross Co., Ohio, with his family, to Berrien, and took a farm on section 21, adjoining Adam's. He was an old man of seventy when he came to Michigan, and died a few years after reaching his new home. A son, B. H. Michael, resides in Berrien, on section 22.

Eli Ford, a native of Pennsylvania, and a settler in Erie Co., Ohio, left the latter place in the summer of 1826, and on the 10th of July reached Pokagon Prairie, with his wife and four children. Wintering at Pokagon, he repaired, in the spring of 1827, to a place near Niles, where he passed the summer, returning in the winter to Pokagon. In the spring of 1828 he put up a grist-mill on Dowagiac Creek. In 1832 he sold his possessions there and moved to Berrien, where he had previously located land, on section 18, near the river. Directly afterwards he put up a saw-mill on a creek flowing through section 17, and, after sawing sufficient lumber to build a house, rented the mill to Abram Putebaugh, and devoted himself chiefly to farming. He engaged occasionally in lumbering, and after taking his rafts to Chicago, used to walk back home by way of Niles. He built, in 1833, on the bank of the river, near the east end of the present bridge, a grain warehouse, in which Lyman A. Barnard first, and Thomas L. Stevens afterwards, carried on a considerable trade in shipping and receiving supplies

of all kinds, destined either for transportation down the river or into the interior. That point was a favored one for river business, and there the agricultural products of the neighboring country were taken for shipment to market, and goods brought to the country in exchange were landed there. After a brief but busy career, Mr. Ford died on his farm in 1839. His children now living in Berrien are Ephraim (on the homestead) and a daughter, Harriet. His widow married Hugh Marrs, and still resides in Berrien.

Hugh Marrs, of Virginia, started from that State in the fall of 1829, with his family, for Pokagon Prairie. He wintered in Preble Co., Ohio, and April 6, 1830, reached Pokagon, with just \$10 in his pocket. Locating 80 acres on the St. Joseph, in Berrien, opposite the Shaker farm in Oronoko, he remained there until January, 1832, when a flood drove him to the bluff, and selling out in the spring, he entered 80 acres five miles east of Berrien Springs, on the Pokagon road. Soon afterwards he entered an adjoining 80 acres, and of these 160 acres he managed, with the assistance of his sons, to clear 100 during the ensuing twelve years. In 1856 he changed his location to the old Ford farm, where he passed his days, and died Aug. 19, 1878, aged eighty-one. Benjamin F., his son, occupies with his father's widow the farm upon which Mr. Marrs died. Of his other surviving children, Thomas, a son, and two daughters—Mrs. Richard Webster and Mrs. T. B. Snow—reside in Berrien.

Shadrach Ford, of Ohio, located on Pokagon Prairie, in 1827, and commenced trading with the Indians. In that pursuit he continued until 1832, when he settled upon section 19, in Berrien township, where he resided until his death, in 1874.

William Lemon, a Virginian, settled in Stark Co., Ohio, and in 1831 left there, with his wife and eleven children, for Berrien township, where he and his son Henry, with the latter's family, had passed the previous year in clearing land and preparing the place for future residence. This was on section 19, upon what is known as the B. D. Townsend farm. After residing upon the farm a few years, during which—in 1832—he built there the first saw-mill erected in the township, Mr. Lemon removed to Oronoko, where he died. Henry, who had located 40 acres adjoining his father's farm, removed also to Oronoko, and there ended his days. The only child of William Lemon residing in Berrien is Mrs. John Tate.

In October, 1828, John Burke, of Virginia, moved, with his family of six children, to Cass Co., Mich., where he settled, and there died in 1838. Andrew L., one of his sons, bought a farm on the river, in the southwestern part of Berrien township, from Lawrence Cavanaugh, and still lives there. William, the eldest son, who entered the farm, in section 24, upon which his father lived, died there in 1869. Besides Andrew L., the surviving children of John Burke living in Berrien are Mrs. John Smith and Rebecca Burke.

In 1834, David Riffin, a young man, came from Virginia, and located land on section 14, in Berrien, north of Riffin Lake, but did not settle upon it until two years later, working meanwhile for other settlers. In 1861, David moved to the farm now occupied by his widow. He died in

1873, aged sixty-eight. His father, Thomas, came to Berrien in 1834, with his family, and for a year or two lived with his daughter, the wife of Hugh Marrs. He then settled with his family upon section 23, on the Pokagon road. He remained there until 1861, and trading his farm for one in Cass County, moved to the latter place, where he died.

James Gillespie, of Champaign Co., Ohio, was a young man when he moved to Niles township. He worked subsequently at Carey Mission, and in 1832 entered a farm in what is now Berrien township. For the ensuing two years, however, he boated on the St. Joseph River, and in 1834 he went back to Champaign County, to assist in moving his father, Mathew M. Gillespie, who, with his wife and four children, made the journey to Michigan. Upon his arrival Mathew settled, with his family, upon the farm of his son James, with whom he remained more than two years. At the end of that time John, one of James' brothers, located a farm on section 31, and took his father and family there to live with him. There the elder Gillespie lived until his death, in 1842, and there John still resides. James died on his old place in 1851.

In 1836, John Gillespie made a trip to Champaign Co., Ohio, to assist Jonathan Knight and Nathan Fitch in moving with their families to Michigan. Knight settled in Oronoko. Fitch located land in Berrien, upon section 31, but worked some time in Berrien Springs, at his trade as a plasterer, before finally settling upon his farm, where he now lives.

Hiram Hinchman came at about the same time with Thomas Riffin, and located on section 24. He removed subsequently to Missouri, where he died.

James Jenkins set out from Virginia in the fall of 1831, with his family, for Michigan, and wintering in Ohio, resumed his journey in the spring of 1832. Reaching section 24, in Berrien township, he found a small clearing, and built on it a log shanty, in which his family found temporary shelter while he looked about in search of land. He found such a spot, and entered 120 acres, but did not settle there until about a year later. Mr. Jenkins died there in 1875. His children now living in Berrien are John, Isaac, Mrs. Joel Layman, and Mrs. Solomon Cuddeback.

In the fall of 1832, Andrew Tate and a Mr. Hogshead, of Ohio, visited Michigan in company to locate land. Mr. Hogshead entered a farm near White Pigeon, and Mr. Tate a 200-acre tract in Berrien township, on section 17. Tate returned to Ohio, but even after entering his Michigan land hesitated to make the venture of a settlement there with his family. This indecision kept him in Ohio until 1834, when he conveyed his wife and three children to the Michigan wilderness, and, obtaining a temporary home at Adam Michael's house, erected meanwhile a log cabin upon his own place, and six weeks after his arrival in the country took his family there. Andrew Tate became a man of some note, and lived upon the farm until his death, in 1865. Before his death he sold the place to his son John, who died there in January, 1879. Mr. John Tate was conspicuous in the administration of local affairs, having served his township as supervisor for a period of sixteen years.

He also filled the office of county treasurer. The only living child of Andrew Tate is Mrs. James Essick, of Berrien Springs.

Julius Brown moved in the autumn of 1829, with his wife and two children, in a wagon drawn by one ox-team, from Chagrin Falls, Ohio, towards Michigan, and reaching Tecumseh when the snow began to fall, tarried there during the ensuing winter. In the spring he came to Niles, and halting there April 1st, examined the country, but, not finding it to his liking, constructed a raft, and placing his family and household goods aboard, floated down the river to St. Joseph. Dividing his time during the next two years between St. Joseph and Niles, working meanwhile at the trade of carpentering, without having a fixed purpose as to settlement, he finally, in 1832, located in Berrien township on section 17. He continued to work at his trade as a carpenter for some time after that at Berrien Springs and other places, but also managed his farm. He died there in 1860, at which time he had increased his landed possessions to 210 acres. Julius Brown was a man of some consequence in the spring of 1832, when, upon the alarm being given that the *Sauk* Indians were approaching Chicago, he was placed in command of the militia, although, as it turned out, there was no occasion for the mustering.

Richard, a brother of Julius Brown, and by trade a shoemaker, settled in 1834 in Berrien, on section 21. He farmed in the summer and made shoes in the winter seasons until 1845, when he went to Cass County, and removed thence after a few years to Royalton township, residing in the latter place until his death.

Philander V. Huston, a brother-in-law to Julius Brown, came with the latter to Berrien. He was a carpenter, and labored here and there at his trade in the vicinity of Berrien for ten years or more, when he removed to a place near Elkhart, Ind., and there died.

Martin Friley, David Moore, Elias Parker, and Theron, his brother, were settlers in Berrien in 1834, but as they passed farther west about two years afterwards, they may be dismissed with a brief notice.

E. W. Walker, from New York State, located about 1834 on section 9, and lived there until 1855, when he moved to Van Buren County and died there.

Richard McOmber settled in 1835 upon parts of sections 16 and 17. In 1847 he sold his place to the county for a poor-farm, and moved to Buchanan.

In June, 1834, Henry Rush, of Greene Co., Ohio, made the journey on horseback from that section to Berrien, where he located 100 acres, upon section 5. Mr. Rush intended to bring his family out as soon as possible, but on the very night before he set out (in June) to return to Ohio there came a heavy frost that nearly destroyed the growing crops; and looking forward with distrust to the prospect of pioneer existence in a country where the crops were blasted by summer frosts, he deemed it wiser to defer the transferring of his family, and so did not bring them out until the autumn of 1835. He domiciled his wife and four children at Andrew Tate's house a few weeks, until he could provide a log house for them. Upon the creation of the Eau Claire post-office, in 1861, Mr. Rush was appointed postmaster, and continued in the possession of the office until 1874. He





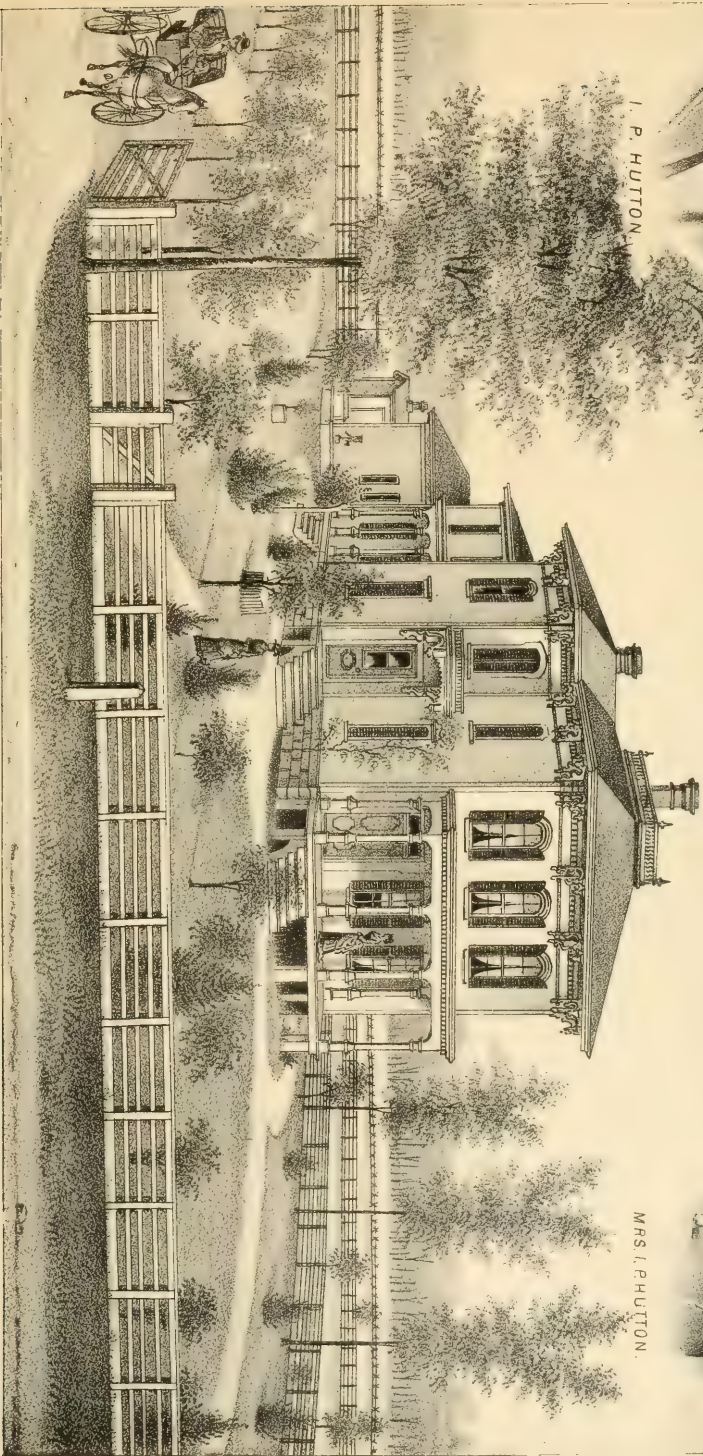
I. P. HUTTON.



VIEW OF BARN.



MRS. I. P. HUTTON.



RES. OF ISRAEL P. HUTTON, BERRIEN TWP., BERRIEN CO., MICH.





resided upon the place of his first settlement until 1878, when he removed to the village of Berrien Springs, and is now living there.

John Powers moved from Greene Co., Ohio, to Pokagon Prairie in 1829, and remained there until the fall of 1834, when he settled upon section 15, in Berrien township, on a farm which he had entered in 1832. Prior to settling, he had come over from Pokagon, put up a log cabin on his place, cleared some land, and set out an orchard, so that when he brought his family he had affairs pretty well arranged for their comfort. Among the members of his family when he came to Berrien was H. S. Robinson, now township clerk, who was Mr. Powers' stepson. Two years before he died Mr. Powers became totally blind and helpless. He lived on his farm until his death, in August, 1879. His old place is still owned and occupied by his children.

Francis R. Pinnell, now living in Berrien, at the age of ninety-four, came to the township in 1835. With a large company of 27 people (including himself, wife, and eight children; Wesley Pinnell, wife, and nine children, and Cyrus Hinchman, F. R. Pinnell's son-in-law, with his family), he started from Virginia for Indiana, where it was his purpose to settle. When they reached Indianapolis, and had viewed the country, they concluded that Indiana was not a place to their liking, but, pending a move farther westward, they were detained in Indianapolis by the illness of Wesley Pinnell, his wife and child, and Rebecca Linegar,—all of whom died there. Nearly all the members of the company were more or less fever-stricken at Indianapolis, where they remained from July to September. On the 4th of September the remnant of the little band traveled together in wagons towards Michigan. Without further mishaps they reached Berrien, where Francis R. Pinnell settled on section 14. He lived there four years, and then moved to a place near Morris Chapel, whence, in 1854, he moved to his present location, on section 35.

Ralph Denn, from New York State, came to Berrien, with his wife and five children, in 1836, and stopped on the place known as the B. D. Townsend farm, where he labored a few years, and in 1839 bought 40 acres of land on section 9. He lived there until 1869, when he removed to Kansas, where he died in 1877. Four of his children live in Berrien, to wit: Mrs. H. S. Robinson, Mrs. Church Cox, Mrs. Asher Webster, and William Denn.

Thomas Easton, a settler in Southern Indiana, and originally from Kentucky, left Indiana in the summer of 1838, with his wife and ten children, and reached Berrien in the fall. Mr. Easton had entered 40 acres on section 11, but had to find temporary shelter for his family until he could put up a cabin. This home he found with Campbell McCoy, who had come from Indiana in 1835 and located upon section 11. McCoy, it may be noted, lived upon that farm until about 1850, and then removed to Pipestone township, where he died. After settling upon his new location, Mr. Easton added to it 40 acres, for which he gave a brown mare, and subsequently added 40 acres more. Upon the 120 acres thus acquired his son, A. J. Easton, now lives. Thomas Easton died there in 1871.

Silas Ireland was a young man when he came from Ohio

to Berrien, in 1839. He worked for farmers in that section until 1843, when, having married and located a farm of his own, he moved upon the place now occupied by him.

Abram Puterbaugh was one of the settlers in Berrien in 1836. He moved, with his family, consisting of his wife and seven children, from Ohio to Niles, early in 1834, and there leased George Boon's mill, which he carried on until 1836, when he went to Berrien township and there leased Eli Ford's saw-mill, putting up also near the mill a log cabin for a family residence. After operating Ford's saw-mill two years, Puterbaugh built a saw- and grist-mill on the same creek nearer the river, and bought there 200 acres of land of Robert E. Ward. During the early spring of 1841, Mr. Puterbaugh went to Berrien Springs for a mill-iron, and upon his return, in attempting to cross the frozen river, broke through the ice and was drowned. He had made only a partial payment upon his land, and his sons not caring to retain it, the property reverted to Mr. Ward.

Ford's mill, already spoken of, stood at the foot of the hill covered by the John Tate place, and traces of it may yet be seen near the roadway at the creek crossing. David, one of Abram Puterbaugh's sons, moved to Pipestone about 1838; Jacob, another son, lived in Berrien until 1855, when he too moved to Pipestone.

Brief mention may be made of Lawrence Cavanaugh, who settled upon section 26 in 1830, and of Peter Hickman, who located on section 30 at an early date. Cavanaugh moved farther west shortly after becoming a resident of Berrien. Hickman died on his farm in 1840.

Cyrus Hinchman, who has already been mentioned as having come to Berrien, in 1835, with Francis Pinnell, located upon section 14, and was the most extreme northern settler in the township. Hinchman started from Virginia without any decided view as to a settlement in Michigan, but was persuaded that way by his brother Hiram, who made his home in Berrien in 1834. Cyrus became known afterwards as the man who raised the largest pumpkin ever seen in the township. How large it was cannot now be said, but it was large enough to be worth a barrel of salt, for which Hinchman traded it at Niles. Mrs. J. C. Runkle, of Pipestone township, is a daughter of Mr. Hinchman, and recalls that when her father reached the wilderness of Berrien with his family, all the money he had was a five-franc piece. One cold winter day, when the ground was covered with snow, Mr. Hinchman began to chop a large tree that stood near his cabin, and fearing the tree might fall upon the cabin, he conveyed his young children to a safe spot, and sat them upon a freshly-taken deer-skin, which he had spread on the snow. There the little ones sat while he felled the tree, and well it was too that he had taken the precaution, for the tree fell upon the cabin and damaged it badly.

Mr. Hinchman lived in Berrien until 1865, when he moved to Montcalm Co., Mich., and is still living there.

After 1840 settlements began to multiply rapidly. The population, which was 543 in 1840, was nearly double that in 1854. Among the early settlers of whom special mention has not already been made were Joel Layman, Israel P. Hutton, T. K. Clyburne, William and John Nye, and B. D. Townsend.

One may yet encounter in a day's drive, many hearty old men, who still remain as reminders of the pioneer history of Berrien, and who tell the stories of Michigan's early days in a way that awakens a deep interest. The remembrance of a nearly fifty years' experience upon Michigan soil is the valuable legacy which time has left to many of Berrien's pioneers; and now, in the enjoyment of comfort and ease, they are pardonably proud to rank themselves with the rest of that noble band, whose members were the advance-guard in the march to the Western wilds in the days when that region was a stranger to the tread of the white man. The first birth in Berrien was that of John Johnson's son, Isaac, who was born Dec. 20, 1828. The first death is supposed to have been Peter, son of Wm. Lemon. He was buried on his father's farm. Mention has already been made of Eli Ford's warehouse, which was built in 1833, upon the river-bank, near the east end of the bridge at Berrien Springs. That point was at one time a place of considerable trade. Thomas L. Stevens kept store there until his removal to the village opposite, and John Defield kept tavern awhile near at hand, but the business activity was soon transferred thence to Berrien Springs.

#### EARLY ROADS.

The first roads of consequence were the ones extending from Niles to Berrien Springs, and from the latter point to Pokagon, both being laid out in 1832.

April 24th of that year the township was districted as follows: "The public road from Brown's Ferry across the St. Joseph River, thence west to the line of said township, on the road to Newburyport, to be District No. 1. All the land in said township lying south and west of the said road and river to be District No. 2. All the land in said township lying east of the said river to be one district, and numbered three." Then follows a list of the names of the persons, April 24, 1832, as liable in April, 1832, to work on the highways in the three districts. They were as follows: District No. 1, Clark Pennewell, Wm. Williams, Daniel Williams, Jacob Shoemaker, William Wilson, Stephen Purdee, Martin Hoffman, F. B. Murdock, Michael O'Harra, Pitt Brown, Horace Godfrey; District No. 2, Wm. Barlow, Wm. C. Webster, Samuel Salee, Hezekiah Hall, Wm. T. St. John; District No. 3, John Johnson, Eli Ford, Shadrach Ford, Wm. Lemon, Henry Lemon, Geo. H. Claypool, Adam Michael, Michael Hand, Lawrence Cavanaugh, Hugh Marrs, Daniel Marrs, James Jenkins, Alexander Marrs, Elias Parker, John Smith, Isaac Smith, Wm. Ferguson.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION.

In the month of April, 1832, Calvin Britain, representative in the Legislature from Berrien County, presented to the Legislature the following petition:

"TO THE HONORABLE THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL OF THE TERRITORY OF MICHIGAN:

"The undersigned, citizens of the County of Berrien, in said Territory, residing between the nine-mile post from the mouth of the St. Joseph River to the nineteenth-mile post, respectfully represent that heretofore the township of Niles has embraced the whole county of Berrien; that that part of the County of Berrien designated is settling with remarkable rapidity; that the citizens thereof experience much inconvenience in being obliged to resort to Niles, situated near the

southern line of the County, to exercise the invaluable right of participating in the election of township officers; that, independent of this consideration, the citizens residing within the boundaries designated feel greatly the importance of electing their own township officers from among themselves,—men who feel an interest and a pride in opening and improving roads within the boundaries aforesaid, and of performing all of the other duties that may be required of them as township officers.

"The undersigned, therefore, respectfully pray your honorable body to pass a law setting off from the township of Niles all that part of said County situate North of township seven, and extending as far North as to include two tiers of sections in township five, and the east and west lines to extend from the west line of Cass County to Lake Michigan.

(Signed)

"F. B. MURDOCK,	JOHN JOHNSON,
"HUGH MARRS,	ELI FORD,
"WILLIAM C. WEBSTER,	MICHAEL HAND,
"WILLIAM F. ST. JOHN,	PETER HICKMAN,
"HEZEKIAH HALL, JR.,	DANIEL JOHNSON,
"WILLIAM BARLOW,	MICHAEL O'HARRA,
"WILLIAM LEMON,	SHADRACH FORD,
"ADAM MICHAEL,	WILLIAM FERGUSON,
"GEORGE H. CLAYPOOL,	PITT BROWN,
"HENRY LEMON,	ELIAS PARKER,"
"WILLIAM MICHAEL,	

Upon the foregoing petition, the township of Berrien was erected and organized in 1832, its territory—originally a part of Niles township—including what are now the townships of Berrien, Oronoko, and Lake. In 1837, that portion of Berrien extending from the river to the lake was set off into a separate township, by the name of Oronoko, although the river was not made the boundary line until 1847. (See history of Oronoko.)

The first election in the new township was held at the tavern of Pitt Brown, on the west bank of the St. Joseph River, on the 1st of April, 1833. The persons elected, together with the votes cast for each, were as follows: Supervisor, Pitt Brown, 20; Township Clerk, Francis B. Murdock, 16; Assessors, William F. St. John, 21; Hezekiah Hall, Jr., 21; Julius Brown, 21; Commissioners of Highways, William F. St. John, 21; Hezekiah Hall, Jr., 21; Julius Brown, 21; Constables, Stephen Purdee, 19; Henry Lemon, 15; Fence-Viewers and Poundmasters, John Johnson and William C. Webster, 8; Overseers of Highways, District No. 1, Stephen Purdee, 4; District No. 2, Hezekiah Hall, Jr., 4; District No. 3, William Lemon, 4; District No. 4, Lawrence Cavanaugh, 4; District No. 5, Eli Ford, *viva voce*, in place of Julius Brown, who declined to serve; Collector, Stephen Purdee, 19.

It appears from the records that the residents of Berrien township proceeded to an election of officers in April, 1832, immediately upon presenting their application for township organization, but who the officials were—other than Lawrence Cavanaugh, Moderator, and Francis B. Murdock, Clerk—cannot be stated, since the record of that election has not been preserved.

Following is a list of the names of those who have served the township as supervisors and clerks from 1833 to 1880:

1833.—Supervisor, Pitt Brown; Clerk, Francis B. Murdock.  
 1834-35.—Supervisor, Pitt Brown; Clerk, Wm. F. St. John.  
 1836.—Supervisor, Pitt Brown; Clerk, Thos. Love.  
 1837.—Supervisor, Pitt Brown; Clerk, Francis D. Johnson.  
 1838-39.—Supervisor, Pitt Brown; Clerk, Thos. Love.  
 1840.—Supervisor, Pitt Brown; Clerk, Thos. L. Stevens.  
 1841.—Supervisor, Alonzo Bennett; Clerk, Thos. L. Stevens.





E. T. DICKSON.



MRS. E. T. DICKSON.

PHOTO BY F. B. VICK



RESIDENCE OF EDWIN T. DICKSON, SEC. 10, BERRIEN TWP, BERRIEN CO., MICH



- 1842.—Supervisor, Julius Brown; Clerk, Amos Gray.  
 1843.—Supervisor, Julius Brown; Clerk, Cyrus Hinchman.  
 1844.—Supervisor, A. L. Burke; Clerk, Cyrus Hinchman.  
 1845.—Supervisor, Geo. Murphy; Clerk, Cyrus Hinchman.  
 1846-48.—Supervisor, A. L. Burke; Clerk, George Murphy.  
 1849.—Supervisor, Geo. Murphy; Clerk, Silas Ireland.  
 1850.—Supervisor, Silas Ireland; Clerk, Daniel Boon.  
 1851-52.—Supervisor, Silas Ireland; Clerk, Truman Royce.  
 1853.—Supervisor, J. F. Haskins; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.  
 1854.—Supervisor, Silas Ireland; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.  
 1855.—Supervisor, Ralph Denn; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.  
 1856.—Supervisor, Silas Ireland; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.  
 1857.—Supervisor, P. G. Cuddeback; Clerk, J. L. Kessler.  
 1858.—Supervisor, Wm. S. Maynard; Clerk, Wm. P. Weed.  
 1859.—Supervisor, E. A. Brown; Clerk, P. G. Cuddeback.  
 1860.—Supervisor, P. G. Cuddeback; Clerk, H. L. Johnson.  
 1861.—Supervisor, P. G. Cuddeback; Clerk, George Cuddeback.  
 1862.—Supervisor, P. G. Cuddeback; Clerk, Edward Cady.  
 1863-65.—Supervisor, John Tate; Clerk, Edward Cady.  
 1866.—Supervisor, H. R. Murphy; Clerk, Edward Cady.  
 1867.—Supervisor, John Tate; Clerk, Edward Cady.  
 1868-69.—Supervisor, John Tate; Clerk, Erastus Murphy.  
 1870.—Supervisor, John F. Peck; Clerk, Erastus Murphy.  
 1871.—Supervisor, Joel Layman; Clerk, Isaac Rogers.  
 1872.—Supervisor, John Tate; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.  
 1873.—Supervisor, J. M. Savage; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.  
 1874.—Supervisor, John Tate; Clerk, Almon Keigley.  
 1875-76.—Supervisor, I. P. Hutton; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.  
 1877-79.—Supervisor, D. H. Allery; Clerk, H. S. Robinson.

The affairs of the township are in charge of a township board, consisting of D. H. Allery, Supervisor; H. S. Robinson, Clerk; and Norman Nims, the senior justice of the peace.

On the 1st of April, 1879, the township was clear of debt, and had in the treasury, including school-moneys, \$336.75. The total taxation in 1878 was \$6381.96, of which \$2335.30 were for school purposes.

#### CHURCHES.

*Morris Chapel, Methodist Episcopal Church.*—A Methodist Episcopal society was organized in 1843, and worshiped in the Washington school-house, a log edifice, located about eighty rods south of the present church. The early church records having been lost, no definite details of the early organization can be given.

In 1845, when Rev. Henry Worthington was preaching on the circuit, the church membership included 50 persons. Ludwig Robinson was then class-leader. Shortly afterwards, Isaac Schnorf was chosen to be class-leader, and remained as such for a period of thirty-one consecutive years.

In 1846 the congregation built a church edifice, which, in honor of Bishop Morris, they called Morris Chapel, and in that year laid out a church-yard. In 1867 a new church building replaced the old one, and is still used. The church membership has varied from 40 to 65, and numbers now 46. The class-leaders now are Samuel Van Vlear and Joseph Stafford. The stewards are Joseph Stafford, Charles Stafford, and Isaac Schnorf. The trustees are Joseph Stafford, Charles Stafford, Isaac Schnorf, Cyrus B. Groat, Stephen A. Curtis, Sylvester Schnorf, Henry R. Nye, Benjamin N. Nye, and Joseph Walker. The last pastor was Rev. T. T. George, who preached at Morris Chapel. The church is now awaiting a Conference appointment of a pastor. The Sabbath-school, including 45 scholars, is in charge of Gustavus Matthews, assisted by 6 teachers. Morris Chapel is now on the Pokagon circuit, which includes five stations.

*Pleasant Hill United Brethren Church.*—In 1851 the members of the United Brethren faith near Pleasant Hill were organized into a congregation by Rev. Samuel Chapman, and attached to the Silver Creek circuit. Among the original members were John Martin and wife, Moody Willis, James Groat and wife, Joseph Stafford and wife, Amos Stafford, F. R. Pinnell and wife, Delilah W. and Nancy A. Pinnell, Wesley F. Pinnell and wife, Walker Willis. Worship was held in members' houses, in Moody Willis' barn, and in Morris chapel, until 1853, when the church now in use was erected. The first class-leader was Wesley Pinnell, whose successor, James Groat, has been the leader from 1853 to the present time (with the exception of one year). The first steward was Moody Willis, who assisted in the building of the church, and who was killed in the United States service during the war of the Rebellion.

Following Mr. Chapman, the early pastors of the church were Revs. Forbes, Freeman, Dunn, and France. The present pastor, who preaches once every two weeks, is Rev. J. H. Pattee, whose immediate predecessors were Revs. Light and Bartmouth. Removals and deaths have weakened the church membership, which includes now but 17 persons.

*Franklin Chapel (United Brethren)* was organized in 1854 by Elder Thomas, who held meetings previous to that time in the Franklin school-house. In 1855 a meeting-house was built. The present pastor is Rev. J. H. Pattee, who preaches once every fortnight. The church membership is but 15. M. D. Curtis is the steward; Thomas Brown is the class-leader; and M. D. Curtis and Isaac Jenkins, trustees.

*Berrien Centre Free-Will Baptist Church* congregation, now worshipping at the union church, south of Berrien Centre, was organized June 17, 1865, by Rev. James Ashley. The original members were Zera F. Wright and wife, John H., Margaret, Jeremiah, Sarah, William, Lydia, John, Cyrus, Adeline, and Elizabeth Shearer; Lydia and Phillis Dickson, Peter File, George and Margaret Foster, James Wright, Maria Webster, Laura and Julia Murphy, Robert Lemon, Jane and Lavina Marrs, Ralph and Eliza Magill, Joseph and Mary Myers, Annette Weed, Mary Rutter, George Cuddeback, Elizabeth Cuddeback, — Riggins. At the first session John H. Shearer was chosen deacon, and George Cuddeback clerk. E. T. Dickson is the present clerk, and William Shearer, John H. Shearer, and J. S. Wright the deacons. The membership in September, 1879, was 88. Rev. Lewis Jones was then the pastor, and held services once in two weeks.

*Maple Grove (United Brethren) Church* was organized in 1854 by Rev. Thomas J. Babcock, in a log school-house in the northern part of the township, Mr. Babcock having held services previously in the house of David Moore. Henry Rush was leader of the first class formed, and other members were David S. Weaver and wife, Jacob Puterbaugh and wife, John Rush, William Tenant and wife, Martin Reese and wife, Nicholas Michael and wife, Thomas Mountjoy and wife, Caleb Clark and wife. Until 1873, when the present house of worship was erected, the church met in the Eau Claire school-house. The present member-



ship is 72. The pastor is Rev. E. F. Light, and the class-leader, H. S. Robinson.

A *Methodist Episcopal Society* worshipping in the north previous to 1864, joined the United Brethren upon the organization of the latter at Maple Grove. A Methodist Episcopal Society worshipped near the Centre as early as 1838, and had in its first class Thomas and Mary Riggins, Miss Mary Riggins, Hiram Hinchman and wife, William Nye and wife, Margetta Boss, and Ann E. Powers. The society met in the union church until 1870, when, being much reduced in numbers, it was dissolved.

The *Dunkards* formerly met at the union church, and early in the history of Berrien a Dunkard society had an existence in the eastern part of the township. Members of that faith in Berrien still meet occasionally for worship, but their number is small and their meetings infrequent.

*Long Lake Church.*—About 1856 a number of citizens, living in the vicinity of Long Lake, subscribed towards the erection of a union church near Long Lake, to be used forever as a free church by all religious denominations alike. They appointed as trustees Messrs. Michael Hand, George H. Claypool, and Andrew L. Burke, and since that time the church structure has been similarly in charge of trustees. Baptists, Adventists, Lutherans, and United Brethren have worshipped there, but the former and the latter are the only ones now maintaining at that point a regular organization.

*The Baptist Congregation*—a branch of the Berrien Centre Free-Will Baptist Church—was organized March 8, 1879, by Rev. Lewis Jones. The original members were John and Sarah Burke, Margaret Frank, Allie Green, William H. and Eva Miller, Maggie Martin, Phoebe and Eliza A. Simpson, Jennie Thayer, Frances Snyder. These persons yet comprise the church membership. Services are held once every fortnight by Rev. Lewis Jones. John Irwin is the deacon, W. H. Miller the clerk, and W. C. Webster the treasurer.

*The United Brethren Congregation* was organized in the spring of 1877 by Rev. K. H. Sickafosse, who had been preaching for a few months previously to the members of the faith in that vicinity. The original members were W. H. Miller and wife, William Rice, Allie Green, Horatio and Hascal Cole, George Edwards, Jane Thayer, Margaret Frank, John Rogers, Libbie and Maggie Irwin. The congregation has latterly lost in membership and includes now but five persons, but the organization is still maintained and bids fair to be for some time to come. William Rice is the class-leader, and Rev. E. F. Light, the pastor, who preaches once in two weeks.

#### CEMETERIES.

One of the first grave-yards was laid out on the Marrs farm, where bodies were buried up to about 1867, when interments were discontinued there, and a majority of those buried were transferred to other places. There was also an old cemetery on the spot now used as the county poor-house burial-ground. The burial-grounds in the township now number five, viz., the Berrien Centre Union Church, Franklin, Long Lake, Morris Chapel, and Maple Grove cemeteries.

#### SCHOOLS.

A Mr. Wells was one of the early teachers of Berrien. He taught in a log school-house near the Niles road, on section 31, about the year 1830. A Mr. Pike taught in the same school-house,—which was the only one in that section of the country at the time. John Kessler, a young Virginian, taught school in a log school-house on section 23. Mr. Kessler is still a resident of Berrien, on section 27.

April 3, 1837, the township first chose school inspectors, who were Andrew Murray, Robert E. Ward, and Ambrose E. Murray. The school inspectors in 1879 were Cyrus B. Groat (school superintendent), H. S. Robinson (township clerk), and Almon Keigley.

There are now in the township seven full, and three fractional school districts, with ten schools. Of the ten school buildings two are handsome brick structures, costing \$2100 and \$2200 respectively, and eight are frame. The total estimated value of school property is \$8825, and the total yearly expenditures for support of schools, \$2745. Ten teachers are employed, to whom are paid, yearly, \$2025. Out of a total school enumeration of 422 the average attendance is 406.

#### POST-OFFICE.

The only post-office in Berrien at present is Berrien Centre, which has daily mail communication. The office was established in 1857, when Z. F. Wright was appointed postmaster. To him succeeded Isaac Murphy, Isaac Hess, Frank Wood, and George W. Wyman, the latter being the present incumbent. Eau Claire post-office was established in Berrien in 1861, near the Pipestone line, and Henry Rush appointed postmaster. Mr. Rush retired in 1874, when the office was removed across the line into Pipestone township, and there it has since remained.

Previous to 1857 the citizens of Berrien township were obliged to get their mail at Berrien Springs or Niles, and until the date named there was no post-office within the territory now occupied by Berrien.

#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Morris Chapel Grange*, No. 13, was organized March 4, 1873, with 17 members, as follows: James M. Savage, Mrs. A. E. Savage, John Nye, Mrs. Ann Clybourn, Joseph Walker, Mrs. Susan Curtis, T. K. Clybourn, Mrs. Lottie Curtis, John Ullrey, Mrs. L. C. Ullrey, Ira Vangorder, Joseph Pinnell, James D. Matthews, S. A. Curtis, Silas Ireland, Charles R. Curtis, Joseph Stafford. The Masters since the organization have been Silas Ireland, T. K. Clybourn, Charles R. Curtis, John B. Metzger, David Schnorf. The officers for 1879 were David Schnorf, M.; George Snuff, O.; T. K. Clybourn, L.; Ira Vangorder, Steward; Joseph Pinnell, Asst. Steward; C. R. Curtis, Chaplain; John Schnorf, Treas.; C. B. Groat, Sec.; Edward Cady, Gate-keeper; Mrs. T. K. Clybourn, Ceres; Mrs. Ann Schnorf, Pomona; Mrs. George Snuff, Flora; Mrs. John Schnorf, Stewardess. The members numbered 13 on Oct. 1, 1879. Regular meetings are held at the Oak Grove school-house on the Saturday nearest the full moon in each month.

*Berrien Centre Grange*, No. 14, was organized March 22, 1873. The first Master was Thomas Marrs, and first

Secretary J. F. Peck. The successive Masters since then have been John F. Peck, Almon Keigley, and Joseph A. Becker. The charter members were Thomas Marrs, John F. Peck, A. W. Marrs, J. A. Becker, J. J. Becker, Thomas Riffin, W. A. Hess, Jacob Brenner, Uriah Shaffer, Mrs. Thomas Marrs, Mrs. J. F. Peck, Mrs. A. W. Marrs, Mrs. J. A. Becker, Mrs. J. J. Becker, Mrs. Jacob Brenner. In 1876 a commodious grange hall was built at Berrien Centre, at a cost of \$1500, and there regular fortnightly meetings are held. The members number now 64, and the officers are Joseph A. Becker, M.; J. J. Murphy, Overseer; Almon Keigley, Lecturer; Jacob Brenner, Steward; W. A. Hess, Asst. Steward; R. A. Calvin, Chaplain; A. J. Easton, Treas.; Erastus Murphy, Sec.; T. B. Snow, Gate-Keeper; Mrs. T. B. Snow, Ceres; Mrs. S. H. Brenner, Pomona; Mrs. W. E. Peck, Flora; Miss Frank Rutter, Lady Assistant Steward.

Berrien supports, with a good deal of vigorous determination, an *Anti-Horse-Thief Association*, known also as the Vigilance Committee. Its members are numerous, and include many of the leading farmers of the township, who are bent upon providing, through the instrumentality of the association, against the successful operation of horse-thieves, who were at one time exceedingly troublesome.

An *excellent cornet band* is one of the local institutions, and includes several skilled performers, whose services are frequently called into requisition at merry-makings and other public demonstrations.

The cause of temperance receives hearty support. Not only has Berrien always been singularly free from the imposition of public traffic in spirituous liquors, but the dissemination of the temperance doctrine has warmly engaged the attention of a large number of citizens. The township boasts a flourishing Red-Ribbon Club, whose labors are, and have been, productive of much good on behalf of the cause.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### EDWIN T. DICKSON.

James Dickson, great-grandfather of the gentleman to whom this sketch especially refers, came to America about the year 1770 from a place called Old Town, in Ireland, and settled in York Valley, Pa., but at the close of the Revolutionary war he removed to the southwestern part of that State and settled in Washington County, where he spent the remainder of his life. His children were six in number, viz., John, Samuel, Andrew, William, and two daughters.

John Dickson, son of James, was born at Old Town, Ireland, about 1767, and came to America with his parents when about three years of age. Soon after reaching the years of manhood he married a lady named Robinson and settled in Westmoreland Co., Pa., where, a few years later, his wife died, leaving two sons, Levi and James, of whom the first-named and the elder was born in 1792. James

Dickson, Sr., having married a second wife, emigrated in 1811 to Huron Co., Ohio, but afterwards removed to Hamilton Co., Ind., where he died in 1830.

James Dickson, son of the John Dickson above mentioned, and father of Edwin T. Dickson, was born in Pennsylvania, Dec. 5, 1794. He grew to manhood in Huron Co., Ohio, and served in the United States army in the war of 1812-15. After the close of that struggle (in 1819) he removed to Wayne Co., Ind., and in 1820 married Lillis, eldest daughter of Judge Thomas McKenney. Of this union there were born five sons and four daughters, all of whom are living except one daughter, who was the wife of the Hon. G. C. Jones, of Cass Co., Mich. In 1828, James Dickson moved to Michigan Territory, and settled in La Grange, Cass Co., where he died Sept. 17, 1866. Mr. Dickson's business was that of a farmer, which vocation he followed during all his life, and very successfully. He was an extensive reader, and by this means he laid up a great store of practical information. He received the appointment of justice of the peace from Governor Cass in 1830, and was afterwards elected to several offices by his fellow-townsmen; but he had no political aspirations, and preferred to remain in the quiet of his farm, leaving office and politics to the more aspiring. In religious belief he was a deist, but a Quaker in precept and example, and he stood high in the esteem and confidence of all who knew him.

Edwin T. Dickson, to whom this biographical sketch more particularly refers, was the son of James Dickson, and the eldest of a family of nine children. He was born in Centre township, Wayne Co., Ind., Aug. 2, 1821. At the age of seven years he accompanied his father to Cass Co., Mich., where he grew to manhood. In 1845 he married Miss Lydia Garwood, and in 1849 removed to his present home, on section 10, Berrien township,—a place which was at that time covered by dense woods. In 1869, Mrs. Dickson died. She had been the mother of six children, five of whom died before her death. One—the eldest daughter—still survives. Mrs. Dickson was a most estimable woman, and an excellent wife, whose virtues and sterling traits as a wife contributed in no small degree to her husband's success in life. In 1870, Mr. Dickson married the eldest sister of his deceased wife, Miss Mary Garwood, with whom he lived happily for two years. She died Oct. 20, 1872. On the 4th of February, 1873, Mr. Dickson married his third and present wife, Miss Susie Layman, of Berrien, a teacher by profession.

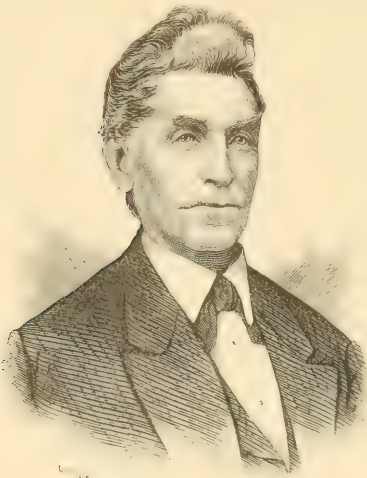
Mr. Dickson has from his boyhood been familiar with the privations and trials of pioneer life in a new country. In his boyhood he attended the first school taught in La Grange, Cass Co., and from that beginning he progressed until he became the possessor of a fair education. He has always been a great reader, is thoroughly versed in the Bible, and familiar with the Koran and the Vedas. His religious belief is in accordance with the views of the Free-Communion Baptists, of which church he has been a member for fifteen years. In matters of religion and morality he knows no middle ground, and favors no half-way measures, but is always zealous in the cause which he believes to be right. He is a man of strong convictions and decided character; a strict temperance man, and in favor of pro-

hibitory measures for prevention of the sale of intoxicating liquors. Politically, he is a Republican. He has filled the office of justice of the peace, and many other township offices, always, in these elections, receiving the full vote of the party to which he belongs.

Although Mr. Dickson has now nearly completed the sixth decade of his life, he carries his age remarkably well, especially when the hardships and vicissitudes of his past life are considered. He has never been sued at law, and is decidedly opposed to litigation in any form. He has been something of a traveler, having crossed the territory of the United States from ocean to ocean. He is frank, open, and upright in all his actions, and positive and decided in his opinions. It is not unusual to find that such a man has enemies, and such may perhaps be the case with Mr. Dickson, but it is certain that he has the esteem and confidence of the community in which he lives.

#### NATHAN MCCOY

was among the earliest settlers of Western Michigan; born in Montgomery Co., Va., Nov. 15, 1805. His father, William McCoy, was also a native of the same county, and his mother, whose maiden name was Susan Hunter, of Giles County, same State. His parents were very poor, and Na-



NATHAN MCCOY.

than received very little schooling, working on the farm and tending carding-machine alternately for a livelihood until November, 1833, when he emigrated to Michigan, stopping first at Pokagon for a year, with his brother-in-law, Henry Sifford, working the following two years near Cassopolis, for Pleasant Norton. He then took a trip to Iowa, returning after a two months' stay. He was married to Miss Hepeziab Vickars, Dec. 7, 1836.

In 1834 he bought one hundred and fifty-three acres of land in Berrien township, Berrien Co., settling on this early

in 1837, and, living in a log cabin, endured the usual hardships, trials, and pleasures of pioneer life; for our old pioneers tell us that their happiest days were when building up their homes in the woods.

Mr. McCoy has been quite a hunter, having killed a great many deer both in Michigan and Virginia. By his first wife he had the following children: Elizabeth, born Dec. 17, 1837; Amanda Jane, March 7, 1839; William, Aug. 16, 1843; Lewis Perry, Aug. 8, 1851, all of whom are living. Mr. McCoy was afflicted by the loss of this wife, who died Oct. 11, 1851. The 21st of October, 1852, he married Amanda Marquis, by whom he had the following children: Francis Marion, born Oct. 24, 1854; Zorah Alice, born Nov. 18, 1858, died Sept. 6, 1861; and Susanna, born Sept. 16, 1862. Dec. 13, 1875, the hand of the destroyer was again laid heavily upon Mr. McCoy's household, taking his second partner and companion. Mr. McCoy has always been Democratic in politics. He is at present possessed of two hundred and forty-seven acres of land, and with abundant means, pleasant home, and the most of his family around him he bides his time.

#### ISRAEL PEMBERTON HUTTON

was born in Bedford Co., St. Clair township, Pa., July 10, 1831. His father, Benjamin Wright Hutton, was a native of Adams Co., Pa., as was his grandfather. His mother, Beulah R. (Harris) Hutton, was a native of Chester Co., Pa. Mr. Hutton's ancestors were Quakers and English. The family removed to Michigan in October, 1846. Israel worked at farming until eighteen years of age, when he went to Three Rivers to learn the milling trade of Bowman & Hoffman, working nearly three years with them, when he removed to Summerville, Cass Co. This was in 1851. There he took charge of a mill, and in December, 1855, purchased it. In 1857 he built a new saw-mill, and in 1858 a new flouring-mill. He also built several houses in Summerville. In 1863 he bought one-half interest in a mill at Lawton, Van Buren Co., and sold it in 1865.

In 1864 he bought one hundred and sixty acres of land in Berrien township, where he now lives. He sold his mill at Summerville in 1873; rebought it in 1876; resided in that place till 1874, when he removed to the site of his present home. He built his handsome residence in 1875. He sold one-half of his mill in 1876, and is at present managing both farm and mill.

He married Mrs. Anna Maria (Moore) Milliard, who had three children by her first husband, viz.: Joseph B., Edward F., and Nancy Maria Milliard.

Mr. Hutton's family consisted of six children; names and ages as follows: Arthur Donaldson, born June 19, 1854, died September 29, 1856; Robert F., born Sept. 15, 1855; Wilford M., born Jan. 26, 1857; Elizabeth L., March 30, 1858; Beulah Adelle, Aug. 29, 1859; Parthenia, July 19, 1861.

While in Summerville he filled several offices of trust. He helped organize the Citizens' National Bank of Niles, and has been a director for several years. Was a Whig in politics until the formation of the Republican party, since



which time he has acted with them. Has been a member of the Free-Will Baptist Church for twenty-three years.

Mr. Hutton's success is not enigmatical, but shows to the young men of to-day what can be accomplished by energy and industry, though poverty be their lot at the beginning of life.

### SILAS IRELAND

was born in Concord township, Ross Co., Ohio, Nov. 10, 1818, and was the eldest of twelve children. His father, Stephen Ireland, was a native of the Eastern Shore of Maryland, and of Scottish descent; his mother, Elizabeth (Carman) Ireland, a native of the same place, was of German descent. They removed to Ross County about the year 1808.

Silas' father being poor and he the oldest son, he had to assist in the support of the family, working on his father's farm. When about sixteen years of age he commenced studying mathematics and surveying, devoting all of his leisure time to it, and we may say is a self-educated man, having had very little opportunity for schooling.

In October, 1839, he emigrated to Michigan, having but seven dollars in money upon his arrival. He worked at whatever came to his hand, doing some jobs of surveying. May 3, 1842, he married Miss Matilda Michael, a native of Greene Co., Ohio, but at the time of her marriage living within three miles of their present home.

Mr. Ireland, in June of that year, bought eighty acres five miles east of Berrien Springs, upon which they settled, first living in a log cabin. This was the site of their present home. They have resided on this place ever since, except two years and a half, in Dowagiac, Cass Co., where they moved, to educate their children, returning the day after Abraham Lincoln's first election. Mr. Ireland's family consists of the following children: Elam M., born July 5, 1843; Alpheus F., March 3, 1846; Almeda M., Nov. 28, 1847, died Jan. 5, 1865; Carey H., May 6, 1849, died Oct. 19, 1877; Martha Alice, May 14, 1851; Charley A., Nov. 28, 1853; Mary E., Nov. 21, 1855; Frank S. A., Oct. 4, 1857; Milo S., Dec. 11, 1860; Hattie B., Aug. 3, 1863; Roscoe W., Sept. 28, 1866; George R., July 2, 1868.

Mr. Ireland has held every township office except treasurer. He has been superintendent of the county poor twelve years; was supervisor five years. He acted as one of the committee to draft and make specifications for county jail, sheriff's dwelling, and county poor-house, which he built in 1869. Has been engaged as guardian for minors and others and settling estates of deceased persons for the past thirty years; was elected representative to the State Legislature from the first district, Berrien Co., in November, 1876, receiving as the Republican candidate sixteen hundred and ten votes to his Democratic opponent's thirteen hundred and ninety-four. He has continually held some office since the age of twenty-two. Has been deputy surveyor of Cass and Berrien Counties. Was a Democrat till the opening of the Kansas and compromise troubles, when he joined the Republican party; was a firm supporter of the Union during

the war. At present he owns some seven hundred acres of land, and a flouring-mill at Silver Creek, Cass Co.; he is a director of the First National Bank of Niles, and vice-president and director of the First National Bank of Dowagiac.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

### BAINBRIDGE TOWNSHIP.\*

Settlement of the Township—Stage Coaching Days—Temperance—Mills—Roads—The German Settlement—Post-Office and Postmasters—Township Organization and List of Officers—Church History of Bainbridge—Schools—Patrons of Husbandry.

BAINBRIDGE is numbered town 4 south, range 17 west, and embraces thirty-six sections, covering an area of six miles square. Watervliet is on the north, Pipestone on the south, Van Buren County on the east, and Benton township on the west.

No township in Berrien County is more completely agricultural than this, as it is entirely given over to that interest, which, it may be observed, is both extensive and profitable. As an apple-growing region it invites especial notice, and as an evidence of its importance in that respect, mention is made that one of its apple-orchards, owned by John Byers, contains two thousand trees, and in 1878, Mr. Byers shipped upwards of two thousand barrels of apples as a portion of his fruit product in that year. Numberless large apple-orchards may be found in the township approximating that of Mr. Byers, but his is supposed to be the most extensive, and to contain, moreover, the largest trees.

As to peach culture, disease among the trees has much cut down the annual crop latterly, until the peach interest is comparatively small. The plan of promptly destroying diseased trees is generally approved by the farmers, who recall a similar experience of Delaware peach-growers, some years ago, and they say that by abandoning peach culture for a time it may be revived at a later date with highly profitable results, as has proved to be the case in the history of Delaware.

The nearest approach to a village in Bainbridge is the village of Millburg, of which there are eight lots in Bainbridge, the larger portion of the place being across the line in Benton township. The village of Benton Harbor is the market-town for the major portion of the people, and their post-office as well, although there are post-offices at Millburg, Bainbridge Centre, and at other points.

A large element of the population of Bainbridge consists of Germans, who occupy chiefly a region known as the German settlement, and who exercise an important voice in the administration of township affairs. Apart from the Germans, the inhabitants are New Yorkers or their descendants, a majority of the early settlers having come from Jefferson and Livingston Counties in that State.

Numerous ponds or lakes diversify the surface of the country, which is undulating, the largest of these being known as Pipestone Lake, which covers perhaps 400 acres. Small streams are abundant, but among them there are none

\* By David Schwartz.

susceptible of furnishing valuable water-power. Bainbridge has manifested a disposition to assist railroad enterprises for the construction of roads in the township, but thus far no tangible results have followed, although they are likely to accrue before long. Railway stations are found at Benton Harbor, Coloma, and Watervliet, and afford desirable conveniences.

Bainbridge's assessed valuation in 1879 was \$247,401.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENT.

The pioneers of Bainbridge belonged to the class known as Canadian Frenchmen, and were represented by a Canadian family named Sharrai, whose members were Bartholomew, the father, and his wife, five sons,—Peter, Luke, Tenos, Louis, and Bartholomew, Jr.,—and three daughters,—Louise, Catharine, and Mary,—nine persons in all, who came in company from Canada about 1833, and settled upon an 80-acre tract in section 8, a portion of the tract being now occupied by C. D. Weber. The Sharrairs lived together and divided their time between clearing their land, raising crops, and boating on the St. Joseph. One Ruleaux, also a Canadian, came to Bainbridge soon after the Sharrairs. He built a log shanty on the Sharrai place, stocked it with a few bottles of whisky, and called the house a tavern. That it was not much of a tavern, and that its business was meagre, seems to be conceded by general report; but the presence of Ruleaux's tavern there gave to the locality the name of the "Ruleaux Place," by which it continued to be known long after the tavern was swept away. Ruleaux bought also a village lot in the Bainbridge portion of Millburg, when that place was laid out. In 1835 he sold that lot to J. H. Enos and moved away.

The elder Sharrai being taken quite ill not long after his settlement, was to be taken to St. Joseph for medical treatment, but died while on the way there. His sons did not remain in the township very long after settlers began to come in. Peter, Luke, and Tenos now live in Sodus township.

J. H. Enos, who purchased Ruleaux's village lot in Millburg, came from New York to Michigan in the fall of 1835, with his brother Joseph, on a prospecting tour. Having bought Ruleaux's land interest, Harvey returned, with his brother, to New York, whence in the spring of 1836 they came again to Michigan, with Harvey's family and Roswell, another brother. Harvey moved into a log house that Ruleaux had built, and in the same year put up a saw-mill on Blue Creek, in the Benton portion of Millburg. Roswell and Joseph, his brothers, continued for a while to live with him and work for him, and then sought locations of their own,—Joseph in Benton, and Roswell in St. Joseph. Mr. Enos was Bainbridge's first postmaster. He kept at his house on the Territorial road a tavern-stand, where the daily stages between Detroit and St. Joseph halted; he operated the Millburg saw-mill some years, and for fourteen years was a citizen of considerable prominence in that neighborhood. After 1850 his health began to fail, and retiring then from active pursuits, he removed to Benton township, where he still resides.

In the fall of 1833, Martin Tice, a young man, then residing in New Jersey, started, in company with a Mr.

Griffin, for St. Joseph, Mich., traveling by water to Detroit, and thence on foot to Kalamazoo and Watervliet; the only highway they found between the two latter points being a well-worn Indian trail. Reaching St. Joseph, they worked for Maj. Britain that winter, and the next year for various persons in the vicinity of St. Joseph. In 1835, Tice concluded to become a settler, and just then being employed in the laying out and construction of the Bainbridge portion of the Territorial road between Detroit and St. Joseph, he entered a tract on section 17 in Bainbridge, on the line of the road named, and after completing his work on the road he settled upon his farm, put up a log cabin, and kept bachelor's hall until 1838, when he married a daughter of Jonas Ivery, a blacksmith of Watervliet. From 1836 to his death, in 1876, he was a resident in Bainbridge, and lived all that period on his place of first settlement, where his daughter, Mrs. John McIntyre, now resides. She relates that she frequently heard her father say that the only house in Bainbridge at the time he came into it was that of Peter Sharrai, living "up north."

Directly upon the opening of the Territorial road through Bainbridge, John P. Davis put up a log tavern opposite Tice's house, and as travel over the thoroughfare set in briskly, Davis' tavern became a regular stopping-place for stages on the route as well as for freight carriers. Four- and six-horse passenger coaches passed daily, while vehicles of various descriptions, laden with merchandise, moved over the road in considerable numbers. As already noted, Harvey Enos' tavern, opened at Millburg about the time Davis opened his, was likewise a popular stopping-place, and had a flourishing trade. Davis lived only until the fall of 1836, and was the third person to die in the township. He was buried in a lot at the rear of his tavern, and some time afterwards his body was removed to the Bainbridge burying-ground. Davis' widow carried on the tavern a while, and then transferred it to Ezra C. King (a carpenter living near the tavern), who was succeeded by C. C. Sutton, S. R. Gilson, and A. R. Pinney, the latter of whom married the Widow Davis (who still retained control of the property), and continued to be the landlord until the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad turned travel from the turnpike.

Pinney took the tavern in 1841, and replacing it with a substantial and commodious frame structure, carried on a profitable business for some years. During his time traffic was much greater than it had been during the time of either of his predecessors. Report says that he frequently provided breakfast for one hundred people when the business season was at its best. He went to California, and upon his return settled in Kalamazoo. Pinney's tavern—quite a famous landmark in those days—still stands, and, somewhat remodeled, is now the residence of Mr. T. J. West.

During the winter of 1835, Joseph Matran, George Wilder, and a company of twenty-three others were engaged in clearing timber-land in Niagara Co., N. Y., for Smith & Merrick, extensive land-owners in New York and Michigan. In the spring of 1836 they were ordered to proceed to Bainbridge township, in Michigan, where Smith & Merrick had made large land purchases. Seventeen of the party,

including Matran and Wilder, concluded to go, but the others declined to venture so far West. The seventeen traveled on foot to Buffalo, sailed *via* Lake Erie to Detroit, and walked from there to Bainbridge, where they halted at Davis' tavern, and were presently met by Dr. N. B. Moffatt, who had previously been sent out to Bainbridge by Smith & Merrick to look after their interests there, and to open the country to settlers. Moffatt had prepared for the coming of the men by the erection of two log houses, and the engagement of a family to board them. Mr. Matran says that when he and his fellow-travelers reached their destination,—a log house then standing near the site of the present German Catholic church,—it was nine o'clock at night, and all were ravenously hungry. The woman of the house, however, refused to prepare supper, but did prepare it eventually under continued protest. Her conduct led to her dismissal the following day, and the installation in her place of the wife of John Nash, one of the seventeen.

When Matran and his companions reached their field of operations in Bainbridge, they found there Stillman Wood, Stephen R. Shepard, James Wilder, and others already engaged in clearing land for Smith & Merrick. Peter Sharrai was there, and, although considered a settler, spent much of his time in boating on the St. Joseph. Dr. Moffatt set his men so vigorously at work clearing land and putting in wheat that at the end of the twelve months which the party had agreed to work a considerable tract of land in the northern part of the township had been broken. Their land-clearing labors ended in that section, the men passed to other Western points, except Wood, Wilder, and Shepard, who located farms in Bainbridge, upon the lands they had assisted in clearing. Wood remained until 1859, when he removed to the village of St. Joseph, where he now lives, at the advanced age of ninety-four. George Wilder still resides in Bainbridge, upon a farm he bought of Jason Knapp. Shepard settled upon section 28, and there died. One of his sons, Morton R., lives in Pipestone. Moffatt went West, and, in 1849, setting out for California, died on the way.

When Matran went westward, in 1837, after finishing for Smith & Merrick in Bainbridge, he had against that firm an unpaid claim for labor. After waiting until 1839 without receiving money on it, he returned to Bainbridge, and in settlement took 80 acres on section 28. During the ensuing three years he worked on the St. Joseph River, and at times doing some labor on his farm, succeeded in clearing 15 acres by 1842, when he left the river, settled upon his farm, and became a Bainbridge pioneer in earnest. In 1843 there arose some question touching Mr. Matran's eligibility to vote, and he visited Berrien Springs to satisfy himself on that point. While there he bought 12 apple-trees of Eli Ford, of Berrien township, and brought them home on his back. With them he started his first orchard, and it became an excellent one. Mr. Matran lived on section 28 until 1850, when he bought a farm on section 14, to which he then removed, and where he has since lived.

One of Bainbridge's settlers in 1836, and of course one of its earliest, was "Squire" Samuel McKeyes, who in 1835 came from Broome Co., N. Y., with his wife and five children to Michigan, and stopping at Prairie Ronde bought

a mill-interest there, but not liking the place on account of much sickness prevalent there, sold out and moved into Berrien County, where he bought of the general government 16 separate tracts of land, each containing 80 acres. Six of these tracts were in Bainbridge, and in that township he decided to make his home, upon section 11, where Jacob Cribbs now lives. Mr. McKeyes died there in 1853. The only one of his children now living in Bainbridge is Mrs. Jacob Cribbs.

Peter Sharrai, of whom mention has already been made, rented his Bainbridge farm in 1838 to Jabez Knapp, who came in that year with his family from Jefferson Co., N. Y. Knapp occupied Sharrai's farm two years, during which time Sharrai boated on the St. Joseph in the summer and boarded with Knapp in the winter. In 1840, Knapp removed to the farm upon which Dr. N. B. Moffatt had lived. In 1841, having bought 120 acres of Smith & Merrick, on section 7, he went there to live, and was the first settler on the north-and-south road running through sections 6 and 7, which was surveyed in 1841, on the day Mr. Knapp raised his log dwelling-house. Mr. Knapp was by trade a ship-carpenter, and until 1846 followed that business at St. Joseph, while his sons looked after the farming interests. In that year he changed his location to a farm in Watervliet, near Coloma, and lived there until 1875, when he went to California, of which State he is still a citizen. The only child of Mr. Knapp living in Bainbridge is Mrs. J. K. Bishop.

Levi Woodruff left Broome Co., N. Y., for the far West in May, 1837, with his wife and ten children, and halting in Michigan, bought 160 acres of land of Smith & Merrick, on section 10, in Bainbridge. On the same section Silas Irving had been a settler and lived with his family in a log house, but growing tired of his pioneer experience had sold out to Samuel McKeyes and gone to Kalamazoo. Into Irving's abandoned cabin Woodruff moved his family, and lived there until his own dwelling was completed. Newton and Philo, two of the sons, located near the elder Woodruff. Newton still lives where he first settled. Philo moved to Minnesota in 1856, and is now there. Levi Woodruff died in Bainbridge in February, 1862. His children now in Bainbridge are Asa, Simeon, Newton, and Mrs. Joseph Matran. Simeon Woodruff, Levi's brother, moved to Bainbridge from Ohio not long after Levi's settlement, and he, too, lived with his family in Irving's old hut during the preparation of a house of his own on section 15, but he died before his new home was completed. His widow and children occupied the farm until 1848, when, selling it to Martin Byers, they moved to Ohio. While he lived in Bainbridge, Simeon Woodruff, who was an ordained Presbyterian minister, preached occasionally in the settlement. Levi Woodruff, his brother, was instrumental in effecting a Congregational Church organization in Bainbridge, and served as deacon. The church existed but a short time before being merged with the church at Coloma.

Returning now to the district bordering the Territorial road, the settlement of the Byers families in 1836 invites mention as an incident of importance. In June of that year, David Byers, his nephew John Byers (a lad of six-



teen), and John's mother departed from Livingston Co., N. Y., for Michigan, being persuaded thereto by David's brother Tobias, who had preceded them to the West and located in Van Buren Co., Mich. They visited Tobias, and, while there, purchased land in Bainbridge, —Mrs. Byers, 160 acres on sections 13 and 24, and David, 240 acres on the same sections. David Byers lived upon his place until his death, in March, 1874, and in August of the same year John Byers' mother died upon her Bainbridge home, where John Byers now resides. Of all the settlers in Bainbridge when John Byers came, he is the only one now living in the township, and is therefore to-day the longest resident therein, and may in some sense be considered a patriarch.

Upon his coming the dwellers in the township included John P. Davis, at the Territorial road tavern, Martin Tice, at the same point, Harvey Enos, at Millburg, and the Sharrais and McKeyes, in the north. South of the Territorial road there was no one.

John Byers recites the history of the origin of peach culture in Berrien County, as follows: In 1840, David Byers, his uncle, went back to Livingston Co., N. Y., to be married, and upon his return to Michigan brought 100 peach-trees. Of these, he gave John 40 and kept 60 himself. In 1843 the trees bore their first fruit, and their combined product, amounting to 40 bushels, was taken to St. Joseph and sold, for \$100, to the steward of Capt. Ward's steamer, which ran to Chicago. The purchaser took them to Chicago, and, according to Mr. Byers, that was the original shipment of peaches made from Berrien County, and from which the county's subsequent important peach trade arose. Touching the claim of Mr. George Parmelee to the honor of originating peach culture in this section, Mr. Byers says that Mr. Parmelee lived in Bainbridge from 1840 to 1843, when he removed to Benton, and that it was not until after he became a resident of the latter township that he engaged in the cultivation of the peach.

Lot Sutherland, of Broome Co., N. Y., migrated westward in the spring of 1836, with his family of seven children, and, locating first near Kalamazoo, remained but a short time, and then removed to Bainbridge, where he purchased 100 acres of Smith & Merrick, on section 27, and lived there until his death. His children now living in Bainbridge are Justus, Ebenezer, and Henry Sutherland, Mrs. John Morgan, and Mrs. Edwin Youngs.

Artemas Stickney accompanied Isaac Moffatt to Watervliet in 1836, where he worked for Smith & Merrick. He settled, with his family, in Bainbridge, in 1837, on section 28, but moved to Pipestone some years later and died there. His widow now lives with her son, Eliphalet, in Bainbridge.

Wallis and John Tabor purchased land on the Territorial road as early perhaps as 1835, but did not occupy it until some time afterwards. John worked as a blacksmith in Chicago a few years, and then settled upon his Bainbridge farm, where he lived until 1875, when he removed to California. He lived near the Pinney tavern, and was the successor of Harvey Enos in the Bainbridge post-office. Wallis left Bainbridge in 1850 for California. Later he settled in Sodas, which township has since been his home.

Adam Miller, of Livingston Co., N. Y., came West in 1837, in company with his family and Samuel Fletcher, his brother-in-law. The latter settled in Van Buren County, while Miller bought of the government 80 acres on section 24, in Bainbridge, where he now lives. Mr. Miller's daughter Fidelia, now living in Kalamazoo, was the first white child born in the township, the year of her birth being 1838.

H. H. Selter, who settled in Bainbridge in 1838, enjoyed the distinction of being a party to the first marriage celebrated in the township. He was married the year of his arrival to Mary, daughter of Isaac Youngs. The ceremony was performed by David Byers, then a justice of the peace. Selter located at first upon a place north of Pinney's tavern, and afterwards changed his location to section 15, a little north of the township centre, where he died in 1875. His son Isaac married one of David Byers' daughters, and now lives on section 13.

Daniel Pettis, now living on section 28, started from Vermont in 1837 for Van Buren Co., Mich., and after working there two years at his trade of carpenter, bought 80 acres on section 28, in Bainbridge, of Smith & Merrick, took his family to the place in the spring of 1840, and made a clearing. At that time the north-and-south road east of this place was only partially open. The east-and-west road, on which his farm now lies, he himself assisted to construct. On that road, when Mr. Pettis came in, the only settler was Artemas Stickney.

Isaac Youngs was one of the early inhabitants of what was known as "Shingle Diggings," in that portion of Bainbridge subsequently set off as Watervliet. In 1837 he left the Diggings and located upon a farm near Davis' tavern, where also his brother-in-law, Stephen R. Gilson (likewise a former resident at the Diggings), settled temporarily. Mr. Youngs moved to section 10, where he died. There his son Edwin now lives.

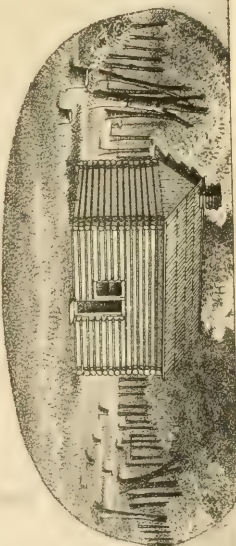
Gilbert Van Vranken worked at J. H. Enos' saw-mill in Millburg from 1837 to 1841, and then, purchasing 80 acres of land on section 28, in Bainbridge, became a pioneer, although he did not actually settle upon the place until 1842, when he married a daughter of James Higbee, of Benton. Mr. Van Vranken died in 1877, leaving a widow, who still lives on the old place.

In 1840, Jacob Cribbs, a house-carpenter, came to Bainbridge. In 1841 he assisted Philo Woodruff in the construction of Pinney's new tavern, and in payment for his services received some land on section 15. In 1842 he married a daughter of Squire McKeyes, and since that time has been a resident of Bainbridge.

As already remarked, Smith & Merrick were owners of great tracts of land in Bainbridge, and in the beginning of the year 1876 sent Dr. Isaac Moffatt out to superintend the work of clearing and cultivating their broad acres. Moffatt brought several men out with him, and from time to time his force was increased until he had quite a colony about him. Much of the land was in the northwestern portion of the township, and that locality, by reason of the extensive land-clearing operations going forward there, came to be known by the name of "The Jobs." Stillman Wood,



MRS. NATHANIEL GRANT



FIRST SETTLEMENT



NATHANIEL M. GRANT







Stephen R. Shepard, J. B. Ransom, Crawford Hazard, James Wilder, and one Lamson were among the earliest employed upon the "Jobs," their service beginning about January, 1836. Ransom and Lamson remained, however, but a short time before returning to New York. Crawford Hazard was from Jefferson Co., N. Y., and in the spring of 1836 made the journey from Michigan, with his family and the families of Alonzo Gustin and Artemas Stickney,—the three being under engagement with Smith & Merrick to work upon their Western lands. Gustin went back to New York after a short stay; Hazard worked on the "Jobs" about a year, and in 1839 settled in Pipestone, upon a farm purchased of Morgan Enos. He left there in 1844 for Hagar; located in Bainbridge in 1860; in 1861 returned to Pipestone; and in 1865 again took up his residence in Bainbridge, where he died in 1868. One of his daughters married Nathaniel Brant, and now lives in Bainbridge.

Mr. Hazard lived during his service on the "Jobs," in the Ruleaux tavern, which, upon his coming, was vacant. One day a man drove suddenly up before Hazard's door with a loaded lumber-wagon, in which was his family and household goods. Calling out loudly, he asked, "Is this the Ruleaux place?" Hazard, coming to the door at the summons, replied that it was. "Then," said the man on the wagon, "I'm master here." Hazard, in a spirit of badinage, replied, "Well, sir, take off your coat, and we'll try titles." The man on the wagon laughed, introduced himself as Isaac Higbee, shook hands with Hazard, and informed him that he had bought the Ruleaux place for a home. Accordingly he took possession, and Hazard moved to the house of Henry Nash, who boarded several of the men employed on the "Jobs." Higbee lived on the place but three years and then moved West.

The general impression seems to be that the first death in the township was that of John P. Davis, the first landlord of the Territorial road tavern, who died in the fall of 1836. The impression is a mistaken one. There were two deaths in the township before that of Davis. The first was that of a surveyor engaged with the corps making the governmental survey. A coffin not being easily obtainable, the surveyor's body was encased in bark, and thus was buried near the site afterwards chosen by Ruleaux for his tavern. That was the first death. The second was that of McDonald Carr, a Canadian, engaged on Smith & Merrick's "Jobs." Carr was taken ill shortly after he commenced work, and was taken care of at Henry Nash's boarding-house. He was afterwards moved to Crawford Hazard's house, where he died five days afterwards. He was buried by the side of the surveyor, and there, too, a child was buried not long afterwards. The remains of these three still lie in the spot where they were buried, although all traces of their graves have long since been obliterated.

Mrs. Nathaniel Brant, a daughter of Crawford Hazard, recalls how the limited accommodations of settlers' houses during the days of '36 were put to severe tests when newcomers began to grow plentiful, and says that generous hospitality being the rule, it was nothing strange for four or five families, just come into the settlement, to find entertainment at one cabin, and to sleep promiscuously on the floor at night as the best that could be offered under the

circumstances. Mosquitoes were distressingly plentiful, and at times during the summer did much towards making life a burden.

Hiram Ormsby came from the Watervliet Shingle Diggings in 1838, with Stephen R. Gilson, and settled on the Territorial road near the tavern, but moved away after a brief stay. His home is now in South Haven. William Boughton lived on the Territorial road, near Millburg, from 1837 to 1839, and in the latter year moved to Pipestone.

#### THE PENN YAN SETTLEMENT.

The southwestern portion of Bainbridge is popularly known as Penn Yan, a name given to it by Isaac Youngs after the Brants located there. The first settlement in this part was made by the Brant family, of Wayne Co., N. Y. Simeon Brant with his wife and four children—Nathaniel, John, Daniel, and Augustus—came to Michigan in 1836, and made a settlement upon section 31 in Bainbridge township, where the elder Brant had, previous to his coming hither, bought 80 acres of land of Darius Clark. At this time the southern tier of sections in Bainbridge was an unbroken wilderness, into which Brant was the first to venture as a settler. With the aid of his boys, he chopped out a road to his place, put up a cabin, and made a clearing. Nathaniel, the eldest son, worked about upon neighboring farms until 1840, when he moved upon a farm in Pipestone, on section 17, which he had bought in 1838 of Morgan Enos, for whom, in Pipestone, he was a farm-hand from 1837 to 1840. In 1844, Nathaniel bought of Smith & Merrick a farm in Bainbridge, and upon that place he has since lived. John settled in Pipestone, where he died. Daniel became a settler in the southern portion of Bainbridge, and yet lives there. Augustus, the youngest brother, who lived with Daniel, was waylaid and killed while making a journey to visit some friends in Cass County.

Francis Johnson followed Simeon Brant into Penn Yan in 1837, although he had bought a farm the year before on section 31. He was unmarried then and roamed about until 1837, when he put up a shanty on his place and soon after married. In a little while he tired of a pioneer's life and moved into Benton township, where he opened a cooper's shop, returning, however, not long afterwards to his Bainbridge farm, where he lived until 1879, when he moved to Kansas.

Joseph Griffin settled about the time of Johnson's coming. He died many years ago, and of his family none are known to be in the township.

Ethamar Adams and his two sons, Charles and Ethamar, Jr., came in perhaps in 1837. The two sons were some years afterwards killed in the Mountain Meadow massacre in Utah. The elder Adams moved to Niles in 1854, and died there. Previous to Adams' occupancy of his Bainbridge farm, Henry Nash, who had been at work for Smith & Merrick, lived on it a few months, and then changed his residence to St. Joseph.

David Sutherland, who had settled in Kalamazoo in 1837, conveyed his family to Bainbridge in 1839, having there bought of Israel Kellogg 120 acres on sections 33 and 34. His experience as a pioneer was, however, brief, for he died in August, 1840. His four sons—William,

Bushrod, John, and George—lived with him until his death. William now occupies the old homestead. Bushrod bought a farm in Bainbridge in 1854, and now lives there. John lived with his brother William until 1856, when he bought a farm in Pipestone, where he has since resided. George, who went to Kalamazoo to live when he was but eight years old, now resides in Kalamazoo County. Charles Barnes, who married one of David Sutherland's daughters, was a settler first in Kalamazoo and then in Illinois. In 1842 he bought a place in Bainbridge on section 34. He entered the military service during the war of the Rebellion as chaplain of the 12th Michigan Infantry; was wounded at the battle of Shiloh, and died in the hospital at Pittsburg Landing.

In April, 1844, Joseph and Albert Vincent, with their families, and Henry Vincent, their younger brother,—the party including eight persons,—landed in Bainbridge, with a pair of horses, a lumber-wagon, and their household effects. They had come from the town of Clayton, Jefferson Co., N. Y., for the purpose of locating in Michigan, but undecided as to any particular point until they reached the State. Joseph worked Daniel Pettis' farm a year, and then bought of Israel Kellogg a farm on section 34, where he now lives. He did but little work on the place until 1848, when he settled upon it permanently. At that time there was no traveled road in the vicinity of his farm, and until 1849 narrow paths through the woods were the best thoroughfares available. Albert Vincent worked the old Sharrai place two years, and then, buying a farm near Millburg, lived upon it a number of years. He then moved to Millburg and kept a store. His residence is now Benton Harbor. Henry boated on the St. Joseph, and died at Millburg.

Horace Vincent, another brother, became a settler in Bainbridge in 1846, when he occupied a farm north of Millburg, and after living there seven years moved to Benton, where he still resides. Still another brother, John, came to Bainbridge at an early day, and becoming subsequently a resident of Watervliet, died in Coloma in 1877.

Stephen Stanley was among those who worked with Stephen R. Shepard, on Smith & Merrick's "Jobs," in 1838. After completing his services there, he followed the business of boating on the St. Joseph River, and in 1844 settled in Benton township. He now lives in Hagar.

In 1843, George Wise, with his wife and three children, his father and mother, and his brother-in-law, John Lewis (whose family likewise accompanied him), started in company from Livingston Co., N. Y., *via* the Erie Canal, for the West, without any definite purpose as to where in the West they would locate. During the canal journey to Buffalo, George Wise's eldest child—a daughter—was killed by contact with a bridge, under which the boat passed before the child could heed the danger-warning. Reaching Buffalo, the party embarked on board a lake vessel for Chicago, where arriving, they did not fancy the country, and having been neighbors of David Byers (then settled in Bainbridge), they resolved to visit him. Mr. Wise's father and John Lewis stopped with David Byers, while George Wise and his family were sheltered at the house of John Byers' mother.

Without delay George Wise bought of E. P. Deacon 80 acres of land on section 24, in Bainbridge, and while preparing the place for his family, lodged them in a house in the adjoining township of Keeler that summer. Upon the place he then bought, Mr. Wise has lived until the present time.

John Lewis settled in Keeler within a few days after his arrival in Bainbridge. The elder Wise located upon a place one mile west of his son, on the Territorial road, where George Peters had already erected a cabin. He lived afterwards in Keeler, where he died in 1853. When the Wises came into Bainbridge, the settlers on the Territorial road were the Byers, on the east, and on the west, James Bragg, the widow Woodruff, David Woodruff, the Tabors, Martin Tice, Pinney, the landlord, and the widow of John Williams. Williams was an early settler in what is now Coloma.

The year 1844 was fruitful of settlements in Bainbridge. Eighteen families came hither from the town of Clayton, Jefferson Co., N. Y., including the Bishops, the Spinks, the Harris families, the Boyers, Vincents, Spencers, and others. Asa Bishop and his three married sons, A. Sprague Bishop, Appleton Bishop, and Norris S. Bishop, came in company with their families. They all purchased land of Smith & Merrick, on the north-and-south road passing through sections 6 and 7, and settled on farms adjoining each other. Sprague Bishop remained until 1850, when he sold to James Adams and moved to Hagar, where he now lives. Asa Bishop lived on a place adjoining Sprague's on the south, and afterwards lived with his son, Kellogg Bishop, who, upon marrying a daughter of Jason Knapp, occupied a residence opposite his father's house. The elder Bishop died at Kellogg's house, in 1872. The latter still resides in Bainbridge. Appleton lived in Bainbridge a few years, and removed to St. Joseph to engage in mercantile pursuits, and there died. Norris resided in Bainbridge until his death, in 1864. When the Bishops came in, those living on the north-and-south road spoken of were the Boyers, Jabez Knapp, Jason Alden, and Elisha Coon. Alden moved to Wisconsin three years later, and returning once more to Michigan, settled permanently in Benton. Coon soon passed farther West, and now lives in California.

Orsemus and John Spink visited the West in the fall of 1843, on a prospecting tour, during which John bought of Smith & Merrick 80 acres on section 29, in Bainbridge. The brothers returned to New York, and there Orsemus exchanged his New York farm, with Smith & Merrick, for 80 acres on section 32, adjoining John's place. In the spring of 1844 both came to Bainbridge with their families, and spent a few days at Artemas Stickney's house, when, having erected a board shanty on John's farm, they moved into it. Orsemus Spink relates that when they came, roads in their neighborhood were not to be seen. Their neighbors were the Brauts, one mile south; no settlers were between them and the western line of the township, while on the north, nearest them were Stowe and Van Der Bogart, and on the east, Stickney, Joseph and Mitchell Matran, Daniel Pettis, and Gilbert Van Vranken. Orsemus Spink is still a resident of Bainbridge. John moved

to St. Joseph in 1854, and later to Benton, where he died. Samuel, a third brother, who started with Orsemus and John from New York in 1844, stopped at Toledo, where he remained four years, and in 1848 settled in Bainbridge, upon section 29. A few years later he changed his residence to St. Joseph township, where he now lives.

Justin, Norman, and Austin Boyer, three brothers, exchanged lands in Jefferson Co., N. Y., for some of Smith & Merriek's land in Bainbridge, and, with their families, settled there in 1844,—Justin on section 6, where he still lives, and Austin adjoining him on the south. The latter now lives in California.

Among the comers of 1844 was S. H. Meech, of Oswego Co., N. Y., who bought about 300 acres in Bainbridge of H. T. Meech & Barnes, Western land speculators living in New York. He came out with his wife, and lived at Pinney's tavern until his own log house was completed. Then he joined the pioneer army, locating on section 26, where he lived until his death, in 1873, and where his widow still survives him.

J. D. Brewster, a Vermonter, came to Bainbridge with his family in 1844, and lived a year on a place owned by Justus Sutherland, where Brewster put up a cabin,—his family remaining meanwhile at the house of Daniel Pettis. During the year he bought 80 acres of George Peters, of Benton, and building thereon a substantial log house moved upon the place in 1845, since which time he has resided there.

A. F. Stiles, of Jefferson Co., N. Y., left there in the spring of 1845 with his wife and three children for Michigan, having bought of Eli Watson 160 acres on section 30 in Bainbridge. Leaving his family in Lenawee Co., Mich., Mr. Stiles went over to Bainbridge to look at his new purchase, and was pleased with it,—especially upon being informed that he had got a piece of fine land at a bargain. Mr. Stiles brought his family on and occupied temporarily a log cabin that had been erected upon a place near there by Walter Van De Bogart, who was an early settler in Bainbridge, but who in a few years after coming to Michigan returned to New York, whence he had migrated. Van De Bogart's brother-in-law, Cyrus Stowe, settled also in Bainbridge at an early date. He sold out in 1855 to Dr. Parker and moved to St. Joseph village, where for a while he kept a boarding-house, and removing afterwards to Illinois, died there. In the spring of 1846, Mr. Stiles moved to his own farm, and there he now resides. Although the road on which he now lives was laid out before he came in, it was not until the summer of 1846 that it was opened for travel. Mr. Stiles' nearest neighbors were Orsemus Spink, three-quarters of a mile east, the Brants, on the south, and John Spink, on the north.

Israel F. Lyman, who was an early settler in Bainbridge, lived upon section 18, near Millburg, until 1847, when he sold his place to Harley B. Harrington and moved away. At that time there was no settlement between Harrington's and Tice's on the Territorial road. Mr. Harrington died in 1866. His daughter, Mrs. Morrison, now lives on the farm.

Sydney Spencer moved from Jefferson Co., N. Y., to Hillsdale, Mich., in 1844, and in 1846 came to Bainbridge,

where he had bought 120 acres of land (previously occupied by Walter Van De Bogart) of William Angell, a Michigan land-owner, living in New York. Upon that place Mr. Spencer has since continued to live. When he located there, the only settlers on the road between him and Spink's Corners were Cyrus Stowe and John Spink. Previous to Sydney Spencer's coming, his brother Jason settled near Spink's Corners in 1844. He sold out after a brief residence and went East, but settled subsequently in Benton township.

In 1844, Daniel Harris with his two sons, Henry and Elkanah, came from Jefferson Co., N. Y., and settled upon section 6. They moved away in 1850. Henry now lives in Coloma. His father and brother are dead.

#### STAGE-COACHING DAYS.

The early days of the Territorial road and the popularity of Pinney's tavern have already been briefly alluded to. In the old stage-coach times a roadside tavern, where good cheer and a brief rest awaited the weary traveler, meant something of which contemplation was always a pleasure, and the realization of which generally verified anticipations. Davis, who built the log tavern upon the opening of the road, in 1835, did not, perhaps, offer a perfect house of entertainment; nor did his immediate successors, for the reason, doubtless, that limited traffic did not warrant it, although it is likely that the old log tavern was a welcome and refreshing resting-place to many a tired and hungry wayfarer. It was, however, reserved for Pinney, in 1841, to set the tavern forward upon a career of prosperity to which it had hitherto scarcely aspired. He replaced the log cabin with a capacious and somewhat pretentious structure, expanded his conveniences for business even as business itself continued to expand, and for some years thereafter drove a remarkably brisk trade. Travel was lively. The merry stage-coaches,—sometimes as many as a dozen each day,—drawn by dashing teams of four and sometimes six horses, carried full loads of passengers daily between Detroit and St. Joseph; freight-wagons plied regularly and frequently along the route; and times were, altogether, quite encouraging for mine host Pinney and his famous tavern-stand.

With the completion, however, of the Michigan Central Railroad to Kalamazoo, the days of stage-coaching on the Territorial road and the days of Pinney's tavern as a shining light were over forever. The six-horse coach was pushed aside by the iron horse, the tide of traffic betook itself to another and speedier channel, Pinney's tavern fell into the obscurity of neglect, and Pinney himself was known no more as a landlord.

#### TEMPERANCE—MILLS—ROADS.

Although now what may be justly termed a temperance township, Bainbridge withheld its frown in the earlier days of its settlement from the practice of alcoholic consumption which prevailed while the taverns were institutions in the land. Indeed, the spirit that ruled then permitted the dispensation of spirits at not only the taverns, but it was considered quite proper for every family to keep a bountiful supply of liquor on hand for use in a sudden emergency, or to play an important part in the business of providing hos-



pitiable treatment for visitors,—and open-handed hospitality was as common then as it was freely called into exercise. Now, however, all that is changed,—that is, the matter of liquor consumption or sale. Popular opinion long since declared against the traffic in liquor, and Bainbridge has, accordingly, enjoyed for many a day a comparative freedom from enterprises of that character.

*Mills.*—Bainbridge has at no time felt the impetus of milling enterprise within its borders,—one reason being a lack of water-power, and another the want of railway-transportation facilities. The only mill the town ever had was a saw-mill, which was built by Freeman Ruggles, in 1856, on Mill Creek, in the northeastern corner of the township.

As already mentioned, the Territorial road passing through the centre of the township from east to west was laid out in 1835. In 1837 the business of laying out township roads was carried forward by E. C. King, S. R. Shepard, and J. N. Davis, as highway commissioners, Israel Kellogg being the surveyor. In that year the roads laid out were one running north and south on the west lines of sections 22, 27, and 34; one running east and west through the centre of sections 27, 28, and 29; one north and south along the west lines of sections 20, 29, and 32; one along the east lines of sections 3, 10, 15, 22, and 27; one east and west through the centre of sections 33 and 34; one north and south through sections 5, 8, and 17; and one east and west through sections 8, 9, and 10. In 1838 the roads laid out were one from the east portion of section 8 to Millburg; one north and south along the east lines of sections 29 and 32, thence west and south to the south line of section 32.

#### THE GERMAN SETTLEMENT.

Bainbridge is largely occupied by Germans, especially in the northern portion, where they are greatly in the majority. That locality is generally known as the German Settlement, whose members are known also as a thrifty, industrious people, comfortably off in nearly every instance, and in many even wealthy. They maintain four church organizations, are liberally supplied with excellent school privileges, are most worthy citizens, and although taking free and active part in daily associations with the world outside their own community, confine their social lives in a great degree to the "settlement," and fraternize, in short, with each other as members of one family. For this there is especial reason in the fact that all the members of the settlement are natives of Germany, or children of Germans, and, more than that, many of them were neighbors and friends in the Fatherland.

The German Settlement was founded in 1841, by Michael Humphrey, Peter Humphrey, his brother, Jacob Kreiger, Peter Schmitberger, Daniel Kreiger, Christian Heffner, Jacob Kneibes, and Peter, his son. These eight Germans, who left their native land in 1840 for America, although not all in company, went to Ohio, and late in that year met in the city of Cincinnati. All were actuated by a common desire to become farmers in the great West, and so it came about that all being similarly attracted to the advertisement of Smith & Merriek, the great Michigan land-owners, they resolved to purchase farms in Michigan.

So, under instructions of Israel Kellogg, agent for Smith & Merriek, they set out from Cincinnati for Bainbridge township, traveling by teams, and in the summer of 1841 halted in Watervliet. The journey from Cincinnati was a tedious one, but the hearts of the sturdy Germans were cheered with the prospect of comfort in their pioneer life, and they looked forward with bright hopes and eager anticipations to the prosperity which they believed awaited them in the new land of their adoption. Sour milk and bread, it is said, formed the chief articles of diet during their trip from Cincinnati to Watervliet,—the bread being in their own stores, and the milk being obtained as best it could be from dwellers along the wayfarers' route. Probably they thrived on the bread and milk, and hearty and happy they landed in Watervliet, ready to bargain with Israel Kellogg for their future homes. Of the eight, Michael and Peter Humphrey settled in what is now Watervliet; the rest located just south of them, in the northern portion of what is now Bainbridge. The first of the eight to die was Michael Humphrey, who lived in the settlement until 1854, and saw then that the little band with which he came in thirteen years before had expanded in strength and grown to be a prosperous and wealthy community. Since then Peter Schmitberger, Daniel Kreiger, and Jacob Kneibes have died. Of the other four, Peter Humphrey moved to Weesaw township in 1846; Jacob Kreiger, Christian Heffner, and Peter Kreibes are still residents of Bainbridge.

Upon the farms purchased by the eight friends Smith & Merriek had effected some clearings, but the greater portion of the tract was a wild, unbroken country, and at it the Germans commenced with a will to subdue the forest and to make the soil productive. They continued for five years, or until 1846, to comprise all the inhabitants in the German Settlement, and by that time, having done much towards improving the country and their prospects, they thought of inducing others of their friends in Germany to come out and join them. With that purpose in view, they wrote to those whom they desired as accessions to their little band, and as a result there were added in 1846 the families of Adam Hofer, Andrew Kaunzman, William Dukeshier, Charles Knopf, Christopher Reichebach, and Michael Humphrey, who journeyed together from Germany, and made the trip from Buffalo to St. Joseph in the steamer "Phoenix." Speedily following them, in the fall of 1846 and spring of 1847, came David Scherer, Jacob Herman, Adam Pole, Daniel and Lawrence Koob, David Friday, Michael Christ, Nicholas Kibler, Adam Shrumm, and others, of whom Kaunzman, Friday, and the Koobs settled in Watervliet, while the others located in Bainbridge. Later came the Webers, the Huids, Arnsts, Buhlingers, Denners, and many who have become conspicuously identified with the progress of the settlement. As the German settlers came in they settled near each other, and so gradually created a community, which has widened, expanded, and strengthened into its present proportions.

#### POST OFFICE AND POSTMASTERS.

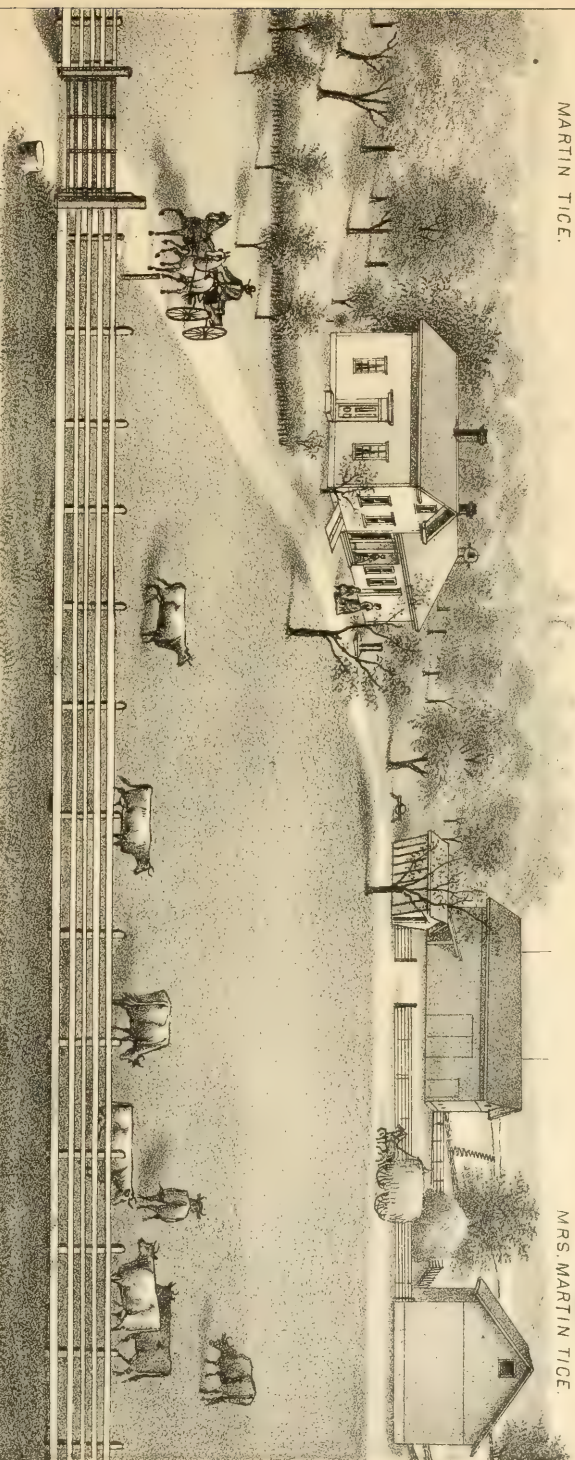
J. H. Enos, who settled in Millburg in 1836, was appointed postmaster not long afterwards, and at his house, therefore, was kept the first office established in Bainbridge.



MARTIN TICE.



MRS. MARTIN TICE.







When Mr. Enos resigned the office, in 1844, John Tabor, living near Pinney's tavern, was appointed, and retained the place some time, to be succeeded by Justus Sutherland. Samuel Yund and Frank Stewart were the incumbents after Sutherland, and after Stewart's time there was a lapse in the Bainbridge post-office until the appointment of James N. Peters, the present postmaster.

## TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION.

Originally a part of St. Joseph township, Bainbridge was set off, with a separate jurisdiction, in 1837, as a township, six miles square. Subsequently its jurisdiction covered the territory now embraced within the limits of Pipestone and Watervliet, so that Bainbridge reached six miles in width and eighteen in length. Pipestone was created a township in 1842 and Watervliet in 1846, when the territory of Bainbridge was reduced to the original six miles square, which it still retains.

The township board for 1879 consisted of Charles C. Kent, Merrit Matran, J. K. Bishop, and Henry Pettis, who composed also the board of health. The acting justices of the peace in 1879 were J. K. Bishop, Henry Pettis, Robert M. Hunter, and William H. Cook.

The following is a list of the persons elected at the first annual township-meeting, April 3, 1837, to serve as officers for the ensuing year: Supervisor, J. B. Ransom; Clerk, J. H. Enos; Assessors, Samuel McKeyes, David Byers, James H. Enos; Justices of the Peace, Samuel McKeyes, David Byers, Wallis Taber, William Boughton; Commissioners of Highways, Stephen R. Shepard, John N. Davis, Ezra C. King; Overseers of the Poor, Samuel McKeyes, William Boughton; Commissioners of Common Schools, Samuel McKeyes, Jerome B. Ransom, James H. Enos; Collector, Francis Johnson; Constables, Francis Johnson, John M. Enos; Pathmaster, Martin Tice. Subsequently, at a special town-meeting, Samuel McKeyes was chosen supervisor. The second annual town-meeting was held at the house of Ezra C. King, April 2, 1838, and while the "old tavern stand" existed town-meetings were held there. The names of the persons annually chosen from 1838 to 1879, inclusive, to be supervisors, clerks, treasurers, and justices of the peace are given, as follows:

- 1838.—Supervisor, Samuel McKeyes; Clerk, Philo Woodruff; Treasurer, Wallis Taber; Justices of the Peace, Levi Woodruff, James H. Enos.
- 1839.—Supervisor, Samuel McKeyes; Clerk, Philo Woodruff; Treasurer, Samuel McKeyes; Justices of the Peace, William Boughton, Israel Kellogg.
- 1840.—Supervisor, Levi Woodruff; Clerk, Simeon G. Woodruff; Treasurer, David Byers; Justices of the Peace, Samuel McKeyes, Stephen R. Gilson.
- 1841.—Supervisor, Adam Prouty; Clerk, Simeon G. Woodruff; Treasurer, Levi Woodruff; Justice of the Peace, James H. Enos.
- 1842.—Supervisor, Israel Kellogg; Clerk, Alexander P. Pinney; Treasurer, J. H. Enos; Justice of the Peace, Israel Kellogg.
- 1843.—Supervisor, James H. Enos; Clerk, A. P. Pinney; Treasurer, Walter Van Der Bogart; Justices of the Peace, Gilson Osgood, James Bragg.
- 1844.—Supervisor, Israel F. Lyman; Clerk, Cyrus Stow; Treasurer, Walter Van Der Bogart; Justice of the Peace, Justus Sutherland.
- 1845.—Supervisor, W. C. George; Clerk, Cyrus Stow; Treasurer, James Adams; Justice of the Peace, Israel F. Lyman.
- 1846.—Supervisor, Israel F. Lyman; Clerk, Sprague Bishop; Treasurer, James Adams; Justice of the Peace, W. C. George.
- 1847.—Supervisor, W. C. George; Clerk, George Peters; Treasurer, William Crossman; Justice of the Peace, Sydney Spencer.
- 1848.—Supervisor, Newton R. Woodruff; Clerk, B. D. Thompson; Treasurer, William Crossman; Justice of the Peace, John Byers.
- 1849.—Supervisor, A. F. Stiles; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, George Peters; Justice of the Peace, Austin Boyer.
- 1850.—Supervisor, Samuel McKeyes; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, James Bragg; Justices of the Peace, Lemuel Clark, James Bragg.
- 1851.—Supervisor, N. R. Woodruff; Clerk, George Peters; Treasurer, James Bragg; Justice of the Peace, Sydney Spencer.
- 1852.—Supervisor, W. C. George; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, H. B. Harrington; Justices of the Peace, Z. Marsh, W. C. George.
- 1853.—Supervisor, W. C. George; Clerk, J. T. Taber; Treasurer, Morgan Woodruff; Justices of the Peace, Francis Johnson, Horace Vincent.
- 1854.—Supervisor, D. O. Dix; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, Justus Sutherland; Justices of the Peace, Horace Vincent, Wm. L. George.
- 1855.—Supervisor, W. L. George; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, Justus Sutherland; Justice of the Peace, Sydney Spencer.
- 1856.—Supervisor, W. L. George; Clerk, George Peters; Treasurer, John Byers; Justice of the Peace, George Peters.
- 1857.—Supervisor, Charles Kent; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, H. H. Selter; Justices of the Peace, James R. Campbell, James Adams (2d).
- 1858.—Supervisor, W. L. George; Clerk, H. B. Harrington; Treasurer, Orville Jennings; Justices of the Peace, Wm. W. Green, Francis Johnson.
- 1859.—Supervisor, W. L. George; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, Justus Sutherland; Justices of the Peace, Charles Kent, John Campbell.
- 1860.—Supervisor, Charles C. Kent; Clerk, John T. Taber; Treasurer, Kayus Haid; Justice of the Peace, D. O. Dix.
- 1861.—Supervisor, D. O. Dix; Clerk, Charles Kent; Treasurer, N. S. Bishop; Justice of the Peace, H. H. Selter.
- 1862.—Supervisor, W. L. George; Clerk, Charles C. Kent; Treasurer, Kayus Haid; Justices of the Peace, N. S. Bishop, A. B. Ives.
- 1863.—Supervisor, Charles C. Kent; Clerk, H. B. Harrington; Treasurer, Ambler Olds; Justices of the Peace, J. H. Peters, R. M. Hunter.
- 1864.—Supervisor, H. B. Harrington; Clerk, Charles A. Spencer; Treasurer, Ambler Olds; Justices of the Peace, W. L. George, Amos Wooden.
- 1865.—Supervisor, H. B. Harrington; Clerk, Charles A. Spencer; Treasurer, Asaph Woodruff; Justice of the Peace, John Byers.
- 1866.—Supervisor, John Byers; Clerk, Samuel Barnard; Treasurer, Christian Kreiger; Justice of the Peace, Ambler Olds.
- 1867.—Supervisor, Kayus Haid; Clerk, Samuel J. Barnard; Treasurer, Wendel Elgas; Justices of the Peace, Francis Johnson, John Campbell.
- 1868.—Supervisor, Kayus Haid; Clerk, Justus Sutherland; Treasurer, Christian Kreiger; Justices of the Peace, Merritt Matran, J. K. Bishop.
- 1869.—Supervisor, Thomas J. West; Clerk, Samuel J. Barnard; Treasurer, Wendel Elgas; Justices of the Peace, John Byers, John A. Mays.
- 1870.—Supervisor, Thomas J. West; Clerk, Samuel J. Barnard; Treasurer, Wendel Elgas; Justice of the Peace, J. A. Mays.
- 1871.—Supervisor, Thomas J. West; Clerk, Samuel J. Barnard; Treasurer, Ambler Olds; Justice of the Peace, Oseumus Spink.
- 1872.—Supervisor, N. R. Woodruff; Clerk, John A. Mays; Treasurer, Peter G. Kneibes; Justice of the Peace, Ira McGee.
- 1873.—Supervisor, Charles C. Kent; Clerk, John A. Mays; Treasurer, Charles Weber, Jr.; Justices of the Peace, Merritt Matran, Calvin B. Chappell.
- 1874.—Supervisor, Juan M. Guy; Clerk, Charles C. Kent; Treasurer, Charles Weber, Jr.; Justice of the Peace, Robert Hunter.
- 1875.—Supervisor, Juan M. Guy; Clerk, Merritt Matran; Treasurer, Charles Weber; Justice of the Peace, Albert Sutherland.

- 1876.—Supervisor, Charles C. Kent; Clerk, Merritt Matran; Treasurer, Charles Weber; Justices of the Peace, J. K. Bishop, William H. Cook.
- 1877.—Supervisor, Charles C. Kent; Clerk, Merritt Matran; Treasurer, Charles Weber; Justice of the Peace, Balaam Dodge.
- 1878.—Supervisor, Charles C. Kent; Clerk, Merritt Matran; Treasurer, Richard Haid; Justices of the Peace, Robert M. Hunter, Henry Pettis.
- 1879.—Supervisor, C. C. Kent; Clerk, Merritt Matran; Treasurer, Richard Haid; Justice of the Peace, William H. Cook; Highway Commissioner, B. W. Sutherland; Drain Commissioner, J. K. Bishop.

## CHURCHES.

Bainbridge contains seven church edifices and nine church organizations, to wit: Disciples, 1; Baptist, 2; Roman Catholic, 1; Evangelical Lutheran, 1; Evangelical Ecclesiastical, 1; Methodist Episcopal, 1; Protestant Methodist, 1; United Brethren, 1. Besides these, other church organizations have existed, but they have passed away with the lapse of time, and live only in the memories of a few. Commonly throughout the West in the pioneer days the adherents of the Methodist Episcopal Church were foremost in forming church organizations, and in Bainbridge the members of that faith led the way in public worship. They were, however, not far in advance of the inhabitants of the German Settlement, who turned their attention with becoming speed to public contemplation of religious affairs, and beginning with one church, now have four within a radius of less than half a mile.

*The Union Church.*—In the southwest, at "Spink's Corners," is a union church, in which worship is held by three distinct denominations,—Baptists, Episcopal Methodists, and Protestant Methodists. The church property is vested in the Baptist and Protestant Methodist Societies, who joined in erecting it, although the Episcopal Methodists supplied some assistance.

*The First Baptist Church* was organized in 1869, by members of the Baptist Church of St. Joseph living in Bainbridge and Sodus, as a member of the St. Joseph River Baptist Association. The constituting members were Job King and wife, F. B. King and wife, John King, Job King, Jr., Rufus, Sarah, and Phila King, Melinda Barden, Delilah Mays, A. F. Stiles and wife, Emma and Ida Stiles, Ripley Merrill and wife, Harvey Merrill and wife, Esther Merrill, Mark and Milton Meech. Elder Job King, of Sodus, was the first preacher, and continued to serve the church until his health failed, when his place was filled by his son, Elder John King, who is now in charge. The deacons and trustees first appointed still serve, the former being A. F. Stiles and Ripley Merrill, and the latter A. F. Stiles, Ripley Merrill, and A. F. King. The membership is now 28. Services are held once in two weeks.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church* dates its existence back to the comparatively early period of 1846, when Orsemus and John Spink, strongly desirous of effecting a church organization, volunteered to contribute towards the erection of a school-house, conditioned that the church might use it for worship. The building was accordingly put up opposite where the school at Spink's Corners now stands, and a church was at once organized, with 14 members. Orsemus Spink was chosen the first class-leader, as well as first steward,

and as class-leader he has served ever since. The present steward is O. H. Dix. From 1846 to 1847 the church was attached to the Silver Creek circuit, and after that to the St. Joseph circuit. Among the early pastors were Revs. McCool, Meek, Kellogg, Robinson, Doughty, and others. Worship was held in the old school-house (now used on Wm. M. Noble's place as a wagon-house), with more or less regularity, until the erection of the union church, since when services have been held once in two weeks, Rev. A. N. Eldred being now the pastor. The church membership is 17.

*The Protestant Methodist Church*, occupying also the union church edifice at Spink's Corners, was organized Nov. 18, 1865, with members as follows: Stephen Sedgwick and wife, William Friend, Mary Doane, Helen Spink, Alberto Spink and wife, William J. Cook and wife, George McIntyre and wife. These were members of the Pipestone class, previously worshipping in Pipestone, but at the time above mentioned withdrew and organized the Bainbridge class, in Bainbridge. It was on that date, also, that the Bainbridge circuit was established and held its first quarterly meeting. The circuit preachers then appointed were Revs. B. Bayne and A. B. Clark. The local preachers were W. J. Cook and Allen Johnson.

The first leader of the Bainbridge class was John Williams, the first stewards Elias Devon and H. A. Spink, and the secretary H. A. Spink.

Services were held in the "red school-house" at Spink's Corners until 1869, when the union church—begun in 1866—was completed. The first church trustees on the part of the Protestant Methodist Church were W. J. Cook, Stephen Sedgwick, and H. A. Spink.

The society united with the Baptists in erecting the union church, and possess an equal vested right in the property. The church trustees are E. S. Spink, James Jakeway, and William Noble. The class-leader is William Noble, and the steward Murray Spink. The membership is 22. Rev. D. Weaver is the present pastor, and preaches once in two weeks.

*The United Brethren* maintained a brief organization at Spink's Corners, from 1856 to 1863, and held occasional services in the union church, but rose at no time to positive healthful strength.

*A Union Sabbath-school*, supported by members of the various denominations worshipping there, has sessions every Sabbath in the union church. The attendance averages about 60. James Noble is the superintendent, and assisting him are six teachers.

There are in the German Settlement four church organizations, known respectively as the Evangelical Lutheran, the Evangelical Ecclesiastical, Roman Catholic, and Baptist, each of which has a church edifice and is moderately prosperous.

The oldest in point of organization is the *Evangelical Lutheran*, which was formed about 1851, at which time also a house of worship was erected. About 25 persons attended the church from the first, and the membership aggregates at present about that number. The original trustees were Frederick Weber, Daniel Kreiger, and David

Scherer. The present trustees are John Schwarz, Peter Kreiger, and Charles Moser. The deacons are Adam Kreiger and Ferdinand Washko. Rev. Mr. Bernreiter, of Mishawaka, Ind., was the first pastor. Rev. Mr. Nusbaum occupies the pulpit now, and holds services once every fortnight.

At this time those professing the Roman Catholic faith in the "settlement" assembled occasionally for worship in private houses and school-houses, and in a little while *St. Mary's Church* was organized, with a membership of 15 families. Priests were supplied from St. Joseph and matters prospered fairly, but it was not until 1860 that a church building was erected, when Jacob Herman and John Aner were chosen trustees.

In 1868 the church was materially enlarged and much improved. The attendance embraces now 29 families, who gather for worship once a month, Rev. Joseph Theisen, of St. Joseph, being the pastor. The present church trustees are Simon Hosbein, Kayus Haid, and Joseph Kaiser.

*The Evangelical Ecclesiastical Church.*—The most numerous congregation in the settlement was formed in 1856, with but 10 members, and now includes a membership of 125. The trustees first chosen were Peter Schmitberger, Philip Butsbach, and Henry Seel. The trustees now serving are Philip Butsbach, Adam Krause, David Friday, and Peter Kneibes. Rev. John Mack, the present pastor in charge, preaches every Sunday. Attached to this church is a flourishing Sabbath-school, in charge of John Krause, with an average attendance of 90 pupils.

*A Baptist Church* was organized in 1871, with 14 members, a house of worship built, and Henry Dukesherer, Frederick Weaver, and Henry Seel chosen as trustees. The first pastor was Rev. W. A. Grimum. Removals have weakened the church, which has now a membership of but 8. Preaching is supplied from St. Joseph once in three weeks.

*The Church of Christ*, which now has its organization in Bainbridge, was formed in Benton township about 1858, but the precise date of organization as well as the details of that event are unattainable matters, since the early church records have been lost. The church was, however, feeble, and continued an uncertain existence until 1865, when public services, which had been held with more or less regularity to that time, were discontinued. This state of affairs continued until 1868, when the advent of a few energetic spirits renewed the desire for public worship, and the church was accordingly reorganized that year, with 53 members. Meetings were regularly held every Sunday in the Millburg school-house, and preaching was enjoyed as it could be obtained. At that time, too, a Sunday-school was established, and it has been flourishingly maintained ever since. The elders of the church upon the reorganization were James Adams and J. W. Rose; the deacons, J. K. Bishop and C. C. Potes.

The first preacher who supplied the pulpit regularly after the reorganization was Rev. Mr. Hurd, who held services once a month for about a year. At this time, 1869, the society began the erection of a fine, commodious church edifice just over the town line in Bainbridge. This struc-

ture was four years in process of construction, and cost about \$5000. Upon its completion the church-meetings, which had been previously held in the Millburg school-house, were transferred thither, and have since been held there once a fortnight. The building has a seating capacity of 400, and is surmounted with a spire eighty feet in height.

The first minister regularly stationed at the Millburg church was Elder J. H. Reese, who preached from October, 1874, to the latter part of 1876. After that, Elder J. P. Lucas preached until early in 1879, since which time the pulpit has been temporarily supplied by Elder Henry Burton. The church membership is now about 80, and is made up of residents in Benton and Bainbridge. The elders are J. W. Rose and J. K. Bishop; the deacons A. L. Schofield, Joan Hess, and C. C. Potes; and the clerk, J. W. Rose. The Sabbath-school, in charge of J. W. Rose, superintendent, and 6 teachers, has a membership of 70, and has regular sessions every Sunday. The church society is entirely clear of debt, and prosperous in every way.

*The United Brethren in Christ* have held worship for some time in the eastern part of the township at the "brown" school-house, although at that place there has latterly been no church organization. In 1878 some disaffection arose among those worshipping there, and as a consequence 11 of the number effected an organization among themselves, and in the summer of that year built a church south of the school-house, where they now have regular services. The membership still remains at 11. The class-leader is John Burg, the steward, Jacob Wise, and the trustees, Wm. Bridgford, John Burg, M. R. Meech, Nathaniel Tucker, and J. T. Heaton. Meetings are still held at the school-house, as before, and there the attendance is quite liberal. A church organization was effected there in 1867, with 9 members, but it failed to prosper, and gave up its existence after a few years.

*The Mennonites* have worshiped at the houses of Martin Byers and David Byers ever since the former came to Bainbridge, in 1848. Martin Byers has preached at each meeting, except at such odd times as the services of preachers from elsewhere could be obtained. Although the Mennonites are but few in number in Bainbridge, and have no church organization, they hold regular worship once in each month.

#### SCHOOLS.

The early township records do not present elaborate reports of school matters, and although the township was organized in 1837, nothing is disclosed in the records about schools until under date of October, 1840, when a report sets forth that: "fractional school district returned 17 scholars between five and seventeen years;" that "District No. 4 returned 15 scholars;" and that "the school inspectors received from the county treasurer \$9.12, on the above returns, in notes on the Bank of Michigan." Another report in the same year notes that school district No. 1 returned 16 scholars, that No. 4 returned 20, and that No. 5 returned 21.

In 1844, Fractional District No. 1 included sections 17, 18, 19, 20, and the west half of section 21, in town 4 south, range 17 west. District No. 2 included sections 21, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, and the east half of section 20, in town



5 south, range 17 west. District No. 3 included sections 7, 8, 17, 18, 19, and the west half of section 20, in town 5 south, range 17 west. District No. 4 included sections 1, 2, 3, 4, 9, 10, 11, and 12, in town 4. District No. 5 comprised sections 27, 28, 33, 34, and the south half of section 22, in town 4. District No. 6 comprised sections 19, 30, 31, 20, 29, and 32, in town 3 south, range 17 west. District No. 7 was formed Dec. 31, 1844, and included sections 14, 15, 17, 21, 22, 23, and the east half of section 20.

The first teachers to whom the records refer were Harriet McKeyes, Miss McNett, George Parmelee, and Mehitabel Love, all of whom taught in 1844. In 1846 the apportionment for the support of schools was \$4.65 to District No. 1, \$13.95 to District No. 3, and \$11.47 to District No. 5. In that year the returns from the school districts were as follows: 17 from No. 1, 30 from No. 2, 41 from No. 3, 23 from No. 4, and 23 from No. 5.

The condition of Bainbridge's public schools Sept. 1, 1879, is shown in the table here annexed:

Number of districts.....	8
Number of scholars of school age .....	451
Average attendance.....	381
Number of school-houses (frame, 6; brick, 2)...	8
Value of school property.....	\$7550
Paid for teachers' wages.....	\$1291.25

The school inspectors are C. A. Kent (superintendent), Oscar Westcott, and Merritt Matran.

*Bainbridge Grange, No. 80*, was organized Sept. 27, 1873, at the house of Kayus Haid, with members as follows: G. Van Vranken and wife, A. N. Woodruff and wife, T. J. West and wife, John Byers and wife, Francis Johnson and wife, I. M. See and wife, C. J. Higbee and wife, J. F. Skinner and wife, B. F. Hill and wife, J. Matran and wife, W. M. Clausen and wife, Kayus Haid, Urius Van Vranken, M. Matran, W. Elgas, John Tieber, J. S. Peersall and wife, John Slater. John Byers was chosen Master; A. N. Woodruff, Secretary; and Kayus Haid, Treasurer. In 1876 the grange built a fine hall at the centre of the township, and dedicated it August 29th of that year. The membership in October, 1879, was 62, and the officers as follows: Samuel J. Barnard, Master; Homer Olds, Overseer; A. N. Woodruff, Lecturer; Henry Wise, Steward; Edward Matran, Assistant Steward; N. R. Woodruff, Chaplain; George Campbell, Treas.; J. Wallace Smith, Sec.; W. H. Cook, Gate-Keeper; Miss Mattie See, Ceres; Miss Cora Smith, Pomona; Ella Matran, Flora; Miss Laura Collins, Lady Assistant Steward.

#### FISH CULTURE.

On section 3, Mr. James G. Portman, State Fish Commissioner, has a valuable fish hatchery, which is esteemed a feature of much local interest. Mr. Portman devotes especial attention to the breeding of trout, and is known all over the State as a successful breeder, whose products are widely called for.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### NATHANIEL BRANT.

The subject of this sketch was born March 12, 1815, in Wayne Co., N. Y.; is the eighth in a family of eleven children, of whom only four are living. His father, Simeon Brant, was a native of Massachusetts, and a farmer by occupation, though sometimes working at the carpenter trade. His mother was of Dutch descent, but was born in America, her maiden name being Herrington. Nathaniel was brought up as boys were in those days to assist his father on the farm, snatching his book-knowledge from brief periods of rustic schooling, but treading more liberally the rugged path of toil. He came to Michigan with his father when he was twenty-one years of age, and helped him to make his first clearing on section 31 of Bainbridge township, which is occupied now by his grandson, Dudley Brant, son of Nathaniel Brant. At the age of twenty-two Nathaniel left the paternal roof and started in life for himself, hiring out by the month to Dr. Enos, where he remained two years, taking for his pay forty acres of land in Pipestone township; there he laid the foundation of the fine property he now enjoys. At the age of twenty-four, on the 29th day of April, 1840, he married Miss Martha, daughter of Crawford and Melinda Hazzard, in Pipestone, this being the first marriage in that town. Mrs. Brant's parents are both natives of the Green Mountain State. They were married in New York in the year 1822, and came to Michigan in 1836, settling in Bainbridge; Mrs. Brant being the second in a family of four, she being now the only one living. This union has been blessed with a family of eleven children, of whom eight only are now living. The names, ages, and deaths are as follows: Wesley C., born Aug. 10, 1841; Warren M., born March 9, 1843; Laura A., born Dec. 3, 1846, died April 23, 1870; Adaline M., born June 3, 1849, died Nov. 13, 1850; Emerett P., born May 11, 1853; Emma P., born May 11, 1853, died July 15, 1853 (twins); Jasper D., born Dec. 20, 1856; Newton E., born April 15, 1859; Oscar D., born Dec. 12, 1863; Orville L., born Sept. 7, 1865; Barney H., born Sept. 1, 1868. After marriage, Mr. and Mrs. Brant commenced their pioneer life in Pipestone, where he remained three years. In the spring of 1844 he sold his farm in Pipestone, and purchased his present home, which then only consisted of eighty acres, on section 32, but has since added at different times until the homestead now contains one hundred and ninety-nine acres; has owned at different times a considerable amount of real estate, which he has divided among his children. Mr. Brant's mother died March 10, 1854, his father making his home with him until his death, May 31, 1860. Mrs. Brant's father died Nov. 3, 1868, her mother living with her until her death, May 21, 1875. Their benevolence is unbounded. In politics Mr. Brant is a Democrat, and has held minor offices at different times. Both he and his wife have been members of the United Brethren since 1851. Their parents lived to see them provided with pleasant homes, and instilled principles in them which time cannot erase.



SIDNEY SPENCER.

## SIDNEY SPENCER.

Among the earliest settlers of Bainbridge who have endured the trials, privations, and hardships of pioneer life, the subject of this brief sketch is worthy of conspicuous mention in this history of Berrien County. He was born Dec. 21, 1802, in Washington Co., N. Y., and is the oldest in a family of ten children. His parents were natives of Connecticut, but moved to Jefferson Co., N. Y., when Sidney was quite young. Sidney remained at home until he became of age, assisting his father on the farm summers, attending district schools winters, but by improving his time he acquired sufficient education to enable him to transact any ordinary business. After reaching the age of manhood he left the paternal roof, and embarked on life's broad sea to earn an honest livelihood. At the age of twenty-five he secured as a partner and helpmeet to assist him in the rugged paths of pioneer life, Miss Aseneth, daughter of Rev. Aaron (an early Methodist pioneer preacher) and Marion Davis, who were also natives of Connecticut, but emigrated from Massachusetts to Utica, N. Y., when there were but two log houses there. This union was blessed with six children, of whom only four are living,—Melissa, born Oct. 4, 1827; Charles A., born May 11, 1830 (took the gold fever in 1851, went to California, remained four years, made enough to purchase a farm on his return, married Elizabeth, daughter of Dexter Dix, and now lives in Benton township); Romelia, born April 24, 1835; William W., born July 3, 1837 (graduated in the law department of Ann Arbor in the spring of 1861, enlisted in the 39th Illinois Volunteer Infantry, August 13th, was appointed sergeant, served under Gillmore in South Carolina one year and a half, thence went to Richmond, where he assisted in the siege of that place, was wounded in battle, sent to Philadelphia, and died in Chestnut Hill hospital, July 4, 1864); Mary Augusta, born July 2, 1838; Rosamond, born Jan. 10, 1842, died March, 1842. After marriage, Mr. Spencer worked at farming in Jefferson Co., N. Y., until 1844, when he moved to Michigan, renting a farm in Hillsdale County; there he remained two years. He then purchased the farm where he now resides, consisting of one hundred



MRS. SIDNEY SPENCER.

and twenty acres, on section 19. Wealth has been no sudden acquisition to Mr. Spencer, but slowly the work has been carried forward year by year, till, in the lapse of time, ease and comfort have been reached. He has lived to see his family all grown, and each provided with a home. One daughter lives in Detroit, one in Ann Arbor, another in Boston, Mass.; the only son living in Benton township. In politics he is a Republican; has been justice of the peace twelve years, besides holding other minor offices. Mr. Spencer is not a member of any church. Mrs. Spencer has been a member of the Methodist Church since 1820, and her father is a minister in that denomination.

## MARTIN TICE.

This gentleman, born in New Jersey, in January, 1799, was one of a family of six children. His parents were natives of Germany, but came to America in an early day. Martin's uneventful youth was similar to that of farmers' sons in those days. Industry, economy, sociability, and honesty were the fundamental principles taught him. At the age of twelve he started out in life, hiring out as a farm-hand, his only capital a willing heart and contented mind. In 1833, when thirty-four years of age, he came to Michigan, stopping at St. Joseph. While there he helped to survey the Territorial road. While employed at that, he saw and took up the land now occupied by his daughter, Mrs. McIntyre, who causes this brief sketch and portraits to be inserted in this history, as a slight token of the love and gratitude she feels for her parents. In 1839, Mr. Tice married Sarah, daughter of John Ivery, who was a native of New York. To this marriage were born two children,—Harriet, born April 7, 1840; Mulford, born March 4, 1842, killed in the late war, March 5, 1863. In politics Mr. Tice was a Democrat; though not radical, yet always speaking and voting its principles. He was a member of no church organization. Mrs. Tice died Nov. 29, 1875; Mr. Tice, in May, 1876, only surviving his faithful companion a few months, leaving Mrs. McIntyre, their only surviving heir, to mourn the loss of their society and companionship.



JOHN KELLOGG BISHOP.



MRS. JOHN KELLOGG BISHOP.

Photos. by Sesser, St. Joseph.

## JOHN KELLOGG BISHOP.

Among the pioneers of Bainbridge in the days of 1844 the members of the family of Asa Bishop are entitled to conspicuous mention. In that family were Asa Bishop, the father, Polly Bishop, the mother, and eleven children. Of those children there are living in Bainbridge Mrs. Orsemus Spink and Mrs. John Lewis, sisters of John Kellogg Bishop. Of his busy and useful life the following article will furnish a brief sketch.

John K. Bishop was born in Henderson, Jefferson Co., N. Y., on the 24th of July, 1827. He passed his early life at home in the usual manner of farmers' sons in those days, enjoying during brief periods the benefits of a rustic education, but being engaged the greater part of his time in the labors of the farm. He was but seventeen years old when, as already mentioned, he accompanied his parents to the West, and became one of the youthful pioneers of Bainbridge. There the elder Bishop located himself upon a farm in section 7, and there, as his father's assistant, John renewed with vigorous ambition the sturdy agricultural experience of his New York home. For four years he served his father; marched with unflagging zeal to the music of the pioneer's axe towards the goal of independence. Having then almost reached the age of manhood he determined to assume all of manhood's duties, and on the 2d of February, 1848, he was married to Miss Sarah Romelia, daughter of Jabez Knapp (a Bainbridge pioneer in 1838). He received from his father the deed of a farm on section 7, erected a small framed house upon it, and speedily assumed the position of a citizen, a householder, and the head of a family. In 1862 he replaced the humble home of his previous married life with the handsome residence in which he now resides.

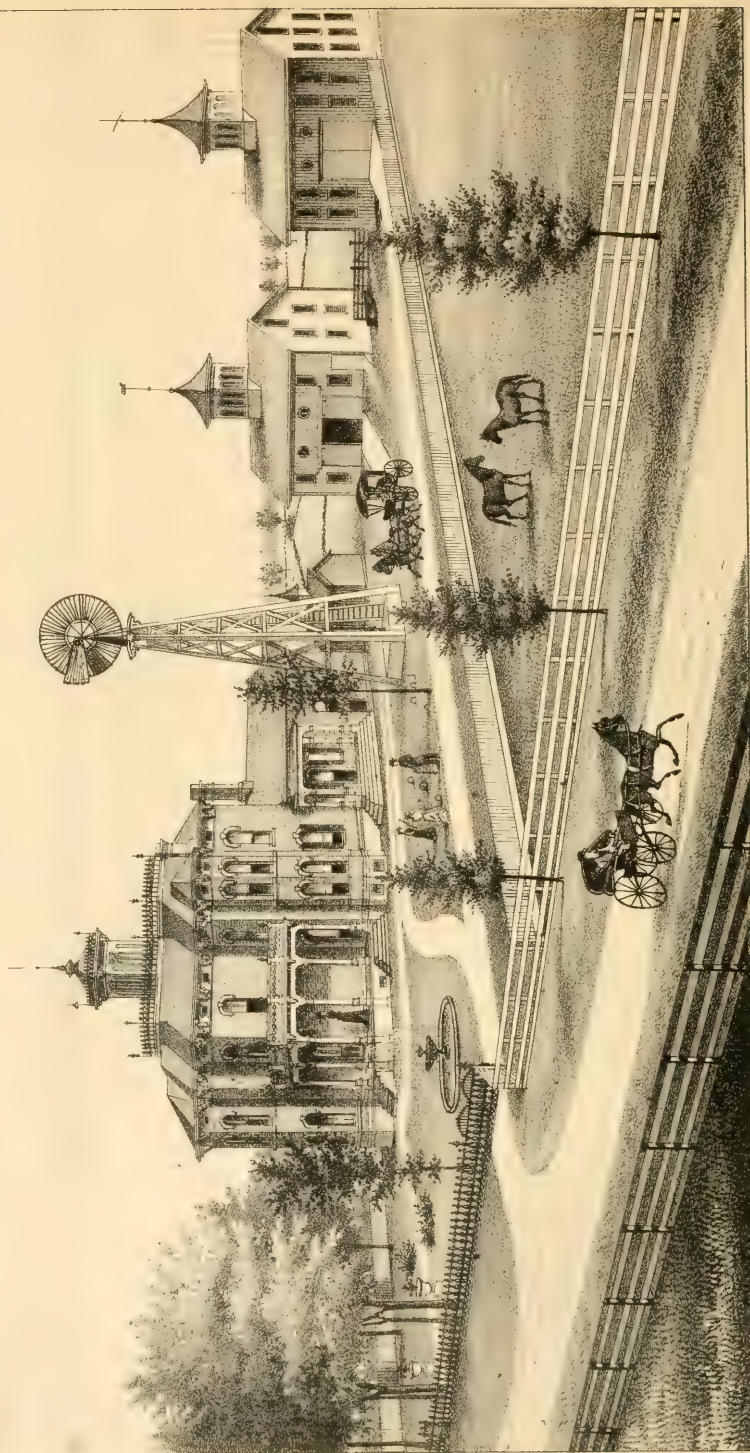
Early in life Mr. Bishop (then, as now, a Democrat) was called to participate in public affairs, and since his twenty-

first year, when he was elected township clerk, he has filled numerous local public trusts, in the discharge of which, as well as in the field of private citizenship, he has gained much deserved popular esteem, the cause of public education in particular having ever found in him a staunch supporter. He has served for years as justice of the peace, and still occupies that position. He was one of the first members of the Christian Church at Millburg, organized in 1856; was a deacon from that time until 1876, and is now an elder and a leading spirit of the same organization. Mr. Bishop is also the Master of Benton Harbor Grange, Patrons of Husbandry, and a member of Benton Lodge, Independent Order of Odd-Fellows, with which he has been associated since 1863, and in which he has filled every office within the gift of his brethren.

Mrs. Bishop, who was married on her sixteenth birthday, was the daughter of Jabez and Olive Knapp, who moved from Jefferson Co., N. Y., and settled in Bainbridge in 1838, when Sarah Romelia (afterwards Mrs. Bishop) was but six years old. Mr. Knapp was a ship-carpenter, and although the owner of a farm in Bainbridge, worked at his trade in St. Joseph for several years after his settlement in the former township. He subsequently moved to Watervliet, but is now a resident of the State of California. With her husband Mrs. Bishop aided to organize the Christian Church at Millburg, in 1856, of which she has ever since been one of the most faithful and useful members. She is also a member of Benton Harbor Grange, and is highly esteemed by a large circle of friends and acquaintances in Bainbridge and the adjoining towns. Of the twelve children born to Mr. and Mrs. Bishop ten are living, namely: James G. Bishop, who lives in Benton; Perry S., a resident of the State of Iowa; Frank H. and Adelbert D., now at Deadwood, Dakota Territory; Mrs. Juan Hess, of Benton; and Clinton, Fred, John K., Jr., Bird, and Lou, who reside with their parents.







RESIDENCE OF GEO. H. ROUGH, BERTRAND TP, BERRIEN CO., MICH.

## CHAPTER XXX.

## BERTRAND TOWNSHIP.\*

Situation, Surface, and Water-Courses—Early Settlements—Township Organization and List of Principal Officers—Agricultural Statistics—Religious Societies and Worship in Bertrand—Dayton Village—Schools in Bertrand.

THE township of Bertrand is bounded on the north by the townships of Niles and Buchanan; on the east by that portion of Niles that was originally Bertrand, from which it is separated by the St. Joseph River; on the south by the State of Indiana, and on the west by Galien. A large portion of the town consists of prairie lands, slightly rolling, which are particularly well adapted for the production of Indian corn and oats, although wheat is raised in great abundance. The soil on these prairie lands is a black, vegetable mould intermixed with clay and sand. A portion of the town is burr-oak openings. The soil of these openings contains more lime than that of the prairies.

The eastern portion of the town rises into hills, which slope to the river, and a line of low hills extends along the northern border. Its water-courses are the St. Joseph River on the east, McCoy's Creek, the head-waters of which rise in the western part of the township, and one of the branches of Galien River, also in the western part. There are two or three small lakes in the township.

## EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The greater portion of Bertrand township belonged to the Indians until the treaty held at Chicago in 1833. The northwest portion, comprising sections 6 and 7 and parts of sections 4, 5, 8, 18, and 19, are in territory ceded to the United States in 1828 at Carey Mission.

The first to locate a farm on the territory now Bertrand was Benjamin M. Redding. He was a native of Mecklenburg Co., Va., where he was born in 1792. He emigrated to Ohio with his parents in 1811, was married in 1814, and lived in Preble Co., Ohio. In 1830 he removed to Hamilton, Ind., a few miles south of the Michigan line. At this time he went to the lands then just opening for sale in Michigan, and selected a farm on the present site of Dayton, it being the northeast quarter of section 7. In 1831, while his family were living at Hamilton, he built a log cabin and saw-mill on the creek, drawing the lumber used for his house and mill from Lacey's mill at Niles. In 1832 the family moved up to their home in Bertrand. As other settlers gathered in, the place became known as Redding's Mill, and when, in after-years, a post-office was established, it assumed that name, and kept it until 1848. When the Michigan Central road passed through the place the name was changed to Dayton, as several families living there were from Dayton, Ohio. Mr. Redding lived at the farm until 1837, when he removed to Niles. After living there a few years he returned to the mill, but shortly after moved to a farm which he owned on Terre Coupée Prairie. In 1858 he removed to the city of Niles, where he died in December, 1877, in the eighty-sixth year of his age. Mr. Redding had a family of twelve children, but one of whom

survived him,—James H. Redding, of Dayton. The first Methodist society west of the St. Joseph River was organized at his house in 1833. He was chosen leader, and worship was held in his house for two years, until the building of a school-house, in which the society afterwards held its meetings.

The next family to come in to the section of country was that of William B. Fuson, who located on the northeast from Mr. Redding, on the southwest quarter and part of the southeast quarter of section 5; they also emigrated from Ohio about the same time. Peter Dearduff in 1837 lived for a short time on the southeast quarter of section 6, and moved to Indiana. Eli Shockley and family also lived near there for a short time.

David Vanderhoof emigrated from Painted Post, Steuben Co., N. Y., to Edwardsburg, in Cass County, with his wife and seven children, in 1833. In the fall of that year his wife and one daughter died, and in the spring of 1834, in company with Charles Wells, from Ohio (also living at Edwardsburg with his wife and seven children), moved into Bertrand township. Mr. Vanderhoof located a claim on the southwest quarter of section 7, where his widow still resides with her youngest son.

An Indian village named Swoptuck was on the farm adjoining Mr. Vanderhoof's, on land now owned by Peter Womer. Mr. Vanderhoof built the first frame house on the reservation, and the lumber was drawn from Lacey's mill, at Niles, and from Christina Creek. He was compelled to furnish accommodations for the emigrants who came through this region, and for a long time his house was a general resort. He put in a stock of goods and kept a store for two or three years. It was at his farm that the government teams gathered when the Indians were sent to the West. He purchased considerable land, and bought and sold to a greater extent than any in that early day. He lived on the farm until his death, in 1875. About 1836 he married Livonia, daughter of Charles Wells, for his second wife. His children are, some of them, settled near him. Thomas is living on a farm in the west part of the township, near Dayton. Henry lived in Buchanan for a time, started to California, and died on the route. Abiel lived in Buchanan, and died at the house of his sister, Mrs. J. W. Post, who is the only daughter living, and who now resides at Buchanan. She married John Grove, in November, 1844. He was a native of Maine, who came to Buchanan from New Albany, Ind., early in 1844, and was the first attorney in that village. He represented the district in the Legislature in 1844-45, and died in June, 1852.

Charles Wells and family, consisting of his wife and seven children, came with Mr. Vanderhoof, who built on his farm a house and blacksmith-shop for him. He remained here several years and located land on section 13, where John Rough now lives. Joseph and Francis are living near the old farm; Lewis lives in Iowa; Livonia married David Vanderhoof, and is living on the Vanderhoof farm; Eliza married Eber Root; Isaac lives in Cass Co., Mich.

In the spring of 1835, Samuel Street located on the reservation, northeast from David Vanderhoof about one and a half miles. He built a double log house, lived here many

\* By Austin N. Hungerford.



years, and died about 1861. He was the first and only member of Assembly who represented this township. David Gitchell now owns the farm on which he lives.

Alanson Hamilton emigrated from New York to the West, and finally came to Bertrand township in March, 1835. He located on the northwest quarter of section 17, where James Badger now lives. In 1841 he purchased the northeast quarter of section 6, where he lived till his death, in November, 1874. Three of his children only are living: Aseneth, now Mrs. George Clark, lives in Mecosta Co., Mich.; Nathaniel lives in the village of Buchanan; and Alfred, the youngest, lives on the homestead where his father lived and died. Mr. Hamilton was the first justice of the peace in the township, and held the position four-teen years.

John De Armond emigrated from Butler Co., Ohio, to the west side of Terre Coupée Prairie, in the township of Bertrand, in the fall of 1834, and located land on the southeast quarter of section 18. He kept a stock of goods, and had quite an extensive trade with the Indians until they went West. He was for a time in partnership with J. D. Ross, in Hamilton, Ind. In 1858 he moved to Dayton. He afterwards married Ruth, the widow of Elisha Egbert, and lived on the southwest quarter of section 4, where he died. Alexander, a son, is a physician living in Dayton. Another son, John, lives in Buchanan. Charles Smith and J. D. Ross, of the village of Buchanan, each married a daughter of Mr. De Armond. Harvey Buckles, who lives about three miles south of Bertrand, married another daughter.

Frederick Howe, a native of Massachusetts, moved with his parents in 1812 to Cortland Co., N. Y., and in 1834 started from there with a horse and buggy on a tour through the West. He came through Niles, fording the river at that place, and continued on until he reached this township. He was satisfied with the country here, and having determined to make this his home, he returned to New York, and in the spring of 1835 emigrated with his family, consisting of his wife and eleven children. After his arrival he purchased 160 acres of Samuel Cannon, on the northeast quarter of section 11, which Cannon had purchased the year before. The house was the usual log cabin of those times, and was a poor dwelling, the fireplace and chimney being built of split logs plastered with clay, and the floor of puncheons. He moved to this place in November, 1835. He soon after purchased more land, and at his death the homestead farm consisted of 240 acres. In his later years he moved into the village of Buchanan, near the depot, where he died Feb. 18, 1864. His wife died Feb. 17, 1869. Nine of their children are now living, viz.: Desire, who married Alfred Johnson, an early settler of Niles; Lucinda, who married Justus Bailey, of Buchanan; Francis W., who lives north of the homestead, and within about a mile and a half of Buchanan; Mary, who married James Smith, of Berrien Springs; H. J., who also lives at Berrien Springs; George A., who is a dentist, and lives at Niles; Adeline, who married H. G. Sampson, and who lives in Buchanan; Charles F., who lives on the homestead; and Mary S., who married James Reynolds, of Hamilton, Ind.

Elijah Egbert came to Bertrand in 1835, and located lands in the southwest quarter of section 4, where his heirs still live.

Sebastian Overacker came from McCoy's Creek, near the Martindale settlement, the year before, and located the northeast quarter of section 4, where David Best now lives, in the year 1835.

Asa Willard in the same year located on section 9, where his son Joseph now lives.

Abiel E. Brooks emigrated to this region early in 1835, and located a claim on the northeast quarter of section 7. He sold to Kaufman & Chittenden, who sold to Jacob Rough in 1849. Mr. Brooks now lives in Madison, Wis.

Abram Ogden settled in 1836 on a claim which he bought of one Jordan, between the claims of David Vanderhoof and Samuel Street. He kept a tavern which afterwards under his management gained a widespread notoriety.

Benjamin Franklin, of Allegany Co., N. Y., settled in 1835 on the southwest quarter of section 2, where he still lives.

Solomon Miller located land on section 17, taking the south half. His father-in-law, John Hardman, purchased it of him, and it afterwards passed into the possession of William R. Rough.

Philip, son of John Hardman, settled in the same year south of Miller on section 20, and afterwards sold to Isaac Tripp. The land is now in possession of Mrs. Amos C. House.

John Bointon also settled at the same time on part of section 24, and afterwards sold to Mr. Hoag. James Kennedy, in 1835, located the southeast quarter of section 1. It is still known as the Kennedy place, and is owned by William R. Rough.

Abel Robinson, in the summer of 1835, came from Henry Co., Ind., with his son-in-law, Grant Main. Robinson located the southwest quarter of section 18, where George G. Rough now lives. Main located the southeast quarter of the same section and sold to Watson Roe, who afterwards removed to Buchanan. It is now one of the David Gitchell farms. William Batson married a daughter of Mr. Robinson.

George Harlan emigrated from the South, and lived near Vanderhoof and Street, and between them. In 1849 he moved to California.

William Batson came from Indiana in the fall of 1834, on a tour of inspection to the reservation, and stopped with Samuel Street, who was then living there. He returned to Henry Co., Ind., and in April, 1836, with his wife and three children, came to the township of Bertrand and purchased the 160 acres of George Harlan—it being the southwest quarter of section 8—which he held under the pre-emption act. In the fall of 1838 he proved his claim at Kalamazoo and received his deed, paying ten shillings per acre. He lived there until the fall of 1877, when he removed to the village of Buchanan, where he still resides. He has four sons and two daughters living, viz.: A. B. Batson, on the homestead; John A., a lawyer, living at Reynolds, Ind.; Lafayette, a physician, at Wakelee, Cass Co., Mich.; William R., living at Niles; Mrs. Lydia Yorker, in Iowa; Mrs. Miranda Rapp, in Bertrand.

About 1838, Isaac Ferote located west of where James



FREDERICK HOWE.



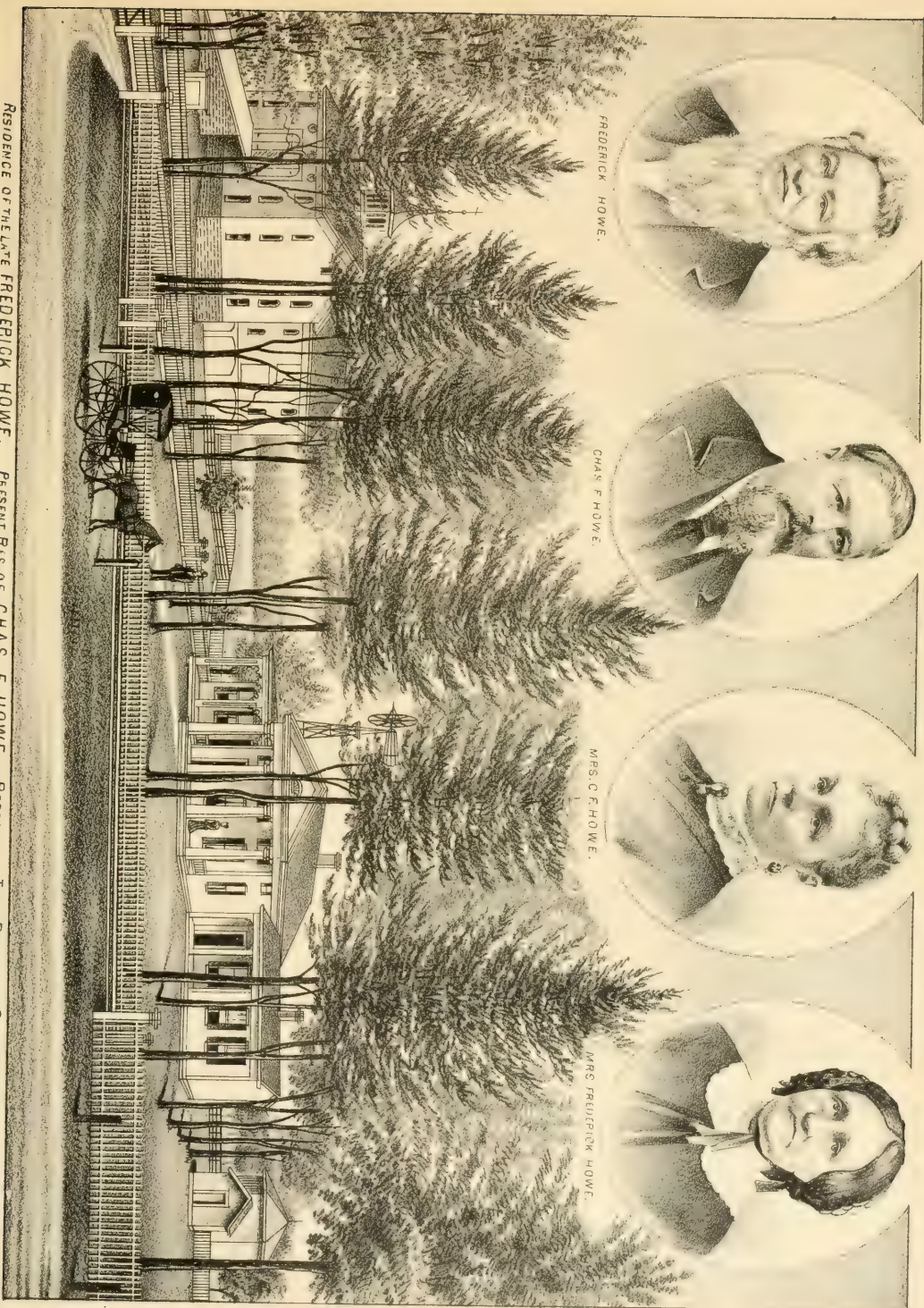
CHAS. F. HOWE.



MRS. C. F. HOWE.



MRS. FREDERICK HOWE.



RESIDENCE OF THE LATE FREDERICK HOWE, PRESENT RES. OF CHAS. F. HOWE, BERTRAND TR., BERRIEN CO., MICHIGAN.





H. Phillips now resides, but soon removed to Indiana. Matthew Redding, a brother of Benjamin, located in 1835, on the southwest quarter of section 17, where W. Foster now lives. Nathaniel Hamilton, a brother of Alanson, located on the north half of section 16, where Keller and Shatterlee now own. Joseph Ivans, in 1835, settled on the east half of section 22, and soon moved to Indiana. Philo Sanford, Peter Wimmer, and George Harlan located claims in the same year,—Sanford on the northeast quarter of section 6, and Wimmer and Harlan located together the west half of section 5. Sanford taught the first school on the reservation.

Samuel Cannon located the northeast quarter of section 11 in 1834, but sold his claim in November of the next year. John Lashbaugh purchased a claim of John Compton in 1835 on the southeast quarter of section 9. His son Henry lives on the farm. Widow Decker, with her sons James, John, and Henry, located on the same section about the same time. Henry lived and died on the farm; James went to California and died; John was a blacksmith, and moved to Cass County, where he died. Archibald Dunbar came into the township about 1837 from Indiana, and located on the northeast quarter of section 21, where he afterwards owned about 600 acres. He moved into Buchanan, where he built the Dunbar Hotel, and died there a few years ago. Frederick White located on section 20 in the township in 1835. He is now in the drug business in Buchanan village. John Krum located on section 17 in 1836.

Within two or three years after 1835 the land on the reservation was all taken up. Many took claims, built cabins on them, made improvements, and sold them to others coming in. Those who were so unfortunate as to be on the seminary lands were driven away from their improvements by the high price put upon the land by the commissioners.

In the years 1837-38 the chills and fever prevailed to such an alarming extent that many became discouraged, packed up their goods, and, leaving the work of years behind them, went to their former homes. Those who remained passed through great suffering, and many died from want of care, there not being well ones enough to nurse the sick.

David Rough, a native of Juniata Co., Pa., emigrated to Michigan when thirty-two years old, and arrived in the township of Bertrand, May 27, 1849. He located on sections 12 and 13, purchasing of Jacob Egbert and Abram Ogden. He soon began the purchase of land, and at his death, in 1876, had owned 1153 acres. He had five children: Wm. R., Solomon, Geo. H., Sarah, now Mrs. Peter Womer, and Eliza, now Mrs. Amos C. House.

Wm. R. first settled on the John Hardman farm, on section 17, in 1854. In 1853 he married Mary A., a daughter of Jacob Rough. In 1858 he purchased, on section 1, the Kennedy place, where he still lives. He continued farming, buying and raising stock, and in 1879, with his brothers, became engaged in the manufacture of wagons at the village of Buchanan. He has now 547 acres of land in Bertrand.

Solomon Rough settled on the south part of section 13,

and married the daughter of David Bressler, an early settler on section 16. He owns 953 acres in Bertrand, and is engaged in business with his brothers at Buchanan.

Geo. H., the youngest, lives on the northwest quarter of section 8, and owns 273 acres.

Sarah married Peter Womer, who purchased land in section 1, on the Niles branch of the Chicago road; the place was known as the Hoag place.

Eliza married Amos C. House, and lives on section 20, a little south of the Chicago road, on the Tripp farm. They now own between 300 and 400 acres of land.

Jacob Rough, a brother of David Rough, emigrated about the same time, and located 160 acres on the northeast quarter of section 7, where he still lives. His son George lives on the homestead and is treasurer of the county. He married a daughter of A. Broceus, of Buchanan. Mary A. married Wm. R. Rough. Susan married Isaac Long, and lives on section 7, the northwest quarter. Elizabeth married John Miller, who lives on the southwest quarter of section 5. Catharine married Henry Vite, on the southwest quarter of section 11.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE TOWNSHIP.

Bertrand township was erected and organized under an act of the Legislature of Michigan, approved March 23, 1836, which provides that "All that portion of the county of Berrien designated by the United States Survey as fractional townships 8, south of ranges 17, 18, and 19 west, be and the same is hereby set off and organized as a separate township, by the name of Bertrand, and the first township-meeting shall be held at the dwelling-house of Michael Segdell."

The limits so named in the act were reduced by the operation of an act passed March 20, 1837, setting off survey township 8 south, of range 19 west, to Weesaw township;\* and they were further reduced, March 9, 1850, by the annexation to the township of Niles of all that portion of Bertrand lying east of the centre of the St. Joseph River.

The first election of the township was held in April, 1836, at Union Hall, in the village of Bertrand. Frederick Howe was elected Supervisor; James H. Montgomery, Township Clerk; Joshua Howell, John De Armond, Alanson Hamilton, Justices of the Peace; Michael Seligson and Jacob A. Dutton, Overseers of the Poor. At this meeting a tax of \$25 was voted for the support of the poor.

The following is as complete a list as can be obtained of persons who have filled the offices of supervisor, clerk, treasurer, and justice of the peace in Bertrand since the year of its organization as a township, viz.:

1837.—Frederick A. Howe, Supervisor; James A. Montgomery, Clerk; Henry Hapgood, Treasurer; Joshua Howell, Alexander Blake, John Demond, Justices.

1838.—Frederick A. Howe, Supervisor; Joshua Howell, Clerk; Henry Hapgood, Treasurer; Burham Gilbert, Justice.

1839.—Frederick A. Howe, Supervisor; David M. Howell, Clerk; John O. Underhill, Treasurer; Alanson Hamilton, Justice.

1840.—John Barbour, Supervisor; David M. Howell, Clerk; Burham Gilbert, Treasurer; Alexander Blake, Justice.

\*The same territory was erected into the township of Galien, Feb. 19, 1844.

- 1841.—John De Armond, Supervisor; Hugh Vanderlip, Clerk; Burham Gilbert, Treasurer; Joseph G. Ames, Justice.
- 1842.—Joseph G. Ames, Supervisor; David Whitlock, Clerk; Samuel Street, Treasurer; C. H. Nickelson, Justice.
- 1843.—Lewis Bryant, Supervisor; Hiram Ward, Clerk; Alexander Blake, Treasurer; Samuel Street, Justice.
- 1844.—Samuel Street, Supervisor; S. R. Bradbury, Clerk; Benjamin Redding, Treasurer; Alexander Blake, Justice.
- 1845.—Abram Ogden, Supervisor; Simeon R. Bradbury, Clerk; Alexander Blake, Treasurer; Alanson Hamilton, Justice.
- 1846.—Frederick A. Howe, Supervisor; L. A. Palmer, Clerk; N. W. Summers, Treasurer; Alvah Higbee, Justice.

The records from 1846 to 1873 are not found, and the list (being necessarily omitted for that period) is continued, commencing at the latter year:

- 1873.—Freeman Franklin, Supervisor; William D. Badger, Town Clerk; Solomon Rough, Treasurer; Michael Swobe, Enos Holmes, Justices of the Peace; Charles F. Howe, School Inspector.
- 1874.—Charles F. Howe, Supervisor; Peter Womer, Town Clerk; Levi L. Redden, Treasurer; William R. Rough, Justice of the Peace; Cyrus E. Gillette, School Inspector.
- 1875.—William D. Badger, Supervisor; Peter Womer, Town Clerk; Samuel Messenger, Treasurer; Sylvester K. Wilson, Justice of the Peace; Joel H. Gillette, School Inspector.
- 1876.—W. D. Badger, Supervisor; P. Womer, Town Clerk; William Foster, Treasurer.
- 1877.—P. Womer, Supervisor; Enos Holmes, Town Clerk; William Foster, Treasurer; Joel H. Gillette, Superintendent of Schools; Chester Badger, School Inspector; John G. Dye, Justice of the Peace.
- 1878.—John H. Young, Supervisor; J. H. Gillette, Town Clerk; John Redden, Treasurer; William R. Rough, Justice of the Peace; Joel H. Gillette, Superintendent of Schools; Chester Badger, School Inspector.
- 1879.—Charles F. Howe, Supervisor; William D. Badger, Town Clerk; John Redden, Treasurer; John Gogle, Justice of the Peace; Enos Holmes, Superintendent of Schools; George Hess, School Inspector.

The town of Bertrand is taking rank among the best in the State for the production of wheat. By the statistics of the State for 1877, 90,000 bushels of wheat were raised, this being 2300 bushels more than was raised in any township in the State. The statistics of the year 1878 show an increase to 125,000 bushels. Below are given the agricultural statistics of the township for that year, viz.: Acres improved lands, 16,573; of unimproved lands, 3473; of wheat raised in 1878, 6677; of corn, 2868; of oats, 622; of clover-seed, 63; of potatoes, 100; of hay, 1451; bushels of wheat, 125,711; of corn, 107,185; of oats, 20,239; of clover-seed, 54; of potatoes, 6605; tons of hay, 2063; pounds of wool, 12,478; sheep sheared, 2605; number of milch cows on hand, 529; cattle, other than milch cows, 549; sheep, 2731; horses, 665; hogs, 1927; acres in orchard, 459; bushels of apples sold, 10,192; of peaches, 24; pounds of grapes, 1000; gallons of wine made from grapes, 2700.

Of wheat, Mr. Isaac Long raised 2100 bushels from 85 acres, and George H. Rough 3200 bushels from 140 acres. There were several of the farmers who raised over 1000 bushels each. The largest number of bushels of corn raised was by David Gitchell, Sr.,—3200.

#### CHURCHES.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—The first Methodist society in the Territory of Michigan, west of St. Joseph River,

was organized at the log cabin of Benjamin M. Redding. A class was formed consisting of Benjamin M. Redding and wife, Pelmelia and daughter Paulina, Eli Shockly and wife, William Fuson and wife, and a widow who lived with Mr. and Mrs. Fuson. Mr. Redding was appointed class-leader. Services were held at his house for about two years, until a school-house was built in the neighborhood in 1835. In 1833 and 1834 camp-meetings were held between Redding's Mills and the prairie. The Rev. James Armstrong was in charge of the first. About 1843 a frame building was erected for a church and called "Bethel," about a mile south and east from Dayton. James Redding, Sr., James Edson, Benjamin M. Redding, Emory Smead, and Matthew Redding were elected trustees.

In 1867 the society determined to remove to Dayton, and the present church was dedicated on the 31st day of August, 1867. The dedicatory sermon was preached by the Rev. D. D. Holmes, who was assisted in the services by the Rev. T. T. George, the pastor, and the Rev. Horace Hall, presiding elder. The first minister who attended at the Redding Mill class was the Rev. Boyd Phelps. A class had been formed at Terre Coupée Prairie, in 1830, by the Rev. L. B. Gurley.

Mr. Phelps was succeeded by George S. Beswick and Richard S. Robinson. A. C. Shaw, C. K. Erkanbrach, Richard C. Meek, Thomas P. McCool, David Burns, Henry Worthington, William Sprague, George King, Horace Hall, B. F. Doughty, William Morley, and ——— Knight were local preachers.

This church was under the charge of the Buchanan Church until about 1872, since which time it has been supplied by Revs. Elliott, J. N. Tomer, Carlisle, Gray, Shenstone, Bell, Bennett, Jakeway, and Skinner, the present pastor. New Troy, Painter School-House, and Galien are under this charge.

*Evangelical Church.*—In the fall of 1851 an Evangelical Church was formed, of which David and Anna Rough, Peter Rhodes, ——— Steiner and wife and two children were the constituent members. It was organized by Bishop John Sybert when on a tour through this section. These persons were members of the church in the East. In 1859 the society built a church at the intersection of sections 12 and 13 and 7 and 18.

In 1854 a branch of the society was organized about three miles from the first one and on the Chicago road, near the Bressler school-house. They now have about 30 members. The first pastor was the Rev. Mr. Wolfe. Among those who have served the church since that time were the Revs. Asher, Keiper, Steffe, Eckhart, Fox, Up-house, Rue, Fisher, Reigh, Evans, Pawlin, Boyer, Regartz, Kimerlin, and C. B. Myer, who is the present pastor.

*St. Anthony's Church (Catholic).*—This church, located at Dayton village, has about fifteen families in its congregation, and is under charge of the Rev. Father Cappon, of the Roman Catholic Church at Niles.

#### DAYTON VILLAGE.

The village of Dayton is situated on the Michigan Central Railroad, on sections 6 and 7, in the western part of the township. It was first settled by Benjamin Redding,







PHOTO BY J. B. LIVES

F. A. HOWE.

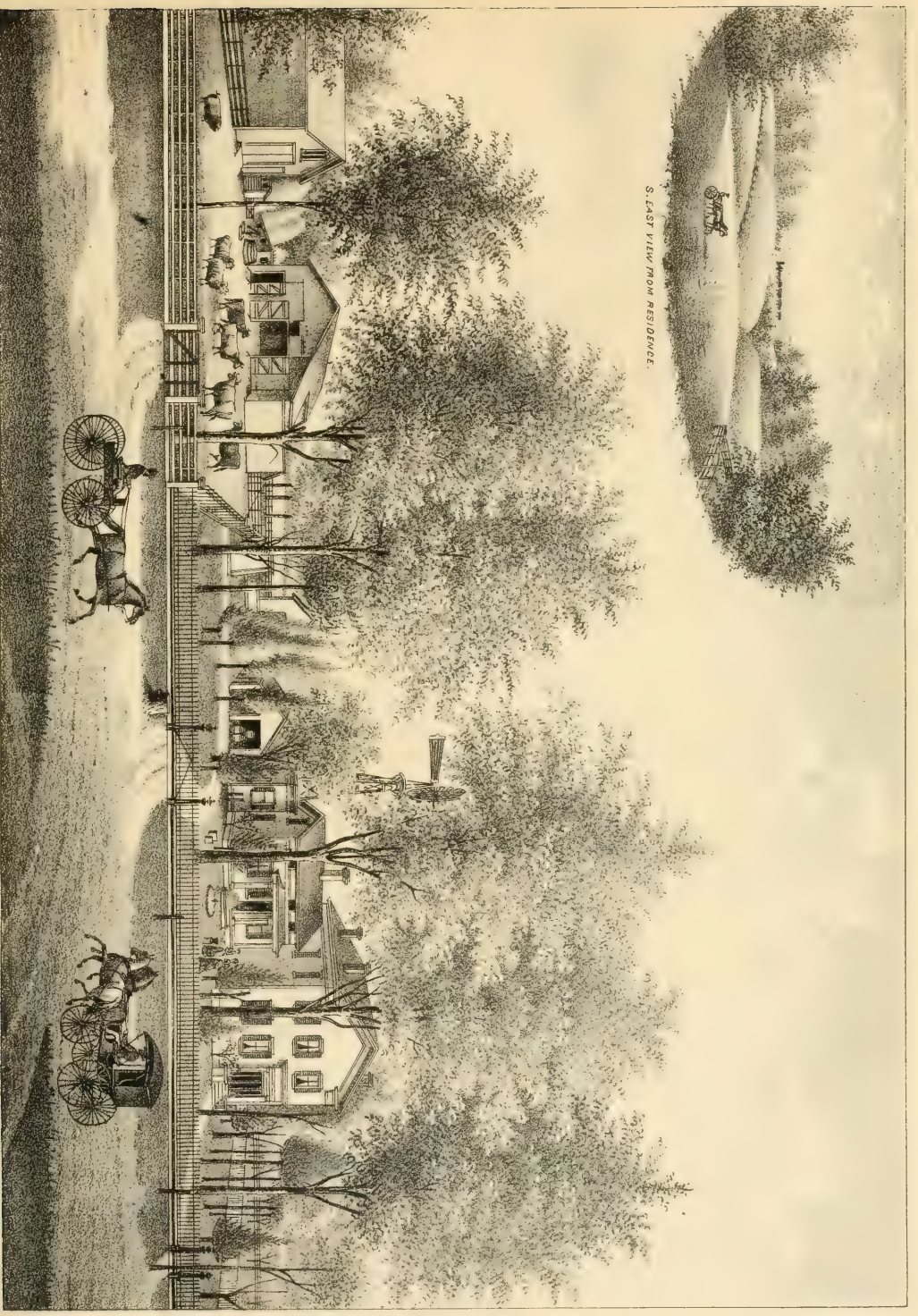


MRS. F. A. HOWE.



RES. OF THE LATE F. A. HOWE, BERTRAND, BERRIEN CO., MICH.

S. EAST VIEW FROM RESIDENCE.



RES. OF SAMUEL MESSENGER, BERTRAND T<sub>2</sub>, BIRRIEN CO., MICH.







and was known as Redding's Mills until the building of the railroad, when it was changed to the name it now bears. It contains two churches (Methodist and Catholic), two stores, hotel, post-office, school-house, steam saw-mill, grist-mill, wagon-shop, two physicians, about 40 dwellings, and nearly 300 inhabitants. Eighty children are enrolled in the school district between the ages of five and twenty years.

The post-office was first kept by Benjamin Redding. After the change of name the postmasters have been J. M. Phillips, Emory Smead, Z. P. Redding, S. B. Stout, and A. H. Rothermel, who is the present postmaster.

The village has also an Odd-Fellows' lodge, No. 214, organized Sept. 17, 1873. It now contains 35 members.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school of which any reliable information can be obtained was taught by Philo Sanford on the Reservation in the winter of 1835, in a small log house that stood on the farm known as the John Borden farm. In the summer of 1836, Lucinda Howe (now Mrs. Bailey) taught in a log house on her father's farm four months in the summer and three months in the winter. She had 20s. per week for the first term. Dissatisfaction was expressed in the matter of wages, and she taught the winter term for \$2.50 per scholar, but few who sent their children that winter term paid her. Mary Howe taught in the summer of 1837 in a log house on the Peter Womer farm, and a Mr. Ellis taught in the winter.

Ethan A. Roe taught in the east part of the township, in what is known as the Clelland district. Orena Thornton taught in a log school-house on the David Rough farm. From 1840 schools were taught in different parts of the township. Houses were built on the corners generally, and schools were supported by a term-rate.

The school records, as well as the town records, are lost beyond recovery, and it is not known when the township was divided into school districts.

The following school statistics of Bertrand township are from the official report for the year 1879:

Number of school districts.....	12
“ “ school-houses (brick, 4; wooden, 8)...	12
Value of school property (brick, \$5500; wooden, \$6500).....	\$12,000
Number of pupils that can be seated in school-houses.....	610
Number of pupils in township of school age.....	466
“ male teachers who taught in the several districts.....	6
Number of female teachers who taught in the several districts.....	15
Total number of months taught in the several districts.....	82
Amount paid female teachers.....	\$1080
“ “ male “.....	800
Money received from two-mill tax.....	938.76
Primary interest fund.....	232.32

The school inspectors in 1879 were Enos Holmes, Geo. W. Haas, and Wm. D. Badger.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### SAMUEL MESSENGER.

This well-known citizen of the township of Bertrand was born near Easton, Northampton Co., Pa., on the 10th day of September, in the year 1821, being the sixth child of Abraham Messenger and his wife, whose maiden name was Margaret Kemerer. His parents removed to Tompkins Co., N. Y., when the subject of our sketch was about a year old, where his father followed the occupation of a farmer. He died, however, when his son Samuel was but seven years old, and the latter was indebted for his subsequent training to his mother.

As he grew up to youth and manhood, he alternated the studies of the district school with the labor of the farm, remaining on the old homestead until all the rest of the children had left it. In 1844, when Mr. Messenger was twenty-three years old, he and his mother emigrated together to Michigan, where he purchased one hundred and fifteen acres of land, nearly, though not quite entirely, unimproved, situated on Portage Prairie, in the township of Bertrand, about three miles and a half southwest of the city of Niles.

There Mr. Messenger has resided during the thirty-six years which have passed away since the date of his first settlement, resisting all the temptations which have lured so many into fruitless change or hazardous speculation, improving his farm from year to year, increasing its size from one hundred and fifteen to one hundred and ninety acres, erecting substantial buildings, and making for himself and his family a comfortable home.

Mr. Messenger was married, in the year 1850, to Miss Ann Mary Woods, daughter of Richard Woods, of Westchester Co., N. Y. She died on the 14th of July, 1874.

Mr. and Mrs. Messenger were the parents of four children,—Genevieve, Hettie, Abraham S., and Schuyler. The second and third of these are dead; the oldest and the youngest reside with their father.

A Whig in early life, Mr. Messenger joined the Republican party at its formation, and, though not an active politician, has ever since steadily adhered to its principles and supported its candidates. In religious faith he is a Presbyterian, having joined the church of that denomination at Niles in 1877.

These are the simple facts of Mr. Messenger's life. We make no attempt to elaborate the record, or to portray him other than what he is,—a plain, substantial, straightforward, common-sense Michigan farmer.

### GEORGE H. ROUGH.

Mr. Rough was born in Perry Co., Pa., Dec. 6, 1838, and remained there until 1849, when he removed to Bertrand, Berrien Co., Mich., with his parents. In the spring of 1863 he was married, and soon after began housekeeping on the farm he now owns, which was formerly known as the "Miller Farm." In 1875, Mr. Rough purchased the "John Borden" farm, upon which he has recently

completed an elegant brick residence, at a cost of ten thousand dollars, the building being the finest private farm-dwelling in Berrien County, in which he now resides.

Mr. Rough was left a widower on the 18th of November, 1874, and three children mourned a mother's death.

In 1877 he made a trip to California, and visited the principal cities, both in the northern and southern portions of the State; deviating from the general route, visiting Denver and the mining parts of Colorado, Salt Lake City, and also the principal cities along the main route. In the summer of 1878, accompanied by his children, he made an extended tour through the East, visiting Western Canada, Niagara Falls, the river St. Lawrence, Montreal, Quebec, the White Mountains, Vermont, and Massachusetts. In 1877, in company with his brothers, he established a hardware-store at Buchanan, which is now in a flourishing condition. In partnership with Solomon Rough and William Pears, he owns the "Little Mill" (grist), and the grist-mill at the village of Buchanan. In 1879 he entered in copartnership with W. R. Rough and Solomon Rough, under the firm of Rough Bros'. Wagon-Works, to manufacture wagons, buggies, etc., at Buchanan.

## CHAPTER XXXI.

### CHICKAMING TOWNSHIP.\*

Location, Boundaries, and Natural Features—Original Entries of Land—Settlements and Settlers—Lumbering Interests of Chickaming—Township Organization and List of Township Officers—Schools—Religious History.

CHICKAMING township contains 19 full sections, and 6 triangular sections formed by Lake Michigan, and is bounded on the north and west by Lake Michigan and the township of Lake, on the east by the township of Weesaw, on the south by the townships of New Buffalo and Three Oaks, and is designated on the United States survey as town 7 south, of range 20 west. The name Chickaming is an Indian word, meaning lake.

The highest point of land between St. Joseph and New Buffalo is near Wilkinson Station, being 98 feet above the river at New Buffalo. Along the lake-shore the soil is sandy.

The northerly portion of that section was heavily timbered with beech, maple, and other woods. The southerly portion was white and black oak. In the easterly and southerly portions of the township the soil is generally a clay loam of good quality. The lake-shore strip is a good region for the production of all kinds of fruit, and is largely cultivated for that purpose. The farming lands are similar in quality and production to those of adjacent townships.

The township is watered by the north branch of the Galien River, which enters in the lower part of section 12, and passes diagonally through sections 13, 23, 22, 27, 29, and passes out in section 29.

Following is a list of persons who made original entries of government lands in the several sections of the township of Chickaming:

- Section 1.—E. Griswold, — Sheldon, C. Britain, G. Kimmel.  
 Section 2.—Sherwood & Co., — Wittemeyer, Calvin Britain.  
 Section 3.—Sherwood & Co., D. A. Miller, T. U. Wray, B. Horton, and Stuart & Co.  
 Section 9.—Sherwood. Whole section.  
 Section 10.—D. A. Miller, R. Horton, F. M. Wray, J. C. Miller, — Horner, G. Kimmel.  
 Section 11.—G. Kimmel, — Johnson.  
 Section 12.—G. Kimmel, C. Kingery, J. Griffin, Rathbone & Co.  
 Section 13.—Rathbone & Chapin, J. Turner, E. Butterworth, William Bond, Jr.  
 Section 14.—M. Chamberlain, G. Hoffman, N. Willard, Sherwood & Co., — Horner.  
 Section 15.—G. Kimmel, Sherwood & Beers.  
 Section 16.—School lot.  
 Section 17.—C. Britain, H. Bishop, N. Willard, H. L. Stuart.  
 Section 19.—S. Clough, E. Goit.  
 Section 20.—B. L. Skinner, M. Chamberlain, F. H. Clough, R. Nixon, J. Stauffer.  
 Section 21.—F. Smith, C. Britain, A. Cummings.  
 Section 22.—J. Horner, G. Kimmel, Sherwood & Co., M. Chamberlain.  
 Section 23.—M. Chamberlain, Johnson, Lauman, E. Griffin, Rathbone & Co.  
 Section 24.—N. Willard, B. Butterworth, J. Johnson, J. Garrish, J. Haas, Townsend & Co.  
 Section 25.—J. Haas, N. Willard & Co., Townsend & Co., Nelson Willard and Henry Bishop, Sherwood & Co., — Deacon.  
 Section 26.—Jacob Haas, J. Pierce, Sherwood & Co.  
 Section 27.—John H. Ostrom & Co., D. Robb, J. Stauffer, and J. Turner.  
 Section 28.—Ostrom & Co., G. C. Balls, John A. Wells, W. Hammond, V. L. Bradford.  
 Section 29.—M. G. Pratt, E. M. Shelton, V. L. Bradford, J. M. Carter, J. P. Warner, M. G. Evans.  
 Section 30.—McKersham, J. P. Warner, Clough Whittaker, W. Hammond, V. L. Bradford.

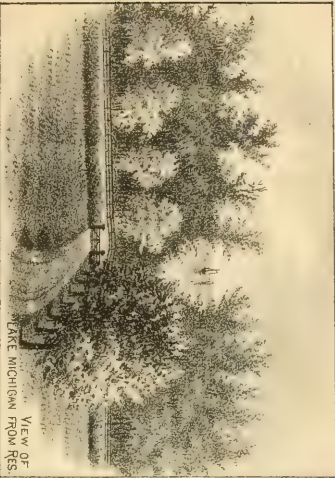
### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

For many years after the settlement of New Buffalo, lands in this township were unoccupied by actual settlers on account of the speculative prices put upon them. The first to locate land was Luman Northrop, from near Hamburg, Erie Co., N. Y., a son-in-law of Festus A. Holbrook. He came to New Buffalo in the fall of 1836, and made that his headquarters, being part of the time at Galien and New Troy. He was collector of New Buffalo township in 1839. About 1840 he bought a farm on the southwest quarter of section 23, where he built a cabin and a saw-mill with a flutter-wheel. He owned the property until about 1860, and then sold it to Henry H. Pike, now of the "Pike House," Niles. Prior to this sale, he went to California, Lake Co., Ind., and other places. He died about 1868. He was a man of little education, but of strong mental and physical power.

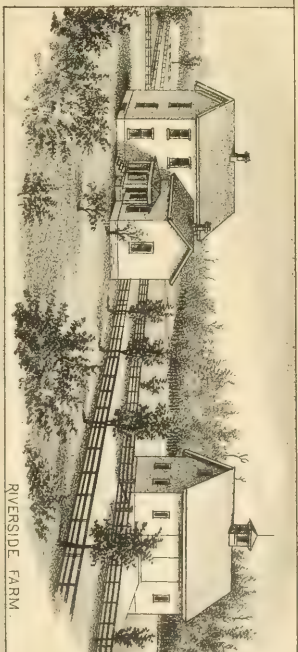
In 1842, Richard Peckham, a native of Dutchess Co., N. Y., came to New Buffalo from Clinton, Lenawee Co., in this State, and commenced the manufacture of grain cradles and rakes, which he continued for four or five years. In 1843 he located a farm on the northwest quarter of section 20, Chickaming. He was a bachelor for many years, and carried on the farm at the same time with the factory, but finally moved on the farm, and gave his whole attention to it.

Henry Chamberlain, whose history will be found more fully with that of the township of Three Oaks, was the next to locate. He purchased the east half of the northeast half of section 20, where he built a cabin, and lived there about one year.

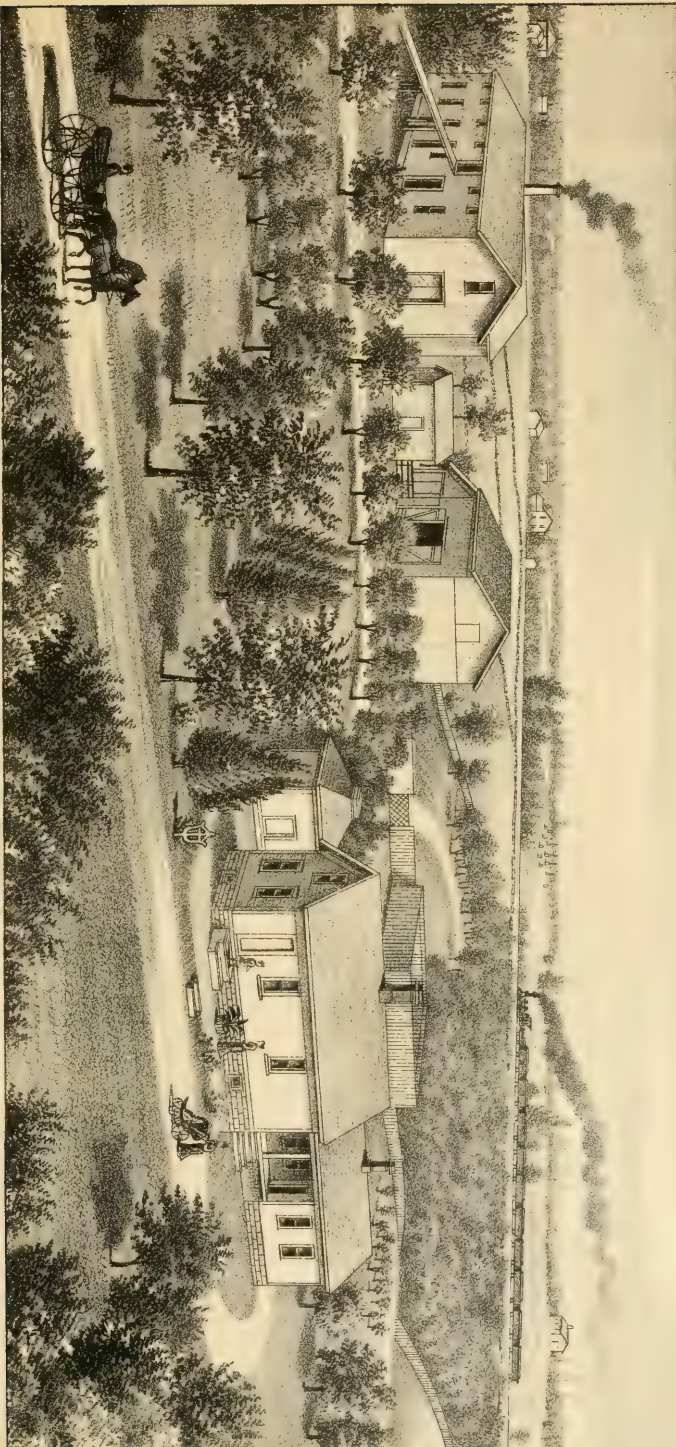




View of  
LAKE MICHIGAN FROM FARM.



RIVERSIDE FARM.



LAKE-SIDE FARM, RESIDENCE OF JOHN C. MORGAN, CHICKAMING TWP., BERRIEN CO., MICH.





Alfred Ames, a native of Vermont, came to Eaton Co., Mich., in 1841, and in 1843 came to New Buffalo. In November, 1844, he purchased 78 acres of the De Garmo Jones property, it being the northeast quarter of the northwest quarter of fractional section 30. Oct. 1, 1844, he married Miss Mary Fisher, then teaching school in Eaton County. She was also a native of Vermont, and a former schoolmate of his. Mr. Ames built a cabin on the farm (which was heavily timbered, and had no improvements), hired choppers, and worked in the woods all winter, his wife living with friends in Woodford Co., Ill., until some of the conveniences of a home could be obtained. In the spring of 1845 they commenced keeping house. At that time no bridge crossed the Galien River, and to get to New Buffalo was to swim the river, which Mr. Ames often did, taking off his clothes and putting them on his head to keep them dry. The mail service was to them an important matter, as they were both great readers, and the literature of the day was a necessity. Indians were often encamped between the home and New Buffalo. A man by the name of Wilcox, a contractor, lived in part of the house in 1845. He was engaged in getting out timber for the Chicago harbor improvement. The timber was taken to the lake, put on rafts, and floated to the vessels, which lay from half to three-quarters of a mile out in the lake.

The first school taught in the township was at the house of Mr. Ames, his wife acting as teacher. This was in 1847. Mrs. Ames is still living on the farm which is known far and near as "Clay Banks." Mr. Ames and the father and mother of Mrs. Ames died the same day, at their house, March 4, 1864. Mrs. Ames has obtained considerable celebrity as an authoress, and for many years has written both poetry and prose, which have been contributed to the magazines and papers of the day.

In April, 1845, William Miller, a native of Ohio, settled on section 30, nearly adjoining Mr. Ames. Mrs. Miller is still living on the place. His son, John C. Miller, was a member of the House of Representatives of this State in 1862. Truman A. Clough, one of the first settlers of New Buffalo, owned land on sections 19 and 20. He engaged H. Hebner to clear the land on section 19, and agreed to give him two acres of land in township 8 for each acre cleared in section 19, township 7. He built a cabin and cleared land to the extent of 20 acres, receiving therefor 40 acres lying on Galien River, where his wife still lives. Mr. Clough removed to the farm about 1850, and lived there until the death of his wife, when he returned to New York State. He sold his property to J. N. Wilkinson & Co. Zalmon Desbro located on section 30, where his widow (now Mrs. Daniel Magee) lives. George Garland settled on the southeast quarter of the same section. Arnold Pratt, an early settler of New Buffalo, settled on land adjoining Garland. Richmond Horton, in about 1846, settled on the southwest quarter of section 1, where he made a clearing and built a steam saw-mill. He afterwards sold to Silas Sawyer, and moved to Berrien Springs, where he was interested in building the first grist-mill. He then moved to Ohio.

Tobias M. Ray, from New York, settled on section 16,

and built a small water saw-mill on what is known as Ray's Creek, about 1847. He was killed years after by the bursting of a boiler while putting a steam-engine in his mill.

About 1835 a lumber firm took up a tract of timberland on section 11, where they built a water-mill, and constructed a horse-railroad to the lake. This was afterwards taken by Heman J. Rogers and removed to his place on section 11. P. B. Andrews soon after settled on the place where he still lives. Mr. Andrews built the engine for the "Newburyport," the first steamer on the St. Joseph River.

Amos Fisher located a farm on section 30 about 1850, and went to California, where he remained a short time, returned, married, and in 1853 moved on his farm, where he still resides. A school-house was built on his land early in 1853. Martha, the daughter of John W. Wilkinson, taught school there in the summer of that year.

John W. Wilkinson, a native of Virginia, emigrated to Clarke Co., Ind., in 1833, and in 1847 came to New Buffalo, where he remained till 1854. His brother, Dr. James Wilkinson, was a physician there for several years. Another brother, Joseph N. Wilkinson, then living in Alabama, now in Richmond, Va., became interested in the lumber business, and, as a member of the firm of J. N. Wilkinson & Co., purchased, in September, 1854, of Truman A. Clough, the greater part of section 19 and the southwest half of southwest quarter in section 20, for \$10 per acre, John W. Wilkinson taking charge of it. A boarding-house was put up, choppers hired, and lumbering was actively commenced. The lumber for the first building was purchased of Luman Northrop, who had a small saw-mill on section 23. The only improvement on the land when they came was a clearing of six or eight acres, and a log cabin 18 by 28 feet, built by Mr. Hebner. A store-house 20 by 36 feet was soon erected, and a pier was built out into the lake six hundred feet for convenience in loading lumber and cordwood.

After the completion of the pier a steam saw-mill was erected, with an upright saw, an engine of 20 horse-power, and capacity of cutting 6000 feet per day. From 50 to 100 men were employed, mostly in the woods. Afterwards what is known as Greenbush Pier was built, and still later Pike Pier. From this latter a horse-railroad was built on section 17, extending east to the southeast quarter of section 14. The firm continued to purchase land until they had bought 2500 acres, varying in price from \$4 to \$6 per acre. A post-office was established at Wilkinson in 1858. Abner Clark, William Fisher, and J. W. Wilkinson were the postmasters. After Chickaming was made a post-office, with Edward Glavin as postmaster, the Wilkinson office was discontinued. Upon the completion of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, three post-offices were established, viz.: Sawyer post-office, in the north part of the township, at Troy Station, James Spaulding, postmaster; Lakeside post-office, at Wilkinson Station, John S. Gibson, postmaster; and a post-office at Union Pier, in the south part of the township, with William T. Green, postmaster.

About 1853, Silas Sawyer, of Ohio, came to the township, purchased the place of Richmond Horton, in section 1

and the northeast quarter of section 10, built a steam saw-mill, and by his persistent energy won a competence; but the extension of his business during the depression of the times following 1857 was the means of heavy loss. In 1873 he moved to Dallas, Tex., where he still resides. He was the first supervisor of the township after its organization. Bartlett J. Rogers, a native of Rochester, N. Y. (who had advanced money to the firm who built at the lake, on section 3), came here about the same time with Mr. Sawyer, and settled on the northwest quarter of section 11. He moved the mill from the lake to his farm, enlarged it, and was extensively engaged in lumbering. He remained here until about 1863-64, when he returned to New York.

G. A. Orris settled on the northeast quarter of section 2. He now lives in Weesaw, near Hill's Corners. John Vickerman settled, about 1854, on the west half of section 10, where he still lives. S. F. Broadbeck and — Hilliard settled on the southwest quarter of section 2. The widow of Hilliard, now Mrs. Ashley, still lives on the place.

In 1854, Jerome W. Burnett purchased on the northwest quarter of section 14, where he still lives. In 1858 he sold a part to James A. Cook, who, in 1872, sold out and moved to Nebraska.

The western part of the township that is accessible to the lake was largely and heavily timbered, and its early settlement was largely due to this fact. For many years the eastern part of the township was a wilderness, except the location made by Luman Northrup, on section 23. In 1860, Albert L. Drew, a native of Cass County, came into Chickaming, and bought 480 acres—the north half of section 26 and the northwest quarter of 25—Aug. 18, 1860. He built a log cabin immediately, and moved in with his family on October 23d of that year. His brother-in-law, Charles C. Sherrill, also a native of Cass County, bought one-half of Mr. Drew's land, in the winter of 1860-61, built a frame house, and moved his family there in the spring of 1861, at which time his house was half a mile from any road. They are both living on the places they then located. Mr. Drew is an active man in the township, and has filled the office of supervisor from 1873 to 1879. Mr. Sherrill is an active member of the Baptist Church, and a thrifty, energetic farmer. He was township treasurer from 1870 to 1877. John Martin settled, in 1860, on the southwest quarter of section 26. He was killed, in 1862, by an accident.

Samuel Donovan, about 1862, settled on the southwest quarter of section 23; Horace Warren on the southeast quarter, and Andrew Carpenter on the southwest quarter of section 26. In the spring of 1861, Luman Northrup moved to Weesaw, giving as a reason that neighbors were getting too thick.

David Adamson, an Irishman, came in 1861 with Mr. Sherrill, and located in the southeast quarter of section 26. He enlisted in the army, and soon after his house was destroyed by fire, and one of his children perished in it. About 1865, John Baker, John Findle, C. Hess, and George K. Barnhart, with their families, came in, and purchased the southeast quarter of section 25. About 1869 they, with other German families in Weesaw and Three

Oaks, built an Evangelical church on the southeast quarter of section 25. At nearly the same time, Samuel Priest settled on northeast quarter of section 25.

In 1862, Clement H. Goodwin, of Aurora, Ill., came from Galien, where he had been in business, and with his nephew, Richard M., hired the Wilkinson mill, which they ran for about a year, and purchased land on fractional section 25, where a saw-mill and a brick store were erected, and a pier built into the lake. They engaged largely in cutting and shipping cord-wood and in the manufacture of lumber and ties. A horse-railroad was built east to the west line of section 27. They had purchased large tracts of land on the north half of section 28, and had control of the land over which the road passed. Mr. C. H. Goodwin died about 1871. He was a prompt and active business man, possessed of great energy and tact. Richard M. Goodwin is to-day one of the foremost men of the township and one of its most active business men. He carries on a handle-factory, at Union Pier, in addition to his other business. John Frank and William Gowdy were settlers at Union Pier. John M. Glavin and Edward Glavin located a little north. John M. Glavin was in the Legislature of the State in 1867.

O. R. Brown settled about 1861 on section 2, where he erected a steam saw-mill and carried on a large business for several years, and where he still lives. A horse-railroad was built from the Sawyer Settlement to the Fuller Pier, in the edge of Lake township.

#### LUMBERING INTERESTS.

This township produced a finer quality and larger quantity of oak and whitewood timber than any township of its size in the county. The first operations of importance were those of the Michigan Central Railroad. In 1847 they built a steam saw-mill on section 30, where there was a large body of fine oak timber. Upon the completion of their pier at New Buffalo, the mill was removed to that place. Andrews & Miller built a steam saw-mill on section 3 about 1851, and continued it till about 1860. In 1853-54, Silas Sawyer bought on section 10, and built a steam saw-mill. The lumber was so heavy that for the first year of work his operations were confined to ten acres. About the same time J. N. Wilkinson & Co. bought a timber tract on sections 19 and 20. This was afterwards increased largely. The Wilkinson Company built the Wilkinson, Greenbush, and Pike Piers. A horse-railroad was built, and a large business was carried on in lumber, cord-wood, and railroad-ties.

About 1855 two men from New York built a steam saw-mill on section 11, and constructed a horse-railroad from there to the lake at the Fuller Pier. This afterwards passed to Bartlett R. Rogers, who continued it for some years. O. R. Brown, about 1861, purchased the Andrews Mill, which was carried on about a year. Darius W. King, of Niles, about 1863, purchased the Greenbush Pier and used it for delivering cord-wood, of which large quantities were cut and shipped to Chicago. Upon his death, in 1865, the property was rented to J. M. K. Hilton, and was continued till 1868, when it was sold to Paul Cross. The Pike Pier was sold to J. M. K. Hilton, who was soon



associated with Horace R. Pike. It was carried on as a wood-yard for several years, passing into the possession of Mr. Pike.

About 1862 or 1863, A. L. & H. L. Drew built a steam saw-mill on section 26, which was continued about eight years. L. F. Wilcox also built a steam-mill, on section 15, which ran for some years. A mill was built at Union Pier, by Goodwin & Gowdy, about 1863. It is now in possession of Wm. Gowdy, and is still running.

In 1873 a handle-factory was established near the railroad by Sanborn & Gowdy, and in 1875 it came into the possession of R. M. Goodwin, by whom it is still run.

The *Union Pier Handle-Factory* was started first by Sanborn & Gowdy in 1873, and came into possession of R. M. Goodwin in 1875. It is situated on the line of the Chicago and West Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, about three miles from New Buffalo. The engine is 75 horsepower, and Mr. Goodwin has employed about 30 men. Shipments are made to Chicago and South and East.

Union Pier contains also a post-office, saw-mill, and a brick store.

The assessed valuation of the township of Chickaming in 1856 was \$88,416, as shown by the assessment-rolls of that year. The roll of 1878 places the valuation of the township at \$114,485.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The townships of Chickaming and Three Oaks were set off from the territory of New Buffalo in 1856 by the Board of Supervisors. The order of the board for the first election of township officers was as follows:

"Notice is hereby given that the first annual meeting for the election of township officers in each of the townships of Three Oaks, Chickaming, and New Buffalo, in the county of Berrien, State of Michigan, will be holden on the first Monday in April, A.D. 1856, as follows, to wit: In the township of Chickaming, at the store of J. N. Wilkinson & Co., and that Richard Peckham, Silas Sawyer, and Alfred Ames are duly authorized to preside at such township-meeting, and to perform all the duties required by statute in such cases made and provided." The election in Chickaming was duly held, in accordance with this order.

The town records cannot be found, and the civil list given below is necessarily imperfect. The names have been gathered from assessment-rolls and other documents, as follows:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1856, Silas Sawyer; 1857, Richard Peckham; 1858, John C. Miller; 1859-60, George Montague; 1861-62, John C. Miller; 1863-65, John M. Glavin; 1866, James Abner Wilkinson; 1867-68, John C. Miller; 1869, Oliver P. Newkirk; 1870, Richard Peckham; 1871, Oliver P. Newkirk; 1872, Wm. A. Keith; 1873-79, Albert L. Drew.

#### CLERKS.

1856-57, A. E. Wilkinson; 1858-60, Richard Peckham; 1861-62, Richmond Horton; 1863-65, Frank Gowdy; 1866, Henry P. Nourse; 1867-68, Frank Gowdy; 1869-70, Michael Deady; 1871-72, Albert L. Drew; 1873, Frank E. Sawyer; 1874-79, Wm. A. Keith.

#### TREASURERS.

1859, Freeman Pulsifer, 1860-67, Jephtha Pulsifer, 1868-69, James H. Spaulding, 1870-77, Horace Wilcox, C. C. Sherrill, 1878, Richard M. Goodwin, 1879, Hale H. Miller.

The township, like many others in the State, is encumbered by railroad bonds, from which much trouble is growing, and the matter is now in the courts.

#### SCHOOLS.

While the territory now in Chickaming was in New Buffalo it was in one school district, but no school was held until 1847, when 9 children were gathered at Mrs. Ames' house and taught by her. This was soon organized as District No. 1. The township now has 6 school districts, of which No. 3 has a graded school. The number of children, in 1878, in this district, between five and twenty years of age, was 136, and they were allowed 50 cents each of the public money. This district was organized Nov. 13, 1860. A school-house, costing \$700, was built the next year. Mrs. A. L. Drew was the first teacher, and the number of pupils was 5.

#### RELIGIOUS.

The *Union Pier Baptist Church* was organized at Union Pier, Aug. 7, 1869, with 13 members, as follows: Wm. Fisher and wife, Mrs. J. A. Wilkinson, G. D. Vandy and wife, Hattie Vandy, Fanny Vandy, W. A. Gowdy and wife, E. Gowdy, Mrs. John Gowdy, and two others.

The pastors have been as follows: Revs. Samuel Millis, E. L. Millis, J. G. Bostman, Henry Meachin. The church has at present 42 members.

An *Evangelical Lutheran Church* was established on section 25, in the southeast quarter of the township, composed of the Germann families in the townships of Chickaming, Three Oaks, and Weesaw, in that neighborhood. A church was built in 1869.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### JOHN C. MORGAN.

Ralph Morgan, the father of John C., was born in the State of New York on the 18th day of March, 1824. On arriving at manhood he acquired the profession of a dentist. His wife, whose maiden name was Chase, was a native of Massachusetts, being the daughter of a distinguished engineer, who designed the celebrated works for utilizing the water-power at Holyoke, in that State. Ralph Morgan died Dec. 31, 1878.

John C. Morgan was born on the 13th day of February, 1856, in Chicopee, Mass. Eight days afterwards his mother died, leaving the son at that tender age without the loving care which only a mother can give. An aunt, however, living at Southampton, Mass., kindly consented to take charge of the child, and with her he remained until he was twelve years old. At this age he went to his father, who had removed to Greenfield, Mass. In 1867 his father married the second time, and in 1869 removed with his family to Michigan, locating on the farm known as Lake Side farm, in Chickaming township, Berrien Co., on which his son now resides. John C. Morgan, at the age of twenty-one, married Arvilla, daughter of John S. and Ann E. Gibson. His children are Gay Ralph, born April 14,

1878; Donald St. Clair, born May 19, 1879. Mr. Morgan is employed in making cider, jellies, and sorghum-sugar; also in raising all kinds of vine-seeds and sugar-corn, which he takes to the New York and Philadelphia markets. He owns a farm situated in the fruit belt of Michigan, called Lake Side farm, also a wheat farm of one hundred and sixty acres, called River Side farm, near the former. In politics he is a Republican, in religion a Liberal. Personally, he is an industrious, energetic, upright man, a fine specimen of the active, intelligent Michigan farmer.

#### ALFRED W. AMES.

The subject of this sketch was born in Westminster, Vt., in the year 1823. His parents died when he was quite young, when Alfred found a home with an uncle,—Ebenezer Melvin,—an old soldier of the Revolution. From this scarred veteran, on his mountain farm, the lad listened to



ALFRED W. AMES.

tales of battle and adventure until he became imbued with a passionate longing for excitement and change. Naturally, when the uncle passed away, the nephew, then eighteen years old, started for the West, arriving in Charlotte, Eaton Co., Mich., in September, 1841. He bought government land and made some improvements on it, but becoming disheartened by sickness he sold it. In December, 1843, young Ames found himself in New Buffalo, Berrien Co. The next August he purchased a piece of wild land at what was then known as Clay Banks, now a part of Chickaming township.

In October, 1844, he returned to Charlotte and married Mary Fisher, who was also a native of Vermont, and was an old schoolmate. In May, 1845, they removed to their forest home on the shore of Lake Michigan, where Mr. Ames resided until his death, which occurred in 1864. During this time Mr. Ames held several offices of trust in the township of New Buffalo, and also in Chickaming after it was set off as a separate township. He died of smallpox. In an obituary notice a neighbor who knew him well, spoke

of him thus: "Mr. Ames was the pioneer of the Clay Banks, having settled here in 1844. He was an affectionate husband and kind parent, and universally esteemed as a neighbor and citizen."

## CHAPTER XXXII.

### GALLEN TOWNSHIP.\*

Location and Topography—Original Land-Entries—Early Settlements, Mills, etc.—Organization of the Township and List of Township Officers—Gallen Village—Schools—Religious Societies.

THE township is a fractional one, containing 18 full sections north of the range line, and the north half of six sections south, and bordering on Indiana. It is bounded on the north by the township of Weesaw, on the east by Bertrand, on the south by the State of Indiana, and on the west by the township of Three Oaks.

The surface is varied by undulating swells and low-browed forest-clad hills, and is in many places low and marshy. The soil is in part heavy clay and retentive, but the southern part is sandy loam. It was formerly covered with dense forests, and was known far and near as the "Gallen woods." The timber was mostly beech and maple, interspersed with black walnut, whitewood, and ash.

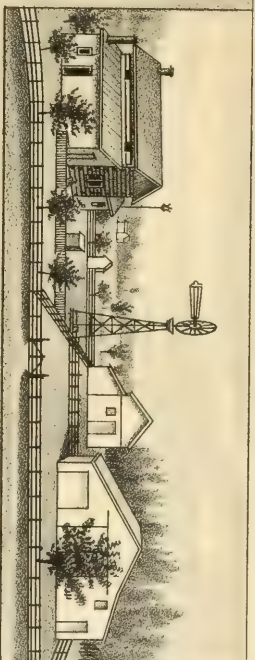
The water-courses are the streams that form the headwaters of Gallen River. Three branches take their rise to the south, west, and middle of the township, and flow in a northerly direction, two of them uniting near the north line of the township, and the third uniting with the others in the south part of Weesaw. The headwaters of another branch rise in the east part of the township and in Bertrand, and join the main stream in Weesaw.

The following list is of original purchasers of land on the several sections of Gallen township:

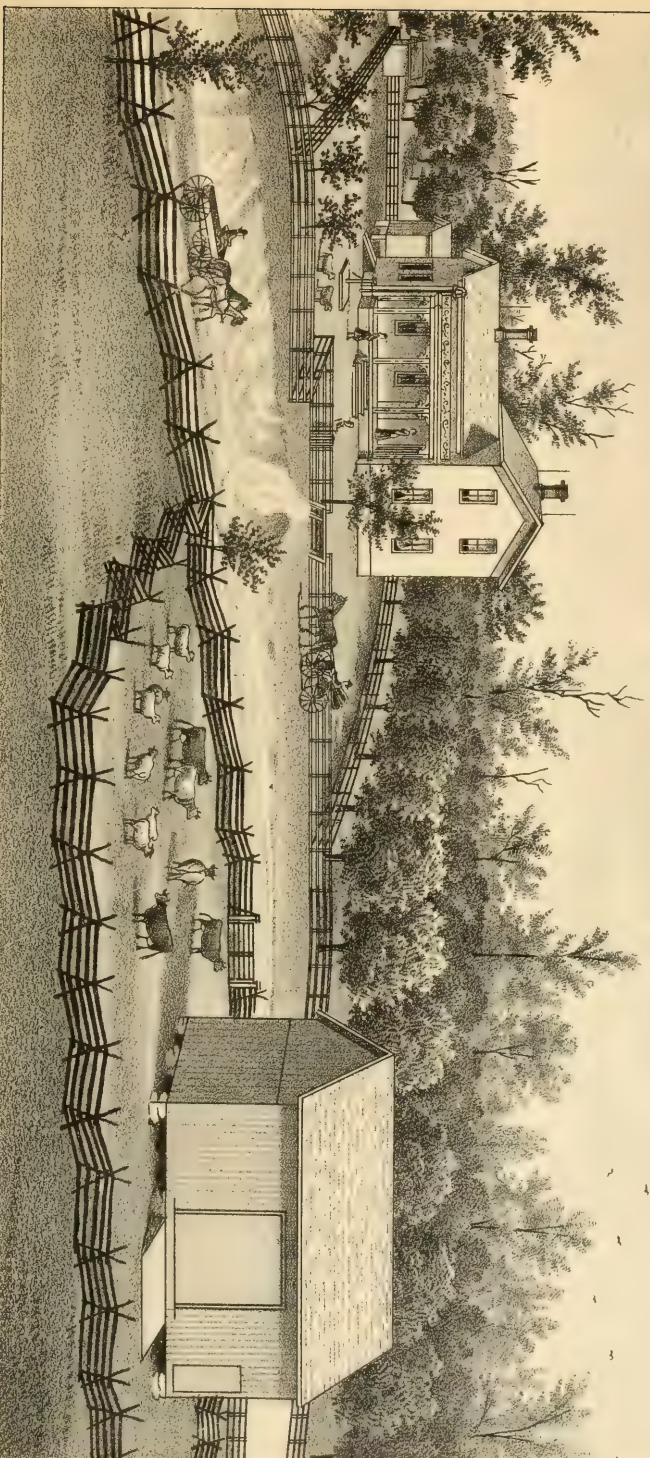
- Section 1.—J. Coleman, — McMichael, S. Potter, — Talman, N. Wilson, N. and J. H. Wilson, A. Heald.
- Section 2.—C. B. Tuley, — Bulls, J. M. Harder, S. Garwood, B. Redding.
- Section 3.—James Rutter, D. H. Warren, R. Huston, S. Austin, S. Jones.
- Section 4.—Gilbert B. Avery, S. Barker, D. and J. Petrie.
- Section 5.—Dennis Fee, Edwin Ives, T. Roosevelt, F. Hutchinson, J. Gerrish, State.
- Section 6.—E. A. Elliott, Thomas Burch, G. B. Avery, Abiel G. Plummer, State.
- Section 7.—State, J. Smith, A. G. Spicer.
- Section 8.—Richard Spanzenbury, Thomas Burch, Joseph A. Pratt, E. Cazone.
- Section 9.—Thomas Burch, Richard Cranmore, J. Ward, W. and A. Miller.
- Section 10.—R. Cranmore, D. Andrew, W. Livingston.
- Section 11.—J. Platt, E. Luther, D. Andrew, S. Garwood, M. S. Gaskell, S. Garwood.
- Section 12.—Baldwin Jenkins, S. Garwood, — Briant, B. Redding.
- Section 13.—John Dearmond, J. Edson, J. Needham, C. Doolittle, — Wilson, J. Egbert, A. Briant, J. Mandeville.
- Section 14.—A. Briant, W. Bendin, L. Briant, D. Andrew, B. Redding.
- Section 15.— — Freeman, D. Livingston, D. Andrew, N. Huston, G. Birdsall, H. Salladay, J. Ryan.
- Section 16.—School land.
- Section 17.—J. D. Leffingwell, L. Rush, J. Davis, Ralph Hunt.

\* By A. N. Hungerford.





TENANT FARM.



RESIDENCE OF THE LATE HENRY RENBARGER, PRESENT RES. OF DAVID CUTHBERT, GALLEN TP. BERRIEN CO., MICH.





Section 18.—R. R. Carlisle, J. J. Dutton, J. P. Johnson, — Asher, J. Lewis, T. Burch.

Section 19.—J. W. Lykins, J. Lewis, J. Curry, William Ward.

Section 20.—J. Curry, — Wilkinson, J. Unrugh, J. Huston, William Ward.

Section 21.—J. Unrugh, J. Unrugh, Jr., J. Huston, D. Andrews, R. Husson.

Section 22.—R. Soper, R. Husson, A. W. McCollom, T. Husson.

Section 23.—John Lane, J. Egbert, R. Redding, J. H. Phillips, L. Cutler.

Section 24.—J. Egbert, Isaac Phillip, Gabriel Dollinger, and John Redding.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENT, MILLS, ETC.

The territory along the St. Joseph River was settled several years before the land back from the river was sought after. The land was heavily wooded, and many of its sections were bought for the timber by parties owning mills in other townships, and it was not purchased by actual settlers until part at least of its timber was cut off.

The earliest settlers of whom any information can be gained were Samuel Garwood, James H. Wilson, and John P. Johnson. Samuel Garwood settled on the northeast quarter of section 11 before 1836. He was the first treasurer of the township, at its organization in 1844. He afterwards removed to Iowa.

James H. Wilson was a native of Virginia, and removed with his parents to Ohio when about eight years of age. In 1836 he came to this township, and located and purchased the southwest quarter of section 1, where he still resides. In 1837 he built the first saw-mill in the township, on the small creek that runs through his farm. The dam has been washed out, leaving the frame of the mill still standing. He married, in 1838, Miss Nancy Kingery, of Buchanan. Eight of his children are now living,—six by the first wife and two by a second wife. Sylvester K., the eldest, lives at Dayton, and is proprietor of the saw-mill at that place; Elmira married William Wilson, of Modena, Ill.; Winfield S. lives at Galien; Winslow C. and Merritt live at home; Samantha married Charles H. Dean, of Detroit; Clara B. and Nancy L., the youngest, are at home. Mr. Wilson was school inspector in 1846 and 1848, and treasurer in 1860. Wm. Burns was the first supervisor of the township. He settled there before 1843, on the southwest quarter of section 11, now owned by Stephen Dennison. He was prominent in the history of the town in its early days.

Daniel Bollinger settled about the same time, where Mrs. Annie T. Ranger now lives, on the east half of section 20. He was the first town clerk. Wm. Hardy, about 1846, settled on the north half of section 14. His daughter now lives on the farm.

John P. Johnson came to the township in 1834, and purchased a part of the east half of section 19, and part of the west half of section 20, and where Zachariah Kinne now owns. He afterwards removed to Iowa. He was one of the first justices of the peace in the township, and one of the foremost men.

Obadiah Rittenhouse was a native of Pennsylvania, and settled on section 3, now owned by Solomon Rough, of Bertrand. Peter Critchett, an early settler, married his daughter.

James Edson and his family settled in 1836, on the

northwest quarter of section 13. The first election of the township was held at his house, April 1, 1844.

Alvin Emery bought the northeast quarter of section 22, on the Soper Creek, where he built a mill at an early day. He was supervisor in 1845–47, and school inspector the same years. Moses Emery, a brother, was school inspector in 1854, and justice of the peace in 1853.

Richard Huston settled on the southeast quarter of section 16, and northeast quarter of section 21. His son, Richard D., lives on the northeast quarter of section 8. Anselm Abshire was an early settler, and one of the first justices of the peace.

John Unrugh, before 1840, settled on that part of the southwest quarter of section 23 which lies in this township, and still lives there. Henry Smith, a native of Ohio, came to this township in 1845, and settled on the south half of section 10. He moved to Oregon about 1849. Perry G. Magness settled near where Zachariah Kinney lives, on section 19.

There were a few other men of families in Galien prior to 1844, and several hired men and farmers' sons who were voters. By the record of the town clerk there were cast in the township, in 1844, 30 votes; in 1845, 24 votes; and in 1846, 33 votes.

The following persons came into the township during the year 1846, and soon after: Peter Critchett, a native of Pennsylvania, settled on the southeast quarter of section 4, after renting a year or two. He lived on this farm until 1878, and is now living in the village. Asher A., Noah, David, and Allison G. Spicer, brothers, emigrated from Ohio about 1847. Asher located on the southeast quarter of section 10 and southwest quarter of section 11; A. G. Spicer, on the northwest quarter of section 7, where Wm. Thompson now lives. Samuel Collins settled on the northwest quarter of section 17. Daniel Conant settled on a farm on the northwest quarter of section 10. He has a son living in Weesaw.

George Partridge, a native of New Hampshire, emigrated, with his wife and family, in 1849, and located on the southwest quarter of section 11. He now lives in Galien village.

William Valentine, from New York, settled in the southwest corner of the township about 1847, and built a mill there. About 1850, Samuel Scleigh emigrated from Pennsylvania, with his family, and located on the northwest quarter of section 16, where he built a mill, now known as the Penyard Mill. He was town clerk for many years.

In 1859 the grand jurors for this township were David Miller and John P. Johnson. The petit jurors at the same time were Edson and Ashbury Baltimore. Settlements in the township were few prior to 1844. The population in 1845 was 141; in 1854, 404; in 1860, 528; in 1870, 856.

The first steam saw-mill was erected at what is now the village of Galien, about 1851, by Clapp & Cheney. It was afterwards sold to C. H. Goodwin and to John L. Reed, and, in 1853, to George A. Blakeslee.

Mr. Blakeslee is a native of Jefferson Co., N. Y. In 1851 he came through this region of country on a prospecting tour, and again in 1853, not intending to remain; but

at that time he purchased the east half of section 3, where the village of Galien now stands. At that time the saw-mill and one log cabin constituted all there was on the property. The mill had an engine of 30 horse-power, and a capacity of cutting 5000 feet of lumber per day. In 1854 he built a store. When the post-office was established he was appointed postmaster, and has remained in that position to the present time. Mr. Blakeslee has a farm of over 200 acres on his homestead in Galien. He conducts the mercantile business, and buys the grain that comes to that market, and operates the large saw-mill and factory. The village plat was laid out by him in 1861. A large hall over the store is free for all religious services and other exercises of a public nature. He also owns a farm of 400 acres in section 28, in Weesaw. He is one of the foremost men in the society of "Latter-Day Saints" of the State and country.

Richard W. Montross came to Galien, and commenced manufacturing handles on a limited scale, and from this small beginning has built probably the largest business of the kind in this section of country. He is an active, energetic, upright man, fair and honest in his dealings, and liberal to all charitable purposes, and is a valuable man in the township.

*Steam Saw-Mill and Handle-Factory.*—In 1853, Geo. A. Blakeslee purchased the mill property of John L. Reed, and soon enlarged its capacity. In 1868 it was destroyed by fire, and was rebuilt in seventy days. It now has a capacity of cutting 25,000 feet of lumber per day, with an engine of 100 horse-power, and employs an average of 25 men. It manufactures lumber, planed and matched, and turns out 1,500,000 broom-handles annually. Shipments are made to all parts of the country, but mostly to St. Louis, Philadelphia, Boston, New York, and Schenectady.

*The Wolverine Handle-Factory.*—The business now carried on under the above name was first started by Smith & Montross, in the mill of Mr. Geo. Blakeslee, from whom space and power were rented. Upon the destruction of that building by fire, in 1868, the business having become successful, Mr. Richard W. Montross decided to build a factory for himself, which he did on the present location. Additions were made from time to time to meet the trade, and now he has every facility for manufacturing and storing equal to almost any demand. Sales are made in all parts of the United States and in Europe and Australia, to the latter of which shipments are made monthly. He has a working capital of \$50,000, and employs about 40 men and boys. Every kind of handle known to the trade is manufactured, and the shipments reach millions annually. Mr. Montross has a branch establishment at Paw Paw.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The territory now forming Galien was in 1836 attached to Bertrand, upon the organization of that township, and in 1837 it was transferred to Weesaw, to which township it belonged until the organizing act for its erection was approved, Feb. 29, 1844, providing "That township 8 south, of range 9 west, in the County of Berrien, be, and the same is hereby, set off and organized into a separate township by the name of Galien, and the first township-meeting shall

be held at the house of James Edson, in said township." In accordance with the provisions of the above act, the first township-meeting was held at the place mentioned in the spring of 1844, at which election 31 votes were cast and the following officers were elected: William Burns, Supervisor; Daniel Bellinger, Town Clerk; Samuel Garwood, Treasurer; William H. Willson, William Burns, John P. Johnson, and A. Abshire, Justices; Wm. Burns and Hiram S. Copley, School Inspectors. \$25 was voted at this meeting for the support of schools. The expenses of the township, as shown by the records for 1847, were \$75.25. For 1848 they were \$40.

At a town-meeting in April, 1846, it was voted, "That \$22 of wild-cat money be sold to the highest bidder" [and which brought 50 cents], "the same to be applied to purchase a book for the use of the town treasurer."

The supervisors, clerks, treasurers, and justices of the peace of the township of Galien, from its organization to the present time, have been as follows:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1844, William Burns; 1845, Alvin Emory; 1846, Wm. Burns; 1847, Alvin Emory; 1848, John P. Johnson; 1849, Henry Smith; 1850-52, John P. Johnson; 1853-55, Perry Noggle; 1856, Wm. Valentine; 1857-58, D. D. Hinman; 1859-60, Perry Noggle; 1861, Geo. Partridge; 1862-63, Perry Noggle; 1864, Geo. Partridge; 1865, Wm. K. White; 1866, Geo. Partridge; 1867, Albert Clark; 1868, Wm. K. White; 1869-70, Geo. Partridge; 1871-75, Stephen A. Dennison; 1876, Geo. Partridge; 1877, Perry Noggle; 1878-79, Benton R. Stearns.

#### TOWN CLERKS.

1844-45, Daniel Bellinger; 1846, Hiram D. Copley; 1847-48, Daniel Bellinger; 1849-50, Samuel Seleigh; 1851, D. D. Hinman; 1852, Samuel Seleigh; 1853, S. H. Burns; 1854-55, P. G. Winchell; 1856-57, Freeman Yaw; 1860-64, David D. Hinman; 1865, Henry M. Blair; 1866, Freeman Yaw; 1867-72, D. D. Hinman; 1873-75, Alex. Emory; 1876-78, Ebenezer Harris; 1879, Timothy Smith.

#### TREASURERS.

1844-45, Samuel Garwood; 1846-47, Asher A. Spicer; 1848, Daniel Bellinger; 1849-50, Asher A. Spicer; 1851, C. Borders; 1852-53, Jacob Jackson; 1854, Peter Critchett; 1855-59, Jacob Jackson; 1860-66, James H. Wilson; 1868-70, Freeman Yaw; 1871-73, Ebenezer Harris; 1874-77, Benton R. Stearns; 1878-79, Wm. W. Fry.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1844, John P. Johnson, William Burns, James H. Wilson; 1845, James H. Wilson; 1846, Wm. Burns, Samuel Collins; 1847, Daniel Bellinger; 1848, James H. Wilson; 1849, John Johnson, Freeburg G. White; 1850, Samuel Seleigh; 1851, T. G. Bobo, B. Lybrook, F. G. White; 1852, S. Seleigh, Jacob Jackson; 1853, S. H. Burns, Moses Emory, J. G. Winchell; 1854, E. Colby; 1855, G. L. Green; 1856, S. Collins, Jonathan Wills, D. D. Hinman; 1857, D. D. Hinman, E. J. White, Geo. Partridge, Geo. Blakeslee; 1858, Reuben H. Rice, Geo. A. Blakeslee, E. J. White, J. A. Cutshan; 1859, Ira Cowell, Isaac Batten; 1860, William Jewel; 1861, Henry Yaw, John A. Barber; 1862, Peter Critchett, John Shuley; 1863, Peter E. Swan, Wm. J. Closson; 1864, John Shuley, James M. Patterson; 1865, Wm. K. White, Peter Critchett, David Owen; 1866, G. A. Blakeslee, Zachariah Kinne, Albert Clark; 1867, D. D. Hinman; 1868, Peter Critchett, J. B. Dowling; 1869, Zachariah Kinne, Winslow C. Wilson, Alex. Emory; 1870, David Dingman, G. A. Blakeslee, Wm. F. Swen; 1871, Wm. K. White; 1872, Geo. A. Blakeslee, J. B. Dowling; 1873, Z. Kinne, Wm. W. Davis, Peter Ash; 1874, Peter Ash, Alex. Emory; 1876, Porter Churchill; 1877, John Shuley; 1878, Chas. A. Witter; 1879, Alexander Emory.





MR. CYRUS THURSTON.



MRS. C. THURSTON.



RES. OF CYRUS THURSTON, GALLIN, BERRIEN CO., MICH. 1879.



## GALIEN VILLAGE.

The village of Galien was laid out in 1861, by George A. Blakeslee, who located there in 1853, and owned the land on which the village stands. It now contains a population of about 500 inhabitants, with 90 dwellings, three dry-goods and grocery-stores, two drug-stores, and one hardware-store, two saloons, two handle-factories and saw-mills, one stove-factory, three blacksmith-shops, one wagon-shop, one shoe-shop, one church (German Lutheran), and three other church organizations (Methodist, Latter-Day Saints, and Disciples), two hotels, post-office, school-house, and one grist-mill.

*Incorporation of the Village.*—An act incorporating the village of Galien, to embrace section 3 and the northwest quarter of section 10, was approved March 4, 1879. An election was held on the second Monday in March, 1879, at Hoskins' Hotel, and the following officers were elected: George A. Blakeslee, President; Richard Montross, Charles A. Witte, Peter Critchett, Edwin J. Fairfield, Bowles C. Smith, Ebenezer Harris, Trustees; Alexander Emery, Clerk; Timothy Smith, Treasurer; John Carl, Street Commissioner; George Partridge, Assessor.

## AVERY'S STATION.

This place is on the west line of the township, and is a station on the Michigan Central Railroad. It lies mostly in Three Oaks, and is hardly of sufficient importance to be called a village.

## SCHOOLS.

The first action of the township in reference to schools was at the first election (held April 1, 1844), at which time \$25 was voted for use of primary schools. The township had been divided into districts while included in the territory of Weesaw. The board of school inspectors met Dec. 12, 1845, and granted certificates to David B. Copley and Martha Fleming. At a meeting held Dec. 13, 1847, school district No. 2 was reformed, to comprise sections 3, 4, 9, 10, 15, 16, 21, and 22. Dec. 6, 1847, Sally Bauman received certificate to teach in district No. 2. At the regular town-meeting in April, 1848, it was voted to raise 50 cents to each scholar over four years and under eighteen years. April 29, 1848, Elizabeth Seleigh received a certificate as teacher.

The return of scholars and school-money for the year 1848 was

	Scholars.	Primary Money.
District No. 1.....	59	\$15.63
" " 2.....	49	12.98
" " 3.....	26	6.89
Totals.....	134	\$35.50

The reports for the years 1849, 1856, 1860, and 1879 showed as follows:

	Scholars.	Primary Money.
District No. 1.....	23	\$7.82
" " 2.....	32	10.88
" " 3.....	44	14.96
Totals.....	99 at 34 cents each	\$33.66

	1856.	Primary Money.
Scholars.		
District No. 1.....	48	\$25.68
" " 1.....	voted to build house	180.00
" " 2.....	77	41.19
" " 2.....	voted in money	57.75
" " 3.....	36	19.26

	1860.	Primary Money.	Library Money.
No. of District.			
1.....	46	\$21.16	\$14.21
2.....	35	16.10	10.81
3.....	26	11.96	8.03
4.....	...	...	...
5.....	52	23.92	16.05
6.....	19	8.74	5.87
7.....	25	11.50	7.72
Totals.....	203	\$93.38	\$62.69

	1879.	Primary Money.	Library Money.	Total.
Amount of primary money.....				\$211.68
" " library.....				1.90
No. of District.	Scholars.	Primary.	Library.	Total.
1.....	41	\$19.68	\$0.18	\$19.86
2.....	57	27.36	.24	27.60
3.....	63	30.24	.27	30.51
5.....	185	88.80	.80	89.60
7.....	54	25.92	.23	26.15
8.....	41	19.68	.18	19.86
Totals.....	441	\$211.68	\$1.90	\$213.58

## VALUE OF SCHOOL-SITES AND HOUSES.

District No. 1, frame.....	\$300
" " 2, ".....	600
" " 3, ".....	350
" " 5, brick.....	5500
" " 7, frame.....	400
" " 8, ".....	600

The brick school-house in the village was built in 1877-78, the village being bonded for that purpose. The bonded indebtedness at this time is \$1693.33.

The following-named persons have filled the office of school inspector in Galien township from its organization to the present time:

1844, William Burns, Hiram H. Copley; 1845, Alvin Emery, Auselm Abshire; 1846, James H. Wilson, Hiram H. Copley; 1847, Alvin Emery; 1848, James H. Wilson, John P. Johnson; 1849, John P. Johnson, Henry Smith; 1850, Samuel Reynolds; 1851, Christopher Borden; 1852, John P. Johnson; 1853, William H. Johnson, D. D. Hinman; 1854, E. Colby, B. Lybrook; 1855, M. Emory; 1856, E. Colby, C. Thurston; 1857, D. D. Hinman; 1858, William Valentine; 1859, John Valentine, Isaac Wombold; 1860, Reuben H. Rice, Henry Yaw; 1861, Henry M. Blair; 1862, Cyrus Thurston; 1863, Julius W. Marsh; 1864, Henry Yaw, Ellis E. Taylor; 1865, Perry Noggle; 1866-67, J. B. Dowling; 1868, Ransom P. Goit, George W. Lee; 1869, J. B. Dowling; 1870-71, Alexander Emory; 1872, J. B. Dowling; 1873, Alexander Emory; 1874, J. B. Dowling, Cyrus Thurston; 1875, J. B. Dowling; 1876, G. A. Blakeslee; 1877, J. B. Dowling; 1878, Charles Valentine; 1879, J. B. Dowling.

The office of superintendent of schools has been filled by the following-named persons:

1875-76, Timothy Smith; 1877, Cyrus Thurston; 1878, Bolls C. Smith; 1879, Cyrus Thurston.

The Galien Board of Education for 1879 is composed of D. C. Smith, M.D., Theron Chilson, D. W. Severn, Alexander Emory, and B. R. Stearns.

## RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*The German Lutheran Church* was organized Nov. 25, 1866, with 12 members, at the school-house in the village of Galien. The Rev. William Braunwarth was the first



pastor. He was succeeded by the Revs. A. Lehmann, E. Kling, Frederick Walter, John Nollau, Julius Schumm, and A. Debus, who is the present pastor. The church was erected about 1869. The present membership is 16. The church at Three Oaks is under the same charge with this.

*Latter-Day Saints.*—The denomination to which this society belongs number in the United States between 100,000 and 200,000 members. They are followers of Joseph Smith, but do not accept the beliefs of Brigham Young, and claim that he is an apostate from original Mormonism. Polygamy is no part of their creed, and they have no connection with the Utah Mormons. The title is the "Reorganized Church of Christ of Latter-Day Saints, with Joseph Smith, the son of the martyr, at its head." They were the first to send missionaries to Utah. The organization in the village and town of Galien was founded with 70 members, and now has about 40. It belongs to the Michigan district, in which there are five pastors. The Rev. William Kelly has charge of this church. Meetings are held in Blakeslee Hall.

A *Methodist Class* was organized at the village in 1871, with 12 members. They number at present 4. Meetings are held in Blakeslee Hall.

The *Church of the Disciples* was organized at Galien Centre in the spring of 1859, with about 30 members, by the Rev. William Roe, and has been held mostly in the same charge with the church of Buchanan. The organization was divided in April, 1879, a part remaining at the Centre, and part worship at the village of Galien. Both organizations number about 40 members. A church was built at Galien Centre, on the southwest corner of section 10, about 1869, and services are now held there once in two weeks by the Rev. Mr. Cowles. Services are held in Galien village, in the hall at Haskins' Hotel.

*United Brethren.*—An organization of the above denomination was perfected about twenty years ago, but has not been kept in very good condition. It is now assuming new life and bids fair to be a prosperous organization. Services are held in the school-house about one mile south of Galien Centre.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### DAVID A. CUTHBERT.

This gentleman was born Aug. 16, 1819, in Yorkshire, England. At the age of eleven years his father hired him out to work on a farm for twelve months. He continued laboring as a farm-hand until he was twenty-seven years old, when he married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Arlington. Two children were born of this union, viz., David T., born June 15, 1847, and John A., born July 10, 1850. In 1853, Mr. Cuthbert decided to try his fortunes in America. His first stopping-place after arriving in this country was Rochester, N. Y., where, with his family and without means to go any farther, he was obliged to stay. But, used to labor, he soon obtained work, and as soon as he succeeded in getting money enough to get

away, moved to Michigan, rented land in Cass and Berrien Counties until 1865, when he found himself possessed of means enough to purchase a home of his own, and bought at one time 40 and at another 80 acres. Oct. 2, 1875, he had the misfortune to lose his wife. Being somewhat discouraged and unsettled at this affliction, he resolved to visit his native land; but upon again looking on those old familiar haunts of his boyhood all seemed changed. As he expresses it, "Everything looked so narrow that it did not seem like home." Returning to Michigan in 1877, in October, 1878, he married, for his second wife, Mrs. Louisa J., widow of Henry Renbarger.

He has been in politics a Democrat, but declares himself untrammelled, and intends now to cast his vote for the candidate whom he considers best fitted for the office to be filled, regardless of party.

In religion he has been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church since 1849. His first wife was also a member of the same church.

### HENRY RENBARGER

was a native of Indiana, born Feb. 25, 1830. His boyhood was passed on a farm, rendering his father such assistance as farmers' boys in those days usually were called upon to give. Soon after reaching his majority, and upon the 7th day of September, 1851, he was united in marriage with Miss Louisa J., daughter of John and Martha Martin. The following year he came to Michigan, renting land until 1855, then located on the farm where the family now reside, purchasing 160 acres, to which he afterwards added 36 acres.

Mr. and Mrs. Renbarger were the parents of eight children, viz., Winfield S., born June 18, 1852; James A., March 9, 1854; Martha A., Oct. 12, 1856; George W., Feb. 4, 1859; Elsie M., Sept. 23, 1861; Nancy E., April 22, 1864, died May 19, 1864; Elmira L., born May 25, 1865; and John H., born May 28, 1868.

Politically, Mr. Renbarger acted with the Democratic party. In religion he was what is termed a liberal, never belonging to any church organization, but left behind him a name honored and unsullied, respected by all who knew him, and a memory ever green in the minds of his friends and family. His death occurred upon the 20th day of September, 1876.

### MRS. MARY WITTER,

formerly Mrs. Huston, was born in Ohio, Feb. 10, 1804. Her father, Jesse Frame, was a native of Virginia, removing to Ohio in 1803. Her mother's maiden name was Nancy Abshir, who was also a native of Virginia, and married Mr. Jesse Frame about 1779. Mrs. Witter was the third child in a family of twelve children, and was married to Mr. William Huston, Dec. 20, 1827, in Ohio, removing to Michigan in 1840, and settling where Mrs. Witter now lives. Mr. Huston died March 11, 1845, leaving six children to be provided for. Mrs. Huston succeeded by industry and perseverance in keeping the

family together until all had reached maturity. In 1852 she was married, the second time, to Samuel Reynolds, who died in February, 1857, there being only two weeks difference in the time of his death and that of her son, Jesse Huston, a promising boy of seventeen years. In 1859 she was the third time married, this time to Mr. John Witter,

educational advantages and having seen but little of society, yet it will afford any one pleasure to visit her. She is ever ready to lend a helping hand to those around her needing assistance, and has always found enough of this to do; neighbors and friends calling upon her in sickness or when needing assistance, and always receiving it. Many



MRS. MARY WITTER.

and removed to Portage Prairie, where she remained nine years, or until the death of Mr. Witter. She then returned to her old home in Galien township, making her home with her daughter, Mrs. Weldon, who died in 1877, leaving her children to be cared for by her mother.

Mrs. Witter is a remarkable woman; having had no early

weaker minds would have been crushed by the sorrow that has overtaken her during her lifetime, having been called to mourn the loss of so many of her family,—four of her children have passed on before; but ever remembering that these dark clouds overshadowing her have silver linings, she goes on cheerfully fulfilling her mission.

#### CYRUS THURSTON

is a native of Pennsylvania, though his father and mother were both natives of New York. He was born Aug. 14, 1825, and was one of a family of five children,—four boys and one girl. One of the brothers died when grown, and the sister died when quite young.

Cyrus was raised on a farm, remaining at home assisting his father about the farm until he was twenty-two years of age. June 8, 1848, he married Miss Hannah B., daughter of Jonathan and Ann Woolverton. Of this union have been born nine children, of whom five are living. Mrs. Thurston's mother was a relative of Col. Daniel Boone. Cyrus came to Michigan in the fall of 1853, renting land and farming until 1855, when he made his first purchase of eighty acres, on section 8 of this township. In 1846 he bought the present homestead of sixty acres, to which he has since added thirty acres, making a fine farm of ninety acres. His advantages for an early education were limited, but,

being anxious to secure a good education, he attended a high school two terms just before his marriage and the Michigan State Normal School one term after his marriage. This, with his reading and constant study outside of school, fitted him for teaching, and he then entered that profession, farming during the summer and teaching in the winter. He has taught in every district in his township except one; also has taught in Ohio and Indiana, and has filled the position of superintendent of schools.

In politics he has always been a Democrat, and is now identified with those advocating hard money. In religion he is connected with that denomination known as the Latter-Day Saints.

Mr. Thurston has ever been an industrious and ambitious man, and by these good qualities has secured for himself and family a comfortable home. These facts must make memory a pleasure, and give zest to the enjoyments of this life.

## FRANK JERUE.

The subject of this sketch was born in 1844, in Canada. Came to Berrien County in 1855. When he was about eighteen years old the war of the Rebellion broke out, and, loyal to his country, he responded to the call to arms, enlisting in the 25th Michigan Infantry, July, 1862. He served as a private until he was discharged, July, 1865. He was wounded at Atlanta, Ga., July 28, 1864, and was then absent from his regiment five months, the only time he was absent during his term of service.

Mr. Jerue made his first purchase of land in 1868, of forty acres, to which he has since added thirty acres, making a farm of seventy acres, which, though small, is an excellent and profitable one. His father and friends are all Democrats, but he has always been a firm supporter of the Republican party. Is a member of the United Brethren Church, he and his wife having united with it only a short time ago. They had previously been members of the Methodist Church. Mr. F. Jerue married Miss Clara, daughter of George and Jane Parish, who were married in 1836 and reside in this county. They have had six children; two only are living, viz., Frank A. and Clyde S.

The father and mother of Mr. Jerue were married in 1843, in Canada, and Mr. Jerue was the oldest of their eight children,—four boys and four girls. His father is now a resident of this county.

## R. B. HUSTON

was born in Indiana, Nov. 15, 1829, and was the eldest son of Wm. Huston, a native of Ohio, but who removed to Michigan in 1835, being one of the first settlers in Galien township. His death occurred March 22, 1844, leaving behind a widow and five children, the widow still living. After the death of his father, R. B. Huston remained at home with his mother, assisting her in the management of the farm and care of the family until he was twenty-six years of age. May 4, 1856, he married Miss Martha A., daughter of Henry and Nancy Waterhouse. Ten children have been added to their family circle and two taken away again. Names and ages as follows: Rhoda L., born Oct. 18, 1858. Loretta A., born Sept. 13, 1860; died Dec. 26, 1878. George E., born March 7, 1862. Mary, born Aug. 11, 1864. Nancy, born April 12, 1866. John W., born May 30, 1869. Sylvia A., born Feb. 7, 1871; died Aug. 2, 1872. Minerva M., born Feb. 11, 1874. Wm. J., born Jan. 10, 1876. Grace M., born May 5, 1877. After his marriage he remained at the old homestead for two years, then moved to his present home, a farm of one hundred and twenty acres; he also owns another farm of eighty acres one mile west of his residence. In the early settlement of the county the opportunities for securing an education were very limited; he attended a few terms of the district school, where he received his only education.

Mrs. Huston's father and mother were natives of Vermont, where she was born March 25, 1839; was the youngest of six children. Her parents removed to Ohio when she was four years old, and from there to Galien, Mich., when she was thirteen years old, where she has since resided.

In 1852, Mr. Huston and a brother of Mrs. Huston owned and ran the first grain separator ever used in Galien township. Also owned the first reaper and put up the first windmill. He has been engaged for several years in thrashing. At this time he is owning and running a steam thrasher.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

## HAGAR TOWNSHIP.\*

Description of Location, Soil, and Surface—Settlements, Mills, and Early Roads—Township Organization and Civil List—Religious Organizations—Schools.

HAGAR lies upon the eastern shore of Lake Michigan, and occupies as well the extreme northwestern corner of Berrien County. It is numbered town 3 south, in range 18 west, contains less than 19 sections, and is bounded on the north by the Van Buren County line, on the south by Benton township, on the east by Watervliet, and on the west by Lake Michigan. It is well watered by numerous streams, of which the largest is the Paw Paw River, flowing across the southeastern portion of the township.

Like other Berrien County townships, Hagar was at one time a rich fruit-growing region, but latterly has lost much of its importance in that direction by the general prevalence of disease in the peach orchards. Apples and other fruits are grown to a considerable extent, and among Hagar's agriculturists might be named a score or more who are heavy fruit-growers. Although much attention is given to fruit, general farming is by no means neglected. The Chicago and West Michigan Railroad, passing through the township, with stations at Hagar and Riverside, furnishes convenient and quick access to markets for the products of the soil.

Each of the stations named has a post-office. Neither rises to the dignity of a village, although the latter contains a store. The need of villages or stores in the township is, after all, scarcely apparent, as Benton Harbor and St. Joseph naturally attract the business of the adjacent country, and may be reached in an hour from any part of Hagar.

In the northern part of the township, near the lake-shore, there is much timbered land which is being industriously cleared by lumbering firms, one of which employs 80 men. The assessed valuation of this township is but \$95,385, the least of any of the townships of Berrien. The presence of considerable tracts of unimproved land—indeed fully one-half if not more of the territory in Hagar is timbered—gives reason for this, but according to the way in which the country is being cleared, the assessed valuation will show a material increase within five years.

Hagar is well supplied with schools, but has no church edifice within its limits, although two church organizations maintain public worship in school-houses. The township has neither grist-mill nor saw-mill, and has had but one of the latter, long since, however, in disuse.

That portion of St. Joseph township now known as Hagar failed to invite the attention of pioneers until after 1840, and even then only to a very moderate degree. The first white man to locate upon that territory as a settler was

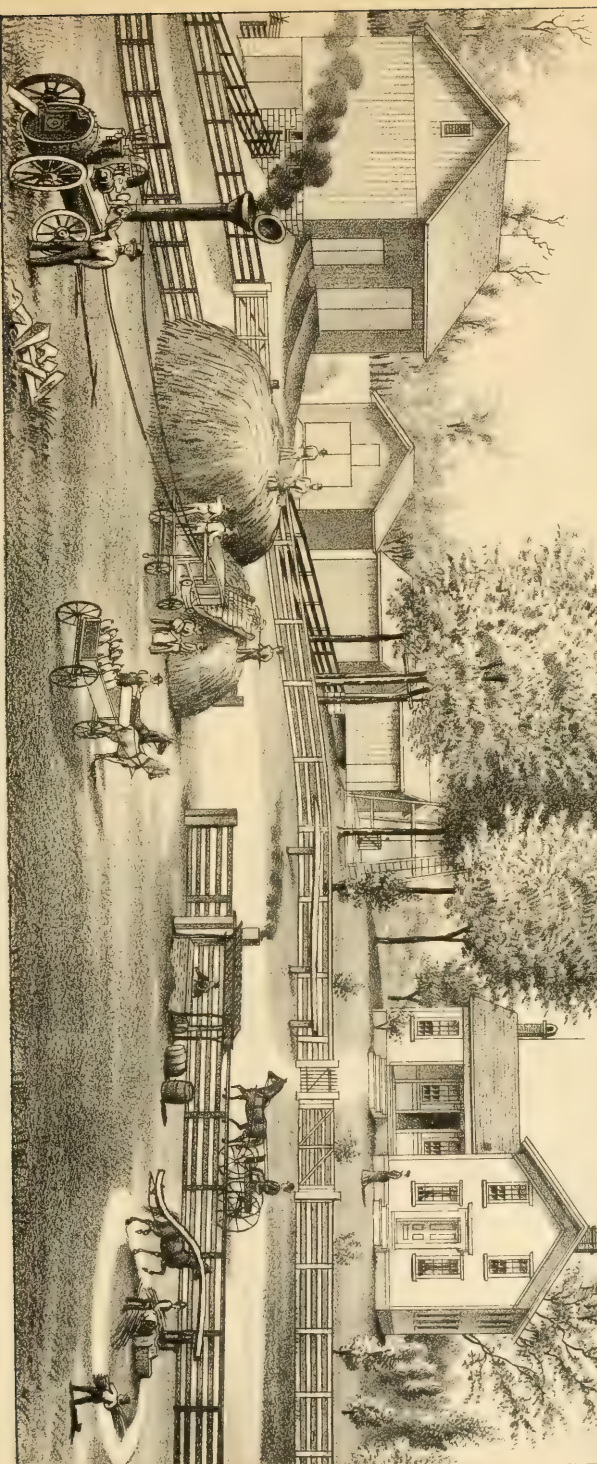
\* By David Schwartz.



MR. R. B. HUSTON.



MRS. R. B. HUSTON.



RESIDENCE OF R. B. HUSTON, GALIENTA, BERRIEN CO., MICH.



Henry Hawley, a Canadian, who entered 160 acres on section 23, where Oscar Damon now lives. He conveyed his family to the place in the spring of 1839, and worked for a while in the midst of an uninhabited region, as if he really intended to make a permanent home in the wilderness, but his courage failed before the loneliness of his situation and the rather gloomy prospect before him. Settlers from St. Joseph had given him a helping hand at the outset, and gathered in force to put up a log cabin for him. He started cheerfully upon the task of clearing his land, and made up his mind to fight his way stubbornly against the disadvantages of a life in an unbroken country, but he grew tired of the business before he had cleared an acre of land, and, packing up his goods, took them and his family off to Indiana, where he lived until his death.

In the summer of 1839, Charles Lamb, a Vermonter, came West with a young wife, and, tarrying a short time in St. Joseph (working meanwhile on the docks), moved with his wife and infant child upon what is now known as the Bundy Place, in Hagar, the northeast quarter of section 23. As there was no road to his new farm, he made the journey up the Paw Paw River in a canoe. The road from Hagar to Benton Harbor, Mr. Lamb helped to lay out some time after he became a settler, and that was the first road laid out in the township. Hawley was gone when Lamb moved in, and the latter's family was therefore the only one at that time in the territory now covered by Hagar. Mr. Lamb may therefore be called Hagar's first permanent settler.

From Jan. 1, 1841, to July 4, 1842, Mr. Lamb kept a daily journal, and endeavored to note therein the progress of events in his new settlement. That journal, now in the possession of his daughter, Mrs. Anderson, of Hagar, is an interesting record, apart from its value as a memorial, and from its pages have been copied a few extracts, as follows:

"Jan. 3, 1841, Sunday.—Had a great time comparing my present circumstances with those a year ago. Then alone here in the woods, with great horrors of mind from various causes; pecuniary circumstances the great disadvantage; no team, cattle to winter, and doubts of my success in getting a living here; no speedy prospects of a settlement so as to have neighbors. Within the past year four families have settled,—Pannel, McCrea, Bundy, and Farnum. Prospects look better; doubts gone.

"Sunday, January 10th.—Tried to keep the Sabbath. Worked four and a half days for Johnson. Received for pay chain, hoe, and gun.

"Sunday, January 17th.—Chopped some; sick some; snowed some.

"April.—Went to town on a raft.

"May 30th.—Helped Bundy make his brush fence two and a half days. He helped me hoe corn one a half days.

"June 20th.—William Allen came; glad to see a Vermonter.

"Sunday, July 4th.—National anniversary independence; great thing to be truly independent; hope to be in part; gaining slowly; some different from two years ago; came from St. Jo with my axe, felled one tree; not a person here; now several.

"July 25th.—Pannel moved from the settlement.

"August 15th.—Had the dumps.

"August 20th.—Mrs. Bundy died; for the first time the neighborhood came together to bury one of them.

"September 24th.—Snowed all night and day; two and a half feet deep.

"September 31st.—Snow all gone.

"November 15th and 16th.—Made boots.

"Jan. 1, 1842.—The old year has gone, and my prospects and circumstances are a little better than a year ago; shall try it another year; the settlement is progressing; Pannel's family gone; Oliver Sorrell's come; prospects of more; one has died.

"February 13th.—Daniel Brant and family came into the neighborhood.

"July 4th.—Hoeed corn all day; not quite independent yet, but, to look it all over, think I am a little more so than I was a year ago; have some doubts whether there can be such a thing as perfect independence."

A few years after his settlement (in 1845) Mr. Lamb moved across the Paw Paw River to where John Brown now lives, and resided there until his death, in 1846. Two of his daughters—Mrs. Roome and Mrs. Anderson—reside in Hagar. Mrs. Anderson is now the oldest settler in Hagar, although she was but a babe when she became one of its population.

The second permanent settler in Hagar was Mathias Farnum, who made his first Michigan settlement in St. Joseph, in 1836, and there he was one of the first to work upon the docks constructed there. In the winter of 1839 he entered 160 acres of land, on what is now section 13 of Hagar. Mr. Farnum, with other residents of St. Joseph, had gone out into the woods and assisted in building cabins for Hawley and Lamb, in Hagar, and when Farnum decided to become a settler there also, his St. Joseph neighbors assisted him in putting up his log cabin. In December, 1839, Mr. Farnum moved upon his new place, with his wife and child, and no doubt his coming rejoiced the heart of Lamb, who from that time forward emerged from his loneliness into the cheerful conviction that he had a neighbor, although that neighbor was more than a mile distant. Mr. Farnum lived in Hagar until 1860, when he removed to Watervliet, thence to Iowa, and later to the village of Benton Harbor, where he has resided since 1864.

The settler who followed Farnum into Hagar was Nathaniel Bundy, who in 1840 started from Huron Co., Ohio, with his wife and four children, for Michigan. He halted at St. Joseph, and after working about the neighborhood a year, bought 160 acres, on section 14, in Hagar, of Robert Hollywood. Leaving his family at St. Joseph, he went into the woods with his axe and put up a log cabin, which being done, he moved his family into it, and in the spring of 1841 the new settlement included three families, and Chas. Lamb boasted two neighbors. Mr. Bundy lived on his place until his death, in 1872. James Bundy, Nathaniel Bundy's son, is the only child of the latter now living in the township.

William McCrea was Hagar's fourth settler. He migrated from Canada to St. Joseph, Mich., about 1838, lived there until 1841, married a daughter of George Mills (a settler in St. Joseph in 1838), and moved then to Hagar, where he had entered 120 acres on section 14, built a log cabin, cleared two acres, and put in a crop. McCrea's nearest neighbor was Charles Lamb, who was three-quarters of a mile away. At the time of his settlement the road from Hagar to St. Joseph had been laid out, but the track was a narrow one through the woods, and extremely rough, as well as but faintly marked, except as an extended opening in the forest. Mr. McCrea lived upon his Hagar farm until Aug. 15, 1849, when he was killed by the fall of a tree. His widow married Mr. Anthony S. Bishop, and still lives in Hagar.

Before McCrea came Francis Pannel, an Englishman, who remained but two years, when he sold out to Joseph



Stratton, and moved to Benton township, where he died. Stratton stayed in Hagar but a few years, when, with his family, he moved to California. Crawford Hazard settled in 1841, but became afterwards a resident of Bainbridge, where he died.

Lacy Brant and Daniel Brant, his brother, settled originally in Pipestone, whence they moved to Hagar, leaving there, after a short stay, for Pipestone. Oliver Sorrell was also an early settler in Hagar, but moved to Pipestone, where he now lives. Leonard Lull bought out one of the Brants, but soon sold out to Wm. Ferguson, and moved away.

The Finch family settled in Hagar in 1845. Isaac Finch, with his wife, five children, and Mrs. Kimme, his grandmother, moved from Madison Co., Ind., to Niles township, in Michigan, and after residing there until 1845, changed their residence to Hagar township, where Isaac Finch, Jr., entered 40 acres of land on section 12. The Finches stopped with Matthias Farnum until they erected a log cabin upon their place. Alexis D. Finch, another of the sons, bought at the same time 50 acres of Mr. Farnum, on section 13, and there he still resides. The elder Finch lived with his son Isaac until his death, in 1853. Of Mr. Finch's five children who came to Hagar with him, those living in Hagar are Alexis D., Sarah Finch, and Mrs. William Huyek. When Mr. Finch settled in Hagar the only families residing on the west side of the river were the Bundys, Farnums, McCreas, and Lambs. Mr. Isaac Finch's grandmother, Mrs. Kimme, reached the advanced age of ninety-two, when she died in Hagar. She was buried upon the Farnum place. Her father, who died in New York, was one hundred and fourteen years old when he died.

In 1848, William Flood, with his family and James Flood, his brother, left Ireland for America, intending to settle in the State of Wisconsin. They journeyed westward as far as Kalamazoo, Mich., where they remained two weeks, during which James and William worked on the Michigan Central Railroad. They proceeded thence to St. Joseph, where they were induced by a fellow-countryman, James Murphy, to see Col. Fitzgerald, a Michigan land-owner, and from him William bought a quarter of section 27, in Hagar. Of course the Wisconsin project was abandoned, and William, with his family and brother James, went out to Hagar. Considerable timber had been taken off the land for the docks at St. Joseph, and fortunately finding a lumberman's shanty upon the place, the Floods were enabled to proceed to housekeeping without delay. Even at that late date the country was very new, and about the only road in the vicinity of the Flood place was the St. Joseph road. James lived with his brother until 1852, when he moved upon 65 acres in section 34, that he had purchased in 1850. There he lives now. William lived on his place of first settlement until his death, in 1873, and there his widow survives him.

Philip Lynch, with his sister and Philip Farley, came from Ireland in 1848. While on the way Farley and Miss Lynch were married at Albany, N. Y., and in a short time Farley and Lynch settled in company upon section 27, in Hagar township, where Farley still lives. Lynch purchased land on section 28, and is now living upon it.

Sylvanus Cook, an early settler in Niles, moved to Wisconsin, whence, in 1849, he returned to Michigan and located in the northeast corner of Hagar township. He married a daughter of Isaac Finch, and died in Hagar in 1863.

A. S. Bishop, now living in Hagar, settled in Bainbridge with his father, in 1844, and in 1850 removed to Hagar, where he married the widow of William McCrea, one of Hagar's earliest settlers.

In June, 1848, Benjamin Harris and Uriah Harris, his father, of Morgan Co., Ohio, entered 160 acres each on section 12, in Hagar, at \$1.20 per acre, and conjointly entered 36 acres on the same section, at \$1.25. In October, 1850, Benjamin, with his family, migrated from Ohio to his Hagar farm, in company with his brother Abram, who settled upon a portion of the 160 acres entered by the elder Harris, the latter settling in Watervliet township. Both families were guests of Mathias Farnum until their own cabins could be erected. Benjamin Harris had a family of a wife and seven children, and shortly after they got into their new cabin all except Mrs. Harris and her infant babe were stricken with ague. Between taking care of her child, nursing the seven helpless ones, and attending to her household duties, the mother must have had a weary time, but she worked bravely through it all. At one time, being without flour in the house, she slipped hurriedly away, leaving the invalids to themselves, walked through the woods to Sprague Bishop's house, borrowed a sack of flour, and hurried home with it on her back, in season to cheer the suffering ones with renewed timely attentions. Physicians were scarce and hard to get, but Dr. Lindsley was persuaded to come over from Watervliet and look after the afflicted family. His bill for attendance was \$80, and Mr. Harris says that it almost staggered him when he was told how much it was, for \$80 in those days in the woods of Hagar was an immense sum of money. "However," says Mr. Harris, "I paid it after a while; but it was a tough struggle, I can tell you, to scrape that amount of money together then." Abram Harris died in Hagar in 1864. Benjamin still lives where he first settled.

The region along the lake-shore was not settled until a comparatively late date, and even now there is much wild land in the north, especially on section 11, which contains scarcely any settlements. Quite a large tract in that region is owned by lumbering firms, who are rapidly making clearings, and shipping considerable timber and cord-wood to Chicago and other lake points. On the road running from the lake-shore to Hagar Station, William Edinborough and his brother Thomas, of Benton, were among the earliest settlers, in 1852 and 1854, respectively. When they came no one was living in the vicinity and the region was a wilderness. The first road thereabouts was the road just mentioned, which the Edinboroughs themselves laid out. Following the latter, the settlers were Asabel Hayes, J. T. Wisner, and Stephen Cook, and after them settlers began to multiply quite rapidly.

The first settlement on the south side of the Paw Paw River, or, more properly speaking, in the southeastern portion of the township, was made by William Allen, who

worked for Charles Lamb a while in 1841, and removed soon to the south side of the river, upon the bank of which, not far from the present railway-bridge, he put up a shanty and kept bachelor's hall, where he was subsequently joined by Michael Smith, who, in 1838, at the age of fifteen years, left Cayuga Co., N. Y., *via* canal, and reached Buffalo, with 75 cents in his pocket. At Buffalo he shipped aboard a vessel bound for Chicago, and thence traveled to St. Joseph, Mich., where he arrived in October. He worked there until June, 1839, then engaged as a deck-hand on one of the steamers running on the St. Joseph. He lived in Indiana eighteen months, and there joined a hunting-party, which penetrated in 1840 into the territory now occupied by Hagar township. He lived in that vicinity with Gilson Osgood until 1842, when he purchased, of Smith & Merrick, 163 acres of land on section 26, in Hagar, for \$3 per acre. He made no effort, however, towards settling upon it or clearing it, but finding William Allen living on the bank of the river, took quarters with him, and there the two continued to live for eighteen months, during which time they hunted and lived a free-and-easy life, while they also made an occasional clearing on Allen's land. They also "underbrushed" a road from Allen's cabin a mile southward on the section line. That road was afterwards improved, and is the one now on the line between sections 25 and 26.

While Smith and Allen were living in their bachelors' cabin they did not suppose that there were settlers on the other side of the river, and one Sunday, hearing the barking of dogs and reports of guns from that direction, they went over, expecting to meet with a band of Indians. To their surprise, however, they found white settlers, in the families of Charles Lamb, Nathaniel Bundy, and Joseph Stratton, the latter then running the ferry at St. Joseph, and visiting his family in Hagar only on Sundays.

Neither Smith nor Allen did much towards clearing their respective farms until 1844, when Jeremiah Smith (Michael's father) came to Hagar from New York State, with his wife and family, and located upon Michael's 163 acres, Michael having previously put up a frame house upon it and cleared a few acres. As soon as he saw them comfortably settled, Michael went to Kalamazoo, where he made his home for the following fifteen years. He then returned to Hagar and took possession of his farm, where he yet lives. Upon Michael's return, his father bought 40 acres on the opposite side of the road, and resided there until his death.

In 1844, Allen turned his attention energetically to cultivating his land, and lived upon it afterwards until he died. He married Sophia, daughter of Jeremiah Smith, that marriage being the first one celebrated on the south side of the river. His widow married Roswell Curtis, and still lives in Hagar.

In 1844, James Stewart settled upon section 26, south of Michael Smith. He lived there until 1861, when he moved to Bangor. There he now resides, aged ninety-two years.

The next settler was Roswell Curtis, who located upon section 25, opposite James Stewart. He married William Allen's widow, and still lives in Hagar.

Wells Crumb, who followed Curtis, settled on section 26, and built a small saw-mill on Crumb Creek. Mr. Crumb moved afterwards to Coloma, in Watervliet township, where he is now living.

Jeremiah Smith's two married sons, Abram and Henry, came to Hagar, with their father, in 1844, and located farms on section 24. Abram opened there the first blacksmith-shop on that side of the river, and not long afterwards removed to Coloma, where he was also the pioneer blacksmith, and where he continues to this day to work at the forge. Henry is living in Hagar.

William Scott, an early settler, sold out, about 1856, to George Patterson, and removed to California, where he now lives. George Patterson lives now in Coloma. James, his brother, who bought Abram Smith's place, changed his habitation to the northern part of the State, where he is now living. Robert Merrifield was a settler upon the south side of the river about 1843, but afterwards left for Berrien.

Alfred Sensebaugh, who was an early settler on the south side of the river, was a preacher, and preached for some time, on both sides of the river, before the appearance in the township of any other minister.

The first white child born in the township was William McCrea's daughter, Mary Jane, the date of whose birth was May 16, 1841. She is now living in Hagar, and is the wife of Thomas Muldoon. The first couple married were Oliver Sorrell and Malvina Brant. The wedding ceremony took place at the house of Mathias Farnum, and was performed by Dr. Lillibridge, of St. Joseph. Mr. Farnum, who relates the incident, does not remember that the wedding was attended by any demonstrative celebration such as sometimes marks a first marriage in a new settlement. He recollects, however, that there were at that time so few settlers in Hagar that there was not much of a chance for a hilarious time.

The first saw-mill in Hagar, and the only one to the present time, was set up by Mathias Farnum and Alexis D. Finch, near the Farnum place. They bought the machinery in Watervliet and moved it to Hagar, where it was operated some time as a steam-mill. It was, however, dismantled a long time since, although the building, in a somewhat dilapidated condition, still remains.

Until 1869, when the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad was completed to that point, Hagar had no post-office. Previously the mails for the township people were sent to Coloma or Benton Harbor.

Mathias Farnum says that when he moved into Hagar, in 1839, there were no roads in the township, and the only thoroughfares of any kind were Indian trails or routes, by way of blazed trees, marked by his predecessors. The river, although shallow, served nevertheless a useful purpose to the Hagar pioneers, for by its aid they were enabled to journey to and from St. Joseph village much more conveniently than by the overland route through the woods. By reason of this convenience the want of a road to St. Joseph was not as sorely felt as it would have been otherwise, and indeed it was not until 1841 that a road to St. Joseph was laid out and made fit for travel.

## TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL LIST.

Hagar was originally a portion of St. Joseph township, and was set off as a part of Paw Paw township March 7, 1834. In response to a petition urged by a considerable number of inhabitants, it was set off as a separate township April 6, 1846. Hagar was named in honor of William Hagar, of St. Joseph, whose son-in-law, John N. Rogers, a justice of the peace, performed certain services in obtaining the organization of the town, and as a compensation claimed the privilege of naming it. The first town-meeting was held in the school-house of District No. 1, known as the Bundy school-house. At that meeting the inspectors of election were Wells Crumb, William McCrea, Alfred Sensebaugh, Mathias Farnum, Leonard Lull, and Charles Lamb, Jr. The clerks of the election were William Scott and Roswell Curtis. The town officials chosen on that occasion were as follows: Supervisor, Alfred Sensebaugh; Clerk, William C. Allen; Treasurer, Charles Lamb, Jr.; Justices of the Peace, William Scott, Joseph Stratton, Isaac K. Finch, Charles Lamb, Sr.; Assessors, William Scott, Joseph Stratton; School Inspectors, Alfred Sensebaugh, Joseph Stratton; Directors of the Poor, Crawford Hazard, Charles Lamb, Jr.; Commissioners of Highways, Nathaniel Bundy, A. D. Finch, Abram Smith; Constables, A. D. Finch, Samuel Hardenbrook, Henry Smith.

Following is a list of those who have been elected supervisors, clerks, treasurers, and justices of the peace of Hagar from 1847 to 1879, inclusive:

- 1847.—Supervisor, Alfred Sensebaugh; Clerk, William C. Allen; Treasurer, William Scott; Justice of the Peace, Roswell Curtis.
- 1848.—Supervisor, William Scott; Clerk, Wells Crumb; Treasurer, William Scott; Justice of the Peace, Joseph Stratton.
- 1849.—Supervisor, Isaac K. Finch; Clerk, William C. Allen; Treasurer, Roswell Curtis; Justices of the Peace, Isaac K. Finch, Leonard Lull.
- 1850.—Supervisor, Isaac K. Finch; Clerk, Abram Smith; Treasurer, William C. Allen; Justices of the Peace, Isaac K. Finch, Alexis D. Finch, Charles Lamb.
- 1851.—Supervisor, Isaac K. Finch; Clerk, Abram Smith; Treasurer, William C. Allen; Justice of the Peace, Wells Crumb.
- 1852.—Supervisor, Isaac K. Finch; Clerk, William C. Allen; Treasurer, Sprague Bishop; Justices of the Peace, George Johnson, A. D. Finch.
- 1853.—Supervisor, George Johnson; Clerk, William C. Allen; Treasurer, Sprague Bishop; Justices of the Peace, William Scott, Sprague Bishop.
- 1854.—Supervisor, George Johnson; Clerk, Abram Smith; Treasurer, Sprague Bishop; Justices of the Peace, Crawford Hazard, A. D. Finch.
- 1855.—Supervisor, George Johnson; Clerk, A. D. Finch; Treasurer, Sprague Bishop; Justices of the Peace, A. D. Finch, Wells Crumb, Asahel Hays.
- 1856.—Supervisor, Asahel Hays; Clerk, Wells Crumb; Treasurer, Sprague Bishop; Justice of the Peace, George S. Andrews.
- 1857.—Supervisor, George S. Andrews; Clerk, Alonzo Hyde; Treasurer, Albert Swift; Justice of the Peace, N. L. Bird.
- 1858.—Supervisor, Sprague Bishop; Clerk, Wells Crumb; Treasurer, Michael Smith; Justice of the Peace, Roswell Curtis.
- 1859.—Supervisor, Sprague Bishop; Clerk, Roswell Curtis; Treasurer, Michael Smith; Justice of the Peace, Chester Curtis.
- 1860.—Supervisor, Sprague Bishop; Clerk, Thomas Roome; Treasurer, Cornelius Williams; Justices of the Peace, Roswell Curtis, C. C. Williams.
- 1861.—Supervisor, Sprague Bishop; Clerk, Thomas Roome; Treasurer, Cornelius Williams; Justice of the Peace, Thomas Roome.

- 1862.—Supervisor, Sprague Bishop; Clerk, Thomas Roome; Treasurer, William Ferguson; Justice of the Peace, S. G. Parker.
- 1863.—Supervisor, Sprague Bishop; Clerk, Thomas Roome; Treasurer, T. D. Pitcher; Justice of the Peace, Abel Barnum.
- 1864.—Supervisor, Stephen Cook; Clerk, Thomas Roome; Treasurer, T. D. Pitcher; Justice of the Peace, James Flood.
- 1865.—Supervisor, A. S. Bishop; Clerk, Thomas Roome; Treasurer, Lyman Cole; Justice of the Peace, Thomas Roome.
- 1866.—Supervisor, Albert Swift; Clerk, A. D. Finch.

[From 1867 to 1871, inclusive, the records fail to give names of persons annually elected to be town officials.]

- 1872.—Supervisor, George S. Andrews; Clerk, C. H. Curtis; Treasurer, H. N. Sheldon; Justice of the Peace, Alby Emerson.
- 1873.—Supervisor, H. N. Sheldon; Clerk, C. H. Curtis; Treasurer, Daniel Cook; Justices of the Peace, Chester Curtis, James M. Pierce.
- 1874.—Supervisor, A. S. Bishop; Clerk, C. H. Curtis; Treasurer, Daniel Cook; Justices of the Peace, Roswell Curtis, Talma Hendricks.
- 1875.—Supervisor, H. N. Sheldon; Clerk, George S. Andrews; Treasurer, Daniel Cook; Justice of the Peace, A. H. Smith.
- 1876.—Supervisor, De Witt Guy; Clerk, Wm. H. Merrill; Treasurer, Daniel Cook; Justice of the Peace, C. Anderson.
- 1877.—Supervisor, De Witt Guy; Clerk, William H. Merrill; Treasurer, Daniel Cook; Justice of the Peace, B. K. Howell.
- 1878.—Supervisor, De Witt Guy; Clerk, William H. Merrill; Treasurer, Daniel Cook; Justices of the Peace, C. J. Anderson, Theodore Perry.
- 1879.—Supervisor, E. L. Kingsland; Clerk, Wm. H. Merrill; Treasurer, Oscar Damon; Justice of the Peace, W. L. Ruggles.

The township board in 1879 was composed of E. L. Kingsland, Wm. H. Merrill, and C. J. Anderson, who composed also the board of health. The justices serving in 1879 were W. L. Ruggles, C. J. Anderson, Theodore Perry, Stephen Stanley.

## RELIGIOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

*A Free-Will Baptist Church* was organized in Hagar in 1863, by Rev. William Eastman, in the Bundy school-house. The members numbered 11, of whom the only ones called to mind are Mrs. Sarah Harris, Lavina Harris, Charles Harris, Miss Lovica Martin, Nathaniel Bundy and wife, and Mrs. Jane Cook. Methodists worshiped with the Baptists, but had no organization of their own. Mr. Eastman preached about a year, and was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Parks, after whose time there was no regular preaching. In about two years from the date of organization the church became so weakened in membership that it dissolved and experienced no revival afterwards.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church of Hagar*, now worshipping in the Wisner school-house, was organized by Rev. Mr. Bliss, in Benton township, about 1859, with but few members, of whom there are mentioned W. Edinborough and wife, T. Edinborough and wife, J. Dickinson, and Asahel Hays and wife. Shortly after organization the church was transferred to Hagar township, where it has since continued its existence, feebly at times, and struggling against the want of members, but not losing its organization. At times the Congregationalists joined with the Methodists, and for a time a Congregational minister served in the pulpit. The membership of the Methodist class is now weak, and is confined to 8 persons, who manage, however, to have preaching once a fortnight in the Wisner school-house.—Rev. Mr. Whitwam, of Benton Harbor, supplying them. The class-leader and steward is Mr. L. W. Ruggles. There was a Methodist Episcopal class on





MR. JAS. HANNAH.

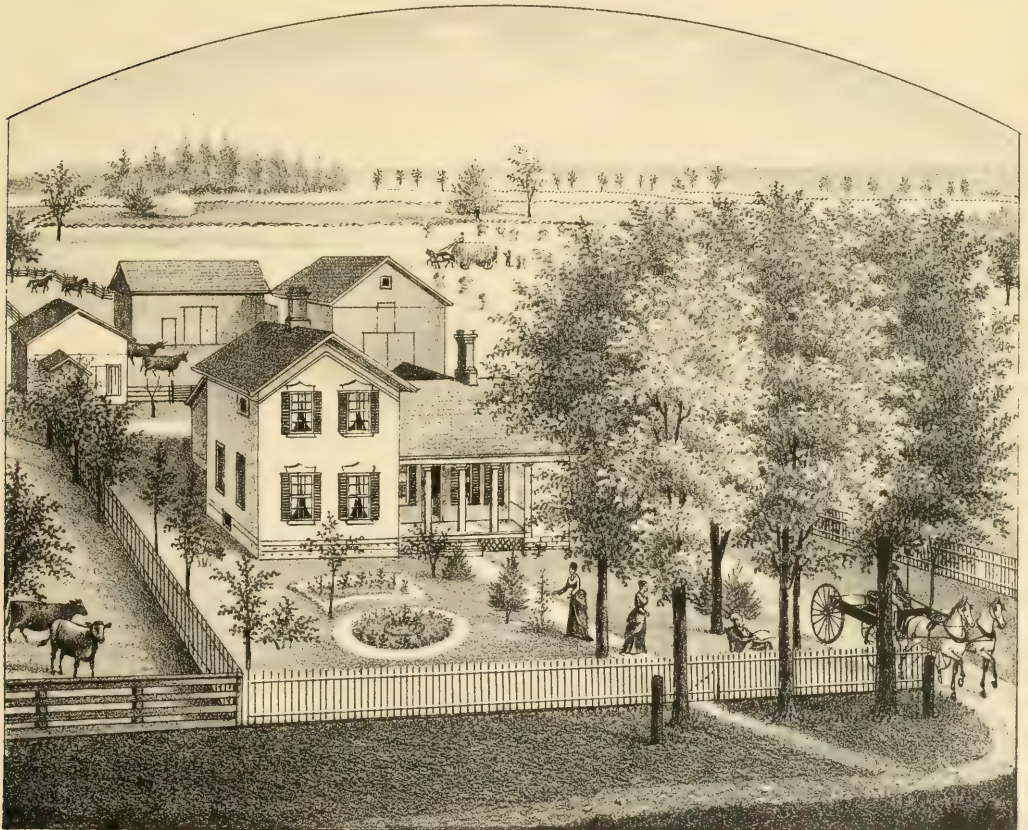


MISS SARAH HANNAH.



MRS. JAS. HANNAH.

PHOTO. BY BESSER



RES. OF JAS. HANNAH, HAGART, BERRIEN CO., MICH.



the south side of the river some years ago, but latterly it has had no existence.

The *Christian Church of Hagar*, worshipping on the south side of the river, was organized in 1877, by Rev. Reason Davis, and had then a membership of 42. The membership is now 22. Services are held once every two weeks. Benjamin Carpenter and Lyman Cole are the deacons, Roswell Curtis the elder, and Charles Curtis the clerk.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school-teacher in Hagar was Matilda Irwin, of Watervliet, who in 1844 began to teach in a log school-house which stood where is now the Bundy school-house. She taught two terms, was then married to Alexis D. Finch, of Hagar, and after teaching one more term gave up her school. That school-house, in District No. 1, was the only one in the town until April 17, 1846, when District No. 2 was created. The school-house in District No. 1 was destroyed by fire in 1849, and replaced by the structure now in use. The condition of the schools in Hagar, Sept. 1, 1879, is shown in the following table:

Number of districts.....	5
Number of scholars enrolled.....	239
Average attendance.....	234
Total value of school property.....	\$3100
Number of teachers.....	9
Amount paid for teachers' wages.....	\$770

School Directors: A. H. Bishop, District No. 1; Henry Smith, No. 2; J. Dickinson, fractional District No. 4; Chester Curtis, No. 5; Eber Austin, No. 6.

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

#### JAMES HANNAH.

Among the venerable pioneers none are more worthy of a prominent place in the history of Berrien County than the gentleman whose name heads this brief sketch. He was born in Scotland, Feb. 20, 1820, and was the third in a family of eight children. His father came to America in 1826, settling in the State of New York; he was a farmer by occupation. James' younger days were spent the same as most farmers' boys,—assisting on the farm summers, attending district school winters. Industry, economy, and integrity were the first and last lessons of his boyhood. He remained at home until reaching his majority; then he went to Canada, where he hired out by the month in the lumber woods, remaining there seventeen years, commencing with twelve dollars per month, but was getting fifty dollars at the time he left. In 1861, October 14th, he married Miss Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas and Helen Gilkison. This union was blessed with one child, Sarah, born Jan. 3, 1863. Mrs. Hannah's parents were natives of Ireland. In the spring of 1862, Mr. Hannah and his young wife came to Michigan, settling on the farm where they now reside, which consists of one hundred and twenty-seven acres, on section 26, in the township of Hagar, having about one hundred acres improved. He has always given his undivided attention to farming in general, taking pride in raising the best of everything. He is fond of good horses,

having raised some very fine ones since his location here. Commencing life with only his natural resources for his capital, a willing heart and strong arm, he cannot help looking back on his past success with pleasure. In politics he is a Democrat, though never an office-seeker; has often been solicited, but would not accept. In religion his views are liberal. Mr. Hannah's father died in 1850, at the ripe old age of eighty. Two brothers and one sister are still living, all that remains of their once unbroken family.

#### ANTHONY S. BISHOP.

Mr. Bishop, like many of the early settlers, traces his origin, with commendable pride, to a New England ancestry. He was born in Henderson, N. Y., Aug. 18, 1812, and was the oldest son of a family of eleven children, all but one of whom lived to maturity. His father, Asa Bishop, was born in New Hampshire, Nov. 7, 1785; died in Bainbridge township, Berrien Co., June 10, 1872. His mother, Polly (Sprague) Bishop, was born among the granite hills and evergreen slopes of Vermont, Aug. 23, 1792. She was married to Mr. Asa Bishop, in Henderson, N. Y., Jan. 10, 1807; died in Bainbridge, Dec. 29, 1851. They moved from Clayton, N. Y., to Bainbridge, in 1846, locating on the farm, then a dense wilderness, now owned and occupied by their youngest son, J. K. Bishop, where they lived up to the time of their death. The subject of this sketch was married to Clarinda, daughter of Perry and Thedora Babcock, in March, 1839, in Clayton, Jefferson Co., N. Y. In the fall of 1846 he came with his father to Michigan, where his wife died, March 13, 1848, only living to enjoy two short years of pioneer life, leaving one daughter, Ione I. Bishop, born Sept. 15, 1841, in Clayton, N. Y. Mr. Bishop was again married, in March, 1849, to Miss Harriet E. Duvall, daughter of William and Lucy Duvall, in Bainbridge township, where she died April 21, 1850. Being somewhat disheartened, thinking that the hand of God had not dealt very gently with him, he then moved into Hagar township, where, on Dec. 26, 1850, he married his third and present wife, Mrs. Maria McCrary, widow of William McCrary. To this marriage were born five children,—Asa H., born May 23, 1852; Arthur S., born Aug. 12, 1854, died Oct. 15, 1854; Arthur B., born Nov. 14, 1856; Augustus S. and Augusta M. (twins), born Feb. 3, 1859 (Augustus S. died Oct. 17, 1859). George Mills, father of the present Mrs. Bishop, was born in Norfolk Co., England, March 17, 1792; was married, March 21, 1812, to Miss Martha M. Karr, who was born in Dumfries, Scotland, Feb. 13, 1792. He was impressed into and served in the British army ten years and seven months; was sent to Canada in 1814, where he bought his discharge. He moved from Canada to Sacket's Harbor in the spring of 1829. In April, 1832, he enlisted in the American army; served in the Black Hawk war under Gen. Scott, and received his discharge at Mackinaw Island, Mich., in April, 1837. He moved from there to Chicago, where he remained one year; from thence to St. Joseph, Mich., in May, 1838; from St. Joseph to Hagar township, where he died Sept. 6, 1873, aged eighty-one. His wife, Martha M. Mills, died in Hagar, April 8, 1871, aged seventy-nine. Mr.



and Mrs. Mills raised but three children, of whom only one is living. Margaret was born in Cornwall, Canada, April 21, 1815; was married to John Forbes, May 28, 1835; died in St. Joseph, June 22, 1879, aged sixty-four. James Mills, born in Kingston, Canada, April 4, 1828; married, in St. Joseph, Jan. 3, 1848, to Miss Rachel Heston; moved to Hagar in 1848, where he remained until the late war, when he enlisted, in February, 1862, in the 12th

was born, of Scotch and Irish parents, in Upper Canada, in 1815. He came to St. Joseph in 1836; was killed by a falling tree while working on his farm in Hagar, Aug. 15, 1849, in the thirty-fourth year of his age. To this marriage were born five children,—Mary J., born May 16, 1841, was the first white child born in Hagar; Martha M., born Sept. 8, 1842; Thomas W., born Sept. 6, 1844; Maggie H., born Dec. 23, 1846; George E., born Oct. 27, 1848.



*Anthony S. Bishop*

Michigan Volunteers; was taken prisoner at the battle of Shiloh, Tenn., April 6th of same year, and died in Libby prison, July 12, 1862. Maria Mills, now Mrs. Bishop, was born in Kingston, Canada, Oct. 11, 1822; moved to St. Joseph with her parents; was married to William McCrary, March 30, 1840; moved to Hagar, December 10th of the same year, where she has since resided. Hers was the fourth family to settle in the town, and she is now the oldest settler in the town. William McCrary, her first husband,



MRS. ANTHONY S. BISHOP.

In politics Mr. Bishop is a Democrat; though not radical, yet always speaking and voting its principles. He is a man of estimable character and a highly-esteemed citizen; has proved the fact by having been intrusted with the office of supervisor and town treasurer for fifteen years. The cause of public education has ever found in him a staunch supporter, and in matters looking to the advancement of the public interest he has always been found in the front rank.

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

### LAKE TOWNSHIP.\*

Situation, Soil, and Streams—The Pioneers of Lake Township—Civil Government and List of Officers—Highways—Manufacturing Interests—Villages—Societies and Orders—Public Schools—Burial Places—Religious Societies.

THIS township borders on the lake-shore, south of Lincoln and Royalton, and west of Oronoko; on the south are the townships of Weesaw and Chickaming. It is a little more than a full Congressional township, there being about six sections in range 20. The lake cuts off small portions from sections 6 and 7, in range 19, but the township in that range is very nearly full. The territory embraced in the present limits of Lake township constituted a part of Oronoko until 1846, and was but little settled, except in

the eastern part, for a number of years thereafter. The surface is generally level, and in the interior low and swampy. The eastern tier of sections is somewhat undulated, and consists of fertile clayey-loam lands. Along the lake is a line of high sand-hills. Stretching from their eastern base is a plain of sandy lands, which are separated from the swamp farther east by a belt of fine country, which is elevated sufficiently to secure good drainage, and, having a loamy soil, affords good farming-lands. Much of the swamp, which is several miles wide and traverses the township from northeast to southwest, has been cleared up and drained to form meadow-lands, and will in the future be the richest part of the township. Heavy forests originally covered the surface of Lake, and for many years the lumber product was the principal source of revenue. Stock-raising and the general farming interests at present engage the inhabitants, although fruit-growing is yearly increasing and will soon be one of the leading industries. Hickory

\* By John L. Rockey.

Creek and its tributary brooks are the only streams in the township, and were formerly improved to supply the early settlers with the necessary water-power. In the interior of the township water for domestic purposes was procured with some difficulty, many of the wells being eighty-five feet deep.

#### THE PIONEERS.

The pioneers of Lake first found homes in the eastern part of the township, and the settlements were begun a little before the time when Michigan became a State. John Harner was among the first, if not the first, to begin the usual improvements in the township. He settled on section 25, near the Oronoko line, and still resides there, at an advanced age. He reared sons named Michael, John, and Levi, who also built up homes in that locality. A little later Horace Godfrey settled on the same section, on the farm now occupied by his son Japhet; and at a still later period John Starr settled on section 12, where he died a few years ago. In that neighborhood still resides one of his sons, Joel; other sons were Peter and Gabriel.

Thomas Phillips settled, in 1836, in what afterwards became the Ruggles neighborhood, and lived there until his death, ten years later. One of his sons, Daniel, also died in that locality; Wear, after living in Lake a number of years, removed to Royalton, where he yet resides; William became a resident of Indiana, and Henry of California. One of the daughters, Catherine, became the wife of Henry Lemon, and died in the township in 1847. There were, besides, five other daughters in the family. In the spring of 1837, Phillips sold the mill-site on his land to Peter Ruggles and Erastus Munger, and the same year a saw-mill was erected by these parties on section 2. Peter Ruggles died there many years ago, but the mills always remained in his family. Two of his daughters grew to mature years, Sarah becoming the wife of William M. T. Bartholomew, and Emma, Mrs. James Lockey. Both yet reside in that neighborhood.

In 1839, Henry Lemon settled near the Ruggles family, building a home on the eastern part of section 3, on which he lived until his death, in 1875. Four of his children attained mature years,—Margaret, who married Charles Ellengood; William T., who removed to Kansas; Joanna, the wife of D. S. Evans, of Lake; and John S., who died in the township in 1874.

About the same time, 1839, Erastus Munger became a resident of this neighborhood, but, after 1846, removed to Berrien.

Benjamin Lemon settled on section 24, in 1842, and has been a citizen of the township almost continuously since, being at present a resident of Stevensville. His daughter, Julia, became the wife of Japhet Godfrey, and yet lives in the eastern part of the township, where also reside the son, Charles L., and the other members of the family.

On the Charles Lord place, on section 24, Bradley M. Pennell settled about 1843, and lived there until about twelve years ago, when he removed to Buchanan. Edward Ballengee, another early and prominent settler of this part of the township, also removed to Buchanan. In 1844, Comfort Pennell became a settler on section 12, and after a long residence there removed to Berrien. Harmon Bean

settled on section 11 the same year, or earlier. He died in the township, leaving several sons and four or five daughters. About the same time George Neidlinger settled in that neighborhood, and still maintains his residence there. He has reared a large family, the sons being Daniel, Peter, David, George, Elias, and Solomon. Henry Hess came probably a few years earlier, and settled on section 12. He died about thirteen years ago, leaving no family.

About the same period of time, Jacob Vetter settled on section 13, but in the course of ten or twelve years located in the meadows, on section 34. David Hill and Ruel Blackman located on section 36, and yet live there. E. P. Morley settled on section 35, but subsequently removed to Weesaw.

In 1845, John Lemon, a brother of Henry and Benjamin Lemon, settled on section 12, and died there about 1870. The same year Seely H. Curtis located on the farm now occupied by Dr. J. H. Royce; and the following year, 1846, Adney Hinman, on section 25; Levan and Hezekiah Heathman, on the same section; and C. S. Hyatt, in the same neighborhood.

In 1847, John Shafer came to the township, settling first on section 25, but subsequently located on section 13, where he is yet a resident; and the same year Marcus Hand and Abner Sanders made temporary settlements in the eastern part of the township. The latter was afterwards a pioneer on section 30, and the former on section 16, on the present Philip Myers place. This part of the township was not settled prior to 1850, although a few clearings had previously been made.

Among others who deserve a place among the pioneers of the township, for the service which they have done in opening the way for settlements in their respective localities, are Henry Ford, on section 30; V. P. Mead, on the same section; John H. Nixon and N. E. Landon, on the east half of section 27; J. W. Whipple, on section 31; John Soward and John Johns, on section 15; and Isaac Hathaway, on section 9.

The condition of the settlements in the township, from 1848 till 1851, is shown by the following list of resident property-owners, from the assessment-roll for that period:

Names.	Sections.	Names.	Sections.
Daniel Phillips.....	3	David Hill.....	36
Wear Phillips.....	3	Jacob Shoemaker.....	37
Henry Lemon.....	3	E. P. Morley.....	35
J. E. Munger.....	2	Jacob Vetter.....	34
Lewis Johns.....	4	Horace Godfrey.....	25
G. Newton.....	4	John Shafer.....	25
Abner Sauder.....	30	Peter Ruggles.....	2
Comfort Pennell.....	12	Peter Neidlinger.....	13
John Starr.....	12	C. S. Hyatt.....	13
George Neidlinger.....	2	Zaccheus Mead.....	13
Gabriel Starr.....	2	William Weston.....	13
John Lemon.....	12	V. P. Mead.....	30
Henry Hess.....	12	Charles Brong.....	27
Marcus Hand.....	13	William S. Morley.....	14
J. W. Blackman.....	24	H. Wareham.....	23
Seely H. Curtis.....	24	Henderson Ballengee.....	36
John Harner.....	25	A. C. Pennell.....	36
Adney Hinman.....	25	Jason Parmenter.....	28
Benjamin Lemon.....	24	John Hendrickson.....	30
Levan Heathman.....	24	Francis Abrand.....	13
John Shafer.....	25	E. H. Walton.....	27
Isaac Mellon.....	25	N. Williams.....	27
Bradley M. Pennell.....	24	A. T. Sherwood.....	27
J. H. Hand.....	13	James Parkerton.....	29
John Quick.....	23	Samuel Parkerton.....	29
Edward Ballengee.....	36	Simon Berg.....	15
Ruel Blackman.....	36	Joel Blakeman.....	30

The township received many settlers from 1852 on, and seven years later the following were registered as the legal voters of Lake, although it is possible that not all the citizens of the township at that time are included. The figures opposite the names indicate the section on which they resided:

Names.	Sections.	Names.	Sections.
Francis Award.....	13	Thomas Lightfoot.....	29
Harmon Beams.....	13	Zacheus Mead.....	17
Amos Beas.....	13	Alfred Murray.....	16
Daniel Brown.....	19	W. H. Merrifield.....	15
George Bridgman.....	19	Solomon McKean.....	29
Levi Chase.....	30	V. P. Mead.....	29
Franklin Carr.....	30	Hugh McClellan.....	23
Dexter Curtis.....	25	John J. Moltinger.....	25
Hiram Curtis.....	19	Emmanuel Moltinger.....	25
Thomas Curtis.....	19	Michael Moltinger.....	25
M. J. Dixon.....	28	John H. Nixon.....	27
Robert Daniel.....	2	Freegrace Norton.....	21
William D. Aker.....	17	Martin Norton.....	19
Francis N. Elliott.....	11	George W. Newton.....	19
Samuel Erwin.....	25	Thomas Nevin.....	19
Henry Ford.....	30	George Neidlinger.....	2
Abel French.....	34	George Neidlinger, Jr.....	2
H. L. Farnsworth.....	31	George P. Niles.....	2
Abel Goddard.....	30	Myers Nelson.....	25
Asel Goddard.....	30	Peter J. Picodon.....	21
Honore Godfrey.....	25	Samuel B. Parkerton.....	21
Daniel Gates.....	15	B. M. Pennell.....	21
Harvey W. Hawley.....	29	Nathan Pratt.....	14
John Harner, Sr.....	25	Comfort Pennell.....	12
John Harner, Jr.....	25	Z. B. Rathbun.....	21
Levan Heathman.....	25	George Raymond.....	21
Jesse Heathman.....	29	David Smith.....	28
C. S. Hyatt.....	13	Michael Sassaman.....	11
Marcus Hand.....	16	Henry Sassaman.....	11
Joseph P. Hunter.....	24	Samuel Sassaman.....	11
Bennett Heathman.....	30	Lewis Strong.....	26
Henry Hess.....	12	Gabriel Starr.....	12
David Hill.....	36	Joel Starr.....	12
Levi Harner.....	25	John Starr.....	12
Adney Hinman.....	25	John Soward.....	15
Henry M. Hinman.....	25	John Shafer.....	13
William Hendrickson.....	25	Daniel Stannard.....	25
Isaac Hathaway.....	9	John A. Sperry.....	20
Cateh Imamu.....	7	Abner Sanders.....	20
Christopher Johns.....	15	Jared K. Terry.....	11
Lewis Johns.....	4	John Terry.....	2
John Johns.....	15	Franklin Vary.....	2
James Kaahr.....	11	George W. Wicks.....	—
A. G. Knapp.....	30	W. Williams.....	3
N. E. Landon.....	27	John Wright.....	16
Henry Lemon.....	12	William Weston.....	20
John Lemon.....	12	John W. Whipple.....	21
Benjamin Lewis.....	21	P. Washburne.....	36
George W. Lake.....	25		

The population in 1860 was 557; in 1870 it was 1006; and in 1878 the assessed valuation of the real and personal property was \$158,887.

#### CIVIL GOVERNMENT AND LIST OF OFFICERS.

The records of the township from its organization in 1846 till 1867 have been destroyed, but from fragmentary data found in the clerk's office it appears that at the first election, held at the house of Benjamin Lemon, 18 votes were polled, and that Bradley M. Pennell was elected Supervisor; Comfort Pennell, Township Clerk; and Benjamin Lemon and Daniel Phillips, Justices of the Peace.

From 1846 till 1866 the following have been the supervisors: E. P. Morley, Comfort Pennell, Peter Ruggles, Abner Sanders, Marcus Hand, Bennett Heathman, N. E. Landon, and E. P. Morley; and the township clerks for the same period have been Comfort Pennell, E. P. Morley, J. W. Blakeman, Henry Lemon, John H. Nixon, R. L. Dudley, H. W. Hawley, and John H. Nixon.

Since the latter date the principal officers have been the following:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1867-68, David S. Evans; 1869, Franklin Weston; 1870-72, Isaac Hathaway; 1873-74, Norman E. Landon; 1875-76, William Williams; 1877, Norman E. Landon; 1878, Michael B. Houser; 1879, Norman E. Landon.

#### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1867, D. R. Sage; 1868, M. J. Morley; 1869-70, Solomon Maudlin; 1871-72, John Loop; 1873-74, Marshall C. Travor; 1875-76, O. P. Miller; 1877-78, William Williams; 1879, Wesley Beattie.

#### TREASURERS.

1867, Isaac Hathaway; 1868, James H. Hill; 1869-70, Samuel Moore; 1871, C. M. Smith; 1872-75, Albert Devoe; 1876-77, John H. Nixon; 1878, Calvin Myers; 1879, Thomas C. Hebb.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

Isaac Hathaway, Joseph Giles, M. J. Morley, L. Heathman, John Loop, Comfort Pennell, O. P. Miller, William S. Whipple, Solomon Maudlin, Charles Lord, Japhet Godfrey, Samuel Marrs, Jeremiah Nodine, Isaac Hathaway, and Joseph Giles.

#### HIGHWAYS.

The township took measures immediately after its organization to locate and improve the necessary highways, which were first opened in the eastern part. The condition of the country and the meagre settlements made this work slow and burdensome. For many years there was no direct highway across the swampy lands in the central part of the township, and in the western part there were generally mere bridle-paths only until after 1858. By judicious subdivision into small districts the roads have been made to assume a fair condition. In 1879 they were in charge of John Shafer, as commissioner, and the following overseers: Samuel Marrs, John Haun, Wm. A. Feather, J. H. Royce, William McCarty, Japhet Godfrey, A. F. Morley, L. Meredith, Geo. Ennis, David Baley, William Shuler, Stephen Wright, Henry Kill, John R. Rees, John S. Barnhart, William S. Mead, Charles Hendrix, Benjamin Lemon, N. O. Carlyle, Isaac Clymer, V. B. Gulliver, and John Johns.

The Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad was constructed through the township in 1869-70, with a course parallel to the lake-shore, and about one and a half miles east. Stations have been provided at Brown's, on section 36; Morris, on section 8; and at Bridgman, on section 19. From these points the products of Lake are readily shipped, and the railroad has materially aided in developing the country and increasing its population.

#### THE MANUFACTURING INTERESTS

of Lake township have been confined chiefly to lumber-mills and kindred factories. The first of this character was a saw-mill, erected on section 2, on the head-waters of Hickory Creek, by Peter Ruggles and Erastus Munger, in the fall of 1837. Here was cut some of the lumber which was used in the construction of the court-house at Berrien Springs. Afterwards a grist-mill was built, and was operated by the same power, both mills remaining the property of the Ruggles family until their discontinuance a few years ago.

On section 24, Benjamin Lemon got in operation a saw-mill in 1845, which went to decay, and a new mill, which was subsequently built by him on the same stream, has also gone down. After 1850, John Harner put up a saw-mill



on section 13, which afterwards became the property of John Shafer, but is at present idle.

On the southern township line, on section 32, a good steam saw-mill was erected about 1865, by Alonzo Sherwood, which was operated until the timber supply in that locality was exhausted. The lumber was conveyed to the lake by means of a tramway. At Brown's Station, O. R. Brown formerly had a mill, and at present one is operated there by A. L. Drew. Farther in the interior of the township Painter & Curtiss had an extensive lumber-mill, which was removed after a few years' operation. At that time the locality was known as Paintersville, and was the scene of busy activity.

In the northern part of the township, at Morris Station, H. F. Mead has at present in operation a steam saw-mill capable of cutting 8000 feet per day. At this point was formerly another mill; and in other localities in the township saw-mills were kept in operation a short time or until the surrounding forests had been manufactured into lumber.

The largest lumber-manufacturing establishment was near the present village of Bridgman. In the fall of 1856, George Bridgman, Warren Howe, and Charles F. Howe formed the "Charlotteville Lumber Company," and here began operations by building a steam saw-mill, at a cost of \$20,000. At a point west, on the lake, a pier was constructed five hundred feet long, which was connected with the mill by a railroad more than a mile in length; and to various points in the forest a railway was made, the entire length of track being about seven miles. The rolling stock consisted of thirty-three cars and the engine "John Bull," which, it is claimed, was the first locomotive ever run in the United States.\* The improvements cost \$70,000, and the mill had a capacity of 25,000 feet per day. About seventy men were employed in the business, and the lumber found a ready sale in Chicago, whither it was conveyed from the pier by schooners. In 1863 the mill was destroyed by fire, and two other mills which were erected on the same site shared a like fate, the last one being consumed in 1870. The lumbering business here having declined, on account of the consumption of the forest products, a mill of smaller capacity was erected the same season (1870) by Mordecai Price. This was also burned in 1871. Soon after Whipple & Medaris put up a mill which was burned after a year's operation; and a third mill, on this site, put up by O. D. Rector, was also burned in 1878. The present mill was put in operation in January, 1879, by Codd & Price. Its capacity is 8000 feet per day.

In 1870 a stave and heading factory was built east of the railroad station at Bridgman, which has been owned by various parties, and is at present operated by Hinkley, Higman & Co. The product is several million pieces per year, and more than a dozen hands are employed.

In 1869, Webster & Whiten erected a tannery at Charlotteville, which was discontinued after several years' operation, and the building removed in 1878. The other manufacturing interests of the township are confined to the ordinary mechanic pursuits. A grist-mill is soon to be built at Bridgman.

#### VILLAGES.

In 1848 a village was projected on section 25, which received the name of Livingston. Eighty blocks were laid out, but nothing further was done to advance its claims to a place among the villages of the county, and the site soon became common farm property.

*Charlotteville*, on section 19, was the first village in the township. It was founded by the "Charlotteville Lumber Company," in 1856, and for a number of years was composed wholly of the various interests connected with the business of that firm. The name was bestowed in compliment to Charlotte Howe, the wife of one of the proprietors. The place never attained great size, but was at one time the seat of considerable business. In 1870 another of the original proprietors, George Bridgman, platted a village half a mile east, on the railroad, where a station was located that year. The survey was made by E. P. Morley, and the village and station received the name of

*Bridgman*.—This place has absorbed whatever interests were formerly at Charlotteville, and the entire locality is now known by the name of Bridgman. It contains a fine school-house with a number of business places and other interests, noted below. There are about 200 inhabitants.

The Bridgman post-office was established in 1861 with the name of Laketon, but ten years later took the name of the village. Elijah Cowles was the first postmaster, and was succeeded in 1863 by George Bridgman, who held the office until 1870. The postmasters following have been George Wood, George Wells, William Babcock, and the present incumbent, Mrs. E. A. H. Greene.

The first merchandising in the township was carried on by the "Charlotteville Lumber Company," from 1857 till the company discontinued, about five years later; and trade was thereafter continued by the successive mill owners Dexter Curtiss, Loop & Daniels, Sawyer & Mead, and D. B. Plummer. Meantime other stores were built, and in 1869 there were three general business houses, by C. M. Smith, George W. Wells, and M. C. Traver. Dr. J. F. Berringer had opened a drug-store before that period, which is yet continued in Bridgman by him.

In 1871, Charles M. Smith put up the first store at the station, which is at present occupied by Benjamin Lemon. The next store was built several years later by Benjamin Weed, in which he engaged in trade, and was followed by Edward Palmer and Henry Chapman. In 1875, Thomas Hebb built the third store, and trade was there begun by Hebb & Howlett. The stand is at present occupied by J. T. Barnes & Co. Others in trade are Seekell, Sparr & Co.

The first regular tavern in the village of Bridgman was opened in 1872 by George Maisner, and kept a few years. Near the depot the Thompson House had entertained the public since 1875.

The township did not have any professional men prior to 1856. That year Dr. J. H. Royce engaged in the practice of medicine, and has continued since residing in the eastern part of the township. The second physician was Dr. Solomon Maudlin, who located at Bridgman, and still resides there, although not in active practice. The present physician there is Dr. J. F. Berringer, and other practitioners in the township have been Drs. Sober and Imme.

\* This statement, however, is clearly erroneous.

The first and only attorney in the township has been George W. Bridgman, who has maintained a law-office at Bridgman since 1872.

#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Lake Lodge, No. 143, I. O. O. F.*, was organized in 1870. Its membership increased rapidly, and the lodge has flourished steadily since its organization. The meetings are held in a hall in the western part of the village of Bridgman.

*Bridgman Lodge, No. 794, I. O. G. T.*, was organized in October, 1879, with 64 charter members. Joseph Codd, W. C. T.; T. C. Bridgman, W. V. T.; J. Duest, Sec.; and Charles Wheelock, Treas. At present the members number 90.

#### PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

In May, 1846, the school inspectors, Comfort Pennel, Edward Ballengee, and Henry Lemon, reported that they had divided the township into three school districts, No. 1, containing sections 35, 36, 25, and 26; No. 2, containing sections 23, 24, 13, and 14; and No. 3, containing sections 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, and 12. In October, the same year, Edward Ballengee, the director of District No. 1, made report that the children of school age (from four to eighteen years) in the district were 16, of whom 14 attended school. A term of three months' school had been taught, at a total expense of \$15. Daniel Phillips, the director of District No. 3, reported that the children of school age in his district were 19.

In 1848, No. 1 had 25 children of school age; No. 2, 19; and No. 3, 16.

A few years later a number of new districts were formed and school-houses provided. These were at first rude and plainly furnished, the entire cost seldom exceeding \$100. A better class of buildings took their place, and the appropriations for the maintenance of schools were liberally increased. The condition of the schools in 1878 is shown by the following, which we quote from the school report of that year:

Number of districts.....	8
" " children of school age.....	392
" " attending school.....	260
Total value of school houses.....	\$4900

During the year 5 male and 11 female teachers were employed, and the schools were reported to be in a prosperous condition.

Since 1867 the school inspectors have been M. J. Morley, Isaac Hathaway, Japhet Godfrey, Franklin L. Weston, J. W. Whipple, Harvey L. Drew, Wm. M. T. Bartholomew, N. E. Landon, Solomon Maudlin, and David S. Evans. Those who have been elected to the office of superintendent have been George W. Bridgman, Wm. Williams, Jeremiah Nodine, Michael B. Houser, and David S. Evans.

#### BURIAL-GROUNDS.

The cemeteries of the township are small, and were conveniently located to afford interments in the several neighborhoods formed by the early settlers. The first was opened in 1850, on the northeast quarter of section 25; the next was opened three years later, at the Phillips school-

house; and a few years thereafter one was located in the western part of the township. Some of these are neatly kept, and contain appropriate monuments to the memory of those who had been among the pioneers of the county.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

The Methodists were the first to maintain public worship within the present bounds of Lake township. As early as 1846 a class of this faith was organized, at the school-house in the southeastern part of the township, by the Rev. George King, at that time preacher in charge of the Berrien circuit. Seeley H. Curtis was appointed leader, and the members consisted of persons belonging to the Hyatt, Heathman, Ballengee, and other families residing in the eastern part of Lake and the western part of Oronoko. In the course of a few years a revival ensued, which resulted in the conversion of nearly 100 persons. A class of Methodists has existed in the eastern part of Lake ever since, the place of worship being changed from one to the other school-house, to suit the convenience of the members in the respective localities. At present the meetings are held at the Ruggles school-house. The class has eight members, and Clinton Hyatt is the leader. Here, also, is maintained a Sunday-school of nearly 100 members, which is superintended by Sarah Bartholomew.

In 1848, or later, a class was formed west of the Great Meadows, which had among its members the Williams, Shoemaker, and Sherwood families; but as these soon after removed the class here went down. The class at Bridgman became an organized body in 1865, V. P. Mead being the first leader. Here are at present 17 members, under the leadership of R. W. Plumb. The Sunday-school has 25 members, and Frank Weston is the superintendent. The services at this point are also held in the school-house.

There is no church building in the township of Lake, but a few years ago the Methodists erected a parsonage at the village of Bridgman, which is near the centre of the present circuit.

The boundaries of the Methodist circuits in this and the adjoining townships have been subject to many changes. The circuits have borne various names, and generally embraced from six to eight appointments, numbering at present six, namely: Bridgman, Ruggles, Tryon, South Lincoln, Lincoln Avenue, and Stevensville.

The names of the circuits and pastoral connection have been as follows:

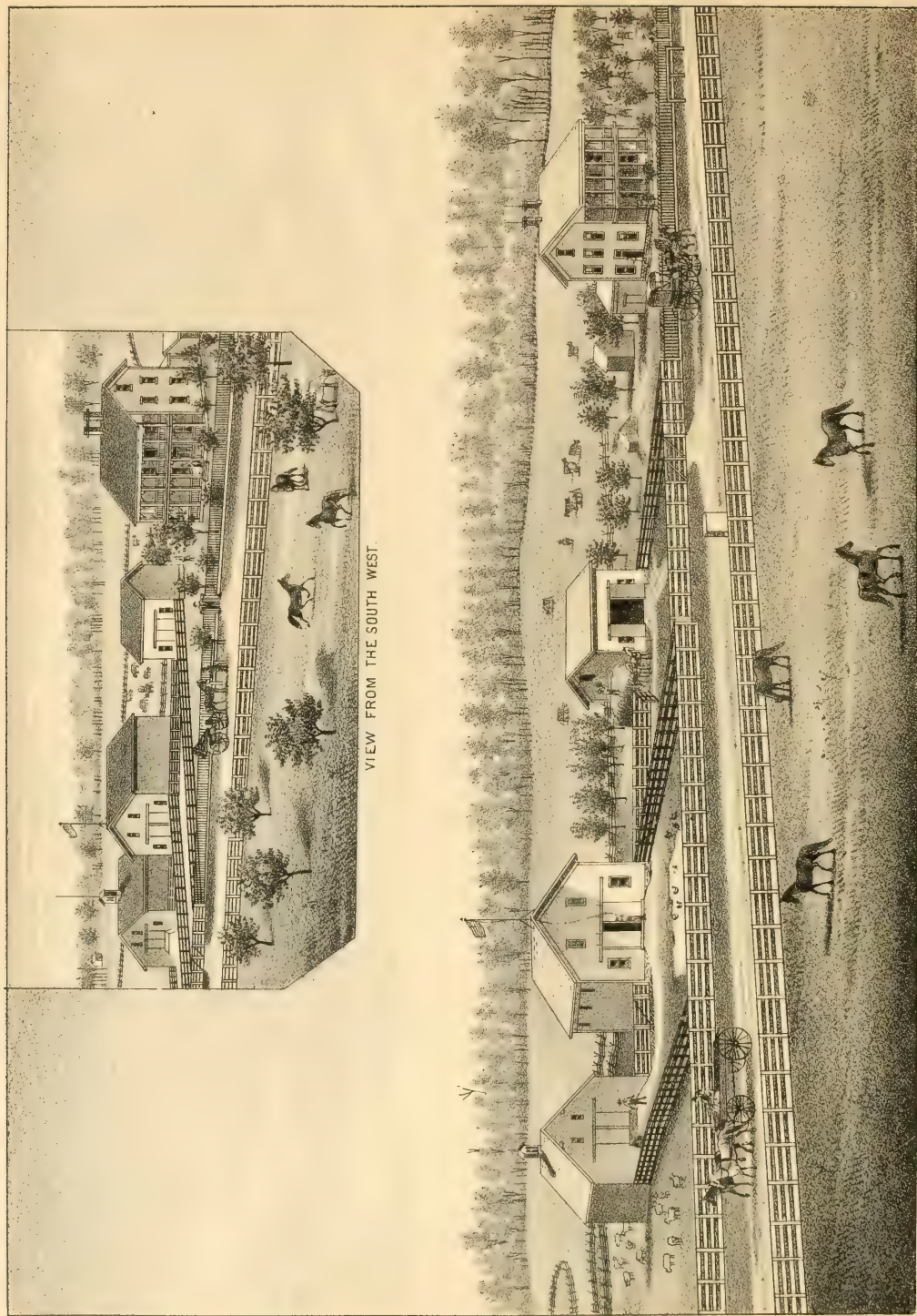
*Berrien Circuit.*—1846, Rev. George King; 1847, Revs. A. C. Shaw, A. Campbell, C. K. Ercanbrack; 1848, Revs. R. C. Meek, — Tappan; 1849, Revs. H. Hall, B. F. Doughty; 1850, Revs. H. Hall, S. A. Lee; 1851–52, Revs. S. A. Osborne, S. Hendrickson; 1853, Rev. F. Glass; 1854, Rev. R. Pengelly; 1855, Revs. J. T. Robe, Thomas H. Bignall; 1856, Revs. W. C. Bliss, E. L. Kellogg; 1857, Rev. T. T. George; 1858, Rev. G. A. Van Horn; 1859, Revs. D. S. Haviland, D. Engle; 1860, Rev. L. M. Bennett; 1861, Rev. N. Cleveland; 1862, Rev. E. Beard.

*Charlotteville Circuit.* (New Tryon, Charlotteville, Lake, Spears, Tryon, Lincoln Avenue, Weesaw).—1865, Rev. John Byrns; 1866–67, Rev. Irving H. Skinner; 1868, Revs. William Friend, George Patterson; 1869, Rev. J. S. Valentine.

*Stevensville Circuit.*—1870, Rev. J. S. Valentine; 1871, Rev. Irving H. Skinner; 1872, Rev. H. Taylor.







VIEW FROM THE SOUTH WEST

*Laketon Circuit*.—1870-71, Rev. J. W. H. Carlisle; 1872, Rev. N. Mount.

*Bridgman Circuit*.—(above united) 1873-74, Rev. V. H. Helms; 1875, Rev. Thomas E. Shenston; 1876, Rev. J. F. Wallace; 1877, Rev. J. R. Skinner.\*

The cause of Methodism in the above circuits has been greatly promoted by the labors of the Revs. Wm. Penland, Gould Parrish, Allen Conley, E. Allen, and Wm. M. Con-

nely, local preachers residing in this part of the county, the former two yet living in Royalton and Lincoln.

Since 1850 the United Brethren in Christ have maintained services in school-house No. 2, in connection with appointments in other townships, forming a circuit. Among the early members were the Pennells, Lemons, Browns, Waltons, and others, being at one time a large and flourishing congregation. At present the membership is small.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.



ISAAC HATHAWAY.

### ISAAC HATHAWAY

was the third in a family of seven children, and was born in Seneca Co., Ohio, on the 7th day of August, 1833. His father, Z. Hathaway, was a native of Massachusetts, having been born in 1802. He removed to Ohio in 1825.†

As he grew up, young Isaac assisted his father on the farm until he was eighteen years old, attending the district school in winter until sixteen years of age, when he entered Seneca County Academy, where he spent a part of two years. Wishing to buy a farm and make a home for himself, he visited Michigan in 1851, where he remained during the winter, examining various portions of the State. He was well pleased, and decided to locate in Berrien County as soon as he could earn enough to buy a home. Returning to Ohio, he started immediately for California, where he worked in the mines four years, sending his father the money to purchase from government the tract of four hundred and sixty acres on which he now resides.

Returning from California, young Hathaway removed to his new home in Michigan in the fall of 1856, and began the improvement of his place, living with a family whom he had employed to "keep house" for him. On the 13th day of September, 1859, he married Miss Delia Hand.

\* The above has been compiled from data furnished by Rev. J. R. Skinner, preacher in charge Bridgman Circuit.

† The following year he was married, his wife being a native of the State of New York.



MRS. ISAAC HATHAWAY.

One child only blessed this union, who was born on the 8th day of June, 1872, and died on the 3d day of the following month. Mrs. Hathaway's parents were natives of New York, who had removed to Michigan in 1845, and located in Lake township. They reared a family of six children, Mrs. Hathaway being the youngest girl.

Mr. Hathaway is not a member of any Christian denomination. In politics he is a Democrat. He has filled the office of supervisor three terms, and that of justice of the peace fifteen years, having married seventy couples in that time. He has also represented his party as a delegate in several conventions, and is generally looked on as a leader of the people in this section.

### JOHN H. NIXON.

The father of John H. Nixon was John B. Nixon, who was born in the State of South Carolina on the 17th day of November, 1789. His mother, whose maiden name was Peek, was a native of New Jersey, and was born on the 11th day of February, 1792. She was married to John B. Nixon about the year 1811. John H. Nixon was the fifth child in a family of nine, and was born in Fayette Co., Ind., on the 24th day of August, 1819. At the age of thirteen years he went to learn a trade, selecting that of mason. At sixteen, May, 1836, he accompanied



his father to Michigan. His father remained during the summer and fall, then returned home, and in the fall of 1842 brought his family back with him, John H. remaining until 1852. In that year, being then thirty-three years



JOHN H. NIXON.

old, he went to California, where he remained one year and eight months, working in the mines and at his trade during that time. He found, however, that gold was not to be picked up on every side, nor wealth to be had in a few days, but that labor of the hardest kind must be performed and the most severe privations must be endured. Many



MRS. JOHN H. NIXON.

indeed there were who, in those days of excitement, sought that renowned El Dorado, their minds filled with visions of wealth and splendor, but whose bones whitened the intervening plains, or who, if so fortunate as to reach their destination, were rewarded only with poverty, disappointment, and despair. In 1854, Mr. Nixon made his first purchase of land in Michigan, a farm of one hundred and sixty acres, which is still his home. His advantages were few, and his education was acquired after he was twenty-one

years old. He has never sought notoriety of any kind, and is rather retiring in his nature. Yet his fellow-citizens have, at divers times, insisted on his accepting various minor offices, he having filled all the official positions in his township, except that of supervisor. Mr. Nixon was formerly a Whig, then joined the Democratic party, and is now a Conservative. On the 7th day of February, 1849, Mr. Nixon married Mary, daughter of J. and Mary O'Keefe, who were of Irish descent. Eight children have been born to them, all of whom are now living,—viz., Mills H., born Oct. 16, 1850; Mary L., born Sept. 6, 1852; Louisa B., born Nov. 23, 1854; John B., born Dec. 5, 1856; Charles M., born Nov. 27, 1858; Harvey C., born March 21, 1862; Frank, born March 16, 1864; and Dick, born Feb. 25, 1866.

#### NORMAN E. LANDON.

The subject of this sketch was born in 1824, at Salisbury, Conn. He was the youngest of a family of seven children—three boys and four girls. His father was a native of Connecticut, and his grandfather, Rufus Landon, was a soldier of the Revolution, serving under Gen. Schuyler when he marched to the relief of Arnold in Canada. At



Photo. by Bradley, Buchanan.

NORMAN E. LANDON.

seventeen years of age Norman quitted the old homestead and commenced life for himself. Going to Kinderhook, N. Y., he learned the carpenter's trade, working there seven years and in Connecticut nine years. In 1858 he removed to Lake township, Mich., where he turned his attention to farming. He made his first purchase of land in 1858, becoming the owner of eighty acres on section 27, his present homestead. He has since added eighty acres to this. While in Kinderhook, Mr. Landon married, in March, 1847, Miss Allen, daughter of Horace and Clara Allen. Four children were born to them,—three girls and one boy. Mrs. Landon died May, 1868, in Berrien Springs. Mr. Landon married, as his second wife, Mrs. Laura, widow of Myers Nelson. He has no children by this marriage. Mrs. Nelson is a daughter of Lemuel and Ann Church, and is a



native of Ohio, being the fourth in a family of nine children. By her first marriage she was the mother of six children. Mr. Landon is a Democrat. He has been the supervisor of his township nine terms, and its treasurer and present jus-



Photo, by Bradley, Buchanan.

MRS. NORMAN E. LANDON.

tice of the peace, having filled that office six years. In 1864 was nominated by his party for county treasurer. Mr. Landon received his education outside of schools, as his advantages for an early education were few. He has been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church since 1856. Mr. Landon has ever been industrious and economical. By hard work and prudent management he has become possessed of a pleasant home, and he is justly esteemed by his neighbors as a good, practical farmer and a worthy, intelligent citizen.

## CHAPTER XXXV.

### LINCOLN TOWNSHIP.\*

Location and Topography—Settlements and Settlers—Organization and Officers of the Township—Manufacturing Enterprises—Fruit Interests—Hamlets and Villages—Patrons of Husbandry—Schools—Religious Societies.

THIS is one of the lake-shore townships, lying south of St. Joseph and north of Lake. Until 1867 it constituted a part of Royalton, which forms the eastern boundary. In the government survey it is designated as township 5 south, in range 19 west. It is a fractional township. The east half of the eastern tier of sections is embraced within the limits of Royalton, and on the west Lake Michigan reduced the territory to an area two and a half miles on the north and about five miles on the south line. The general surface is level, and in places low and swampy. A belt of land of this nature extends through the township from south to north, about a mile west of the eastern line, being bordered on the west by Hickory Creek, which affords the principal drainage. Until recently it was unfit for cultiva-

tion, but since the country has been cleared up and dykes cut much has been rendered tillable. On the east line is a strip of clayey loam land, the beauty and fertility of which are not surpassed in the county. Here are a number of well-improved farms. West of Hickory Creek most of the country was originally barren, and was not improved until lately, the sterile appearance of the soil causing settlers to give other localities the preference. It has been found to be well adapted for fruit culture, and by proper treatment has been made very productive. In this part were formerly forests of pine, and clusters of these trees yet remain. The other parts of the township were timbered with the common woods, which formed in places dense forests, and the labor of clearing the ground was everywhere difficult. Besides Hickory Creek, there are a number of small brooks in the township, the St. Joseph River, in the extreme northeast, and in the southwest three lagoons, which, with the marshes bordering them, bear the name of the Grand Marais. They are sluggish sheets of water and render that part of the township swampy.

Within the present territory of Lincoln one of the earliest settlements in Berrien County was made, as early as 1827, by Maj. Timothy Smith, who came from Ohio, and had been for a time a teacher at the Carey Mission. His location was in the northern part of what is now the township of Lincoln, near the east bank of Hickory Creek. His house was the place designated for the holding of the first election for the township of (old) St. Joseph, which at its erection covered all of Berrien County north and east of the St. Joseph River. Maj. Smith was interested in the laying out of a paper village on the lake-shore in the western part of the town, but his project was not successful. Mr. Smith was the justice of the peace who performed the first marriage ceremony in the township of St. Joseph,—that of Calvin Bartlett to Pamela Ives. He removed to New Buffalo, and was lighthouse-keeper at that place in 1839. Not long after the year 1849 he removed to California. For a number of years after Maj. Smith located in what is now Lincoln settlements in the territory of the township were made but slowly, and what few there were were for a long time wholly confined to the eastern part.

Among the pioneers who succeeded Maj. Smith were Martin Lounsbury and Samuel Davis. The former settled on section 24 in 1842, on the place which has been occupied by David Myers since 1862. The only surviving member of the Lounsbury family is a son, residing in Kal-amazoo. Davis settled on the section south the same year, but removed to Berrien after the county began to be settled. Two of his sons, Nelson and Andrew, are at present residents of Berrien village.

In 1838, Gould Parrish moved to Berrien from Ohio, and worked on the new court-house, which was then building; after living in various parts of the country he settled on the southwest quarter of section 36 in 1843, and has lived there almost continuously since, being the oldest settler in the township. He reared eight children,—James A., of Mills Co., Iowa; William M., living at Stevensville; Arza G., editor of the Mills County *Republican*; and Ezra B., living in the same county. Three daughters attained womanhood, viz.: Mrs. Luther Hemmingway, of Sodus;

\* By John L. Rockey.

Mrs. H. Williams, of Lincoln; and Mrs. Applegate, of Mills Co., Iowa.

About the same time, or a little earlier, Harrison and John V. Nash and their mother made a beginning on section 34, but in the course of ten years sold to Benjamin Lemon, and moved to a place nearer Stevensville. Subsequently, John V. removed to Hagar, and Harrison to Oronoko, where both yet reside.

In 1845, Leonard Archer became a resident of section 36, settling on the place now occupied by the family of Leroy W. Archer, who also came the same year, and who died there in the winter of 1878. Leonard Archer moved to Adams Co., Iowa, a number of years ago. Later in the season of 1845, Mrs. Mary Archer, the widowed mother of the above, came, with her family. Of these, James is yet living in the township; Elizabeth resides in Idaho; Ambrose and Norman are deceased; Hannah married Hiram Parce; Submit, Stephen Lamunion; and Mary is Mrs. Gould Parrish.

Stephen Lamunion became a settler of the same section in 1847. He died in the township, leaving sons named James, Leroy, Norman, and Francis, who are yet residents of this neighborhood. His daughters were named Mary, Margaret, Nancy, and Almeda, three of whom yet survive and live in the southern part of the county.

On the James Morrow place Alonzo Spear settled, after 1850, his son Charles coming the same time. Other sons were Lloyd and Isaac. The father died in the township, and most of the family removed.

Stephen Bonnell came about 1854, and settled on section 36, on the place at present occupied by his widow, Elizabeth Bonnell. There were sons named Charles and Joseph, and two daughters. A brother of the above, Ogden Bonnell, came to the township about the same time.

On the opposite side of the road, on section 35, Alexander Wilbur began improvements about the same period, and a few miles farther north were Andrew J. and Isaac Smoke. In 1854, Dr. J. N. Percell and his father-in-law, James Dunham, settled at Stevensville, and near by were Hiram Barnes, Philip and William Walworth, the pioneers in their respective localities. Other pioneers in their respective neighborhoods were Jacob Fikes, John Bort, Orrin Brown, Chester Phelps, John Graham, Artemas Walker, Henry Evans, William A. Brown, George Martin, and T. W. Dunham.

The following names appear on the poll-register of the township of Royalton as legal voters (living in that part which forms the present township of Lincoln) prior to 1862, and were, therefore, among the early settlers:

A. G. Abbe, E. L. Abbott, Christian Abraham, James Archer, Abijah Birdsey, William Byers, Orrin Brown, David N. Brown, Lyman Beeman, Henry O. Beeman, Philander Beeman, Christopher Brown, Joseph Chapel, Powell Crickman, John Corrigan, A. D. Crandall, James Dunham, Hiram Dunham, L. W. Davis, John B. Danforth, Elias Davoe, Jacob Fikes, Hiram B. Gard, R. A. Gregg, Jacob Gardner, Samuel Green, Job W. Hollywood, Robert F. Hollywood, W. J. Hollis, L. K. Hyde, R. E. Johnson, Allen Johnson, Jacob V. Jeffries, W. D. Jeffries, Frederick Keeler, James K. Kinne, James Lamunion, John W. R. Leister, N. H. Lounsberry, John Mickie, George N. Martin, Alexander McDonald, William F. Morrow, Nicholas Miller, Barnard Miller, Elias B. Miller, Daniel A. Miller, Elijah H. Myers, Thomas S.

Myers, Harrison Nash, John V. Nash, Gould Parrish, James A. Parrish, John N. Percell, Hiram Parce, Chester P. Phelps, B. M. Quint, Moses B. Quint, Lewis Richards, Charles S. Richardson, Thomas Richardson, Andrew J. Smoke, Alonzo Spear, Henry S. Strickland, Ansel Stone, Mitchell Spillman, Charles Spear, Austin J. Sperry, William Smith, Jacob Van Deusen, Peter Van Deusen, Philip M. Walworth, John Wagner, Artemas Walker.

From this time on the population increased very rapidly. In 1868 the following persons were assessed to pay a tax on personal property, and in most instances they were residents of the township at that time:

Names.	Section.	Names.	Section.
Leroy W. Archer.....	36	Christopher Miller.....	22
James Archer.....	26	Barnard Miller.....	12
Christian Abraham.....	2	David Myers.....	24
E. L. Abbott.....	9	Joseph C. Myers.....	13
W. W. Alport.....	10	C. P. Martin.....	23
J. W. Brown.....	15	John Milke.....	10
Orrin Brown.....	9	John Magnus.....	15
John S. Brown.....	3	John V. Nash.....	28
Alonzo D. Brown.....	3	Harrison Nash.....	28
Orrin J. Brown.....	11	Nelson & Benjamin.....	21
Chester Brown.....	11	Ole Olson.....	21
Augusta Brown.....	11	J. A. Parrish.....	23
William A. Brown.....	33	Gould Parrish.....	36
Christopher Brown.....	26	Victor Ples.....	21
D. N. Brown.....	9	Hiram Pendlan.....	13
D. R. Baldwin.....	2	John N. Percell.....	21
Philander Beeman.....	2	Perley Putnam.....	22
Charles Breithaupt.....	15	Chester Phelps.....	9
Elizabeth Bonnell.....	36	Charles W. Peters.....	2
Gael Bronson.....	14	Andrew Passoski.....	2
Lyman Bronson.....	23	B. M. Pettit.....	3
Caro Bronson.....	14	Subant Parce.....	36
Horace Bronson.....	14	B. M. Quint.....	28
Daniel Bowker.....	14	O. W. Quint.....	28
E. S. Caldwell.....	9	C. L. Richardson.....	14
A. H. Conkey.....	11	James M. Richardson.....	23
A. D. Crandall.....	28	John Reeder.....	3
L. W. Davis.....	24	Charles Royce.....	3
Richard Dobson.....	13	Wellington Stewart.....	16
Hiram Dunham.....	3	Charles Stewart.....	16
T. W. Dunham.....	3	S. T. Smith.....	3
M. N. Dunham.....	3	William B. Smith.....	3
W. E. Dumont.....	25	George Smith.....	33
Elias Davoe.....	23	Ansel Stone.....	25
Henry Evans.....	32	John A. Stone.....	25
Daniel Fisher.....	16	John Stephenson.....	14
D. M. Fisher.....	32	Eri Stephens.....	1
Jacob Fikes.....	2	J. E. Stephens.....	1
Fuller & Peters.....	2	H. S. Strickland.....	10
Rebecca French.....	10	Michael Spillman.....	2
Jacob B. Gallinger.....	2	A. J. Smoke.....	23
R. A. Gregg.....	1	John B. Shin.....	22
Frederick Gest.....	3	E. J. Stambeck.....	3
John Graham.....	11	Joseph Stiles.....	3
A. O. Griswold.....	32	Sutherland & Granger.....	34
Fred. Grahl.....	27	Henry A. Trux.....	3
William Hudson.....	16	Nelson Upson.....	15
H. L. Huntington.....	3	Jacob Van Deusen.....	9
I. M. Hill.....	10	Peter Van Deusen.....	9
George Hight.....	10	W. C. Van Patten.....	28
L. P. Haskell.....	25	William Walworth.....	28
Hiram C. Hess.....	33	C. J. Williams.....	3
Jacob N. Jeffries.....	33	Henry C. Ward.....	3
E. R. Johnson.....	25	J. G. Wells.....	1
Allan Johnson.....	1	Harry Wood.....	26
Wesley Jewell.....	27	A. A. Webster.....	11
J. A. Johnson.....	27	D. A. Winslow.....	9
James G. Kinne.....	24	John Wagner.....	25
Samuel King.....	16	L. A. Wilber.....	35
J. W. R. Leister.....	27	William T. White.....	2
John Lawler.....	35	Artemas Walker.....	14
Leroy Lamunion.....	35	Whitney & Vanlear.....	2
James Lamunion.....	35		

The valuation of the personal property in the township in 1868 was \$11,125; in 1878, \$12,600. At the former period the entire valuation of Lincoln was \$149,719, and at the latter, \$152,460.

The whole number of acres in the township is 13,584, a small proportion of which is owned by non-residents; and the average value is reported as \$10.29. In 1868 the taxes of the township were about \$1100, and in 1878, for the same purpose, nearly \$1400.

## ORGANIZATION AND OFFICERS OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The township of Lincoln was erected and organized in 1867, the first meeting for the election of officers being held April 1, in that year; Abijah Birdsey, Wellington Stewart, and D. N. Brown presiding as inspectors. The Republican ticket received 106 votes and the Democratic 74. The officers elected were as follows: Supervisor, James A. Parrish; Clerk, Robert F. Vanvlear; Treasurer, Alonzo D. Brown; Justices, Leroy W. Archer, O. W. Quint; Constables, John A. Sperry, A. H. Conkey, B. W. Quint; School Inspector, A. O. French; Road Commissioner, C. E. Spear.

Since that time the principal officers of the township have been the following:

## SUPERVISORS.

1868, James A. Parrish; 1869, Leroy W. Archer; 1870-79, Alonzo D. Brown.

## CLERKS.

1868, R. F. Vanvlear; 1869-72, J. G. Wells; 1873-75, Martin Weiss; 1876, John F. B. Thompson; 1877, George W. McMaster; 1878, James A. Collins; 1879, William M. Smith.

## TREASURERS.

1868-70, A. D. Brown; 1871-79, Leonard Whitney.

## JUSTICES OF THE PEACE FROM 1861 TO 1879.

Joshua G. Wells, John W. Leister, Alonzo D. Brown, Gould Parrish, Gottlob Ketter, L. E. Knowles, James Dunham, Charles E. Spear, Leonard Whitney, William Gifford, D. M. Warren, Silas Latta, Peter Van Deusen, Abel Goddard, William G. Mielkie, and Taylor V. Ward.

## PUBLIC THOROUGHFARES.

It was with much difficulty that good roads were constructed in certain localities in the township. The yielding nature of the soil made it necessary to corduroy or plank the highways in many places, by which means they have been rendered not only passable, but, in most instances, they are in excellent condition. This is especially true of Lincoln Avenue, in the northeastern part of the township, which runs through a locality where the early settlers thought it impossible to build a road. The township has been divided into 14 road districts, which now (1879) are in charge of the following overseers: Adam Yound, William Gallinger, Erskine Danforth, William G. Mielkie, C. Kroenig, Henry Mielkie, Nathaniel Beardsley, T. W. Smoke, William M. Smith, George E. Smith, George Hollis, Charles Bonnelle, Henry Berendt, Christopher Miller.

In February, 1870, the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad was completed through the township, and subsequently stations were located at Stevensville, Lincoln, and South Lincoln.

## MANUFACTURING ENTERPRISES.

The first manufacturing establishment in the township was a saw-mill on Hickory Creek, on section 34. It was put up by Benjamin Lemon about 1852, and after being operated a number of years by him and others, was discontinued. At a later date H. S. Strickland erected a saw-mill on the same stream, on section 28, which was carried on until a recent period.

East of the present village of Stevensville A. L. Putnam got in operation a steam saw-mill about twelve years ago, adding a few years later a grist-mill. In 1875 the latter was destroyed by fire.

Some time about 1853 a water-power saw-mill was put up on section 10 by George Martin, which was operated by him until it went down; and on section 11 John Graham put in operation a steam saw-mill about 1864, which was destroyed by fire. Here is at present a good mill of about 1,000,000 feet capacity, owned and operated by E. A. Graham.

On section 22 Victor Plea built a steam saw-mill in 1865, which was discontinued in 1871, and the machinery removed to Stevensville in 1873, where it formed part of a large lumber, fruit-package, and turning establishment, which was also swept away by a conflagration. At the site of his old mill Victor Plea put in operation a steam grist-mill in 1869, but in a few years removed the machinery to a building erected for a mill on Hickory Creek, near by, where it was operated only a short time.

In 1871, M. M. Dunham built a steam saw-mill at Stevensville, which became the property of L. R. Brown in the course of a few years, and was changed by him into a grist-mill in 1877. It is supplied with three run of stones and good machinery, and is the only flouring-mill in the township.

Near Stevensville Fisher & Hoskin had a small steam saw-mill in 1867, which was burned soon after; and about the same time T. W. Dunham started a mill of greater capacity on the Grand Marais, which is yet operated to a certain extent. To facilitate the shipment of lumber Mr. Dunham erected a pier on Lake Michigan, from which schooners were laden. Other interests may have abounded a short time, but the foregoing have been the principal ones.

## LINCOLN FRUIT INTERESTS.

Fruit-growing has become the controlling industry of the people of the township, the acreage increasing from year to year until thousands of acres are used for this purpose. Until 1863 much of the soil of the township was regarded as unfit for the cultivation of peaches and the small fruits, but the profitable nature of the business in St. Joseph and other townships induced the planting of several orchards, which proved successful beyond the anticipations of their owners. Other clearings were rapidly made, and the barren wastes were transformed into fruitful fields as if by magic, enriching their proprietors and giving employment to many men. The failure of the peach orchards caused a temporary decline of the business, which has again attained importance since the culture of small fruits has received attention. In 1878 the shipments of berries from the different stations in the township amounted to 44,713 half-bushel packages; peaches, 15,904 one-third-bushel packages; and apples, 6899 barrels.

The shipments of 1879 will greatly exceed the foregoing, having already reached, in July, 40,000 cases of berries.

In 1872, before the failure of peaches, there were in the township 288 acres in strawberries; 104 acres in raspberries; 223 acres in blackberries; 35,154 grape-vines; 4092 cherry-trees; 140,987 peach-trees; 11,108 pear-trees; 28,567 apple-trees, 2327 plum-trees; and 4631 quince-trees. The first farms were from 2 to 98 acres in extent, and the growers owning more than 10 acres were as follows:



E. L. Abbott, B. W. Batchelor, A. D. Brown, Orrin Brown, E. S. Caldwell, J. A. Canavan, L. Carpenter, E. Dunforth, H. R. Dusenberry, Jacob Fikes, Gordon Brothers, R. S. Goodell, R. A. Gragg, F. Graff, A. Halliday, William Hudson, C. Kaper, F. Croft, Thomas Mason, G. W. McMaster, R. Miller, B. Miller, W. G. Mielkie, John Mielkie, A. H. Morrison, C. Miller, D. Myers, W. M. Parrish, A. E. Perkins, C. W. Peters, B. M. Pettit, C. P. Phelps, I. S. Reed, W. Smith, Charles Stewart, J. E. Stevens, M. Spillman, P. Vandeusen, S. P. Wadsworth, A. Walker, D. M. Warn, A. A. Webster, P. Weber, M. Weiss, A. E. Brush, T. W. Dunham, James Dunham, D. M. Fisher, H. C. Hess, Victor Plea, H. Putnam, H. S. Strickland, J. Vandeusen, W. W. Allport, M. B. Cleveland, William J. Davis, P. D. Locke, A. N. Merriman, and M. H. Morris.

#### HAMLETS AND VILLAGES.

The first effort to found a village within the bounds of the township was made by E. P. Deacon, Hiram Brown, and Robert Richards, of St. Joseph. In May, 1836, they platted a number of lots at the mouth of the Grand Marais, on which was to be built a village to bear the name of Liverpool. The power was to be improved for manufacturing purposes, primarily to cut up the large forests of pine growing along the lake-shore. The proprietors never realized their object, the place remaining to this day a "paper city."

North of the centre of the township, at South Lincoln Station, a post-office was established in June, 1879, with M. N. Lord as postmaster; and here a country store is soon to be opened, which will give the place the character of a country trading-point.

*Stevensville*, an important railroad station on sections 21 and 28, is the only village in the township. It was laid out by Thomas Stevens, of Niles, who owned a large tract of land in that locality. In the same season an addition was platted by D. N. Brown. The place contains Methodist Episcopal and Protestant Methodist churches, several stores, hotels, shops, a good grist-mill, and about twenty houses.

In 1871 the Stevensville post-office was established, with James Dunham as the first postmaster. The successive postmasters have been Solomon Fassett, Abel Goddard, and William M. Parrish. Several mails per day are received.

No merchandising was carried on in the township prior to 1870. That year Victor Plea built a store near his mills, in which a stock of goods was placed by Boughton & Graham. In the early part of 1871, George Morrison moved the goods which remained unsold to the depot building in Stevensville, and for some time kept a store there. But William M. Smith had the first store in the village. He engaged in trade in 1870, and continued until 1877, being succeeded by the present merchant, E. D. Collins.

In 1871, Dr. J. N. Percell opened a drug-store, which he has since carried on, and a few years later M. Dunham began trade in a building in which William M. Parrish & Co. at present have a general store, having been in trade here since 1877.

Fred. Sneek is the proprietor of a furniture-store, the upper story of which forms a grange hall, and there are besides a few small shops, which aid in making the place a good trading-point.

The first tavern was opened by William Gifford, in a building which is at present occupied for this purpose by Charles Hart. In a well-appointed building near by

George Morrison opened a public-house, which since his death has been carried on by his widow.

Dr. E. M. Pettit, a homœopathist, was for many years a physician in the township. Dr. A. D. Brown has resided in Lincoln since 1863, but has not been in the active practice of his profession. In 1854, Dr. J. N. Percell began the practice of medicine in the present township, and was its first physician. He still resides in the township, although no longer a practitioner. Drs. White and Hess were former physicians of Lincoln, and the present ones are Drs. Charles Hart and J. S. Beers.

*Lake Grange, No. 84, Patrons of Husbandry*, was organized in Lake township in September, 1873, with 13 members, but since July, 1874, has held its meetings at Stevensville. At one time the membership numbered 100, but at present only 35 are reported. Charles Lord was the first Master, and was followed in this office by David S. Evans, Thomas Mason, and, since 1876, by Samuel Marrs. The Secretaries have been O. P. Miller, William A. Brown, and C. P. Phelps. Orrin Brown is the present Treasurer.

#### SCHOOLS.

The public schools of Lincoln have received more than the usual degree of attention bestowed on country schools, and are in the condition shown below:

Number of districts.....	7
Children of school age.....	455
Number attending school.....	302
Value of school-houses.....	\$5000
Expended for schools (school year of 1879).....	\$2185.98

The school inspectors from 1868 to 1879 have been L. W. Archer, Leonard Whitney, Artemas Walker, A. G. Parrish, William B. Sprague, Charles O. Jeffries, Gould Parrish, Martin Weiss, Charles Hart, and A. O. French; the school superintendents since the time these officers have been elected by the township, in 1875, have been A. D. Brown and A. O. French.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

The Methodist Episcopal was the first church to establish its forms of worship in Lincoln township. In June, 1847, Gould Parrish and others formed a class, at what was afterwards known as Spear's school-house, in the south-eastern part of the present township, which had Samuel Davis as the leader, and other members from the Archer and Lamoon families. That winter a revival took place in this neighborhood, during which more than a hundred were converted, and which gave the class a large increase, among the members being persons belonging to the Smoke, Lounsberry, Parkerton, Porter, Wilbur, and other families. Preaching was had here from this time forward, in connection with appointments in the adjoining townships, the whole forming circuits, whose pastoral relations are given in the township history of Lake, in this book. The appointment is at present known as South Lincoln, and the class numbers 24 members, under the leadership of James Archer. The superintendent of the Sunday-school is F. Lamoun. The school has 25 members.

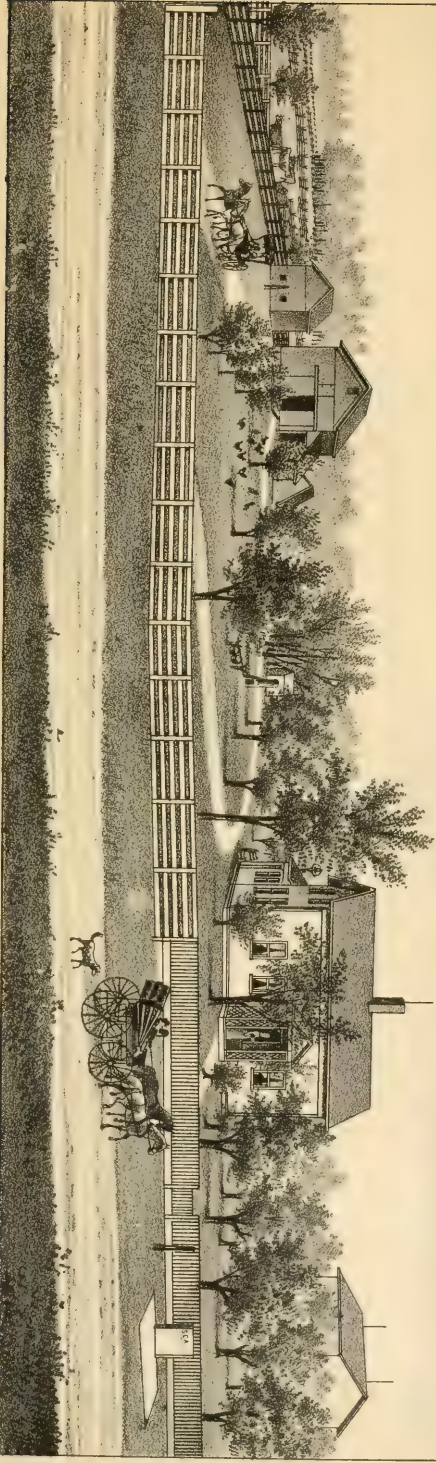
Through the preaching of the Revs. Gould Parrish and William Penland, local ministers of the circuit, a revival of religion took place in 1866, at what was then called the



MRS. L. W. ARCHER.



L. W. ARCHER.



RESIDENCE OF THE LATE L. W. ARCHER, LINCOLN, MICH.





Nash school-house, in the western part of the township, and a class was formed which did not prosper until the following year, when George E. Smith became the class-leader. C. O. Jeffries was one of the active members, and as a result of another revival, which occurred in the winter of 1867-68, 30 persons were converted, strengthening the class and giving it permanency. It is at present known as the Stevensville class, and George Smith is in charge of the 26 members composing it as their leader. The class at Lincoln Avenue has been supplied with preaching since 1867. It has at present 32 members, and William Johnson as the leader. The Sunday-school at that place is also superintended by Mr. Johnson, and has 50 members. The services at Stevensville are held in the Methodist Episcopal Church edifice, a neat frame building, which was erected in the summer of 1878, at a cost of \$800. The building committee was composed of Edward Johnson, James Johnson, and the pastor, the Rev. J. R. Skinner. It was dedicated July 18, 1878, by Bishop Merrill, and is a comfortable place of worship. The present trustees are George Smith, James Johnson, William M. Parrish, Philo Hyde, and C. O. Jeffries.

Stevensville and Lincoln Avenue are also parts of Bridgman circuit, whose history is given in connection with Lake township, to which the reader is referred for the names of the pastors who have served these appointments. In the Stevensville church a Sunday-school of 50 members is superintended by Lillie Putnam.

*The Protestant Methodist Church of Stevensville.*—Since 1854 members who entertained the faith of this denomination have resided in the township, but it was not until 1867 that regular preaching was supplied. At the solicitation of T. W. Dunham, the Rev. Mr. Reeves came about that time to preach to the people residing in the western part of the township, and continued his services with some regularity more than two years. Other ministers followed, among them being Revs. Shepardson and Patterson. The present preacher is the Rev. D. M. Weaver.

In 1876 a frame meeting-house for the use of the society was begun at Stevensville, but was not completed until the latter part of 1878. A protracted meeting was then held here which promoted a revival and secured an addition of 20 church members. The church has a total membership of 32. T. W. Dunham is the class-leader, and D. W. Percell the steward. A flourishing Sunday-school is maintained, which has Frank Hoskin for superintendent.

*The Trinity Evangelical Lutheran Church of St. Joseph* erected a building in the northern part of Lincoln, for the accommodation of its members in this township, in the fall of 1878, in which the pastor of that church preaches twice per month. A day-school for the promotion of secular and religious education has been maintained the past year. It was attended by 64 pupils.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### DAVID MYERS

was born in Trumbull Co., Ohio, Sept. 25, 1825, and remained in Ohio and the Eastern States until 1855, engaged during this time in various kinds of business, as farming, working by the month, driving stock to the Eastern markets, settling on the canal, etc. In 1855 he came to Michigan, working in Niles township. There he purchased a saw-mill, ran it, and bought and sold lumber in partnership with Justice Corwin. In 1859 he sold out to his partner, and rented a farm east of Berrien Springs. In 1862 he bought one hundred and sixty acres of land in Royalton, cleared about forty acres, built a house and barn, and set out an orchard, remaining there until 1865, when he moved to Lincoln township on one hundred and twenty acres of land, it being one of the oldest farms in the township. He is still engaged in farming, fruit-growing, and buying and selling stock. He has made a success of all these vocations. In 1858, Mr. Myers married H. J., daughter of Shadrach Ford. Mrs. Myers was born in Berrien township, Nov. 22, 1837,—her father being one of the first settlers in the county.

### L. W. ARCHER

was born in the State of Vermont, Feb. 28, 1821. At the early age of seven years he moved to Orleans Co., N. Y., where he remained five years, going from there to Upper Canada, and remaining two years; he then returned to Orleans County.

After a short time he took the Michigan fever, as many were going from that portion of New York to Michigan, and he decided to try his fortunes in the new State. He stopped first at Niles, arriving there in 1845, remaining until 1860, when he settled in Lincoln township, where he remained until his death.

Mr. Archer at the early age of sixteen years embraced religion, and joined the Methodist Episcopal Church, and during his entire life was an active member, filling many positions of trust in the church. His death occurred Feb. 22, 1879, but the grim messenger found him at his post, and released him from his labors that he might receive his final reward. He left behind him a wife and four children, who, with many friends, mourn his loss.

Mrs. Archer's maiden name was Lorinda Stone. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Archer have all nearly reached the estate of manhood and womanhood.

### DR. J. N. PERCELL.

This gentleman was born in Mayfield, Montgomery Co., N. Y., Feb. 17, 1828. When but six years of age he lost his father, and was taken by his grandfather, Daniel Anderson, with whom he made his home until he was fourteen years old. He then removed to Johnstown, where he attended the academy some four years; then went to Michigan, with his mother and stepfather (his mother having married again), and settled with them in the township of Brady, Kalamazoo Co. Two years later he took up his abode with his uncle, Archibald Anderson, and remained

with him three years, or until the latter's death. He soon after contracted with the government to carry the mails from Fort Wayne, Ind., to Coldwater and White Pigeon, Mich., but tired of the work in one year. Returning to Kalamazoo, he found employment in the nursery of Timothy W. Dunham, and about four years later went into the



*J. H. Percell*

nursery business with James Dunham, at Buchanan. Dec. 12, 1852, he married Mary, daughter of James and Elsie Dunham, and by her became the father of seven children, as follows: De Witt (married Elizabeth, daughter of D. M. Weaver, who is a licensed preacher of the Methodist Protestant Church); Frances M. (deceased); Almeda (deceased); Francis (deceased); Mary L. (deceased); John N.; and Irene M. In 1854, Dr. Percell removed to Stevensville, Berrien Co., in what was then Royaltown township, now Lincoln. There he purchased eighty acres of land, but has since sold forty acres, and on this farm his son De Witt is now living. The doctor was educated at Johnstown Academy, New York, after leaving which he decided to study medicine, and attended several medical colleges. He entered upon the practice of his profession in 1854, at Stevensville, and continued until 1871, when he built and stocked a drug-store, and now pays his attention to the latter. He also is engaged to some extent in fruit culture.

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

### NILES TOWNSHIP.

Location. Topography and Water-Courses. The Carey Mission—Original Entries of Land—Early Settlements in the Township—Early Mills and Mill-Sites—Early Roads. Organization of the Township—Township Officers—Schools—Old Bertrand Village.

THE present township of Niles is bounded on the north by the township of Berrien, on the east by Cass County,

on the south by the township of Bertrand and the State of Indiana, and on the west by the townships of Buchanan and Bertrand, from which it is mostly separated by the St. Joseph River.

The surface of the township is undulating. In the southwestern part, along the St. Joseph River, precipitous bluffs rise along its banks, and back from the river on the west is the highest land in this part of the State. The land where stands the city of Niles was originally white-oak openings, and the soil is very well adapted to the production of wheat. In that section, within the bend of the river, are the heavy timbered lands where black walnut, basswood, beech, and maple grow abundantly. The soil of these lands is clay intermixed with sandy loam, and is well adapted to the production of every kind of grain. The soil on the west side of the river is mostly alluvial, and the surface gradually subsides into prairies in Cass County. The township is watered by the St. Joseph River, that flows from south to north through and along its entire length, being fed by several small streams. The only other considerable stream is the Dowagiac River, which enters the township near the northeast corner, flows southeasterly, and enters the St. Joseph about half a mile north of the corporation line of the city of Niles.

#### THE CAREY MISSION.

To Isaac McCoy, the Indian missionary, belongs the credit of the pioneer movement that opened the way and made a path through the trackless woods for adventurous spirits to follow. He was born in 1783, near Uniontown, Pa. His parents removed to Kentucky in 1789. He was married in 1803, and received a license to preach in 1804; emigrated to Indiana, where he preached among the Indians. On the 17th of October, 1817, he received from the United States Baptist Missions an appointment as missionary. After preaching in various places in Indiana and Illinois, he opened, Jan. 1, 1819, a school of six scholars, children of settlers, and one Indian boy of the Brothertown Indians.

In 1820, at the request of Dr. Turner, the Indian agent, he settled at Fort Wayne, Indiana, where he had the free use of buildings, and the school was commenced May 29th, with 10 English scholars, 6 French, 8 Indian, and one negro. On the 12th of March, 1821, the school numbered 39 Indian scholars. In June, 1821, in company with these Indians and Abraham Burnett, a young half-breed, as interpreter, who was one of the pupils and a son of the trader Burnett, at St. Joseph, he set out to meet a company of *Pottawattamies*, for the purpose of consulting with them on the subject of education and its advantages. On June 10th he met Topinabé, Chebass, and others at one of their villages. The advantages of education, knowledge of agriculture and mechanical trades, was explained to them as well as it could be through a mere lad. They visited at the village of Menominee, and again endeavored to explain to them the situation. They were received very kindly, and the desire was expressed to have them come to their villages and open a school.

On the night of the 12th of June they arrived at a small village of *Pottawattamies*, on the banks of the St. Joseph River. In the afternoon of the next day reached the Bur-

\* By Austin N. Hungerford.

netts, at the mouth of St. Joseph River. They soon after returned to Fort Wayne.

The *Pottawattamies* were in favor of the missionaries establishing a school in their midst, and agreed to assist in the endeavor to get a tract of land set apart for that purpose in the treaty to be held at Chicago in the summer of 1821. It was impossible for Mr. McCoy to leave home, but a teacher of the school was sent with full instructions, and Col. Trimble, of Ohio, a United States senator, called at the mission on his way to the treaty, and received from Mr. McCoy a written statement of the condition of affairs, and promised his earnest support. At that treaty—in Article 4—it was provided that a mile square should be selected on the north side of Grand River, and a mile square on the south side of the St. Joseph, and within the Indian lands not ceded, and that a blacksmith and a teacher should be provided by the government for each mission. This treaty was made Aug. 29, 1821, and ratified March 25, 1822. May 14, 1822, in company with three Frenchmen and Abraham Burnett, Mr. McCoy set out on a tour to the *Pottawattamies*. On the 16th he reached a French trading-house at *Parc aux Vaches* (Bertrand's), and passed on to the place where the Indians wished then to settle.

On July 16th, of the same year, Mr. McCoy received from Gen. Cass an appointment to take charge of the Indian mission, with explicit and minute instructions. His yearly compensation was to be \$400, and Mr. Sears, an assistant, received the same salary, and the sum of \$365 per annum was allowed to the blacksmith. The sites were to be selected by the President of the United States, and were to be placed under the supervision of Mr. McCoy. Six reports were to be made in the course of the year,—two to the Indian agent at Chicago, two to Governor Cass, one to the Secretary of War, and one to the Board of Missions. Governor Cass commissioned Mr. Charles C. Trowbridge to make definite arrangements with the Indians for the sites. The 10th of August was the day fixed to locate the site on the St. Joseph River, and a few days later than the 10th the site was located.

On the 9th of October, 1822, a company of 22 persons left Fort Wayne for the new station on the St. Joseph, with the intention to erect buildings, after which the family were to be removed thither. They started with two ox-wagons, one four-horse wagon, and four milch cows, and arrived October 19th. The place was named by the Board of Missions, Carey, in honor of one of the missionaries in Hindostan. The work of clearing, chopping trees, and hauling logs immediately commenced, and in a short time six log houses were built,—four for dwellings, one for a school, and one for a blacksmith-shop.

November 11th, McCoy returned home and began preparations for removal to the banks of the St. Joseph; and Dec. 9, 1822, the company, consisting of thirty-two persons, started, with three wagons drawn by oxen, one drawn by horses, and driving fifty hogs and five cows. At dark on the 18th of December the party arrived at Bertrand's trading-post, and the next day reached the mission. While on their way from Fort Wayne, they encamped one night at a creek that enters the St. Joseph near the mouth of

the Elkhart. Upon starting in the morning, Mr. McCoy named it, after his wife, Christina Creek, which name it still bears. The 1st of January, 1823, an invitation was given Topinabé, Chebass, and others of the principal men, to attend at the mission for a social visit. On the 27th of January of that year school was opened in the new school-house, with thirty Indian scholars, all of whom were fed, lodged, and clothed at the expense of the mission. The house was yet without floor or chimney. In February the provisions they had brought with them became exhausted, and the teams that had been sent out to Fort Wayne had not returned.

Mr. McCoy went out to see if he could find corn, and while traveling met Mr. Bertrand. Upon the situation being explained, he said, in broken English, "I got some corn,—some flour. I give you half. Suppose you die,—I die too." With his little Indian horse loaded with corn and flour, Mr. McCoy returned at night, and found that a *Pottawattamie* woman had sent in some corn, and they were feasting upon the poor Indian woman's bounty. July 10th two Indians brought about two bushels of corn, and two traders, by the name of Rosseau, hearing of the scarcity of food, brought half their flour from fifteen miles distant. On the 13th of February the wagons arrived, with plenty of food and five boxes of clothing from Boston and Salem, Mass. On the 21st of February, Mr. Johnston Lykins, afterwards a son-in-law of Mr. McCoy, arrived and took charge of the school.

In April, Mr. McCoy went to Fort Wayne, and on the 16th started to return, with a Mr. and Miss Wright, who were to assist in the school, six hired men, and an Indian boy. They drove 12 head of cattle and 110 sheep. Upon reaching the river they made a large canoe, and floated down the river with part of their goods, and, after camping, the canoe became loosened and capsized, and flour, corn-meal, seed-corn, dried fruit, and other things were lost in the river. Many of their things were rescued some distance below. On the route, while camping at night, about 70 of the sheep rambled away, but all but one were recovered the next day. A severe rain-storm prevailed at the time, and the situation became very unpleasant. At Bertrand's trading-house they found a fire and plenty to eat, after which they soon reached their destination.

Mr. Jackson, who was with Mr. McCoy at Fort Wayne, and came with the party at first, had charge of the smithery. In June, 1823, the mission received a visit from Maj. J. H. Long, Messrs. J. E. Calhoun, Thomas Say, Samuel Seymour, and William H. Keating, who were on their way to the source of the Mississippi. At this time, Mr. McCoy was on a visit to establish the mission at Grand River. Maj. Long says, in the account of his expedition, after mentioning other matters pertaining to the mission: "They have cleared 50 acres of land; 40 acres have been plowed and planted to maize. The mission family have a flock of 100 sheep, and are daily expecting 200 head of cattle from Tennessee, Kentucky, and Ohio." One hundred and fifty arrived the 15th of June, the remainder were lost on the way or were left to recruit. Transportation of breadstuffs had to be made a distance of two hundred miles.

The first report was dated July 1, 1823, and was made



to Governor Cass and Dr. Wolcott, the latter being United States agent at Chicago. They reported "60 acres cleared and inclosed with a good fence." In summer the sound of a trumpet at daybreak called the family to rise, and the ringing of a bell to morning prayers. At half-past six the trumpet called to breakfast, and nine o'clock at night was the time for silence to rest over the mission. It was made a point to have the rules of the mission carried out with entire precision.

In the latter part of October, 1823, Charles Noble was commissioned by Governor Cass to visit the mission, to examine and report its condition. He remained three days, and made a satisfactory report.

Nov. 5, 1823, the missionaries received a valuable accession to their company in Miss Fanny Goodridge, of Lexington, Ky. Mr. and Mrs. William Polke and family came in the same month. A Sabbath-school was commenced by Miss Goodridge, and on the same Sabbath the sacrament of the Lord's Supper was administered for the first time in Western Michigan by Protestants.

The clearing of land, plowing, sowing, and cultivating had been steadily carried on by hired men and the help of the Indians, and upon securing the proceeds of the farm 900 bushels of corn, besides garden vegetables, were obtained.

The annual allowance from government for schools was \$200, but in 1822 it was increased to \$600, and \$566 was obtained from government to assist in the erection of buildings.

In 1824, Mr. McCoy made a tour to the Eastern States, and received in donations \$1623 in cash. Mr. Robert Simerwell returned with him as a missionary, and remained in charge here until the closing of the mission. July 4, 1824, Mr. McCoy commenced preaching in the Indian villages in the vicinity.

The Hon. John L. Leib, of Detroit, was appointed by Governor Cass to examine and report concerning the mission. He visited the station Nov. 2, 1824, and remained three days. The following is quoted from his report: "Besides the Rev. Mr. McCoy and his wife, three male and one female teachers, and one of these Robert Simerwell, is also a blacksmith, six men engaged in agricultural operations, improving buildings, procuring firewood, etc., five Indian women as domestics.

"Two of the boys are learning the trade of blacksmith, and the others are occupied on the farm. All the girls except three or four can spin, knit, and sew. Two of them can weave plain cloth, and 294 yards have been manufactured in their loom since February last.

"The yield of corn the past year was 1600 bushels,—150 bushels of oats, 400 bushels of potatoes, 150 bushels of turnips, and 1000 heads of cabbage, besides other vegetables.

"The Indian families in the neighborhood show considerable interest in agricultural pursuits, and have commenced to fence land and plow and plant."

About this time, in the summer and fall of 1824, Mr. McCoy complained of the settlement of men on lands ceded to the United States, near the mission, whose principal design was to sell whisky to the Indians. Remonstrances were of no use, for they had little property and no reputa-

tion to lose. Many of the Indians manifested a dislike to the trade in ardent spirits, but seldom could withstand the temptation to drink.

Ezekiel French, a white man in the employ of the mission, was converted in the fall of 1824, and November 7th was baptized in the St. Joseph River. The ground was covered with snow and a fire was built on the bank for comfort. This was the first baptism administered in the river, or any of the waters flowing into Lake Michigan, by Protestants. November 15th, Ezekiel Clark, Charles Potter, and Jared Lykins were baptized. A few days later Gosa, an *Ottawa*, of Kalamazoo, brought to them the sixty-seventh Indian scholar from Grand River. Gosa afterwards became interested in and remained at the mission at Grand River.

Jan. 12, 1825, three Indian pupils were baptized at the Carey Mission; on the 17th of same month four men. In February, 1825, the mission reported 90 persons. On the 17th March, 1825, Robert Simerwell and Miss Fanny Goodridge were married.

After the Indians returned from their winter's hunt, they sought for lands near the mission to cultivate, and were supplied with plows, hoes, axes, etc., to assist them, and both men and women worked in the fields. Topinabé, the principal chief, and almost all his people settled south of the mission, and about 30 families were improving land rapidly and keeping live stock.

At this time they reported 200 acres inclosed, 30 acres in corn, with an orchard of between two and three hundred peach-trees and a few apple-trees. In May of this year, 1825, they were erecting a flouring-mill, to operate by horse-power, having previously used a hand-mill. Prior to this time the flour was ground by hand, using two stones made from boulders found near the mission. These mill-stones are in the possession of Dr. L. A. Barnard, of Berrien Springs, and are placed in the log house of the Pioneer Association. After the erection of the flouring-mill they were sold to Squire Thompson, and by him to John Johnson, Jr., from whom Dr. Barnard obtained them. During that summer the harvest of wheat was 300 bushels. The first to settle on land near them was a man from Indiana, who came on foot and alone to the mission, and settled as near the mission as possible, and for a time was dependent on them. He erected a little hut on the north bank of the St. Joseph River, and laid in a small stock of bread and meat and a barrel of whisky. In the spring of 1825 the sale of whisky increased to such an alarming extent that it threatened to destroy the results of the past labor. The Indians were induced to neglect their fields and improvements, and sell their clothing to procure whisky. Intoxication, rioting, and quarreling became prevalent, and the work of the missions seemed to be nearly at an end.

During Mr. McCoy's absence Mr. Simerwell wrote to him as follows: "Our white neighbors T—, G—, and E—, deal out whisky to the Indians plentifully, with which they purchase anything which the Indians will part with. The clothing of the Indians, farming and cooking utensils, are purchased for liquor. Articles manufactured for the Indians in our smithery have been seen in the stores of the whisky-sellers."

Mr. Lykins wrote as follows: "Sympathize with us, my dear brother, in our griefs, when I tell you every hope, every prospect for the welfare of the Indians around us, is prostrate, is entirely cut off. I entreat you to plead for their removal."

From this time efforts commenced to get lands in the West to remove the Indians.

Nov. 24, 1825, Mr. Jotham Meeker and Mr. W. M. Crosby joined the band at Carey as missionaries.

On the 15th of September, 1826, Mr. McCoy left home to attend the treaty to be held upon the Wabash with the *Pottawattamies*. At this treaty, which lasted nearly four weeks, there was granted to 58 Indians by descent, "scholars in the Carey Mission-School on the St. Joseph, under the direction of the Rev. Isaac McCoy, one quarter section of land, to be located by the President of the United States," and \$500 worth of goods were allowed for the benefit of the pupils of the school. Mr. Lykins was appointed to make the selection. The dilatory action of government caused a great diminution of the benefits expected. Instead of being cared for and guarded, they sold their lands and lapsed in a considerable degree to their former state.

Mr. McCoy had studied the Indian question thoroughly, and wrote a work entitled "Remarks on Indian Reform," the principal design of which was to show the practicability of reform and measures to be adopted for its accomplishment. He says, "We discovered that our Indians could not possibly prosper when they knew they had no settled residence, and when the influx of white population, and with it the introduction of floods of ardent spirits, had already aided discouragements to their spiritless minds."

A treaty was held at the mission Sept. 17, 1827, attended by Governor Cass and suite. At this treaty several small reservations were consolidated in one, \$500 in goods were paid the Indians, and \$2500 in money. In about twenty-four hours after the Indians were relieved of most of their money by the traders near, who supplied them liberally with whisky.

On the 15th of October, 1827, Mr. McCoy took leave of the station, intending to be absent several months. He visited New York, Philadelphia, and Washington, where he had an interview with the President and the Committee on Indian Affairs, with a view of getting Indian territory set off.

The mission, in the absence of Mr. McCoy, was in charge of Mr. Meeker, Mr. Lykins, and Mr. Slater. After his return he again left, on the 2d of July, 1828, on a tour of exploration west of the Mississippi, accompanied by three *Pottawattamies* and three *Ottawas*.

In September, 1828, during the absence of Mr. McCoy on the western trip, Governor Cass and Col. P. Menard held a treaty at Carey Mission with the *Pottawattamies* for the purchase of land. At this treaty the land between the St. Joseph River and the lake, except the plot reserved mostly in the town of Bertrand, was ceded. The mission was drawing to a close, and in October, 1828, provision was made for government to pay for improvements made in houses, fields, and orchards, whenever the missionaries should remove.

Mr. McCoy and Mr. Lykins were instructed to repair to

regions west of Missouri and Arkansas, and report the condition of the country and suitable location for a mission. They returned to Carey on the 26th of June. On the 10th of July 37 Indian youths were still in the school. Difficulties had so accumulated around Mr. Simerwell at Carey, that when Mr. Lykins left that station, in April, he was fully convinced of the propriety of closing operations there as soon as was practicable." Pursuant to an arrangement with the Secretary of War, the valuation of the improvements of Carey Mission was made on the 1st day of September, 1830, by Charles Noble, Esq., of Michigan, and Mr. Simonson, of Indiana. The improvements were appraised at \$5080; the growing crops, after reserving enough for the use of Mr. Simerwell, at \$641.50; in all, \$5721.50. This sum was paid to the Board of Missions in Boston by the government, to be applied in establishing missions in the West.

The school was discontinued, with the exception of seven or eight children, who remained with the family of Mr. Simerwell, who had leave to remain until he could make other arrangements. He remained a few months and located in the neighborhood, and thus ended the labors of that noble band of missionaries at the Carey Mission. On the 11th of August, 1833, there were gathered together at the Shawanoe Mission House, in the Indian Territory, 15 members of the Carey Mission Church, who organized a church, and continued the association and memories of the laborers at that place.\*

An incident in connection with Mr. McCoy is of historical interest, and worthy of a place in connection with the Carey Mission. It is given in a letter written by John C. McCoy, the son of the Rev. Isaac McCoy, to the Rev. G. S. Bailey, of Niles. This letter, which is dated "Wilder, Johnson Co., Kan., Oct. 13, 1878," has particular reference to the writer's mother. He says, "My mother's maiden name was Christiana Polke, one of the younger children of Charles Polke. In 'Jefferson's Notes,' a small book by President Jefferson, is a certificate from the same Charles Polke to prove the charge against Col. Cresap for the murder of the family of the celebrated Indian chief Logan. He then lived in southwestern Pennsylvania. He afterwards moved to Nelson Co., Ky., where my mother was born. Before the birth of my mother the Indians captured the stockade fort, 'Kincheloh's Station,' in which the settlers were collected (most of the men being absent at the time), killed the few men and many of the women and children, destroying everything, and carried away the surviving women and children as prisoners. Among these were the wife and three children of my grandfather, Charles Polke. These children were Judge William Polke, afterwards a prominent man in Indiana, Nancy, Ruby, and Eleanor Hollingsworth. They were taken to Detroit, where the British held possession, and where she (Mrs. Polke) was delivered of another child (Thomas), who died about one year ago, a wealthy citizen of Texas.

"My grandmother was ransomed from the Indians by

\* The facts contained in this sketch of Carey Mission are taken from the journal of the Rev. Isaac McCoy, in the possession of the Rev. G. S. Bailey, D.D., pastor of the Baptist Church at Niles, and from the "Indian Treaties" in United States statutes at large.

some benevolent British officers, and remained for about three years in Detroit, supporting herself and child by her needle. The three other children were carried off by the *Pottawattamie* Indians to the St. Joseph River, probably in the vicinity of the Carey Mission (Niles).

"For three long years my grandfather supposed they had all been slain in the massacre at the burning fort. At last my grandmother found means to send him word of their condition. He traveled alone on foot through the trackless wilderness three hundred miles in search of his lost ones whom God had spared. He was treated with great kindness by the British officials, who gave him such aid for the recovery of his children as he desired. He went alone, and at last found them, two with one family of the *Pottawattamies* and one with another, by whom they were adopted. When grandfather found the two first, William and Eleanor, and they knew he had come for them, they both ran and hid themselves. They had forgotten their native tongue, and it was with difficulty that he finally induced their foster-parents to give them up or them to accompany him. This transpired certainly but a few miles from the site of the old Carey Mission, where many years afterwards another child, and sister of these lost captives, went through toil and tempest to repay the very same people (many of whom were still living), not with vengeance or injury, but with gifts of richer and more enduring value than gold."

#### ORIGINAL ENTRIES OF LAND IN NILES TOWNSHIP.

The following list is of the persons who made original entries of government land on the several sections of Niles township:

- Section 1.*—Jesse Jones, B. Jenkins, A. Rogers, P. and D. W. Ritchie, F. Bronson, D. B. Howley.  
*Section 2.*—John Stone, C. Bordens and E. Huston, J. and J. W. Nye, J. Nye, Peter Nye.  
*Section 3.*—J. and J. W. Nye, William Ganwood, Ward, Olcott & Co., James Slater, Shelah Willis, Green and Renard, — Hannon.  
*Section 4.*—D. Redding and J. S. Griffin, T. R. Martin, R. E. Ward, Ward, Olcott & Co.  
*Section 5.*—William Lemon and T. R. Martin, S. Johnson and Henry Rice, N. Hawkins, John Johnson.  
*Section 6.*—C. Campbell, C. Pidge, Henry Rice.  
*Section 7.*—William Iredell and William T. Noel, J. Stephens and D. P. Pidge, Joseph Stevens.  
*Section 8.*—W. T. Noel, William Johnson, Luke Webster, and B. Lane.  
*Section 9.*—Ward, Olcott & Co., William T. Noel, J. Corner, T. B. Owen, S. Johnson, B. Lane, — Bronson.  
*Section 10.*—T. Olcott, Robert Fowler, — Beck, W. A. Perkins, C. Anderson, — Bronson, S. Johnson, W. Rensler, H. J. Slater, — Williams.  
*Section 11.*—H. J. Slater, J. Mason, C. Jewett, J. Vessey, J. Williams, J. Hartrich, John Ritter.

#### TOWNSHIP 8 SOUTH, RANGE 17 WEST.\*

- Section 1.*—W. M. Wray, H. G. Heath, J. Grove, N. Bacon, T. R. Grove, L. R. Stafford, Jr., John Redding, A. Griffin, Nicholas Weber, B. B. Kercheval.  
*Section 2.*—J. Bertrand, R. Benson, S. Bradbury, Bacon Wheeler, J. R. Finch, H. Bradbury, N. Weber.  
*Sections 3 to 10.*—Joseph Bertrand.  
*Section 11.*—Bacon Wheeler, H. B. Hoffman, Lewis Horton, J. Silsbee, C. K. Green.

\* Formerly that part of Bertrand east of the St. Joseph River.

- Section 12.*—J. D. Dutton, C. K. Green, L. R. Stafford, J. Bertrand, Jr., L. R. Stafford.  
*Section 13.*—George Johnson, Robert Nixon, George Johnson, Otis Jones, A. Bennett, H. B. Hoffman, J. B. Finch, — Mason.  
*Section 14.*—J. Silsbee, Madelaine Bertrand, Leon Bourassas.  
*Section 15.*—Madelaine Bertrand.  
*Section 22.*—Madelaine Bertrand.  
*Section 23.*—M. Bertrand, Bacon Wheeler, B. B. Kercheval, J. R. Weaver.  
*Section 24.*—D. Ingalls, J. Aldrich, W. Truitt, J. Nixon.

#### TOWNSHIP 7 SOUTH, RANGE 18 WEST.

- Section 1.*—J. L. Kinzey, Edward Legg, J. Strymer, — Snyder and J. L. Kinzey, J. Johnson.  
*Section 2.*—John Snyder.  
*Section 12.*—C. Sparks, J. Legg, Joseph Stevens.  
*Section 13.*—W. Garner, A. Price, J. Stevens, J. Noel, S. Babcock.  
*Section 24.*—B. Lykins, D. Brown, W. Broadhurst, Ralph Camp, N. Cotton, J. Carberry, B. Chandler, R. Camp, W. Cotton.  
*Section 23.*—John Hunter.  
*Section 25.*—W. Broadhurst, J. Stephen.  
*Section 12.*—D. B. Hawley, J. Vessey, E. Huston, J. Redding, G. and W. Boon, John Ritter and Eli Ford, G. McCoy, James Kirk, — Bronson.  
*Section 13.*—J. Carberry, S. Benson, H. Heath, D. Fisher, Eli Ford, Jacob Beeson, H. Chilson, A. Smith, Beeson & Co., John Marks, William Kirk.  
*Section 14.*—Eli Ford, S. Salee, Horace Parsons, John Raber, and R. Snodgrass.  
*Section 15.*—J. Hickman, S. Johnson, John Johnson, N. M. Beck.  
*Section 16.*—School lands.  
*Section 17.*—David Hopkins, Alex. Price, Thomas Lough, J. Sharp, and D. Brown.  
*Section 18.*—J. Comer and A. Price, William Garwood, R. Babcock and Isom Stevens, Joseph Stevens and D. Brown.  
*Section 19.*—D. Brown, William Broadhurst, W. Bronson and T. Voorhees.  
*Section 20.*—Runnel & Keck, James White, H. Rice and Benjamin Chandler.  
*Sections 21, 22, 27, 28, 33, 34.*—University lands.  
*Section 23.*—Stephen Salee, E. Lacey, Adam Smith, Ralph Snodgrass, E. and E. Lacey, T. K. Green, R. Clark, Joshua Comley.  
*Section 24.*—John Willson, A. Charles, William Justus, P. Clark, H. Langston, H. J. Slater, M. Willson, J. Ribble.  
*Section 25.*—A. T. Rogers, G. Shurtles, A. Huston, J. Hoyt, Jr., and William Liston.  
*Section 26.*—Joshua Comley, — Lacey, G. Fosdick.  
*Section 29.*—F. H. Ives, William Cotton, H. Ferguson, F. N. Penwell.  
*Section 30.*—William Broadhurst, A. Bronson, F. Voorhees, — Perry, J. Willett.  
*Section 31.*—A. Chambers, B. Pittman, B. Martin, J. Van Buskirk.  
*Section 32.*—A. Moore, J. Chambers, T. J. Buckell, W. Carton.  
*Section 35.*—B. G. Parnell and D. T. and D. Wilson, D. Willson, Jr., A. Griffin, Joseph Bertrand, Jr.  
*Section 36.*—William Loston, A. Huston, A. Griffin, J. W. Griffin, N. Bacon.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

Soon after the land was surveyed in this part of the Territory, emigrants began to come in and locate. Among the first was one Stephen Salee, a Poleander, who, after fighting in the Russian campaigns in 1814, emigrated to Preble Co., Ohio, where he kept a store, and in the late summer of 1828 loaded his household goods and his stock of merchandise, and, with his wife and two children, started for the West again, passing through Fort Wayne and South Bend. They came through the place which is now Niles, with their covered wagon loaded with three barrels of whisky, a sack of coffee, and other goods, and settled on section 23, about a mile and a quarter below the city. There Salee built a large log cabin, for both store and dwell-



ing, and there he lived and kept store for many years.\* He is well remembered by the old citizens, and his sons still live on the place. About the same time, and from the same place, emigrated John Kinzie, with his wife and eight children, of whom William Kinzie, then seventeen years old, was one. They followed the track made by the missionaries, and came through what is now the city of Niles, where there was then but one cabin. This was owned by Eli Bonnell, and stood near where Montague's hardware-store now stands, on the south side of Main Street. Above, on the river, near where the old brewery stands, and a few rods from the creek that flows into the river at that place, Abram Teitsort had a cabin. At his place the family stopped and drew water from his spring, and after a short rest passed on to the grove on the bank south from the Lacey dam, where they remained about two weeks in a vacant cabin. This was in September, 1828. Mr. Kinzie removed from this place to Pokagon Prairie before Walling, Lacey, Gray, and Justus came in. In 1829, at the place where Kinzie Creek crosses the county line, he built a dam and a saw-mill, which was in this township. In 1830 it was sold to George Boon, and passed from him to Lardner, who erected a fulling-mill. The dam is still used.

William Kinzie married the daughter of Joseph Grice, who emigrated from Preble Co., Ohio, and settled on Pokagon Prairie in 1832. He was one of the volunteers in the *Sauk* war, and marched to Chicago with the troops. In 1847 he moved into Niles, and has since been a resident of the city, except a short time at Buchanan.

Neil Sparks, in October, 1828, emigrated from Indiana and located on the bend of the river near Salee, on section 15. He had two sons, Levi and Spencer, and a daughter, who married Britain Jarvis.

Joseph Stephens, a native of Rowan Co., N. C., removed to Wayne Co., Ind., when sixteen years of age, and afterwards lived five years in Kentucky with his grandfather. In 1828, in company with eight others, he went on a prospecting tour through Western Michigan, and on the return passed up the St. Joseph valley and visited the mission. Cornelius Sparks, one of the party, moved out to this township that fall and settled in the bend of the river. At the urgent solicitation of Sparks, he again visited here in 1829, and at that time left money with John Johnson to enter land for him. The 160 acres he purchased was the first sale in this region in Western Michigan. He moved his family in 1830. He entered land from time to time till he had 400 acres, and has given all his children good farms, and has 320 acres of valuable land left. He is still hale and hearty at seventy-five years of age.

John Hunter emigrated to this county and settled, in 1831, on section 24, in the bend of the river, where Mr. J. Jones lived afterwards. He was a Methodist, and a class was formed at his house in 1832. He died in 1835. His son, Thomas J. Hunter, lived in Buchanan, and another son, A. G. Hunter, is living in Niles township.

Benjamin Churchill came to St. Joseph in 1830, and in 1831 selected land on section 24, near Mr. Hunter, and

where A. W. Bachelor now owns. He afterwards moved to Buchanan township, where he died. Darius Jennings married a daughter of his. Mr. Hunter was called by the Indians *Mu-qua*, meaning Bear, and Mr. Churchill *Cheechueh*, meaning Crane.

John Stone emigrated in 1832 from Huron Co., Ohio, and located 600 acres on section 2. At that time there were no settlers between his location and Niles. The cross-roads were not laid out until 1853 or 1854.

Veazie and William Broadhurst came in a year or two after Mr. Stone.

Daniel Brown located in the western part of the township in the spring of 1830, but sold out in the fall to William Cotton, who lived there many years. John Comer, about 1833, settled on section 9, where R. A. Walton lives. J. J. Hamilton settled in 1836 on section 15; P. D. Lawman on section 16; Joseph Stevens on section 12; and Henry Rice on section 6.

William T. Noel, a native of Virginia, emigrated to this township in 1831, located lands on sections 7, 8, and 9, and settled where Dennis Clark now lives. In 1858 he left the country and emigrated to Texas, where he died.

Simeon Bradbury emigrated to this township in 1832, and settled on section 2, township 8, and range 17, on the farm where he still lives.

Timothy H. Ives emigrated to this township in August, 1835, from Tioga Co., Pa., with his wife and eight children, and settled on section 29, on the bank of the river, in the reservation. The family lived there until 1878. Francis, a son, is now living in Niles.

Obadiah R. Weaver emigrated from Rhode Island to Jamestown, N. Y., and in 1818 to New Castle, Ind. In 1834 he came to Bertrand, remained a few days, and went to Berrien Springs, built a store for Edward Ballengee, and in the fall returned to Bertrand village and located a lot near the centre of the village. He was a carpenter and joiner by trade, but was in the mercantile business for some time there. About 1840 he moved to Hamilton, Ind. One of his sons, Philander M., married Derinda, the granddaughter of Daniel Russell, who kept the first hotel at Bertrand village. Philander settled in Indiana until 1850, and moved to Niles township, where he lived ten years, and in 1860 moved to Buchanan. He was killed in a railroad accident at the crossing in the village of Buchanan, Oct. 8, 1874. Mrs. Weaver still resides in that village. Daniel Russell came to Bertrand in 1836. He was a native of Connecticut; moved to New York State, where he married, and remained until he came to Bertrand, where he kept the first hotel. He lived there until his death. He had but one son, Daniel, who settled in Indiana two miles from Bertrand village, remained thirteen years, and took up 100 acres on the northeast quarter of section 18, where he still lives. He has one son, Julius, living at Buchanan, and another, Edwin, who lives at Paw Paw. A daughter, Mrs. Philander M. Weaver, lives at Buchanan.

#### EARLY MILLS AND MILL-SITES.

In the fall of 1827, Eli Ford came from Ohio to Pokagon Prairie. There was at that time no flouring-mill in the western part of the State, and the settlers were much in need of

\* The first wedding in the township occurred at his house. It was of William Barlow. Pitt Brown, of Berrien, a justice of the peace, performed the ceremony.

one. Mr. Ford being an ingenious man, though not a miller or a mill-wright, determined to build a mill, provided the settlers would assist him. A site was selected for a dam on the Dowagiac Creek, at the site now occupied by the Cascade Mills. Money and labor were subscribed, and work was commenced early in the winter. The mill was a log building, and but one run of small stones were used. These were made for Mr. Ford by a Mr. Cronin from stone found in this section. In 1878 one of the stones made by Mr. Cronin for Mr. Ford in 1827, was obtained from the farm on Dowagiac Creek, and is in possession of Mr. Hutton, a miller at Sumnerville, Cass Co. It was a boulder, and, with the exception of the facing and furrows, is in its natural shape.

Mr. Ford was assisted in the construction of the mill by David Ford, a mill-wright, from Pittsburgh, Pa. The first grist was ground in the spring of 1828, although the mill was not entirely finished. The bolt was supplied from muslin taken from a dress of Mrs. Ford, and from these primitive sources the first water-power mill in the county, and the first flouring-mill in Western Michigan, was started, and grain from long distances in all directions came to this mill. Soon after this was completed a saw-mill was erected, using water from the same race.

The flouring-mill passed through successive changes, and is now known as the "Cascade Mills," which have four run of stones, and are owned by Badger & Barnard.

In 1829, Ephraim Lacey and his sons, Elijah and David, purchased the water-power on the Dowagiac Creek, now occupied by the Linden Mills, and erected a saw-mill.

The following entry is found in Elijah Lacey's day-book: "Oct. 5, 1829, To-day A. Thornbery and E. Chalfant commenced work at the saw-mill." "April 7, 1830, To-day Noah Brookfield commenced tending the saw-mill." The books are headed, first, "St. Joseph," then "The mouth of the Dowagiac," and still later "The Dowagiac Mills."

Timber was immediately sawed for the construction of a flour-mill, which was finished in the fall of 1830. The raising of this mill was a great event; men were few, and the first attempt was unsuccessful. A call was made throughout the country for reinforcements, and a few days later men gathered from different parts and the building was raised, but it required a jug of whisky to put the last bent in its place. Obed P. Lacey was the red-ribbon man of the settlement, but he was chosen to go to the village for the whisky. On his return, when near the mill, he hid the jug in the bushes, and returned without any. This caused dissatisfaction, and some went away; but it was soon brought forth from its hiding-place, and, under its exhilarating influence, the last bents went up with a will. The stones were manufactured out of the common boulders of the section. The winter of 1830 was very severe, the race was frozen solid, and the settlers were obliged to return to hominy.

This mill was afterwards sold to Putnam, and passed to G. A. Colby, then to Badger, who afterwards sold a half interest to Mr. Barnard, by whom it is at present owned, and known as the "Linden Mills."

In 1847 what is known as the "Volant Mill" was erected, by S. K. Finley, with four run of stones, on the banks of the St. Joseph River, but receiving its power from the Dowagiac. It was sold by Mr. Finley to James M. Hale, and by him to D. & W. K. Lacey, in 1871. They, in 1875, removed the machinery of the Depot Mills to the Volant Mill, increasing the equipment to seven run of stones.

In 1850, Elijah and David Lacey and Jacob Geltmacher built the Depot Mills, and in 1855 the same firm built the Decota Mills. In 1863, Mr. Geltmacher purchased the entire interest of the Decota Mills. In 1875 the Depot Mills were dismantled and removed to the Volant Mills. The water for the Volant and Decota Mills is supplied from the same dam.

In 1829 a dam and mill was built by John Kinzie on Kinzie Creek where the county line crosses the creek. It was sold in 1830 to George Boon, afterwards to William Bacon, and then to the Lardners, who erected a fulling-mill. The dam is still used.

A flouring-mill was erected in 1830 by Joseph Bertrand on Bertrand Creek, now called the Brandywine; William Ray was the mill-wright. The location was where the wagon-road now crosses the old dam. It was afterwards sold to William McOmber, and was changed to a distillery. McOmber ran it for five or six years, when it was burned, but was soon rebuilt.

Moses Finch built a saw-mill in 1831 at the mouth of the same stream. It was purchased by Maj. J. D. Dutton, and changed into a flour-mill with three run of stones. It afterwards passed into the hands of Cephas Mills. Both mills are now gone.

#### EARLY ROADS.

The commencement of the survey of a road from St. Joseph to Niles was made May 9, 1831, by Samuel Marrs, deputy surveyor, at the request of John Pike and Julius Brown, commissioners of Niles township. The road commenced at St. Joseph and passed through Royalton, Oronoko, Berrien, and Niles townships, to Niles. The survey was accepted by the commissioners June 4, 1831.

A road was surveyed from the Indiana State line through Bertrand to Niles, and recorded July 18, 1831.

This road began at the corner of sections 11 and 12 in range 2 east, of town 38 north, in Indiana, running north to Bertrand's Mills, intersecting the road from Newburyport to Niles on Main Street.

A record bearing the same date shows the survey of a road from Pokagon to Niles. Beginning at the town line at end of road laid out by the commissioners of Pokagon township, Cass County, running south, intersecting Main Street at Fifth.

Also a road intersecting the road from Indiana State line to the village of Niles; and one running from the east end of Main Street to the corner of G. Shurtes' farm.

Several appeals were made this year. One dated July 20, 1831, was signed by William B. Beeson, T. B. Willard, Abner Stitson, George Fosdick, Henry Drew, Jacob Beeson, A. Huston, Jacob L. Kinzey, William Justus, Thomas Denniston, Hiram Chilson, Erasmus Winslow, Garrett

Shurtes, Joshua Comley, Eber Griswold, Adam Smith, and Morgan Wilson.

The judges examined the several routes and ordered the two last vacated, and a new route to be surveyed, and declared it to be the public highway. The first route, from Bertrand's Mills to Niles, was ordered discontinued and vacated Aug. 27, 1831.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The territory that originally formed the township of Niles embraced all within the limits of Berrien County.

On the 29th of October, 1829, Berrien County, with others, was set off, and November 5th of the same year the township of Niles was erected, and it was provided "that the first township-meeting shall be held at the house of William Justus, in said village," that is, the village of Niles.\*

An act was approved by the Territorial Governor, June 9, 1832, setting off from the township of Niles the townships of Berrien and St. Joseph, which townships included all the territory in the county of Berrien lying north of a line running from the east line of the county of Berrien directly west along the north line of the present townships of Niles, Buchanan, Weesaw, and Chickaming.

The township of Bertrand was set off from Niles township March 23, 1836, and Buchanan, March 11, 1837; and on the 9th day of March, 1850, "all that part of the township of Bertrand which is east of the centre of the St. Joseph River, in township 8 south, range 17 west, be and is attached to the township of Niles."

The first township election after the organization of the county was held on the 2d day of April, 1832. At that time the township embraced the whole county. Jacob Beeson was elected Supervisor; Cogswell K. Green, Township Clerk; Thomas K. Green and Alamanson Huston, Justices of the Peace; Eber Griswold, Constable.

A few days later a special election was held, and Joseph Bertrand was elected constable and collector for the township, to fill a vacancy occasioned by the resignation of Eber Griswold.

The original records of the township of Niles are lost. The names of the town clerks are gleaned from the school records from 1832 to 1861 as follows:

1832, Cogswell K. Green; 1837, H. W. Griswold; 1838, Daniel Symmes; 1839-40, Jonathan Brown, Deputy Town Clerk; 1841, John O. Palmer; 1842, Jonathan Brown; 1843, George W. Goodman, Deputy Town Clerk; 1844, George Goodman; 1845-46, David Aitken; 1847, R. R. Gibson; 1848, David Aitken, Deputy Town Clerk; 1849-50, Thomas T. Glenn, Deputy Town Clerk; 1851-55, Thomas T. Glenn; 1856, George W. Hoffman; 1857, Thomas T. Glenn; 1858-60, Hiram Brown; 1861, Benjamin F. Fish; 1862-63, no record; 1864-65, Joseph S. Bacon; 1866, Clinton Noble; 1867-68, William B. Davis; 1869, Samuel C. Thompson; 1870, John Stayton; 1871, Samuel C. Thompson; 1872-73, Jehu Stayton; 1874, Samuel C. Thompson; 1875, John H. Young; 1876, William Hildebrand; 1877, Amos T. Riddle; 1878-79, Samuel C. Thompson.

The supervisors from 1832 to 1839 were:

1832-33, Jacob Beeson; 1834, Elijah Lacey; 1835, Jasper Mason; 1836-38, William F. Noel; 1839, Jonathan N. Brown.

\* Territorial Laws of Michigan, vol. ii, p. 786.

The following-named persons were justices of the peace from 1832 to 1841:

1832, Thomas K. Green, Alamanson Huston; 1834, T. B. Willard, Levi Mason; 1836, Joseph Stevens, William B. Beeson; 1837, John Varnum, Levi Mason, Isaac V. Comings; 1838, Samuel Hunter; 1839, Jonathan Brown, George Fox; 1840, Hiram Weese; 1841, Jonathan Brown.

The following-named citizens of Niles have represented their district in the Senate and House of Representatives:

#### SENATE.

3d	Legislature, 7th District,	Vincent L. Bradford, 1838-39.
5th	" "	Elijah Lacey, 1840-41.
16th	" 5th "	Joseph S. Chipman, 1845-46.
17th	" 19th "	Royal T. Twombly, 1853.
18th	" "	Rodney C. Paine, 1855.
20th	" 18th "	Franklin Niles, 1859.
21st	" "	Elijah Lacey, 1861.
22d	" "	Rufus W. Landon, 1863.
25th	" 16th "	Evan J. Bonine, 1869.

#### HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

1st	Legislature,	Cogswell K. Green, 1836.
4th	"	Thomas Fitzgerald, 1839.
8th	"	Obed P. Lacey, 1843.
10th	"	John Graves, 1845-46.
12th	"	Richard P. Barker and James Shaw, 1847.
15th	"	Samuel Street, 1850.
16th	"	John W. Butterfield, 1851.
17th	"	Harrison W. Griswold, 1853.
20th	"	William B. Beeson, 1859.
22d	"	Nathan Fitch, 1863.
23d	"	Evan J. Bonine, 1865-67.
25th	"	Julian M. Seward, 1869.
26th	"	John F. Coulter, 1871.
27th	"	Evan J. Bonine, 1873.

The last census (1874) gives the following statistics, referring to the township of Niles: Population of the township, 1795; taxable land in Niles township, 25,746 acres; improved land, 19,009 acres; crops raised in 1873, wheat, 68,492 bushels; corn, 110,610 bushels; other grain, 15,547 bushels; potatoes raised, 12,580 bushels; hay cut, 1661 tons; wool sheared, 10,737 pounds; pork marketed, 304,840 pounds; butter made, 40,548 pounds; apples raised, 40,045 bushels; acres in orchards, 758; capital invested in flouring-mills, \$48,000; barrels of flour manufactured, 25,850; value of flour, \$155,100; capital invested in saw-mills, \$5000; lumber sawed, 320,000 feet.

#### SCHOOLS.

Titus B. Willard was undoubtedly the first school-teacher at Niles. He taught in his double log house, in the summer of 1830. School was kept a short time, in the summer of that year also, in a log house that had been occupied by the Wilsons in the fall of 1829. That school was attended by Henry Justus, John Wilson, Emory Huston, and others. This place was bought, in 1830, by Rowland Clark, and is now owned by Mrs. Brethschneider. In the spring of 1832, Malvina Huston taught school in a house belonging to Col. Alamanson Huston, situated on Main Street, and now occupied by Alonzo W. Platt. School was broken up in May by the quartering of Gen. Williams' cavalry in the school-house. William B. Gray, of Niles, attended school at that time.

The first school-house was erected in the fall of 1833,



on the northeast corner of Sycamore and Third Streets. Richard C. Meek was the first teacher in this house. The building was used for religious worship and public meetings, as well as for school purposes. In 1841 it was sold to John Tibbetts, who removed it to the corner of Sixth and Sycamore, where it is now used as a dwelling-house. A brick school-house, 30 by 38, with accommodations for 80 pupils, was erected on the same ground in 1846. John Phelps was the first teacher. The ground was sold to Jerome B. Griswold in 1867, and the proceeds were devoted to the construction of a school-house for colored children, on the corner of Cass and Fifth Streets.

In April, 1836, a school was opened by A. B. Brown and W. N. Nevin, for teaching English branches, and the Latin and Greek languages. June 6, 1836, Miss Kennedy also advertised to open a female academy.

On the 16th day of September, 1837, a special town-meeting was held at the house of Boswell and Babcock, in the village of Niles, for the purpose of electing three school inspectors, and at this meeting George Goodman, John G. Bond, and William T. Noel were elected to that office. On the 20th of the same month the inspectors elected met and organized by choosing John G. Bond chairman. At that meeting the township was divided into five school districts. During the year Districts Nos. 3 and 5 were divided, and three new districts were laid off and organized.

At that time District No. 1 reported 92 children between five and seventeen years.

District No. 5 reported 30 children between the ages of five and seventeen years. District No. 6 reported 100 children between those ages, and District No. 8 reported 22 children between the ages of five and seventeen years.

March 31, 1838, the board of inspectors unanimously resolved that Districts Nos. 1 and 2 be consolidated as District No. 1.

At an annual meeting held at the house of Brownell and Babcock, in Niles, April 2, 1838, Elijah Lacey, George Goodman, and Edward H. Hubbard were elected inspectors of schools. April 11th of that year the board of inspectors elected George Goodman as treasurer.

A meeting of the legal voters of the township was called for Dec. 8, 1838, "for the transaction of such business as may be necessary to the establishment of a primary school."

The following report was made by the school inspectors for 1838: Whole number of districts, 8; number from which reports were received, Nos. 3 and 4; number of scholars between the ages of five and seventeen years,—No. 3, 26; No. 4, 31; number of scholars in attendance,—No. 3, 19; No. 4, 27; time school was kept, 3 months; amount raised in each district,—No. 3, \$174; No. 4, \$100; number of scholars in attendance under five and over seventeen, No. 3, 2; No. 4, 3.

The following is a list of school inspectors elected in the township since 1838:

1839, Elijah Lacey, Joseph Whiting, William B. Beeson; 1840, Joseph Whiting, John P. Healy, William Sampson; 1841, Joseph N. Chapman, Cyrus Dana, Abner P. Healy; 1842, Joseph N. Chapman, Cyrus Dana, Elijah Lacey; 1843, Joseph N. Chapman,

\* Andrew J. Clark was appointed in place of William Sampson, who removed from town.

Cyrus Dana; 1844, Cyrus Dana; 1845, Rodney C. Paine; 1846, James M. Stuart; 1847, James M. Stuart, N. Bacon; 1848, N. Bacon, James Brown; 1849, N. Bacon, James Brown, William H. Powell; 1850, James Brown, N. Bacon; 1851, James Brown, N. Bacon; 1852, N. Bacon, Levi E. Taft; 1853, N. Bacon, Rev. John Booth; 1854, N. Bacon, Elijah Lacey; 1855, N. Bacon, Elijah Lacey; 1856, Elijah Lacey, George W. Hoffman; 1857, Elijah Lacey, William B. Beeson; 1858, Elijah Lacey, William B. Beeson; 1859, Abraham P. Knox, David O. Woodruff; 1860, Abraham P. Knox, David O. Woodruff; 1861, David O. Woodruff, Andrew P. Mills; 1865, George S. Hopping; 1866, John E. Demott; 1867, Samuel C. Thompson; 1868, John C. Demott; 1869, Samuel C. Thompson; 1870, John C. Demott; 1871, Samuel S. Case; 1872, Levi Sparks; 1873, Hiram A. Edwards; 1874, Thomas R. Martin; 1875, Hiram M. Coan; 1876, Otto R. Moor; 1877, George W. Lambert; 1878, John E. Demott; 1879, Hiram A. Edwards.

An act of the Legislature was approved March 20, 1875, abolishing the office of county superintendent of schools, and providing for the election of a superintendent in each township to act with the school inspectors, and to examine candidates for teachers, and to grant certificates. In accordance with the law, the first election of superintendent was held in April, 1875.

The following have been elected superintendents to the present date:

1875, Robert W. Kay; 1876, James R. Claffey; 1877, Horace G. Cowell; 1878, James R. Claffey; 1879, John J. Claffey.

In November, 1843, the Western Collegiate Institute, under the charge and pay of the State University, of which it was a branch, was established; E. McIlvaine, of Pittsburgh, principal. The Niles Female Seminary, in charge of Miss C. Britain, and the Niles High School were in successful operation.

In 1843 four districts in Niles reported numbers of scholars, and amount of money apportioned from the sum raised by the township of Niles for school purposes for that year:

	Children.	Apportionment.
District No. 1.....	172	\$86.30
" " 3.....	39	19.56
" " 5.....	48	24.08
" " 6.....	40	20.06
Total.....		\$150.00

Apportionment of money from State school-fund for 1843:

	Apportionment.
District No. 1.....	\$63.64
" " 3.....	14.43
" " 5.....	17.76
" " 6.....	14.80
Total.....	\$110.63

Apportionment of primary-school money of 1843, belonging to the township of Niles, among the several school districts of the town entitled to the same:

	Children.	Apportionment.
District No. 1.....	207	\$86.94
" " 3.....	35	23.10
" " 5.....	46	19.32
" " 6.....	47	19.74
" " 30.....	28	11.76
Total.....		\$160.86

The first mention on the school records, of examination of a teacher by the inspectors, occurs Nov. 13, 1843, as follows:

"Albert Heath was this day examined by the school inspectors; was found qualified, and received a certificate.

"Geo. Goodwin, Deputy Town Clerk."



RESIDENCE OF BURTON JARVIS, NILES T<sub>R</sub>, BERRIEN CO., MICH.





December 18th, of the same year, Charles Carmichael and John Dendney were examined, and found qualified to teach a district school, and certificates were granted.

March 31, 1845, "Abigail T. Willard was examined by the Inspectors, was found qualified, and received a certificate." In the summer and fall of the same year Sarah Drake, Lucy Merritt, and James G. Willard received certificates, and were declared "qualified to teach a district school;" November 6th, of that year, G. H. Crocker, John H. Phelps, and William B. Hardy were examined, and received certificates of ability "to teach a primary school." Miss Cordelia Hopkins was added to the list of primary-school teachers in April, 1846.

The following certificates were granted at the dates mentioned: Feb. 4, 1846, Miss Mary Ann Hall; August 21st, Miss Fanny L. Bailey; November 7th, Alexander R. Ball; December 21st, George R. Hopkins; Jan. 4, 1847, Nathan McCoy; March 27th, Miss Mary M. Kimmel; April 13th, Miss Maria Swift; May 29th, Miss Mary Frazier; June 4th, Miss Sarah Fisher; November 12th, Moses T. Graham; December 2d, Miss Harriet L. Parray; December 4th, Watson Scott.

By the school report for 1849 the number of scholars in the township had increased to 1027, of which District No. 1 had 558. The amount of school-moneys received that year was \$349.18. In June, 1856, as per report, there were 1403 children, of which District No. 1 contained 801. Amount of money received was \$743.59.

A law was passed April 1, 1850, entitled "An act to organize a school district for colored children in the village of Niles," by which it was provided "That the school inspectors be authorized to organize a school district, to be numbered as they shall direct, not described by metes and bounds, but composed of the colored children of said village between the ages of four and eighteen years."

The district authorized above was organized at a meeting held at the colored Baptist church, July 1, 1850.

The last report of the township before the setting off of District No. 1 as a union school district was in 1859, when 1696 children were reported, and the school fund was \$811.42, of which District No. 1 reported 953 scholars, and its proportion of public money was \$455.93.

#### OLD BERTRAND VILLAGE.

Daniel G. Garnsey was appointed by Congress to lay out a portion of the Detroit and Chicago road, and while in this section of country he was so much pleased with the advantages of the lands near the river at Parc aux Vaches for the establishment of a settlement that he interested friends in the idea, and an association called the Bertrand Village Association was formed of John M. Barbour, of Dunkirk, N. Y.; Joseph H. Williams, of Vincennes; Dr. Ingalls, of Dunkirk; Ira Converse, of Batavia, N. Y.; Joseph Bertrand and Daniel G. Garnsey, the latter of whom acted as manager and agent. Permission was obtained of Gen. Jackson, then President of the United States, to locate a village at that place, with the consent of Mrs. Joseph Bertrand, the land being held by her under an Indian title.

Alonzo Bennett was selected as surveyor to lay out the village, which was done in 1833. Streets, blocks, and lots

were laid out, and building soon commenced. The trading-house of Mr. Bertrand stood on the bank of the river below the Chicago road. Daniel Russell built the first hotel, on the south side of the Chicago road about eighty rods from the river. Joshua Howell, in 1836, built a four-story hotel on the south side of the Chicago road, by the bank of the river, and known as the Steamboat Hotel. It was afterwards taken down, shipped to Berrien Springs, and re-erected. Capt. John Silsby, in 1835, built a warehouse four stories high, on the river bank, on the north side of the Chicago road. Michael Leydell built the Union Hotel, in which the first town-meeting of Bertrand township was held, in 1836. In that year Bertrand village contained 3 hotels, 1 warehouse, 7 dry-goods stores, 2 groceries, 1 drug-store, and a post-office.

The village lots were offered for sale June 4, 1836, but instead of selling them to the highest bidder the company bid them in and held them at extravagant prices. At that time the decline and fall of Bertrand village commenced.

A bridge was built across the river in 1837. The Catholic church was built the same year. A post-office was established, and has been maintained to the present time. James Williams was appointed postmaster in 1836, and was succeeded by A. W. King, Alvah Higbee, Benjamin H. Bertrand, Charles Seward, D. C. Higbee, Edward Easton, J. M. Seward, James Claffey, and D. C. Higbee, who is the present incumbent. It is now a part of Niles township, and has declined to a place of no importance.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### BURTON JARVIS,

the son of Zadok and Lucy (Owens) Jarvis, who were natives of North Carolina, was born in Rowan County, in that State, Sept. 6, 1816. His father's circumstances were not of such a nature that the youth could be given extensive educational advantages, and his school-days altogether numbered about one year. In 1834 he emigrated to Michigan, and located first in La Grange township, Cass Co., afterwards in Pokagon. During the first years of his residence in Michigan he boated on the river in the summer, and chopped wood, etc., in the winter. Oct. 15, 1840, he was married to Miss Elizabeth Sparks, whose parents were also from North Carolina. In 1842 he became possessed of the land settled upon, and cleared the farm upon which he now resides. The place has ever since been occupied by him, with the exception of four years and a half spent in Niles and one year in Buchanan. Mr. and Mrs. Jarvis are the parents of five children, of whom but one—Lucy Ann, married, and living in Buchanan—now survives; three sons and a daughter having died,—one in infancy, one seven, one twenty-four, and one twenty-eight years old.

Until 1844, Mr. Jarvis was a Democrat. He voted for James G. Birney; supported the Republican party until 1872, when he cast his vote for Horace Greeley; and since 1876, when he voted for Peter Cooper, he has been a Greenbacker. His farm consists of three hundred and

twenty-eight acres, which is in a high state of cultivation and very productive. His improvements can be seen in a view of his premises, which is given upon another page.

### DANIEL FISHER.

Mr. Fisher's parents, John Fisher and Elizabeth (Shupe) Fisher, were of German descent, although natives of Giles Co., Va. Their son Daniel was born in the same county, near Parisburg, March 6, 1801, and after becoming of sufficient age employed his time at farming and working at

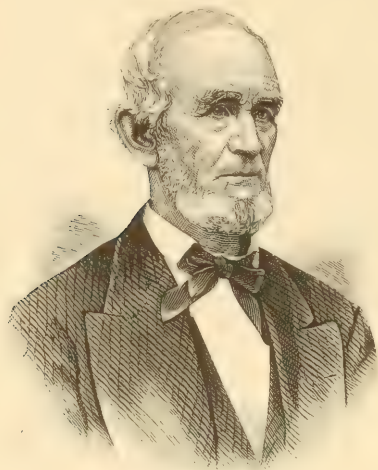


Photo. by Ives, Niles.

DANIEL FISHER.

the blacksmith's trade, which he had learned. In June, 1829, he was married to Miss Lucinda McCoy, and removed the next year to what is now Howard township, Cass Co., Mich.,—driving a six-horse team from Virginia to that place; he purchased one hundred and sixty acres of government land and settled upon it; he furnished the lumber for the first frame building erected in Niles; worked two months and a half for the Indians at Carey Mission; and upon the organization of Howard township was elected supervisor and treasurer, serving two terms in that capacity.

Mrs. Fisher became the mother of seven children,—Paris Decatur, John Harvey, George McCoy, Daniel Madison, Harriet Maria, William Henry, and Giles Montgomery, —and died Nov. 9, 1867. July 8, 1873, Mr. Fisher was married to Mrs. Fannie (Harvey) Rathbun; and in March, 1874, removed to the township of Niles, Berrien Co., and located three miles north of Niles City, having rented his former home. For twelve years he has been a member of the Advent Church. Politically, he was a Whig until the formation of the Republican party, of which latter he has since been a supporter. Mr. Fisher has retired from active business, and is enjoying the comforts of life in a quiet way at his pleasant home near Niles.

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

### NEW BUFFALO TOWNSHIP.\*

Location, Topography, and Original Land-Entries—Early Settlements—Real Estate in New Buffalo in 1836—Township Officers—Resident Tax-Payers—Sketches and Reminiscences—Harbor Improvements—Village of New Buffalo—Schools—Churches—Societies.

#### LOCATION, TOPOGRAPHY, AND ORIGINAL LAND-ENTRIES.

This township contains fourteen full sections, eight fractional sections in the southern tier, on the Indiana line, and six fractional triangular sections along Lake Michigan on the west. It is the most westerly township of the lower peninsula of the State. It is bounded on the northwest by Lake Michigan, on the north by Chickaming, on the east by Three Oaks, and on the south by the Indiana line. The surface is for the most part level, interspersed with slightly rolling land, and was originally timbered along the lake-shore with oak and some pine, and in the easterly part with beech, maple, ash, basswood, and oak. Lying along the coast of the lake, its soil is sandy and better adapted to the cultivation of fruit than grain, and to the former pursuit the attention of the people is mainly directed.

The water-courses are the Galien River and one or two small streams that empty into the lake in the southern part of the township. The Galien is, in this township, a sluggish stream, running through Pottawattamie Lake, which, in an early day, was a body of water two miles long, half a mile wide, and in places ninety feet deep, but in the main shallow. Its surface was covered with wild rice, and wild fowl in countless multitudes frequented it in early times.

This river flows from the east through Weesaw and Three Oaks, and is augmented by a south branch that rises in Indiana, enters the township near the centre of the west line, and flows northwesterly, forming a junction on section 36. This stream has Squaw Creek and Bloody Run as its branches. Galien River empties into Lake Michigan at New Buffalo village.

The list which follows is of persons who entered government lands within the territory of the township of New Buffalo, and the sections on which such entries were made:

#### TOWNSHIP 7 SOUTH, RANGE 20 WEST.

Section 31.—Henry Little.

#### TOWNSHIP 8 SOUTH, RANGE 20 WEST.

Section 6.—J. Little, W. Hammond, T. A. Clough, — Camp, R. S. Morrison.

Section 7.—F. Bronson, H. H. Camp, R. S. Morrison, W. Whittaker, J. Haas.

Section 18.—W. Whittaker, P. Hunt, Jr., Thomas Maudlin, P. Hunt, Jr., W. Whittaker.

Section 19.—W. Goit, J. Haas, B. Maudlin, W. Whittaker.

#### TOWNSHIP 7 SOUTH, RANGE 21 WEST.

Section 36.—E. P. Deacon, W. G. Driving, J. H. & R. H. Kinzie, B. B. Kercheval.

Section 35.—W. Goit, J. Redding, E. Goit, — Pratt, E. P. Deacon.

#### TOWNSHIP 8 SOUTH, RANGE 21 WEST.

Section 1.—B. B. Kercheval, N. Willard, I. P. Warner, B. Carver, T. Kenworthy, G. Taylor.

Section 2.—B. B. Kercheval, Beeson & Winslow, D. Robb.

Section 3.—Winslow & Britain, C. K. Green.

\* By Austin N. Hungerford.

Section 8.—I. P. Warner.

Section 9.—G. Taylor, C. K. Green, D. Robb, W. Whittaker.

Section 10.—D. Robb, C. K. Green, W. Whittaker, J. H. & R. H. Kinzie.

Section 11.—D. Robb, C. K. Green, B. Poole, R. Carver, T. Clough, W. Whittaker.

Section 12.—F. Kenworthy, F. A. Holbrook, A. Averill, Julius Hackley, F. Bronson.

Section 13.—J. R. Brown, M. Pierce, B. Butterworth, E. N. Sheldon.

Section 14.—J. R. Brown, J. Beeson, R. Goodrich.

Section 15.—W. Hammond, W. Whittaker, F. Clough, D. Robb.

Section 16.—School land.

Section 17.—B. Carver, Sheldon & Co., I. P. Warner, I. O. Adams, F. A. Holbrook, R. Goodrich.

Section 18.—R. A. Lamb, H. Bishop, I. P. Warner.

Section 19.—Warner, Sherwood & Co., I. O. Adams, J. Gerrish, Wm. H. Adams.

Section 20.—I. O. Adams, C. Jackson, F. A. Holbrook, I. P. Warner, R. Goodrich.

Section 21.—J. Haas, W. Whittaker, P. Carver, I. P. Warner.

Section 22.—J. Haas, F. Bronson, D. Robb, I. P. Warner.

Section 23.—E. N. Shelton, F. A. Clough, H. Bishop, — Trask.

Section 24.—S. & G. Belden, E. N. Shelton, R. A. Lamb.

#### TOWNSHIP 8 SOUTH, RANGE 22 WEST.

Section 24.—J. Little, R. A. Lamb.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The township of New Buffalo originally comprised Chickaming, Three Oaks, and the present township. The west line of its territory bordered on Lake Michigan. The shore-line was sandy and shifting, now forming into dunes, varying in height, often reaching 40 or 50 feet, and then again reduced to a level and moved to other parts. The soil in the western portion was sandy, and offered few inducements for agricultural purposes. The first to take note of its commercial advantages was Capt. Wessell Whittaker, a resident of Hamburg, Erie Co., N. Y., and for many years a captain on the lakes.

In the fall of 1834 he was in command of the schooner "Post-Boy" (partly owned by Barker & Willard, of Buffalo). During a heavy gale, when the vessel was liable to be driven ashore, they ran for the mouth of a stream now known as State Creek. They were beached, however. The weather was intensely cold, and the captain and crew left the vessel, and walked to Michigan City, where they procured a conveyance, proceeded to St. Joseph, and notified the underwriters of the loss of the vessel. While passing the mouth of Galien River, Capt. Whittaker, after studying the surroundings, was impressed with its advantages for a harbor. After transacting his business at St. Joseph he visited the land-office, and entered the land on which the village of New Buffalo now stands, and soon after proceeded to Buffalo, N. Y. He laid out the land into blocks and lots on paper, and called it New Buffalo. He then exhibited the plan to his friends, expatiated on its advantages, and persuaded Jacob Barker and Nelson Willard, who were partners in business, to engage with him in the new enterprise, and sold to them the undivided one-half interest in the property for \$15,000, afterwards reducing it to \$13,000. Capt. Whittaker, Truman A. Clough, Wm. Hammond, and Henry Bishop started from Buffalo and Hamburg on the eighteenth day of March, 1835, overland, and arrived at New Buffalo the first week in April, calling, on their way, at Bertrand, on Alonzo

Bennett, a surveyor and old acquaintance, and employing him to go with them and survey the village. Henry Bishop, now of Kalamazoo, was a clerk in the employ of Barker & Willard, and was sent by them to manage their interests. A log cabin, 15 by 24 feet, was first built, at the corner of Whittaker Avenue and Merchant Street, north of Seaman's Square. Along one side of the cabin pine brush was laid for a bed, and a fireplace was built in one corner. A road was then cut through from the lake to Talbot's mill, a distance of about five miles, from whence lumber was procured. Some lime was burned from marl found a short distance from this mill. Whittaker & Co. erected a frame building for a store and warehouse on water lot No. 1, at the foot of Whittaker Avenue. In this building was placed a stock of goods. Another building was erected adjoining, with an alley between. In this latter building Mr. Whittaker put a tenant, Mr. Cummings and wife, who opened their house for entertaining travelers. A sign was painted on a rough board by Mark Beaubien, since of Chicago, representing a man holding a horse, and also a decanter and glasses. Soon after this, Russell Goodrich, Truman A. Clough, Dr. Reuben Pierce, Myel Pierce, Simeon Pierce, Moses G. Pratt, and Festus A. Holbrook came by vessel from Buffalo, and soon bought lots. Building commenced rapidly. Russell Goodrich bought block 12, and erected a hotel on lot 2. Whittaker built a house for his family on block 24, lots 7 and 8, near a spring of good water, by the west ravine, that runs through the town plat north and south. Moses G. Pratt built where Dr. Moses M. Clark now lives. Dr. Reuben Pierce built on the corner of Barker and Merchant Streets, on block 23 and lots 1 and 2, where John Helm lives; Simeon Pierce, on block 23, adjoining; Thatcher Abbott, a brother-in-law of Whittaker, adjoining, on the same block and on lot 5; F. A. Holbrook and Alonzo Bennett, both on block 13. About this time Mr. Whittaker laid out a block as a gift to captains of vessels, as an inducement to them to settle in the place. Deeds were made for these lots, and the names will be found in another page. These lots were not settled upon by the parties, but were sold by them. This block was known as the "Seaman's Square," block 21. The family of Mr. Whittaker, consisting of his wife and four children, under the care of William Ratcliff, came from Hamburg, by Lake Erie, to Detroit, where they procured a team, and proceeded thence overland, arriving at New Buffalo in June, 1835.

Mr. Ratcliff carried the first mail to Michigan City, and Moses G. Pratt drove the first stage and mail-wagon through to that place. At this time there were a number of others gathered in the new settlement, some unmarried. Their occupations were as follows: A. Bennett, surveyor; Henry Bishop, clerk; T. A. Clough, speculator; R. Goodrich, hotel-keeper; Henderson, F. A. Holbrook, Mundie, Doty, Dunham, A. and E. McClure, Ezra Stoner, and Washburn were carpenters; Haight, plasterer; Maudlin, farmer; R. Pierce, physician; S. Pierce and J. Hixson, sailors; Pratt, teamster; Whittaker & Willard, proprietors; Ira P. Warner, agent. The lots were valued and sold at from \$150 to \$300 each, one-third down. In the summer and fall of 1835 important accessions were made to the settle-



ment in the persons of James Little and Jacob Gerrish, of Boscawen, N. H.; Richard L. Phillips, of Erie Co., N. Y., a native of England; and in the spring of 1836, of Francis and Joseph G. Ames and Alvin Emory, of Canterbury, N. H.; and Ezra Stoner, of Frederick Co., Md. A demand for the improvement of the harbor was soon started. Meetings were held and many speeches made, but the usual delay followed this action.

During the year 1835, Whittaker, McGivens & Co. built a mill, on section 1, on the south branch of Galien River. At the time of their preparation for this mill, they were warned by Governor Mason to appear at Niles and assist in the retention of the ten-mile strip along the Ohio line. Mr. Whittaker informed the Governor that he should arm his men with handspikes on the day set, which he did. He was also interested in a mill at State Creek, owned by the State Creek Mill Company.

In March, 1836, the township was organized, and the first election held at Goodrich's Hotel. A list of the voters will be found on another page. In this year, also, Isaac O. Adams, a native of Newburyport, Mass., but last from White Pigeon, E. T. Clark, and Timothy Harris built a house on lot No. 105, which was known as Bachelors' Hall, and which afterwards became famous as a convivial headquarters. The building remained until it was removed to make way for the railroad.

In the fall of 1837, the Virginia Land Company, composed mostly of natives of Virginia, but the majority of whom lived in Laporte, Ind., purchased 640 acres of land, and laid it out into lots, Joshua R. C. Brown coming there to reside as agent. The members of the company were David Robb, Dr. G. A. Rose, Courtlandt Strong, De Witt Strong, Maj. John Lemons, Joshua R. C. Brown, Daniel Brown, James Whittam, and Jacob Haas.

The books of Mr. Whittaker for 1837, from which these facts are gleaned, give the prices at that time, which may be of interest: Potatoes, 75 cents; oats, \$1; corn, \$1.50; butter, 37½ cents; bacon, 16½ cents; board, \$3.50 per week; salt, \$7 per barrel; beef, 6 cents per pound, by the quarter; whisky, 41 cents per gallon, by the barrel, and 75 cents at retail; team-work, \$4 per day; common labor, \$1 per day. Between the dates May 22 and July 26, in 1837, 95 consecutive entries occur of stage-fare charged, varying from \$4 to \$12. This entry also occurs: "Schooner Oregon left New Buffalo with 2358 bushels of oats, 1246 bushels to be delivered at Milwaukee; 1112 bushels were lost in a storm in Milwaukee Bay; also delivered 23½ bushels of corn. Left New Buffalo in April, and delivered oats at Milwaukee from the 1st to the 10th of May, 1837." Hiram and Solomon Gould were charged for use of lighter and labor in June, 1837. They owned a mill at New Troy, rafted their lumber down the river, and shipped to Chicago from the former place.

Not far from this time Lieut. T. B. W. Stockton, of the regular army, was sent by the War Department to examine as to the feasibility of constructing a harbor at New Buffalo, and the report of the Navy Department was received May 1, 1838. Lieut. Berrien and Lieut. Rose were sent soon after to make a survey, and reported favorably. A light-house was built in 1839.

In June, 1837, Elder Hascall preached in the dining-room of Mr. Goodrich's hotel, and, as the bar-room was near, some of the party were often thirsty, and retired for a few moments.

The panic of 1837 had a depressing effect upon New Buffalo, as well as upon the whole country, but the company struggled along, firm in the faith that the plan was essential to the well-being of the universe. Prices ruled high, no help came, and in the winter of 1841-42 but two families were residents of the place,—Jacob Gerrish and Russell Goodrich. But the spring found a respectable number in the village, and from 20 to 30 votes were cast at the election. About 1840 the effect of speculation ceased, and money became very scarce. About the only thing that brought money into the country was non-resident taxes. Inhabitants took contracts for building roads at their own prices. The business of the country was carried on by barter and credit. About 1844 the schooner "Saranac" was built by Joseph Oates and — Austin; in 1845, the sloop "Buffalo," by Amos Johnson; and in 1855, the schooner "Ellen Pike," by Alonzo Bennett.

Non-residents were still holding their lands for high prices, and but few sales were made until about 1850, when the tide of German emigration began to flow in, and between that time and 1854 the following Germans settled in the places mentioned: Philip Edinger, on section 1; John Bahl, on section 15; Louis Kruger, John Walter, Fritz Klauss, and C. Dohl, on sections 13 and 14; Christian Gulesdorf, on sections 15 and 22; Fritz, Louis, Adolph, and Rinehart Sigmund, brothers, on sections 13, 19, and 24. Gust. Horn, Christolph Kamm and his son, Fritz Louis, and Fritz Schroeder, — Roemer, Henry Luhr, and Carl Stannwell settled in the village. Since that time large accessions have been made of thrifty Germans, and the township is largely populated by them.

About 1844, George W. Allen, of Laporte, Ind., purchased the interest of Barker & Willard, and spent a large sum of money in improving a road from New Buffalo to Springville, Ind. They built a grain warehouse, 60 by 120 feet and four stories high, on the north fraction of section 9, near the foot of Willard Street, hoping to make this an important shipping-point for Indiana grain. During the same year Alonzo Bennett, Thomas Comins, and J. R. C. Brown bought several thousand cords of wood, at 62½ cents per cord, which was lightered out and delivered to vessels for the Chicago market; but even at this low cost the business did not prove successful.

#### REAL ESTATE IN NEW BUFFALO IN 1836.

Upon the purchase of the land on which New Buffalo is situated by Capt. Wessel Whittaker, in 1834, he proceeded to plat it, and induced Jacob A. Barker and Nelson Willard, of Buffalo, N. Y., to invest with him as before mentioned.

On May 31, 1836, a division and valuation of the lots was made.

The 79 lots, located in different parts of the village, belonging to Mr. Willard were valued at \$29,520. The prices of a few of the lots are given:

Lot 2, in block 3, \$500; lot 5, in block 13, \$275; lot 12, in block 16, \$500; lot 7, in block 22, \$600; lot 2, in

block 28, \$800; water-lot 33, \$900; lot 8, in block B, \$375; lot 7, in block C, \$475; lot 7, in block K, \$300. Water-lots Nos. 18, 22, 25, 26, 29, and 30, belonging to Mr. Barker, were valued at \$1000 each.

## SEAMAN'S SQUARE.

The recipients of the gift lots in block 21 (Seaman's Square) did not occupy these lots, though they afterwards sold them. The following are the names of the captains designated by Capt. Whittaker: Levi Allen, Robert Wagstaff, Lester Colton, Samuel Chase, Charles Ludlow, James L. Baxter, Stephen R. Walker, John P. Ludlow, George Miles, Abi Allen, Ira Perkins, and H. F. Day.

The lands purchased by the Virginia Land Company (names given elsewhere) in 1837 were as follows: the west half of northwest quarter of section 11, northeast quarter of section 10, east half of southeast quarter of section 10, southwest quarter of section 10, and southeast quarter of section 9. These lands were platted and divided into blocks and lots, and were held for many years. When Mr. Barker sold out, in 1844, the lands of the Virginia Company were mostly in the hands of the original proprietors; the only lands in the village that were sold in the early day by Mr. Willard, with a few exceptions, were the lands that were allotted in the division of 1836 to Mr. Whittaker. Of the 800 acres originally laid out and platted, seven-eighths in 1844 were in the hands of the original proprietors.

About 1842-43 the prices were from \$5 to \$25 a lot, and upon the location of the railroad they advanced to from \$100 to \$500; but upon the extension of the railroad to Chicago a depreciation followed. Upon the incoming of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, prices again advanced. Farming-lands in New Buffalo township sold at from \$2.50 to \$5 per acre. From 1840-46 prices were from 75 cents to \$3.50 per acre; in 1850, about \$5 per acre; in 1856, about \$15; from 1863-70, from \$10 to \$40.

## ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIP.

The township of New Buffalo was erected by act of the Legislature, March 23, 1836. The text is as follows:

"All that portion of the county of Berrien described by the United States survey as townships 7 and 8 south, of range 20 and 21 west, he and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township, by the name of New Buffalo, and the first township-meeting shall be held at the Goodrich tavern, in the village of New Buffalo, in said township."

In accordance with this act, an election was held in the spring of 1836 at the tavern of Russell Goodrich. Thirty-six votes were cast, with the following result: Alonzo Bennett, Supervisor; Henry Bishop, Clerk; Daniel Washburn, Festus A. Holbrook, Thomas Maudlin, and Alonzo Bennett, Justices. Robert Cray and James Little were elected Commissioners of Schools; Reuben Pierce, Festus A. Holbrook, Alonzo Bennett, Ezra Stoner, and James Little were elected Inspectors of Schools.

One hundred and fifty dollars was voted for the support of schools.

The names of the 36 voters at the first election are given, as a matter of interest: Alonzo Bennett, Henry Bishop,

T. A. Clough, Richard Comstock, W. E. Davis, George Dunham, Joseph Doty, R. Goodrich, F. A. Gilbert, Henry B. Hull, Joseph Henderson, F. A. Holbrook, Daniel Haight, James Little, Stephen Mix, Henry Mundle, Thomas Maudlin, A. McClure, E. McClure, Dr. R. Pierce, M. Pierce, R. L. Phillips, H. Pierce, Simeon Pierce, Moses G. Pratt, William Ratcliff, Ezra Stoner, Wessel Whittaker, Nelson Willard, John Wilson, Daniel Washburn, John Walker, and Ira P. Warner. But few of these voters are living in the township at the present time.

The population of the township in 1840 was 123; 1845, 416; 1854, 873; 1860, 834; 1870, 1389.

The township originally embraced the territory now known as Three Oaks and Chickaming, which townships were set off in 1856.

At the organization of the township of New Buffalo, by some oversight, fractional township 8 south, range 22 west, was omitted from the organizing act, and remained attached to the township of Niles for some years. It was annexed to New Buffalo in 1843.

## TOWNSHIP OFFICERS.

Following is a list of township officers of New Buffalo from its organization to the present time:

## SUPERVISORS.

1837-38, Alonzo Bennett; 1839, Reuben Pierce; 1840, Thomas Comins; 1841-42, Elkanah Ryther; 1843, Isaac O. Adams; 1844, Levi Paddock; 1845, Henry Chamberlain; 1846, Valentine Bennett; 1847, Henry Chamberlain; 1848, no record; 1849, Richard L. Phillips; 1850, Isaac O. Adams; 1851, Henry Chamberlain; 1852, Alonzo Bennett; 1853-57, Hale E. Crosby; 1858, James M. Patten; 1859, Alonzo Bennett; 1860, Joseph M. Goodrich; 1861, Philip Edinger; 1862, Abram I. Phillips; 1863, Richard S. Phillips; 1864, Abram I. Phillips; 1867-72, no record; 1873-75, George Werner; 1876, Alonzo Bennett; 1877, George Werner; 1878-79, F. Gerdes.

## TOWN CLERKS.

1837, Henry Bishop; 1838, A. Bixby; 1839-40, James Blain; 1841-44, William Ratcliff; 1845, Hale E. Crosby; 1846, Samuel Patrick; 1847, Dwight Plympton; 1848, no record; 1849, Samuel S. Clark; 1850-51, Joseph M. Goodrich; 1852-53, John G. Mason; 1854, Thornton Ewan; 1855, Thomas S. Ballard; 1856, Samuel Stratton; 1857-58, John D. Phillips; 1859, Samuel Stratton; 1860, Henderson Ballengee; 1861, Jacob Oppenheim; 1862, R. L. Phillips; 1863-64, John V. Phillips; 1865-66, no record; 1867, Seth Sheldon; 1868, George F. Collitt; 1869, no record; 1870-71, John C. Dick; 1872-78, Charles Duell; 1879, Moses N. Clark.

## TREASURERS.

Prior to 1839 the supervisor acted as treasurer, and the first election to that office was at the annual town-meeting of that year. The first to fill the office was Jacob Gerrish, 1840; Thomas Comins, 1841-44; 1845, Thomas Maudlin; 1846, Simeon Pierce; 1847-48, no record; 1849-51, Thornton Ewan; 1852, Truman A. Clough; 1853-54, Joseph G. Ames; 1854-58, Thornton Ewan; 1859, Joseph M. Goodrich; 1860, Isaac W. Martin; 1861, Louis Kruger; 1862-63, George Horn; 1864, Cornelius I. Bierstadt; 1865-66, no record; 1867-70, Sadler Batter; 1871-73, Henry P. Nourse; 1874-77, Albert Kellogg; 1878-79, George Horn.

## JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1837, Alonzo Bennett, Francis W. Ames; 1838, A. Bixby, Jacob Gerrish, and Sylvester Shead; 1839, Joshua R. C. Brown, Samuel Bennett, Jr.; 1840, Reuben Pierce, Levi Paddock; 1841, Thomas Comins, William Hammond, Richard Love, Levi Paddock; 1842, Richard Peckham; 1843, Richard Love; 1844, Festus A. Holbrook; 1845, Alonzo Bennett; 1846, Dwight Plympton; 1847, none elected; 1848, no record; 1849, Abel M. Brownlee; 1860,

Henry Chamberlain; 1851, R. W. Smith; 1852, Joseph G. Ames, Benoni Newell; 1853, Erasmus N. Shead, Dwight Plympton; 1854, Nathan Maudlin; 1855, Samuel Stratton, Maben J. Marshall; 1856, Hale E. Crosby, Festus A. Holbrook, Alonzo Bennett; 1857, Wm. Aldrich, Hale E. Crosby; 1858, Thomas Maudlin; 1859, Samuel Stratton, Isaac W. Martin; 1860, Festus A. Holbrook, Thomas S. Webster; 1861, George Horn; 1862, J. V. Phillips, Thomas Maudlin; 1863, Henderson Ballengee, Henry Leland; 1864, Thomas S. Webster, John Murray, Ludwig Lubke; 1865-66, no record; 1867, John R. Hill; 1868, George Werner; 1869, no record; 1870, John C. Dick; 1871, Alonzo Bennett; 1872, George Werner; 1873, Charles Deuell, Moses M. Clark; 1874, Henry Leifken; 1875, George P. Nourse; 1876, George Werner; 1877, Charles Deuell; 1878, Charles H. Schultz; 1879, Henry P. Nourse.

#### INSPECTORS OF SCHOOLS.

1837, Samuel Bennett, Festus A. Holbrook, Reuben Pierce, Jonathan Hasall, Francis W. Ames; 1838, Alonzo Bennett, Samuel Bennett, Jr., Dr. Reuben Pierce; 1839, Reuben Pierce, Elkanah Ryther, Jacob Gerrish; 1840, James Elain, Reuben Pierce, Elkanah Ryther; 1841, Wm. Hammond, Elkanah Ryther, Jacob Love; 1842, Thos. M. Bennett, Richard Peckham; 1843, Joseph M. Goodrich, Richard Peckham; 1844, Samuel Patrick, Richard Peckham; 1845, Alonzo Bennett, Henry Chamberlain; 1846, Valentine Bennett, D. Gilman Wood; 1847, Richard Peckham, Hale E. Crosby; 1848, no record; 1849, Hale E. Crosby; 1850, Jesse Wasson; 1851, Hale E. Crosby; 1852, H. E. Crosby, Jos. M. Goodrich; 1853, James M. Patten; 1854, Joseph M. Goodrich; 1855, Hale E. Crosby, Wm. Chamberlain; 1856, Hale E. Crosby, Joseph M. Goodrich; 1857, Alonzo Bennett; 1858, John W. Carter; 1859, Nathaniel B. Pitt; 1860, Hale E. Crosby, John V. Phillips; 1861, Charles Hanville; 1862, John W. Carter; 1863, Charles L. Denell; 1864, Joseph M. Goodrich; 1865-66, no record; 1867, J. B. Crosby; 1868-69, no record; 1870, Henry P. Nourse; 1871, Frederick Gerdes; 1872, Charles Eberling; 1873, George Werner; 1874, Charles Eberling; 1875-76, Alonzo Bennett; 1877, F. Gerdes; 1878, Charles Eberling; 1879, Henry E. Crosby.

The tax-list for 1836, as taken by Jacob Gerrish, Ira P. Warner, and J. S. Doty, is as follows:

#### RESIDENT TAX-PAYERS.

Abraham Willard, Henry Bishop, Alonzo Bennett, Truman A. Clough, James A. Corse, Robert Craig, Joseph S. Doty, John Foote, Russell Goodrich, William Hammond, Festus A. Holbrook, Jacob Gerrish, James Little, Henry McCourt, Stephen Mix, J. Love, Richard Love, H. Little, Henry Mundie, Hugh McGiven, Thos. Maudlin, B. Maudlin, Moses G. Pratt, Myel Pierce, Reuben Pierce, Simeon Pierce, Ezra Stoner, Thomas Thorp, Wessel Whittaker, Nelson Willard, Ira P. Warner, Willard, Whittaker, Barker & Co.

The assessed valuation of resident tax-payers was \$41,786. Wessel Whittaker was the largest individual tax-payer, his tax being \$30.00. Amount of resident valuation, \$41,786; amount of non-resident valuation, \$106,684; total, \$148,470.

#### SKETCHES AND REMINISCENCES.

Capt. Wessel Whittaker was a man of a noble, generous nature, and his house furnished a home for all it could hold. He was of untiring energy and great perseverance. His early life had been passed on the lakes, and he had acquired habits which in those days were common, and which were greatly to his disadvantage. He died in 1841, at New Buffalo, leaving a wife and four children. The family removed to Terre Coupee Prairie, Ind., where the youngest son, Alanson, still resides.

Alonzo Bennett is a native of Brookfield, Orange Co., Vt. He came to Niles, Berrien Co., in September, 1833,

and shortly after removed to Bertrand. He was educated as a surveyor in Erie Co., N. Y., and was employed to survey the village of Bertrand by the Bertrand Association. The proprietors of the New Buffalo tract passed through Bertrand, on their way to New Buffalo, in the spring of 1835, and employed him to go with them and survey the village, which work he completed in March or April of that year. In January following he married, in Erie Co., N. Y., and moved to New Buffalo. He was elected the first supervisor of the township, in 1836. He followed his occupation of surveyor, was elected to several positions of trust in the township, and in 1838 was elected county clerk, re-elected in 1840 and 1842, and elected to the Legislature in 1842. He returned to New Buffalo in 1845. He was in the employ of the Central Railroad for two years, and served the company as surveyor and paymaster. At the expiration of his term he engaged in the mercantile business until 1856, and for a short time was editor and publisher of the *Vindicator*. He removed to Buchanan and to Southern Illinois, and moved to Chicago, where he resided five years, when he returned to New Buffalo, and is now in the express and drug business. His son, A. M. Bennett, is in Chicago; Wm. Bennett, in Kansas; and two daughters, living in Niles, Mrs. C. Jackson and Mrs. P. A. Ballard.

Richard L. Phillips was a native of Oxfordshire, England, and came to this country in 1832, and to New Buffalo, from Hamburg, Erie Co., N. Y., in the spring of 1835. Nov. 11, 1839, he married Mary C., the daughter of Joshua R. C. Brown. He lived in the place most of the time until his death, in 1868. He was a man of great energy, but was seriously afflicted with rheumatism in his later days, which confined him to the house nearly half the time; he yet succeeded in maintaining his family and accumulated a competence. Joshua R. C. Brown, one of the Virginia Land Company, was a native of Virginia, and came to Laporte, Ind., and thence to this place in 1837. He lived on Barker Street. His death took place in 1862. His daughters, Mrs. R. L. Phillips and Mrs. J. T. Hopkins, live in New Buffalo; a son lives at Niles, two daughters in Virginia, one in Indiana, and one in California. He returned to Laporte, Ind., about 1838, and to this place in 1846, where he bought the Goodrich property and continued the hotel business until his death. He was a hospitable landlord and a gentleman of the Virginia school, with some peculiarities. An anecdote is related of him as follows: A traveler was stopping with him, and upon being asked if he would have some bacon and greens, which was a favorite dish of Mr. Brown's, asked if that was the only meat he had, and upon being answered in the affirmative, replied, sneeringly, that he did not eat bacon and greens; upon which Mr. Brown emphatically said, "Get out of my house, sir! A man that don't eat bacon and greens is not a gentleman."

Henry Bishop came with Whittaker, and clerked for Whittaker & Co., but in 1838-39 left, on account of his health, and went to Kalamazoo County, and is now a prosperous business man in the village of Kalamazoo. Truman A. Clough came to New Buffalo with the first settlers, but returned to Hamburg, N. Y., about 1840, and came back,



in 1850, to Chickaming, and in 1854 again went back to New York. Russell Goodrich was a long time, prior to his coming West, proprietor of a noted hotel at Hamburg, Erie Co., N. Y. He died at New Buffalo about 1850. His son Jasper was a prosperous man in Chickaming, and died a few years ago. His son Joseph M. was for a time a farmer in the township, then a merchant in the village. He removed to Chicago in 1869, where he was in the commission business, and died about 1875. Albert E., after being a steamboat clerk for some years, became a steamboat owner, and for the last twenty years has owned several very important lines on Lake Michigan. A man of ability and great energy, he has amassed a handsome fortune.

Festus A. Holbrook became a farmer in New Buffalo township, and at the present time is living with a grandchild in Three Oaks township, in his eighty-ninth year. James Little and Francis W. Ames died in the sickly season of 1838. Thomas Maudlin, a venerable man, lives on the farm which he settled, in the eastern part of the township. Dr. R. Pierce moved, about 1840, to Terre Coupée Prairie, Ind. He was distinguished for many years as a physician, and died about 1858. His son, R. W. Pierce, is now a leading physician of Buchanan.

Simeon Pierce went to Lake Station, Ind., and is now a retired merchant of Valparaiso, Ind. Nelson Willard had large interests in New York, and did not remain here long.

Isaac O. Adams, who perhaps did more to improve New Buffalo than any other person, was a kind-hearted, genial man. He went to Chicago about 1853, where he still resides. He was a man of culture and fond of story-telling. The following is told of him: "The peninsula known as north fraction of section 3 was speculation property, and was sold in undivided interests. At a time when property was at its lowest value a man came to the place from Connecticut who owned one undivided nineteen-hundred and twentieth interest. Finding no purchaser, he inquired of Mr. Adams how he could best secure a division. Adams replied he might get a division in chancery, but it would be expensive. The man anxiously pressed Mr. Adams to know what he had best do, that he might know how and where his property was. Adams answered by saying, 'You better go up to Uncle Jacob's (Mr. Gerrish) and borrow a two-bushel bag; go over there, fill it with sand, take it home with you, and you will have about your share.'" It is not known whether the advice was accepted.

Jacob Gerrish, coming in 1835, kept a record of events from that time to his death, in 1858, from which many facts in this history have been gleaned. His desire to see New Buffalo prosper led him to advance money to every undertaking that he supposed would advance the interest of the place. His house was open to all who came. The poor and suffering had only to ask to receive.

#### HARBOR IMPROVEMENTS.

The cause that led to the settlement of New Buffalo was the apparent availability of the Galien River and Pottawattamie Lake for a harbor. The advantages were seen at a glance by Capt. Wessel Whittaker in 1834, and 100 acres of land were secured by him very soon after the settlement

was fairly inaugurated. Meetings were held, speeches made, and the usual enthusiasm incident to such enterprises kept the minds of the settlers in a high state of excitement. Petitions were sent to Congress, which, after the usual delay, received some attention, and an appropriation was made for a lighthouse. The site was selected and stakes were set Sept. 6, 1838. Plans and specifications were made, and contracts were advertised. The journal of Jacob Gerrish of July 16, 1839, contains the following: "Lots of people in to the lighthouse letting; Hixon builds the house." The location was on a point of land in the north fraction of section 9, about a quarter of a mile from the mouth of the river. Sand dunes of from 30 to 60 feet in height were between it and the mouth, on which were growing trees from 18 to 20 inches in diameter. In the course of time the river and the lake washed away these shifting sands, and about 1857 the house was undermined and fell, for it was founded upon the sand. The lighthouse and keeper's house were built of brick and whitewashed, a large boulder of limestone found near by furnishing the lime. Isaac O. Adams burnt the brick. The buildings were finished in March, 1840. Timothy S. Smith was appointed the first keeper, under Van Buren. Wm. Ratcliff and his wife moved into the keeper's house June 1, 1840, Mr. Smith living with them. The keepers who succeeded him were Elijah Pressey, under Harrison; Reuben Smith, under Polk; and Joseph Miller, under Taylor. It was demolished about 1857, and has not been rebuilt.

Soon after the incorporation of the Michigan Central Railroad Company, they determined to make New Buffalo their western terminus, and work was commenced in the fall of 1847. The company built a bridge across the Galien River and two long piers into the lake, to make the point accessible for steamboats. This work furnished employment to a large number of men and caused a general revival of business. Capt. Eber B. Ward put on the lake a line of steamers connecting with the morning and evening trains for Chicago.

At the time of building the piers it was believed that New Buffalo would be the western terminus of the road, and the village received an impetus by the erection of a large hotel and other buildings to accommodate the travel and traffic. Steamers ran in connection with the road till its completion to Chicago about 1852, when they were withdrawn.

The Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, now the Chicago and West Michigan, was completed, Sept. 7, 1870, from Pentwater, Oceana Co., Mich., to New Buffalo, where it connects with the Michigan Central Railroad.

#### VILLAGE OF NEW BUFFALO.

The plat of the village was laid out in 1835, by Nelson Willard, Jacob A. Barker, Wessel Whittaker, and Russell Goodrich. It was incorporated as the village of New Buffalo, March 28, 1836. Its officers were a president, recorder, and six trustees, to bear the title of president and trustees of the village of New Buffalo. It embraced the whole of section 10 and the east half of section 9, being situated about midway on the lake line of the township, and fronting Pottawattamie Lake on the north.

Alonzo Bennett was the first president of the village. Jacob Gerrish was president in 1838 and treasurer in 1839. The corporation lapsed about 1840. The village was again incorporated in 1869, as noticed farther on.

As near as can be ascertained the postmasters have been as follows: Dr. Reuben Pierce, Jacob Gerrish, Thomas Comins, Alonzo Bennett, Dwight Plympton, Alonzo Bennett, Joseph M. Goodrich, and George R. Weed, who is the present incumbent.

The second act of incorporation was approved April 3, 1869, and the election for officers was held April 5th of the same year at the school-house in the village. The result was as follows: Sadler Butler, President; George F. Collett, Recorder; James McCarter, Frederick Gerdes, David Terwilliger, Harry H. Gilbert, Ludwig Lubke, and Dwight Plympton, Trustees; John McGlavin, Treasurer.

#### LIST OF OFFICERS.

*Presidents.*—1870, Sadler Butler; 1871-72, Ransom S. Hastings; 1873, Henry P. Nourse; 1874, Alonzo Bennett; 1875, Henry Liefkien; 1876-77, George Weimer; 1878, Alonzo Bennett; 1879, John V. Phillips.

*Recorders.*—1870, J. C. Dick; 1871, George D. Butler; 1872, John C. Dick; 1873-78, John V. Phillips; 1879, Claus H. Scholtz.

*Treasurers.*—1870, William H. Weed; 1871-72, George Weimer; 1873-75, Frederick Gerdes; 1876, Christian Gahlstorf; 1877, Charles Kruger; 1878-79, Christian Goldstorf.

*Trustees.*—1870, L. M. Woodmansee, Albert Kelling; 1871, Alonzo Bennett, William Armstrong, Sadler Butler; 1872, Charles Kruger, Moses M. Clark, William Mittelman; 1873, Louis Eggert, Henry Weigel, Fritz Kamm; 1874, Charles Kruger, Herman Beutlen, Henry Liefkien; 1875, Henry Wiegel, Louis Eggert, Albert Kelling; 1876, Charles Kruger, Henry C. Wiegel, David Terwilliger; 1877, Henry Wiegel, Christian Doll, Jacob Hiler; 1878, Charles Deuell, Fritz Kamm, Charles Kruger; 1879, Henry P. Nourse, John Pee, Alonzo Bennett.

The charter was repealed May 28, 1879, to take effect Aug. 28, 1879.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school-house was built of boards, in 1836, and is still standing, owned and occupied by C. H. Schultz. The lot is now owned by Mrs. R. L. Phillips. A new school-house was built on a lot adjoining, which was removed and replaced with a larger, two-story one. The first school district was recorded March 15, 1837, known as District No. 1. Francis M. Ames and Irwin McClure, commissioners of schools.

At a town-meeting April 19, 1838, it was voted to raise \$400 for the payment of teachers' wages for that school year. The inspectors of schools formed Districts Nos. 2, 3, and 4, described as follows:

District No. 1, consisting of sections 9, 10, 11, 13, 14, 15, 22, 23, 24, in township 8 south, range 21 west.

District No. 2, consisting of sections 4, 7, 8, 9, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, and 21, township 8 south, range 20 west.

District No. 3, consisting of sections 2, 3, 10, 11, 13, 14, 15, 22, 23, and 24, township 8 south, range 20 west.

District No. 4, consisting of sections 29, 30, 31, 32, in township 7 south, range 20 west; sections 5 and 6, township 8 south, range 20 west; sections 25 and 26, township 7 south, range 21 west; and sections 1 and 12, township 8 south, range 21 west.

Feb. 16, 1839, a certificate of qualification as teacher

was granted to O. H. Phillips. Miss Mallory commenced teaching school April 17, 1838. She was examined April 18, 1838, and received a certificate.

Oct. 19, 1844, a certificate was granted as teacher to Miss Craney; and November 2d, of the same year, to Miss Elizabeth Chamberlain. On the 20th of March, 1845, there was received from the town treasurer \$32.25 for library purposes, and May 3d, Hale E. Crosby was appointed librarian. Forty-six volumes were purchased. August 1st, of the same year, 60 volumes were added, and 21 volumes in 1847, 93 volumes in 1850, and 41 in 1851.

In 1847 the districts reported as follows: District No. 1, number of children of school age, 109; No. 2, 27; No. 3, 32.

The record of apportionments of moneys and books in 1848 was, District No. 1, 109 scholars, \$32.70, 109 volumes; No. 2, 27 scholars, \$8.10, 29 volumes; No. 3, 32 scholars, \$9.60, 35 volumes; No. 4, 12 volumes.

Upon the organization of Chickaming and Three Oaks, in 1856, a change was made in districts, and a division of the property was also made, and the several amounts were turned over to the new districts.

In 1865 a report was made as follows: District No. 1, number of scholars, 157; received from dog-tax, \$54.19. No. 2, number of scholars, 42; received from dog-tax, \$14.17. No. 3, number of scholars, 80; received from dog-tax, \$27.61. No. 5, number of scholars, 31; received from dog-tax, \$11.03.

The report of schools for 1879 showed: District No. 1, scholars, 230; apportionment money, \$111.15; library money, \$1. No. 2, scholars, 68; apportionment money, \$32.85; library money, 29 cents. No. 3, scholars, 77; apportionment money, \$37.20; library money, 33 cents. No. 4, scholars, 45; apportionment money, \$21.73; library money, 19 cents.

#### CHURCHES.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—The first class was organized at New Buffalo, in 1847, at the school-house.

The following notice is in the journal of Jacob Gerrish: "Sunday, June 24, 1838, Meeks preached in the forenoon;" July 8, 1838, "had a sermon from Mr. Meeks," undoubtedly the Rev. Richard Meek, of Niles; Aug. 4, 1838. "Meek preached in the morning." Afterwards the Rev. Daniel Smith, of Galena, Floyd Co., Ind., preached there. About 1844, the Rev. Mr. Kellogg. In 1847-48, Thomas McCool. Alanson C. Stuart was a contractor and also a local preacher. Among the members of the first class were Mrs. J. R. C. Brown and J. W. Wilkinson, who was first leader, Geo. Barnes and wife, and Dwight Plympton. Regular preaching was not supported until 1852, when the Rev. J. W. Robinson was stationed there. He was succeeded by the Revs. A. C. Beach, T. Hendrickson, Milo Covey, G. W. Chapin, G. A. Van Horn, E. Beard, E. L. Kellogg, J. Hoyt, D. C. Woodward, A. J. Van Wyck, J. S. Hicks, J. S. Valentine, A. T. Gray, W. Matthias, E. A. Tanner, G. W. Goslin, and Isaiah Wilson, who is the present pastor. Meetings were held in the school-house and at various places. In 1861 and 1862 the present church was built. The society numbers about 40 members.

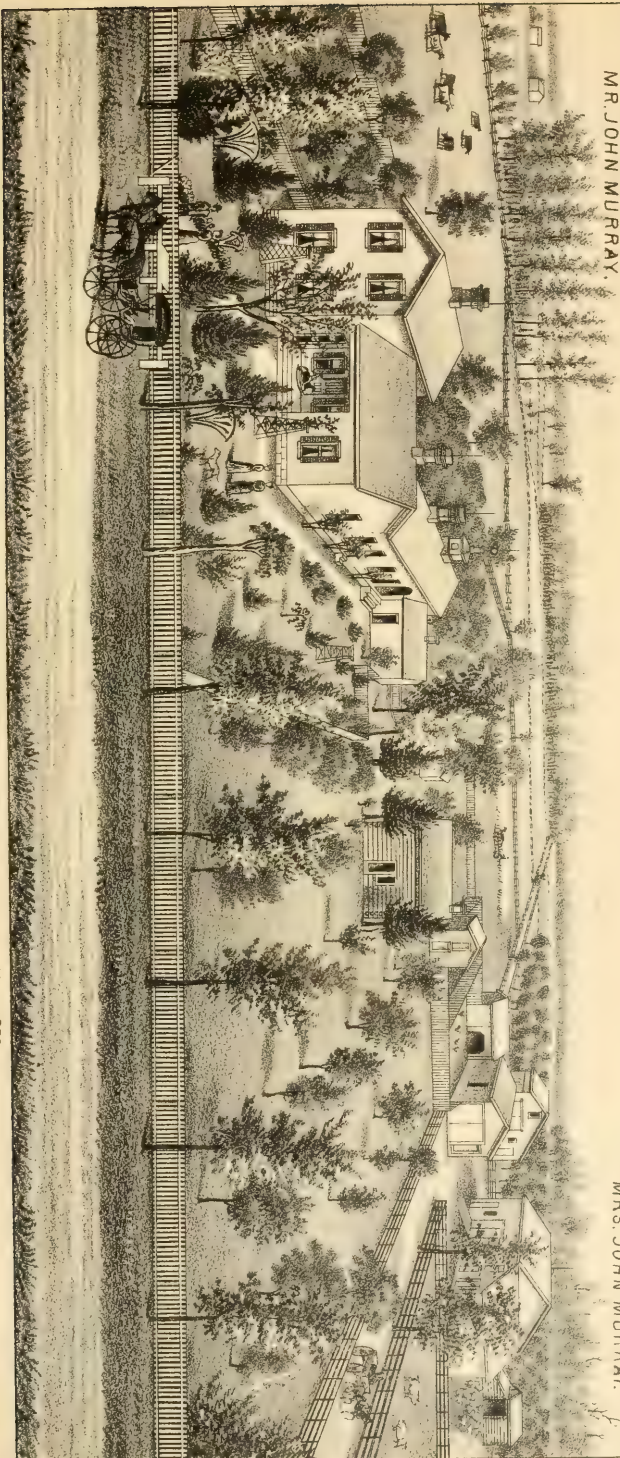




MR. JOHN MURRAY.



MRS. JOHN MURRAY.







*German Evangelical Church.*—This church was organized Nov. 13, 1858, by the Rev. Charles Haas, of Michigan City. The first pastor was the Rev. Charles Buflinger, succeeded by Löffler, Emil Wenner, Geo. Weiser, Dietrich Behrens, — Dahlmann, — Hoch, Christian Reiser, and John Stanger, who is the present pastor. The society numbers at present 64 members. The church was built in 1862, and finished in 1863. Services were held for some time in the building formerly used by the Congregational society, on block 23.

*Baptist Church.*—The society was organized June 3, 1876, as a branch society of Union Pier Church, and organized as a separate society April 9, 1879. The first meeting was held at the house of the Rev. R. H. Spafford. The society at first consisted of 19 members, and now numbers 76. Mr. Spafford is still the pastor. The society purchased a dancing-hall, and converted it into a church. The Sunday-school has 133 pupils,—E. D. Rundell, Superintendent. Two branch Sunday-schools are also connected with it. Bethel Mission, in Laporte Co., Ind., has 66 pupils,—J. T. Fields, Superintendent. West Road Mission is also in Laporte Co., Ind., and has 78 pupils,—E. D. Rundell is Superintendent.

*St. Mary's Church of the Immaculate Conception.*—The Catholic church at New Buffalo was built in 1858 by Father De Neve, and completed in 1860.

It was blessed by Father Cappon, assisted by Father Steiner. It stands on the northwest corner of Buffalo and Whittaker Streets. Its communicants include about 35 families.

#### SOCIETIES.

*Harmonia Lodge, No. 144, I. O. O. F.*—This society was organized Aug. 11, 1871, and contains at present 27 members. It is composed entirely of Germans,—Albert Kelling is the Noble Grand.

*New Buffalo Lodge, No. 84, I. O. O. F.*—This lodge was organized July 18, 1861, and has at present 30 members,—David Tenvilleyn, Noble Grand.

*New Buffalo Encampment, No. 79, I. O. O. F.*, organized in 1877. Has at present 22 members,—Claus H. Schotz, Chief Patriarch.

*Working Men's Association of New Buffalo.*—This society was organized in October, 1877, and is composed entirely of Germans. It numbers 43 members,—Fritz Kamm, President.

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

#### JOHN MURRAY.

James Murray, the father of the subject of this sketch, was born in Ireland, on the 31st day of March, 1800, and emigrated to the State of New York when eighteen years old. His wife, whose maiden name was Slater, was born in Rhode Island, on the 3d day of December, 1806. Mr. and Mrs. Murray were married on the 19th day of March, 1824, and the former departed this life on the 15th day of September, 1840.

John Murray was the oldest of his father's family. He

was born in Owaseco, Cayuga Co., N. Y., and moved to Huron Co., Ohio, when about seven years of age. After his father's death he remained with his mother, taking charge of the property and keeping the family together. Feb. 1, 1849, at the age of twenty-four, he married Amanda M., daughter of Richard and Abigail Allison. She was a native of Warwick, Orange Co., N. Y., born March 31, 1831, and, with her parents, went to Peru, Huron Co., Ohio, when she was about two years old. Mr. Murray farmed in Ohio for five years, when he moved to Michigan, and bought the farm where he now resides. His first purchase consisted of ninety-two and a half acres, to which he afterwards added forty-eight acres. He also owns a farm in the State of Indiana. Four children have been born to Mr. and Mrs. Murray, viz.: Cecelia, born in Ohio, Jan. 15, 1850; Cordelius, born in Ohio, Jan. 16, 1853 (died Oct. 20, 1854); Viola M., born in Michigan, May 22, 1860; Ginevra A., born in Michigan, Dec. 15, 1863 (died May 22, 1865). The two surviving children are both married and settled near the old homestead. Mr. Murray's advantages for an early education were limited. Schools at that time were poorly taught, and he was enabled to attend only a short time during the winter terms. In November, 1864, Mr. Murray enlisted in the United States service, and was enrolled in Company H, 9th Michigan Infantry, remaining with the army until the close of the war. He never wished to be elected to any public office, and consequently never held any. In politics he is a Republican; in religion, a liberal. Mrs. Murray was at one time connected with the Christian Church. Mr. Murray learned early in life that the road to success is one open only to strong hands and willing hearts. His early established methodical business habits, and his energy and perseverance have rendered his life a success.

Richard Allison, father of Mrs. Amanda M. Murray, was born at Warwick, Orange Co., N. Y., Jan. 29, 1799. His wife, Abigail Brooks, was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Nov. 6, 1801. In her youth she was considered one of the best singers in Brooklyn, and for a number of years was leader of the choir in one of the churches in that city. Her marriage to Richard Allison took place July 19, 1828. The children of this marriage were eight in number, but of them only two are now living, namely, Mrs. Amanda M. Murray and Mrs. Phoebe J. Camp, of Wakeshma, Kalamazoo Co., Mich. Mrs. Allison died in Peru, Huron Co., Ohio, May 24, 1842. In 1865, Mr. Allison moved from Ohio to Michigan, and died there Jan. 18, 1867.

#### RICHARD PHILLIPS

was born on the 26th day of October, 1810, in the county of Oxfordshire, England. At the age of twenty-two he emigrated to Halifax, Nova Scotia, but only remained there during one winter. He then proceeded to Canada, where he stayed about two years, going from there to Buffalo, N. Y., in 1834. He came to New Buffalo in 1835, in the employ of Mr. Nelson Willard, who brought the first load of dry goods ever landed at the place. On the 11th day of November, 1839, Mr. Phillips was married to Mary C., daughter of J. R. C. and Jane Brown, of Virginia. Of

this union have been born six children, viz.: Charles L., born Aug. 22, 1840; Mary J., born Feb. 26, 1842, died May 21, 1858; Elizabeth, born October 31st, died same day; Sarah A., born Dec. 8, 1844; Catherine E., born Dec. 17, 1846; and Emma A., born April 19, 1849. Mr. Phillips settled at Michigan City, Ind., soon after his marriage, where he remained six months. He then moved his family to Hudson, Ind., and at the end of another six months, to Laporte, in the same State. He remained

Green Bay, in 1848. He remained at this employment for two years, but his health growing worse instead of better, he was obliged to abandon his life on the lake. Mr. Phillips was originally a Whig in politics, but subsequently joined the Republican party, whose principles he ever supported with all the firmness of character and tenacity of purpose for which he was distinguished. He represented his township as clerk and supervisor, attending to the duties of the latter position when unable to walk, being



RICHARD PHILLIPS.



MRS. RICHARD PHILLIPS.

there until 1842, when he returned to New Buffalo. After staying there until 1845, he returned to Michigan City, but in 1847 he made his last move back, and located himself permanently at New Buffalo. Until this time he had been engaged in the mercantile business, but in 1847 he engaged as clerk on a steamboat, thinking the change would be beneficial to his health, as he was a great sufferer from disease. He served as clerk of the steamboats "Detroit" and "Sam Ward," running on the latter from Chicago to St. Joseph, in 1847, and on the former from Chicago to

accompanied by his faithful wife as he rode to and fro in his buggy. Mr. Phillips, after many years of intense suffering from rheumatic gout, died on the 15th day of December, 1868. Both he and Mrs. Phillips were devoted members of the Protestant Episcopal Church. After her husband's death, Mrs. Phillips successfully managed her affairs, keeping the family together until one after another of her children were settled in married life. She has lived to see them all well established in the world, and now resides on the lot adjoining the old homestead.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

### ORONOKO TOWNSHIP.

Location and Natural Features—Berrien Springs Village and Early Settlers—Early Village Proprietors—Pioneer Merchants—Pioneer Manufacturers—Early Public-Houses—Steamboats on the St. Joseph—Physicians—"Berrien Grays"—Post-Offices and Postmasters—Village Organization—Interior Pioneers—Township Organization and Township Officers—Churches—Cemeteries—Schools—Manufacturing Industries—Orders and Societies.

#### LOCATION AND NATURAL FEATURES.

THIS township, designated as town 6 south, range 18 west, is located in the midst of the fertile region which borders the St. Joseph River, and which is widely noted as a great fruit-producing territory. Oronoko is bounded on the north by Royalton, on the south by Buchanan, on the

east by Berrien, from which it is separated by the St. Joseph River, and on the west by Lake. The river-bottoms, once held in high esteem by the early settlers in Oronoko, and found very productive, were liable to frequent overflow, and, although fertile, were ultimately abandoned by the husbandman. The surface of the township is undulating, and the soil being generally susceptible of high cultivation, the farming population is, as a class, a prosperous community. Small fruits are grown in abundance, and in the cultivation especially of grapes the farmers find a thriving and profitable industry. Wolf's Prairie, a tract of about 1000 acres, occupied in part by the village of Berrien Springs, is a fruitful plain, and is the only prairie in the county save that of Bertrand.

There are yet no railway lines entering the township, but railway projects looking to that end have been urged, and indeed in some cases have made some progress, although



failure has thus far attended all efforts in that direction. Stage communication with Niles and St. Joseph is a daily convenience, while a steamboat packet makes daily trips up the river from St. Joseph.

#### BERRIEN SPRINGS VILLAGE AND EARLY SETTLERS.

The spot now occupied by Berrien Springs was originally known as Wolf's Prairie, and hither came John Pike, with a large family (his wife and eight children), in the summer of 1829. Pike was originally from North Carolina, and later from Ohio and Indiana, whence he came to Michigan. Stopping at Carey Mission a few weeks, he pushed on down the river, with his family and household goods in a pirogue, to Wolf's Prairie. That part of the country had not been surveyed, and Pike had pre-empted a few acres on the river-bottom. The land he cleared, and upon which he put up a log house, is now occupied by a portion of the "Shaker farm." Pike was the first white settler in what is now Oronoko township, and for a year after their arrival his family were the only occupants of the territory. Pike stayed until 1832 (although he sold out to Geo. Kimmel in 1831), and removed to Royalton, where he died. There still lives his son William, himself a pioneer.

In the year of Pike's settlement—1829—George Kimmel, of Somerset Co., Pa., visited Wolf's Prairie on a prospecting tour, and, fancying the country, entered about 300 acres lying thereabout. He returned to Pennsylvania, however, and did not settle upon his new purchase until two years afterwards.

In 1830, Francis B. Murdock, a son-in-law of George Kimmel, received from the latter 120 acres of the land tract on Wolf's Prairie, and, with his family, consisting of wife and one child, set out in that year from Bedford, Pa., for his new possessions. The journey was made in part on a raft, upon which the family floated down the Dowagiac and St. Joseph Rivers. Murdock put up a log house near the site of the James Graham place, and divided his time between clearing his land and practicing law whenever opportunity offered. He was the first lawyer to practice in Berrien County,—though the practice was limited,—and was appointed judge of probate in 1833. In consequence of his wife's ill health, he removed southward in 1835, and ultimately to San José, Cal., where he now resides. His daughter, Eliza, born in October, 1831, was the first white child born in what is now Oronoko township. She afterwards married Mr. Clifton Gardner, and still lives at Berrien Springs. Mr. Murdock's son, George H., who is the editor of the *Berrien County Journal*, came to Wolf's Prairie with his father and mother, at which time he was but one year old. With Pitt Brown and Horace Godfrey, Mr. Murdock the elder was an original proprietor of the village of Berrien Springs.

George Kimmel, to whom reference has already been made, returned to Wolf's Prairie in May, 1831, with two sons—Wellington and John—and several laboring men. Among the latter was Jacob Shoemaker. Mr. Kimmel cleared land upon what is now known as the Shaker farm, and after preparing for their comfortable maintenance, went back for his wife and other children, in June, 1833. He

put up on Lemon Creek, in 1832, the first saw-mill in the settlement. The frame of that mill still forms a part of Ransom & Martin's grist-mill. Kimmel resided in Oronoko until his death. One of his daughters is Mrs. Peter Kephart. George Kimmel was in his day one of the great land-owners of the West, being at one time the proprietor of upwards of 10,000 acres in the State of Michigan alone. He died in January, 1849.

Pitt Brown, a man of note in the county, came from Venice, near Sandusky, Ohio, in the summer of 1831, with his two children and his nephew, Horace Godfrey (Brown and Godfrey having been millers together at Sandusky). They floated down from Dowagiac on a raft, and landed at the foot of the hill, near the present Ferry Street bridge, in July. Brown and Godfrey had entered, in partnership, 80 acres of land near the river, and upon the spot now occupied by Stowe's bowl-factory, where they put up a log shanty. This edifice was soon enlarged, and Pitt Brown opened there the first tavern in the township, and about the same time put a scow ferry-boat on the river at that point. Brown was appointed the first postmaster, commanded the steamer "Davy Crockett" for a while, was supervisor of Berrien township from 1833 to 1841, and occupied altogether an important place in the early history of Berrien County. He kept store a few years in company with Robert E. Ward, and with him also established a distillery. He retired from business in 1840, took up his residence near where the Defield House stands, and died in 1842. His widow still lives in Berrien Springs.

Horace Godfrey, who came to Berrien County with Pitt Brown, went back to Sandusky shortly afterwards, married and returned to Berrien, where he busied himself a brief space of time in farming, and removed eventually to Lake township, where he died and where his widow still lives.

Lyman A. Barnard, a neighbor and fellow-workman with Pitt Brown in Venice, Ohio, left that place in 1828, and, with Abraham Townsend, made his home in what is now called Pokagon, Cass Co. February 14th of that year he went, with Mr. Townsend and others, to a place now known as La Grange Prairie, and there Mr. Townsend christened the new tract in honor of La Grange, the family home of Gen. Lafayette. Barnard and Townsend remained upon the place and began to cultivate the soil. In 1830, Barnard made his first visit to Wolf's Prairie, and during the ensuing two years labored more or less at La Grange Prairie. In 1832 he built a fifteen-ton sloop, named it the "Dart," hauled it with ox-teams overland to the St. Joseph River at Niles, and then floated down to St. Joseph. He sailed the "Dart" eight months between St. Joseph and Chicago, when, his health failing, he left the lake and went up the river. He took service with Pitt Brown, as clerk and ferryman, and eventually married Brown's sister. He bought the ferry from Brown and established a rope-ferry, to the great convenience of travelers. Mr. Barnard has been a resident of Berrien Springs since 1832. In 1847, Dr. Barnard became a practicing physician in the village, and for a long time enjoyed honorable distinction in his profession. His home is still in the village, but he has latterly taken no active part in public affairs.

R. E. Ward came to the village in 1835, from Albany,

N. Y., engaged in business with Pitt Brown, eventually failed, and moved to Detroit, where he died. Ward is said to have christened the place Berrien Springs,—a name that it has borne since about 1840.

George Brong, a New Yorker, opened the first blacksmith-shop in this vicinity, in 1834, just below where the Defield House now stands. He remained about four years, and then removed, with his family, to Weesaw township, where he died.

Stephen Wood came from New York State in 1834, with his family, and located on the river's bank below the site of the Defield House. Wood was a carpenter, and after following his trade for some time removed to a farm near the village, and there lived until his death. His wife was one of Pitt Brown's sisters. One of his daughters married James M. Platt; another is now living in Niles.

Burr Benton, from Ohio, who came hither about 1832, is referred to as having been "a sort of a constable." He occupied a small piece of land back of where the Defield House stands. After a sojourn of about six years he removed to Buchanan, and thence to Weesaw, where he died.

Stephen Leonard, a young man, came to the village in 1833, from New York, in company with Susan Taylor, an elderly lady,—sister to Lyman A. Barnard's step-mother. They occupied a place near the present Warren Howe place, on Ferry Street. Leonard worked among the settlers at whatever he could find to do, and after a residence of about fifteen years went farther west. Susan Taylor died in Berrien Springs.

Jacob Shoemaker, already mentioned as having come to Wolf's Prairie with George Kimmel, worked for Kimmel a while, and then engaged in boating on the river. He bought about two acres of land in the Indian Fields, and until 1850 was a boatman and gardener by turns, moving in the year named to the far West.

Joel Davis, whose mother was Pitt Brown's first wife, came to Berrien shortly after Brown's advent, and busied himself with the cultivation of a few acres of land lying below the hill. He died a few years after his arrival.

John Ackerman and John Armstrong, brothers-in-law to Adam Small, came, with their families, from Bedford Co., Pa., to Berrien Springs in 1836. Ackerman bought a small place in the village, and worked at farming until his death, in 1854. His widow now lives on the old place. Armstrong was a carpenter, and worked at his trade in the village until 1852, when he went to California to seek his fortune. For a time he communicated with his family, but his communications ceased after a brief space, and to this day Mrs. Armstrong, who lives in Berrien Springs, has heard nothing more from him or about him.

Uziel Williams, then a young man, came from Ypsilanti, Mich., in the fall of 1835, and opened a tailor's shop in a log cabin that stood upon the ground now occupied by the Defield House. He followed the business five or six years, and then moved upon a farm west of the village. Shortly afterwards he went to Missouri and there died. Orrin Wood, brother of Stephen Wood, the carpenter, had a shoemaker's shop in the log cabin occupied by Williams the tailor. He was there for four years, when he died. None of his descendants are known to be living in the township.

James M. Watson, now a justice of the peace at Berrien Springs, came to the village from St. Joseph in 1838, and was employed as engineer by R. E. Ward, at his distillery on the river. Watson was a skillful engineer, and after leaving the distillery served on the river as engineer on the "Matilda Barney," "Davy Crockett," "Pocahontas," "Indiana," "Algoma," "Niles," and other famous river craft.

O. N. Bostwick, a man somewhat advanced in years, and the father-in-law of R. E. Ward and Dr. Murray, was in the employment of Brown & Ward, as clerk and book-keeper, in 1836, and died after two years spent in their service.

John L. Schell, a brother of George Schell, who came from Pennsylvania in 1835, left his home in Bedford Co., Pa., in the fall of 1835, and located in Berrien Springs. In 1837 he moved to Berrien township.

David Shoemaker, a potter, came to Berrien Springs in 1836, in company with Ackerman and Armstrong, and here remained with his family about two years, doing odd jobs. He removed to Berrien township in 1838, and his wife dying in 1844, he returned to Pennsylvania.

Eli Hill was a man of considerable prominence in the village about the year 1836, when he came from Avon, N. Y., and purchased the larger portion of the tract occupied by Berrien village. He made some building improvements, and was engaged in erecting a hotel upon the lot now occupied by Kephart's drug-store, when he died, about 1840.

One Gibbs came to Berrien about 1835, and after a residence of a year or two moved to Illinois.

George Ewalt and George Essick came to the village together from Bedford Co., Pa., in 1836, both being young men without families. Ewalt was a carpenter, and worked at his trade in the village until 1856, when he moved to a farm a mile and a half west of the Springs, where he still resides. Ewalt married a daughter of William Lemon.

Essick was a tailor, and for a time pursued his calling in the village. Shortly after 1858 he opened the hotel built by Eli Hill, on Ferry Street, and after he ceased to be a landlord he became a tuner. He resided in the village until his death. Two of his daughters—Mrs. Henry D. Howe and Sophronia Essick—live in the town.

#### EARLY VILLAGE PROPRIETORS.

Berrien Springs village was originally known as Berrien, and as such was surveyed and platted, in August, 1831, by Samuel Marrs, deputy surveyor, for the proprietors, Pitt Brown, Horace Godfrey, and Francis B. Murdock. When R. E. Ward located in the village, in 1835, he called the place Berrien Springs (and had its name changed by the post-office department), because of the presence near there, on the east bank of the river, of sulphur and other medicated springs; and by that name it has been commonly known since. These springs, it may be remarked, contain valuable properties, but their present inaccessibility, by reason of being located in a marshy district, impairs their usefulness. Measures are on foot, however, looking to the opening of easy and convenient communication.

In 1837 the village was designated as the county-seat of Berrien, and naturally this important accession gave its af-

fairs a healthful and vigorous impetus, which has continued to make the community moderately prosperous.

#### PIONEER MERCHANTS.

About the year 1831, Thomas Love and Edward Ballengee came from Virginia, and opened a store in a small log house which they put up on the hill near where the Defield House stands. In 1832 their log store was destroyed by fire, and directly afterwards they built a frame store on the river's bank, at what is now the west end of the bridge. The two stores named were small affairs, and in 1834 Love & Ballengee erected near their second store a third one, of considerable pretensions to size. The firm sold out, in 1836 or 1837, to Andrew J. Murray & John Wittenmeyer. The latter had previously kept store in the building opposite Love & Ballengee, where Pitt Brown & R. E. Ward opened a store about 1835. Brown & Ward failed, and, as related, Wittenmeyer succeeded them, purchasing the stock of goods that John F. Porter, of St. Joseph, had sent to Berrien Springs, to be sold by Adam Small, a clerk for Brown & Ward.

When Wittenmeyer bought out Love & Ballengee he took in Dr. Andrew J. Murray as a partner. They sold out to W. G. Ferson, of Niles, who was in turn succeeded by B. D. Townsend. Townsend kept the store about eighteen months, and then sold to his clerk, James M. Platt. Platt closed the building, and, following the tide of civilization, took a store on the hill upon the site now occupied by the Reed House. Townsend had built the store, and C. W. Angell kept it for a while. Platt moved it to the corner where he afterwards put up his fine brick block, and upon the erection of the latter removed the frame structure to the adjoining lot. It is now occupied by N. J. Davis as a store. The store at the foot of the hill, built by Love & Ballengee and closed by Platt, was eventually moved to the top of the hill, and forms now a part of the store of P. Kephart & Son. Mr. Platt continued in the mercantile trade in Berrien Springs until his death, in 1874.

Aiken, Smith & Co. kept a small store on the hill after 1842. In 1843, Dr. Philip Kephart (who settled in Berrien Springs in 1841) opened a general store, and has been a store-keeper in the village ever since. In 1848, Thomas L. Stevens & R. W. Landon opened a store in the frame building built by the Sons of Temperance, upon the lot opposite Platt's corner.

Mr. William Dougherty, now residing on a farm near Berrien Springs, came to the village from Washington city, in 1838, with a stock of goods, built a store on Ferry Street, at the top of the hill, and from 1838 to 1843 carried on business as a merchant. For a time he retired from trade, but resumed it in 1852, and continued at his old stand from that date until 1865, since which time he has been living in retirement.

#### PIONEER MANUFACTURERS.

As already narrated, George Kimmel put up in 1832, on Lemon Creek, the pioneer saw-mill. There was a lot on the river-bank donated by the town proprietors for a saw-mill lot, and upon it, about 1833, Pitt Brown and R. E. Ward built a saw-mill, which, however, they put to little if any use, their object in erecting the structure being

doubtless to avail themselves of the benefit of the donation. The property was idle most of the time until 1838, when Ward & Brown converted it into a distillery, in which R. C. Payne, of Niles, was also interested. A grist-mill was added, but proved a failure. The distillery passed into the possession of Wm. F. McOmber, and lastly to Garrow, Smith & Co.

The history of the early attorneys and physicians, and of the press, will be found in the general chapters.

#### EARLY PUBLIC-HOUSES.

Pitt Brown was the pioneer tavern-keeper of this section, and between the years 1831 and 1840 his hostelry, below the hill on the river-bank, was a popular resort, known far and wide. After Brown retired from business, Jacob Statler was the landlord, and after him David Wilson, following whose retirement the building was destroyed by fire.

John Defield built the first tavern, "on the hill," in 1842. The house is still known as the Defield House, and is owned by his widow. Eli Hill, who became the proprietor of the town in 1836, by purchase of the interests of Pitt Brown, Horace Godfrey, and Francis B. Murdock, began in 1836 to build a hotel on the corner now occupied by P. Kephart as a drug-store. Hill died before he could finish the structure, which was not completed until several years afterwards, and not opened as a hotel until 1859, when Geo. Essick became the landlord. He was succeeded by Andrew Marrs, in 1861, and Marrs sold in turn to Robert Wickoff, during whose time the place was burned. A wing of the building was saved, and moved by one Carey to where the Reed House now stands. Carey kept tavern in it, and in 1870 sold to Otis Reed, who added to it, and made the present Reed House of it.

#### STEAMBOATS ON THE ST. JOSEPH.

The steamer "Newburyport," owned by Capt. White, of Buffalo, and commanded by Capt. Samuel Woodford, navigated the St. Joseph River in 1832, and was the first boat to reach Berrien Springs. She attempted to go as far as Niles, but grounded, and returned to St. Joseph in a damaged condition. Later she was put in the trade between St. Joseph and Chicago, and after making a few trips went ashore and broke in pieces. In 1833 the "Matilda Barney," commanded at one time by Ebenezer E. Farley, traded as high up the river as South Bend; and in 1834 the "Davy Crockett," whose captain for a time was Pitt Brown, appeared as a rival to the "Barney." The river trade was considerable then, and at a point opposite Berrien Springs Eli Ford built a great warehouse, where considerable freight for the interior was landed, and where vast quantities of the products of the surrounding agricultural region were taken for shipment down the river. The "Barney" and "Crockett" were in commission for some time, and managed to make river history somewhat animated. Following these boats were the "Pocahontas," "Indiana," "Algoma," "Niles," and others, all famous in their day.

#### PHYSICIANS.

Andrew J. Murray, who was a partner also with Mr. Wittenmeyer as storekeeper at Berrien Springs, was the first



physician in the village. He opened an office in 1836 where Mr. J. Shearer now lives, at the corner of Marrs and Mechanic Streets. Mr. Murray practiced in Berrien Springs until 1839 or 1840, when he removed to St. Joseph, and subsequently to Niles, where he died. He is still remembered as an excellent physician and worthy citizen. Dr. Chamberlain came in 1837, and became associated in practice with Dr. Murray, but remained only a year, when he removed to Michigan City, Ind. He now resides in Elkhart, Ind. In 1841, Philip Kephart engaged in the practice of medicine at the "Springs," but continued it actively only until 1843, when he engaged in mercantile pursuits. Since 1843, Mr. Kephart has been in business in the village, and is now, as he has been for years, one of the leading merchants of the place.

Eli Hill, who purchased considerable property in the village in 1836, practiced medicine occasionally until his death, in 1840, although he did not aim to be a regularly practicing physician. In 1843, C. C. Wallin opened an office, and remained until 1849. He is now living in Chicago. Charles W. Angell practiced from 1846-49, and in 1847 Lyman A. Barnard (still living in Berrien Springs) became one of the village physicians. Between 1849 and 1850 he had the field to himself. S. C. Bartholomew, Dr. Barnard's contemporary, came in 1850 and practiced until his death, in 1858. Meanwhile J. L. Bugbee practiced one season, and in 1851, Dr. Henry Leader came in and remained until 1860, when he removed to Pokagon, where he died. Subsequently the physicians were B. F. Delaplaine, J. S. Fowler, H. J. Wilcox, W. F. Mason, Edward Hall, Dr. Hayes, J. D. Bowman, Dr. Ludwig, J. S. Martin, S. T. Armstrong, W. F. Reiber, O. Wheeler, and T. W. Anderson. The last two named are now (September, 1879) the practicing physicians of Berrien Springs.

#### THE "BERRIEN GRAYS."

In 1845 military ardor permeated the bosoms of some of the eminent citizens of Berrien Springs, and as a consequence they formed a militia company, enrolled it in the service of the State, and urged the enterprise forward with great vigor. The company was called the "Berrien Grays," and elected, at the organization, Jacob Statler captain; Ezra D. Wilson and George Kimmel, lieutenants. J. M. Watson was orderly sergeant; Adam Small, drummer; and Uziel Williams, fifer. The company uniform was gray, trimmed with black, and, it is said, made a showy appearance. The Grays enjoyed frequent parades, and became locally famous; but the vigorous enthusiasm which attended the birth of the command lessened as time advanced, and within a few years grew so feeble that the organization passed out of existence.

#### THE RIVER FERRY.

Pitt Brown was the first one to put on a ferry at the village. He started it in 1831, and continued it several years, when Lyman A. Barnard, who had been doing the work upon it, bought the business and put on a rope-ferry. John Defield and Jacob Statler followed Barnard, Statler operating it until 1844, when the building of a bridge at that point put an end to the ferry.

The first man to cross Pitt Brown's ferry was, to use Pitt's own expression, a boy. At all events, when Brown put his boat off from the Berrien Springs shore on its first trip, it had aboard Amos Farley and a lad named E. A. Brown (brother to Darius Brown). "Hello, my lad," exclaimed Mr. Brown, "you are the first man ever carried over this ferry, and a good deal of an honor it is to you in the bargain."

#### POST-OFFICES AND POSTMASTERS.

A post-office was established in 1831, and Pitt Brown appointed postmaster. He kept the office in the bar of his tavern, which stood at the foot of Ferry Street, upon the site of Stowe's bowl-factory. At that time there was but little postal business transacted at this point, for the charge of "two shillings" postage made letter-writing too great a luxury to be indulged in except upon urgent necessity.

Berrien was then a mail-station on the route between Niles and St. Joseph, and the passage of the river was effected by means of a ferry. It happened, one day in early winter, while Lyman A. Barnard was operating a "rope-ferry" at that point, that Mr. Huston, the mail-carrier, arrived from Niles at the river's bank, and found the stream so choked with ice that the ferry-boat could not cross, while the ice barrier was too thin to permit the passage of a man over its surface. In this emergency Barnard got the mail over by crossing on the ferry-boat rope and pushing the mail-bag before him, it being understood, however, that Barnard didn't "walk" the rope; he simply sat astride of it, and drew himself along with his hands.

Although the mail was over, the carrier was still on the wrong side of the river, and likely to stop there. Pitt Brown bargained, therefore, with Barnard to carry the mail to St. Joseph; and before setting out the latter repaired to Brown, early in the morning, to be sworn in as mail-carrier. Brown was in bed, and upon Barnard's entrance sat up and thus delivered the form of oath: "You swear by the eternal God to carry the mail to St. Joseph; that you will not open it; and that you will deliver it to no man but the postmaster at St. Joseph." Barnard set out upon his journey, but had not gone far when he was overtaken by Brown, who said that upon reflection he had concluded to go on to St. Joseph himself, and so they both conveyed the mail in safety to its destination. Whether Brown thought the oath administered to Barnard was not strong enough, or whether he thought he was exceeding his prerogative in appointing a mail-carrier, are matters of conjecture, for he never explained. It is only certain that he saw the mail safely conveyed to its destination. Brown was the postmaster until his death, in 1842. During his time, upon a petition started by R. E. Ward, the name of the post-office was changed to Berrien Springs. Upon Brown's death the office passed to Thomas Love, who was succeeded in 1845 by George Essick, who kept tavern on what is now the site of Kephart's drug-store. Joseph Faulker, who opened the first harness-shop in Berrien Springs, succeeded Essick in 1849, and held the office until his death, in 1853, when Adam Small, who had served as deputy under Pitt Brown and Thomas Love, was appointed, and continued until 1860. Lyman A. Barnard was postmaster from 1860 to 1870,

save for a period of six months, when D. G. W. Gaugler was the appointee, and to him succeeded Sylvester Smith. The latter gave way in 1873 to Fred. McOmber, the present incumbent.

The business of the office during the quarter ending June 30, 1879, was: Amount received for sale of stamps, \$242.98; money-orders issued, \$5893.78; money orders paid, \$1667.42.

#### VILLAGE ORGANIZATION.

Berrien Springs was incorporated Oct. 15, 1863. On the 26th of August, 1863, 73 citizens applied to the board of supervisors for a village charter, and against this application, on October 10th, nine citizens entered a remonstrance. The former petition was granted, however, and Oct. 15, 1863, Berrien Springs became an incorporated village. The territory incorporated is described in the act as follows: "Commencing at a stake on the left bank of the St. Joseph River, in the northern line of Hamilton Street; thence running south, 48° west, on the northerly line of said Hamilton Street  $7\frac{81}{100}$  chains, to where the northerly line of Bluff Street, if extended, would cross the said northerly line of Hamilton Street; thence south, 88° west, 30 chains, to the centre of the Berrien and St. Joseph road; thence due south  $57\frac{77}{100}$  chains, to the centre of the Terre Coupée road; thence due east  $45\frac{29}{100}$  chains, to a stake on the left bank of the St. Joseph River, from which a sycamore-tree, 28 inches in diameter, bears south 27° west, and is distant therefrom 21 links; thence following the left bank of the river to the place of beginning."

The supervisors appointed J. W. Howe, Charles D. Nichols, and Daniel Terriere to be inspectors of election, which was ordered to be held at the court-house on the first Monday in December, 1863. At that election Philip Kephart was chosen President; O. A. Dudley, Clerk; and Preston Boon, B. F. Pennell, James M. Platt, S. G. Armstrong, James Graham, and Samuel J. Davis, Trustees.

The persons who have served as presidents and clerks of the village from 1864 to 1879, inclusive, are named as follows:

#### PRESIDENTS.

1864, Philip Kephart; 1865-66, James Graham; 1867-69, P. Kephart; 1870, L. A. Barnard; 1871, J. W. Howe; 1872, P. Kephart; 1873-74, James Graham; 1875, B. F. Pennell; 1876-77, R. D. Dix; 1878, Aug. Kephart.

#### CLERKS.

1864, Daniel Terriere; 1865, G. H. Murdock, B. F. Feather; 1866, B. F. Feather; 1867, George H. Murdock; 1868, J. S. Martin; 1869-70, B. F. Feather; 1871, Daniel Chapman; 1872, B. F. Feather; 1873-74, E. M. Wansborough; 1875-78, C. F. Howe.

The officers chosen for 1879 were: President, B. F. Pennell; Clerk, T. L. Wilkinson; Treasurer, George Clair; Trustees, Thomas W. Anderson, H. H. Boon, C. D. Nichols, A. C. Pennell, W. F. Reiber, T. T. Webster; Street Commissioner, A. J. Mealey; Assessor, S. H. Smith; Constable, T. T. Elliott; Marshal and Engineer of Fire Department, Jefferson Dalrymple; Poundmaster, Preston Boon.

The village was reincorporated in 1867, by Legislative act, and in 1878, for the purpose of receiving power to control liquor-license matters, it was incorporated under the general law.

Berrien Springs contains a population of about 1000 people, and during court-terms presents an especially industrious and lively appearance. Mail communication with Niles and St. Joseph is daily, while there is also tri-weekly communication by steam-packet with St. Joseph. There has long been a strong disposition to place the village in railway communication with other points, and it is probable that such an event will be consummated within perhaps a twelvemonth. The village owns a tract of 26 acres, which it is proposed to lay out as a public square and fair-grounds. Other improvements would rapidly follow the building of a railway to this point, and it is, moreover, likely that with the advent of a railway line the fine water-power of the St. Joseph would be extensively utilized by manufacturing capital.

#### INTERIOR PIONEERS.

In the summer of 1831, Hezekiah Hall, of Euclid, Ohio, came to Berrien, and found Lawrence Cavanaugh and family living upon the river-bank, about two miles above the present village of Berrien Springs. He made a bargain with Cavanaugh to pay the latter \$500 for his claim upon 160 acres, and returned at once to Ohio to bring his family to Michigan. In September of that year they made the start from Euclid, accompanied also by William F. St. John, his family, and his brother, John H., all being neighbors in Euclid. Three wagons, drawn by a pair of horses and two yokes of oxen, conveyed the company from Ohio to Michigan, and after a tedious journey through forests and over "no thoroughfares" they reached, without mishap, the bank of the St. Joseph River, opposite Mr. Hall's new land-purchase. Here they crossed the river on two canoes lashed together, and in a brief space of time were securely settled upon Cavanaugh's old place,—that worthy having removed to the opposite side of the river, not before, however, compelling Hall to pay \$1000, instead of the agreed \$500, for the land he sold him. Hall, being on the ground, and in a manner forced to accept the bargain, did so to be sure, but with an ill grace, and many a strong protestation, no doubt. William F. St. John remained with his family upon Hall's place until he could find a location, and shortly thereafter settled upon a place near Hall. Remaining there a few years, he sold to Samuel Wilson, and removed to Berrien Springs, where he resided until his death. His son Luther now lives in the village. John St. John, William's brother, did not fancy the country, and went back to Ohio after tarrying a short time in Michigan.

Hezekiah Hall passed his days on his river farm, leaving a widow. She married John Wittenmyer, and a second time became a widow. She now resides with her son, Chauncey A. Hall. Mrs. Wittenmyer recalls, with vivid recollection, her early experiences amid the wilds of Michigan and her first terror at the appearance of Indians, who showed themselves with remarkable promptness, although in no wise dangerous neighbors. Often her husband used to go to Niles, to mill, leaving her alone with her children, and at such times, she says, she felt the full force of her unpleasant situation. She was not only greatly apprehensive of danger, but lonely to a degree that was appalling. At such times her terrors were increased by the appearance at her cabin of Indians, but she kept up a brave heart,

nevertheless, although as it happened the savages were harmless enough. She often saw them in grand carousals and fantastic dances on the river-bluff, opposite her cabin, and became after a while not only friendly with the savages, but learned, moreover, to talk in their language, of which she retains a faint knowledge to this day.

Lawrence Cavanaugh, of whom Hall bought his land, came from La Grange Prairie and settled upon the place, with his family, as early as 1830, and was, according to some authorities, the second white settler in what is now Oronoko township. As has been seen, he removed in 1831 to what is now Berrien township.

In April, 1832, Henry Freed, with his wife, his son Abram, his daughter Annie (now Mrs. Joseph Feather, of Oronoko), his daughter Mary (now the wife of Louis Storick, of Oronoko), his grandson, Samuel F. Summers (a lad of about fifteen), and Joseph Feather, left the eastern part of Pennsylvania, with a five-horse team, for Michigan, where they proposed to create new homes in the then wilderness. Joseph Feather was paying devoted attention to Annie Freed, and wished to marry her, but Annie's father declined to let Joseph have the maiden unless he joined them in their movement to Michigan, and that is how Joseph Feather came to be a Western pioneer. At all events, that is the story related by Samuel F. Summers, who came in company with Feather and the Freed family.

The party consumed six weeks in journeying from their Pennsylvania homes to Niles, passing through Ohio and the Black Swamp country, and camping out *en route* every night. When Niles was reached, Joseph Feather and Abram Freed constructed a lumber-raft, and floated down the St. Joseph to Berrien village, while the rest of the company continued the journey through the woods to that point by land. Arrived at Berrien, they pitched their tents upon the lot now occupied by the Defield House, where they improvised a cabin by first placing a pole in the crotches of two adjacent butternut-trees, and then upon the ridge-pole thus formed inclining the planks composing young Freed's raft, so that when completed the structure looked something like an Indian wigwam. At the rear end of this "cabin" Henry Freed's wagon-box did duty as a bedroom for the old folks, while the younger members of the party stowed themselves as best they could. At the time of their arrival, says Mr. Summers, the prairie grass upon what is now the village of Berrien Springs was as high as a man's head. As the incidents of Joseph Feather's settlement have been presented in another part of this chapter, here will be told simply what befell the Freed family, since Feather pursued a separate line of action upon arriving at Berrien.

Henry Freed located 80 acres of land upon section 23, while Abram located a farm upon section 24. The elder Freed leased a piece of land (about four acres) near the river, and, assisted by the boys, put in a crop of corn and buckwheat, his family continuing to reside in the cabin erected upon their first arrival. While these crops were growing, Henry Freed and young Summers used daily to go out to the former's farm to clear land (having cut a road from Berrien to the farm) and build a cabin, as a move towards the removal of the family thereto. Meanwhile, Abram

Freed worked upon his farm, all hands usually returning at night to the Freed "mansion" near the river. Early in the winter, all being in readiness for them, Mr. Henry Freed moved his family out to their new home, Summers going with them. Abram Freed put up a shanty on his own place and kept bachelor's hall.

Mr. Summers tells how, one day, while he and Henry Freed were chopping away for dear life, the latter cut his foot badly, but being a man of strong will, he wrapped a rag about his foot and kept on with his chopping. Presently the blood from the wound saturated the cloth, and flowed so freely that Mr. Freed's footsteps were marked by blood. Still he kept on chopping, after adding another bandage made of a portion of Summers' flannel shirt, until, grown weak from loss of blood, he told the lad he would have to give it up, and so they started for their home at the river,—nearly two miles distant. They hadn't gone far when Freed fainted. Summers, who had all along been afraid the wolves would scent the blood and attack them, was in sore trouble, but acting promptly, left his grandfather lying on the ground, hurried to the river, procured a horse and hurried back again, mounted the wounded man and thus got him home, although he was well-nigh convinced, after leaving him, that the wolves would descend upon poor Mr. Freed before assistance could be got for him. Happily the wolves held off, but it was, nevertheless, a trying ordeal.

In 1839, young Summers, being then aged twenty-one, bought his grandfather's farm, and leaving it in charge of William F. St. John, returned to Pennsylvania on foot, in company with Abram Freed,—the former going for the purpose of learning the trade of a tanner and the latter to look for a wife. Before he departed Abram gave his father a life-lease of his (Abram's) farm, and the elder Freed thereupon moved upon it, after having sold his own. About 1844, Abram returned and took possession of his farm, his father having died. Shortly after returning, Abram wounded himself with an axe while at work upon the place, and from the injury death resulted soon afterwards. Summers came back with a wife, in 1845, reoccupied his farm, and has continued to live there to this day.

Abel Garr, a young man, came from Indiana to Berrien in 1834, having entered land in Oronoko, upon section 21, where he now lives. He worked in the village at the carpenter's trade for a brief time after his arrival. Then moving out upon his farm, he began to clear it, while he kept bachelor's hall, and there he has continued to reside ever since.

Joshua Feather, of Snyder Co., Pa., set out from there in the fall of 1835, with his wife and three children, in a one-horse wagon, for Michigan. They spent the winter in Stark Co., Ohio, and in the spring of 1836 pushed on for Berrien, where they arrived in May. After sojourning upwards of a year with a Mr. Brown, near Berrien Springs, Mr. Feather moved upon section 7 in 1837, where he had entered 80 acres, and to that subsequently added 120 acres. Mr. Feather was the pioneer in what is now known as the Feather settlement, and lived an honored and useful life, dying in December, 1878, at the age of seventy-two. His sons, John A., Daniel T., and Joshua, all live on section 7.



A daughter, Mrs. William H. Harner, also lives in Oronoko.

William Lemon, one of the earliest settlers in what is now Berrien township, built a saw-mill in 1832 upon Lemon Creek, one mile east of Berrien Springs. In 1835 he bought George Kimmel's saw-mill, in what is now Oronoko township, and, removing his family thither, continued to reside there until his death, in 1851. He was a citizen of prominence, filled numerous public positions, and was generally esteemed. Of his family of eleven children there are now living Mrs. John Tate, of Berrien; Mrs. Comfort Pennell, Mrs. George Ewalt, and Andrew Lemon, of Oronoko; and William Lemon, of Cass County.

In the spring of 1832, Joseph Feather, of Union Co., Pa., set out alone and on foot for Michigan, intending to locate at Berrien. When he reached Alexandria, on the Juniata, he overtook Henry Freed, of Union County, traveling, with his family, towards the same destination, and so they all came on together. Reaching Berrien village, Feather, who was a carpenter, concluded to go to St. Joseph, and there he worked for Fowler Preston and James Lord at cabinet-making. He returned after a while to Berrien and finished the inside of a house for George Kimmel. Having located 80 acres of land west of where he lives now,—on section 23,—he returned to Pennsylvania in the fall of 1832, and in the spring of 1833 set out once more for Berrien, in company with his sister. He put up a house in the village, and there kept house with his sister for the next three years, during which he worked at his trade. Meanwhile his brother-in-law, Samuel Schemaly, came from Indiana and went upon Feather's place, where he remained about eighteen months, and then moved upon a place (of his own) south of Jesse Helmick's, where he lived until his death, in 1878. In 1836, Feather took possession of his place, and since that time has continued to reside there.

In 1835 there came to Oronoko a small band of settlers, who journeyed in company, from Bedford Co., Pa. There were in the party Jacob Statler and his family, Tobias and Josiah Whetstone, Abram Small, John G. Schultze, Eliza Whetstone, and George Schell. Statler's family consisted of himself, wife, and one child. They traveled, with a two-horse wagon, *via* Pittsburgh, crossed the Maumee River, and reaching Berrien Springs at night, stopped at Pitt Brown's tavern.

Statler and Josiah Whetstone each subsequently purchased 80 acres on section 14. Whetstone still lives on his old place; Statler removed to Niles about 1860, and now lives there.

Tobias Whetstone bought a farm on section 10, but followed boating on the river for some time. In 1852 he went to California, whence he returned in 1859, and since then he has resided on his farm.

John G. Schultze entered 200 acres on section 28, where he still lives. He is now the owner of 550 acres of land, and esteemed one of the wealthiest farmers in the county. Adam Small entered the service of Brown & Ward as their clerk, and served in other stores until 1851, when he became a merchant on his own account. He lives now on his farm on section 16.

George Schell worked about Berrien two years, and then

went to Iowa, where he now lives. Of the persons who landed here in the company above mentioned in 1835, all are still alive save the infant child of Jacob Statler. After the Whetstones settled here they sent for their father, Abram, who made the trip alone on horseback. He resided with them until his death.

Elisha Hall settled in 1833, upon section 27, and entered 220 acres. He remained about fifteen years, then removed to Missouri, and lastly to Indiana, where he died in 1879.

Samuel Singer, with his wife, his brother William, and his wife's sister, came from Pittsburgh in 1835, and located upon 240 acres in section 18. Singer's health was poor, and after a two years' stay he returned to Pittsburgh, and shortly after 1840 sold his place to James Walton, who has since then lived upon it. It is told of Singer that when upon his new settlement he undertook to put up a frame house he, in his ignorance of house-building, reversed the usual order in putting on the "siding," and didn't discover his error until the next rain-storm filled his domicile with water. Wm. Singer remained in Oronoko until 1836, and then moved to Niles.

William Webster, from Virginia, with a large family, and his son-in-law, William Barlow, were settlers in Berrien in 1833, upon the tract now occupied by Rose Hill Cemetery, near Berrien Springs. Barlow remained but a short time and Webster about ten years.

Stephen Purdy worked on Geo. Kimmel's farm at a very early date, and moved, in company with Henry Hoffman, another of Kimmel's workmen, to Illinois, where he bought a farm. Purdy was a widower, and reputed, moreover, as a man of homely appearance. One day C. W. Brown, of Laporte, was traveling from Berrien towards Illinois, and Lyman Barnard said to him, "If you meet Purdy out there give him my regards." "But," returned Brown, "I never saw Purdy; how will I know him?" Replied Barnard, "You can't miss him. Just drive on until you meet the homeliest man in Illinois, call him Purdy, and you can't be mistaken." Sure enough, while Brown was driving through the Sucker State he passed one day upon the highway a man of exceedingly ugly countenance. "That," said Brown to himself, "is Purdy, and no mistake," and turning his head he called out, "How are you, Mr. Purdy?" "Hello!" returned the man, "how did you learn that my name was Purdy?" Thereupon Brown came up with him, and narrated Lyman Barnard's directions. Purdy was heartily amused at the circumstance, and inviting Brown to his house, entertained him as a guest for the next three days. While Purdy lived in Berrien he fell seriously ill, and becoming convinced that he would die, exacted of Dr. Murray a promise that he might be buried under the hill, with his head sticking out, so he might see the steamers pass.

Joseph S. Barnard, the father of Lyman A. Barnard, should have had previous mention. He moved from Ohio to La Grange Prairie, Cass Co., in the fall of 1828, and remaining there until 1833, came to Berrien. In 1832 he was appointed judge upon the circuit embracing Cass and Berrien Counties, and served on his appointment some time after his settlement in Berrien. He was a man of intelli-

gence, took a conspicuous part in the affairs of the time as a county official, and was otherwise a prominent citizen. After a useful existence he died in 1852, in Berrien Springs, at the home of his son Lyman, although he had been living on his farm six miles west of the village.

Jesse Helmick and Wm. Murphy came together from Warren Co., Ohio, on horseback, in 1835, and located land in Oronoko township,—Murphy on section 29 and Helmick within a mile of him. They returned to Ohio for their families, which they conveyed to their new homes in Michigan in two wagons, each drawn by four horses. Murphy survived the change, however, but a few years, dying in 1838. His widow removed to Missouri. Helmick and Murphy intended to buy the land intervening between them so they could be neighbors. Other parties knowing this, bought the tract, thinking Helmick would pay a large price for it, but he refused to buy a foot of it, and removed at once to the place he now owns.

Helmick was a blacksmith, and sturdily plied his calling for some time after settling upon his new location. He had a family of six children when he came hither, and has still living in the township three sons and one daughter. The old gentleman himself, now known as Judge Helmick, is still residing on his farm upon section 34. He has reached the ripe age of eighty-three, and although otherwise hale and hearty, he is incapacitated for active labor by reason of an accident, by which (in 1876) he became permanently crippled. When Mr. Helmick first came to the township he and all the members of his family were at one time prostrated with the ague. Physicians were scarce, and so the sick ones lay for some days, unable to help themselves or each other, and unable to obtain help. A good angel came to them, however, in the person of Stephen Farley, of Berrien, who, in view of the great prevalence of ague about then, abandoned his little farm to itself, and for a while devoted himself, like a good Samaritan, to the care of the afflicted, and a wondrous deal of good he did, too, without money or reward of any kind.

Oliver Spaulding, with his wife and two children, left Merrimac Co., N. H., in May, 1836, for the West, and on the 27th of that month landed at Niles. The trip was made *via* Erie Canal, steamboat on Lake Erie, and stage from Detroit, in what was then considered the remarkably quick time of seventeen days. Mr. Spaulding bought of one Lowe 160 acres on section 26, in Oronoko, and moved upon it with his family without delay, save that necessary to the erection of a cabin, his wife and children being meanwhile domiciled at the house of Hezekiah Hall. Mr. Spaulding lived upon the place until 1860, when he removed to Royalton township, where he now resides.

In 1836, John and Lewis Storick, of Union Co., Pa., left it for Berrien Co., Mich., in company with their father, John's family, and the wife of John G. Schultz, who had migrated from Pennsylvania to Berrien the year before. John Storick had a wife and five children; Lewis, his brother, was unmarried. The entire party traveled overland to Berrien, and upon their arrival the Storicks tarried a while with Abram Freed, one mile west of Berrien village, and shortly afterwards moved to Abel Garr's, on section 21, where the families remained until John and

Lewis put up a log cabin and cleared a portion of 160 acres of land which they had entered in partnership. After Lewis married, the brothers divided their land, and still live upon their original possessions, Lewis having increased his to 340 acres, and John his to 160. Lewis Storick, Sr., the father of Lewis and John, settled upon 40 acres north of Lewis, Jr. After his wife's death he sold his farm, and went to live with Abel Garr, at whose house he died.

May 13, 1835, Samuel Wilson and his wife, his son, Ezra D., and two daughters—one of whom was accompanied by her husband, Henry Tudor, and seven children—started (a company of thirteen) from Spencer, Worcester Co., Mass., for Michigan. They traveled from Spencer to Albany by stage and private conveyance; from Albany to Buffalo *via* the Erie Canal; from Buffalo to Detroit, *via* Lake Erie, on the steamer "Charles Townsend;" and at Detroit they purchased three teams, with which they made the journey overland to Berrien, where they arrived June 13th; the trip from Detroit having occupied ten days.

Tudor located upon the farm now owned by his widow, where he died in 1836, and his son Samuel upon section 24. Samuel Wilson, with his family, lived upon Tudor's place until 1837, when he moved upon a farm in the southeastern part of the township that he had bought of William St. John in 1836. Upon that place his son, Ezra D., now resides. Mr. Wilson died in 1865. Besides Ezra D., his living children are Eunice W. Wheeler, of Oronoko, and Louisa W. Curtis, of Cass County.

Henry Hess came with George Kimmel from Pennsylvania in 1833, and worked on the latter's farm a year. In 1834 he went to Europe and brought back a wife, with whom he continued to work for Mr. Kimmel. In due time he bought a farm of his own, and resided on it until his death. His widow still resides on the old place near Singer Lake.

Morris 'Upright came from New York as early as 1834, but he disliked the country, and after a stay of two years returned to New York.

Samuel Sale, a pioneer from Virginia, located in 1831, about a mile up the river from Berrien village. He died after a four years' residence, and has left no descendants in the township.

Jonathan Knight, now living upon section 11, came from Champaign Co., Ohio, in 1836, with John Gillespie and Nathan Fitch, both of the latter settling in Berrien township. Knight was a chairmaker, and after working in the village at his trade some years located upon the place he now occupies.

Bethuel and Ebenezer Farley came to Oronoko about 1833, with their father. Bethuel and his father located upon the farm on section 23 now occupied by Bethuel Farley, and there Farley the elder resided until his death. Ebenezer Farley followed the river as a boatman, and after a while went to California, where he died.

Amos Gray located in Berrien village in 1837, and worked there at his trade as carpenter during the ensuing eight years, some of which time he spent in assisting at the erection of the court-house. In 1844 he moved upon the farm he now occupies (on section 35), and there has since resided. Mr. Gray appeared first in Michigan in 1829,

from which time until his settlement in Berrien he was busily engaged in Michigan and Indiana in his occupation as a mill-wright.

## FIRST EVENTS.

The first birth in the new settlement was, as has been mentioned, a daughter to Francis B. Murdock, now Mrs. Clifton Gardner, of Berrien Springs. The first white *male* child born was Frank, a son of Joseph Feather, who first saw the light early in 1832.

There is some diversity of opinion touching the identity of the first couple married. Joseph Feather, still living near Berrien Springs, was married by Pitt Brown, in 1833, to a daughter of Henry Freed. Before that, A. M. Brownell, of St. Joseph, was married by Pitt Brown to Lucy Ann, a daughter of 'Squire Brown.

Joseph Feather, who was a carpenter and coffin-maker for the village at large in 1832, says the first person buried near the village was one Wilson, a captain on a keel-boat plying on the St. Joseph. Capt. Wilson was interred in what are now called the Indian Fields. The first death in the village was doubtless that of an infant son of Francis B. Murdock, born in Berrien Springs in 1832. He was buried on the place now called the Shaker farm, and his remains still lie in a grave covered by the farm barn.

## TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION.

Oronoko township was originally a portion of Berrien township, from which it was set off in 1837, and named by Governor Mason, doubtless in honor of Oronoko, the Indian chief. William Lemon didn't like the name, and was heard to say, "Why didn't he name it Old Bill, and have done with it?" It then included the territory now occupied by Lake township, which was organized in 1846. Until 1847 portions of Berrien and Oronoko townships were on either side the St. Joseph River, and the larger portion of Berrien Springs was in Berrien township. This condition of things was unsatisfactory, and in the year last mentioned the river was made the dividing line between the townships. The first township-meeting in Oronoko was held in the house of Wm. F. St. John, April 3, 1837. Jesse Helmick was the moderator, Wm. Lemon, John L. Shell, and Jacob L. Kinsey were inspectors of election, and Hezekiel Hall, clerk of election.

The names of those who have served the township as supervisors, clerks, and treasurers from 1837 to 1879, inclusive, will be found herewith appended:

- 1837.—Supervisor, Edward Ballinger; Clerk, William F. St. John; Collector, Alexander Turner.
- 1838.—Supervisor, William Lemon; Clerk, William F. St. John; Collector, Daniel H. Farley.
- 1839.—Supervisor, William Lemon; Clerk, William F. St. John; Treasurer, William Lemon.
- 1840.—Supervisor, Joseph S. Barnard; Clerk, William F. St. John; Treasurer, William Lemon.
- 1841.—Supervisor, Joseph S. Barnard; Clerk, Jacob Statler; Treasurer, William Lemon.
- 1842.—Supervisor, Joseph S. Barnard; Clerk, Jacob Statler; Treasurer, William Lemon.
- 1843.—Supervisor, Abel Garr; Clerk, Jacob Statler; Treasurer, William Lemon.
- 1844-45.—Supervisor, William Lemon; Clerk, Jacob Statler; Treasurer, James M. Watson.
- 1846.—Supervisor, Gilbert B. Avery; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, John Armstrong.

- 1847.—Supervisor, Jesse Helmick; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Aaron Van Patten.
- 1848.—Supervisor, Jesse Helmick; Clerk, Adam Small.
- 1849.—Supervisor, William Lemon; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Aaron Van Patten.
- 1850.—Supervisor, John Garrow; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Lyman A. Barnard.
- 1851.—Supervisor, Josiah Whetstone; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, James M. Watson.
- 1852.—Supervisor, Josiah Whetstone; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Joseph W. Smith.
- 1853.—Supervisor, Josiah Whetstone; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Joseph W. Smith.
- 1854.—Supervisor, Josiah Whetstone; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Lyman A. Barnard.
- 1855.—Supervisor, Lyman A. Barnard; Clerk, Edward Lewis; Treasurer, James Graham.
- 1856.—Supervisor, Jonathan Knight; Clerk, David Platt; Treasurer, James Graham.
- 1857.—Supervisor, R. L. Dudley; Clerk, Preston Boon; Treasurer, C. Gorham.
- 1858.—Supervisor, R. L. Dudley; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Stephen Wood.
- 1859-60.—Supervisor, Charles F. Howe; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, R. L. Dudley.
- 1861.—Supervisor, Charles D. Nichols; Clerk, Francis H. Bartholomew; Treasurer, James M. Watson.
- 1862.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Howe; Clerk, John Boal; Treasurer, Jacob Ewalt.
- 1863.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Howe; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, Henry Stemm.
- 1864.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Howe; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, David Essick.
- 1865.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Howe; Clerk, Henry Stemm; Treasurer, David Essick.
- 1866.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Howe; Clerk, John Boal; Treasurer, Henry Stemm.
- 1867.—Supervisor, Adam Small; Clerk, John Boal; Treasurer, D. H. Reiter.
- 1868.—Supervisor, John P. Vedder; Clerk, Adam Small; Treasurer, D. H. Reiter.
- 1869.—Supervisor, John P. Vedder; Clerk, George S. Pardee; Treasurer, D. H. Reiter.
- 1870.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Howe; Clerk, Charles D. Nichols; Treasurer, D. H. Reiter.
- 1871.—Supervisor, Aaron Van Patten; Clerk, L. B. Marquissee; Treasurer, D. H. Reiter.
- 1872.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Howe; Clerk, L. B. Marquissee; Treasurer, George Claar.
- 1873.—Supervisor, Charles F. Howe; Clerk, Isaac Rogers; Treasurer, George Claar.
- 1874.—Supervisor, Charles F. Howe; Clerk, L. B. Marquissee; Treasurer, George Claar.
- 1875.—Supervisor, Zachariah Fisher; Clerk, L. B. Marquissee; Treasurer, Augustus Kephart.
- 1876.—Supervisor, Zachariah Fisher; Clerk, George Claar; Treasurer, Augustus Kephart.
- 1877.—Supervisor, Zachariah Fisher; Clerk, D. G. W. Gaugler; Treasurer, Peter J. Filkins.
- 1878.—Supervisor, Zachariah Fisher; Clerk, Charles F. Howe; Treasurer, Aaron Van Patten.
- 1879.—Supervisor, Henry Stemm; Clerk, D. G. W. Gaugler; Treasurer, Aaron Van Patten.

## JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

William Lemon, Jesse Helmick, Hezekiah Hall, and William F. St. John were chosen at the first township election, in 1837, for four, three, two, and one years, respectively. Each succeeding year one justice was chosen to fill the vacancy caused by the expiration of the term of one of the four in office, the number of justices serving being at all times four. Those so elected after 1837 were as follows:



1838, William F. St. John; 1839, Jesse Helmick; 1840, Peter Ruggles; 1841, Jacob Statler, Daniel McFarly; 1842, Uziel Williams; 1843, F. D. Johnson; 1844, Oliver Spalding; 1845, Jacob Statler; 1846, Amos Gray; 1847, John S. Foot; 1848, Morris Frost; 1849, Jesse Helmick, Ebenezer McIlvain;\* 1850, Oscar A. Dudley; 1851, Ebenezer McIlvain; 1852, John Garrow, William E. Lemon; 1853, Jesse Helmick; 1854, John W. Murphey; 1855, William S. Merrill, Nathan Helmick;\* 1856, Samuel Sleigh, James Farrell,\* John Weaver;\* 1857, Jesse Helmick, H. Hinchman;\* 1858, Hiram Hinchman; 1859, Amos Gray; 1860, Wm. Taber,\* Charles D. Nichols; 1861, Preston Boon; 1862, Leonard S. Parce,\* Preston Boon; 1863, R. J. Tuttle, Daniel Terriere;\* 1864, Westley Stowe; 1865, Jas. M. Watson; 1866, Robert Hastings; 1867, Zachariah Fisher; 1868, Westley Stowe; 1869, Norman E. Landon; 1870, Robert Hastings; 1871, Zachariah Fisher,\* Darius Brown; 1872, John Boon, Amos Gray;\* 1873, George H. Murdock,\* Lewis Fisher; 1874, Robert Hastings,\* Amos Gray; 1875, Burns Helmick,\* Jas. M. Watson; 1876, Jas. M. Watson; 1877, George H. Murdock; 1878, Robert Hastings; 1879, Charles D. Nichols.

The affairs of the township are under control of what is known as the Township Board, composed, according to law, of the supervisor, the justice of the peace longest in office, and the township clerk. The Township Board for 1879 included, therefore, Henry Stemm, James M. Watson, and D. G. W. Gaugler. The Township Board acts also as a board of health.

April 1, 1879, the township was clear of debt, and had \$204.56 in the treasury. The total assessed valuation for 1879 was \$404,675. The total tax was \$6913, of which \$4135.93 were for school purposes.

Beginning with 1838, Oronoko has furnished of its citizens for county offices the following: County Clerks, Geo. H. Murdock and Chas. E. Howe; Registers, F. D. Johnson, Chas. F. Howe; Sheriffs, A. B. Munger, John Wittenmyer, James Graham, Chas. D. Nichols; Treasurers, Wm. Lemon, Chas. D. Nichols; Surveyor, Amos Gray; Judge of Probate, E. McIlvaine.

#### CHURCHES.

Although opinions conflict as to when and by whom the first sermon was preached in Berrien village, it seems to be agreed that the first sermon was delivered by a Methodist minister. Methodist missionaries to the Far West were somewhat plentiful in the days of 1833 or thereabouts, and it was about that year that Rev. Mr. Cobb preached in the house of George Brong what is supposed by some to have been the pioneer sermon. Cobb returned occasionally and preached at Berrien more or less for the space of a year. Others maintain that before Mr. Cobb's advent a young man professing to be a United Brethren preacher held religious services occasionally in a log cabin near Pitt Brown's tavern. He rode a long circuit, and managed to reach Berrien about once a month.

This preacher was a young man without conspicuous talent, and evidently poorly paid, but he was an earnest and energetic worker nevertheless, and was doubtless always eagerly welcomed at a time when public religious teachings were rare though much desired. It is told that he was so poor that his clothing was in rags, and that one Sunday, after his sermon in Berrien, he was approached by Dr. Mur-

ray, who asked him if it were against his principles to receive a donation on the Sabbath. "No, sir," promptly replied the preacher, whereupon Dr. Murray took him down to his store and decked him out from head to foot in a new suit of clothes.

*Methodist Episcopal Church of Berrien Springs.*—This church was organized some time in 1835, by Rev. Richard Meek, who was the first preacher regularly assigned to preach at Berrien. Previous to that the Elkhardt Conference sent out numerous missionaries, who stopped occasionally at Berrien, but their coming was always irregular and uncertain. The early records of the church are not in existence, but from oral testimony it appears that the members of the first class formed by Mr. Meek were Warren Wood and wife, George Brong and wife, Martin Friley and wife, and Lucy Farley. Directly after the organization of the class it was joined by Jesse Helmick and wife, Morris Upright, and Mrs. Wm. Murphy, then new-comers into the settlement. Martin Friley was the first class-leader, but was soon succeeded by Morris Upright. The first steward was George Brong. After Meek's time, Revs. McCool and Owens were on the circuit, each preaching every alternate fortnight. The congregation worshiped in the town school-house until 1845, when the church edifice now in use was built.

The membership, which numbered 102 in September, 1879, was divided between two classes, viz., the Berrien Springs class, with 75 members, worshipping at Berrien Springs, and the Oronoko class, with 27, worshipping in the Grange Hall, in the southeast part of the township. The officers of the former are: Trustees, B. Farley, J. S. Helmick, C. D. Nichols, R. Rennie, and Joel Benson; Stewards, J. S. Helmick, C. D. Nichols, B. Farley, R. Rennie, Geo. H. Martin, Wm. B. Edson; Recording Steward, B. Helmick; District Steward, C. D. Nichols. Of the latter the officers are: Trustees, Jesse Helmick, B. Helmick, R. V. Clark, Joseph Beach, Wm. Tabor, Elias Palmeter; Stewards, Jesse Helmick, B. Helmick, R. V. Clark; Recording Steward, B. Helmick; District Steward, C. D. Nichols. The church was awaiting in September, 1879, the assignment of a pastor, the term of the service of the last pastor, Rev. John Hoyt, having expired early in the month.

*The Evangelical Association.*—This congregation was organized in 1854, by Rev. Mr. Eckert, in the residence of Lewis Evans, on section 8. Previous to that time members of the faith used to assemble in the houses of John Storick, in Oronoko, and John Harner, in Lake township, to listen to preaching by missionaries Stephay, Ruh, Kulp, Platz, and others. Eckert was a missionary, and it was at the solicitation of Lewis Evans that he undertook the task of organizing a church. The members were few in number at first, and included Lewis Evans and his wife, his son Edward, his daughters Mary and Margaret, and Daniel T. Feather and wife. John Schneider was the first exhorter, Daniel T. Feather the first steward, and likewise the first class-leader.

Among the pastors who preached for the congregation at an early period of its existence were Revs. Uphaus, Kreiger, Ude, David Garl, Speck, Gomer, Rigel, and Allsbach.

\* To fill vacancy.

Public worship was held in a town school-house until 1873, when upon the erection of Salem church that edifice was used, in common with the Lutherans, and has been so used since. Services are now held once every two weeks by Rev. C. Ude, of St. Joseph. The church membership is 38; the class-leader is J. Boal; the steward, Daniel T. Feather; and the exhorter, F. Fleischer.

*St. Paul's Evangelical Lutheran Church*, of Berrien Springs, was formed May 27, 1871, as the Bethlehem congregation, when twenty-six persons became members of the congregation. Their names were Joseph A. Becker, David M. Foster, James Simpson, D. G. W. Gaugler, J. J. Becker, Joshua Shaffer, Peter Wenn, Kate C. Feather, Lizzie M. Gaugler, Sarah Peck, Mary Shaffer, Elizabeth Becker, Mary C. Foster, Ella E. G. Whetstone, Jane Riggins, Mary Ann Toney, Amelia Reiber, M. F. Hills, Ann Hills, Wm. F. Reiber, John Burke, Sarah A. Burke, Mary K. Ewalt, George Doty, Uriah Schaffer, Eliza Schaffer.

The church officers at the organization were Joseph A. Becker and David M. Foster as elders, and William F. Reiber and John Burke as deacons. The officers now are: Trustees, Joseph A. Becker, T. W. Anderson, L. B. Marquissee; Deacons, D. G. W. Gaugler, T. W. Anderson; Elders, Joseph A. Becker, William F. Reiber.

The congregation worshiped in the United Brethren church until 1873, when the present neat edifice was prepared from a school building purchased of the town.

Rev. B. F. Hill was the first pastor, and following him were Revs. J. N. Morris, Samuel Kelso (who resigned March 31, 1879), and F. W. Wetherwax, the latter being in charge September, 1879, when the church membership numbered 40.

The Sunday-school attached to this church numbers now 75 scholars, and has a library of three hundred volumes. Mr. L. B. Marquissee, the present superintendent, has occupied that position since early in 1877.

*Mount Tabor (Evangelical Lutheran) Church*.—May 10, 1863, Rev. John Boon organized the Mount Tabor congregation, with 29 members. They set forth as follows: "We, whose names are hereunto attached, living in the county of Berrien, State of Michigan, desiring to promote the glory of God and secure the salvation of ourselves, our children, and our neighbors, and believing that the Bible is the word of God, and the only infallible rule of faith and practice, and also believing that the doctrines of God's word are purely taught and its ordinances are properly administered in the Evangelical Lutheran Church of these United States, as represented in the General Synod of said church, do organize," etc.

The names of the constituent members appearing upon the church records are Michael, Sophia, William, and Lavina Harner, Michael Harner, Jr., George and Mary Ann Smith, John and Lydia Heim, James Storick, wife, and daughter, Mrs. St. John, R. J. Tuttle, Malvina C. Tuttle, Sarah and Lavina Smith, Elizabeth J. Allen, Alvina Edwards, Mary A. Storick, Mariah Lockinaw, Andrew and Mrs. Biblmire, Emma Brocius, Stephen Harner, Mary A. Murphy.

The church organization was effected in a township school-house, where worship was held for a brief period thereafter,

until the erection, in the southwestern portion of the township, of the church building now in use. Rev. John Boon served as the first pastor, and during the five years of his ministry added four members to the church. In 1867, Rev. D. H. Reiter, a German Reformed minister, took charge as supply, and remained until April, 1871, when Rev. B. F. Hill, of the Synod of Northern Indiana, was called as pastor. Mr. Hill's successors have been Revs. S. Kelso and F. W. Wetherwax, who is now the pastor in charge. The church has latterly declined in membership, which includes now about twenty persons.

For 1879 the elders were Michael Harner, Sr., and John H. Sunday. The deacons were Michael Harner, Jr., and Sanford Marsh.

*Salem Evangelical Lutheran Church*.—This church was organized, April 8, 1860, by Rev. John Boon. The constituent members were six in number, as follows: Joshua Feather, Sr., Moses and Mary Feather, Isaac Hartlein, Leah Starr, and Lydia Moyer. On the same day were added Joel Starr, Joshua Feather, Jr., Mary Ann Feather, Lavina Richards, Mary Broceus, Matilda Hartlein, Susanna Feather, Mrs. Moses Feather. Moses Feather was chosen elder, and Isaac Hartlein deacon.

The congregation was small at first, and gained strength but slowly. Services were held in a township school-house until 1873, when a church was built in the Feather settlement. The membership is now about forty, and the officers as follows: Elders, Moses Feather and Adam K. Stemm; Deacons, Wm. H. Harner and John S. Stover; Trustees, Ira Stemm, Wm. H. Harner, and Moses Feather.

*United Brethren in Christ*.—One Sabbath in May, 1844, two frontier missionaries—Thomas J. Babcock and Elmsley Lamb—reached Berrien Springs and attended the Methodist Episcopal Church services that day in the town school-house. Upon the termination of the services Mr. Babcock arose and said that if there were in the village people desirous of forming themselves into a United Brethren congregation he would make an appointment, and speedily return from a contemplated western journey to effect the organization. His proposition met with favorable encouragement, and returning soon afterwards he organized the church of the United Brethren in Christ in the town school-house, May 20, 1844. The names of those who joined the congregation at that time were Tobias Whetstone, Elizabeth Abbott, Mary Lemon, Lavina Lemon, Erasmus Curtis, Abram Statler, Samuel Tudor, Hannah Brown, Stephen Leonard, Dennis Benton, Sarah Curtis, Mary Curtis, Elizabeth Gleaner, John Cowen, Benjamin Borders, Fannie Ackerman, Caleb M. Clark, George Ewalt, Sally Ann Seward, Mary Florida, Elizabeth Curtis, Jane Maddern, Elmira Smith, Samuel Benton, J. W. Cheney, Laura Cheney, Thomas L. Wilkinson, John Lemon, Elizabeth Irwin, Warren Wood, Edwin Bowen, Abraham Whetstone, Isaac and Catherine Lemon, Wm. Lemon, Eliza Whetstone, John Borders, Margaret Lemon, Julia Dougherty, Eunice Barnard, Adam Small, Joseph Farquhar, George Erwin, David Moore, John Tate, Sally Ann Blackmore, Wm. Erwin, Elizabeth Young, Joseph F. Irish, Anthony Miller, Comfort Pennell, John Armstrong, Abigail Painter, James Erwin, Joseph and Ann Feather,

Sarah Gray, Morah Wood, Margaret Erwin, Susannah Tudor, Moses Burke, Isaac Mellon, Delia Ann Blackman, Sarah Ann Borders, Rebecca Morris, Eli Raver, Leonard Maddern, Mary Ann Burke, Ursula Hand, Rebecca Miller, Jane Erwin, Wm. M. Abbott, Nancy M. Friday, Ellen J. Rush, Wm. Strong, Aaron P. Morris, Catherine Mellon, Sarah Jane Brong, N. W. Thompson.

An entry upon the church records, in the handwriting of Thomas J. Babcock, sets forth as follows: "Took charge of the church May 20, 1844, with — members; left in 1845, with eighty members." Thomas L. Wilkinson was the first class-leader; James Erwin and Isaac Lemon the first trustees. Worship was at first held in the town school-house, but in 1845 a church was built and is still in use. Revs. Babcock and Lamb preached to the congregation until 1845, when Rev. J. B. Slight took charge. The imperfectness of the church records precludes the presentation here of a list of the ministers who followed Mr. Slight. In September, 1879, Rev. E. F. Light was the pastor, William Stahl was class-leader, Tobias Whetstone was the steward, and Comfort Pennell, George Ewalt, and William Stahl the trustees. The church membership is 43.

The Sunday-school attached to this church numbers 107 pupils, in charge of nine teachers and Superintendent J. M. Willis.

#### CEMETERIES.

Oronoko contains four cemeteries, of which the chief one is Rose Hill, at Berrien Springs. This grave-yard is likewise the oldest one in the township, having been laid out in 1837. It contains now three and one-third acres, is handsomely located upon a commanding elevation in full view of the St. Joseph River, and is embellished with several fine monuments, including a memorial shaft to the citizens of Oronoko who fell in the war of the Rebellion. The other township cemeteries are Salem Cemetery, at Salem church, Maple Grove, in school district No. 4, and Oak Grove, one mile west of Maple Grove.

#### THE SOLDIERS' MONUMENT.

The soldiers' monument in Rose Hill Cemetery is a plain marble column, which was procured by private subscriptions, and set up as a memorial in 1874. Upon one side of the column is the following:

"In memory and to the honor of the soldiers of Oronoko township who died in the service of their country in the Rebellion of 1861.

"*"They died that the nation might live."*—LINCOLN.

Upon a second appear the names:

"Lieut. Ed. Hurson, E. H. Bartholomew, Jas. Beall, W. Brayman, Levi P. Brown, Wm. Calhoun, N. Cleaveland, E. N. Cleaveland, C. H. Davidson, W. H. Dennison, Comfort Estes, Amos Goff.

"*"Thus sleep the brave who sink to rest,  
With all their country's honors blest."*

Upon a third side:

"Martin Gubby, Hart Granger, Joseph Gubby, Aaron Hiser, Joel Kerr, Rodney Knight, Isaac Lamb, Wm. W. Lender, J. H. Matthews, N. Morlan, Nathan Place, Isaac Quirk.

"*"Sleep deep! Sleep in peace! Sleep in memory ever!  
Wrapt each soul in the deeds of its deathless endeavor."*

On the fourth side are the names:

"M. Pangborn, G. R. Rogers, J. Shunkwilder, J. R. Simons, Stephen Simons, Alonzo Sisco, Thomas Streets, H. F. Summers, John Treadwell, Levi Trumm, Milt. Wood, Joseph Vetter.

"*"Forget not the dead who fought for us."*

#### SCHOOLS.

Weightier and more pressing business engaging the attention of those who led the van in settling Wolf's Prairie, the matter of public education was not pressed until the winter of 1833; indeed, until that time the population was so small that it was but a little band of children that could be gathered even then, and Nathan Helmick, known as lame Nathan (a brother of Judge Jesse Helmick, now living in Oronoko), who taught the first school, in 1833, was not overrun with pupils. Mr. Helmick taught in an old log cabin which had been put up by William Barlow, in what is now known as Barnard's Grove. In 1834 school matters had improved, the settlement had materially increased, and accordingly a school-house was built, and from that time onward the cause of education flourished. During the winter of 1834-35 there were three teachers, to wit: Thomas Love, the storekeeper, A. B. Smith, and William Singer, of Pittsburgh.

With the organization of the township, in 1837, schools received increased attention, and flourished during the subsequent years. Now Oronoko is excellently provided with schools. The first school inspectors appointed by the township were William Lemon, Jesse Helmick, and Hezekiah Hall. There are now in the township seven school districts. District No. 1 includes the village of Berrien Springs; No. 2 is in the northwest; No. 3 is on the St. Joseph road; No. 4 in the southwest; No. 5 in the southwest; Nos. 6 and 7 in the west. A statistical report of the union school at Berrien Springs is given elsewhere. Statistics touching other school districts are given below, as per the district reports, dated Sept. 1, 1879:

District No. 2: \* Number of scholars, 45; average attendance, 44; value of school property, \$300; amount of teachers' wages, \$150.

District No. 3: Number of scholars, 48; average attendance, 48; value of school property, \$600; amount of teachers' wages, \$220.

\* District No. 4: Number of scholars, 69; average attendance, 71; value of school property, \$600; amount of teachers' wages, \$201.

District No. 5: Number of scholars, 57; average attendance, 49; value of school property, \$1800; amount of teachers' wages, \$175.

District No. 6: Number of scholars, 37; average attendance, 29; value of school property, \$500; amount of teachers' wages, \$182.

District No. 7: Number of scholars, 42; average attendance, 34; value of school property, \$100; amount of teachers' wages, \$100.

John H. Sunday was chosen school superintendent for 1879. The school inspectors for that year were Harmon Cowens, John H. Sunday, and D. G. W. Gaugler.

*Berrien Springs Union School.*—Upon the passage of the union school law Berrien Springs village assumed direct control of its schools, located in township school District No. 1. A commodious and handsome frame school edifice, surmounted with a tower, was erected in 1874, at a cost of about \$7500, including land, and remains to-day a

\* From the reports for 1878.



striking architectural ornament of the village. From the school report for 1879 it is learned that the district is clear of debt and has in the treasury \$291.22. The receipts from district taxes in 1879 were \$2200, and the actual expense for the support of the school for that period was \$1619. The school has seating capacity for 275 pupils, but had during 1879 an average attendance of only 210, out of an enumeration of 247, which latter shows a falling off of 24 from the enumeration of 1878. There are three departments, including a high school and four teachers, Henry G Hipp being the principal. The school board is composed of Messrs. R. D. Dix, Darius Brown, Jacob Boon, Joel Benson, Harlow Vinton, Wm. F. Reiber.

#### MANUFACTURING INDUSTRIES.

Although the St. Joseph River furnishes excellent water-power along the border of Oronoko township, it is not utilized, for the reason that lack of transportation facilities to market towns checks the development of manufacturing enterprise. In the course of time a line of railway will doubtless pass through Berrien Springs, and in that event the village will naturally become a manufacturing point of some importance, since nature has already provided ample means towards that end.

The old wooden structure standing near the bridge in Berrien Springs, and used by Stowe & Brother as a wooden-bowl factory, was erected in 1857 by Gorham, Dudley & Boon, as a flour-mill, and it passed successively into the hands of Wm. Pears, — Glover, Mr. Horton, and Ransom & Randall. The latter removed the machinery of the mill to the grist-mill now operated by Ransom & Martin, on Lemon Creek, and for five years the old mill on the river-bank stood idle. In the spring of 1879, Stowe & Brother took hold of it and began to make wooden bowls. The business was temporarily suspended in the autumn of 1879, but with a probability of early resumption.

A. G. Shearer started a planing-mill in the village in 1870, and in 1873 H. D. Howe became associated with him. The firm of Shearer & Howe still run the mill, in which they manufacture siding, matched flooring, etc., and do scroll-sawing and wood-turning. In connection with the planing-mill they operate also a cider-mill.

Besides the industries mentioned there are in the village Jacob Boon's wagon-shop, Peter J. Filkins' cooper-shop, and other minor manufactories.

Alfred Bowles has a steam saw-mill near Singer Lake; Ezra D. Wilson operates a saw-mill three miles southwest of the Springs; and a mile west is the steam saw-mill of Ransom & Martin.

#### ORDERS AND SOCIETIES.

*Western Star Lodge*, No. 39, F. and A. M., was instituted Jan. 10, 1850. Previous to that date it was conducted under dispensation from Nov. 28, 1849, the date of the first meeting, when there were nine members. The first officers were R. W. Landon, W. M.; Wm. Dougherty, S. W.; Michael Hand, J. W.; Ethan A. Brown, S. D.; Everett Webster, J. D.; O. D. Snow, Treas.; Wm. F. St. John, Sec.; Morris Boss, Tiler. The foregoing and Geo. R. L. Baker included the original members.

The membership is now 75, and the officers as follows: L. B. Marquissee, W. M.; R. A. Wheeler, S. W.; Daniel Robinson, J. W.; E. D. Wilson, Treas.; Wm. F. Reiber, Sec.; A. W. Marrs, S. D.; — J. D.; E. F. Armstrong, Tiler; Aaron Van Patten and T. C. Spalding, Stewards. The Worshipful Masters since the lodge organization have been, in the order of their service, R. W. Landon, Michael Hand, Everett Webster, E. A. Brown, Cornelius Gorham, E. A. Brown, C. Gorham, R. L. Dudley, E. A. Brown, C. D. Nichols, James Graham, E. A. Brown, A. W. Marrs, E. A. Brown, Michael Hand, A. W. Marrs, E. A. Brown, Edward Hall, L. B. Marquissee, William H. Miller, L. B. Marquissee, N. M. Claypole, L. B. Marquissee.

The lodge owns a handsomely-furnished hall at Berrien Springs, in which assemblies have been held since November, 1875. Regular meetings are held every Wednesday in each month on or before the night of full moon.

*Berrien Springs Lodge*, No. 323, I. O. O. F., was instituted March 17, 1879, with charter members as follows: E. D. Cook, Geo. W. Rowe, D. G. W. Gaugler, R. A. Demont, Geo. W. Caruthers, Joel Benson, John H. Stover, Jas. Smith, Alex. J. Malloy, Norman Nimms. The first officers were E. D. Cook, N. G.; Geo. W. Caruthers, V. G.; D. G. W. Gaugler, Rec. Sec.; R. A. Demont, P. Sec.; Geo. W. Rowe, Treas. Although but six months of age, the lodge numbers a membership of 50. Regular meetings are held every Monday night in the hall over the post-office.

The officers Sept. 1, 1879, were G. W. Caruthers, N. G.; Norman Nimms, V. G.; W. P. Harmon, Rec. Sec.; R. A. Demont, P. Sec.; Geo. W. Rowe, Treas.

*Oronoko Lodge*, No. 69, A. O. U. W., was organized May 23, 1879, with 17 members. The officers elected at the organization still remain in office, and are: R. A. Demont, P. M. W.; R. D. Dix, M. W.; C. B. Watson, Sec.; W. F. Reiber, F.; W. H. Miller, G. F.; L. St. John, O.; L. B. Marquissee, G.; G. W. Rough, Rec.; Jacob Boon, I. W.; Otis Reed, O. W. The membership is now 21. Regular meetings are held on the first and third Tuesdays of each month in the I. O. O. F. Hall.

*Mount Tabor Grange*, No. 43, P. of H., was organized Aug. 5, 1873, with the following members: Joseph Beach and wife, Stephen Harner and wife, P. Helmick and wife, William M. Tabor and wife, Orlando Nelson and wife, Christopher Raver, J. C. Beach, D. Sylvester and wife, A. Green and wife, Richard Edwards and wife. William M. Tabor was the first Master and B. Helmick the first Secretary. Until August, 1877, the grange held meetings in the dwellings of its members. A fine grange hall was completed and occupied at that time. It is located in the southeastern part of the township, and cost to build \$1200. The members number now 59. The officers chosen for 1879 were W. J. Jones, M.; Mattie J. Helmick, Sec.; Chester Fisher, Treas.; Thos. J. Crandall, Overseer; Joseph Beach, Chaplain; A. Green, Steward; A. D. Stowe, Assistant Steward; George Reese, Lecturer; Mrs. A. D. Stowe, Lady Assistant Steward; Mrs. Sarah Jones, Ceres; Miss Nellie McOmber, Flora; Miss Ettie Fisher, Pomona; Mrs. E. A. Green, O. G.

*Berrien Springs Grange*, No. 40, P. of H., was organized

ized in 1873, but declining in strength in 1879, was in that year dissolved.

*The Berrien Springs Cornet Band* was organized in 1878, by Professor G. W. Chadwick, of Warsaw, Ind., who, in response to a call, spent a brief period in Berrien Springs in the training of the band. Mr. G. W. Caruthers, who was chosen the first leader, still continues at the head of the organization, whose force includes eight brass instruments and two drums. The band renders frequent and effective service in the local field, and enjoys a creditable reputation as a company of skilled performers.

*The Red Ribbon Club*, organized in 1877, has now about 150 members, and officers as follows: Charles B. Watson, President; Mrs. Chas. B. Watson, Robert Renne, and Mrs. David Essick, Vice-Presidents; F. A. Brayman, Sec.; C. D. Nichols, Treas.; John Costello, F. S.; R. D. Dix and Jennie Boon, Marshals; J. R. Miller, Chaplain. Regular meetings are held every Tuesday evening in Red Ribbon Hall.

*The Berrien Springs Debating Society*, organized in 1869, meets for public discussion during the winter seasons. The officers for 1879 were Clifton Gardner, President; Augustus Kepbart, Secretary and Treasurer. The membership in September, 1879, was 12.

*The Young People's Picnic Association* of Berrien County was organized Aug. 9, 1877. Annual meetings are held in Barnard's Grove at Berrien Springs, and those occasions have thus far witnessed the gathering of a joyous multitude and the passage of a happy time.

*A Grand Army of the Republic Post and Ladies' Library Association* flourished in Berrien Springs a few years ago, but they passed out of existence before 1877.

*Berrien County Pioneer Association.*—This association, composed, as its name indicates, of those who participated in the pioneer settlement of Berrien County, was organized Sept. 22, 1875. Its members—now numbering upwards of 300—have held yearly reunions since then on the first Wednesday in June, in Barnard's Grove, near Berrien Springs, and at these meetings have gathered not only Berrien pioneers, but people from various parts of the State, as well as from other Western States. On the occasion of the reunion in June, 1879, the number of persons in attendance was estimated at fully 10,000.

The exercises at these pioneer meetings consist of diversified entertainment, historical addresses and the narration of old settlers' reminiscences forming naturally the leading features, while pleasing amusements and feasting add much to the cheerfulness of the occasion.

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

### PIPESTONE TOWNSHIP.\*

Settlements and Pioneers in Pipestone—"Shanghai Village"—Early Industries—The German Settlement—Township Organization and Officers—Schools—Churches—Eau Claire—Pipestone Grange—A Memorable Wind-Storm.

PIPESTONE, named after the large creek which flows through the township from east to west, is numbered town

5 south, in range 17 west, and lies on the eastern line of the county, having Bainbridge township on the north, Berrien on the south, the Cass County line on the east, and Sodus township on the west.

A considerable portion of the township, estimated at one-tenth of the territory, is swamp-land, the major portion thereof being on the north and east. In the latter district is the "big meadow," the largest of the swamp tracts, which covers nearly 1000 acres. The roads through these swampy lands are very bad at their best, and are at times well-nigh impassable. Measures are, however, now in progress by which it is hoped to reclaim the "big meadow," and eventually the other swampy regions. Certain it is that this land, when reclaimed, will be exceedingly valuable.

Liberal attention is given to the production of fruit, and of apples the annual yield is exceedingly large. The soil is favorable to the bountiful growth of wheat and corn, the average yield of the former being twenty bushels per acre. Instances have been cited of thirty-eight bushels per acre in 1879.

The surface of the country is uneven, and water-courses are plentiful. Pipestone Creek, the largest of these, flows from the northeastern corner of the township westward to the St. Joseph River, and affords at Shanghai good water-power. The market-towns are Benton Harbor and Dowagiac. The two villages in Pipestone, Shanghai and Eau Claire, have post-offices, but these are small settlements.

#### SETTLEMENTS AND PIONEERS IN PIPESTONE.

The southern and western portions of Pipestone fell into the hands of Eastern land speculators soon after the township survey. Nearly all of these land-owners lived in New York State, among the most prominent being Lawrence, Corning, Bushnell, and Voorhies. As they bought the most of their land from the general government at one dollar and a quarter an acre, and sold it to settlers at two dollars and a half, their investments paid them handsomely. Although the territory now covered by Bainbridge and Watervliet received settlers as early as 1835, that portion of Bainbridge now called Pipestone did not attract much attention until 1837, and for some time after that settlements were slow; while in the north and eastern portions, where the land was swampy, there were scarcely any settlers even as late as 1847.

The first white settler in the township was undoubtedly James Kirk, a Virginian. Mr. Kirk's brother William had moved from Virginia to Niles in 1830, and James Kirk, actuated by a desire to leave a country where slavery prevailed, and by the invitation to join his brother, moved in 1833, with his wife and two children, from his Virginia home to Niles. After residing there four years he determined to seek a home in some newer region, and in the fall of 1836 set out, in company with Robert Newell, of Niles, on a land-prospecting tour. They followed Indian trails and section lines, marked by blazed trees, until coming one day to a cold spring on section 20, in what is now Pipestone, Mr. Kirk determined to locate a farm that should take in that spring. He returned with Newell to Niles, entered eighty acres on the section mentioned, and in April, 1837, set out, with his family, from Niles in a lumber-wagon

\* By David Schwartz.





RESIDENCE OF AARON VAN PATTEN, ORONOKO TP, BERRIEN CO., MICH.



RESIDENCE OF GEORGE C. HARTMAN, PIPESTONE TP, BERRIEN CO., MICH.





drawn by a pair of oxen. Newell, it may be noted, was not impressed with the value of the lands he had seen, and concluded to remain in Niles. Mr. Kirk's family had by this time increased to seven children, and so when the family move was made for the Pipestone country there were in the company nine persons.

The journey was a tedious one of two days, and was made over roads much of which Kirk was compelled to cut for his passage through the woods.

The first night was passed at the house of Henry Rush, in Berrien. The second night saw the family upon their new possession, and there, erecting a cloth tent near the spring, they passed the night, the only civilized tenants of a vast forest resounding with the cries of wolves, and familiar to no human tread save that of the red man.

On the following day Kirk, assisted by his boys, the eldest of whom was but eight years of age, erected a pole shanty. Later in the year neighbors came from Bainbridge and Berrien and assisted Kirk in putting up a comfortable and commodious cabin of split logs. Of the seven children mentioned there are now five living, viz., Mrs. Israel Williams, of Kansas; Joseph S. Kirk, of Iowa; John T. Kirk, of California; Mrs. Sarah Query, of Kansas; and Joseph A. Kirk, living upon the old farm. Isaac H., the eldest of the seven, entered the military service during the Mexican war, and died on his way home. William D. lived in Pipestone until his death, in 1865.

Aug. 20, 1837, while Kirk was still living in the pole shanty, he became for the eighth time a father. The child was a daughter, and enjoyed the distinction of being the first white child born in the township. She was named Mary Ellen, and, as the widow of William Penland, still lives in Royalton township. Although Mr. Kirk took at no time a prominent part in the public affairs of the township, he was well known far and near, and much respected. He was a man of much humor, and numerous stories are in existence of his quaint sayings and love of the ludicrous. He remained upon the place of his first location until the day of his death, and lived long enough to see the wilderness of his early days become a country of fruitful farms.

Mr. Kirk was the only settler in Pipestone until some time during the summer of 1837, when Dr. Morgan Enos came from Millburg, with his wife, and located upon 160 acres lying in sections 18 and 19, which he had entered the previous year, while visiting his brother Joab in Benton township. William Boughton, living on the Territorial road, near Millburg, in Bainbridge, had in 1836 attempted to cut out a road from the Territorial road to section 18, in Pipestone (where he had entered land), but gave up the task before completing much of it.

When Dr. Enos was about ready to set out for his Pipestone farm he, with Crawford Hazard and Nathaniel Brant, finished the road that Boughton had commenced, and over it Dr. Enos moved his family and possessions to a log house previously put up there for him by Hazard, Brant, and others, who had cleared also a half-acre of land about the cabin and sown it with turnip-seed. Dr. Enos then employed Brant, Hazard, and two men named Pelch and Vandever to cut a road through to Henry Rush's, in Berrien, and from section 18 to Larue's saw-mill, in what is now Sodus.

Brant and Hazard, of whom mention has been made above, were early comers in Bainbridge, and after assisting Dr. Enos to settle in Pipestone continued to work for him, and made Pipestone township their home.

Hazard, who had a family, settled upon a place of his own north of Dr. Enos, and lived there until 1844, when he moved to Hagar and bought out Oliver Sorell. Nathaniel Brant, who was a young bachelor, worked for Dr. Enos a few years, and on April 29, 1840, married Martha, daughter of Crawford Hazard. The wedding ceremony was performed by 'Squire David S. Rector, at the residence of the bride's father, and is remembered as the first marriage in the township. The occasion had been anticipated by the country roundabout, and preparations were made for the entertainment of a numerous company, but almost impassable roads kept many of the promised guests at home, although there were at hand sufficient numbers to have a generally merry time.

Upon Brant's marriage he became a settler in Pipestone, and located upon a farm in section 17. In 1844 he sold out and settled in Bainbridge, the purchaser of his place being Oliver Sorel, who came from New York to Watervliet, in 1836, to work for Smith & Merriek; lived afterwards in St. Joseph and Hagar, and selling his farm in the latter place, in 1844, to Crawford Hazard, moved in that year to the Brant farm in Pipestone. He sold in 1854 to William R. Hogue, and moved to the northern part of the township, where he now lives.

Morgan Enos was a skillful physician, and, upon his settlement in Pipestone, practiced medicine whenever duty called him. He was for many years the only physician in that region, and acquiring a business that called him far and near, came to be exceedingly well known. Called in haste one day to attend one of James Kirk's sons, he found that the lad had, while chopping in the woods, completely severed one toe and cut another, so that it hung simply by the skin. The boy's mother, upon answering his alarm, had hastily replaced the hanging toe against the portion whence it had been cut; and when Dr. Enos arrived he found the toe back in the exact spot from which it had been taken, and cleverly bandaged. "Madam," said he, "what did you call me for? I couldn't do a neater job than that if I were to try for a thousand years. That's what I call 'healing at the first touch.'"

During his later years, when old age began to tell upon him, Dr. Enos retired from active practice, and lived at his ease until his death, in September, 1868. Two of his children—Mrs. R. L. Webster and Juliette Enos—live at Shanghai, the birthplace of Mrs. Webster, who was the second child born in Pipestone township.

The year 1837 brought a number of other settlers into Pipestone, among whom were Robert Ferry, Elijah Pratt, William Boughton, Stephen Smith, and Loren Marsh.

First in order of settlement was Robert Ferry, who followed close upon Morgan Enos in the pioneer work. He came over from Ireland in 1835, worked as a farmer's hand in New York State two years (during which time, in 1836, he entered a piece of land on section 27, in Pipestone), and in 1837 entered upon his Michigan estate, and set himself resolutely at the business of clearing his land. He was

a bachelor then, and from 1837 to 1839 lived in his little log shanty, with no companion save his dog. He was alone in the vast wilderness, two miles or more distant from the nearest settler; he heard no sounds save those of howling wolves, and saw no human faces except such as belonged to the red-skins, who occasionally looked in upon him, always, however, in a friendly spirit. He worked away faithfully, and, managing by occasional trips with government surveyors to earn a little money, he was enabled to add to his landed possessions. This standard of thrift and industry which he thus early set for himself grew with him through life, gave him at one time the ownership of upwards of 1000 acres of land, and enabled him at his death to leave a farm to each of his five sons.

In 1839, Mr. Ferry married Joanna, a daughter of Jacob Ridenour, a settler in Pokagon in 1837. On the last day of 1839 he brought his wife to his Pipestone home, and there Mrs. Ferry has lived to this day. She says that for three months after she began her pioneer life she saw no woman except an Indian squaw once in a while. Deer, she relates, were so plentiful and so tame that they frequently came past the cabin in herds, without manifesting timidity, and killing a deer was a very simple and easy matter.

Wolves were excessively troublesome, while bears played havoc with small stock. Mrs. Ferry remembers how wolves often came to her very door-step, attracted by the odor of cooking meat; and that it was not infrequently the case that Mr. Ferry had to chase wolves and even bears from his cabin door. Once he discovered a bear hugging one of his pigs and actually eating it alive. On another occasion a hog which Ferry had brought from Pokagon was attacked by a bear, and being happily delivered by Ferry from death became apparently so thoroughly disgusted with its perilous existence that it disappeared that night, and appeared in a few days at the home of its former owner in Pokagon. Mr. Ferry lived on his old farm until his death, in 1875; and upon the place where his strong energies had put forth their most earnest efforts a marble shaft marks his last earthly home.

Elijah Pratt came from New York, with his wife, and settled upon section 21. He went to California in 1850, and died on shipboard while on his return voyage.

William Boughton settled upon section 18, and with Joab Enos subsequently laid out Pipestone village. He was a man of stirring energy and obtained much local prominence. He was the first postmaster, and at the time of his death, in 1864, was serving his second term. None of his descendants now reside in the township.

Stephen Smith, a bachelor of advanced years, and Loren Marsh, his adopted son, came in company from Erie Co., N. Y., to Pipestone. Marsh had a wife and two children, and with Smith settled upon section 21. Marsh died soon after his settlement, and according to the best obtainable authority his was the first death in Pipestone. He was buried on the Smith farm, on section 21, and there the curious may see in a clump of briars the spot where his bones still lie. Thomas, his son, lives in Watervliet. Loren Marsh's widow married David Puterbaugh, and died many years ago. Smith lived to be very old, and died in Pipestone.

David Puterbaugh, now living on section 26, resided in Berrien township with his father, from 1836 until the latter's death in 1838. David then entered 40 acres of land on section 27, in Pipestone, but did no work upon the place until the winter of 1839. After that, for nine years, he lived on the farm in the winter seasons, and during the summers boated on the St. Joseph River, while his place was looked after by his brother Abram. When David finally left the river, in 1848, and became a permanent settler, Abram, his brother, bought 80 acres on section 28 of Robert Ferry. Two years afterwards, while clearing his land, he was killed by the fall of a tree. David moved to his place of present residence in 1853. His were the first recorded cattle ear-marks in the township books, under date 1842, and were noted as "a square crop off left ear and slit in right."

Among the settlers of 1840 were Joseph Large, who located upon the northeast corner of section 10, lived there until 1875, and then moved to Texas. Spencer Bishop, a New Englander, settled upon section 7; there he lived until 1858, when he died by his own hand. William M. Abbott located upon section 29, on land owned by Philo W. Boyd, whose sister Abbot had married. He moved from the township after a brief stay. Joseph F. Yaw, a New Yorker, settled in the northern part of the township. He entered the military service during the civil war of 1861-65, and was killed in action. His wife died soon after their settlement, and was buried at Berrien Springs.

Grist-mills were few and far between in that region in 1840, and as "going to mill" meant a journey of several miles, the settlers were called upon to exert their inventive faculties in more ways than one when the stock of meal or flour ran low. Mrs. Brant says she astonished her neighbors one day with a feast of Johnny-cake, and when asked to explain how she got the meal, related that she improvised a corn-mill by pounding her corn in a tin pan perforated at the bottom with small holes, and her model, it is said, was adopted by many with gratifying results.

Log-rolling bees were prominent and useful features in pioneer life. Each man took turns in helping his neighbor to clear a piece of land large enough at least to produce a respectable crop. In this way a newly-arrived settler would be enabled to get a clearing in a short time. Sometimes quite a company participated in the "bee," although, as a rule, there were about enough to average four acres a day. All who could, turned out, for in those days fraternal sympathy was the ruling spirit. David Puterbaugh says that when the settlers began to multiply he was engaged twenty-two successive days at log-rolling bees with his ox-team.

Clearing land by moonlight was a common occupation with some of the settlers. For them the hours of labor could not be too long or too many. They were impatient to hurry an enterprise which at best must be slow, and not only on moonlight nights but on nights when the stars only shone did the woodman's axe ring the death-knell of many a forest monarch. Indeed there were some settlers who, having to labor upon other farms during the day, that a little ready cash might be obtained, were compelled to work far into the night on their own places as the only way possible towards the clearing of their land. The emergencies

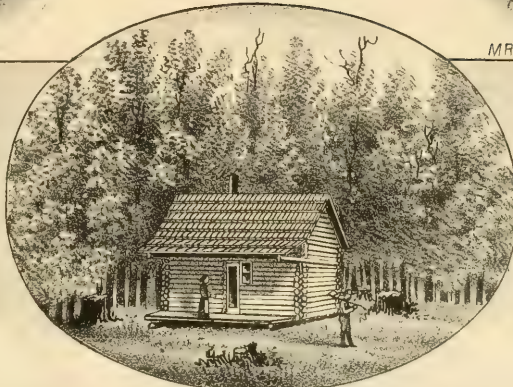




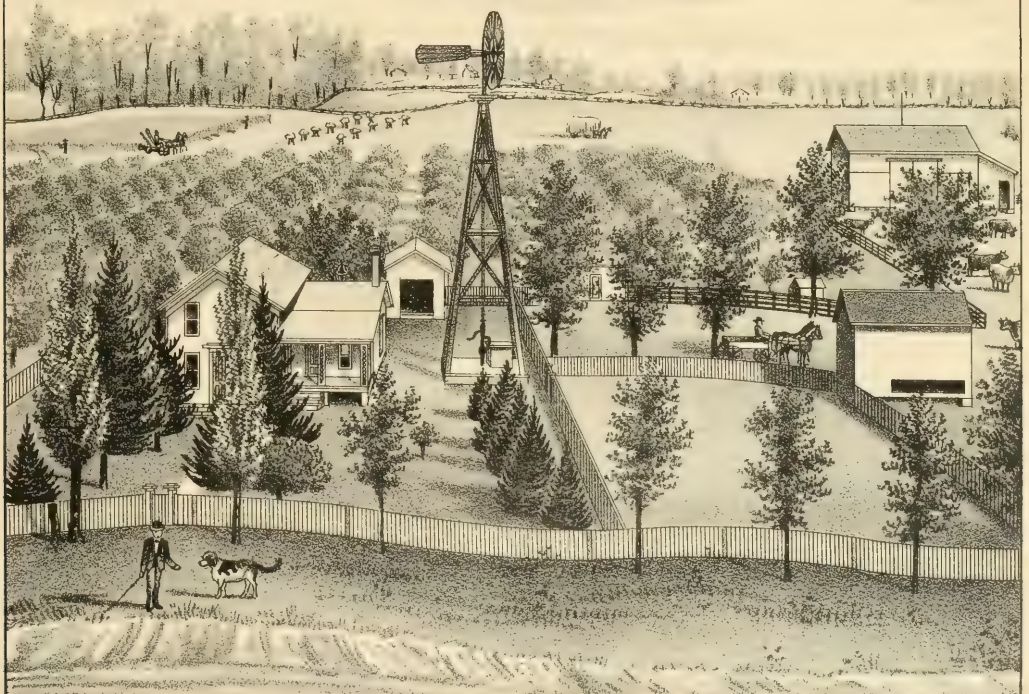
WM. RIDENOUR.



MRS WM. RIDENOUR.



FIRST HOME IN THE WOODS.



RESIDENCE OF WILLIAM RIDENOUR, PIPESTONE TWP, BERRIEN CO., MICH.



of the time were of a truth pressing, and only heroic remedies would apply.

Mrs. Robert Ferry recalls the fact that in the absence of matches it was imperatively necessary to keep a constant fire. One winter day their fire went out, and there were at hand no means for rekindling it. Their nearest neighbor was Martin Friley, living three miles away in Berrien, and for Friley's house Ferry accordingly set out in search of a fire-brand. He returned in good time, waving the brand in triumph, and a cheering sight it was, too, to the eyes of his wife, who had, during his absence, occupied the roof of the cabin, where, in the rays of the sun, she found trifling relief from the penetrating cold. As to the matter of "going to mill," Ferry frequently shouldered his grist, trudged eight miles to Pokagon, and brought back his flour by the same conveyance.

In 1845, eight years after the township received its first settler, Pipestone contained a population of 277. Nine years later, or in 1854, the population had increased to 785.

#### SHANGHAI VILLAGE.

The village known as Shanghai is set down in the Postal Guide as Pipestone, which has been its post-office name since the office was first established, in 1846. Previous to that time William Boughton and Joab Enos laid out a village upon the site, called it Pipestone, and disposed of a few lots; but somehow the growth of the enterprise was exceedingly slow, and for a long time it existed only on paper. Previous to 1846 there were no mail facilities nearer than Berrien Springs, but in that year Wm. Boughton secured the establishment of a post-office at that point and was himself appointed postmaster. No store was established there until 1856, when John Garrow set up as a merchant.

Meanwhile, in 1853, the village was rechristened and called Shanghai, as a tribute to Morgan Enos' fondness for the Shanghai breed of fowls. The story goes that Dr. Enos, visiting New York to bring his daughter Sophronia back from school, brought also a few Shanghai eggs, and in the chickens raised from those eggs he took such pleasure that some one declared the village ought to be called Shanghai. The idea gaining popular favor at once, the name was by common consent adopted and has been retained to this day. Mrs. R. L. Webster, now living at Shanghai, is the doctor's daughter, and the one who conveyed the eggs in question in her lap all the way from New York State to Pipestone. Mr. Boughton was postmaster from 1846 to 1857, when he was succeeded by Lyman Dunbar, who retired in 1861 in favor of Mr. Boughton's return to the office. The latter retained it until his death, in 1864, from which time until 1866 O. S. Boughton, who had been deputy under William Boughton, had charge. Miss C. C. Sabin was appointed in 1866, and in 1868 gave way to Angelia Webster, who in 1874 relinquished the place to J. F. Haskins, the present incumbent.

The merchants who succeeded Mr. Garrow at Shanghai have been as follows: Ambrose Watkins, Miss C. C. Sabin, Charles Walker, Mortimer Quackenbush, Sylvester Parks, Chambers & Tatman, and L. P. Vandenhoff; Mr. Parks and Mr. Vandenhoff being at present the village merchants.

Besides the two stores there are in the village a dozen or more residences, a graded school, and two blacksmith-shops.

#### EARLY INDUSTRIES.

Although Pipestone Creek furnished, near Pipestone village, excellent water-power when William Boughton laid out the place, no especial effort was made to utilize it. Joab and Morgan Enos built a saw-mill, in 1844, on the creek, three-quarters of a mile north of the village, and later Morgan Enos put up a saw-mill at the village. Above the first-named mill Daniel P. Pidge erected, in 1845, a tool-shop, where he did all kinds of blacksmithing and manufactured knives, bells, etc., in a small way. James A. Kirk, of Pipestone, has in his possession one of the "Pidge" butcher-knives. It bears the imprint of "Pidge" in bold characters, but is a poor specimen of a knife for all that. In the second story of Pidge's shop A. D. Snow plied his trade of carpenter, and a little farther up the creek Joab Enos had a turning-lathe. A turning-lathe was also set up at the village soon after by John Enos.

The Joab and Morgan Enos saw-mill was erected for them by Robert Cassiday, a Niles mill-wright, who in 1854 moved into Pipestone and bought the property of Joab Enos. The mill is now occupied by Wm. L. Clark. The saw-mill started by Morgan Enos at the village was allowed in after years to go to decay.

The first grist-mill was a primitive affair. In 1847, Blandon A. Pemberton built a little log mill on the creek flowing through section 31, and continued its operation about six years. A hand-bolt was in this mill, a useful but simple affair, and the milling business, as may be judged, was limited in its scope, but still a convenience, as it saved many a journey to Berrien.

The second grist mill in the township, and the only one now there, was put up at Shanghai by William and Samuel Enos and Robert L. Webster. The machinery for it was taken from the old Lacey mill at Niles. The mill property belongs now to the Davidson Gardner estate, and is occupied by E. H. Adams.

Dr. Fowler built a saw-mill on section 1, and sold it to Gilbert Leech, from whose possession it passed, in 1861, to Peter and James H. Nostrand. In 1873 they abandoned the old water-mill, and built near it a steam saw-mill, which they now operate.

The only manufacturing interest now in Pipestone, besides those noted above, is the steam saw-mill of James Hawes, on section 15, erected in 1874.

#### THE GERMAN SETTLEMENT.

The northeastern portion of the township contains many Germans, and is known as the German settlement, although there are in that quarter quite as many Americans as Germans. Dr. Fowler, who built a saw-mill on section 1, and John Rowe, who rented the mill, were perhaps the first comers. Mr. Rowe is still a resident, upon section 12. Isaac Tice, of Cass County, owned about 3000 acres, lying chiefly along the eastern tier of sections in Pipestone and the west tier in Cass County. Of him many Germans purchased lands. The German advance-guard came in 1850, when William Hackstatt, Henry Stevens, Henry



Tulker, and — Neimeyer, with their families, journeyed from Cincinnati, in company, to Pipestone. Hackstatt (who, with Fred. Schleipp, had prospected for land in Pipestone in 1847) had bought a soldier's land-warrant for 200 acres on section 12, and of the 200, Henry Stevens afterwards bought 80 acres from William Buck, to whom Hackstatt had sold. Hackstatt found an abandoned log school-house on his place, and he proceeded to utilize it as a residence, and as such it served him some time. Stevens still lives on section 12. Neimeyer returned to Ohio and Tulker settled in Cass County. When the Hackstatt party came in they found a wild and almost unsettled country. The only roads they found were narrow paths through the woods. John Rowe was already there, and opposite him was John Schinefelt, who moved in 1867 to Iowa. On the south was David Walter, and west of Walter was David Moore.

Peter Kramer, the father of Mrs. William Hackstatt, came from Cincinnati in 1851, and after living a year with his son-in-law went back to Ohio, whence he returned to Pipestone in 1854, and settled upon section 11, where he died.

In 1853, J. C. Runkle, of Ohio, bought of Josiah H. Swisher 80 acres on section 1, and entered 80 acres on sections 1 and 2. He settled in that year on section 1, upon which the only other settler then was Gilbert Leech, who owned and operated the old Fowler saw-mill. Campbell McCoy lived on section 2, and died there in 1863. George Srackengast, who came with Runkle, settled upon section 2, and lives there yet.

At that late day, even, there were no traveled roads in that quarter. The roads the settlers used were such only as they cut out themselves.

In 1854, Aaron Claussen came, with his family, from Pennsylvania to Michigan, and remaining awhile in Berrien Springs opened a harness-shop there. That he soon gave up, and in the fall of the same year bought 40 acres of land on section 13, in Pipestone, and located upon it without delay. His place was in the heart of the woods, and for a long time, even after he settled, deer used to play about his house and pass in droves. Mr. Claussen entered the military service during the war of the Rebellion, as a member of the 12th Michigan, and died in hospital in Arkansas, in 1865. When the Claussens came in their neighbors on the south were Darius Ely and Daniel Trowbridge, and on the north Joseph Walter and Julius Hackstatt.

In the same year James Nostrand came, with his son Peter and the latter's family, from Onondaga Co., N. Y., and made a settlement on section 14, upon a place owned by the widow of David Moore. That farm had been partly cleared, but the neighboring country was generally wild. The elder Nostrand returned to New York, and in 1861 Peter located on section 1, where he had bought land and the old Fowler saw-mill of Gilbert Leech, and where he still lives.

In 1857, Frederick Wolf settled upon the place he now occupies, and in 1858 Frederick Furst located upon a place adjoining him on the east.

Proceeding southward, along the eastern line of the township, note may be made of the settlement, in 1853, of Darius Ely, who in that year started from Ohio for Cali-

fornia. He stopped in Pipestone to visit Daniel Trowbridge (his wife's father, who had settled in Pipestone two years previously, upon section 23), and was persuaded by Trowbridge to remain as a settler. He bought 160 acres on section 23 and 160 on section 24, and while he was building a frame house on his place lodged his family in an old log cabin on the Widow Moore's farm. When Ely moved in there were, besides Trowbridge, the settlements, near by, of David and Josiah Gano, W. Farrow, and J. De Witt. Trowbridge died in 1858, and Ely in 1867.

In the southeast the earliest settlements were made by William M. G. Ridenour and Cyrus Tatman, who came in 1849. West of them, in the same year, Norman Preston made a settlement; and west of him, on section 34, still earlier in the same year, Miles Davis located upon 80 acres, purchased of Lawrence, a land speculator. The country about him was wild, and settlements were few. His neighbors on the north were Robert Ferry, David Puterbaugh, and Truman Reed; on the south was George Caldwell; on the east there was no one between his place and the town line, three miles distant; on the west his nearest neighbor was Edward Hart, two miles away. Hart sold his place to W. Smythe Farmer, of New York, who settled in Pipestone in 1848. Since that time Mr. Farmer has steadily added to his landed possessions, and he now owns about 2000 acres, 800 of which are under cultivation.

Following the east-and-west road from "Cassiday's Corners," we find that Robert Cassiday, who settled in the State in 1829, and in Niles in 1832, moved from the latter place in 1854 to Pipestone, where he settled on section 18, and took charge of the Enos mill property, his purchase of which had led him to locate in the township. A mile or more eastward, on section 17, Theodore Clark, of Ohio, settled in the same year, and opposite him, in the following spring, C. E. Jennings located, on section 8. Upon the place bought by Clark there had been three different settlers, to wit, Alonzo Brant, Joseph F. Yaw, and J. T. Burbank, each being named in the order of his settlement. After Burbank sold to Clark he bought a place on sections 9 and 16 from Hiram Ryther, who thereupon left the township.

In the spring of 1855, A. R. Robinson bought a place on section 9 of Elliott Chamberlain, who was the original settler there in 1853. Robinson's neighbors were Peter Worth, Mrs. Reams, and Philip De Witt. In 1855, Jacob Puterbaugh came from Berrien and settled north of the road; A. J. Tibbs settled south, on section 16, in 1856; and Andrew Jackson, a colored man, settled on section 14.

William Green was a settler before 1849; and on section 3 John Sutherland was a settler in 1856. His farm was an unbroken forest, and before he settled neither the east-and-west road nor the north-and-south road, which now bound his farm on two sides, had been laid out.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND OFFICERS.

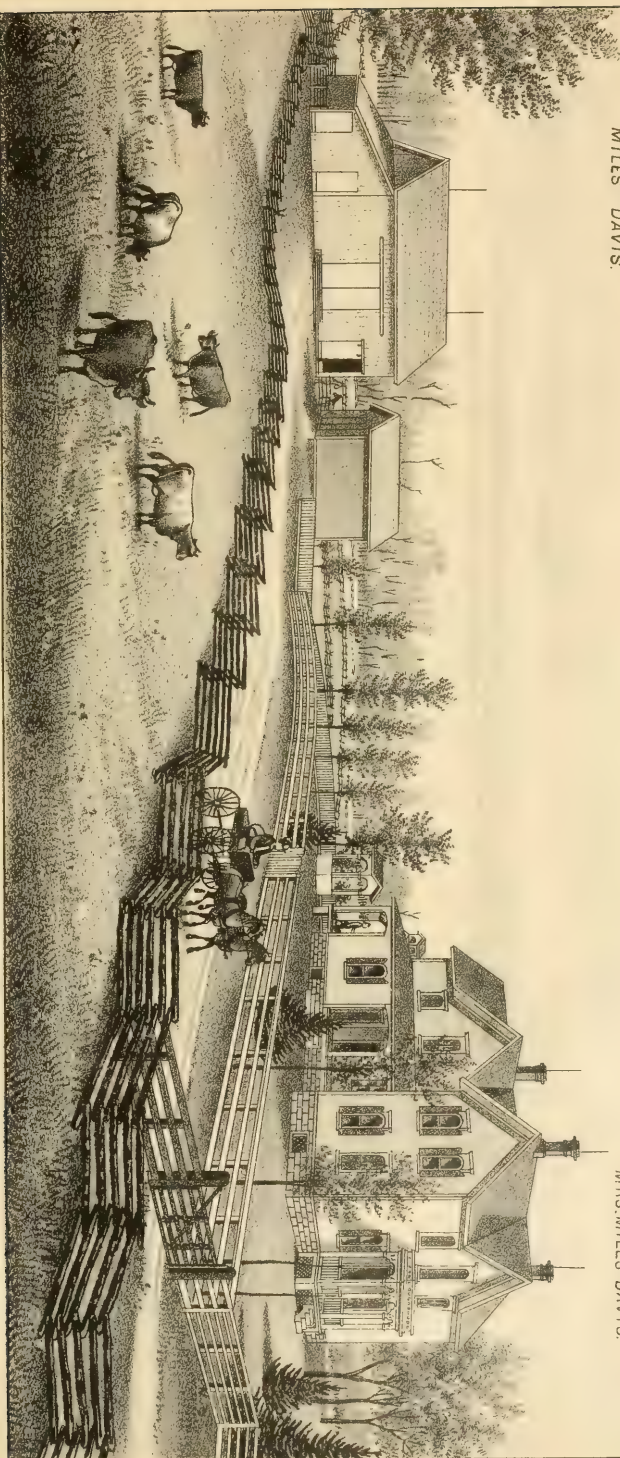
Pipestone, belonging to the territory originally set off to Bainbridge and Royalton, was created a separate township in 1842, under the Legislative act of February 16th of that year, and then extended west to the St. Joseph River. It is generally understood that the township name was derived



MILES DAVIS.



MRS. MILES DAVIS.



RESIDENCE OF MILES DAVIS, PIPESTONE TOWNSHIP, BERRIEN CO., MICHIGAN.





from that of Pipestone Creek, but how the creek came by its name is not so clear.

The first meeting was held at the house of William Boughton, shortly after organization, and at the election then held, 27 votes were cast. The full list of officials then chosen is as follows: Supervisor, James B. Larue; Clerk, Morgan Enos; Treasurer, Loren Marsh; Justices of the Peace, J. B. Larue (two years), Loren Marsh (three years), Ebenezer Farley (one year), David S. Rector (four years); School Inspectors, James Kirk, Loren Marsh, James B. Larue; Highway Commissioners, Ebenezer Farley, David S. Rector, James Kirk; Directors of the Poor, William Boughton, Morgan Enos; Constables, David Puterbaugh, Hiram Rector; Overseers of Highways: District No. 1, Robert Ferry; District No. 2, Loren Marsh; District No. 3, Morgan Enos; District No. 4, Spencer Bishop; District No. 5, D. S. Rector; District No. 6, Solomon Foster. The inspectors of this first election were James B. Larue, William Boughton, John M. Enos, Morgan Enos.

The second election was held at the house of David S. Rector, April 3, 1843. From that date to and including 1879 the township has annually chosen its chief officials as follows:

- 1843.—Supervisor, J. B. Larue; Treasurer, William H. Rector; Clerk, Morgan Enos; Highway Commissioners, Ebenezer Farley, Spencer Bishop, William M. Abbott; School Inspectors, J. B. Larue, Joab Enos; Justice of the Peace, Ebenezer Farley.
- 1844.—Supervisor, J. B. Larue; Treasurer, Spencer Bishop; Clerk, Morgan Enos; Highway Commissioners, E. Farley, D. S. Rector, Loren Marsh; School Inspector, J. B. Larue; Justice of the Peace, J. B. Larue.
- 1845.—Supervisor, J. B. Larue; Treasurer, Spencer Bishop; Clerk, Morgan Enos; Highway Commissioners, Elijah Pratt, Edward Buckman, D. S. Rector; Justice of the Peace, Josiah Hawes.
- 1846.—Supervisor, J. B. Larue; Treasurer, D. S. Rector; Clerk, O. S. Boughton; Highway Commissioners, Joseph F. Yaw, William H. Rector, David Puterbaugh; School Inspectors, I. W. Chadwick, O. S. Boughton; Justice of the Peace, O. S. Boughton.
- 1847.—Supervisor, J. B. Larue; Treasurer, D. S. Rector; Clerk, O. S. Boughton; Highway Commissioners, Ebenezer Farley, Spencer Bishop, D. S. Rector; School Inspector, Daniel P. Pidge; Justice of the Peace, Ebenezer Farley.
- 1848.—Supervisor, J. B. Larue; Treasurer, D. S. Rector; Clerk, Josiah Hawes; Highway Commissioner, D. S. Rector; School Inspector, Morgan Enos; Justices of the Peace, J. B. Larue, B. A. Pemberton.
- 1849.—Supervisor, Joab Enos; Treasurer, A. Buckman; Clerk, J. F. Haskins; Highway Commissioner, William Green; School Inspector, I. W. Chadwick; Justices of the Peace, M. Reese, D. S. Rector.
- 1850.—No record.
- 1851.—Supervisor, Joab Enos; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, O. S. Boughton; Highway Commissioner, Spencer Bishop; School Inspector, William Green; Justices of the Peace, H. C. Fenton, H. A. Ryther, B. A. Pemberton.
- 1852.—Supervisor, Josiah Hawes; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, O. S. Boughton; Highway Commissioners, H. A. Ryther, Ebenezer Farley; School Inspector, Morgan Enos; Justices of the Peace, D. Trowbridge, Ami Whitney.
- 1853.—Supervisor, E. Farley; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, J. H. Reese; Highway Commissioners, William Horton, O. S. Boughton; School Inspector, I. W. Chadwick.
- 1854.—Supervisor, D. Trowbridge; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, O. S. Boughton; Highway Commissioners, A. Buckman, D. S. Rector; School Inspector, Lyman Dunbar; Justices of the Peace, J. F. Yaw, R. Cassidy.
- 1855.—Supervisor, M. Enos; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, O. S. Boughton; Highway Commissioners, G. Srackengast, Theodore Clark; School Inspector, D. A. Clark; Justice of the Peace, Joseph Walter.
- 1856.—Supervisor, R. E. Hull; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, Theodore Clark; Highway Commissioners, G. Srackengast, John Rush, P. De Witt; School Inspector, A. T. Watkins; Justices of the Peace, Darius Ely, S. Correll.
- 1857.—Supervisor, D. Ely; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, A. T. Watkins; Highway Commissioners, W. P. Wells, C. E. Straight, John Stump; School Inspector, Theodore Clark; Justices of the Peace, William Hogue, J. Hemingway.
- 1858.—Supervisor, M. Enos; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, John Garrow; Highway Commissioner, W. P. Wells; School Inspector, R. Cassidy; Justice of the Peace, J. F. Haskins.
- 1859.—Supervisor, C. E. Straight; Treasurer, W. Boughton; Clerk, O. S. Boughton; Highway Commissioner, Sheldon Roberts; School Inspector, A. T. Watkins; Justice of the Peace, W. H. Rector.
- 1860.—Supervisor, R. J. Tuttle; Treasurer, J. F. Haskins; Clerk, Theodore Clark; Highway Commissioners, G. Srackengast, H. Trowbridge; School Inspector, N. Garrow; Justices of the Peace, John Davis, Martin Reese.
- 1861.—Supervisor, J. Walter; Treasurer, J. F. Haskins; Clerk, E. G. Jones; Highway Commissioner, H. Trowbridge; School Inspectors, Theodore Clark, James Hogan; Justices of the Peace, G. Srackengast, Darius Ely.
- 1862.—Supervisor, D. Gardner; Clerk, Miles Davis.
- 1863.—Supervisor, O. S. Boughton; Treasurer, Joseph Walter; Clerk, R. Calvin; Highway Commissioners, A. R. Robinson, G. Srackengast; School Inspector, W. Friend, Jr.; Justice of the Peace, W. Friend, Sr.
- 1864.—Supervisor, W. S. Farmer; Treasurer, Joseph Walter; Clerk, R. Calvin; Highway Commissioners, S. Trowbridge, W. R. Hogue; School Inspector, D. Hullrey; Justice of the Peace, C. Tatman.
- 1865.—Supervisor, G. Srackengast; Treasurer, O. S. Boughton; Clerk, W. R. Hogue; Highway Commissioners, W. R. Hogue, E. D. G. Ridenour; School Inspector, W. Friend; Justices of the Peace, James Hogue, J. Conkling.
- 1866.—No record.
- 1867.—Supervisor, O. S. Boughton; Treasurer, J. F. Haskins; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, R. A. Calvin; School Inspector, John Clark.
- 1868.—Supervisor, J. F. Haskins; Treasurer, Miles Davis; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, S. E. Lapham; School Inspector, J. D. Bowman.
- 1869.—Supervisor, J. F. Haskins; Treasurer, J. H. Conkling; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, P. De Witt; School Inspector, C. E. Jennings.
- 1870.—Supervisor, J. F. Haskins; Treasurer, J. H. Conkling; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, H. Stevens; School Inspector, R. A. Calvin; Justices of the Peace, J. F. Haskins, G. B. Tatman.
- 1871.—Supervisor, J. F. Haskins; Treasurer, J. H. Conkling; Clerk, Anson Lewis; Highway Commissioner, A. M. Green; School Inspector, John Clark; Justice of the Peace, John Clark.
- 1872.—Supervisor, J. F. Haskins; Treasurer, J. H. Conkling; Clerk, Anson Lewis; Highway Commissioner, P. De Witt; School Inspector, R. A. Calvin; Justice of the Peace, J. H. Conkling.
- 1873.—Supervisor, J. F. Haskins; Treasurer, J. H. Conkling; Clerk, John Clark; Highway Commissioner, Jacob Annach; School Inspector, R. Reese; Justice of the Peace, G. B. Tatman.
- 1874.—Supervisor, J. H. Conkling; Treasurer, A. Lewis; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, F. W. Elliott; School Inspector, R. A. Calvin; Justices of the Peace, R. M. King, D. Gardner.
- 1875.—Supervisor, J. H. Conkling; Treasurer, A. Lewis; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, R. Cassidy; School Inspector, R. A. Calvin; Justice of the Peace, Theo. Clark.
- 1876.—Supervisor, J. H. Matthews; Treasurer, W. C. Pegg; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, A. Lewis; School Inspector, O. S. Boughton; Justices of the Peace, R. A. Calvin, J. F. Haskins.

- 1877.—Supervisor, J. H. Matthews; Treasurer, W. C. Pegg; Clerk, W. L. Hogue; Highway Commissioner, A. Lewis; School Inspector, John Clark; Justices of the Peace, W. Green, C. W. Haskins.
- 1878.—Supervisor, M. Davis; Treasurer, W. C. Pegg; Clerk, J. H. Matthews; Highway Commissioner, William Collins; School Inspector, A. Lewis; Justices of the Peace, John Clark, J. F. Haskins.
- 1879.—Supervisor, M. Davis; Treasurer, D. Johnson; Clerk, J. H. Matthews;\* Commissioner of Highways, William Collins; School Inspector, A. R. Trowbridge; Justice of the Peace, John Clark.†

The members of the township board for 1879 were Miles Davis, R. A. Calvin, J. F. Haskins, and John Clark. The school inspectors were John Martin (School Superintendent), A. R. Trowbridge, Anson Lewis. The justices of the peace were J. F. Haskins and R. A. Calvin.

In 1859 that portion of town 5 in range 18 west lying east of the St. Joseph River was set off from Pipestone and called Sodus.

Upon the organization of the township, in 1842, the resident highway-tax payers numbered 29, as follows:

Road District No. 1, Robert Ferry, David Puterbaugh, Palmer Reed.

Road District No. 2, Loren Marsh, James Kirk, Nathaniel M. Brant, Elijah Pratt, Stephen Smith, Crawford Hazard.

Road District No. 3, Morgan Enos, William Boughton, John M. Enos, Henry Enos.

Road District No. 4, Spencer Bishop, Joab Enos.

Road District No. 5, D. S. Rector, David Rector, Wm. H. Rector, Daniel Baker, Jonathan S. Foster, James B. Larue, Hiram Rector, Nicholas Hall.

Road District No. 6, J. S. Foster, Ebenezer Farley, J. W. Brewer, David Michael, Francis Vershaw, — Mc-Dougal, J. B. Larue, N. B. Smith.

#### SCHOOLS.

It seems very clear that the first school in Pipestone was one taught by one George Lundy, a teacher from "York State," who came out in 1840 with Aaron and Barzilla Collins. Loren Marsh had vacated a log shanty in which he had lived on section 20, and Lundy, succeeding in creating an educational interest in the community, established a school in the Marsh shanty. He taught only during the winter of 1840 and 1841, after which a school was established at Shanghai. Lundy's scholars were twelve in number, and included three adults, Robert Ferry, Aaron and Barzilla Collins, besides James Kirk's seven children, and Lyman and Clarissa Frisbee,—nephew and niece of Elijah Pratt.

July 2, 1843, school districts were created as follows in town 5 south, range 18 west, covering the whole or portions of sections named.

No. 1.—Sections 2, 3, 4, 9, 10, 11, 15, 16, 22. No. 2.—Sections 13, 14, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 30, 35, 36. No. 3.—Sections 7, 8, 12, 13, 17, 18, 19, 20. No. 4.—Sections 15, 16, 20, 21, 22, 26, 27, 28, 29, 32, 33, 34.

The condition of Pipestone's public schools Sept. 1, 1879, is shown in the following table:

Number of districts (fractional, 4).....	10
Number of children of school age.....	537
Average attendance.....	494
Public money.....	\$348.72
Number of school-houses (frame, 7; brick, 3).....	10
Value of school-houses.....	\$7850
Teachers.....	20
Amount paid for teachers' wages.....	\$1863.50

#### CHURCHES.

The first public religious worship in Pipestone was held in 1837, in the house of James Kirk, by Rev. T. P. McCoolle, who with Revs. Knox and Burns rode the country over in the service of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and made it an especial business to plant the gospel in new settlements. These three ministers managed during the four years succeeding 1837 to hold services at Mr. Kirk's house about once every four weeks. Meanwhile Morgan Enos' father-in-law, known as Priest Clark, visited the settlement occasionally, and at Enos' house held Presbyterian services. Worship was thus continued by Mr. Clark for some years. William Boughton, a Close-Communion Baptist, enlisted the services of a Rev. Mr. Day, who preached frequent Baptist sermons at Mr. Boughton's house. It is told of Mr. Day that, during the course of one of his sermons, he said, with much apparent enthusiasm, "What a happy man Father Boughton must be: he has one daughter capable of teaching her neighbors and another standing by her side to assist her." The fact that Mr. Boughton's daughter was a school-teacher seemed to Mr. Day to reflect considerable glory upon the father.

At Kirk's house Martin Friley and Hiram Hinchman, residents of Berrien, delivered occasional sermons, and Methodist Episcopal services were held there more or less until 1847, when a school-house being built at Shanghai, measures were taken to organize a class. Revs. McCoolle and Woods held a protracted meeting in that year and formed a class of 54 members, of whom Daniel P. Pidge was class-leader.

The class was attached to the Bainbridge circuit, and for a year or more Mr. Woods, who was a blacksmith in the employ of Daniel P. Pidge, acted as local preacher. Succeeding McCoolle on the circuit at an early day were Revs. E. L. Kellogg and Ransom Goodall. The Shanghai school-house was used as a place of worship until 1867, when the society built a fine church north of the village.

The church membership is now 56, and the officers are: Trustees, J. F. Haskins, W. S. Farmer, Robert Cassiday, Theodore Clark, A. J. Tibbs; Class-Leader, vacancy; Pastor, A. N. Eldred; Stewards, W. S. Farmer, C. H. Burbank, Milo Jennings. The Sabbath-school has about 60 pupils, and is under the superintendence of William S. Reese. Preaching and Sunday-school exercises are enjoyed every Sunday.

*United Brethren.*—Previous to 1855, members of the United Brethren faith in Pipestone worshiped occasionally in the Shanghai school-house and the school-house on section 9, but effected no organization until that year. The class numbered 12 members, and included Joseph Reems and wife, Thomas Hoadley and wife, Helen Worth, and Jacob Puterbaugh and wife. The organization of the class was effected by Rev. Mr. Abdell, of the St. Joseph Conference, and the leadership given to Jacob Puterbaugh, who

\* Resigned, and John Clark appointed.

† Failed to qualify.

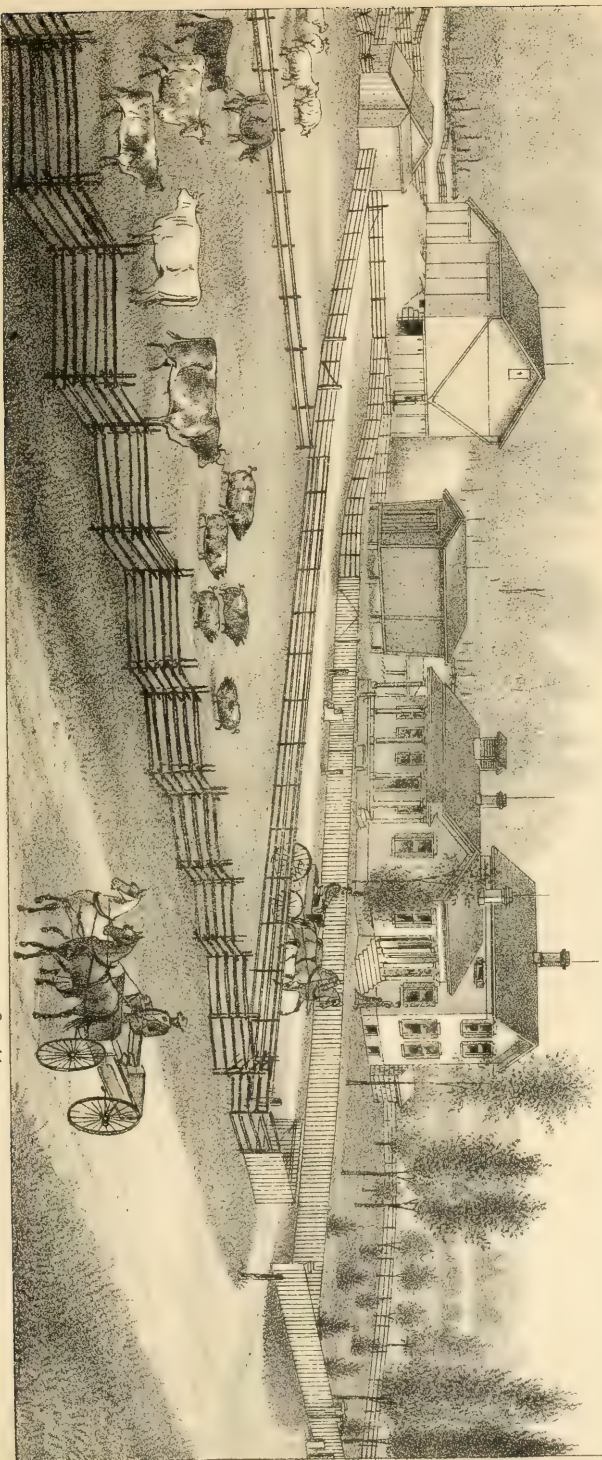




MRS THOS. EVANS.



THOMAS EVANS.



RESIDENCE OF THOMAS EVANS, PIPESTONE Pk., BERRIEN CO., MICH.





is the leader at present. Mr. Abdell was the pastor for a time, and since his term the church has been served by Revs. F. L. Forbes, Henry Hardy, John Surran, J. B. Slite, and others. The present pastor is Rev. J. H. Pattie, who preaches once in two weeks. Services were held in the school-house on section 9 until 1875, when the present church edifice was erected, at which time Rev. Mr. Webster was the pastor.

The church grew apace in strength after organization, and before the close of the first year of its existence numbered 40 members. In 1879, however, the membership was but 25. The trustees then were Charles Haskins, Wm. Lavineway, and Jacob Hartzell. Sabbath-school sessions are held in the church every Sunday. The pupils number 40. The superintendent is Walker Willis. An United Brethren class was organized at Shanghai at a comparatively early day, and subsequently merged into the class at Sodas. Reference thereto is made in the history of Sodas.

*Wesleyan Methodist.*—A Wesleyan Methodist Church was organized in Berrien township in 1855, and transferred in 1858 to Eau Claire, in Pipestone, where a reorganization was effected, with 6 members, Jesse Gray being chosen the first class-leader at that point. After an existence of ten years, the class at Eau Claire was reduced to but a handful of members, who thereupon joined a class located at the red school-house, on section 20, at which time Wm. Brown was leader of the red school-house class. After a further existence of a few years, the red school-house class was discontinued, but in 1876 a reorganization was effected at Shanghai, with 16 members, when Rev. Wm. S. Williams was placed in charge, and William Clark chosen class-leader. Since 1876, Revs. O. S. Gurnell, O. Tapley, and Homer Gane, of the Pipestone circuit, have supplied the preaching, which is provided every Sunday, at the Shanghai school-house. Mrs. Elizabeth King is now the leader of the class, which has a membership of 23. The church stewards are David J. Reams and Abigail Buckner.

The Sunday-school has 30 pupils, under the charge of Charlotte Haskins (superintendent) and 8 teachers.

*First German United Evangelical Zion Church.*—For some years previous to 1871 the Germans living in the northeastern portion of Pipestone met for occasional worship in the school-house on section 1, a majority of the worshippers adhering to the Evangelical faith. Preaching was obtained as it best could be, and although services were held at irregular periods, they were counted upon as often as once a month. It was not, however, until October 11, 1871, that a church organization was effected, at which time the following members were enrolled: William Krohne, Henry Bachman, Frederick Holle, Frederick Wolf, Henry Horstman, Frederick Furst, John Thumm, J. H. Rush, Frederick Miller, Jacob Thumm, Frederick Bachman, Chas. Bachman, Michael Bowman, Julius Hackstadt, William Hackstadt.

Earlier, by some years, a burial-place had been laid out by some of the leading Germans near the school-house, and in 1872 the church now used was erected upon the cemetery lot. The preachers who served previous to and since the organization of the church have been Revs. Fuerchter-

nich, Henry Meyer (who lived in Pipestone and occupied the pulpit three years), Hermann, Fuertag, Schroepel, Copelge, and Nusbaum. The latter has been the pastor since 1876, and preaches once every fortnight for the Pipestone congregation. The church membership is now sixteen. The trustees are Frederick Wolf, William Martin, and H. Horstman. The secretary is William Langley.

Eureka Hall, a neat and commodious frame edifice in the southern part of the township, is frequently used for religious worship. It was built in 1877, at a cost of \$1200, by a company of Pipestone citizens for a public hall, and in the agreement between the proprietors it was stipulated that the building should be open at all times for the use of any religious denomination absolutely free of charge.

#### EAU CLAIRE.

The post-office on the south, known as Eau Claire, was established in 1861, through the efforts of William Smythe Farmer. Henry Rush was appointed postmaster, and kept the office in a store just over the Pipestone line in Berrien. When Mr. Farmer sought to have a post-office established there, he hit upon Eau Claire (meaning "clear water") as a neat name, and christened the place accordingly. Edwin Hart was the first storekeeper on the Pipestone side, and upon his retirement Geo. E. Tatman succeeded him. When Rush gave up the office, in 1874, Tatman was appointed, and removed the office into the Pipestone portion of Eau Claire. In 1877, Patrick Stapleton succeeded Tatman as storekeeper and postmaster, and still fills both positions.

#### PLEASANT VALLEY POST-OFFICE.

In 1870, Charles Bachman, living at Krohne's Corners, succeeded in having a post-office established at that point. He was appointed postmaster, and used to go to Dowagiac twice a week for the mail. Bachman wearied of the office, and it fell to Sullivan Claussen, who was succeeded by Chas. Hartelrode, and when the latter resigned no one cared to take the place, whereupon the office was discontinued.

PIPESTONE GRANGE, No. 194, PATRONS OF HUSBANDRY, was organized in 1873, with 33 members. Meetings were held in town school-houses until 1877, when a grange hall was built on section 16.

The Masters of the grange since its organization have been W. Smythe Farmer, John Clark, Philip De Witt, and John Clark (present and second term). The grange membership is now twenty-nine. The officers are John Clark, Master; Philip De Witt, Overseer; Mrs. Philip De Witt, Lecturer; Cassius Hogue, Steward; Henry Bowman, Assistant Steward; Maria Robinson, Chaplain; Alvin Robinson, Treas.; Anson Lewis, Sec.; Helen Clark, Ceres; Josephine Lewis, Pomona; Christina Bowman, Flora; Sarah Hogue, Stewardess.

#### A MEMORABLE WIND STORM.

On the night of May 26, 1860, that portion of Pipestone lying along the southern line of section 9 was visited by a violent tornado, which occasioned within a narrow limit not only serious destruction of property, but loss of life. Mrs. A. R. Robinson, one of the sufferers from the disaster, relates the story as follows: Shortly after eleven o'clock upon

the night in question Mrs. Robinson was awakened from sleep by a roaring sound, and, springing hastily to the window, was at once struck senseless by a sudden blow, and at the same instant the house—a log cabin—was utterly demolished. Rain had been falling during the day, and at night was accompanied with violent thunder and vivid lightning. This was the condition of the elements when the house fell, while inky darkness added to the horror of the scene. In the house were Mr. and Mrs. William Worth and Mr. and Mrs. Robinson, with their two children,—the children being lodged in the second story. The house and its occupants were precipitated to the ground in a confused mass, but, as fortune would have it, no one was fatally injured. Mrs. Robinson had been struck upon her head by a falling log, but immediately recovered consciousness, and groped, with her husband, through the ruins after the children, one of whom was found to have a broken arm. With her in her arms, Mrs. Robinson, accompanied by her husband carrying the other child, and by the Worths, sought shelter at Philip De Witt's house, on the opposite side of the road. Upon nearing De Witt's house they heard cries of distress, and knew that his family had also met with disaster. Hasty investigation revealed that the De Witt house—a frame structure—had been lifted bodily from its foundation and thrown upon its side, dislodging the inmates from their beds, and hurling upon them broken timbers, beneath which some of them were painfully confined. Working with desperate energy, those who were unharmed succeeded in rescuing the imprisoned ones, by which time other neighbors arrived, who conveyed the wounded to temporary homes. Mr. De Witt's four-year-old son was taken out in an unconscious condition, lingered but a few days, and died. The bed which contained another young child of De Witt's was blown through a window into the adjoining lot, with the child still in it, and so little was the latter disturbed that she simply cried out to know "why her ma had left her out in the rain?"

The storm, when at its height, was confined to a narrow limit, and concentrated its strength in the vicinity of the Robinson and De Witt places, no similar disasters occurring elsewhere in the township at the time, and the wind being in fact but moderately felt at other points. The blow was over in an instant, as if opposing blasts had met in battle array, and after a moment's conflict had parted and fled.

The theory generally accepted was that strong southeast and southwest currents crossed each other at the scene of disaster, and by their suddenly-combined force had leveled every obstacle with the ground.

So great was the power of the tornado that the bed upon which Mrs. Robinson's children had been sleeping was carried half a mile, and lodged in a swamp; a length of stove-pipe was carried from Mr. Robinson's house to a place three miles distant; great trees were blown down, peach-trees were stripped of their bark, fences were scattered far and wide over the fields, twenty of Mr. Robinson's hens were killed (many of which had their feathers blown off as complete as if picked by hand, while some were actually disemboweled), and to cap the climax grains of wheat were blown from Robinson's house into an old stump, where they were found as deeply imbedded as if shot into it from a gun.

Altogether. This was a memorable incident in the lives of those who witnessed it, and to some of them at least the shock was so severe that to this day the recurrence of a wind-storm occasions extraordinary terror.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### ROBERT CASSIDAY.

We have had occasion to mention the subject of this sketch several times in connection with the early history of this township and Berrien County. Thinking that his many friends might be pleased with an account of his personal career, we give a brief sketch of his life.

Robert Cassiday came to this State from Northern Ohio as early as the fall of 1829; spent that winter in St. Joseph County, where the village of Constantine now stands, and manufactured from a bowlder the first pair of millstones that ever ground wheat or corn in St. Joseph County. Subsequently, in the year 1832, moved to Berrien County, and in the year 1834 he married Sabrina Park, of Geauga Co., Ohio, and settled in Niles, where he continued to reside until 1854, when he moved to his present farm, where he has since lived.

Mr. Cassiday is one of the few men who has seen a half century pass since first coming to the State of Michigan, and one of the very few living, of whom there will soon be none, who came into Western Michigan before 1830. The remembrance of a people prosperous and enjoying a high state of civilization is due to those who bore the burden and toil of its early settlement.

### GEORGE C. HARTMAN.

This gentleman, the second in a family of four children, was born in Lyons, Wayne Co., N. Y., July 6, 1822. His father was a native of New York, and his mother of Connecticut. At the age of twenty-two he left home and spent a number of years in traveling throughout the United States, remaining four winters in New Orleans, and finally stopping in Brooklyn, N. Y., where he met Miss Kate F. Farmer, who became his wife on the 23d of August, 1851. Her father was a native of New Jersey, and her mother of New York. Mr. and Mrs. Hartman became the parents of six children, of whom five are now living. In the fall of 1851, Mr. Hartman visited Michigan, and in 1854 located in the township of Pipestone. In 1860 he occupied his present farm of one hundred and sixty acres, which was then covered with heavy timber, and he has since cleared one hundred and seventy acres, being now the owner of a finely-improved farm and a pleasant home. In politics he is a Republican, but not in any sense an office-seeker. He was reared a Presbyterian, but neither he nor his wife belong to any religious body. Their four sons are living at home, and their daughter is married, and living in the town of Sodus. The work of clearing up a farm is always attended with extreme labor and many hardships, even though the adjoining region may be thickly settled, and Mr. and Mrs. Hartman are, in this sense at least, true pioneers.

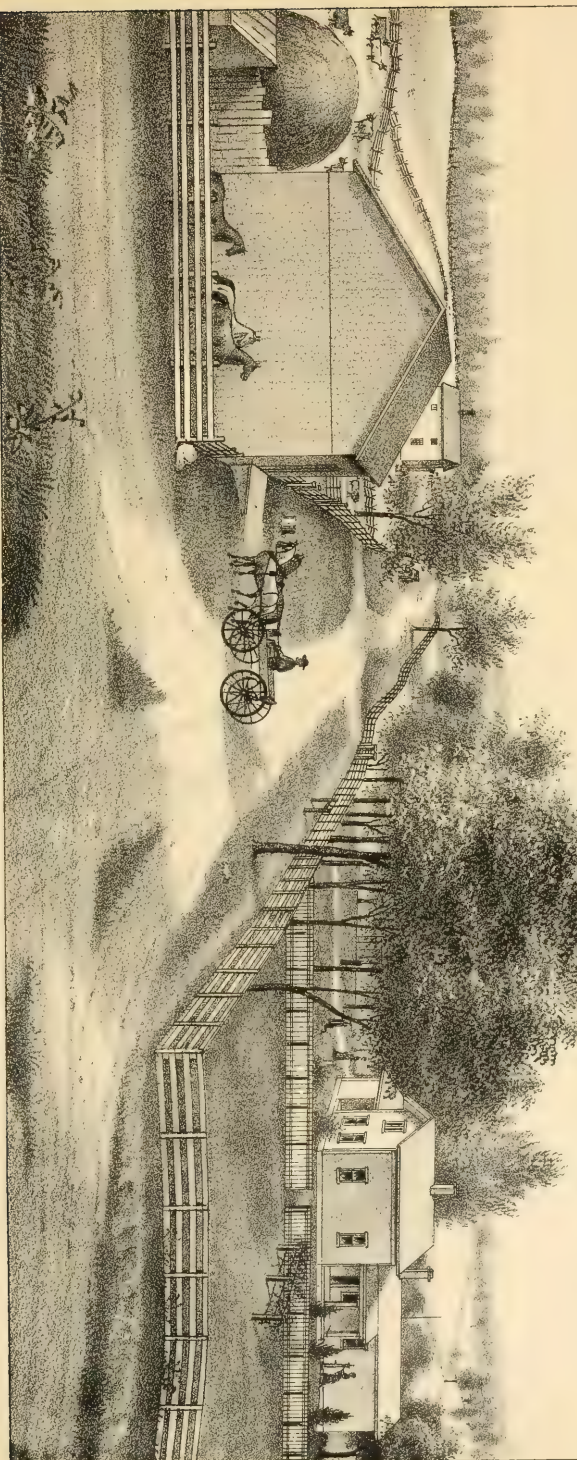




MRS. R. CASSIDAY.



ROBERT CASSIDAY.



RESIDENCE OF ROBERT CASSIDAY, PIPESTONE Tp., BERRIEN Co., MICH.





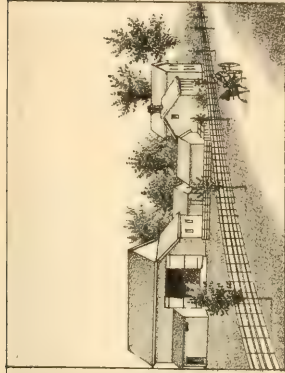




N. C. PRESTON.



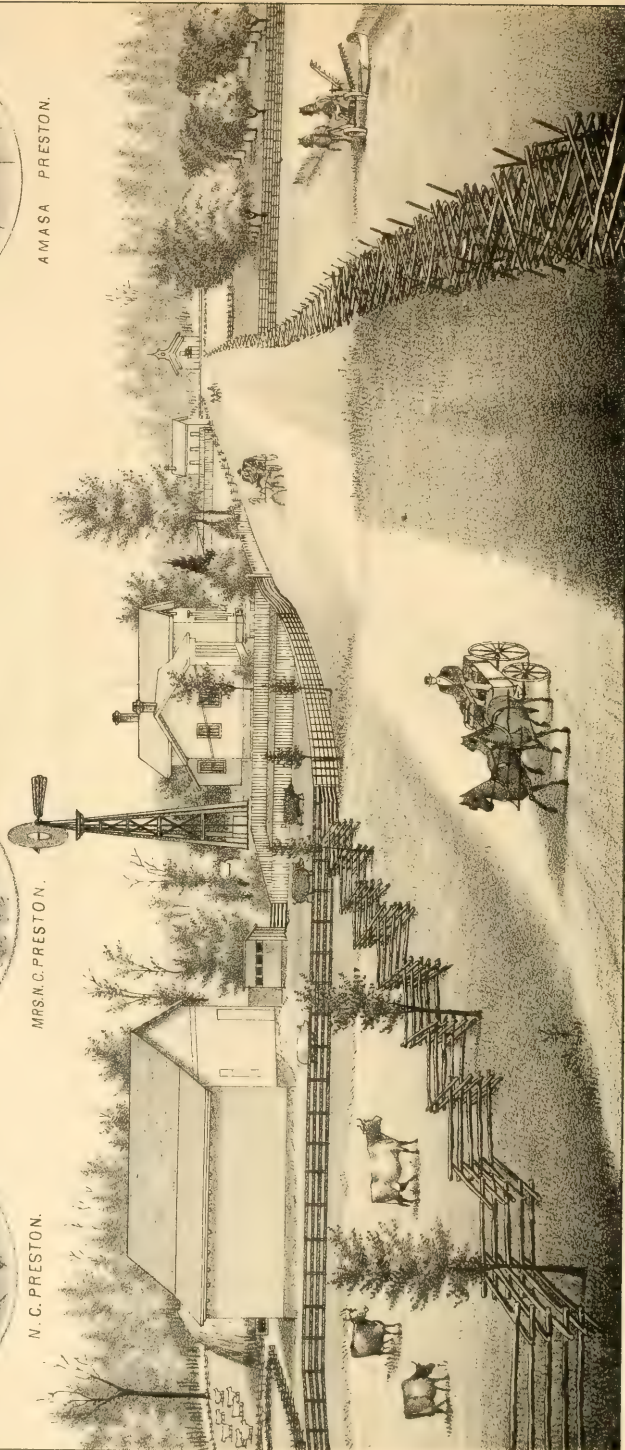
MRS. N. C. PRESTON.



RES. OF MRS. SARAH WELLS.



AMASA PRESTON.



## JOSIAH GANO.

This gentleman was the eldest in a family of six children, and was born May 22, 1827, in Paris, Ohio. His father, John Gano, removed at an early day from Virginia to Ohio, and in the latter State became acquainted with and married Jane Kelsey. Josiah Gano lived with his father



JOSIAH GANO.

until he was twenty-three years of age, when he was married to Miss Margaret Calvin, daughter of Robert and Margaret Calvin; their union being consummated July 3, 1850. Their children, six in number,—two sons and four daughters,—are all living. After his marriage Mr. Gano worked his father's farm about four years, and in 1854 removed, with his family, to Michigan, settling in Pipestone township, Berrien Co. The place on which he located con-

tained one hundred and sixty acres, and was in the midst of the heavy timber, the nearest road being one mile distant. Mr. Gano worked zealously to clear and improve his farm, and his labors were crowned with most gratifying success. He died April 15, 1875, and Mrs. Gano and her children have since managed the affairs of the farm. Mr. Gano was possessed of a good common-school education.



MRS. JOSIAH GANO.

In politics he was a Republican, but always respectfully declined to accept office. His religious views were of a liberal nature. Mr. Gano at one time suffered the loss of his buildings by fire, and met various other losses, but at his death left his family in comfortable circumstances. His loss was sincerely and deeply mourned, and a loving wife awaits the summons of the death-angel, when she shall join him in a better land.

## AMASA AND NORMAN C. PRESTON.

Amasa Preston, father of Norman C. Preston, was born in Connecticut, Dec. 2, 1788. When he was ten years of age he moved, with his parents, to the then western wilds of Ohio, settling in Portage County, and remained with his parents until his marriage, April 25, 1811, to Electa Johnson, a native of Massachusetts. He raised a family of six daughters and two sons,—Aliso and Norman C., the latter (the youngest son) being born in Portage County, Aug. 25, 1814. In 1838 the family removed to Van Wert Co., Ohio, where Norman entered one hundred and sixty acres of wild land, which he cleared and improved, and there he made his home for ten years.

Sept. 10, 1846, Norman Preston married Mrs. Sarah Cook, who was a native of Richland Co., Ohio, born Sept. 25, 1829, but at the time of her marriage a resident of Van Wert County.

In the fall of 1848, accompanied by his parents and two sisters, he removed to Berrien County, and purchased one hundred and sixty acres of land in the township of Pipestone, upon which, with his father, he lived until his death, which occurred July 31, 1862. He was universally be-

loved and respected. His widow and three children (Zoetta, Milton, and Artlissa) survive. In his will Mr. Preston made provision for the care of his aged father and mother while they lived. His mother died April 26, 1863, and his father married Mrs. Sarah Allen, March 13, 1864. The latter, notwithstanding she was sixty-five years of age, was as active as a girl of twenty years; she celebrated her eightieth birthday in September, 1879, at the home of Mrs. Sarah Wells. Her husband, the father of Norman C., died April 2, 1873, at the advanced age of eighty-four years. He was a devoted Christian, and a member of the church for over sixty years.

Mrs. Norman C. Preston married, Sept. 13, 1863, Washington P. Wells. They resided on the estate until her son attained his majority, when they moved on to a small place which they had purchased, and which was formerly a part of the homestead. The fruit of this union was two children, Asa W. and Sarah E. Wells. Mr. Wells' death occurred Aug. 31, 1876. Mrs. Wells is still living in her home, enjoying the society of her children, and of many kind and endeared friends.

Milton Wells is living upon the old homestead, which he



is improving and beautifying. On the 29th of October, 1879, he was married to Miss Alice Trowbridge, an estimable young lady of the same township.

#### THOMAS EVANS

was born in Wales, March 5, 1828, and was the sixth in a family of twelve children. His father, John Evans, emigrated, with his family, to the United States in 1838, and settled in Portage Co., Ohio, where he remained until his death, in March, 1849, his occupation having been that of a farmer. Thomas Evans remained at home with his mother, working on the farm, thrashing and at various other employments, until April, 1852, when he went to California. His stay in the new El Dorado was of short duration, however, and in October, 1853, he returned to Ohio. Jan. 25, 1854, he was married to Miss Margaret, daughter of David and Elizabeth Jones, who were also natives of Wales. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Evans are four in number: Allie E., born Nov. 29, 1856; Charles D., born Jan. 21, 1859; Henry J., born March 10, 1860, died Aug. 16, 1871; Frank F., born Oct. 16, 1863. In November, 1854, Mr. Evans and his wife came to Michigan, and after paying his bills at Berrien he had eighteen dollars left. The journey from Berrien to Sodus, eight miles, was performed on foot. In July, 1855, Mr. Evans purchased eighty acres of land, on which he now resides, and paid for it mostly by chopping cord-wood. He has since made an additional purchase of two hundred and twenty acres, and is now a successful and enterprising farmer. His early advantages for obtaining an education were limited, and after coming to this country he attended school but very little. Mr. Evans voted for two Democratic Presidents, but has since been a staunch Republican, and during the great civil war maintained his position by volunteering and serving in Company I, 24th Michigan Volunteer Infantry. In 1867, Mr. and Mrs. Evans joined and have since been members of the United Brethren Church.

#### WILLIAM RIDENOUR.

This gentleman was born in the State of Ohio, May 18, 1830, and was the sixth of a family of seven children, the offspring of Jacob and Lettie (Brown) Ridenour. Jacob Ridenour was a native of Maryland, and at an early age removed to Ohio with his father, who was a German by birth. The wife of the latter was born in Virginia, in 1795, that being also the native State of her father. Her mother, who was a native of Kentucky, survived to the great age of one hundred and four years. The parents of William Ridenour are still living, at an advanced age. In the fall of 1832 they removed to Michigan, and located near the Crystal Springs in Cass County. When William had reached his sixteenth year he made his first purchase of land, including forty acres in Cass County, paying for the same at the rate of two dollars and fifty cents per acre, and laboring by the month in order to earn money to meet the payments. His life away from home was, therefore, begun as a farm-hand for wages usual at the time. By industry, perseverance, and economy he at length was in possession of a well-im-

proved though small farm. In 1854 he disposed of it, and purchased that on which he now resides, a view of which is inserted in this work. In this same year (1854) he was married to Miss Brown, who bore him two children. They, with their mother, were all buried by the stricken husband and father during the year 1861. In June, 1862, Mr. Ridenour was married to Mary, daughter of Henry and Lodema Shaul, who were natives of New York, but removed to Michigan when their daughter was but seven years of age. This union has been blessed with one child, a son, Henry, born May 27, 1863. The advantages for obtaining an education were limited in Mr. Ridenour's case, as the backwoods schools were hardly up to the standard of those of the present day. His religious views are of a liberal nature, and in politics he is a Republican.

#### MRS. MARY (PATTISON) BURTON.

This estimable lady was born in Leicestershire, England, Jan. 3, 1815, and was the youngest in a family of three children. Her mother died about 1818, in England, and



MRS. MARY (PATTISON) BURTON.

her father emigrated with his children to America in the same year, settling at Philadelphia. For five or six years the daughter lived with a family in Washington. On the 23d of January, 1833, she was married to James Burton, who was also a native of England, and who had come to America in 1827, and settled in Pennsylvania. Mr. and Mrs. Burton became the parents of five sons and four daughters, and five of the number are now living. After living in different localities for several years, Mr. Burton settled, with his family, in the township of Pipestone, Berrien Co., Mich., on what is now the Burton homestead, where his death occurred, Sept. 13, 1854.

A farm of eighty acres was left to his widow and seven children. Mr. Burton was acknowledged to be an honest, industrious man, a good manager, a worthy citizen, and a



generous and true friend. Mrs. Burton died in 1878, and her loss was mourned by a large circle of friends. Her presence at the bedside of the sick was a comfort; her benevolence was bounded only by her means. William and Edward Burton, sons of the above, cause this biography and the accompanying portrait to be inserted in this volume. William served three years during the war as a sergeant in the 17th Michigan Volunteer Infantry. These gentlemen are both Republicans. Their father never took an active part in politics.

#### MILES DAVIS,

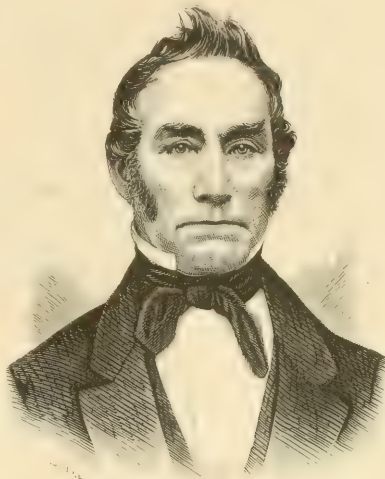
the seventh child in a family of nine,—five sons and four daughters,—was born Sept. 12, 1830, in Cambria Co., Pa. His parents were natives of Wales, and emigrated to America early in the present century. They were married in Pennsylvania, Feb. 8, 1816, and removed to Ohio in 1844. In 1848 they settled in Pipestone township, Berrien Co., Mich., where Mrs. Davis died the same year, and where Mr. Davis died, March 20, 1879. Miles Davis remained at home until after the death of his mother, when he took up his abode with his brother, and continued to live with him until March 22, 1856, when he was married to Miss Phoebe Fisher, daughter of Ambrose and Mary Fisher. Their children are L. L. Davis, born May 10, 1857, died March 25, 1858; Effie A. Davis, born March 16, 1859; William B. Davis, born Jan. 24, 1862. In 1854, Mr. Davis purchased eighty acres of land, included in his present home on section 34, and has since become the owner of one hundred and sixty acres on section 35. His school days were not of long continuance. He attended district school about three months in the year, and assisted in his father's farm-work the balance of the time, until the death of his mother. He is an industrious and successful farmer, and can view with conscious pride the present happy home, the outcome of years of toil. Among his townsmen he is prominent and respected, and has been placed by them in numerous offices,—treasurer, town clerk, etc.—and is now serving his second term as supervisor. In politics he is Democratic. Both he and his wife have been members of the Christian or Disciples' Church since 1864.

The parents of Mrs. Davis were natives of Portage Co., Ohio, and were married Aug. 25, 1830. In 1845 they moved to Michigan. They were the parents of ten children,—five sons and five daughters. Mrs. Davis, the oldest daughter, was born May 5, 1838. Her father, who was born Nov. 13, 1813, died Sept. 12, 1853; her mother was born May 11, 1812, and is now making her home among her children, of whom six are living.

#### MORGAN ENOS, M.D.,

was the third in a family of seven children, and was born in Cayuga Co., N. Y., April 23, 1804. His father was a native of Connecticut, and his mother of Massachusetts, and from this sturdy New England stock the doctor derived the attributes which enabled him to win an honorable position as a self-made man. His early days were spent in

school, until he became of sufficient age to assist his father on the farm, when he only attended school winters, working for his board. As soon as his education was sufficient to qualify him to teach, he entered the arena as an instructor, at the same time continuing his studies. At the age of twenty he began the study of medicine with Dr. Crowley, and afterwards studied with Dr. C. C. Cady, and



MORGAN ENOS, M.D.

attended lectures at Geneva College. About 1828 he commenced the practice of medicine in Wayne Co., N. Y., and was married in that county, at Huron, to Elizabeth Clark, daughter of William and Sophronia Clark, who were also natives of Connecticut. Four children were the fruit of this union, and all are now living. In 1837 the doctor and his wife removed to Michigan, remaining in Benton township until the fall, when they located in Pipestone township, where the doctor followed farming and continued in the practice of his profession. His death occurred Sept. 24, 1868. Dr. Enos was a man universally respected and honored, and many friends mourned his loss. He was a Whig in his early days, and eventually became a Republican. He represented his district one term in the State Legislature, and also held numerous township offices. He was for some years supervisor of Pipestone township, and was its first clerk. Mrs. Enos outlived her husband ten years, and died Oct. 14, 1878. She was in every respect an estimable lady. The religious views of Dr. Enos and his wife were liberal. Two of their children are married. The oldest—now Mrs. Webster—resides on the old homestead, and her sister Juliet makes her home with her. The latter causes the accompanying portrait of her father to be inserted in this work.

## CHAPTER XL.

## ROYALTON TOWNSHIP.\*

Early Settlements and Settlers—Township Organization and Civil List—Schools—Churches—Fruit Grange.

ROYALTON, numbered as town 5 south, in range 18 west, is but a fractional township, and contains about nineteen sections. On the north it is bounded by Sodus and St. Joseph, on the south by Oronoko and Lake, on the east by Sodus, and on the west by Lincoln. Its northern and eastern borders are defined by the St. Joseph River, which flows in a tortuous course, and marks the dividing line between Sodus and Royalton.

Royalton is a rich agricultural town, and an excellent fruit-growing region. Among the most extensive fruit-growers may be mentioned William H. Tryon, Dr. E. Hall, Abijah Birdsey, the Hollywood brothers, Mrs. Sarah Taylor, William Pike, H. H. Roe, Lewis Scofield, H. L. Scofield, and Henry Ashhoff. The nearest railway stations are at Stevensville, in Lincoln township, and at the village of St. Joseph.

## SETTLEMENT AND SETTLERS.

William Pike, now living in Royalton township, assisted, with his father, John Pike, at the first white settlement in Royalton, and is to-day the "oldest inhabitant" of that region.

John Pike, originally from North Carolina, went from there to Ohio, thence to Vigo Co., Ind., and in 1829 to the river bottom near Berrien Springs. He remained there until 1832, when he removed to Royalton with his wife and six children, of whom the only one now living is William Pike. He entered and settled upon 80 acres in the northwest corner of the present township, near the river, the place being now owned by Abijah Birdsey. At the same time he entered 80 acres on section 7, which he afterwards gave to his son William, and upon a portion of which the latter now resides. Three years afterwards he entered 80 acres adjoining the farm upon which he settled. There he resided until about 1842, when, his wife dying, he moved to Indiana, and eventually to Iowa in 1859, where he died in 1867, aged eighty-eight.

William Pike lived with his father on the Royalton farm from 1832 to 1834, when he removed to St. Joseph and there remained six years. In 1840 he returned to Royalton, and, with his axe, gun, dog, and eighteen pence in his pocket, took possession of the farm his father had given him, which was then an unbroken forest. Wolves and Indians became familiar to his sight, but he kept steadily at his task of clearing the land, and upon that place he has continued to live and thrive to the present day.

The settler next following John Pike was Jehial Enos. He was a young bachelor who came to Michigan in 1829, and in that year was employed as cook and "packer" for the surveying party, which then, under Lucius Lyon (afterwards member of Congress), surveyed that portion of Berrien County lying between the St. Joseph River and Lake Michigan. Enos' business as a "packer" required him

to carry provisions and other supplies through the woods from supply-stations to the surveying-camp, and a very uncomfortable and troublesome time he had of it. William Pike was also a "chain-man" in the same surveying party.

In the summer of 1832, Mr. Enos entered 80 acres adjoining John Pike, spent some time thereafter in St. Joseph, and then settled upon his farm, where, however, he remained but three years, when he moved to Millburg, in Benton township, his present abode.

The next settler upon Enos' place was Josephus Gard, who acquired it in 1835 from a Mr. Porter, a non-resident. Gard lived on the farm until his death in 1838. Some of his descendants live in the county, but none now reside in the township.

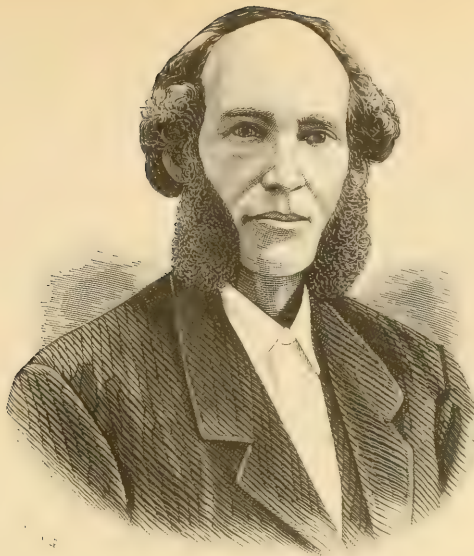
Joseph and Edward Smith were sons of Timothy S. Smith, who laid out in 1834 a village called Royalton (then in Royalton township, but now in Lincoln), and located in 1833 upon land occupying the present northeast corner of the town, in the bend of the river. Mr. Smith had settled some five or six years before that time on the east bank of Hickory Creek, in what is now the township of Lincoln. Previous to that time the Smith boys had been boating on the river, but after buying farms settled down and were for a while industrious husbandmen. In a short time, however, they sold out their land. Edward soon entered a farm on section 8, where he remained about ten years, and then, selling to James Carlton, went to California, where he is still living. Joseph died in Royalton soon after selling his farm.

In the spring of 1834, David Shearer and Eli, his son, with Adam J. Briney, of Darke Co., Ohio, journeyed in company on horseback to Michigan for the purpose of locating land. They visited William Lemon, of Berrien township (whom they knew well), and upon asking his advice as to where they had better settle, were informed that he knew where there was land that would suit them. Thereupon he accompanied them to what is now section 19, Royalton township, and the land proving acceptable they subsequently entered upon that section, David Shearer 160, Eli Shearer 80, and Briney 160 acres. Briney and the Shearers returned to Ohio, and in the fall of 1834 David Shearer started with his family for the Michigan farms. David Shearer, a widower with seven children, had married a widow with six children, so that when he started for Michigan he had a family of thirteen children to bear him company, besides Abner Shearer, a nephew, who remained in Michigan only about a year. David Shearer was originally from North Carolina, and removed thence to Kentucky, and from there to Ohio.

The journey from Ohio to Michigan was made with four two-horse wagons, and after cutting a road from the St. Joseph road to section 19, they landed safely upon their new lands in the almost trackless forest. While the sturdy members of the family engaged in the hurried construction of a log cabin, all hands were rudely sheltered by the side of a prostrate tree, where they had their abiding-place and "kept house" until the more convenient cabin was prepared for them. Eli and his wife lived with the old folks until Eli completed a cabin for himself, and then they turned their attention to clearing their land and preparing for crops.

In that portion of Royalton no settlers had preceded the

\* By David Schwartz.



*Henry Ashoff*

Among the citizens of Royalton township none have a more creditable position in its society than has Henry Ashoff, who was born near Herford, Westphalia, Prussia, May 1, 1827. His early life was spent with his father on a farm. At the age of eight he entered school, attending until he was fourteen, being allowed only two weeks' vacation in twelve months. The educational system in Prussia is one of the best, and America may well take pattern. At the age of fourteen he left school, working on the farm in summer, and being taught in winter by a private teacher, reciting astronomy and natural history. At the age of twenty-one he was drafted into the Prussian army (1848), serving three years as grenadier in Berlin. He entered as private, and at the end of the first year was promoted and put on duty at headquarters, serving the last year as corporal and teacher. He was honorably discharged on the 21st of September, 1851. Returning home, he assisted his father on the farm for the next twenty months. In May, 1853, he sailed for America. The vessel upon which he embarked was a sail-vessel by the name of "Magdalene," one hundred and sixty-five passengers were aboard. He landed August 25th, at New York. He went from there to Philadelphia by boat. He had just nine dollars when he landed, a stranger in a strange land, unable to speak anything but the German language. After staying in Philadelphia one week, he passed over to New Jersey, hiring to work in a brick-yard at one dollar per day. He was taken sick immediately, and for three weeks was unable to work. He was obliged to sell his watch and a part of his clothes to pay his bills. Returning to Philadelphia, he entered a hospital, where he remained for nine weeks. As soon as he was able to leave the hospital he again tried farming, going twenty miles from Philadelphia, and hiring for the small sum of five dollars per month. Soon after he was employed as a hand on the railroad, working on a tunnel which was then being built in Bucks Co., Pa. Having a desire to push farther west, he started for Chicago; remaining there but a few days, he passed over to St. Joseph, landing there the 13th of September, 1854, working in a saw-mill in summer, and chopping cord-wood in winter.

April 15, 1855, he married Mrs. Emma M., widow of John Randal, and oldest daughter of Joseph Gard, of St. Joseph. Six children blessed this union, viz.: James B., Viola, Martha, Hiram, William, and Mary. Viola is the wife of John Geisler, living in Watervliet. Mr. Gard deeded to Mr. Ashoff eighty acres, where he

now lives. He has since added twenty acres. This farm is located in Royalton township, section 20. Mr. Ashoff owns land in St. Joseph and Lincoln townships, and has cleared eighty acres since he has been in this State.

Mrs. Ashoff died Jan. 4, 1873. Aug. 6, 1873, he married for his second wife Elizabeth Kniebes, of Bainbridge, widow of Christian Kniebes, and daughter of William Duckshier. In politics Mr. Ashoff is a Democrat. His integrity and uprightness won the confidence of his fellow-citizens, and he has been chosen to many positions of honor and responsibility; and he has ever discharged their duties with credit to himself, and to the entire satisfaction of the people. Among the offices which he has held are the following: elected township treasurer in 1858, held the office six years; in 1866 supervisor and school inspector, serving six years in each; in 1869 justice of the peace, still holding the office; in 1872 appointed treasurer by the township board; in 1873 re-elected supervisor for three years; in 1875 elected to the State equalization board at Lansing; in 1876-77 re-elected treasurer. He has been appointed administrator to settle up several estates, always giving entire satisfaction. Mr. Ashoff has been a member of the Evangelical Church for twenty years. He has held different offices in the church, having been class-leader for eighteen years. He has been filling offices of trust, both in State and Church, almost all the time since his first arrival in America. In reading this short sketch of the eventful life of Mr. Ashoff, the correct conclusion of any one must be that he is no ordinary man. His early education, so thoroughly instilled, has prepared him to fill any office of trust into which he may be placed. In connection with his education, his energy and industry have made him such a man that the community in which he lives can but regard him as one whom they cannot well lose, or, if lost, whose place cannot be filled. What a pleasure it must be, when life is drawing towards its close of activity, for one to look back on its varied shadows and sunshine, its struggles and triumphs, and feel that they have lived to some purpose, having benefited mankind in having lived. Such a one, surely, is Mr. Ashoff, who has devoted so much of his time for the good of those around him, not only to municipal affairs, but his time and talents have been given to the cause of his Master; this he can review certainly with a calm and serene feeling, born of an unfaltering trust in One "who doeth all things well."





Shearers, and they were as much apart from communion with their own race as if they had been cast adrift upon the ocean. They had no time, however, to think of the loneliness of their situation, for they had that to engage their attention which gave them no leisure for idle thought, and so they worked bravely amid the wolves and Indians, and grew contented with their lot. "Going to mill" was one of the unpleasant features of existence, but it was one of necessity and importance. Although there was a mill at Niles, the Shearers chose to go to Prairie Ronde, thirty-eight miles distant, and to that point the journey was often made. In those days of unbroken roads a trip of seventy-six miles was no slight affair, and that it was going to mill under difficulties may easily be understood.

David Shearer lived upon his farm until his death, in 1865. Of the thirteen children who came to Royalton with him, those now living are Eli Shearer, Andrew Shearer, Sarah Briney, Catharine Boughton, and Lizzie Edwards.

When the Shearers came in, Clark Pennell and his father were keeping what was known as a tavern, on the St. Joseph road, near the present bridge over the Buckhorn Creek. Pennell's log tavern was a shabby concern, so saith the report of those who knew it, but it was much frequented by travelers passing between St. Joseph and Berrien, and drove a flourishing trade for a while. The Pennells grew tired of the business and the country in a short time, however, and moved to Indiana in 1835. One Spencer succeeded as the landlord, and after an experience of about a year, relinquished the tavern to D. M. Drum, who kept it several years and proved its last proprietor. The place was long known as the Buckhorn tavern, by reason of the presence over the tavern-shed of a pair of buck's horns, placed there by William H. Tryon, the slayer of the bucks.

Early in the fall of 1834, Rowland Tryon and his son, William H., made the journey on foot from Indiana to Royalton in search of land, and decided to locate 80 acres upon section 29, in Royalton. Tryon the elder visited the land-office at Kalamazoo to enter the farm. Upon his arrival, in the evening, he learned that some other person was determined upon entering the same lot, and, the land-office being then closed for the day, Tryon resolved to be up bright and early the next morning for a move on the office, for fear the other man might get in ahead of him. At daylight, accordingly, he was astir, and soon afterwards took his place at the land-office door, so that as soon as the agent appeared he made his application, effected his entry, and was happy, which was far from the condition of feeling enjoyed by the other, when, applying at a later hour to enter the land, he learned that some one had been before him.

Having secured his farm, Mr. Tryon and his son returned to Indiana, and began to make arrangements for the transportation of the entire family, consisting of father, mother, and five children, to Michigan. The country was new, and roads of any kind few and far between. When the Tryon family came to Royalton, in 1834, the road from Berrien to St. Joseph was being cut out, and at that time offered but a poor thoroughfare for the traveler. The Tryons camped out upon their new farm and lived a week, when they moved into a small log cabin, hastily built by Mr. Tryon and his two sons, William and John. They managed to make

it do that winter, and in the spring, with the assistance of neighbors, who came promptly to their relief, they effected material improvements in the family dwelling, and in the fall brought it forward to the dignity of a double log house.

During the winter succeeding the arrival of the family, William, the eldest son, managed, with some assistance from his father, to clear considerable land, so that in the spring they were enabled to make a respectable start towards raising crops. Old Mr. Tryon, who had been a sailor, did not take at first with much enthusiasm to the business of clearing land, and William was therefore called upon to take the lead in pioneer labor. He has resided in Royalton since his first settlement, and still lives upon section 29. His father died upon the old place in 1875, and his mother in 1878. His brother John, who came with the family from Indiana, is also a resident of Royalton. When Mr. Tryon moved in, his nearest neighbors were Eli and David Shearer and a man by the name of Bogart, who was living on the river's bank, upon the place now occupied by Dr. E. Hall. Bogart is supposed to have located there with his family as early as 1833, but in 1837 removed to Missouri.

In October, 1835, Adam J. Briney, who had, with the Shearers, located land in Royalton the year before, concluded to move, with his wife and four children, to his new farm, although he had for a twelvemonth been hesitating to make the change. With him also came William Miltenberger, with his wife and child, and William Baumgartner, a young man fired with an ambition to explore the western wilds,—these being all residents of Darke Co., Ohio. They had also in their company Eli Shearer and wife, who had returned to Ohio from Michigan for a hurried visit.

The journey was made with wagons, and upon reaching Royalton Briney and his wife located at Eli Shearer's house, where they remained two weeks, by which time Briney had put up a cabin on a place adjoining Shearer. He had there 160 acres, upon which he resided about ten years, when he removed to a place on section 19, north of his first location, and there he lived until his death, in 1875, leaving a widow, who still lives on the place.

William Miltenberger, whose mother had married David Shearer, resided at her house upon his arrival in Royalton with his wife and child, and for a year or so labored upon his own and the farms of neighbors. At the expiration of that period, having entered 80 acres upon section 30, he moved upon his farm, and there still resides in the log house into which he first moved.

Baumgartner remained in Royalton but a short time, doing service as a farm laborer, and then returned to Ohio. He came back to Michigan after a while, and worked about here and there, eventually settling, however, in Royalton, upon section 18, where he now lives.

David Ball was a settler in Royalton as early as 1834, upon section 13. Little can be said of him, save that he had a family of four children, and moved out of the township in 1839, after selling his farm to Robert Hollywood.

Hollywood was a linen-bleacher in Ireland, and, coming to this country about 1820, became a sailor. He sailed the lakes with Captain White, on the steamer "William Penn," from Buffalo to Chicago, during the Black Hawk war, and

afterwards, in 1834, was commander and owner\* of the steamboat "Davy Crockett," which plied on the St. Joseph River. After navigating the "Crockett" about four years that vessel was lost at a place on the river now known as Crockett's Island, and Captain Hollywood then took charge of the ferry at St. Joseph. In 1839 he purchased the farm of David Ball, in Royalton (120 acres), and moving upon it, remained there until his death, in 1851. His sons—Robert T. and Job W.—now occupy and own the estate, to which they have added 90 acres and made it one of the finest and most profitable farms in Royalton.

In the fall of 1831, Theodore C. Abbe, of Oswego, having purchased land in the township of St. Joseph, in Michigan, visited Massachusetts, where his widowed mother and family were living, and persuaded them to remove to the West with him. In the spring of 1832, accordingly, Theo-



A. G. ABBE.

dore, his mother, sister, and two brothers sailed from Oswego for Detroit. At the latter point they procured an ox-team and lumber-wagon, with which they proceeded to Niles. There a pirogue was obtained, and in that the family, except A. G. Abbe, one of Theodore's brothers, and the lumber-wagon, sailed down the St. Joseph River to Royalton village, while A. G. drove the oxen overland to that place. A. G. lived in Royalton until his brother Theodore died, and then he became a river boatman. He plied on the St. Joseph nine years, worked at his trade as carpenter two years more, and in 1847 located upon a farm in Royalton township, entered with zeal and energy upon a pioneer life, and although a settler after many others in that town, made his home upon land covered with timber, and untouched until then by the woodman's axe. Mr. Abbe has resided in Royalton since his settlement in 1847, and still lives upon the farm which then became his home.

Samuel Danforth, a widower with four children, left Onondaga Co., N. Y., in 1837, with two of his children, for the West, intending to locate in Michigan. He made the

trip to Detroit *via* the Erie Canal and Lake Erie, and started from Detroit for Niles with a team; but the roads proved to be so bad, that after proceeding less than one-half the distance he and his children abandoned the wagon and footed it to Niles, a distance of nearly one hundred miles. After sojourning in Niles about two weeks, Mr. Danforth went to St. Joseph, where he busied himself for a year at various matters, and then purchasing a farm in Royalton, upon section 7, moved there in the spring of 1838. Mr. Danforth remained upon that farm until 1850, when he moved to the residence of his son, J. B. Danforth, upon section 12, the latter having located there in 1847, and resided there until his death, in 1858. The only one of Mr. Danforth's children now living in Royalton is J. B., above mentioned.

About 1840, Dennis Kelley, residing in Chicago, moved,



MRS. A. G. ABBE.

with his family, to Michigan, and purchasing 120 acres in Royalton, on section 21, settled upon it without delay. This land is now owned by Dr. E. Hall and by the S. P. Phillips estate. One Hogart, who had occupied the place at an early date and moved away after a short sojourn, had cleared about 15 acres, and when Kelley arrived he found matters happily so far advanced that he began straightway to raise crops. He lived on the place twelve years, when upon the death of his wife he sold out and moved to Niles. Of the eight children who came to Royalton with Mr. Kelley all are living, but only one of them (Michael) resides in Royalton.

Luther K. Hyde and Samuel Davis, brothers-in-law, residing in Wayne Co., N. Y., left that country, with their families, June 13, 1843,—Hyde having seven children and Davis six. They traveled with a two-horse team to each family, and started for Illinois, where they proposed to settle. They reached Niles, Mich., without mishap, where Davis fell sick, but after a week's halt they went forward. Hyde was opposed to locating in Illinois, while Davis was opposed to locating anywhere else. When they had got as far as Pigeon River, Ind., however, Davis allowed himself to be persuaded in favor of a settlement in Michigan, and from

\* This statement conflicts with that given of the "Crockett" by J. W. Brewer, Esq., of St. Joseph. See pp. 12, 13.



Pigeon River, therefore, the party came to a rest again in Bertram, Mich. Finding an empty log cabin in the woods, they lodged their families therein and looked about for land. Davis traded his horses, wagon, and harness for 80 acres in what is now Lincoln township. Hyde went to Berrien Springs and worked with his team until December, 1843, when he bought a farm in Royalton. The place contained 50 acres, and had belonged to one Gilson, who in passing down Buckhorn hill one day with his team fell from his wagon and was run over and killed. For that 50 acres Mr. Hyde gave his horses, harness, and fifty dollars, and upon the farm he has since then continued to reside.

Alanson Risley, of Illinois, emigrated to Michigan in 1846, and made a bargain with Asa Knapp for 160 acres of land upon section 25, in the township of Royalton, which Knapp had bought with the intention of making a permanent home of it, but after chopping upon it a half-day he became convinced that he did not wish to stay there. Returning to Illinois, whence he had come, he sold the property to Risley. The latter moved upon it with his wife and two sons, and it continued to be his home until the spring of 1862, when he died. One of his sons, named Wait, entered the Federal army during the war of the Rebellion, and died on Ship Island, Miss., a member of Company B, 6th Michigan Regiment. Ward, another son, lives in Texas. A daughter, Mrs. Samuel Spry, lives in Royalton, on her father's old farm. Mr. Risley was a hardy pioneer, and found a wide field for the exercise of his industry upon the land he had bought, for it was covered with timber, and what made his pioneer's task a hard one was the fact that he had to work for others to get money enough to keep his family until the crops could mature, and thus between working for fifty cents a day upon other farms, and clearing the land and tilling the soil upon his own at odd hours, and very frequently at night, he managed to struggle on until he could realize on the produce. He set out an orchard also, and to pay for every tree he had to work two days, at fifty cents a day.

Nathan Taylor, of Indiana, was a settler in 1847 upon section 18, where Mrs. Sarah Taylor now lives. Taylor moved to Missouri, where he now resides. Jeremiah Case, of New York, made a brief settlement in Royalton about 1840. After a residence of a year or more he set out to return to New York, but died *en route*.

Settlements in Royalton progressed very slowly from 1834 to 1844, and in the latter year much of the territory was an unbroken forest. In 1840 the population was but 246, and in 1845 had increased so slowly that it was but 284,—the census of both years including also what is now Lincoln township.

The first saw-mill was put up by David Shearer, on Yellow Creek, and the second one by Eli Shearer, on the same stream. The first *steam* saw-mill was erected by Alexander Fulton, on William Miltenberger's place. The mill building is still there, but it was dismantled some time ago. Alexander Fulton came from Prairie Ronde to Royalton in 1843, and located upon section 32, where he lived until his death, and where his widow still resides.

William Pike relates that during the winter of 1831—which, by the way, was made famous by an almost unpre-

cedented snowfall—he was engaged in hauling goods between St. Joseph and Berrien, and after the river froze used to make the trip *via* the river to Royalton, and thence by road to Berrien. The snow lay at one time so deep upon the ground that he was two days making the journey from Berrien to St. Joseph. About the close of that winter he was transporting a load of flour in bags from Niles to the lower country, and reached the river at Berrien Springs only to learn that the ice in the river was too weak to bear a load, and likely to break up at any moment. Pike was determined, however, to get his load over, and so he shouldered his 15 two-bushel bags of flour, one at a time, and carried them across the river at a lively foot-pace. It was risky business, and indeed he came very near being swamped; but the work was completed, though the strain, both mentally and physically, was so severe that, although the incident occurred nearly fifty years ago, Mr. Pike has never fully recovered from the effects of it.

Royalton had an early settler known as Cowen, who was an eccentric genius, and so singular in his manner that he was sometimes considered a lunatic. He worked at first for John Pike, and after a while bought of Pike 40 acres of land in Royalton, and built upon it a rude cabin, although he did not attempt to do much towards clearing his land. One day he cut his throat, and declared he would die. The neighbors insisted, however, upon preventing such a result, and procuring a surgeon, soon saw him restored to strength. After that event he grew more moody and morose than ever, and presently disappeared. His land was sold at auction for \$50, which barely sufficed to pay his debts; but he never reappeared in Royalton. Some time afterwards he was reported as having been seen "going West," and that was the last heard of him.

Hunting was a popular pastime, and game of almost all kinds was plentiful. William Tryon and Eli Shearer were among the most famous hunters of those parts, and were, indeed, often matched in skill against Indian hunters, whom they surpassed on frequent occasions.

The first white person born in Royalton was a son of Jehial Enos. The first couple married were Rachel Pike and Jas. Hutchinson, at John Pike's house, by 'Squire Lemon, of Berrien. The first death was that of Sarah, a daughter of John Pike, whose infant son was the second person to die in the township.

#### MARRIAGE EXTRAORDINARY.

Report says that in the long ago one of the township justices was sent for to perform a marriage ceremony, but being unable to leave his business, he deputized a young man to "perform the duty," believing, in the innocence of his heart, that he could empower a deputy in such as well as other matters. Strange to say, the deputy performed the ceremony, and the married pair accepted the dispensation in perfect faith until a few years afterwards, when learning the true facts in the case, they made haste to get married according to law.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL LIST.

Royalton, originally a portion of St. Joseph township, was set off in 1835, and in that year David M. Drum was

chosen supervisor. The original limits of Royalton included the territory now occupied by the townships of Lincoln, Royalton, and Sodus. Lincoln was made a separate district in 1868. Pipestone (including what is now Sodus) was set off in 1842. The early records, dating from 1835 to 1852, were destroyed by fire, and the only obtainable list of township officials dates, therefore, from the year last named. The names of the persons who were annually elected between 1852 and 1879, inclusive, to be supervisors, clerks, treasurers, justices of the peace, and school inspectors are given below:

- 1852.—Supervisor, Richard Brown; Clerk, William Williams; Treasurer, Albert G. Abbe; Justice of the Peace, Alexander Fulton; School Inspector, Noble W. Thompson.
- 1853.—Supervisor, Samuel Davis; Clerk, William Williams; Treasurer, A. G. Abbe; School Inspector, A. G. Abbe; Justices of the Peace, Samuel Tryon, John Bacon.
- 1854.—Supervisor, William Stevens; Clerk, John Bunker; Treasurer, A. G. Abbe; School Inspector, Chester Sherman; Justices of the Peace, N. W. Thompson, A. Fulton, A. G. Abbe, Wm. H. Tryon.
- 1855.—Supervisor, A. G. Abbe; Clerk, John Bunker; Treasurer, W. W. Conley; School Inspector, Thomas Harwood; Justices of the Peace, Allen Conley, W. H. Tryon.
- 1856.—Supervisor, N. W. Thompson; Clerk, E. E. Cady; Treasurer, William Williams; School Inspector, James Carlton; Justice of the Peace, Richard Brown.
- 1857.—Supervisor, N. W. Thompson; Clerk, William G. Taylor; Treasurer, William Williams; School Inspector, G. N. Odell; Justice of the Peace, Benjamin Lemon.
- 1858.—Supervisor, N. W. Thompson; Clerk, James Carlton; Treasurer, John Bunker; School Inspector, Gould Parish; Justices of the Peace, N. W. Thompson, Merwin Barnes, G. Hettler.
- 1859.—Supervisor, N. W. Thompson; Clerk, James Carlton; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, Chester Sherman; Justices of the Peace, Gould Parish, Alonzo Spear.
- 1860.—Supervisor, James Carlton; Clerk, Burt Sterling; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, Albert H. Carlton; Justices of the Peace, Thomas Odell and G. Hettler.
- 1861.—Supervisor, James Carlton; Clerk, Andrew J. Smoke; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, Greenleaf N. Odell; Justice of the Peace, Jacob Van Dusen.
- 1862.—Supervisor, James Carlton; Clerk, Andrew J. Smoke; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, Chester Sherman; Justice of the Peace, John Purcell.
- 1863.—Supervisor, James Carlton; Clerk, Andrew J. Smoke; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, Albert H. Carlton; Justice of the Peace, Richard Brown.
- 1864.—Supervisor, James Carlton; Clerk, Julius H. Birdsey; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, Edward P. Clark; Justice of the Peace, Gottlieb Hettler.
- 1865.—Supervisor, David N. Brown; Clerk, L. W. Stanley; Treasurer, Joseph Chapel; School Inspector, O. D. Parsons.
- 1866.—Supervisor, O. D. Parsons; Clerk, James A. Parish; Treasurer, Joseph Chapel; Justices of the Peace, Gould Parish, J. W. Robards; School Inspector, Leroy W. Archer.
- 1867.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, John M. Hankins; Treasurer, William Penland; School Inspectors, James Carlton, Oliver Spalding; Justices of the Peace, William Penland, Henry Ashoff, O. C. Spalding.
- 1868.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, John M. Hankins; Treasurer, Wm. Penland; School Inspector, A. H. Carlton; Justice of the Peace, Oliver C. Spalding.
- 1869.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, John M. Hankins; Treasurer, William H. Tryon; School Inspector, Henry Ashoff; Justice of the Peace, Frederick Sourlier.
- 1870.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, John M. Hankins; Treasurer, William H. Tryon; School Inspector, Oliver C. Spalding; Justices of the Peace, Henry Ashoff and William Stevens.

- 1871.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, John M. Hankins; Treasurer, Wm. H. Tryon; School Inspector, Henry Ashoff; Justice of the Peace, William Penland.
- 1872.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, Lewis B. Tryon; Treasurer, John M. Hankins; School Inspector, Oliver C. Spalding; Justice of the Peace, Edward Boyer.
- 1873.—Supervisor, John S. Beers; Clerk, Lewis B. Tryon; Treasurer, Andrew J. Dispennett; School Inspector, Henry Ashoff; Justices of the Peace, Adam Sinn, George Merwin.
- 1874.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, Lewis B. Tryon; Treasurer, George H. Scott; School Inspector, A. H. Carlton; Justices of the Peace, Henry Ashoff, R. D. Collyer.
- 1875.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, Lewis B. Tryon; Treasurer, George H. Scott; School Inspector, Henry Ashoff; Justice of the Peace, J. M. Brown.
- 1876.—Supervisor, Henry Ashoff; Clerk, Carlton L. Bunker; Treasurer, George H. Scott; School Inspector, Henry Ashoff; Justices of the Peace, John Bort and Nicholas Miller.
- 1877.—Supervisor, A. H. Carlton; Clerk, A. J. Dispennett; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, J. W. Hollywood; Justices of the Peace, John M. Hankins, A. Sinn, G. C. Rockey.
- 1878.—Supervisor, A. H. Carlton; Clerk, A. J. Dispennett; Treasurer, Henry Ashoff; School Inspector, W. Martin; Justices of the Peace, Henry Ashoff, W. Penland, D. Keller, R. Phillips.
- 1879.—Supervisor, A. H. Carlton; Clerk, A. J. Dispennett; Treasurer, A. Sinn; School Inspector, J. W. Smoke; Justices of the Peace, George Merwin (Henry Ashoff and Wm. Penland also justices in 1879); Highway Commissioner, William Matthews; Drain Commissioner, Andrew J. Penland; School Superintendent, A. H. Carlton; Constable, Fayette Bort.

The affairs of the township are conducted by a Township Board, whose members, in 1879, were Wm. Penland, Albert Carlton, and A. J. Dispennett, who also composed the Board of Health. On April 1, 1879, the town was clear of debt, and had in the treasury, including school funds, the sum of \$323.35. Two miles north of Tryon's Corners is the town hall, a neat but plain frame edifice, which is the only public building in the town. The assessed valuation of property in Royalton in 1879 was \$160,475.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school taught in the central portion of the town is supposed to have been conducted in a log school-house near Tryon's Corners, by a Mr. Wilson, whose advent occurred in about 1840. His successor in the same school was one William Price, of whom it is said that he was an able school-teacher. An early teacher in the northern part of the town was Miss Hastings,—now Mrs. James Stevens,—who taught in a log school-house on the St. Joseph road, in section 18.

Royalton has now one fractional and five full school districts. The school directors are A. H. Carlton, Lewis Scofield, H. A. Smith, David Kelley, Geo. T. Pallen, and J. H. Evans. Statistics touching these schools, as per report of Sept. 1, 1879, are herewith given, as follows: number of scholars of school age, 381; average attendance, 325; value of school property, \$4400; amount paid for teachers' wages, \$1024.

#### CHURCHES.

About 1844, Rev. Thomas J. Babcock, a traveling missionary, organized a United Brethren class in a log school-house on Rowland Tryon's place, but the organization failed to prosper, and was short-lived. Previous to that—



MRS. WILLIAM H. TRYON.



*William H. Tryon*

# WILLIAM H. TRYON.

Among the many prominent men whose portraits and biographies appear upon the pages of this book, none is more worthy of note than William H. Tryon, who was born in Stanford, Fairfield Co., Conn., May 15, 1816.

Some lives are spent where they first see light, but Mr. Tryon does not belong to that class, he having lived in the following States: Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Michigan, and Indiana.

In 1836 Mr. Tryon settled on land in Royalton township, section 29, where he now resides.

Roland Tryon, father of the subject of this sketch, came to Michigan in 1836, bringing only a part of his family; the others followed soon after. He entered eighty acres of land that his son William now owns; he also entered land in other townships, living long enough to see his family all well settled. He died at the advanced age of ninety-four years. William has added eighty acres to the entry of his father; erected a large brick house in the place of the small and inconvenient one that was first built; has improved his farm and made of it a very desirable place; has been one of the largest fruit-growers in the township. Mr. Tryon has not only been engaged in farming and fruit-raising, but carried on a general store in Royalton for six years. He has also been a grain-dealer in Chicago.

His neighbors, and the citizens of the township and county, have ever regarded him as a man whom they could trust, and have placed him in many positions of honor. Among the offices he has filled are the following: director of

the National Bank at St. Joseph, two years; justice of the peace, four years; township treasurer, two years; coroner, six years; and notary public, six years, holding this office at the present time. He has all his life taken a decided political stand, and is an out-and-out Republican. He is also a member in good standing of the Masonic lodge in St. Joseph, and also of the Odd-Fellows. On the 17th of April, 1844, he married Mary E., daughter of Jonathan and Deborah Kent. Four children blessed their union, but death invaded the family circle and claimed two, viz.: William R. and Orleana A. Minto is the wife of Jesse B. Hamilton, living in Lansing, Mich.; Charles E. married Miss Celestine P. Collier, and is living at home with his parents. Mrs. Tryon was born in Chatham, Morris Co., N. J., Sept. 7, 1826; and in 1851 joined the Methodist Church.

In the early settling of this State there was plenty of wild game; this afforded sport for many of the people, none enjoying it more than Mr. Tryon, who was a very successful hunter. As an instance of his success, he narrates making a score of thirty-seven deer, sixteen coons, six wild turkeys, and nine swarms of bees in a forty-days' hunt; also, as an experience of the early days, of having made a visit to New Jersey from Michigan by the way of the lakes, being thirty-seven days on the way; the cause of this being the condition of the boat; after starting out it was discovered to be leaking, and the water had to be bailed out by the men, it taking them twenty-four days to go from St. Joseph to Detroit.





in 1832, or soon after—Rev. William Davis, of Indiana, with other traveling missionaries of the United Brethren Church, used to preach at John Pike's house once in four weeks. The congregations were small, of course, but the members thereof were faithful attendants, and held in high esteem the precious privilege of public worship, although they enjoyed it but once a month, and traveled in some cases a long way to do it. After a while a United Brethren congregation was organized, but lapsed after a brief existence. Rev. Mr. McCoolle, a Methodist Episcopal missionary, preached occasionally in the town in 1833 and 1834, and after that other preachers of that faith made visits, but no class was formed until 1864. The Baptists have been worshipping for some time past in the town hall, and for a year or more have had preaching once in two weeks by Rev. J. E. King, of Sodus, but they have as yet effected no organization.

*The Evangelical Association.*—A German Church was organized in Royalton in January, 1860, by Rev. C. Ude, and the class then formed, with Henry Ashoff as leader, was called the Emanuel Class of the Evangelical Association in North America. In 1860 a house of worship was erected upon Henry Ashoff's farm, where it is still located. Since the organization of the church Mr. Ashoff has served as the class-leader the most of the time, and for an extended period as superintendent of the Sabbath-school. Among the preachers who have occupied the church pulpit have been Revs. Ruh, Alsbach, Reigel, Spech, Haug, Gomes, Meek, Paullin, and others. The church membership is now about 30, and is composed exclusively of Germans. Church services are always conducted in the German language, save as occasion demands a change at protracted meetings. The Sabbath-school includes about 50 scholars, and is in charge of 7 teachers, the exercises being conducted in the German language. The school was organized in 1861, when Gottlieb Hettler was chosen superintendent.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church* was organized April 8, 1866, by Rev. John Byrnes, and was attached to the Michigan Conference in the Niles district. Previous to that, May 23, 1864, a Methodist Episcopal class was formed, with 11 members, but dissolved shortly thereafter.

The names of those who joined Mr. Byrnes' class in 1866 are given, as follows: G. Hettler, William and Catherine Penland, Laura Stanley, Ansel Scott, Debbie Parsons, Phæbe Covert, Mary Roberts, Mr. and Mrs. C. E. Reuglands, W. C. Penland, Caroline Boswell, Joan Tryon, S. W. Stanley, G. Foster, D. H. Fogle, Nancy Baker, Elizabeth Reese, Martha A. Hettler, Mary Tryon, Elizabeth Fogle.

March 25, 1867, when the class was revised by Rev. Irving Skinner, it contained 28 members. Mr. Skinner was the pastor two years, and was followed by Revs. Friend, Valentine, Shinston, Wallace, and Joseph Skinner. Worship has always been held in the Tryon school-house, save for a period of three years, when the location was at the Risley school-house. Preaching is now provided once every two weeks. The members number now 16. The class-leader is Ansel Scott; the steward, William Penland. The Sabbath-school, which meets every Sunday, comprises from 30 to 40 scholars, under the charge of Superintendent Ansel Scott and three teachers.

*The Christian Church*, now worshipping in the Risley school-house, has a membership of 70, which was its strength when organized Oct. 28, 1878, by Rev. Reason Davis. Mr. Davis is still the pastor and preaches once a month. Mrs. Anderson preached, for about a year, a monthly sermon, so that the church was enabled to have worship once a fortnight. Mrs. Anderson's visits have been recently discontinued, but it is thought that Mr. Davis will be engaged to preach once a fortnight instead of monthly. Carl Bunker is the present elder, J. H. Evans and Samuel Spry the deacons, and David Shearer the secretary and treasurer.

#### POST-OFFICE.

A post-office was established in Royalton in 1843, and Mr. Boughton appointed postmaster. He kept tavern on the St. Joseph road, where A. H. Carlton now lives, and had the post-office in his tavern. John Wetherell succeeded him both as tavern-keeper and postmaster, at the same place, where, too, Gould Parrish was the third incumbent. After Mr. Parrish's time the office was discontinued until 1861, when George H. Scott secured its revival and his appointment as postmaster. He held the office until 1865, when it was again discontinued. In 1874 it was re-established at Tryon's Corners. A. J. Dispennett, who was then appointed, is still the postmaster. The office has now daily mail communication.

#### FRUIT GRANGE, No. 104.

This, the only secret order in the township, was organized in 1873, with the following members: J. S. Beers, M.; J. W. Robards, O.; A. Scofield, S.; J. Knight, G.; B. S. Green, Sec.; L. B. Tryon, Treas.; J. M. Brown, Asst. S.; Ella Brown, Lady Asst. S.; H. Rantfrow, Chapl.; R. M. Ballinger, Lect.; E. Corywell, Ceres; Anna Fogle, Flora; Celeste Tryon, Pomona; Mrs. R. M. Ballinger, Mrs. Mary Robards, Mrs. Martha Scott, Mrs. Harriet Knight, Mrs. Lavina Rantfrow, Mrs. Grace Tryon, Mr. and Mrs. V. R. Cromer, and George Cromer.

The grange is flourishing, with a membership of 50, and owns a commodious hall at Tryon's Corners. The officers chosen for 1879 were: J. M. Brown, M.; L. B. Tryon, O.; A. Scofield, Sec.; M. Sherman, Treas.; Charles Brown, S.; George Fogle, Asst. S.; Nancy Sherman, Chaplain; George Rockey, Lecturer; S. Knight, G.; Mrs. L. Rantfrow, Lady Asst. S.; Mrs. M. E. Ross, Ceres; Mrs. R. J. Dispennett, Pomona; Mrs. George Rockey, Flora.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### DR. EDWARD HALL

was born near Manchester, England, April 15, 1830, and emigrated to the United States in the fall of 1838, with his mother, five brothers, and three sisters; his father, Thomas P. Hall, having preceded them one year. After a very stormy passage of *sixty-one days* they landed at Boston, on Thanksgiving day, and it was truly a thanksgiving day to those storm-tossed pilgrims. The family proceeded at once to Lowell, and all that were old enough went to work with

their father (who followed calico-printing for forty-five years) in the celebrated Merrimac Print-Works. After the death of their mother, which occurred in November, 1843,



DR. EDWARD HALL.

the family was broken up for about a year, when they came together again near Worcester, Mass. After a residence there of a year the father and six of the children emigrated, in a wagon, to Monroe Co., Mich. After remaining there one year and a half, two sons, Edward and Thomas, started again westward, and, walking across the State of Michigan,

found employment on farms near Laporte, Ind. Edward worked for Dr. B. C. Bowell three years, when he began the study of medicine, which he continued for four years. Graduating at the Eclectic Medical Institute, Cincinnati, Ohio, he began the practice of medicine at Delhi, Delaware Co., Iowa. In 1855 he was joined by his father and four brothers, who lived with him until the winter of 1856-57, when they all removed to Lyon Co., Kansas, where they remained until 1861. Then the doctor moved back to Laporte, Ind., and in 1862 removed to Berrien Springs. Here he remained eight years, and, by close attention to his profession and strict integrity, built up a large practice, and was surrounded by a host of very warm friends. In the spring of 1870, in consequence of failing health, he removed to Royalton township and engaged in fruit-raising.

His family consists of a wife and six children, having married Lorinda C. Roe, Aug. 24, 1854. Their children are four sons, viz., W. C., T. H., E. L., and A. R., and two daughters, Lorinda E. and Mary E. Hall.

Dr. Hall says of his father, "He was a native of London, England, lived to the age of eighty-seven years, and had not a day's sickness in his long life, and only a day or two at its close."

The doctor has led an active, useful life in his profession, than which none gives more opportunities for doing good. He has been faithful to this profession, and the years of his practice have been wholly devoted to his work, losing no time by sickness, not having been confined to his bed twenty-four hours in forty years.



GEORGE H. SCOTT.

### GEORGE H. SCOTT

was born in East Poultney, Vt., June 19, 1817. Spent his early life at home. When fifteen years old he entered the store of Wm. P. Myers, in East Poultney, as a clerk; stayed three years, at a salary of fifty dollars a year, with boarding and washing. At the end of this time he decided to learn a trade. Selecting that of tinner, he contracted for three years' apprenticeship, for which he was to receive one



MRS. GEORGE H. SCOTT.

hundred and fifty dollars. At the end of two years his brother, Reuben Scott, decided to move West, and urged George to accompany him. He not having filled his contract as to his trade, had to make some arrangement about that. Mr. Judd, his employer, gave him one hundred dollars for the two years he had spent in his shop, charging him ninety dollars for the time yet to be made up, leaving George but ten dollars for his two years' labor.



The two brothers left Vermont May 1, 1837, arriving at St. Joseph, Mich., in twelve days, coming by stage to Schenectady, N. Y.; thence to Buffalo by packet on the Erie Canal, taking stage again to Erie, Pa.; then to Toledo by boat, to Niles by stage, and from Niles to St. Joseph by steamboat on the St. Joseph River. Here the brothers decided to go into business, opening a hardware-store, which business they engaged in three years, when they were burned out, losing heavily. In 1840 bought out a grocery, running this four years. In 1843, George built a vessel, selling his interest out to his brother as soon as it was completed, again engaging in business in the firm of Warren Chatman. At the end of the first year another partner was taken into the business—Francis Finegan; remained here until 1850; then selling out, he went to speculating in cord-wood, shipping to Chicago; the business increasing, he took Curtis Boughton as a partner. In another year's time they bought a saw-mill, taking as partners in this L. F. Warner and Riley F. Gragg. At the close of the year this firm dissolved, leaving the firm Scott &

Warner. At the end of two years, the war of the Rebellion breaking out, and troops being called for, Warner enlisted, selling his interest to Scott, who managed the business until 1871. In 1854, Scott and Boughton bought one hundred and sixty acres of land, Scott moving on the farm in 1861. In the transfer of their property Scott retained fifteen acres of the original purchase, to which he has since added eighty acres. He also owns other land,—one farm of one hundred and twenty acres, which is the home of his son, George M. In all he has two hundred and seventeen acres.

In politics Mr. Scott is a Republican, and has filled several offices of trust, among which are the following: postmaster in Royalton for seven years, town treasurer three years, deputy postmaster at St. Joseph (1840) two years.

On the 14th day of December, 1843, he married Eliza, daughter of David and Charlotte Gragg. Of this union were born five children, viz.: George M., C. H., Emily L., Charles R., Linda M. All are living. Mrs. Scott died Sept. 19, 1872.



JOHN BORT.

## JOHN BORT.

Among the many gentlemen whose biographies appear on the pages of this history, none better deserve mention than he whose name stands at the head of this sketch. He was born Nov. 25, 1810, in Herkimer Co., N. Y.; his early life was spent on a farm. At the age of twenty he left his father, hiring as a farm-hand for two years at thirteen dollars per month. He then went to Canada, working in a saw-mill at twenty-six dollars per month.

Oct. 10, 1832, married Mariette, daughter of Otis and Mary Smith. Mrs. Bort was born Feb. 24, 1826, in Herkimer Co., N. Y. After his marriage Mr. Bort rented his father's farm, remaining there two years. At this time his father-in-law dying, he was appointed administrator of his estate; seven years passed before this was settled, there being a minor heir. For four years he engaged in farming, first in Jefferson and then in Herkimer County. Removing



MRS. JOHN BORT.

to Peters' Corners, he engaged in harness-making; from that he went to traveling, selling fanning-mills and pumps.

In 1844, Mr. Bort settled in this county, purchasing a farm of one hundred and seventeen acres in Niles township; he sold this and removed to Royalton township, now Lincoln, where he bought one hundred and forty-four acres; again buying one hundred and sixty-four acres in Royalton township, to which he removed, and on which he is now living. His principal employment while on the Lake farm was raising fruit.

Feb. 1, 1848, Mrs. Bort died, leaving four children, viz.: Otis S., Sophronia M., Mary J., and Charles E.

Jan. 2, 1850, he married, for his second wife, Sophronia, daughter of George Getman. Of this union were born six children, viz.: Albert, Fayette, Harrie G., Eddie G., Jay E., and Mariette. Albert is living in Nebraska, the others are at home with their parents. Mr. Bort's father raised a

family of twelve children,—all living but one; two living in Michigan, one in Iowa, one in Wisconsin, and the others in New York. Mr. Bort is the ninth child, and he is now sixty-nine years old. His father died in 1870, aged eighty-three years, having been twice married, his first wife dying in 1823, and the second in 1877.

Mr. Bort is an active, energetic man, anxious for the advancement of the country around him. He organized the first school on the lake, opening the school with only three scholars; has been school director and commissioner for two years. It has been his fortune nearly every time he has changed his residence, to stop where they had a school-house to build, and he has assisted in building four school-houses.

Mr. Bort was ambitious to improve both his mind and his circumstances; this led him to employ diligently both his time and means, and as a result he has achieved a success in life which favorably contrasts with the beginning of his career.

## CHAPTER XLI.

### ST. JOSEPH TOWNSHIP.\*

Description of the Township, its Settlement, and Pioneers—Organization and Township Officers—Early Roads and Road Districts—St. Joseph Village—Manufacturing Interests—The Railroad—St. Joseph Secret Orders—The Public Schools—Religious Societies—Cemetery.

THIS is the smallest township in the county, and is situated on the lake-shore, at the mouth of the St. Joseph River, from which it takes its name.† In the government survey it is known as town 4 south, in range 19 west. It has a triangular shape, and is bounded on the east by Benton, and south by Lincoln and Royaltown townships. Only a little more than seven full sections are embraced within its limits. The principal streams are the St. Joseph and Paw Paw Rivers and Hickory Creek. The former enters the township from the south, nearly a mile west of the southeast corner, and after flowing almost parallel with the lake for two miles and a half, turns to the west and, receiving the waters of the Paw Paw, which flows from the northeast, discharges into Lake Michigan. In its course through the township it embraces several islands and bayous, and there is not sufficient fall to afford water-power. The peninsula formed by this stream is a plateau elevated from forty-eight to fifty-five feet above the lake. Its soil is a rich sandy loam, with occasional small belts or outcroppings of clay. It was originally well covered with oak, maple, beech, whitewood, ash, and hickory, with small clusters of pine. Most of these have been removed, and the surface presents an open and well-improved landscape. On the peninsula formed by the Paw Paw River the surface is less elevated, and the soil is sandy and comparatively

sterile, much of it being unfit for cultivation. Along the rivers the surface is somewhat marshy, but upon the eastern line of the township there is a belt of very fine land, which has been highly improved. Although the soil is adapted to the cereals, market-gardening and fruit culture have become the leading industries of the people outside of the village of St. Joseph. At this point the first settlement was made. An account of the Jesuit Mission, and other early occupancy, is given in the general history of the county, as also of Capt. Hinckley's entrance to the harbor in the fall of 1827, while on his way to Fort Dearborn (Chicago) with supplies for the garrison. The harbor was at that time called "Saranac" by the sailors. William Burnett and his son James also had a trading-post here from about 1785 till after 1825.

The old Burnett trading-post was something more than one mile up the river, in an apple-orchard set out by the elder Burnett. A part of the orchard still exists, and the remains of the trading-post are—or were in recent years—to be seen.

James Burnett, son of William Burnett, was here in 1829. He laid no claim to land, but followed his occupation of a trader with the Indians, and was traveling from place to place.

#### THE PIONEER SETTLERS

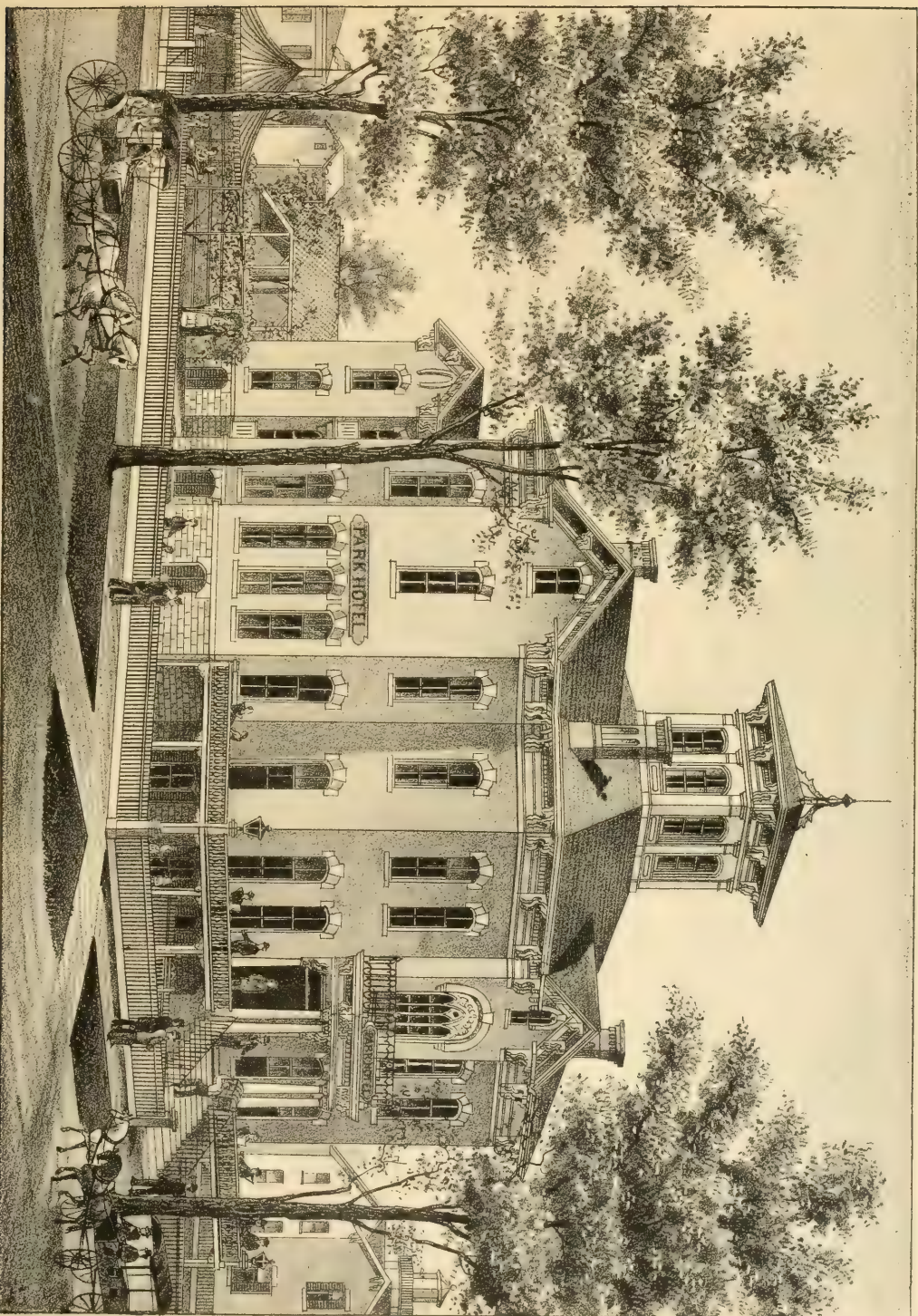
were Calvin Britain and Augustus B. Newell. The former was born in Jefferson Co., N. Y., in 1800, and came to Michigan in 1827. For a short time he was connected with the "Carey Mission," and was at St. Joseph in 1827 and 1828, but in 1829 pre-empted land at that place with Augustus B. Newell. The lands were surveyed by government in 1829 and 1830, and Sept. 30, 1830, they purchased the lands they had pre-empted. Mr. Britain took up his residence here in 1829, and remained a citizen of the township until his death, Jan. 18, 1862. He was a member of the Legislative Council of the Territory, which office he held till Michigan became a State, and served in the Legislature as a representative and senator under the old constitution. In 1852 he was elected Lieutenant-Governor. He remained a single man. In 1837 his father, Gen. Calvin Britain, came to St. Joseph to live, but died in 1840, at the age of seventy years.

Maj. Britain had his home with Augustus B. Newell, who came in 1829, and built the first house (which was of logs), intended for permanent use in the township. He also built the first tavern, but died soon after, in 1832. Benjamin Chandler came in the early part of 1829, and built a house near Newell's, but farther up the bluff. He died in the place many years ago. In May, 1829, Capt. Daniel T. Wilson came from Niles, where he was engaged with his brother in a tanning business. He settled in St. Joseph, and, with the exception of a few years, lived there until his death, Oct. 25, 1878. At the time he came one Leephart, a trader, lived on the east side of the river. In September, 1829, his father came to live in the township, but died in the course of four or five years. Calvin Bartlett came the same season. In November, 1830, he married Pamela Ives, who had come with Mr. Nelson's family. The ceremony was performed at the "Mansion House," by Maj. T. S. Smith, and was the first wedding in the town-

\* By John L. Rockey.

† The original name, "St. Joseph," was first given to the mission established at the mouth of the river about 1700, and designated in the records of the Catholic Church as "The Mission of St. Joseph of Lake Michigan." St. Joseph was the patron saint of Canada, or New France.





PARK HOTEL, S. H. BROWN, PROPRIETOR, ST. JOSEPH, MICHIGAN.





ship. To this couple was born the following year a son,—Amos Carroll,—who was the first native white child. In his manhood he became well known as a steamboat captain. The elder Bartlett died in the township in 1851. On the 12th of July, 1829, Benjamin C. Hoyt became a member of the St. Joseph settlement, and continued a prominent citizen of the township until about 1873, when he moved to Mississippi. Maj. T. S. Smith\* and William Huff first settled in Royalton before 1828, but soon after became residents of St. Joseph. Mr. Smith was the first keeper of the lighthouse in New Buffalo, in 1840. He was a very portly man, and an inveterate joker. In 1853 he went to California. Huff became a merchant in St. Joseph, and died there in 1848. In a few years his family also removed to California.

About 1830, L. L. Johnson settled on the lake-shore, a mile north of the village. He subsequently removed to Wisconsin. John Wittenmeyer came in the same or the following year. He was one of the early merchants. When the Mexican war broke out he went into the army, and rose to the rank of colonel. He died soon after his return home. James F. Lord, a carpenter and joiner, came in 1831, and in 1847 removed to Chicago. In the same year Fowler Preston, also a carpenter and joiner, moved to St. Joseph. He was an active citizen, and died in 1842. Members of his family still live in the township.

In 1832 came Dr. Amos S. Ausden, a native of New York, who was prominently identified with the place until his death, about 1849. Thomas Fitzgerald, a native of Herkimer Co., N. Y., emigrated to Indiana, and was a member of the Legislature of that State in 1828. He removed to St. Joseph, with his family, June 22, 1832, having received the appointment of lighthouse-keeper. He was regent of the State University in 1837, bank commissioner in 1838, and upon the resignation of Gen. Cass as United States Senator he was appointed to fill the vacancy. After his retirement from that position he removed to Niles, and at his death, in 1855, was probate judge of the county. He was the first attorney in St. Joseph.

In 1832, Edward P. Deacon came from Erie, Pa., and associated himself with William McKaleb, a native of Maryland, in building the first saw-mill that year. He removed to Boston, where he died, and McKaleb returned to his native State.

Leverett Plumb emigrated to Chicago from Ohio, and bought a lot, but after living there a short time, and thinking Chicago never would be much of a place, moved to St. Joseph, with his family, in 1832. He, with Philip Andrew, built the engine for the mill of Deacon & McKaleb, erected in 1832, and in 1833 put the engine in the "Matilda Barney," and was the engineer the first season. He went to Detroit and put the machinery in the "Davy Crockett," and brought the vessel to this port in 1834. Mr. Plumb lived here until his death, in 1859. His daughter, Mrs. Reynolds, is living in the village of St. Joseph.

In 1833, Thomas Conger, a lawyer, settled in the town-

\* In an act to divide the Territory into townships, approved April 12, 1827, which contains a section organizing the township of St. Joseph, provision is made that the first town-meeting be held at the house of Timothy S. Smith, in said township.

ship, but about 1848 went to California. Jeremiah Wilson came the same year, and died in 1835.

In 1834 and 1835 a large number of persons settled at St. Joseph, among them Hiram Brown, from Rochester, N. Y. After living in the village until 1848 he moved to Chicago, but has resided at St. Joseph since 1862, and he



JOSEPH W. BREWER.

and Joseph W. Brewer are about the only citizens left that came at that early period. The latter has served the township as justice of the peace since 1853. Jabez N. Rogers lived in the township from 1834 till 1848, when he removed to Berlin, Wis. John F. Porter remained from 1835 to 1846, when he returned to New York. Rodney C. Paine was here a few years, about this period, when he became a resident of Niles; Taluan Wheeler, from 1835 till 1850, when he removed to Chicago; and Edwin Richardson, a teacher, also came in 1834. He removed to Berrien, and served as register of deeds.

R. R. Duncan became a resident of St. Joseph about 1834, and resided there until his death. For about thirty years he was actively engaged in business. George, Edward, and Benjamin Kingsley came from Utica, N. Y., about the same period, and took a prominent place among the pioneers. Benjamin Kingsley is still a citizen of St. Joseph. In 1834, Curtis Boughton came from Ohio, and settled on the Niles road, south of the village, and has continued his residence in the township since. His father, Gaius Boughton, came a few years after; and among other pioneers in the southern part of the township were the Abbe and Gard families. Members of the latter are yet among the active and prominent citizens of St. Joseph.

In addition to the foregoing, among the prominent pioneers prior to 1840 were the Olds, Stewart, Johnson, and Martin families, James Randles, Wm. Axtell, A. M. Brownell, M. Chauncey, Moody E. Merson, John Harris, Robert Hollywood, Wm. Patterson, Asaph Preston, S. R. Russell, Isaac Pangborn, Wm. C. Weaver, J. H. Wells, Solomon Smith, Samuel Hicks, R. P. Stinson, Samuel Sutherland, F. A. Hull, and Charles C. Sutton.

In 1864 the population was 1681; in 1870, 3000; in

1874, 3288. The valuation in 1860 was \$207,234; and in 1870, \$426,451.

#### ORGANIZATION AND TOWNSHIP OFFICERS.

The early bounds and divisions of St. Joseph township are fully noted in the general history of the county. By an act of June 9, 1832, St. Joseph was made to embrace the territory at present included in the townships of Water-vliet, Hagar, Benton, Sodus, Royalton, Lincoln, and the north four tiers of sections in Lake, Oronoko, and Berrien; and the first election was to be held at the house of Augustus B. Newell. On the 17th of March, 1835, Royalton was formed to include the territory south of township No. 4; and by the organization of Benton, March 11, 1837, St. Joseph was reduced to its present bounds,—about  $7\frac{1}{2}$  sections in township No. 4, range No. 19.

No records prior to the final subdivision are known to be in existence. From other sources it is learned that in 1834 William Huff was Supervisor, Amos B. Amsden Justice, and B. C. Hoyt Clerk; and in 1836 William Huff was Supervisor, Jabez N. Rogers Clerk, and John F. Porter, John P. Davis, and William McKaleb Justices.

At the election held at the "Mansion House," April 3, 1837, 57 votes were polled, and the following elected: Supervisor, William Huff; Clerk, Jabez N. Rogers; Justices of the Peace, Daniel Olds, J. N. Rogers, James Randles, J. G. James; Assessors, Talman Wheeler, Fowler Preston, B. C. Hoyt; Collector, William H. Stewart; Constables, B. H. Sweet, William H. Stewart; Poormasters, Daniel Olds, A. S. Amsden; Road Commissioners, L. L. Johnson, John Wittenmeyer, Israel Kellogg; Pathmasters, William H. Stewart, Isaac Moffatt; School Commissioners, William Huff, Thomas Fitzgerald, John Wittenmeyer; School Inspectors, B. C. Hoyt, James Randles, Thomas Fitzgerald.

Since 1837 the principal officers have been the following:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1838, John F. Porter; 1839, James F. Lord; 1840-42, Fowler Preston; 1843-44, B. C. Hoyt; 1845, L. S. Lillibridge; 1846, Andrew Murray; 1847, Thomas Fitzgerald; 1848, A. M. Church; 1849, Talman Wheeler; 1850, William M. Lister; 1851, A. M. Church; 1852, A. H. Morrison; 1853, L. F. Warner; 1854, A. H. Morrison; 1855, D. A. Urnston; 1856, Joseph Park; 1857, F. I. Parks; 1858, Theodore Pew; 1859-60, F. I. Parks; 1861, A. D. Brown; 1862, Warren Chapman; 1863-68, Daniel Chapman; 1869, Warren Chapman; 1870, Curtis Boughton; 1871-74, Warren Chapman; 1877, A. H. Morrison; 1876, Edward M. Edwards; 1877, Asa E. Perkins; 1878-79, Edward M. Edwards.

#### CLERKS.

1838, E. H. Kuhr; 1839-41, J. N. Rogers; 1842, B. F. Fish; 1843, Talman Wheeler; 1844, A. M. Church; 1845, M. D. Gragg; 1846, Charles F. Howe; 1847, A. P. Stinson; 1848, M. D. Gragg; 1849-53, A. P. Stinson; 1854, R. S. Duncan; 1855, E. L. Griffith; 1856, David M. Crane; 1857-58, L. J. Brown; 1859, John Burke; 1860-61, Charles J. Smith; 1862, William M. Smith; 1863-64, Robert VanVlear; 1865-66, J. J. Drake; 1867-68, J. W. Brewer; 1869-70, Hiram Brown; 1871, A. H. Scott; 1872-76, Joseph W. Brewer; 1877, Junius H. Hatch; 1878, William H. Maynard; 1879, Nelson C. Rice.

#### TREASURERS.

1839, Robert B. Martin; 1840-41, B. C. Hoyt; 1842, Charles C. Sutton; 1843, James F. Lord; 1844, George W. Kingsley; 1845, Maurice Fitzgerald; 1846, Harvey Gould; 1847-48, Maurice Fitzgerald; 1850-52, B. C. Hoyt; 1853-55, B. M. Springstein; 1856-57, S. H. Sutherland; 1858, Hiram C. Guernsey; 1859, Henry

L. Hatch; 1860, George W. Kingsley; 1861, E. C. Hoyt; 1862, D. W. Porter; 1863, L. G. Moulton; 1864, Joseph W. Brewer; 1865, Henry Smith; 1866, Horace K. Langley; 1867, Henry Zerambo; 1868, Edward Kingsley; 1869, F. C. Jordan; 1870, Charles H. Moulton; 1871, Henry M. Brown; 1872-74, Robert F. Stratton; 1875-76, John Wallace; 1877, Joseph J. Pearl; 1878-79, Edwin F. Platt.

The justices of the peace since 1838 have been as follows:

George C. Thompson, J. N. Rogers, L. S. Lillibridge, Cruger Walton, Jabez N. Rogers, Joseph Gard, Dexter Straight, Timothy S. Smith, A. P. Stinson, Horace W. Guernsey, Moses Chapman, Joseph W. Brewer,\* C. C. Sutton, John T. Smith, Charles E. Brown, Hiram Brown, John A. Donaldson, John M. Enos, Nathaniel Robbins, Daniel Chapman, A. H. Bean, Henry Mowston, Frederick A. Hull, Charles F. Howe, Amos S. Amsden, L. Plumb, John Wittenmeyer, Wm. M. Liston, B. C. Hoyt, Wm. Chapman, A. M. Brownell, L. F. Warner, Samuel Holland, Elijah Knapp, Edward Kingsley, Charles Molhagen, B. C. Lewis, W. Guernsey, John Thomas, Junius H. Hatch.

At the April meeting in 1848 the question of granting license for the sale of spirituous liquors in the township was submitted to the voters, 69 of whom declared in the affirmative and 56 opposed. A subsequent test of the minds of the people reaffirmed the decision.

#### EARLY ROADS AND ROAD DISTRICTS.

Territorial roads were laid out to the mouth of the river St. Joseph as early as 1830, an account of which will be found in the general history.

The first record in reference to roads is the division of the townships into road districts, and bears date March 27, 1838.

By John Wittenmeyer and Lemuel L. Johnson, commissioners of highways, it was ordered, "That all that part of the township lying south of the St. Joseph River, and that part north of St. Joseph River and south of Paw Paw River, be District 1; all the remaining part of the township be District 2."

The first recorded road was laid out three rods wide, commencing at the quarter-section corner on the section line between sections 27 and 34, in township 4 south, of range 18 west, following said section line westerly one and a half miles, thence westerly, terminating at the road opened by Eleazer Morton, running from or near said Morton's house to section 33, in town 4 south, range 18 west.

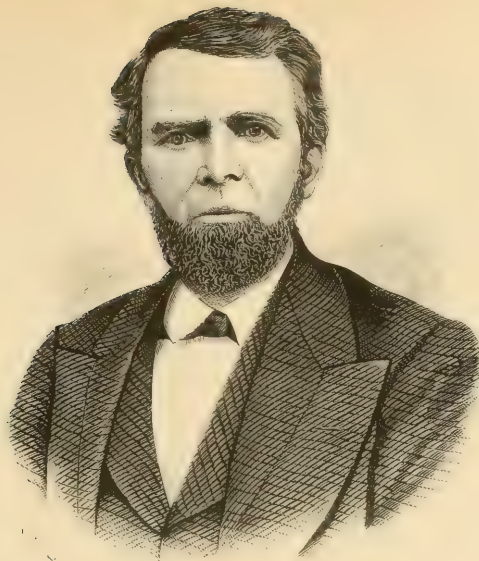
The New Buffalo road was surveyed and established June 17, 1839, and opened by an order by the commissioner, Nov. 1, 1842.

A road was laid out from Royalton to St. Joseph on the north side of St. Joseph River: commencing on the south line of section 36, town 4 south, range 19 west, at a stake four chains west of the quarter-post; thence running north-easterly, intersecting the town line near Phelps, following the town line some distance, touching the quarter-post on the east line, section 24, and intersecting the Territorial road  $2\frac{2}{100}$  chains south of section corner, being over three miles in length.

A road was surveyed and established Nov. 14, 1839, commencing on the Territorial road on the line running north and south, through the centre of section 15, in town

\* Continuously since 1853.





*A H Morrison*

HON. ALEXANDER HAMILTON MORRISON, of St. Joseph, Mich., was born at Quebec, Canada, Feb. 22, 1822. He is of Scotch and American parentage. His mother was a descendant of Col. John Jessup, who, for his fidelity to Charles I., was rewarded by Charles II. with a large tract of land on the Hudson River. This tract, known as Jessup's tract, became historic, through its confiscation by the State of New York after the Revolutionary war. His father, Rhoderick Morrison, was a merchant and trader, and a member of the old Northwestern Fur Company. He was one of the few partners who successfully resisted the attacks upon that company made by Lord Selkirk, in the interests of the Hudson Bay Company. At the age of sixteen, Alexander Hamilton removed to Chicago to seek his fortune. That city then contained less than four thousand inhabitants. He was engaged there three years with David Ballantine, a celebrated contractor on the Illinois and Michigan Canal. At the age of nineteen he went into active business on his own account as a merchant and contractor on public works in Illinois and Iowa.

In 1850 he moved to St. Joseph, Mich., where he has since resided, engaged as a merchant, lumber-manufacturer, and railroad-builder. In connection with James L. Joy he constructed the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, two hundred and fifty miles in length, and managed it for six years. Mr. Morrison and C. G. Wicker, of Chicago, were also joint owners and operators of the Dakota Southern Railroad, and of the Sioux City and Pembina, a branch of the Dakota Southern. In politics he was formerly a Whig, but now votes and works with the Republican party. In 1851 he was chairman of the board of supervisors of Berrien County. In 1852 he was a candidate for presidential elector on the Scott ticket. In 1856 he was elected to the State Senate. In 1860 he was elected to and served in the House of Representatives, and for three sessions was chairman of the committee on State affairs. In 1861, President Lincoln

appointed him commissary of subsistence in the regular army, but he declined the appointment. In 1862 he became collector of internal revenue for the second district of Michigan. From 1866 to 1869 he was assessor of the same district, and for six years a member of the Republican State committee; was on the staff of Governors Bingham and Wisner from 1854 to 1861; he has been connected for twenty-five years with the Masons and Odd-Fellows; has been Master of Occidental Lodge at St. Joseph, and was the first Noble Grand of Burnett Lodge, Independent Order of Odd-Fellows. In religion he is a liberal.

In 1878, Mr. Morrison erected in St. Joseph the most extensive wooden-ware manufacturing establishment in the Northwest,—indeed, as much so as any establishment of its kind East or West,—to which he added, in 1879, several more buildings for the manufacture of pails and other articles directly from pulp made of straw and hay. (A cut of the establishment above named, of which he is the sole owner, appears on another page of this work, together with his residence.) Mr. Morrison attends personally to the financial part of his business, aided by his only son, Don Morrison, a lad of eighteen years, who is being schooled by his father how to handle successfully large numbers of men without friction, and to good advantage.

Jan. 17, 1848, Mr. Morrison married Julia A. Reynolds. They have four children living. The vast fruit products of the St. Joseph region are sent from docks owned by Morrison & Joy, in their transportation to Chicago and other lake ports.

During a business career of over thirty years, Mr. Morrison, with three exceptions, was unknown to the courts as suitor, jurymen, or witness. He has traveled through the West, South, and East; and in his varied positions of trust and business has met and entertained, at his residence in St. Joseph, many of the distinguished men of the United States.



4 south, range 18 west, thence along Paw Paw River to another road known as the Coldwater road, established Nov. 14, 1839.

Jan. 23, 1840, a road was established from Millburg south and east to the town line. Jan. 21, 1840, a road was established from Territorial road to the town line, four miles and twelve chains in length. April 6, 1840, it was voted to raise money to reimburse the corporation of St. Joseph for money expended on the causeway across the marsh east of the St. Joseph River, opposite St. Joseph village; and at an adjourned meeting in May, it was voted to raise \$1000 to finish the east end of causeway and reimburse the corporation of St. Joseph.

March 22, 1841, the township was redistricted, forming eight districts.

June 12, 1841, the commissioners declared the following streets public highways: Wayne, from the bridge to Ship Street; Ship, Main, and State Streets, and all that part of Water Street commencing at the steam-mill and running to the Michigan Hotel.

Aug. 23, 1841, application was made to the commissioner to discontinue that part of the old Niles road from the village of St. Joseph through the westerly part of the seminary lands to the Abbe place. Talman Wheeler and eleven other disinterested persons were summoned, and a report was made. After due consideration the petition was granted September 27th. By an act approved April 1, 1840, Morgan Enos and Jacob Allen were appointed commissioners to lay out and establish a State road from La Grange to St. Joseph. Sept. 27, 1841, the commissioners of St. Joseph were directed to record the survey of that part which ran through St. Joseph township.

#### FRUIT CULTURE.

The fruit interests of Southwestern Michigan have raised St. Joseph to a prominent position as one of the principal points in the region which has been termed the "Great Fruit Belt of Michigan." Nearly the entire township, where the soil is tillable, is devoted to fruit culture, more than 2000 acres being devoted to this purpose, and hundreds of citizens find occupation in shipping the various fruits to market. Until within a few years this country was pre-eminently adapted to the cultivation of the peach, which here attained great perfection and almost invariably yielded bountifully. From a "Catalogue of Fruit-Growers," prepared by L. J. Merchant in 1873, it appears that the seedling peach was grown in St. Joseph as early as 1829. As settlers came in, nearly all of them planted a few seedling peaches, and in 1839 some grown in the garden of B. C. Hoyt were shipped to Chicago. About the same time Capt. Curtis Boughton bought peaches by the barrel and in dry-goods boxes, and carried them to Chicago. In 1842, B. C. Hoyt procured buds of improved varieties from Long Island to start a nursery; and in 1844, he sent a few baskets of Crawfords to Chicago, which the boys peddled out at ten cents each. From that time on, improved varieties have been cultivated. One of the first large orchards of budded peaches—130 trees—was set out in 1849 by Capt. Curtis Boughton. Since that time orchards containing as many as 5000 trees have been planted, and the pro-

duct in the township for 1868 was 507,134 packages of peaches alone, and 28,283 bushels of berries. The influence of Lake Michigan, and the diversity of soil in the township, also enables fruit-growers to cultivate successfully pears, plums, quinces, apples, cherries, grapes, and the various kinds of berries; and since the failure of peaches, owing to the appearance of the disease called the "yellows," small-fruit culture has become the prominent industry; and although not as profitable as peach-growing, is yet a source of considerable revenue.

Among the fruit-growers in St. Joseph in 1873, who cultivated more than six acres, were the following:

Thomas Archer, Emile Birkholm, A. B. Chamberlain, L. Collins, F. Ewald, Joseph Gard, Gordon Family, Garrett Garretson, B. C. Hoyt, David Judson, J. H. Langley, William C. Lombard, A. N. Napier, O. Olson, H. T. Plumb, E. Reed, C. H. Sherwood, Robert Spink, S. C. Wilson, J. A. Wischer, John Wallace, P. P. Allen, L. C. Crittenden, E. V. Green, J. Jakeway, J. N. McMichael, William J. Nott, W. C. Perry, Frank Pullen, S. Southworth, R. Williams, R. J. Sawyer, M. Plumb, Curtis Boughton, Thomas H. Botham, D. Comings, E. W. Collins, P. Finnegan, John F. Gard, H. W. Gastin, S. F. Heath, D. S. Hulett, S. G. Langley, A. C. Lightfoot, Daniel Murphy, N. W. Napier, R. D. Parker, B. F. Pixley, George W. Selden, H. C. Smith, John Whittlesey, A. O. Winchester, Benjamin Williams, J. Aylsworth, G. W. Church, Joshua Ellis, Charles Hull, H. R. Labaugh, Z. D. Nickerson, O. A. Osborne, Robert Pullen, A. D. Rowley, J. R. Webb, E. Lombard, W. H. Wakelee, A. Adamson.

#### ST. JOSEPH VILLAGE.

This thriving village is finely situated mainly south of the St. Joseph River, on the peninsula formed by that stream and Lake Michigan. The land forms an elevated plateau, giving the place a situation whose beauty and healthfulness are scarcely surpassed in the State. West of the village is the broad expanse of Lake Michigan, white with the sails of an immense commerce, and healthful with its invigorating breezes. Sweeping round from the south-east is the St. Joseph River, on whose waters are borne the products of the interior of the county to the mouth of the stream, which constitutes a safe and convenient harbor, where lie at rest vessels from the lake; and south are the fertile lands of the township, which have been transformed into a vast and productive fruit-garden. The village is regularly laid out, with wide and well-shaded streets. It contains many fine residences and public buildings, and has a population of some three thousand inhabitants.

Until 1829 this locality was an unbroken forest of heavy timber, except about half an acre on the farthestmost point of the bluff, which has been used as a burial-ground by the Indians. Various articles of Indian occupancy, as kettles, hatchets, and trinkets, have been found from time to time as the banks broke away, and when the ground was leveled for the park which skirts the brow of the hill. This clearing was made by the followers of Robert de La Salle in 1679, and the winter of 1680-81. After the destruction of the old French fort that stood upon it, the Indians occupied the ground for a general camp when engaged in fishing and hunting in this part of the county.\* After the treaty at the Carey Mission, Sept. 28, 1828, attention was directed to this place as an eligible site for a future

\* See general chapters.



city, and discerning its importance, Calvin Britain, a former teacher at the mission, made claim to some of the lands near the mouth of the river in the following year. He was joined by Augustus B. Newell, and together they pre-empted the most desirable part of section 23 in 1829. Newell built a log cabin at the foot of the hill east of the clearing, which was the first house in St. Joseph occupied by actual settlers. Britain was a single man and had his home at Newell's. In 1830 the survey of this part of the county was finished, and on the 30th of September of that year Britain and Newell purchased the lands they had already secured by pre-emption.

Some time after this, in 1831, Calvin Britain laid out a village on the south bank of the St. Joseph River, which he called Newberryport, in honor of Oliver Newberry, of Detroit.\* This name the place bore until it was changed by legislative enactment to its present title, St. Joseph. Considering the general condition of the settlements in the western part of the county, St. Joseph grew rapidly, having at this time more than 25 houses. It had been designated the county-seat when Berrien County was organized in 1831, and remained the seat of justice until 1837. Its future was so promising that application was made to the Legislative Council in the early part of 1834 for corporate privileges. The act was approved March 7, 1834, and from this period dates the municipal history of St. Joseph. The corporation comprised all of section 23, in range 19, and the authorities were to be known by the title of "The President, Trustees, and Freemen of the village of St. Joseph." In 1857 the limits of the village were extended to embrace all of section 24 lying south and west of the river St. Joseph, and at present about one square mile of territory is comprised within the bounds of the corporation.

By the provisions of the incorporating act, the township Board of Officers—William Huff, Supervisor; Amos S. Amsden, Justice; and B. C. Hoyt, Clerk—presided at the first village election, held at the school-house, on the first Monday in May, 1834, and declared the following persons the choice of the freemen for the respective offices: President, Thomas Fitzgerald; Clerk, B. C. Hoyt (appointed); Treasurer, E. P. Deacon; Trustees, B. C. Hoyt, James F. Lord, William McKaleb, Calvin Britain, John Wittenmeyer; Marshal, Fowler Preston. The sum of \$400 was levied upon the taxable property of the village to defray the expenses of the corporation the first year. In 1835 the levy was increased to \$1000. As this was a heavy tax, and money was scarce, an ordinance was passed, Jan. 23, 1836, which authorized the marshal "to take promissory notes from the residents of the village for the unpaid part of the tax, which (notes) may be paid by digging and burning stumps in the streets at 25 cents per stump." There is no record to show that the inhabitants generally complied with this proposition to pay their taxes; but it is remembered that some of the trustees claimed that it was a great measure of relief, and would free the streets of many unsightly obstructions.

Considerable attention was early paid by the Council to the improvement of the streets of the village, the establishment of ferries on the river, and the building of a bridge across the same. In February, 1836, a meeting of the citizens was held, and a resolution passed that the corporation loan \$10,000 to build a bridge across the St. Joseph River, on the old ferry road, and another near the mouth of the Paw Paw; both to be free from toll. The same year, Thomas Fitzgerald, Benjamin C. Hoyt, and Fowler Preston were appointed a committee to establish a ferry on the St. Joseph, so that the increasing travel might be accommodated.

In March, 1837, the Council established rates of ferriage as follows:

For a wagon or carriage and over two oxen or horses.....	\$0.62½
For a wagon or carriage, one or two oxen or horses.....	.37½
For a man and horse.....	.25
For a single horse, ox, or cow.....	.12½
For a person on foot, etc.....	.12½

Below is given a list of persons liable to pay State tax in the township of St. Joseph for the year 1837, dated Jan. 2, 1837:† James Dalton, John H. Harris, Eleazer Morton, John P. Davis, William McKaleb, Axtell & Chauncey, James H. Enos, tavern-keepers; Matthew Cavanagh & Co., William Huff, Dudley & Holloway, John F. Porter, John Wittenmeyer, A. S. Amsden, Stewart & Sawyer, Sullivan & Fish, Samuel Pottle, merchants; John F. Porter & Co., John Griffith & Co., forwarding and commission merchants; Daniel Olds & Co., Parsons, Lathrop & Butler, John Wittenmeyer, grocers.

In 1839 the bridge across the St. Joseph River was completed, but there was an indebtedness of \$4000 on it. It was a toll-bridge. The builders, Messrs. Stewart, Sawyer & Co., were to have the use of the bridge for a term of fourteen years, and to charge the tolls before given, provided that the corporation might at any time assume the bridge by paying a fair proportion of its cost. The village has long enjoyed free bridges, and its streets compare favorably with those of other villages in this part of the State.

The Council also adopted precautionary measures against fires, and, in 1835, enacted ordinances for the protection of property against fire. Three years later, a reservoir twelve feet square was constructed on the corner of Ship and State Streets, and buckets and ladders were provided. On the 21st of March, 1867, the Legislature empowered the village by a special act to borrow money, in sums not exceeding \$10,000, and to issue the bonds of the corporation to pay the same, to purchase a fire-engine and equipments, to build an engine-house, and to construct reservoirs.

The purposes of this act were not immediately realized, but, in April, 1870, the Common Council accepted Hose Company No. 1, which had been formed with 19 members, and Neptune Fire Company, No. 2, which numbered 35 members. Of the latter company, D. W. Porter was the foreman, and W. A. Preston the treasurer. In 1876 both companies were disbanded. In 1877 the occurrence of two destructive fires caused the Council to provide for better fire-apparatus, and the formation of new companies. St. Joseph Fire Company, No. 1, was approved by the Council

\* Another account says the place was called Newburyport, from the town of that name in Massachusetts.

† At the time the list was made out St. Joseph embraced Benton and Bainbridge. In the spring of that year Benton and Bainbridge were set off as separate townships.



DR LYMAN COLLINS.



RESIDENCE OF DR. LYMAN COLLINS, ST. JOSEPH, BERRIEN CO, MICH.





July 28, 1877. It had originally 52 members, and at present has about 60. T. T. Ransom, Chief Engineer; C. C. Sweet, First Assistant; E. B. Perkins, Second Assistant; G. W. Platt, Captain of the Hose Company.

Since 1877 the corporation has owned a No. 3 Silsby steam fire-engine, a hose-cart with 1000 feet of rubber and 300 feet of leather hose. Four reservoirs, holding 20,000 gallons each, have lately been constructed at convenient points in the village, and the entire outlay for protection against fire since 1877 has been nearly \$4000. The apparatus is housed in a small building near the City Hall. The latter was donated to the village authorities by the school board, in July, 1871, for the above purpose, and was formerly the school-house in the upper part of the village. It has been fitted up to contain the necessary village offices, and affords a large room for general meetings.

In 1878 the receipts of the village from liquor licenses were \$1646.09; and from all other sources \$1158.01. The total disbursements were \$2777.67. At present the finances of the village are in a healthy condition, the entire debt being less than \$100.

The principal officers in 1879 were the following: President, A. K. Webster; Recorder, Hiram W. Ray; Treasurer, Edward D. Schuader; Trustees, Daniel Chapman, Abel W. Wells, Montgomery Shepard, James Forbes, Henry Grimm.

From 1834 to 1879 the officers were as follows:

#### PRESIDENTS.

1834, Thomas Fitzgerald; 1835, Calvin Britain; 1836, Thomas Conger; 1837-41, John F. Porter; 1842, Thomas Fitzgerald; 1843-44, Calvin Britain; 1845, Talman Wheeler; 1846-47, Thomas Fitzgerald; 1848-49, Talman Wheeler; 1850, William M. Liston; 1851-53, B. C. Hoyt; 1854-55, J. W. Brewer; 1856-57, B. C. Hoyt; 1858, F. I. Parks; 1859, B. C. Hoyt; 1860-61, Oliver Stevens; 1862, B. M. Springstein; 1863, Oliver Stevens; 1864-65, Warren Chapman; 1866, Edward Kingsley; 1867, O. W. Oviatt; 1868, R. B. Duncan; 1869, J. H. Donaldson; 1870, O. W. Oviatt; 1871, J. J. Pearl; 1872, A. E. Perkins; 1873, Edward Pulver; 1874, A. E. Perkins; 1875, A. H. Morrison; 1876, A. E. Perkins; 1877, A. K. Webster; 1878, George E. Smith; 1879, A. K. Webster.

#### RECORDERS.

1834, B. C. Hoyt; 1835, Thomas Conger; 1836, James Randles; 1837-41, Charles A. Morton; 1842-43, J. N. Rogers; 1844, W. H. Sullivan; 1845, W. C. Hammell; 1846-47, Dexter Straight; 1848-52, A. P. Stinson; 1853, Damon A. Winslow; 1854, J. H. Sutherland; 1855-58, H. W. Guernsey; 1859-62, J. W. Brewer; 1863, A. P. Stinson; 1864-69, J. W. Brewer; 1870, Hiram Brown; 1871-75, J. W. Brewer; 1876-78, H. C. Rockwell; 1879, Hiram W. Ray.

#### MARSHALS.

1834, Fowler Preston; 1835, J. Wittenmeyer; 1836, A. M. Brownell; 1837, William M. Stewart; 1838, Bill Jones; 1839-43, Fowler Preston; 1844, J. Fitzgerald; 1845, Robert Wilson; 1846, W. Chapman; 1847, William Bradford; 1848-53, D. O. Ramsay; 1854-55, William Bradford; 1856-57, E. Kingsley; 1858, W. J. Boice; 1859, E. Kingsley; 1860, A. J. Barlight; 1861, D. Nicholson; 1862-64, Conrad Noate; 1865-66, T. H. Bodham; 1867, Conrad Noate; 1868-70, N. H. Torry; 1871, S. Hannum; 1872, L. M. Alas; 1873, Daniel Loftus; 1874, J. J. Pearl; 1875, C. Rigney; 1876, J. J. Pearl; 1877, C. Rigney; 1878, John Slattery; 1879, Samuel Hannum.

#### GENERAL COMMERCE.

The commerce of St. Joseph has been an important element in promoting its early growth, and received the pro-

tection of the government soon after the village was founded. In the latter part of 1831 a lighthouse was commenced opposite where the mouth of the river then was, and in front of the present lighthouse. A. P. Stinson was one of the early keepers of the light. The present lighthouse, built after the model so common on the great lakes,—a combined tower and keeper's house,—was erected in 1859. The light is elevated about ninety feet above the surface of the lake, and can be seen about ten miles away. For many years John M. Enos was the keeper of this lighthouse, and since his death it has been in charge of his widow.

The mouth of the river was formerly narrow, and more or less obstructed with sand. It was very difficult to enter the harbor, if the wind blew from the north or west, and many lives were lost in such attempts. On account of the shoal water the heavier vessels were obliged to anchor outside, where they were unloaded by means of lighters. In 1836 the government commenced the improvement of the harbor. The workmen located themselves on the sand-banks on the north side of the present harbor, and began building the north pier. This had the effect of directing attention to that locality as the possible site of a village, and as the speculative spirit was then rife, Messrs. Gurdon S. Hubbard & Co., capitalists from the East, secured the tract of land lying between the Paw Paw River and the lake, which they laid out into lots, calling the place North St. Joseph. At that time some of the sand-hills were sixty feet high, and from \$15,000 to \$18,000 was expended in reducing them to a grade, building docks, and making other improvements. The plat contemplated a place of large proportions; and for the accommodation of the manufacturing interests of the embryo city a canal was projected from the Paw Paw to the lake, which was to be lined with factories. A warehouse and a few other buildings were erected on the north side; but the location was unfavorable for a good business point, and it soon reverted to its original condition. On the south side real estate was held at fabulous prices by a few owners, whose avaricious policy prevented the village from making a substantial growth at a most favorable period. A large amount of capital which sought investment at St. Joseph was thus diverted to other points, and not until many years later did a more liberal policy prevail.

Since 1836 the harbor has been very much improved by extending the piers several hundred feet into the lake and dredging the bed of the river. A light has been placed on the farthest point of the southern pier, and as there is about thirteen feet of water over the bar, the harbor is one of the best on the eastern shore of the lake.

About 1836 the river trade began to assume importance. At first, keel-boats and scows were employed to carry the exports from Niles, Berrien, and other points to the mouth of the river, but in 1832 the first attempt was made to navigate the St. Joseph by steam. A small craft, named, after the village, the "Newburyport," commanded by Capt. John F. Wight, proceeded up the river as far as Berrien, where she ran aground and was brought back to the village in a damaged condition. The following year E. P. Deacon and William McKaleb built a steamboat at St. Joseph, which they called the "Matilda Barney." Joseph Fish-

baugh, of Pittsburgh, was the carpenter, Philip B. Andrews, now of Chickaming, built the engine, and Leverett Plumb put it in and served as engineer the first season. Daniel T. Wilson was the captain of the boat. It plied about ten years between St. Joseph and Niles, and occasionally went to South Bend. It soon had a competitor for the river trade in the "Davy Crockett," which was brought to this port in 1834 by John Griffith & Co. In the spring of 1835, Benjamin Putnam took command of the "Davy Crockett," and in August of that year the boat ran upon a rock several miles above Berrien Springs, damaging it so badly that it had to be dismantled. The locality is yet known as "Crockett's Defeat." A little later the "Patronage" was built by Hull & Co., who used the machinery of the old "Davy Crockett." Capt. Hull was in command, and the boat ran a few seasons. About 1838 the "Pocahontas" was built by James Randall for Wheeler & Porter. It was an excellent boat, with an 80 horse-power engine, but could not be profitably used on account of its large size, and was withdrawn after several seasons. In 1843 the "Indiana" was launched at Constantine, and navigated the waters of the St. Joseph until 1848, when she was taken to Chicago as a tug-boat. Joseph W. Brewer was in command of this boat, which was one of the few that were able to make the trip from St. Joseph to Niles and return in a day. At the same time the "Algoma," Edward Smith commander, plied between Mishawaka and St. Joseph. The "Niles" was placed on the river about 1845, by Beeson & Co., of Niles, and was employed between that city and St. Joseph until about 1853.

From 1835 till 1848 the river trade was so large that not only the foregoing boats were employed, but also a number of keel-boats and small steamers. Among the latter were the "Mishawaka," the "John F. Porter," and the "Michigan."

In 1834 the first cargo of wheat was shipped from the port by Hiram Brown, of the firm of John Griffith & Co. In 1842 more wheat was shipped from St. Joseph than from Chicago, and the village was the second shipping port in the State, Detroit being the first. The following year, however, Chicago was the greater grain market, the shipments from that port being 688,907 bushels, while those of St. Joseph were only 418,114. After the railroad was built through the eastern part of the county, but little wheat was shipped from the port; and as the merchants availed themselves of the more speedy transportation, the entire shipping business on the St. Joseph and Paw Paw Rivers declined to so small an amount that only a few small boats were retained.

After 1850 the lumber trade became quite important, and many million feet were shipped from St. Joseph annually. The country began to settle up about this period, and since the timber supply has been exhausted, the principal exports have been farm products, mechanical work, and fruit, the latter constituting the chief article. The river trade is carried on by a small steamer, which plies between St. Joseph and Berrien Springs, and several fine steamers and propellers sail daily between St. Joseph and Chicago. The first boat between these ports, the "Pioneer," went to pieces on the bar at St. Joseph in July, 1834.

Some years later Capt. Ward placed the "Huron" on the lake to make connection with a line of stages from the East, whereby the trip from Detroit to Chicago was made in thirty-six hours. Since that time there have been many vessels of good capacity and fine accommodations, and but few casualties have occurred which involved loss of life. The destruction of the "Hippocampus," in the fall of 1868, was one of the most disastrous. It was occasioned by her being overloaded (the cargo being composed of some 8000 baskets of peaches), and by leakage round her propeller shaft, which filled her after compartment, and caused her to go down, stern foremost.

At present the "Corona," one of the fine steamers belonging to the Goodrich Transportation Company, makes six trips per week between Chicago and St. Joseph, and other boats from the first-named place touch at St. Joseph daily.

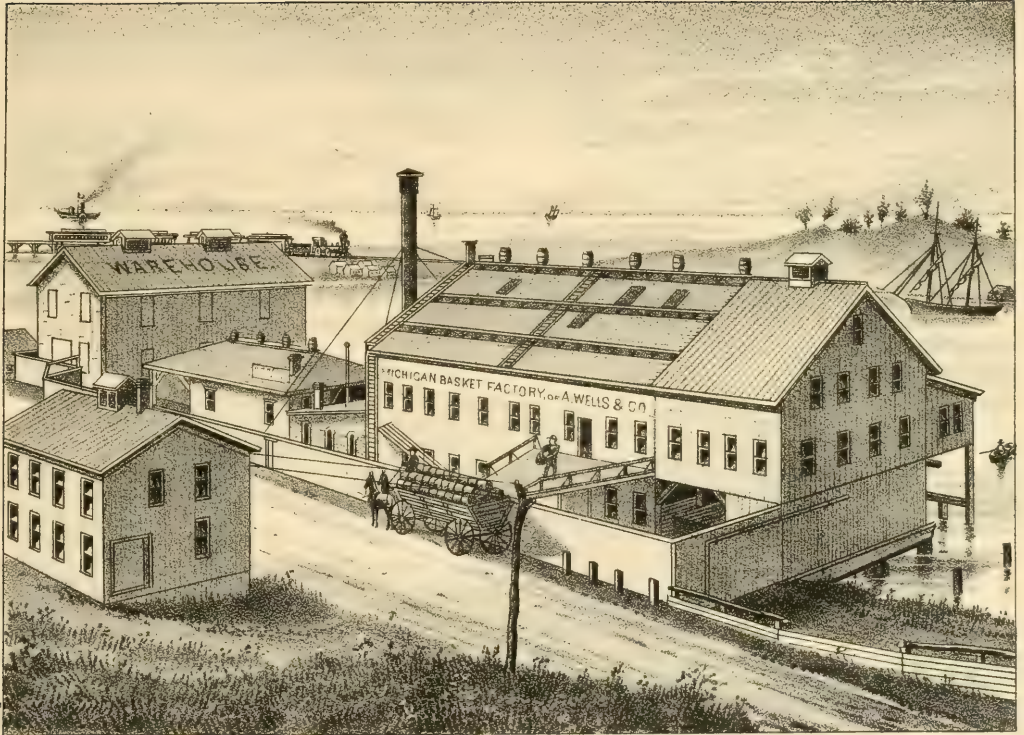
In 1868, before Benton Harbor became a port, the number of vessels which entered the harbor of St. Joseph was 892, and their tonnage 138,093; in 1878 the number of vessels was only 287, but the tonnage amounted to 101,534. For many years R. B. Duncan was the collector of the port, but in 1860 the custom-house was discontinued. Upon its re-establishment, in 1862, Hiram Brown was appointed collector, and still fills that position. In 1878 a United States life-saving station was located at St. Joseph and provided with the most approved apparatus. A full crew is maintained, in command of Captain Joseph A. Napier.

Amos B. Hinckley erected the first warehouse on the harbor at St. Joseph, in 1830, near where was afterwards the well-known "Checkered Warehouse." It was a small building, having only one room, and was built on a log foundation, laid up "cob-house" fashion. The "Yellow Warehouse" was also a prominent business place, and for many years a conspicuous landmark. There are at present at St. Joseph several thousand feet of dockage, and warehouse capacity sufficient for the business of the place.

The forwarding and commission firm of John Griffith & Co., which began business at St. Joseph in July, 1834, was one of the first in the place, and continued a number of years. Hiram Brown was the resident member of the firm. In a year or two John F. Porter & Co. became a contemporary forwarding firm, and at a little later period came Britain, Chester & Co., in the yellow warehouse. Subsequently Holt, Palmer & Co., whose business was managed by Otis Clapp, were forwarders at this place. R. C. Paine, Mathias Teatzel, and Wheeler & Porter were also prominent commission merchants and general forwarders. The latter firm was succeeded in 1850 by A. H. Morrison, who is still interested in this branch of business. H. M. Williams is also in the forwarding business.

#### GENERAL BUSINESS INTERESTS.

As early as 1785, William Burnett established a trading-post on the St. Joseph, in the upper part of the village, for traffic with the Indians. This was continued by himself, or son James, until 1829; and it is said that they amassed fortunes. In 1800 their exports of furs and peltries amounted to more than \$100,000. In July, 1829, Benjamin C. Hoyt came to St. Joseph, and soon after established a trade which extended through forty years. Other early



A.W. WELLS.  
H.C. WARD,

THE MICHIGAN BASKET FACTORY OF A.W. WELLS & CO.  
ST. JOSEPH, MICH.

W.W. COOPER  
JOHN HIGMAN, JR.

MANUFACTURERS OF BASKETS & FRUIT PACKAGES OF ALL KINDS.





merchants were William Huff, Dudley & Holloway, John F. Porter, John Wittenmeyer, Amos S. Amsden, Stewart & Sanger, Samuel Potter, Daniel Olds, Lathrop & Butler, Sullivan & Fish, Daniel T. Wilson, R. B. Duncan, and Samuel R. Russell. Among the principal merchants since 1840 have been the following: James E. Stevens, J. E. & J. B. Sutherland, B. F. King, John Martin, F. A. Potter, C. C. Sweet, W. B. O. Sweet, Platt & Brother, Charles Stewart, J. Jacobson, James Forbes, T. T. Ransom, Z. Rice & Son, George E. Smith, John Yaw, H. M. Zekind, E. C. Palmer, E. D. Crane, John Leach, and M. & A. Shepard. Some of these are yet in trade, and the general mercantile houses of the village are large and well stocked. In the different branches of trade there are about fifty stores and shops.

Augustus B. Newell had the first public house in the place, in a log building at the foot of the hill. In 1831 he erected the "Mansion House," near the site of the present "St. Charles Hotel," and kept it several years. The "Michigan House" was the second hotel. It stood at the foot of the hill, on the west side of State Street, and was opened in 1834. The landlords in 1837 were Wm. McKaleb, Axtell & Chauncy, and James Dalton, the latter of whom was on the north side. In 1840 the present "Perkins House" was built and opened by William Huff. It is the oldest public house in the village. About 1867, B. C. Hoyt erected a very fine three-story brick hotel on the bluff near the harbor, which was known by his name until recently, when it received its present title,—the "Lake View House." In its appointments it is a fine house. On the opposite side of the street Charles Kreiger erected the fine four-story brick hotel—the "St. Charles"—a year after the Hoyt House. It was kept by him a few years, but is at present unoccupied. The "Park Hotel" was erected as a private residence by James E. Stevens, and was adapted to hotel purposes a few years ago by the present proprietor, Samuel Brown. Besides the foregoing, travelers are also well entertained at the "National Hotel" and the "Guernsey House," and at other small hostleries.

A branch of the "Farmers and Mechanics' Bank of Michigan" was established at St. Joseph about 1835, in charge of Thomas Fitzgerald. He was succeeded by R. C. Paine, and the bank was in the present residence of Hon. A. H. Morrison. At a little later date a banking company was formed and a "wild-cat" bank established in a building which stood on the site of the present National Bank. It was called the "Commercial Bank of Michigan," and Talman Wheeler was the president. Its existence was of short duration. In 1856, B. C. Hoyt began a banking business, which was afterwards shared with E. C. Hoyt. A fine office was occupied and the bank was successfully conducted for ten or twelve years.

The First National Bank of St. Joseph was established in September, 1871, with a capital stock of \$50,000 and the following directors: W. E. Higman, F. Jordan, S. F. Heath, C. H. Sherwood, E. Nickerson, W. H. Tryon, and C. Stewart. W. E. Higman was the first president and is still serving in that capacity. F. Jordan was the first cashier, and the present ones are James Baley and O. O. Jordan. The bank does a flourishing business. The fol-

lowing are the present directors: H. C. Higman, E. Nickerson, J. Baley, John Higman, Jr., and W. E. Higman.

In 1831 the first post-office was established, with Calvin Britain postmaster. The present incumbent is B. F. King. Among others who have discharged the duties of postmaster are Reuben Scott, Wm. H. Sullivan, Thomas Fitzgerald, C. C. Sutton, B. C. Hoyt, Horace W. Guernsey, James N. Witherell, Henry M. Gustin, Theodore L. Reynolds, and Charles Stewart. St. Joseph was designated and made a postal money-order office in 1866. The business of the office is large, and four daily mails are received.

Damon A. Winslow states that the *St. Joseph Herald*, A. E. Draper editor and publisher, was the first paper published in the village, and that its existence ceased after a few numbers had been issued in 1836. The subsequent history of the press is given in a general chapter. At present the papers are the *Traveler and Herald*, *Republican* (both weekly), and the *Lake Shore Daily News*.

In 1832, Thomas Fitzgerald came to St. Joseph as the pioneer attorney, and soon after James Randles, Jabez N. Rogers, and Cruger Walton resided in the place. Fitzgerald moved to Niles. Thomas Conger, E. E. Cady, C. R. Brown, C. W. Ormsbee, James H. Canfield, J. E. Chamberlain, and others were formerly attorneys in the village; and the present resident members of the bar are Damon A. Winslow, Geo. S. Clapp, C. B. Potter, A. H. Potter, W. R. Lyon, N. A. Hamilton, T. J. De Puy, Law C. Fyfe, and J. C. Watson.

In 1833, Dr. Amos S. Amsden located at St. Joseph, and was probably the first physician in the place. He remained until his death, about 1849. Among other physicians of the regular school were Drs. Lillibridge, Johnson, Murray, Camp, Wheeler, and Corydon Parker. At present there are in practice Drs. R. D. Parker, David B. Crane, Lyman Collins, A. K. Webster, R. F. Stratton, and A. H. Scott.

Dr. E. M. Pettit was the first homœopathic practitioner, and still continues. Dr. J. L. McLin, of that school, is also in practice. Drs. R. Pengelly and Louis Ludwig formerly resided here. Dr. Samuel W. Holland, an eclectic physician, has been at St. Joseph since 1852.

Among the dentists of St. Joseph have been Drs. Wil-son, Bidwell, Stump, and Shepard. The present dentists are Drs. H. C. Rockwell, H. H. Ray, and H. W. Ray.

#### MANUFACTURING INTERESTS.

Most of the manufactories of St. Joseph are of recent origin, and until a few years ago only the common industries were carried on. Lately, considerable attention has been directed to manufacturing, and proper encouragement has been given by local improvement societies and the village authorities, giving the place a promising future in this respect.

The first machinery was operated in a saw-mill which was put up in 1832 by Edward P. Deacon and William McKaleb, between Main Street and the Bayou Bridge. The engine was built and set up by Philip B. Andrews (now of Chickaming) and Leverett Plumb.

Five or six years afterwards a man named Scott had a small foundry in the village, and later a tannery was car-

ried on by — Swartwout, and a brewery by Charles Krieger.

At a more recent period the village has had a boiler-factory and the shops of the Michigan and Lake Shore Railroad Company. The latter have been moved to Muskegon. The only iron-working establishment is the machine-shop of Anderson & Colman, on Water Street, which was put in operation in the fall of 1878. A two-story building 24 by 60 feet is occupied, and 7 men are employed.

*The St. Joseph Merchant-Mills*, Lee & Wells proprietors, are located on the opposite side of the street, having their rear on the river. They were built about 1858, by John Swartwout, and enlarged by John P. Edwards. A frame building 60 by 75 feet is occupied, and there are five runs of stones driven by an 80 horse-power engine. The capacity of the mill is 100 barrels per day, and employment is given to 10 men.

*Hinkley, Higman & Co.'s Lumber-, Stave-, and Heading-Mills* are on the site of a saw-mill which was built and operated years ago by the Pew brothers. About 50 men are employed, and the product is 4,000,000 feet of lumber per annum and 120,000 staves per week. A large quantity of barrel-heads are also cut, and much of the material is manufactured into barrels in a cooperage which is also carried on by the firm.

*H. W. Williams' Lumber-Mills*, in the same locality, were built in 1870, by Smith & Brown, but have been operated by the present proprietor since 1875. It is supplied with good machinery, and is capable of cutting 15,000 feet in ten hours. The power is furnished by a 45 horse-power engine, and 26 men are employed.

*The Champion Planing-Mill, and Sash- and Blind-Factory*, W. A. Preston proprietor, has been operated on the present site since 1872, and was begun in the southeast part of the village in 1862. Fourteen men are employed in the manufacture of all kinds of builders' materials, and lately a shop for making boxes for canned goods has been added, which employs 8 men more. All these mills are operated principally on hard woods, and are favorably located for business on the St. Joseph River and the ship-canal.

*The Michigan Basket-Factory* of A. W. Wells & Co., on Water Street, was established near the south pier in 1867, by Wells, Ward & Wilcox, and was first operated in the manufacture of fruit-packages. Changes in the firm followed, some of the members retiring, and W. W. Cook and John Higman becoming connected. In 1874 the firm of A. W. Wells & Co. purchased the interests of the "St. Joseph Basket Manufacturing Company," on Water Street, which had been organized some time previously, and has since carried on its business there. The works have been enlarged, and at present embrace a shop three stories high, 50 by 60 feet, and a large iron warehouse, 40 by 90 feet. The best machinery is used, and a large variety of work is manufactured, which finds a ready sale. One hundred and twenty-five men are employed, and three car-loads of baskets and fruit-packages are shipped daily.

*William R. Wilcox & Co.'s Fruit-Package and Veneering-Factory* is the pioneer of this branch of industry in Berrien County. In 1864, Mr. Wilcox began making

fruit-packages by hand, in the township of Lincoln, cutting the splints from planks. Other improvements followed, and horse-power was used. In the fall of 1865 he patented a berry-box, the use of which became very general, and which solved the problem whether it would pay to grow small fruits, as it was furnished to growers for the nominal sum of one cent, and by its use fruit remained in good condition until it reached the consumer. Mr. Wilcox is also the patentee of other useful machinery for making fruit-packages and cases, and has lately devised an ingenious machine for the manufacture of planed shingles. The present steam-factory is located near the railroad depot, and gives employment to 40 men.

*The Industrial Spinning- and Knitting-Works* are in the same locality. They were established in 1878 by S. F. Cooper & Sons, and have since been managed by J. W. Hart. The main factory is 40 by 100 feet, two stories high, with large engine-house, dry-rooms, and store-houses connected. The machinery has been in operation since October, 1878, and embraces two sets for making cotton and woolen yarns, and knitting- and weaving-machinery for the manufacture of hosiery, mittens, and underwear. More than 100 operatives are employed, and the products of the factory have been received with much favor by dealers.

*A. H. Morrison's Wooden-Ware Works* have also been in operation since 1878. The factory is on the canal, in the eastern part of the village, and embraces eight buildings, namely, the main shop, 40 by 120 feet, two stories high; turning-shop, 36 by 70 feet, three stories high; dry-kilns, 24 by 144 feet, three stories high; warehouse for manufactured goods, paint and varnish shops, office, etc., which are warmed by steam and hot air. The motive power is furnished by a 120 horse-power engine, and 150 hands are employed in the daily production of 2000 pails, 360 tubs, broom-handles, clothes-pins, and pail and tub handles. The capacity of the factory admits of a larger product, and is increased from time to time.

#### THE RAILROAD.

St. Joseph was the first contemplated terminus of the Michigan Central Railroad, as is shown in the chapter on internal improvements in the general history. There also will be found a full description of the Chicago and West Michigan, originally the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad. It is sufficient to say here that the completion of the road between New Buffalo and St. Joseph was celebrated by a grand jubilee on the 2d of February, 1870, and that it was extended northward the following year. The station is located at the foot of the bluff, below the village.

#### ST. JOSEPH SECRET ORDERS.

It was the purpose of the writer to make the following society sketches more complete, but the absence of the proper records, and the indifference of the official members who were asked for information, necessitates him to limit the accounts to a simple statement of the facts connected with their organization.

*Occidental Lodge, No. 56, F. and A. M.*, was the first established in the place. It was instituted in 1852, with L. Church, W. M.; J. Enos, S. W.; A. P. Stinson, J. W.; A. B. Leeds, Sec.; and Phineas Pearl, Treas.





RESIDENCE OF HON. A. H. MORRISON, ST. JOSEPH, MICH.



A. H. MORRISON'S MANUFACTURING ESTABLISHMENT, ST. JOSEPH, MICH.



The lodge at present has 66 members, and its principal officers are A. H. Scott, Jr., W. M.; H. M. Zekind, S. W.; C. H. Moulton, Sec.; and John Wallace, Treas.

*Pomona Lodge, No. 28, F. and A. M.*, has held its meetings as a chartered body since Jan. 13, 1871. O. W. Oviatt was the W. M. at that time; A. K. Webster, S. W.; and R. B. Duncan, J. W. These offices are at present filled by John F. Gard, W. M.; L. C. Fyfe, S. W.; Samuel Richey, J. W.; T. J. De Puy, Sec.; H. W. Guernsey, Treas. The membership of the lodge is small. Its meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall.

*Calvin Britain Chapter, No. 72, R. A. M.*, was instituted April 20, 1870, with the following original members: Lawrence Phillips, Samuel G. Langley, H. M. Zekind, A. B. Leeds, Joshua Feather, Fred A. Potter, Alfred Shepard, P. D. Montgomery, and A. J. Brush.

In 1879 the chapter had 40 members, and H. M. Zekind, H. P.; Alfred Baldrey, K.; Horace W. Guernsey, S.; Law. C. Fyfe, Sec.; and John Wallace, Treas.

*St. Joseph Council, No. 44, R. and S. M. A.*, was instituted Nov. 23, 1875, with the following officers: F. A. Potter, T. I. M.; J. J. Pearl, D. I. M.; C. S. Boyle, P. C. W.; Alexander Elton, C. of G.; A. B. Bisbee, G. S. and S.; H. M. Zekind, C. of C.; J. W. Brewer, Recorder; and John Bell, Treas. The council has at present (1879) 22 members, and the following officers in the order named above: Alexander Elton, J. H. Fassett, Geo. S. Clapp, Alfred Baldrey, J. J. Pearl, E. F. Platt, J. W. Brewer, and Law. C. Fyfe.

*Burnett Lodge, No. 119, I. O. O. F.*—On the 26th of May, 1868, a charter for a lodge with the above name and number was granted to A. H. Morrison, A. E. Perkins, C. H. Chamberlain, O. W. Oviatt, and W. R. Graham. The lodge has maintained a flourishing existence ever since, and assembles in a neatly-furnished hall.

*St. Joseph Encampment, No. 37, I. O. O. F.*—This order received a dispensation from the Grand Encampment of Michigan, Dec. 30, 1869, and on the 18th of February, 1870, received a charter from the same source. The constituent members were Lawrence Phillips, H. M. Zekind, Orrin W. Oviatt, Joseph J. Pearl, C. H. Chamberlain, J. W. Smith, H. Noel Elkington, John M. West, John F. B. Thompson, Edward M. Edwards, and Charles H. De Witt. The encampment has prospered, and enjoyed a liberal increase of membership.

*St. Joseph Lodge, No. 92, I. O. G. T.*—This temperance organization was instituted March 11, 1879, with 31 charter members and the following principal officers: William B. Plumb, W. C. T.; Miss Adelia Smith, W. V. T.; E. M. Plumb, W. R. S.; Henry Reder, W. F. S.; Miss Jennie Clapp, W. Treas.; Will Hart, W. Marshal; and George Jennings, P. W. C. T. The lodge has been very prosperous, having already, in August, 1879, more than 100 members, and promises to be a valuable agency in promoting the temperance cause.

A few other societies have had an existence in the village, but as they have long since disbanded, and the records have not been preserved, no account of them can here be given.

## ST. JOSEPH PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

The people in the settlement were early interested in the cause of education. A log school-house was erected in the southeast part of the village, where the ground begins to descend eastward on Church Street, between Pearl and Market. The following passage from the village records indicates that the school-house was built before 1832: "At a meeting of the freemen of the village of St. Joseph, held at the school-house (it being the usual place of holding town-meetings), on the first day of May, 1834." This meeting was the first village election. Edwin Richardson came in this year, and taught in this log school-house.

At a meeting of the village council, Nov. 25, 1835, it was, on motion, ordered, "That all proceedings heretofore had on the subject of building a school-house in the village of St. Joseph be declared void. On motion, Fowler Preston is hereby authorized to purchase lumber and contract for building a school-house in the village of St. Joseph, that shall not cost to exceed \$500." The building then erected has long been known as the "Old White School-House," and stands now on the corner of Ship and Main Streets, and is used as a marble-shop. It still belongs to the corporation.

About 1840 a dwelling-house belonging to Charles Ranous was purchased by Dr. Talman Wheeler, moved down on the lot where the Methodist church now stands, fitted up for a school, and donated by him for that purpose. The Rev. — Hawley, a clergyman, now of Van Buren County, was the first teacher, and remained three years, preaching occasionally in the Old White School-House. Among the early teachers were Donald C. Snyder, Miss McNamara, and Miss Clarinda Seales. It is remembered as the "Old Red School-House." The building now used as a city hall was erected by the district in 1858–59, and used as a school-house until the completion of the present brick structure. It stood on the site of the present school building.

The first records of the board of school inspectors of the township of St. Joseph that are preserved are found in an old volume in the township clerk's office. The first recorded meeting of the board was held on the 10th day of April, 1837. There were present Benjamin C. Hoyt, Thomas Fitzgerald, and James Randles, who composed the board. After organization the board adjourned until Saturday, May 16th.

At the time appointed the board was in session, and it was ordered, "That all that part of St. Joseph in Fractional Township No. 4, South of Range 19 west, be formed into a School District, and designated as Dist. No. 1," and that the first meeting of the inhabitants of District No. 1 be held at the school-house in said district, on Saturday, the 27th day of May. It was also ordered, "That all that part of St. Joseph set off by the State Legislature as Paw Paw township be formed into a school district, and designated as No. 2, the first meeting to be held at the house of I. Moffatt, on the first Monday of June next." It was further ordered, "That Benton Township, as set off by the State Legislature, be formed into a school district, and designated as No. 3, and the first meeting to be held at the house of Jehial Enos, on the first Monday of June next."



The school inspectors' report, dated Oct. 17, 1837, showed as follows: "Number of districts in St. Joseph township, 3; districts which had reported, 1, viz., district No. 1; number of scholars in district No. 1 of school age, 110; number attending school under five and over seventeen years of age, 10; whole number attending school, 107; length of time a school has been taught by a qualified teacher, five months and two weeks; amount of money received of school inspectors, none; amount received for use of library, none; amount raised in each district, \$185; purposes for which it was used, \$90 for teachers, \$20 for bookcases, \$50 for incidental expenses, \$15 for desk, \$10 for library; books used in each district school, Murray's Reader, American First Class Book, Hale's History of the United States, First Book of History, Olney's Geography, Parley's Geography, Peckham's Grammar, Comstock's Philosophy, Blake's Philosophy, Daboll's Arithmetic, Adams' Arithmetic, Colburn's Arithmetic, Webster's Spelling-Book, Walker's Dictionary.

"School in the above-mentioned district was taught by two experienced and qualified teachers, one male and one female. A school has been taught most of the year by one of the teachers; a tuition school is in the district.

"L. S. LILLIBRIDGE,

"GEO. C. THOMPSON,

"IRA C. DOE,

"*Inspectors of Schools in the Township of St. Joseph.*"

Nov. 8, 1838, District No. 4 was formed from District No. 3, and comprised sections Nos. 13, 14, and east half of 15, in township 4 south, range 18 west.

March 1, 1829, at a meeting of the Board of Inspectors the collector of school-tax reported as collected \$80.67; the township received, from primary-school fund, \$70. It was ordered that both these sums be applied to District No. 1.\*

The report for 1842 has reference to but one district, containing 97 scholars between five and seventeen years of age, and 113 attending school. In 1843 three districts were reported, and in 1846 the sum of \$42.16 was apportioned to District No. 1, "there being no other district in the township."

Fractional school districts were made with Royalton and Benton in 1854-55. At the present time the township comprises one district. The report for 1879 shows as follows: number of districts, 1; Director, R. F. Stratton; number of children between the ages of five and twenty years, 884; whole number of children attending school during the year, 663; number of school-houses and construction, 1 brick and 1 frame; number of pupils who can be seated, 800; value of school property, \$40,000; number of qualified teachers, 1 male, 13 females; total wages paid teachers during the year,—males, \$806; females, \$2715.95.

The financial report of same date shows,—

\* It will be remembered that in the report made in 1837 the township claimed three districts,—Paw Paw and Benton, as first organized. In this report Districts Nos. 1 and 4 only are claimed, the latter set off from District 3 the November previous.

# RECEIPTS.

Money on hand Sept. 2, 1879.....	\$685.25
Two-mill tax.....	488.20
Primary-school fund.....	410.44
District taxes for all purposes.....	1,042.03
Raised from all other sources.....	162.68
Total resources for the year.....	12,182.65

# EXPENDITURES.

Paid male teachers.....	\$806.00
Paid female teachers.....	2,715.95
Paid for building and repairs.....	200.00
Paid on bonded indebtedness.....	5,782.00
Paid for all other purposes.....	1,777.80
Amount on hand Sept. 1, 1879.....	900.09
Total expenditure for the year.....	12,282.65
Bonded indebtedness of the district Sept. 1, 1879.....	36,600.00
Total indebtedness of the district Sept. 1, 1879.....	36,600.00
Number of private or select schools in township.....	1
Number of pupils attending private or select schools.....	20

*Early Teachers.*—The first examination and certificate granted by the school inspectors was that of Harry Lyon, Nov. 6, 1839; and others followed as they are here given: John I. Beap, Nov. 14, 1839; Amos Gray, Nov. 28, 1839; William Jones, Oct. 2, 1841; William L. Jakeway, Nov. 11, 1842; John Mitchell, Dec. 9, 1843; A. S. Burt, May 18, 1844; Miss Ruth Mead, March 27, 1845; Donald C. Snyder, Nov. 12, 1847; A. Van Sawn, Oct. 26, 1848; Angeline Woodruff, April 28, 1853; Oscar McClaugherty, Jan. 4, 1854; Romelia M. Spencer, March 30, 1854; E. E. Fish, May 15, 1854; Seymour L. Butes, May 18, 1855; Miss E. Butes, June 11, 1855; L. J. Brown, June 13, 1857; Marcella Brown, July 25, 1857; A. D. Brown, Nov. 21, 1857; A. Aldrich, Elizabeth Dunn, Belle Chapman, and Mary J. Condon, April 3, 1859; Flavilia Quint, Delia A. Brown, L. Valeria Abbott, A. J. Wood, Nov. 12, 1859; Miss Abbott, Nov. 26, 1859; A. L. Aldrich, April 13, 1861; William R. Lyon, Helen Haight, Sept. 7, 1861; Adaline Brown, Mira Abbott, Nov. 2, 1861.

*Library.*—The following is taken from the records, and is the first record of any action being taken thereto, but in the school report of 1838, under the head of "Purposes for which it was used," is noted "\$10 for library."

"At a meeting of the Board of School Inspection, held at the 'National,' on Saturday, March 22, 1845, present, A. Murray, Chairman, R. E. Ward and A. M. Church: 'whereas, upon mature deliberation, and assisted by advice of eminent council, the Board unanimously agreed to expend \$47.<sup>50</sup>/<sub>100</sub> in purchasing books for a school library. The Board selected the Massachusetts School Library, consisting of 38 volumes, and 62 volumes from Harper's Library, in all amounting to 100 volumes, for the sum of \$47.50, for which an order was given on the treasurer.'

"A. M. CHURCH, Township Clerk.

The books were received April 9, 1845. July 13, 1845, 27 volumes were added by purchase. Additions were again made in 1861, and May 14, 1868, 75 volumes were added. In the spring of 1874 the library was given to the Union District, and has increased by purchase by students and donations of citizens and the use of library fund to 487 volumes.

*The Union School.*—In 1859 all that part of the township south and west of the St. Joseph River was organized as a district for the maintenance of a union school, which was opened under the principalship of Dr. A. D. Brown,

and other early principals were A. L. Aldrich and W. R. Lyon. In 1871 the present school building was begun, and it was completed in 1872, at a cost of \$40,000. The plans were prepared by Rufus Rose, and the builders were Daly S. Moore and Harrison Paine. The superintending committee were W. S. Maynard and John Whittlesey, and the other members of the Board of Education were Wm. C. Stewart, Geo. S. Clapp, B. Williams, and J. W. Brewer. The edifice has a fine location on a spacious lot, and is built of brick and stone, 86 by 102 feet, three stories high, with basement. There are fourteen school-rooms and a number of recitation-rooms, which are heated by hot-air furnaces. The building presents a fine appearance, and its erection reflects great credit on the village and township.

In 1879 the Board of Education was composed of E. D. Crane, Moderator; Wm. E. Higman, Assessor and Treasurer; R. F. Stratton, Director; and John H. Lee, James A. Canavan, and Geo. E. Smith. The entire enrollment of pupils in the district was 850, and the expense of maintaining the schools \$5550.

J. H. Fassett, A.M., has been the superintendent of the schools for the past four years. He has been assisted by an able corps of ten teachers, and the instruction imparted has been thorough and extensive, giving the people excellent educational advantages at home.

In the Heath neighborhood, which forms a joint district with that part of Benton township lying east and south, is a very fine school-house, in which excellent schools are maintained for the people living east of the St. Joseph River.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

In St. Joseph, as well as in most other places in Western Michigan, the Methodist missionaries were the first to proclaim the gospel to the early settlers. It is believed that the Rev. Erastus Felton, a member of the Detroit district of the Ohio Conference, visited this part of the State in 1829, and preached several times as part of his work in the St. Joseph Valley. In 1830 the Rev. L. R. Gurley was his co-laborer. In the following year a separate mission was formed, still bearing the name of St. Joseph, which was attached to the Laporte district of the Indiana Conference, and retained that connection until 1839, when it became a part of the Michigan Conference. That year (1831) the missionaries were the Revs. Benjamin Cooper and William Sprague. A number of changes in the districts and circuits followed. Since 1856 the appointment has constituted a station. The ministers who have preached at St. Joseph, as appointees of Conference or other authority, from 1832 till the present time (1879) have been the following:

1832, Revs. R. S. Robinson, G. L. Bostwick; 1833, Rev. Newell S. Smith; 1834, Rev. R. S. Robinson; 1835, Rev. E. L. Kellogg; 1836, Revs. Thomas P. McCool, R. C. Meek; 1837, Rev. W. Todd; 1838, Revs. J. Ercambrack, F. Arnold; 1839-42, Revs. F. Gage, D. Burns, F. B. Bangs; 1843, Rev. T. Jakeway; 1844, Rev. Charles Barnes; 1845, Rev. E. L. Kellogg; 1846, Rev. R. Pengelly; 1847-48, Rev. R. Goodale; 1849, Rev. George King; 1850, Rev. E. R. Kellogg; 1851, Rev. T. Clark; 1852, Rev. J. W. Robinson; 1853, Rev. W. T. Jenkins; 1854, Rev. T. H. Bignall; 1855, Rev. T. Jakeway; 1856-57, Rev. W. C. Bliss; 1858-59, Rev. Thomas Lyon; 1860-61, Rev. R. Pengelly; 1862, Rev. A. Y. Graham; 1863-64, Rev. L. M. Edmunds; 1864-65, Rev.

J. I. Buell; 1866, Rev. T. Edwards; 1867-70, Rev. Joseph Jones; 1871, Rev. J. T. Iddings; 1872-73, Rev. R. C. Crawford; 1874, Rev. W. H. Perrine; 1875, Rev. G. S. Barnes; 1876-79, Rev. I. R. A. Wightman.

The labors of Father McCool in 1836 secured a permanent place for Methodism in St. Joseph. The members of the class which was formed about that time constituted the germ from which sprang the present

*First Methodist Episcopal Church.*—So encouraging was its future in 1836 that it was proposed to at once build a meeting-house, the project being encouraged by many people who did not belong to the class. An unfortunate circumstance\* caused the withdrawal of the latter support, which prevented the project from being carried out, and for many years the purpose to erect a place of worship consecrated to Methodism could not be given effect. Neither did the members of the class increase proportionately, there being in 1846 only 18 persons belonging to it.

In Ransom Goodale's pastorate (1847-48) 16 persons were added, but the members were poor, and the interest in religious matters at St. Joseph was very meagre.† The meetings were held in the school-house and other places, and all those years the village had no church edifice. In 1856 the idea to provide a special place of worship again took hold of the minds of the people, and for this purpose a board of trustees was selected, which was composed of Theodore Pew, Franklin Pew, John Spink, Leicester Olds, and Charles Marsh. They entered upon their duties June 13, 1857, and the various plans for building a house were considered. It was finally determined to build a frame edifice, 38 by 55 feet, and provide it with a tower and bell. This house, built after many sacrifices and efforts, was appropriately dedicated, Aug. 18, 1859, by the Rev. Hooper Crews, of Illinois. About the same time a parsonage was begun, but was not completed until several years later. The aggregate value of the property was set at \$6500.

\* Some of the members of the congregation wished to introduce instrumental music as a part of the service, and it was proposed to introduce a bass viol. This proposition met with decided opposition on the part of the minister and some of the members of the church, and disaffection and lack of interest in the proposed church was the result.

† The religious condition of the people of St. Joseph in the early years of the settlement is exemplified by the following incident, related by Hiram Brown, Esq., of St. Joseph:

In 1845 the Rev. Hiram Kellogg, of Oneida Co., N. Y., was appointed president of Knox College, Galesburg. While on his way to assume his duties he arrived at St. Joseph by stage early one Sunday morning, and stopped at the "Mansion House," then kept by Judge Daniel Olds. Not wishing to travel Sunday, he decided to remain. It did not seem to him that the day was observed as it should be by the people, for they were engaged as on week-days, and many were pitching quoits in front of the tavern. Mr. Kellogg, on inquiring if there was a church in the place, was informed there was not. Wishing to be quiet, he inquired of Judge Olds if there was any person in St. Joseph who feared the Lord. The judge replied, "No," but after a moment's reflection, said, "Well, yes; there is Hiram Brown, up the street a little ways; I guess he fears him a little," and directed him to the residence of Mr. Brown, where he called, and was invited to stay. He related the incident, and, after a little conversation, they found that both were from the same section in the East, and that the reverend gentleman was well acquainted with the friends of Mrs. Brown. He was requested to preach, and accepted the invitation. Notice was sent out to the people, who gathered at the old white school-house and listened to a good sermon. Mr. Kellogg remained two days before continuing his journey.

The church soon suffered from a disaster, which greatly retarded its prosperity. On the 21st of June, 1866, the meeting-house was destroyed by fire, involving an almost total loss. Chastened but not disheartened, the society took immediate steps to rebuild. In the spring of 1868 the basement of the present handsome brick edifice was ready for occupancy, and in the summer of 1869 the church was formally dedicated by the Rev. Dr. Hatfield, of Chicago. The entire cost was nearly \$23,000, which left a debt that was not fully liquidated until within a few years. The church presents an attractive appearance, and has ample accommodations for the congregations which assemble at this place. It is at present controlled by Trustees G. S. Clapp, Francis Jordan, S. T. Cooper, W. P. Ward, and W. S. Maynard.

The church has enjoyed many revivals, from which have generally resulted large additions to the membership. The season of religious awakening which occurred in the winter of 1876-77, under the pastoral labors of the Rev. I. R. A. Wightman, especially is notable in this respect, about 130 persons being received into membership. Although the aggregate membership of the church has been very large, so many changes have taken place that at present there are only 190 persons in full connection; yet the work of the church is in a flourishing condition, and constitutes an important factor in the religious history of the village.

A Methodist Sunday-school has been maintained at St. Joseph nearly as long as the church has had an existence there. It has 240 members, and W. P. Ward is the superintendent.

*The Congregational Church of St. Joseph* was organized by a council of ministers and laymen from the neighboring churches, April 27, 1854. The meeting was held in the old school-house, which was also the place of worship until a church was built, and the constituent members were the following: James B. Sutherland and wife, David B. Crane and wife, Samuel Maynard, Mrs. John King, Ann Olmstead, Fannie Stowe, Isabel Mahue, and Jane Vanderbeck. On Sunday, April 29th, after the formation of the church, the sacrament of the Lord's Supper was administered by the Rev. Thomas Jones, Rev. William Osborne assisting. There was also a baptism of children, and James B. Sutherland was ordained to the office of deacon. On the 3d of May, 1854, the church applied for connection with the Kalamazoo Association, and being received, has remained a part of that body.

The first few years of the history of the church were uneventful. The pulpit was supplied by Revs. Osborne, Lucas, and others, and at the end of four and a half years but 11 additions had been made to the membership. About this period, Aug. 29, 1858, the Rev. Edward Anderson became the pastor of the church, but was not installed until Feb. 1, 1860. On the 19th of September following he was dismissed; but after a short vacancy he was succeeded in the pastorate by the Rev. Cherry, who remained with the church two years, and whose labors gave the congregation a good increase of members.

From 1863 till the beginning of 1865 the pulpit was supplied by the Rev. George H. Miles, a young man, whose

preaching was attended with success. As the fruits of two revival seasons, 28 new names were added to the church roll. Mr. Miles' earthly career was closed by death, Aug. 2, 1874.

Early in 1866 the Rev. J. B. Fairbanks commenced preaching for the church, and on the 3d of June began a pastorate which was terminated in July, 1870. In this period 13 members were dismissed to help form the church at Benton Harbor.

Towards the close of 1870 the Rev. M. M. Colburn became the pastor of the church, and faithfully served it until his death, in the sixth year of his pastoral connection. His special mission appears to have been to build up the Christian character of his congregation, and he died greatly esteemed for his piety and worth. Soon after his decease the Rev. John Cunningham began to supply the pulpit, continuing his ministrations a year. His labors resulted in many conversions and 24 additions to the church membership.

On the 1st of January, 1873, the Rev. A. S. Wood began his duties as pastor, and yet gives the congregation acceptable service. His labors have not been fruitless, but have brought more than 40 into the fold of the church, which is at present in a very prosperous condition. The entire membership of the church, from its organization to the present, has been nearly 250, about one-half of whom remain to constitute the present members. Of these, 4, namely, James B. Sutherland, L. Whitney, J. H. Lee, and D. J. Wells, are deacons of the church; and the functions of this office have also been performed by Messrs. Burbank, Richardson, B. Comings, Daniel Cook, F. Pannell, E. Knapp, A. L. Aldrich, and A. E. Brush.

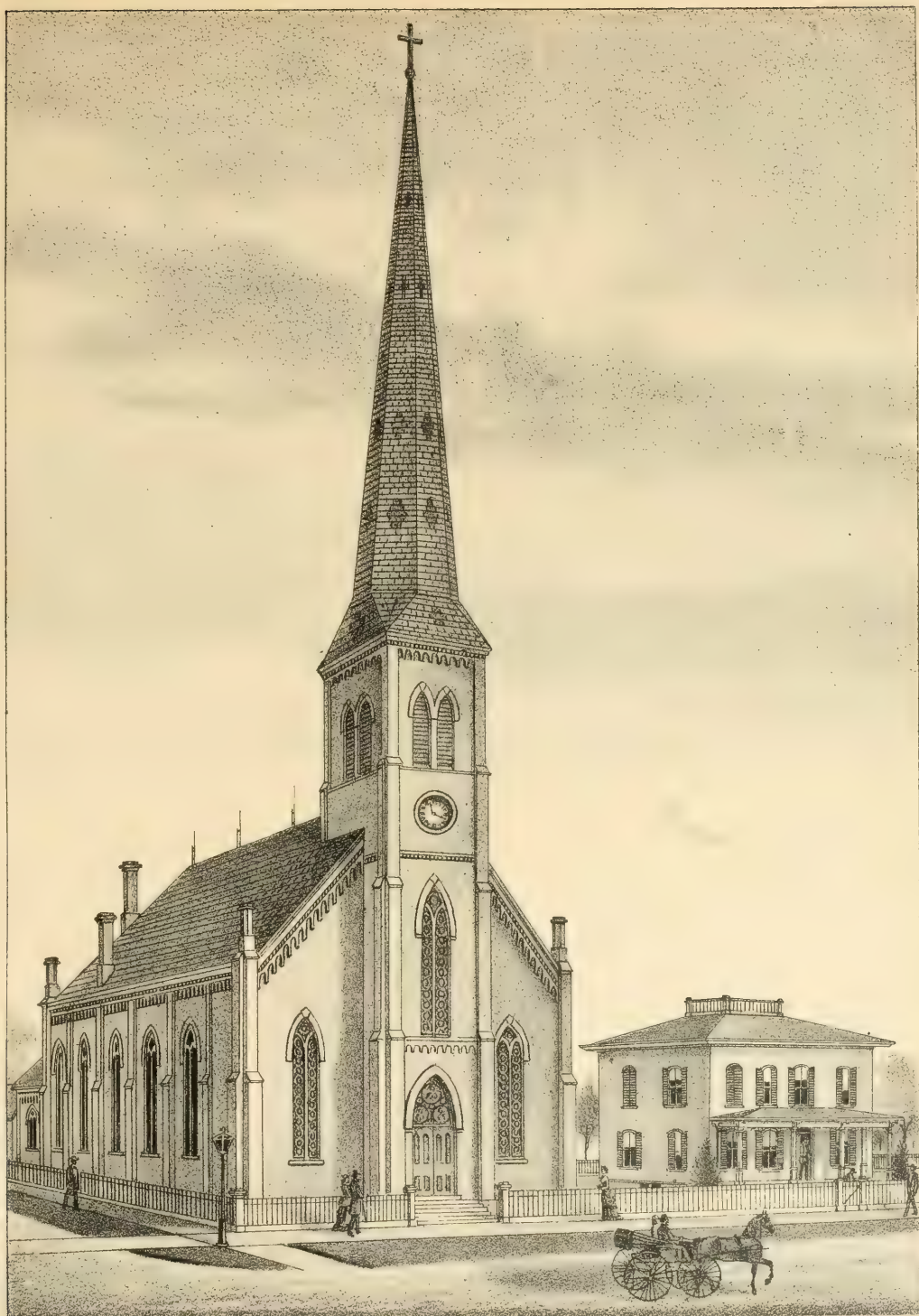
The first meeting-house was completed during the pastoral connection of the Rev. Edward Anderson, but being too small to accommodate the growing congregation, it was enlarged in 1870, a fine pipe-organ supplied, and a conference- and prayer-room constructed. It forms a plain, commodious frame edifice, affording a pleasant spiritual home for the congregation. The trustees at present controlling these temporalities are J. H. Lee, Clerk; M. Shepard, Treasurer; H. A. Truax, Z. Rice, J. B. Sutherland, and W. R. Lyon.

Prayer-meetings and a flourishing Sunday-school have for many years been sustained, both being recognized as valuable auxiliaries in the promotion of the work of the church.

*St. Joseph Roman Catholic Church.*—It is known that Jesuit Fathers established a mission where is now the village of St. Joseph about the year 1700, but its history is involved in almost complete obscurity. The present Catholic congregation of St. Joseph, as we learn from Father Thiesen, was established in 1849, with six families as its congregation. The services were first held in the old school-house, now used as a marble-shop, on Ship Street. In the course of a few years the frame building at present used as a school-house by the church became the place of worship. In this services were held about once a month by priests belonging to the congregation of the Holy Cross, Notre Dame, Ind. Some of these priests were Rev. Fathers Saurin, Quints, Baroux, and Schilling.

Commencing about 1857, the Rev. John De Neve, re-





ST JOSEPH'S CATHOLIC CHURCH.  
ST JOSEPH, MICH.



siding at Niles, attended St. Joseph several years. Being recalled to Europe, his successor at Niles, the Rev. J. Cappon, and his assistants, the Revs. Charles Quinkelberger and Joseph Van Waterschoot, continued to attend St. Joseph regularly once a month until 1865. By this time the congregation had increased to about 100 families, all the Catholics living within fifteen miles of St. Joseph attending its services. It now became necessary to have a resident priest to supply all their wants, and the Rev. Joseph Van Waterschoot came in that capacity. Through his energy and good management the congregation continued to prosper, and in 1869 the foundation was laid for the substantial and attractive brick church which stands on the corner of Ship and Church Streets. It is 45 by 114 feet in dimensions, being the largest public building in the village. The corner-stone was laid July 21, 1869, by the Right Rev. Henry Luers, Bishop of Fort Wayne. All but the steeple of the church was completed in 1871, and on the 28th day of April, 1872, the church was appropriately dedicated by Rt. Rev. C. H. Borgess, Bishop of Detroit. The cost of the church and its furniture has been about \$18,000. Its trustees in 1879 were John Martin, Robert Hosbein, Patrick Finnegan, Joseph Hauser, and Colomb Rigney.

In November, 1874, Father Van Waterschoot was relieved from the charge of the congregation, at his own request, and the Rev. Joseph Thiesen, the present priest, was appointed to take his place. He left St. Joseph esteemed by all who knew him. Under Father Thiesen's tutelage the congregation continues to prosper, numbering at present 125 families, with 400 communicants and 60 Sunday-school children.

*The First Regular Baptist (German) Church of St. Joseph* was organized Jan. 30, 1860, with 21 members, by the Rev. William Grimm. He also became the first pastor of the church, remaining about twelve years. In 1872 the Rev. Carl Domm entered upon a pastorate, which continued a little longer than a year. His successor was the Rev. David Zwink, who sustained the pastoral relation to this congregation about five and a half years. Since September, 1878, the pastor has been the Rev. A. Freitag. The church has enjoyed an encouraging degree of prosperity, and has at present 150 members. W. Smith and W. Binning are the deacons.

In February, 1860, a small frame meeting-house was begun for the congregation, and was dedicated May 6th in the same year. It has since been improved and a gallery added, giving it seating capacity for 300 persons. The present trustees are H. Grimm, W. Binning, and F. Ewalt. A Sunday-school of more than 100 members is maintained by the church. W. Smith is the present superintendent.

*The Church of the Evangelical Association* was organized about 1860. Its members held their first meetings at the houses of those composing the class,—some 12 or 15 in number. The church prospered, and in 1868 the brick meeting-house which had been erected by an English Baptist society was purchased as a place of worship, and has since been used for that purpose. The property is valued at \$1000. The controlling board of trustees are Philip Madinger, Peter Rister, and H. Eckert.

The aggregate membership of the church has been more than 100, but at present there are only 35 members. These are under the pastoral direction of ministers appointed annually for St. Joseph circuit, which embraces, also, appointments in Royalton, Lake, and Weesaw townships. Since 1860 the preachers in charge have been the Revs. C. Ude, B. Ruh, E. M. Houk, E. H. Hess, Jacob Young, O. Ragdetz, John Meek, William Remka, Reuben Riegel, Peter Burch, Peter Bitner, and, since 1878, C. Ude.

*The Trinity Evangelical Lutheran Church of St. Joseph.*

—This congregation was organized in 1867, of members who had previously belonged to the Lutheran Church in Bainbridge and others, and embraced originally about 25 persons. The Rev. John Fiertagg was called to serve as the first pastor, and served a year. He was succeeded by the Rev. Nicholas Sorgel, who remained until 1875. Since April, 1876, the Rev. E. C. Georgie has been the minister of the church, which has, in the main, had a prosperous existence. At present it embraces 40 families and 150 communicants. The official members are Deacons J. Shafer, J. Henning, and C. Kroening; Trustees A. Priebe, F. Steeb, and J. Keller.

Worship is regularly held at St. Joseph in a small frame meeting-house, which was built soon after the congregation was organized. In Lincoln township a place for meetings and school purposes was secured in 1878, and at both points catechetical instruction is imparted, and from four to eight months of school maintained, in which secular and religious instruction is given. The congregation has adopted, and is governed by, the Unaltered Augsburg Confession.

*The First Universalist Church of St. Joseph* was formed some time about 1865, of several dozen members, but discontinued after about ten years. Its history, consequently, is meagre, and gleaned from unofficial sources. The meetings were first held in the school-house, but a brick edifice was soon after erected as a place of worship on Broad and Court Streets, which was used, although never fully completed. In 1877 it was destroyed by fire. Among the trustees of this building were James E. Stevens, Simeon Wilson, Samuel G. Langley, and Warren Chapman. The church at one time had more than 50 members, but the number declined to so few that the organization could not be kept up. Among the ministers are remembered the Revs. Button, Lang, and Wood.

*Christ Episcopal Church* has also become extinct. It was organized some time after 1870, and had B. F. Pixley and William J. Nott as the first wardens; and vestrymen, C. C. Sweet, Thomas Archer, John Reeder, Damon A. Winslow, J. H. Perkins, E. C. Palmer, A. H. Morrison, and William Ricaby. The services were held in the "City Hall," and the Rev. V. Spaulding was the rector. An abated interest in the welfare of the new church and the removal of members caused it to decline before it had become fairly established. A Baptist society which formerly flourished in St. Joseph transferred its interests to the township of Benton, where its history is fully given.

*The St. Joseph African Methodist Episcopal Church* was organized in 1871, with six members, by Rev. W. T. Langford, presiding elder. Rev. Mr. Jason was appointed



to take charge of the spiritual interests of the new body, which has maintained a slow but constant growth, and at present has 25 members, under the pastorship of Rev. John Myers. Other preachers have been Revs. George W. Benson, H. H. Wilson, Johnson Burden, L. D. Crosby, and John A. Jordan.

A small frame meeting-house was built in 1871, which was placed under the trusteeship of F. Lound, Stephen Busby, and William Hart. The present trustees are Thomas Phillips, Nathan Lynch, and Robert Singer; and the stewards are N. E. Miller, Alexander Jones, and Nathan Lynch. A Sunday-school is maintained, at which the average attendance is 35.

*The Young Men's Christian Association* closes the list of religious societies in St. Joseph. It was called into life in December, 1875, and had originally 12 members, with John E. Sutherland, President, and James G. Jennings, Secretary. At present the members number 150, and E. W. Bovee is President; J. E. Roberts, Vice-President; Law. C. Fyfe, Secretary; and O. C. Jordan, Treasurer. Besides those already named, Willis W. Cooper served as president in 1878, being Mr. Sutherland's successor.

The association has prospered, and not only sustains religious meetings but since January, 1876, has maintained a free reading-room, supplied with select literature, which is open daily from eight A. M. till ten P. M., and is well patronized.

#### CEMETERY.

The only cemetery in St. Joseph is controlled by the township authorities, and is kept up by appropriations made from time to time. It contains about five acres, and is lot 55 on section 26. - It was purchased May, 1849, and has naturally a good location. There are some fine monuments, but the general appearance of the grounds is not in keeping with the improvements of the township.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### DR. LYMAN COLLINS.

At the close of a long and useful life, it must be a pleasure to be able to transmit to our children and friends a history of a life well spent, a good character formed and maintained. As an instance of this we present to the readers of this work Dr. Collins. Few men have spent as many years, and all of them so worthily, in the pursuit of their profession as he who has given forty-one years of faithful, intelligent labor in the service of his fellow-men. Dr. Collins is of English descent. His father, Benjamin Collins, emigrated from Cape Cod, Mass., to Herkimer Co., N. Y., in 1802. In 1819 moved to Stafford, Genesee Co., N. Y. In 1832 to Randolph, Portage Co., Ohio. The doctor was born in Litchfield, Herkimer Co., N. Y., Nov. 6, 1803. He spent his early life at home, leaving at nineteen years of age to engage in teaching; he taught six years. While engaged in teaching his leisure hours were employed in the

study of medicine, reading with Professor Jared P. Kirtland, of Poland, Trumbull Co., Ohio; attending lectures at Fairfield College, Fairfield, Herkimer Co., N. Y. Received a diploma from college in 1828. February, 1829, commenced the practice of medicine at Ravenna, Ohio, remaining there thirty-one years. Received an honorary degree from the medical college at Cleveland. Moving to Michigan in 1860, he engaged in the practice of his profession ten years longer, then retired from his profession. When the doctor moved to St. Joseph, Mich., he engaged quite extensively in the fruit-growing business. July 21, 1830, married Miss Harriet, daughter of Hon. Elisha Whittlesey. Four children have been born of this union; two only are living, one in St. Joseph, the other in Chicago. In 1841, Dr. Collins was appointed postmaster in Ravenna, which office he held four years. Mrs. Collins was born in Trumbull Co., Ohio, Oct. 13, 1810. This noble couple have walked life's journey together for nearly fifty years; they have passed through sunshine and shadow in their home, but no discordant sound has been heard, and to-day, more than ever, they enjoy each other's society. They received a letter, soon after they were married, from an intimate friend living in Batavia, N. Y., by the name of C. Gilman, giving them advice, which they have attempted to follow, and many others might be benefited by the same advice,—that is, "*To keep up a little courtship so long as they live.*" They can review the past with satisfaction, and look into the future with no apprehension.

### J. C. CALDWELL

was born in Trumbull Co., Ohio, June 11, 1841; from 1849 until 1854 lived in Westmoreland Co., Pa.; from 1854 until 1858 in Van Buren Co., Mich. Up to this time had been with his father, Hugh Caldwell. He then commenced life for himself by hiring for six dollars per month to Mr. Isaac Schnorf, a farmer in Niles township. At the end of six months made an arrangement with his employer to work for his board, and go to school during the winter. When the year closed he had so faithfully and willingly done the work assigned him that he was again hired by Mr. Schnorf, and remained with him eight years, except one year of this time which he served in the Rebellion, enlisting in the 12th Regiment Infantry as a private; was discharged in 1862.

In 1864 he married Lizzie, daughter of Jacob Schnorf. Of this union were born three children, the eldest dying before being named; the other two are Imogene and Elliott. After his marriage Mr. Caldwell engaged first in the grocery business, then farming,—first on a rented farm for two years, and six years on a farm of fifty acres, which he bought in Niles township. At the end of the six years went into livery business,—first at Cassopolis, Cass Co., one year, then at Niles three months, finally settling at St. Joseph in the same business. There, at this time, he can be found, an active business man, one whom his neighbors and the citizens of the place speak of as a man reliable and trustworthy.



J. CALDWELL.





## WALTER DONALDSON.

The gentleman whose name is seen at the head of this sketch was born in Ravenna, Portage Co., Ohio, May 17, 1848. In the spring of 1860 his father, with his family, moved from Ohio to Michigan; buying land, he went into fruit-growing. Walter was then a lad of twelve years; he



Photo. by Sesser.

*Walter Donaldson*

assisted his father here on his fruit-farm until he was twenty years old, when he left home and engaged in the harness business. At the expiration of two years he was employed as an agent representing fire insurance, and at this time represents several leading companies, doing a large business.

Jan. 2, 1872, he married Miss Frances B., daughter of Derastus and Mary H. Harper. They have two children, viz., Bessie, born Aug. 17, 1873; Raymond B., born Oct. 15, 1875.

In the fall of 1878 he went into the boot and shoe business in St. Joseph, where we find him engaged at this time running a large business. Mr. Donaldson is an active business man; he has received no assistance from any one; he owes his present position to his own exertions, his perseverance, integrity, and uprightness in all his business relations, retaining the confidence of all with whom he is associated.

## CHAPTER XLII.

## SODUS TOWNSHIP.

Description, Settlement, and Settlers—Roads—Township Organization and List of Officers—Religious Worship—Sodus Grange, Patrons of Husbandry.

SODUS, a fractional township (known as town 5 south, range 18 west), lying on the east bank of the St. Joseph River, contains but about twenty sections, which, however,

cover a fine farming region. The surface of the territory is generally level, and the soil being well adapted to the culture of fruit, that branch of agriculture is extensively pursued, although the peach yield, formerly a source of considerable annual revenue, has latterly failed for a few years. The township is bounded on the north by Benton, on the south by Berrien, on the east by Pipestone, and on the west by Royalton, from which latter it is separated by the St. Joseph River. Pipestone Creek, which flows through the northern part of the township into the river, furnishes good water-power for three grist-mills and two saw-mills. No railway has yet traversed the township, and as at a recent election the citizens opposed aid to a projected line, railway communication is scarcely to be regarded as a thing of the near future. Indeed, the market-towns of Benton Harbor and St. Joseph are so convenient of access that no urgent need of a railway is apparent.

Sodus possesses an important milling interest, which has been encouraged by the fine water-power of Pipestone Creek, although that power, abundant until lately, is said to be decreasing. The site of James B. Larue's saw-mill, the first mill erected in the township, is occupied by Orlando Cowles' grist-mill, besides which there are on Pipestone Creek the grist-mills of Kinney & Rector and Haskins Brothers. These mills drive a flourishing trade, and gain considerable business from even Royalton, whose inhabitants prefer in many instances to go to mill in Sodus rather than in St. Joseph, which latter is at least somewhat more convenient. Besides the mills named, there are, on Pipestone Creek, Orlando Cowles' saw-mill and John Randall's saw-mill and bending-works.

As to postal facilities, the town has a daily mail, and has had a post-office since the township organization, in 1860. Francis Finnegan was the first postmaster; the second was De Golyer King, the third David Daniels, and the fourth Robert Hogue, who is the present incumbent. The town has no village; neither has it a store or place of trade of any description within its limits. This condition of things is, however, of but trifling inconvenience, since Benton Harbor is quickly and easily reached, and since, too, journeys to that point are frequent and necessary in the general course of events.

## SETTLEMENT AND SETTLERS.

In the summer of 1835, William H. and David S. Rector, two brothers, living in the town of Sodus, N. Y., conceived the project of traveling westward for the purpose of prospecting for the improvement of their fortunes. They made a journey by way of the great lakes as far as St. Joseph, and engaged at once in the business of boating on the St. Joseph River. Of that method of gaining a livelihood David soon grew weary, and in the autumn returned to New York, followed in December by his brother William. In the spring of 1836 they determined to return to Michigan, and took with them a younger brother named Hiram. At Buffalo they bargained to take charge of the keel-boat "Niles," which was to be towed to St. Joseph, and David, Hiram, and three other men embarked on board the "Niles." Soon after leaving Buffalo a violent storm arose, and the "Niles," parting company with the steamer

that was towing her, drifted upwards of one hundred miles. When the storm abated the five drifting mariners manned the oars, and brought the "Niles" safely into port at Cleveland, after what may be easily understood to have been a somewhat perilous time.

Finally, the three brothers reached St. Joseph, and after a brief season spent with William and Hiram in river-boating, David made an engagement to assist in the erection of a saw-mill on Pipestone Creek (in what is now section 3 of Sodus township) for James B. Larue, then employed in the lumber-trade in St. Joseph. David Rector worked for Larue three years, and in 1839 moved upon a tract of 120 acres, now in section 14 of Sodus, where he now lives. That piece of land he had entered in 1837, and at odd times during his three years' service with Mr. Larue he did something towards clearing it.

In 1836, David Rector, the father of the three brothers, came from Sodus, N. Y., to St. Joseph with the rest of his family, and, entering 40 acres of land adjoining his son David's farm, moved out with his family in the fall of 1837, Hiram also accompanying him. There the elder Rector lived until his death, in 1862. Hiram lived with his father a few years, and then moved to a farm upon section 23, where he has since continued to reside. William H. Rector lived in St. Joseph until 1842, when he too became a pioneer, and settled upon a farm adjoining those of his father and brother David. There he died Dec. 6, 1878. The only children of David Rector now living in Sodus are David S. and Hiram,—the oldest residents in the township and worthy representatives of Sodus' pioneer settlers,—themselves in the very front rank of those who came to make homes within the forest wilds.

James B. Larue, of whom mention has been made in the foregoing, migrated from New Jersey to Michigan in 1835, and located at St. Joseph. He purchased considerable land in what is now Sodus, and, as already observed, built a saw-mill on Pipestone Creek in the year 1836. At this mill, which was the first mill erected in the township, and in short the first improvement of any kind, he sawed lumber and transported it to St. Joseph, where he lived and traded as a lumber merchant. In 1841, Mr. Larue gave up his residence in St. Joseph, and located, with his family, upon a farm near his Pipestone Creek saw-mill. There he remained, milling and farming, until 1850, when he took the California gold fever, and emigrated, with his family, to the Pacific slope, where he died.

When Larue put up his mill, in 1836, there was one white settler in the town, and he was the pioneer of that region. His name was Scott, and his location was on section 22, near the river, where Luke Sharrai now lives. There he put up a log cabin and cleared a few acres of land, but he moved away after a brief sojourn. Closely following Scott was Charles Palmer, who came from New York, with his wife, in 1837, and located upon a 40-acre farm in section 15. He too grew tired of his new home very soon, and trading his forty acres to William H. Rector for a gun and an old horse, departed for other scenes. Scott and Palmer were settlers, it is true, but they remained so short a time that their historical prominence in that direction cannot be considered as very important. David Rector the

elder, who was next to Palmer in order of settlement, must, accordingly, be regarded as the pioneer among the permanent settlers.

For some years after David Rector located in the township settlements were few and slowly made. Mr. David S. Rector says that when he was married, in 1843, he had no neighbor, save his father and brother, nearer than two miles. He says that the settlers were exceedingly few in number at that date, and that when a resident could, upon arising in the morning, hear the distant crow of a rooster, it made him feel as if matters were indeed getting pleasant and neighborly after all. Land along the river was in the hands of speculators, who, deeming that section worth a trifle more per acre than that of the interior, held it at first at such high figures as to frighten away all purchasers. About 1840, the speculators receded from their original views, and the river lands then began to receive inhabitants.

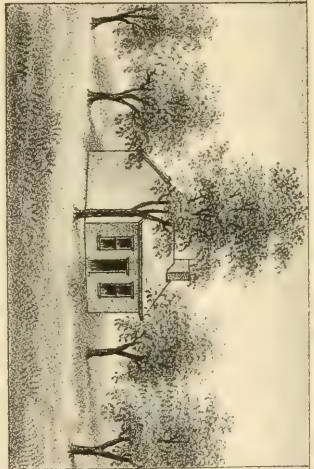
Joseph W. Brewer, from Ohio, was among the first to locate in that region. He had been living at St. Joseph, and boating on the river. About 1840 he bought a tract upon section 16, where Mr. Thaddeus Drew now lives. About that time, too, Ebenezer Farley located land on section 22, but continuing himself to run on the river, as he had been doing for some time, he engaged laborers to clear his land for him. Upon his marriage, soon afterwards, he moved to his farm, and there continued to reside with his family until 1854, when he left for California.

James McDougall, of Montgomery Co., N. Y., made a journey in 1837, with his son Elijah, aged fifteen, from New York State to Michigan, *via* the Erie Canal and the lakes. He purchased of one Noyes 40 acres of land in Royalton township, and with his son went upon the place at once and began to clear it. He sent word to his wife to join him, and she, with seven children, traveled in 1839 to their new Michigan home, by way of the canal and lakes, and found upon her arrival that her husband had busied himself to some purpose in preparing a comfortable house and in making the land productive. Unfortunately for Mr. McDougall, he failed to obtain a good title from Noyes, and so, despite the fact that he had paid money on account of the purchase and had expended much labor upon the farm, he was obliged to relinquish it in 1840, and lost both his labor and the purchase-money he had paid. He remained in St. Joseph a short time, and in 1841 purchased of James B. Larue 130 acres of land on the St. Joseph River, in partnership with Francis Versaw, formerly of Canada, later engaged in the West in cutting out State roads and boating on the river, and at the time of his land purchase with Mr. McDougall living in St. Joseph. McDougall and Versaw went together to the land, began to clear it, and put up a cabin. Soon after, Versaw married one of McDougall's daughters, and dividing the 130 acres with his father-in-law, took that part now owned by James A. Knight, on section 10 in Sodus. Mr. McDougall's part is now owned by David Moore. McDougall lived there until 1872, when he moved to Nebraska, and there he still resides. His children now living in Sodus are Mrs. Francis Versaw and Mrs. Hannah Finnegan. Mr. Versaw remained on his farm until 1853, when he removed to his present place of residence, on section 15.





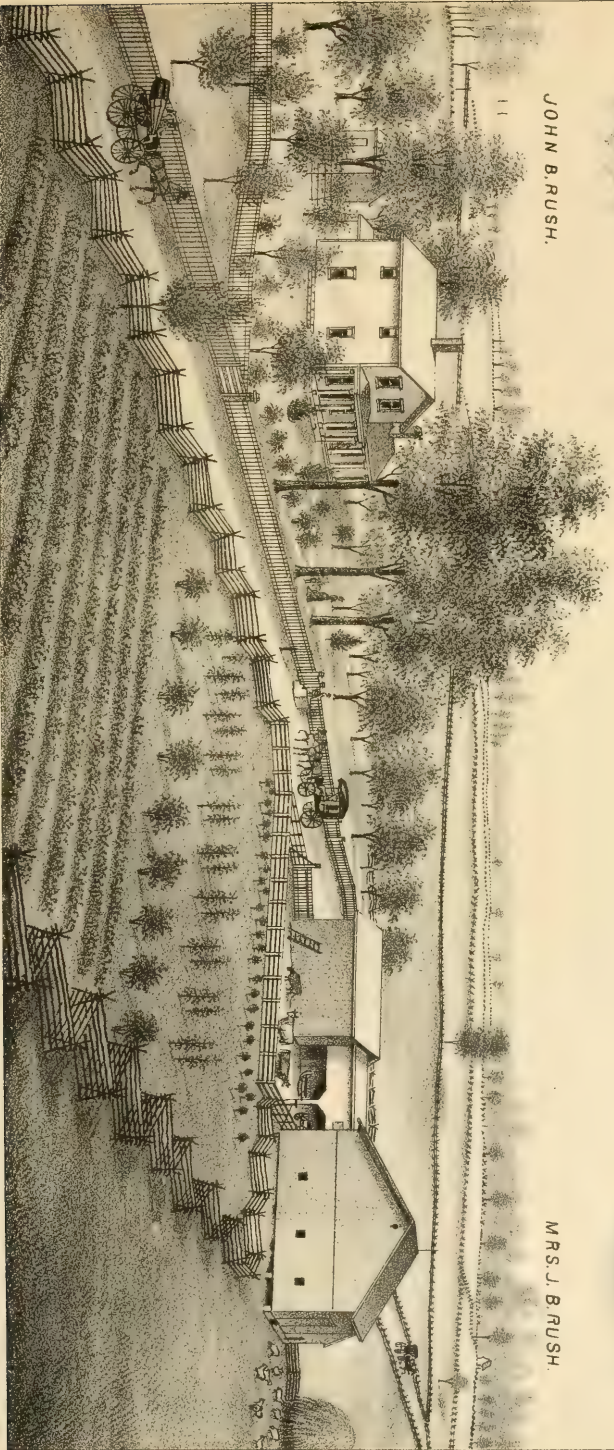
JOHN B. RUSH.



OLD HOME.



MRS. J. B. RUSH.



RES OF J. B. RUSH, SODUS, MICHIGAN.





When McDougall and Versaw moved in there was no river-road, and they were the first ones to cut out anything like a thoroughfare in that vicinity. At that time Luke Sharrai had a farm on the river, where he now lives, but he was not occupying it himself. Sharrai came from Canada when but eight years old, with his father's family, which consisted of the parents and eight children. They journeyed by water to Detroit, and from that point they traveled almost the entire distance on foot to Bertrand, in Berrien County, where they settled in 1828. When Luke became a stout lad he took employment on a St. Joseph River keel-boat, and followed the river for several years. As already mentioned, he purchased a farm on the river,—a place where Scott, the first settler, squatted, and where, after Scott, one Foster took up his habitation,—and engaged his brother Tenos, then living in Bainbridge, to occupy and cultivate it for him, while he (Luke) continued to follow the river. Tenos lived upon the place about a year, and then moved upon a place of his own, adjoining that of Luke. The latter gave up his river employment soon after, and settling on his farm, has lived there until the present time. Previous to occupying it himself, he employed his brother-in-law, a Mr. Lapham, and after him Benjamin Beny, to cultivate the place, but neither remained long, Mr. Sharrai eventually taking possession in 1847.

Asa T. Tinkham came from New York in 1844, and located, with his family, in Sodus, where he had purchased 40 acres. Mr. Tinkham resided there until a few years ago, when he moved to Hagar township.

Peter Shook, an aged man, visited what is now Sodus in 1844, in the interest of an Ohio nursery, and sold quite a number of fruit-trees in this region. Believing the river lands to be capable of producing liberally, he bought a farm from Edward Smith, a resident of Royalton, and set out an orchard. He sent to Ohio for his wife and four children, and began to devote himself to fruit culture with considerable energy, but death ended his projects in 1846. His widow moved to St. Joseph County, and died there in 1877. Shook's farm was purchased by Peter Sharrai (brother to Luke), of Bainbridge, who settled upon it with his family in 1846. He remained there until 1854 (selling his farm to Wallis Tabor, who still resides upon it), when he emigrated to Kansas, but returned in 1868 to Sodus, where he has since continued to reside.

Luke Versaw—brother to Francis—moved from New York State in 1845, with his wife, to Michigan, and bought of Napoleon Smith 40 acres of land on the river, the farm being the one now occupied by Ernest Tabor. In 1850 Versaw left Michigan for the Pacific, whence, however, he returned in 1851 and settled upon the farm which he now occupies.

Other early settlers on the river were a Mr. Ferguson and his son-in-law, Jacob Young, who subsequently left the township and have to-day no descendants therein. John Cowen, who settled near Ferguson, sold his place to Hiram Herriek and moved to Royalton. S. H. Salpaugh and Cicero Towner, of New York, located on the river in 1851. Mr. Salpaugh still lives on the place he first occupied. In the part of the township removed from the river, mention may be made of Benjamin Clifton, of South Bend, Ind.,

who in 1845 purchased 500 acres of land on section 24, and with his family moved upon his possessions. He lived there until 1856, when he moved to Berrien, after selling the larger part of his purchase of 500 acres to Mr. John Gano.

In 1844, Isaac W. Chadwick, a young man living in Chautauqua Co., N. Y., started from home for Wisconsin, where he intended to locate. When he reached Buffalo he became so favorably impressed with the reports he heard there of the advantages of Michigan, that he resolved to go to that State instead of Wisconsin, and journeying by way of Lake Erie to Detroit, walked from that place to Pipestone township, where he found one Mr. Abbott, a friend, with whom he stopped. There Isaac was joined soon afterwards by his father and mother, with whom came also two children. They all lived with Mr. Abbott until May, 1845, when Isaac bought 40 acres of land on section 11, now in Sodus township, the place being the present property of De Golyer King. The land was new, and Isaac with his father entered at once upon the business of clearing it. All lived there until 1854, when they removed to Iowa, where they remained three years, but, disliking that region, returned again to Sodus, where Isaac bought the place he now occupies, and with him there his father lived until his death, in 1873. Isaac's brother William, who came out in 1844 with his father, worked in various places until 1847, and then settled upon a place now occupied by the United Brethren church in Sodus, his purchase having been made from Hickson W. Field, who had sold land to Isaac, and who was the speculative owner also of large tracts of land in the vicinity. William followed Isaac to Iowa in 1855, returned to Sodus in 1860, went back to Iowa in 1862, and now lives there.

Abner Buckman, a young man living in Ohio, walked to Michigan in 1844, and visited Pipestone township, where he remained two years, and then located in the present township of Sodus, upon the place he now occupies. The country was new, and Mr. Buckman was a pioneer in that part in every sense of the word. His brother Edward, who settled near him about 1842, died there in 1860.

James Haskins, now of Pipestone, was then a settler upon the place now occupied by John Buckman; and adjoining Abner Buckman on the west was Hiram Ryther, who soon moved away after selling out to Daniel Lawrence, who died there. The property is now occupied by his heirs.

Jonathan Foster and his father Solomon worked at Larue's saw-mill when it was being erected, and subsequently settled in the town, although not permanently. Jonathan was a strong Methodist, and frequently preached on Sundays at the town school-house. He was radical in his religious views, and sought upon every occasion to urge them upon whoever chanced to be near. One day, sitting with other laborers at dinner, he took occasion to lecture one Doyle, a Catholic, and persistently attempted to convert him to the Methodist faith. Doyle was much annoyed but not convinced by Foster's arguments, and more than once requested him to desist. Foster, however, plied his persuasive efforts all the more, until his victim, becoming incensed beyond endurance, suddenly put his hand

into the gravy-dish, and with one swoop of his arm so bespattered Foster with the greasy liquid that he fled in confusion and dismay from the scene, and never after attempted to argue theologically with the emphatic Doyle.

Among the early settlers of Berrien County who are now living in Sodus is John B. Rush, who came with his father, Henry Rush, from Virginia to Berrien township in 1835; George Keigley, who settled in the county in 1840; and Wallace Tabor, who settled at about the same time. Sarah Dunbar, wife of Lyman Dunbar, and daughter of John Johnston (who settled in Berrien County, 1825), was the first white female child born in Berrien County, and now lives in Sodus. Her brother, born at the same place and two years earlier, died at the age of twelve years.

Many of the early settlers in Sodus followed the river for a livelihood, even after becoming settlers, for that avenue of industry offered a means of obtaining funds to supply pressing necessities, of which the pioneers invariably stood in need without possessing the means to obtain them. As a general rule, what ready money they could command went for their land, and while awaiting the growth of crops they were of course compelled to labor for others to obtain the needed cash for the family support. Employment on the river was almost always obtainable, for the river carrying trade in the pioneer days engaged many boats and many people, and so it was that the Sodus pioneers, like the pioneers in all the river townships, were boatmen to a greater or less extent.

Luke Sharrai, who has been mentioned as having followed the river for some time after he bought land in Sodus, built the first finished frame house in the town. Ebenezer Farley, also a boatman and a steamboat captain, erected the first frame for a house, but he did not finish it, and thus Sharrai's seems entitled to the precedence.

#### ROADS.

The State opened roads in 1842, running north and south through the township, but town roads were at that time exceedingly few. Even at that date many settlers were compelled to cut out roads to the farms upon which they proposed to locate. Along the river this want of roads was not so badly felt, because the river itself offered an excellent thoroughfare by which pioneers could reach river farms, and for this reason there appeared to be no haste towards laying out roads in that region.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL LIST.

Upon the application of John Gano and 243 other citizens of Pipestone, a portion of that territory was set off and organized, Oct. 11, 1859, into a separate township with the name of Sodus. At a preliminary meeting of the applicants, Mr. David S. Rector was called upon to suggest a name for the proposed township, and when he presented the name of Sodus, in recollection of Sodus, N. Y., whence he came to Michigan, that designation was adopted. The first township-meeting was held at the Rector school-house, on the first Monday in April, 1860, and from that time to 1879, inclusive, the offices of supervisor, clerk, and treasurer have been filled by the following-named persons:

- 1860.—Supervisor, B. S. Carpenter; Clerk, R. E. Hull; Treasurer, James Trowbridge.
- 1861-62.—Supervisor, Josephus Fisher; Clerk, James S. Twitchell; Treasurer, P. W. Webb.
- 1863.—Supervisor, Josephus Fisher; Clerk, Luther Hemingway; Treasurer, P. W. Webb.
- 1864-66.—Supervisor, Josephus Fisher; Clerk, Charles T. Hogue; Treasurer, N. C. Brown.
- 1867.—Supervisor, Josephus Fisher; Clerk, Luther Hemingway; Treasurer, Charles T. Hogue.
- 1868.—Supervisor, Josephus Fisher; Clerk, Charles T. Hogue; Treasurer, P. W. Webb.
- 1869.—Supervisor, Frederick T. King; Clerk, Charles T. Hogue; Treasurer, Orrin Brown.
- 1870.—Supervisor, Josephus Fisher; Clerk, Frederick F. King; Treasurer, David Daniels.
- 1871.—Supervisor, Luther Hemingway; Clerk, Frederick F. King; Treasurer, F. R. Cowles.
- 1872-73.—Supervisor, Frederick F. King; Clerk, Charles T. Hogue; Treasurer, William L. King.
- 1874-75.—Supervisor, Frederick F. King; Clerk, Charles T. Hogue; Treasurer, Josephus Fisher.
- 1876.—Supervisor, Robert M. Hogue; Clerk, Charles T. Hogue; Treasurer, Josephus Fisher.
- 1877.—Supervisor, Robert M. Hogue; Clerk, Charles T. Hogue; Treasurer, Orrin Brown.
- 1878.—Supervisor, Orson Ingalsbee; Clerk, Joseph H. Davis; Treasurer, John F. Hogue.
- 1879.—Supervisor, Orson Ingalsbee; Clerk, John G. Fisher; Treasurer, John F. Hogue; Commissioner of Highways, Josephus Fisher; Superintendent of Schools, Robert M. Hogue; School Inspector, Charles T. Hogue; Constables, Allen J. King, John Denner, A. W. Sherwood.

The justices of the peace serving in 1879 were Orson Ingalsbee, William L. King, and Robert M. Hogue. The township board was composed of John G. Fisher, Orson Ingalsbee, and Robert M. Hogue. The assessed valuation of the township in 1879 was \$136,878.

#### SCHOOLS.

In 1845 a town school was established in that part of Pipestone now known as Sodus, and from that date the educational interests of the youth of that section have received liberal attention.

Sodus contained in 1879 seven school districts, of which two were fractional. The board of inspectors comprised R. M. Hogue, Charles T. Hogue, and John G. Fisher. The school report made Sept. 1, 1879, gave the following statistics for the year ending at that date: Number of districts, 7; number of children of school age, 355; total value of school property, \$3925; amount paid for teachers' wages, \$1142.

#### RELIGIOUS WORSHIP.

Settlements were so few during the years preceding 1845 that neither teaching nor preaching were demanded, since, in the one case, there were but few children to receive such benefit, and in the other the little community was not able to provide adequate support for a minister however much religious worship might be deemed a necessity. The histories of the churches of the township are given below.

*United Brethren Church.*—A class of this denomination was organized in Sodus, in 1861, at the Rector school-house, with a membership of upwards of 30. The class worshipped at the school-house until 1869, when, a union with the United Brethren class of Shanghai being effected, a house of worship was built in Sodus, and in it services have since



been held. The membership is now 40. The class-leaders are John Q. Buckman and John Franz. The pastor is I. W. Pattee, and the trustees John Q. Buckman, John Rush, and John Franz.

*The Sodus Methodist Episcopal Class* was organized as the Lower Pipestone Class, March 31, 1858, with the following members: James A. Kright, leader, and Cynthia A. Kright, Luke, Sophia, Frank, Rebecca, Levi, and Michael Versaw, Samuel, Grace, and Emma Garrett, Leander McDougall, Frank and George Williams, Theda Franklin, Lois Hemingway, Mary Jane and George Hemingway, Nancy Ann McDougall, Martha Jane Hemingway, Nehemiah and Polly Ann Babcock.

Rev. Thomas T. George was the preacher in charge of the class, which was attached to the Berrien circuit, Kalamazoo district, Michigan Conference. In 1860 the name of the class was changed to that of Sodus, and in 1878 it was attached to the Millburg circuit.

The preachers in charge following Mr. George were Revs. S. D. McOmber, George A. Van Horn, D. S. Haviland, E. D. Bacon, Francis Glass, J. H. Richards, E. L. Kellogg, David Burns, N. M. Steele, J. N. Odin, and A. N. Eldred, the latter being the pastor at present. Services are held in the Tabor school-house once every two weeks. The class has a present membership of 20. Joseph Wyrick is the leader, and Horace Tabor steward.

*The Bethel Class* was organized by Rev. J. R. Odin, in the union church, March, 1877. In September, 1878, when Rev. A. N. Eldred, the present pastor, took charge, the members numbered 19, as follows: Orrin Brown, Daniel and Rebecca Moore, Mary Stump, W. S., Elizabeth, and Clarence Burdick, Adeline Earl, Amanda Nye, Frank, Rebecca, Melinda, and Marian Versaw, Celia Barker, Harriet, Bessie, and David Clinton, Levi Deaner, and Mrs. McGoldrick.

Orrin Brown has been the class-leader since the organization. The membership is now 17. Services are held once every fortnight in the union church.

*The Christian Church.*—The Christian, or Disciple, Church was organized about 1867, in the Mount Pleasant school-house, by Elder William Roe, of Buchanan. The articles of faith adopted at the organization read as follows: "We, the undersigned, pledging fidelity to Jesus as the Messiah, being planted upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief cornerstone, and taking the Bible as our only rule of faith and practice, do band ourselves together as a congregation of disciples of Jesus, and do covenant with God and each other to observe the ordinances of the Lord's house and to the best of our ability to attend to all duties and obligations devolved upon us in the Word of life."

The signers were Josephus Fisher, Charles T. Hogue, William Gano, John Calvin, Sarah Garrison, Jane Gano, Sarah Stevens, Harriet Carpenter, Roby A. Olney, Sarah O. Merrill, Anna Garrison, Mary Kelsey, Lucinda Gano, Phoebe A. Fisher, Mary Evans, Hannah Brehart, Louisa Gilbert, Hannah Hogue, Hester A. Davis, Joseph A. Davis, John Carpenter, Eliphaz Stephens, Samuel Roberts, Nathan Olney, John Gano, Abram Evans, John Fisher.

The first elders chosen were Josephus Fisher and Charles

T. Hogue, the deacons John Calvin and William Gano, and the secretary Charles T. Hogue. The pastors succeeding Mr. Roe were Revs. Edmondson, Reese, and Lucas. There is at present no pastor, but the vacancy is likely to be filled soon. Preaching is ordinarily provided once every two weeks in the Mount Pleasant school-house. The church membership is now 90. The deacons are Charles T. Hogue, Orlando Hart, and Alva Pegg. The elders are Josephus Fisher, Joseph Davis, and Henry Burton, and the secretary Charles T. Hogue.

*The Union Sunday-school* meets every Sabbath in the union church. Joseph Strome is the superintendent, and he is assisted by five teachers. The attendance of scholars has reached as high as 100, but numbers at present only about 50.

*The Church of God.*—This society was organized in 1855, at the Stump school-house, by Rev. Mr. Gillespie, and had as members the following: John Stump, Sr., and wife, J. B. Harman and wife, George Crall and wife, George Deerduff, Daniel Stauffer and wife, John B. Stauffer and wife. The first elders chosen were John Stump, Sr., and George Crall, and the first deacon George Deerduff. The pastors of the church following Mr. Gillespie have been Elder R. H. Bolton,—the general evangelist, who preached for the society four years,—Revs. Bright, Bassore, Hull, White, Redding, and Oliver. In 1871 the society completed a house of worship in the northern part of the township, designated it as the Union Church, and dedicated it February 6th of that year. The trustees then chosen were George Deerduff, George B. Crall, Joseph Strome, James A. Kright, and Jacob B. Harman.

The church grew in strength during the first decade of its existence, and in 1865 numbered 72 members. Subsequent to that period removals weakened it, and latterly it has for some time been without a pastor. Efforts are now being put forth looking towards a revival of the society, with a good promise of success.

#### SODUS GRANGE, No. 123, P. OF H.

This grange was organized Nov. 10, 1873, with the following members: F. F. King, M.; Josephus Fisher, O.; Henry Burton, L.; John E. King, Chaplain; Charles T. Hogue, Sec.; Orlando Hart, Treas.; William Burton, Steward; Samuel Roberts, Assistant Steward; Ernest Tabor, G.; Jennie Burton, Ceres; Louisa King, Pomona; Lizzie Tabor, Flora; Sarah Stump, Lady Assistant Steward, and Israel M. Allen, John J. Murphy, Abraham Likes, Albert Shell, Phineas Brant, John C. Fisher, John K. Calvin, Leonard M. Keen, Edwin Burton, Wallis Tabor, F. King, Julia Tabor, Hannah Hogue, Phoebe A. Fisher, Urania Fisher, Mary J. Shell, Nettie Murphy, Ellen Snow.

The grange meets every fortnight at the Mount Pleasant school-house. The officers are now Jacob Helmick, M.; Charles Rector, O.; Louisa King, L.; William Burton, Chaplain; Charles Hogue, Sec.; Josephus Fisher, Treas.; Edwin Burton, Steward; Israel Allen, Assistant Steward; Charles Lamore, G.; Mary Burton, Ceres; Georgiana Lamore, Flora; Hannah Hogue, Pomona; Alice Fisher, Lady Assistant Steward. Oct. 1, 1879, the membership of the grange was 50.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

## JOHN B. RUSH.

Among the representative farmers of Sodus township we find John B. Rush, who was born in Frederick Co., Va., July 18, 1825. The father—John Rush—moved to Ohio about one year and a half after the birth of John B., settling in Greene County, seven miles from Xenia, the county-seat, where he purchased eighty acres of land, and engaged in farming for ten years. In 1836 he moved to Berrien township, Berrien Co., Mich., where he entered ninety-nine acres of land. June 8, 1851, John B. Rush married Mahala, daughter of Joses and Hulda Reames. Of this union were born eight children, viz., Hulda J., born July 2, 1852; Ueoba B., born Sept. 20, 1854; Nancy E., born Aug. 15, 1856; Ida E., born Oct. 8, 1858; Henry J., born June 5, 1861; John F., born May 18, 1863, died June 27, 1867; William E., born July 12, 1865; Almeda E., born June 1, 1871. After his marriage, Mr. Rush rented his father's farm for four years. In 1853 he bought a farm of one hundred and sixty acres in Royalton township, now Sodus; moved on this farm in 1855; built a small frame house, which is still standing, and can be seen just in the rear of his new home, a view of which, accompanied by the portraits of himself and wife, can be seen on another page of this work. He settled in Michigan when to be a farmer here required something more than plowing the ground and sowing the grain; for felling the timber, rolling logs, burning brush, etc., was the work that preceded the easier and more desirable work in farming.

Mr. Rush has been a member of the district school board ever since he has been in the township. For thirty-two years he has been connected with the United Brethren Church; ten years of that time has served as trustee of that church. Is in politics a Democrat. Mahala Rush died Jan. 11, 1873, in Berrien Co., Mich. In her fifteenth year she joined the United Brethren Church, of which she remained a faithful member until she heard the welcome summons, "Come up higher." She was ever ready to help the afflicted, and had a kind word for all. The careworn servant of God always found a home at her house. Her husband and children deeply feel their loss.

## JOSEPHUS FISHER.

No citizen of Sodus township is more closely allied with all its interests than the subject of this sketch, Josephus Fisher, who was born in Portage Co., Ohio, Oct. 14, 1828. His educational advantages were limited. Schools of that day were not good, and if they had been of the best, farmers' sons were then needed at home, and usually went to school only a few months in the winter. On July 4, 1850, Josephus married Miss Phebe Ann, daughter of John and Jane Gano. They have had six children, the first-born dying before being named; John,—at this time clerk of Sodus township; Usania, Alice, George, and Edna. Four are living, two married and two living at home. After his marriage, Mr. Fisher farmed in Ohio four years on a farm given him by his father. In January, 1854, he moved to

Sodus, purchasing ninety-six acres on section 24. He found some difference in farming this land and the cultivated farm he had left in Ohio. His first home here was such as all the early settlers had,—a log house. He has made an addition of one hundred and eight acres to his farm, and many improvements on it.



JOSEPHUS FISHER.

In 1861 he was elected supervisor of Sodus township, and filled this position ten and a half years and resigned. He was elected treasurer, which office he filled five years. In 1879 he was elected highway commissioner. He is a member of the Grange Lodge, No. 123, of Sodus township, and was Master one year. At this time he is Treasurer of the lodge.

He is a Republican in politics. He has been a member of the Disciples Church for twenty-six years, serving as elder of this body for ten years. His father's family consisted of nine children,—six girls and three boys,—all living in different States. Mrs. Fisher's father was one of the early settlers of the county. Her father's family consisted of six children,—three boys and three girls,—four of whom are living in Sodus township.

## CHAPTER XLIII.

## THREE OAKS TOWNSHIP.\*

Location and Natural Features—Original Entries of Land—Settlement of the Township—Organization and List of Township Officers—Village of Three Oaks—Avery Station—Post-Offices in the Township—Town Hall and Library—Schools—Churches—Societies and Orders.

## LOCATION AND NATURAL FEATURES.

THE territory now embraced in Three Oaks township was originally a part of New Buffalo, but was set off in 1856 by the Board of Supervisors.

The name of Three Oaks was first given when the post-office was established in 1854, in consequence of three very large oak-trees standing on the south side of the railroad,

\* By Austin N. Hungerford.

near the west line of section 2, and near enough together to give, when in full leaf, the appearance of being one tree.

The territory of Three Oaks comprises all (except the west range of sections) of township 8 south, in range 20 west, and all (except the western one) of the south tier of sections in township 7 south, of range 20 west.

The surface in the south and southeast part of the town is high and rolling, and the soil is warm and loamy. The northeasterly part of the township, embracing parts of sections 1, 12, and 13, are marsh lands. The remaining portions of the township are undulating, with a rich clayey soil. For grass the township is not excelled by any section of the county. It is also good for corn, and as the country is improved and worked, the adaptability of these lands for wheat production is more and more apparent.

The territory of Three Oaks was originally covered with timber, with no openings or prairies. The kinds of timber were, as in order named, maple, beech, elm, bass, ash (white, black, blue, and gray), sycamore, oak, cherry, hickory, butternut, black walnut, whitewood or tulip, tamarack, black mulberry, cucumber, hackberry, ironwood, soft maple, with a little pine. The timber was of large growth, with thick underbrush. The marshes on section 13 supplied the early settlers with a fair quality of hay. Those in parts of sections 11 and 12 produced many bushels of cranberries each year until 1846, when the vines were nearly destroyed by fires set by hunters.

From the first settlement up to the hard winter of 1842-43, the common red deer were quite abundant, but that winter nearly exterminated them. In 1853, '54, '55 deer were again very abundant, and large numbers were killed each year. From 1855-67 they were common; as many as 40 to 50 were killed each year. From 1867 to 1874 they were less common, from 5 to 20 only killed each year. They are occasionally seen now. Black, red, and striped foxes and gray squirrels, partridges, quails, and pigeons were common, though not abundant. Until the marshes were improved massasaugers were plenty, but they are quite rare now.

The township is well watered by the south branch of Galien River, which rises in Indiana and flows northerly and westerly to the southwest quarter of the township, when it runs northwesterly and joins a smaller branch in the southwest corner of section 8. The main branch runs westerly through the northwest corner of the township.

#### ORIGINAL ENTRIES OF LAND.

The following list is of original purchasers of land from the government on the different sections in Three Oaks township.

#### TOWNSHIP 7 SOUTH, RANGE 20 WEST.

- Section 32.—E. M. Shelton, V. L. Bradford, J. M. Curtis, Rathbone & Chapin.  
 Section 33.—V. L. Bradford, A. Cummings, R. Brown, Jr., J. Soule, W. B. Clark, Sherwood & Co., D. Robb.  
 Section 34.—S. Pierce, William Hammond, A. Johnson, N. Willard, J. Pierce, F. Camp.  
 Section 35.—J. Pierce, — Gilbert, G. B. Avery, Conrad Elmendorf, Moses Chamberlain, R. C. Brayton.  
 Section 36.—Sherwood & Co., N. Willard and H. Bishop, R. S. Morrison, N. Willard.

#### TOWNSHIP 8 SOUTH, RANGE 20 WEST.

- Section 1.—G. B. Avery, H. Rounds, D. Robb, Elkannah Ryther, Alonzo Bennett, H. M. Boyce, Thomas Strange and Seymour B. Sprague.  
 Section 2.—Hammond, E. Stoner, D. Robb, M. Chamberlain, John Stauffer.  
 Section 3.—Trauman A. Clough, W. Hammond, J. Stauffer.  
 Section 4.—Rathbone & Chapin, D. Robb, Wiseman & Ladlin, J. Temple, D. Robb.  
 Section 5.—W. Hammond, J. Little, Joseph Archer, Wiseman & Ladlin, J. Temple.  
 Section 8.—Alton Buel.  
 Section 9.—J. Temple, T. Maudlin, D. Robb, W. B. Clark.  
 Section 10.—Benjamin Carver, D. Andrews, D. Robb, R. Love, N. Willard.  
 Section 11.—D. Andrews, T. Kenworthy, Seth Smith, Othniel Russell.  
 Section 12.—H. Chamberlain, B. Brandon, B. Nowell, E. Ryther.  
 Section 13.—H. Chamberlain, W. P. G. Magness.  
 Section 14.—V. Nash, N. Johnson, D. Andrews, E. Collin, R. B. Hughes, J. Henderson, E. Ryther, G. Smith.  
 Section 15.—D. Robb, J. Fuller, D. Andrews, M. Chamberlain, J. Love, J. Haas.  
 Section 16.—Isaac Love, Ira L. Banes, R. Goit, Daniel Smith, Davis & Warren.  
 Section 17.—J. Love, T. Maudlin, D. Robb, G. Taylor, B. Maudlin, R. Love.  
 Section 20.—J. Haas, G. Schniebel, F. Bronson, Benjamin B. Kercheval.  
 Section 21.—F. Bronson, C. Jewett, D. Robb, C. K. Green.  
 Section 22.—J. Love, Isaac O. Adams, M. Chamberlain, William N. Smitzer, Wessel Whittaker.  
 Section 23.—F. Bronson, W. Whittaker, D. Andrews, T. Bronson.  
 Section 24.—S. Sheard, R. Love, J. Hatfield, T. K. Green, W. P. G. Magness, W. Goit.

#### SETTLEMENT OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The supposed harbor advantages of New Buffalo led many of the early settlers of that village to buy up the lands adjoining, with a view to speculation rather than settlement, and of course these were held at speculation prices. The financial disasters of 1837 defeated the hopes of making New Buffalo a great business centre. During a few succeeding years non-residents held the land, and but few sales were made until 1850, when more rapid emigration commenced. The land was wet by reason of the large timber and heavy underbrush. Upon the building of the Michigan Central Railroad, the consequent demand for cordwood and lumber made large openings, and the lands began to be reclaimed. It is estimated that the average annual cut of cordwood in the township from 1850 to 1875 was 12,000 cords, valued from \$18,000 to \$30,000.

The timbered lands were covered largely with leeks, which often started in the spring before the snow was off, and were of great assistance to the early settlers in furnishing pasturage for cattle. If milch cows fed upon them the butter made from their milk had a strong leeky taste, and no one unless accustomed to it could eat it. To accomplish the feat with success it was said to be necessary to eat an onion first. For many years butter-buyers were very careful in buying to be sure that the butter was not thus offensively flavored. A story in point is told of Jacob Luther, who was for a long time a merchant, both at Dayton and Buchanan. A woman came to his store one morning with a package of butter which she asked him to purchase. He replied that he would like it very much if it was not "rampy." She answered by saying she had often heard about ramps, and drawing one from her pocket, which



she had plucked from the roadside, asked him if that was a ramp. He said it was. She replied she wanted him to make sure, and asked him to taste it and tell her. He did so and told her it certainly was one. She then opened her package of butter for his examination. He declared it to be the finest butter they had taken in for some time, purchased it, and sent it to his own home. Upon reaching home at noon his wife met him with the remark, "Jacob, why did you send up such rampy butter?" He then discovered how neatly the old lady had deceived him.

The first settler in the township was Richard Love, a native of Ohio, who in the spring of 1835 bought land in the east half of the northwest quarter of section 24, at the foot of a high hill and near a large spring. His son, William M. Love, owns a part of the original farm.

Sylvester Shead, and his son, Erasmus N. Shead, natives of New York, settled here about 1836. Harry H. Shead now lives where his father, Sylvester, settled, on the east half of section 23. William H. Valentine, living on section 24, is a son of William Valentine, who was an early settler in Galien township, adjoining.

John Hatfield, a native of Virginia, settled about 1836 in the northwest quarter of the northeast quarter of section 24, where George Ray now lives. P. G. Magness, of North Carolina, also settled on section 24, where Daniel Savage lives. Vincent Nash and Enoch Lewis, of Virginia, settled on section 14. D. F. McCaskey owns where Mr. Nash settled. Levi Paddock, a native of New York, settled on section 22, now owned by E. Sherwood Martin, a native of Indiana. Mr. Paddock was for several years justice of the peace, and was supervisor in 1844; he was a man of great physical strength. He died in 1873, at the age of ninety years, a few miles south, in Galena, Ind. Joseph Love, a brother-in-law of Richard and Elkanah Ryther, and Robert R. Laine, of Tennessee, settled on section 17. Mr. Osgood lately owned the property settled on by Laine. Geo. Fisher settled adjoining Wm. Hammond, on section 34. John Love, a son of Joseph, settled on section 15, where Judson Sawin lives. The land settled by Love and Ryther is now principally owned by the heirs of Thomas McKie.

Joseph Love, who settled on section 17 prior to 1840, was a man of good judgment and strong sense, but without education. He had been involved in several petty lawsuits, and was not always satisfied with the decision of the justice who tried the suits. He desired to be elected a justice of the peace, and asked one of his neighbors to support him for that office. His neighbor replied, "Uncle Joe, you may know law enough, but you cannot read or write." "No matter about that," said Uncle Joe; "Jake (his son) can read and John can write, and I can judge them all like the d—l." The people, however, did not like the idea, and Uncle Joe was not elected.

William Hammond, one of the early settlers, was a man of great energy and one of the local politicians, who was officious in the town caucuses, and sometimes was a delegate to the Democratic county conventions.

Vincent Nash, now living on Rolling Prairie, Ind., was a good talker. Many years ago, Mr. Henry Chamberlain called at Sylvester Shead's, and making inquiry as to the

health of the family, was informed that Mrs. Shead was quite ill. Expressing some surprise, and asking what the matter was, Mr. Shead, with a laugh, for which he was noted, said, "Well, Nash came up here yesterday morning, and he and the old lady had a talking-match and Nash beat her, and she was so ashamed of being out-talked by a Hoosier that she went to bed sick;" and the old gentleman had a hearty laugh.

Moses Chamberlain, a native of New Hampshire, came to New Buffalo in 1836, and located ten 80-acre lots in the present townships of New Buffalo, Three Oaks, and Chickaming. He intended to settle on the lake-shore, but soon after the prospects of New Buffalo were ruined, and he did not settle until 1843, and then moved to the south-east quarter of section 15, Three Oaks. He reserved the southwest quarter of section 2, where the village of Three Oaks now stands, and the northeast quarter of section 20, in Chickaming, on the lake-shore, and the southwest quarter of the northwest quarter of section 23, in Chickaming township, now owned by Thomas McKie. A saw-mill, the first in the township, was early erected on this section by David H. Cottrell. Mr. Chamberlain did not remove to this place with his family until 1843, when he came around by the lakes and landed at Chicago, and then moved by teams to New Buffalo, arriving Oct. 7, 1843. He stopped with Jacob Gerrish, and in the winter following came to the lot on section 15, Three Oaks. Here he erected the first frame house in the township, and on the place now owned by his son, the Hon. William Chamberlain. The children of Mr. Chamberlain now living are the Hon. Mellen Chamberlain, of Boston; Mary F., now Mrs. Hale E. Crosby, of New Buffalo; and Henry and William Chamberlain, now living in Three Oaks. The Hon. Mellen Chamberlain was at one time chief justice of the municipal court of Boston, and is at present librarian of the Boston City Library. The Hon. Henry Chamberlain, who in 1854 commenced the settlement of the village of Three Oaks, was supervisor of New Buffalo township in 1845, before Three Oaks and Chickaming were set off; was elected to that position when only two weeks past twenty-one years of age, and held the office for many years. He was a member of the Legislature of Michigan in the session of 1849; Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Michigan in 1852; was nominated for Governor, in opposition to Governor Bagley, in 1874, by the Democratic and Liberal parties, and defeated by only 5000 votes, against a Republican majority of 57,000 the year before. The Hon. William Chamberlain, the youngest son, is living at Three Oaks, and engaged in mercantile business. He was elected township clerk when twenty-one years of age, was postmaster six years, county superintendent of the poor nineteen years, president of the Berrien County Pioneer Society, president of the village of Three Oaks, elected to the House of Representatives in 1870-72, elected to the Senate in 1876-78, and prominent as member of various committees on charitable and penal institutions. He was president *pro tempore* of the Senate, Jan. 17, 1879.

In the same year that Moses Chamberlain came in Samuel P. Webb and Asa H. Jacobs settled on section 35, where Jacobs built a saw-mill, to which, in 1846, a small

grist-mill was added. The property is now owned by Henry Platt and Levi Morrow. No other settlers came in until after the opening of the Michigan Central Railroad, when, in 1850, Henry Chamberlain settled on section 2, where he built a cabin and commenced clearing up the land where the village of Three Oaks now stands. Thomas Stanager settled on the southeast quarter of section 1, now Avery's Station, where he still lives. Soon after, 10 or 15 families located near them, on the line of the railroad, but few or none of them became permanent settlers.

In the fall of 1852, John Louis Hess, a native of Switzerland, after living in Pennsylvania, Chicago, and other places, bought of Henry Chamberlain 80 acres of the east half of the northeast quarter of section 9, and 20 acres of the east half of southeast quarter of section 3, lying south of the railroad, where he still lives. His son, Samuel Hess, has long been justice of the peace, and was county treasurer six years. He is now living at Three Oaks.

Frederick Rhulow settled in the village. His property was purchased by Henry H. Pike, and was laid out as part of the village plat. Jacob Houser, Joseph Strable, Max Wetzler, and others from Bavaria and Switzerland, became permanent settlers, and were forerunners of the large German settlement in the township.

Dr. Hiram B. Wilcox, a native of New York, came to an adjoining township in Indiana in 1834. He attended lectures at Chicago and at Cleveland, graduating at the latter place. He practiced his profession at Galena, Ind.; but for twelve years previous to his removal to Three Oaks, in 1860, his practice reached into the southern tier of Berrien County. He still lives in Three Oaks.

E. Sherwood Martin, a native of New Jersey, bought the farm of Levi Paddock in 1846, and is still living on the farm. Three sons are in business at Three Oaks. Abram, a brother, settled on section 23. A son, Isaac, is living in Three Oaks. There were six of the brothers,—Martin, who came about 1848; John Abram and Sherwood settled in this township; Isaac, Jacob, and William settled on land adjoining in Indiana.

Gilbert B. Avery, a native of Connecticut, came here in 1854, with Thomas Love, and built a steam saw-mill at Avery's Station. At that time he was master mechanic of the Michigan Central Railroad, a position which he held for twenty years. He lived in Detroit until 1859, when he removed to Avery's Station. He was afterwards master mechanic of the Chicago, Burlington and Quincy Railroad. His widow still lives at Avery's.

Thomas Love, a native of Virginia, was clerk of the county from 1844 to 1848, acting treasurer of the county for many years, and is now county surveyor. He built the mill at Avery's Station, with Mr. Avery, in 1854, and then moved to the place where he still lives. He first settled at Berrien Springs, the county-seat, where he was largely engaged in lumbering, and he was early one of the foremost men of the county.

Six brothers—John, Thomas, Anthony, William, Charles, and Edward McCarten—all settled near the intersection of New Buffalo, Chickaming, and Three Oaks about 1863. John settled in this township, in section 32, purchasing the greater portion of the section. His family are still living

there. The brothers are near the township line,—William and Thomas living in New Buffalo, and Anthony, Charles, and Edward in Chickaming.\*

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The township of Three Oaks, with that of Chickaming, was taken from the territory of New Buffalo and organized by action of the Board of Supervisors in the year 1856, the order of the board directing the holding of the first election being as follows:

"Notice is hereby given that the first annual town-meeting for the election of township officers in each of the townships of Three Oaks, Chickaming, and New Buffalo, in the county of Berrien, State of Michigan, will be held on the first Monday in April, A.D. 1856, as follows, to wit:

"In the township of Three Oaks, at the school-house near Chamberlain's side-track; and that Abram Martin, J. D. Fitch, and Henry Chamberlain are duly authorized to preside at such township-meeting, and to perform all the duties required by the statute in such case made and provided.

"By order of the Board of Supervisors of Berrien Co., Mich., March 10, 1856.

"WILLIAM S. MERRELL, *Clerk of the Board of Supervisors.*"

The first township-meeting was held in accordance with the above order. Ninety-one votes were cast, and the following-named officers were elected, viz.: Henry Chamberlain, Supervisor; E. Sherwood Martin, Henry Chamberlain, Thomas Love, Justices of the Peace; Cyrus C. Ryther, Township Clerk; Samuel K. Donovan, Township Treasurer; Nathaniel Finch, William Chamberlain, Erasmus N. Shead, Commissioners of Highways; George W. Shead, Nathaniel Finch, Richard A. Newell, Henry M. Blair, Constables; J. D. Fitch, School Inspector; Samuel P. Webb, John C. Collins, Directors of the Poor. Overseers of Highway: District No. 1, Harry H. Shead; No. 2, Abram Martin; No. 3, William Nash; No. 4, Daniel Smith; No. 5, George Myers; No. 6, Thomas Love; No. 7, George Hatfield; No. 8, Nathaniel Finch; No. 9, John Hess; No. 10, Robert R. Sawin.

The following is a list of the supervisors, town clerks, treasurers, school inspectors, and justices of the peace of the township from 1857 to 1879, inclusive:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1857-58, Thomas Love; 1859, Henry Chamberlain; 1860, Jonas L. Hicks; 1861, Thomas C. Bradley; 1862, Henry Chamberlain; 1863-64, James L. McKie; 1865, Samuel W. Chamberlain; 1866, Henry Chamberlain; 1867-68, Samuel Hess; 1869, James L. McKie; 1870, J. M. K. Hilton; 1871, Edward K. Warner; 1872-73, Isaac W. Martin; 1874, John D. Greenanuyer; 1875-76, Peter Strehle; 1877-78, William H. Breece; 1879, James L. McKie.

#### TOWN CLERKS.

1857, William Chamberlain; 1858, James L. McKie; 1859, Jacob M. Smece; 1860, Samuel W. Chamberlain; 1861, Samuel Hess; 1862, Frederick P. Warren; 1863, Hiram B. Wilcox; 1864, William Chamberlain; 1865-66, Hiram B. Wilcox; 1867, Thomas C. Bradley; 1868-76, William H. Breece; 1876-77, Daniel F. Brommersheim; 1878, Henry N. Chamberlain; 1879, Daniel F. Brommersheim.

#### TREASURERS.

1857, Samuel K. Donovan; 1858, Luther Sage; 1859-60, Samuel Hess; 1861, Thomas C. Bradley; 1862, James L. McKie; 1863, John Martin; 1864, Samuel W. Chamberlain; 1865-66, Horace

\* The history of Three Oaks and New Buffalo, is largely prepared from information furnished by the Hon. Henry Chamberlain.

R. Pike; 1867, Luther Sage; 1868-69, William K. Sawyer; 1870-71, Isaac W. Martin; 1872-73, Peter Strehle; 1874, Thomas McCann; 1875-76, Henry N. Chamberlain; 1877, Lycurgus Jeffries; 1878-79, Peter Strehle.

#### SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1857, Jonas L. Hicks; 1858, William Chamberlain; 1859, Jonas L. Hicks; 1860, William Chamberlain; 1861, John S. Martin; 1862, William Chamberlain; 1863, Jacob M. Smece; 1864, Julius D. Fitch, John S. Martin; 1865, Isaac W. Martin; 1866, Porter B. Parry; 1867, Isaac W. Martin; 1868, Frederick P. Warren; 1869, Julius D. Fitch; 1870, James W. Ransom; 1871, Perry G. Drew; 1872, Joshua Chatterton; 1873, George M. Valentine; 1874, James L. McKie, Henry Bennett; 1875, Henry H. Bennett; 1876, Thomas Love; 1877, Isaac W. Martin; 1878-79, James H. Hatfield.

#### SUPERINTENDENTS OF SCHOOLS.

1875, Porter B. Parry; 1876-77, Calvin W. Conner; 1878, Frederick F. Sovereign; 1879, Porter B. Parry.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1857, Erasmus N. Shead; 1858, Henry Chamberlain, Abram Martin; 1859, Thomas Love; 1860, Thomas C. Bradley; 1861, Erasmus N. Shead; 1862, Henry Chamberlain, Samuel Hess; 1863, Ebenezer S. Martin; 1864, Samuel Hess, Thomas Love; 1865, Erasmus N. Shead; 1866, Robert D. Cross, Julius D. Fitch; 1867, Thomas Love; 1868, Samuel Hess; 1869, William K. Sawyer, Dewitt C. Miller; 1870, Jacob M. Smece, Thomas C. Bradley; 1871, Thomas Love; 1872, Jacob M. Smece; 1873, William K. Sawyer, Dwight Warren; 1874, Dwight Warren; 1875, Thomas Love; 1876, Samuel Hess; 1877, William K. White; 1878, James Atwell; 1879, Dwight Warren.

#### VILLAGE OF THREE OAKS.

In January, 1850, Henry Chamberlain, then living on the farm with his father, about a mile and a half south of the present village, had an offer to furnish 2000 cords of wood, at 7s. 6d. per cord, to be delivered on the cars at the side-track where the village of Three Oaks now stands. Owning land at that place, he took the contract, and while furnishing the wood was enabled at the same time to clear his lands without additional expense. In the year 1854 he, with Joseph G. Ames, erected a store at this place, and commenced selling goods. The Michigan Central Railroad passing this point made it a business centre. A post-office was established, under the name of Three Oaks, from three large oak-trees standing near each other. The township upon its organization assumed the name. In the same year a shoe-shop was opened by Samuel Hess, a blacksmith-shop by Simeon Turner, and a saloon by Nathaniel Finch. The first plat of the village was made by Henry Chamberlain, Dec. 30, 1857. Its growth was slow until 1863. Saw-mills were built in 1857, by Nathaniel Finch; 1863, by John M. K. Hilton, Asahel W. Fitch; and 1866, by Duncan McNichol. A stove- and heading-mill was built in 1862 by Frank Smith, on lot 30. It was known as the "Coffee-Mill." Handle-factories were built in 1868, by Budlong & Bennett; in 1869, by Jesse Sheffield; in 1874, by N. D. Lovely.

The first school-house was built of hewn logs, on lot No. 1, and is still standing. The house now in use was built in 1877. One was built in 1857, an addition in 1867, and it is now used as a Lutheran church. The town hall was erected in 1866, the Congregational church in 1870, the Methodist Episcopal church in 1878.

From 1863 to 1876 a large number of business houses were erected and occupied. The present population is

about 500 within the village limits, and about 200 near the limits. The village at present contains four churches (Congregational, Baptist, German Lutheran, and Methodist), a post-office, school-house, depot, express-office, three general stores, two drug, two hardware, four groceries, two saloons, two milliner, two wagon, and two blacksmith-shops, one livery-stable, two meat-markets, one bakery, one photograph-gallery, three boot- and shoe-stores, one barber-shop, one cooper-shop, two harness-shops, one saw-mill, two handle-factories, one printing-office,\* two jewelry-shops, and five physicians.

The act of incorporation of the village of Three Oaks was approved March 20, 1867. By that act it was provided that "All that tract of country situate within the township of Three Oaks, in the county of Berrien, in the State of Michigan, which is known and described as follows, to wit, the southwest quarter of the northwest quarter and the west half of the southwest quarter of section 2; the southeast quarter of the northeast quarter and the east half of the southeast quarter of section 3; the east half of the northeast quarter of section 10 and the west half of the northwest quarter of section 11, township 8 south, of range 20 west, be and the same is hereby made and constituted a town corporate, by the name, style, and title of the village of Three Oaks."

In accordance with the act of incorporation, an election was held on the 2d day of April, 1867, for the election of officers. At that meeting 61 votes were polled, and the following village officers were elected: William Chamberlain, President; Horace R. Pike, Robert D. Cross, Benjamin Sheffield, Rudolph B. Goit, Trustees; Thomas C. Bradley, Recorder; Luther Sage, Treasurer.

At the first meeting of the council the streets on the village plats were named, and it was ordered that the recorder make, or cause to be made, a map of the village, for the use of the council.

The following is a list of presidents, trustees, recorders, and treasurers from 1867 to the present time:

#### PRESIDENTS.

1868, William Chamberlain; 1869, William K. Sawyer; 1870, Robert D. Cross; 1871, Henry Chamberlain; 1872-73, Thomas McCann; 1874, John D. Miller; 1875, Owen Churchill; 1876, William Chamberlain; 1877-78, James L. McKie; 1879, Edward K. Warren.

#### TRUSTEES.

1868, Isaac W. Martin, M. F. Wilcox; 1869, John D. Miller, James L. McKie; 1870, Jesse Sheffield, John M. K. Hilton; 1871, E. L. Miller, Charles Close; 1872, E. G. Ely, Henry Landers; 1873, Isaac W. Martin, Jacob M. Smece; 1874, Simeon Francis, Peter Strehle; 1875, Rudolph B. Goit, Charles Close; 1876, Joshua Chatterton, Samuel Hess; 1877, Emanuel G. Ely, Isaac W. Martin; 1878, Samuel Hess, Joshua Chatterton; 1879, William H. Brece, Owen Churchill.

#### RECORDERS.

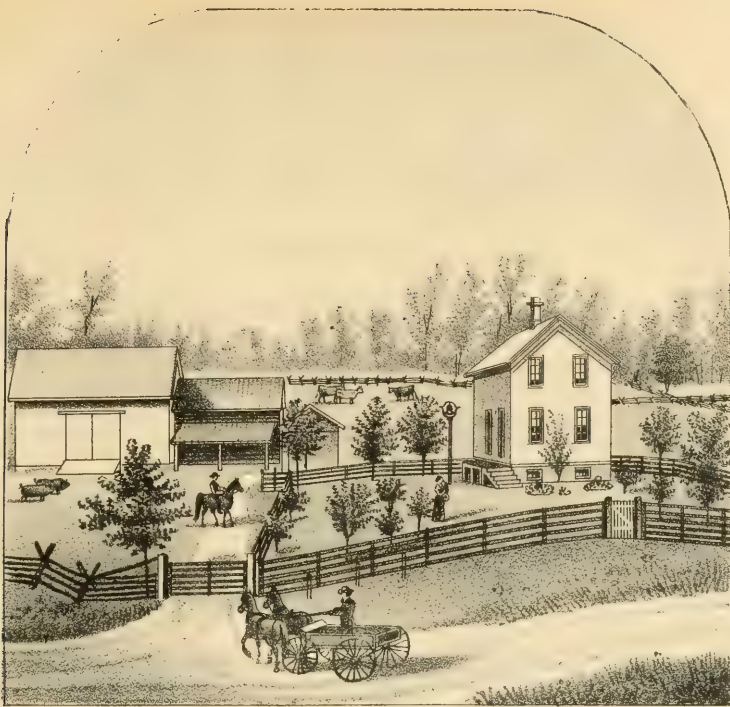
1868-70, William H. Brece; 1871, James McKie; 1872-74, William H. Brece; 1875-78, D. F. Bommersheim; 1879, Henry N. Chamberlain.

#### TREASURERS.

1868, Luther Sage; 1869, Josiah Martin; 1870, Edward K. Warren; 1871, E. G. Ely; 1872, Erasmus N. Shead; 1873-74, Emanuel G. Ely; 1875, Jacob M. Smece; 1876-78, Peter Strehle; 1879, Henry N. Chamberlain.

\* The *Michigan Independent* is published here. Its history is found in the "History of the Press" in the general history.





RES. OF FRANK JERUE, GALIEN, BERRIEN CO., MICH.



RES. OF MRS. EDWARD VETTERLY, THREE OAKS, BERRIEN CO., MICHIGAN.



*Village Plats and Additions.*—The first plat of the village made by Henry Chamberlain, dated Dec. 30, 1857, consisted of about five acres, on the south side of the railroad.

The first addition was by Cyrus Ryther, Jan. 24, 1860, of two acres south from first plat.

Second addition by Henry Chamberlain, Nov. 10, 1863, 12 acres north of the railroad.

Third addition by Henry Chamberlain, Dec. 13, 1864, 20 acres north and east of last mentioned.

Fourth addition by Mrs. Henry Chamberlain, Aug. 4, 1865, 10 acres east of Ryther's addition.

Fifth addition by Benjamin Sheffield, Nov. 20, 1866, 15 acres north of last.

Sixth addition by Henry H. Pike, Nov. 28, 1866, 10 acres west of Chamberlain's third addition.

A seventh addition, known as Friedel's addition, has been made since the last named.

*The Tempest Fire Company* of Three Oaks was organized May 5, 1875, with Charles Close foreman. A hand-engine was purchased by the corporation in the same year. The present members of the company are 30. The officers are Peter Strehle, Foreman; C. Vollman, Assistant Foreman; A. F. Martin, Secretary and Treasurer.

#### AVERY'S STATION.

This settlement is located on the east line of the township. The first improvement was made there in 1854, by Gilbert B. Avery and Thomas Love, who built a large steam saw-mill, which was destroyed by fire in 1859, but was rebuilt and is still standing. A post-office was established in 1856. Mr. Avery was the first postmaster. The settlement contains a post-office, about 20 houses, and has a population of about 100.

#### POST-OFFICES IN THE TOWNSHIP.

The first post-office was established in the township in 1849, and was called Spring Creek. It was situated in the northeast quarter of the northwest quarter of section 23. The mail was received weekly from New Buffalo. Samuel P. Webb was the first postmaster. The office was also held by George Drake. It was discontinued in a few years.

The post-office at Three Oaks was established in 1854. Joseph G. Ames was the first postmaster. He was succeeded by Henry Chamberlain, William Chamberlain, Charles M. Valentine, and Wm. K. Sawyer, who is the present incumbent.

The post-office at Avery's, a station on the Michigan Central Railroad, was established in 1856. The postmasters of that office have been Gilbert B. Avery, Thomas Love, and Edward Avery, who still holds the office.

#### TOWN HALL.

It was voted to raise \$800 to build a town hall at the town-meeting, April 4, 1864. H. Chamberlain presented a deed of two lots for that purpose in the village of Three Oaks, situated north of the school-house. On these lots the town hall was erected.

#### TOWNSHIP BOUNTY TO VOLUNTEERS.

A meeting of twelve electors, held Aug. 2, 1864, petitioned the township clerk to call a special meeting, to take

into consideration the propriety of raising a bounty for volunteers serving in the Union army in the war of the Rebellion.

In accordance with this petition, a special meeting was held Aug. 18, 1864, at which it was voted to offer a bounty of \$100 to each accepted recruit on the township quota under the call of July, 1864; and the township board was authorized to issue bonds for that purpose. The same action was taken on the call of December, 1864.

#### TOWNSHIP LIBRARY.

The first action towards the establishment of a township library was taken at the township-meeting, April 4, 1859, when it was voted to raise \$25 for the purpose. In 1860, \$25 was raised for library purposes, and the amount received from fines (\$13.36) was added. The amount of fines for 1861 was \$17.40. Since that time the sum of \$25 has been raised annually for library purposes. The present number of volumes belonging to the library is 369, as shown by the last report.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school-house in the township was built about the year 1840, near the northeast corner of the northwest quarter of section 23. It was built of cherry logs, and was known for years as the Cherry school-house. It was 10 by 14 feet inside, and 8 feet to peak of roof, with puncheon floor, one window, and flattened logs set on pins for seats. A school had been taught for a few weeks in some of the cabins of the early settlers. The first teacher of whom anything is now known was Elizabeth Chamberlain (daughter of Moses), who taught in the summer of 1844.

The first frame school-house in the western part of Berrien County was built in District No. 3, in this township, in 1847. Moses Chamberlain, his son Henry, and E. Ryther were the persons who, after much effort, succeeded in getting a tax voted for the purpose. Thomas M. Bennett was the first teacher. The first school-house built in the village of Three Oaks was of hewed logs, and is still standing, on the corner of Elm and Ash Streets. It was built by subscription, Henry Chamberlain paying three-fourths of the cost.

The following items are taken from school reports, as filed in the township clerk's office: April 11, 1857, at a meeting of the school inspectors the districts were numbered anew for the township, they having held prior the numbers of New Buffalo.

District No. 5 was changed to No. 1. Districts Nos. 2 and 3 remained the same. September 11th of the same year District No. 4 was formed; and Oct. 29, 1857, at a meeting of the school inspectors of New Buffalo and Three Oaks, a new district was formed, part in each township, to be called No. 5.

May 20, 1857, the primary-school fund amounted to \$89.57, and was apportioned as follows: District No. 1, \$37.63; No. 2, \$28.62; No. 3, \$23.32.

The following school statistics of the township are from the school report for 1879: number of districts, 5; number of scholars, 479; number of school-houses, District No. 1, 1 frame and 1 brick, valued at \$5960; No. 2, 1 frame, valued at \$500; No. 3, 1 frame, valued at \$350; No. 4, 1 frame, valued at \$300; No. 5, 1 frame, valued at \$500.



District No. 1, Three Oaks, has an indebtedness of \$1700. The remaining districts are free from debt.

#### CHURCHES.

*The Congregational Church.*—The church of which this is a record was first organized in New Buffalo as the "Union Church of New Buffalo," and was formed Sept. 18, 1844, under the charge of the Rev. Elnathan Davis, who was assisted by Moses Chamberlain, Theron J. Wilcox, David M. Hunt, Jacob Gerrish, and Joseph D. Oates.

The original members of the church were Moses Chamberlain, Mary F. Chamberlain, Elizabeth Chamberlain, Theron J. Wilcox, Jacob Gerrish, Maria A. Gerrish, Helen Wilcox, Julia B. Pressey, Lavinia Howe, Joseph D. Oates, and David M. Hunt. At a subsequent meeting, held in October of the same year, eight members were added to the church, and December following four more. The name of the church was changed by consent, March 12, 1848, to that of the "First Congregational Church."

The first pastor was the Rev. Elnathan Davis, who remained about one year. In May, 1851, the Rev. P. B. Parrey, who was pastor of the church at Buchanan, preached at Spring Creek and at New Buffalo occasionally. In 1852 he removed to New Buffalo, and presided over both congregations a year or two. The Rev. Josiah D. Crosby, of Ashburnham, Mass., spent parts of 1857–58 preaching both at Three Oaks and New Buffalo, closing his labors in July, 1858, and was succeeded in October of that year by the Rev. Waters Warren, who preached about two years. The Rev. J. D. Crosby again resumed charge of the church in October, 1861, and remained about one year. April 30, 1865, the Rev. P. B. Parrey became pastor over the Congregational Church at Three Oaks, and has occupied the pulpit mostly till the present time. The church membership is 103. The church edifice was erected in 1870 at Three Oaks, and was dedicated by the Rev. H. A. Reed, of Marshall, Mich. A Sabbath-school was first started in 1858, and has at the present time about 75 pupils. E. K. Warren is the superintendent, and A. B. Wright librarian.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church.*—The first class in the township was organized at Spring Creek school-house about 1850. The first members of the class were Abram Martin and wife, Richard Love and wife, William Valentine and wife, and Elkanah Ryther and wife. Among the first preachers at that place was the Rev. J. W. Robinson. The Rev. Daniel Smith was a minister of the Protestant Methodist Church, and also preached here at an early day.

During the summer of 1852 the Rev. J. W. Robinson, then stationed at New Buffalo, preached where the village of Three Oaks now stands, in the house of Henry Chamberlain.

Another Methodist class was organized in Three Oaks, in 1867, by the Rev. Daniel C. Woodward, who was also the first pastor. The first members of the class were Ebenezer McGee, leader, Diadama McGee, R. B. Goit, Lucretia Goit, William R. Levy, Julia Levy, Rachel S. Anderson, Daniel Savage, John Redman, Lucinda Redman, Mary Edson, Mary J. Hopkins, E. Ryther, Catherine Ryther, Samuel Pinnell. A church edifice was built in 1878, of brick, at a cost of \$2000.

The present membership is 50. The Sabbath-school contains an average of 85 pupils. J. R. Hill is superintendent. The first minister who preached in this section of country was the Rev. J. W. Robinson, at the Spring Creek school-house, where the first class was formed. The ministers who succeeded him were the Revs. Beach, Hendrickson, Chapin, Beard, Kellogg, Valentine, Van Horn, Van Wyck, Hicks, Woodward, Hoyt, Gray, Van Sire, J. T. Tanner, W. S. Goslin, and Isaac Wilson, who is the present pastor.

*The Baptist Church.*—This church was organized in 1867, in district school-house No. 3, Chickaming township, with about 15 members.

Rev. Charles G. Manly was the first pastor. He was succeeded by the Revs. E. S. Millis, Israel Wilkinson, Sherman Hendricks, R. H. Spafford, and Israel Wilkinson, who is the present pastor.

The church has at present 85 members, and a Sunday-school containing 60 pupils, with Charles C. Sherrill as superintendent, who also has charge of two Sunday-schools connected with the church; one is located in district No. 1, with 20 pupils, the other in district No. 3, Chickaming township, with 80 pupils. There are also two others in charge of the church: one in southeast corner of section 30, and numbers 35 pupils (M. S. Sherrill is superintendent), and district No. 5, Three Oaks township, contains 30 pupils, C. C. Brown superintendent.

The church was built at Three Oaks village in 1869–70, at a cost of about \$3000.

*The First German United Evangelical St. John's Congregation* was first organized, November, 1866, at the village of Three Oaks, with 15 members. The church was built in 1877, and the congregation at present numbers 38.

The first pastor was the Rev. W. Braumwarth, who has been succeeded by Revs. Julius Schumm and A. Debus, the present pastor.

*The Church of the Disciples.*—This society was organized at the house of Dr. H. B. Wilcox, Feb. 19, 1868, with 25 members. Josiah Martin was elected elder, which office he retained until his death, in 1878. David Martin was elected deacon, and still holds the office. Services were held from house to house until the completion of the German Lutheran church, when they occupied the church with that society. Among the ministers who preached occasionally were the Revs. Wm. M. Roe, P. T. Russell, and — Mitchell. In the fall of 1877 the Rev. C. F. Mortimer became pastor and remained six months. They were without a pastor until May, 1879, when the Rev. C. F. Cole assumed charge, and is the present pastor. The church now numbers 59 members. They were in a low condition from 1872 to 1875, and were then reorganized. The elders of the society are Dr. H. B. Wilcox and Abram Martin; deacons, David Martin and Andrew Carpenter.

*The German Methodist Church.*—The first meeting for organization of a class was held in a small log house that stood in the field of Frederick Rickerts, in section 10, near the village of Three Oaks, and was at the time unoccupied. Meetings were held there for some time, and then at private houses. Upon the completion of the English Methodist church services were held at that place, and preaching is

now had there once in three weeks. The Sunday-school enrolls 20 pupils. John Berkhart, Superintendent.

The constituent members of the first class were Charles Wagner and wife, Jacob Kriess and wife, Frederick Rickerts and wife, and L. Rickerts. Charles Wagner was the leader. The first minister was the Rev. Jacob Reichter, and he was succeeded by the Revs. K. A. Lober, Carl Kluckhohn, Richard Fickenscher, Jacob Bletoch, Peter Schaeffer, William Wilke, — Itermann, F. Fertkon, William Keller, Philip Walker, F. Werth, Henry Lemka, and — Hanka, who is the present pastor. The church is in the Michigan city charge.

#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Three Oaks Lodge, No. 239, F. and A. M.*—The charter was granted to this lodge Jan. 8, 1868. The officers were Henry Chamberlain, Worshipful Master; Owen Churchill, Senior Warden; James S. Bird, Junior Warden; Rudolph B. Goit, Treas.; Christopher Loney, Sec.; A. A. Archer, Senior Deacon; Daniel Savage, Junior Deacon; Silas Russell, Tiler.

The membership, Jan. 10, 1879, was 85, and the officers for 1879 are Henry N. Chamberlain, Worshipful Master; William H. Breece, Senior Warden; Henry M. Russell, Junior Warden; Thomas McCann, Treas.; John A. Thursby, Sec.; William H. Dakin, Senior Deacon; Orrin L. Churchill, Junior Deacon; William Decker, Tiler.

*Three Oaks Lodge, No. 842, I. O. of G. T.*—This lodge was instituted April 4, 1875. The present membership is about 60. The present officers are A. B. Wright, Worthy Chief Templar; Nellie Martin, Worthy Vice-Templar; Henry L. Hess, Worthy Sec.; Mattie Reeves, Worthy Financial Sec.; Simeon Sutherland, Worthy Marshal; Emma Hill, Worthy Inside Guard; Charles Bradley, Worthy Outside Guard.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH.

### EDWARD VETTERLEY

was born on the 15th day of September, 1833, at Wagenhausen, a village in Switzerland. In 1844 his parents emigrated to the State of New York, bringing Edward, two brothers, and one sister with them. There he remained a number of years, and then removed to Three Oaks, Berrien Co., Mich. On the 13th of June, 1869, he was united in marriage to Miss Elizabeth Heosi, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Heosi. Mr. Vetterley was in the employ of the Michigan Central Railroad Company over ten years, always proving himself worthy of the trust and confidence placed in him. The remainder of the time he carried on his farm with good success. He had a good German education, although his advantages were rather limited, as he never attended school in America. He was in politics a Democrat. He was a member of the German Evangelical Church from 1849 until the time of his death, and was ever found ready to do his duty as a zealous Christian. He was an affectionate husband and loving father, as well as an

estimable man and worthy citizen. His death occurred on the 23d day of March, 1874. His widow, Mrs. Vetterley, is one of the few women who are capable of acting as the head of a family, and she has successfully managed the estate since the decease of her husband.

## CHAPTER XLIV.

### WATERVLIET TOWNSHIP.

Description—Early Settlements—Watervliet Village—Coloma Village—New Coloma—Settlements in Watervliet after 1842—Soldiers of 1812—Physicians—Township Organization and Civil List—Religious Societies—Schools—Societies and Orders—Curious Relic.

WATERVLIET, the extreme northeastern township of Berrien County, retains the original town allotment of six miles square, and occupies a fruitful agricultural territory, peopled by a community of thrifty and prosperous agriculturists. The township boundaries are the Van Buren County line on the north and east, Bainbridge township on the south, and Hagar township on the west. Its designation is town 3 south, range 17 west.

The surface of the country is generally level or gently undulating, and, near the centre of the township, diversified by two moderately large sheets of water, known respectively as Paw Paw Lake, and Little Paw Paw Lake, while numerous water-courses and ponds, scattered here and there, provide a picturesque prospect and bountiful irrigation. Paw Paw Lake occupies nearly the whole of section 15 and portions of sections 10, 11, 14, 16, and 21, and covers upwards of 1200 acres. Its waters are clear and well stocked with fish. It has upon its borders an inviting stretch of country, and is, during the pleasant season of the year, a place of popular resort for picnic parties, anglers, and others in search of recreation.

The Paw Paw River, an exceedingly crooked stream, flows through the centre of the township, from east to west, and empties into the St. Joseph River at Benton Harbor. The Chicago and West Michigan Railroad passes through Watervliet, generally along the river's course, and, having stations at Coloma and Watervliet, gives the town excellent railway conveniences.

The two villages of Coloma and Watervliet are the centres of considerable trade; they have valuable mill interests, and annually send forward by railway large shipments of fruit and grain,—Watervliet especially making a fine showing in respect to the latter commodity. The township, although largely devoted to the cultivation of fruit, is also a rich grain-producing region. Among the farmers are a few families of Indians, who are located in the north, and who, in common with their brethren of adjoining townships, have sought to make a mark as tillers of the soil, but their success, as a rule, is not great. Watervliet's assessed valuation in 1879 was \$260,000.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The first settlement made by the white man in what is now Watervliet township was begun in 1832, at a point on

—By David Schwartz.

the Paw Paw River about three-quarters of a mile above the present village of Coloma, and on the opposite shore. Shingle-makers first invaded that locality, and the place was therefore known as "Shingle Diggings." The narrative of the rise and progress of the Diggings, as gathered from Mr. Stephen R. Gilson, now living in Coloma (and himself a resident in Watervliet longer than any one in the township), is given as follows:

In October, 1834, Mr. Gilson, of Chautauqua Co., N. Y., in which his father was a pioneer, rode, in company with a friend, to Sandusky, Ohio, intending to stop a while in Michigan, and then to push on to Chicago, which he proposed to make his future home. From Sandusky young Gilson traveled on foot *via* the Maumee country, and so barren was that region of population that in thirty miles' travel he saw but one house. Happening to know Stephen Purdy, who was living at Berrien Springs, in Michigan, Gilson bent his steps thither and visited his friend, with whom he remained several days, during which time he tried, but unsuccessfully, to obtain employment. Learning that Levi Ballengee, then stopping at Wilson's tavern, in St. Joseph village, was in want of a shingle-maker for his place on the Paw Paw, Gilson went down and bargained with Ballengee to assist him in getting out 125,000 shingles. Together they set out for Mr. Ballengee's place in November, 1834, and there in due time Mr. Gilson began his Western career as a shingle-maker.

Mr. Ballengee's location, as already indicated, was a short distance from the present village of Coloma, across the Paw Paw, and there he had been living with his wife some time. How he came to be there may be told in relating the story of the first white settlement there and the circumstances immediately following it.

In 1832, Job Davis, of Cass County, made the first land-entry in the territory now occupied by Watervliet township. His purchase embraced 150 acres on section 21, and he went upon the place intending to get out lumber and shingles for the St. Joseph market. Tiring of his enterprise, however, before he had fairly tried it, he disposed of his interests to Messrs. Griffith, Hoyt & Hatch, who joined for the purpose of digging a canal from Paw Paw Lake to the Paw Paw River, building a saw-mill on the Paw Paw, and engaging to a liberal extent in lumbering, B. C. Hoyt (a St. Joseph merchant) being the managing partner of the firm.

Davis had already got out a frame for a saw-mill, had it on the ground ready to put up, had begun the construction of a dam, and had dug a mill-pit, so that Griffith & Co. found matters in such a state of progress that they looked forward to a speedy completion of the projected improvements. At this juncture, however, one Sumner stepped in and disarranged their plans. Mr. Hoyt, of the lumbering firm, had sued Sumner on a store account, and Sumner determined to be revenged. Knowing that Griffith & Co., by a singular oversight, had failed to acquire a right to the land opposite their mill property, where their dam must necessarily touch, Sumner entered the land in question, and then forbade Griffith & Co. building their dam on his land. This was something which Griffith & Co. had not contemplated, and an obstacle which they were powerless

to remove, for Sumner utterly refused to sell his land to the mill firm at any price, and thus, unable to prosecute their work, Griffith & Co. were compelled to abandon it. Upon first beginning operations they surveyed and laid out a town near the proposed mill-site, and sought to induce settlements, with the implied understanding that the canal and mill would make the neighborhood a lively and valuable business point. One of the first to act upon the promise of future advantage held forth by Griffith & Co. was Levi Ballengee, who bought of Mr. Brown, of St. Joseph, 80 acres of land near the site of the new town, and put up, first, a log cabin and then a frame of considerable size, of which he proposed to make a house in which to board the men to be employed by Griffith & Co. The failure of Griffith & Co. (their lands, etc., being transferred to the Farmers and Mechanics' Bank of St. Joseph) left Mr. Ballengee with his boarding-house frame on his hands as a piece of useless property. Being there, however, he resolved to remain, and thus it happened that, being in St. Joseph in search of a workman, he found Mr. Gilson, and entered upon the business of shingle-making as the founder of "Shingle Diggings."

The narrative returns now to the time—November, 1834—when Gilson joined Ballengee in shingle-making. Ballengee and Gilson worked industriously at that business through the winter, visiting St. Joseph occasionally, by way of the river, in canoes. During the winter, Rumsey Christy of St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., came to the Diggings, with his wife and three children, "squatted," put up a cabin, and commenced making shingles on his own account. In the spring of 1835, Hiram Ormsby, with his family, joined the little colony, and shingle-making began to be lively. About this time Mrs. Christy died. This was the second death in that locality, and the first in the Diggings proper. Job Davis' wife had died soon after his settlement, in 1832. Her remains were at first deposited near the mill-site, but afterwards conveyed to the Sumnerville cemetery. The next shingle-maker was Isaac Youngs, who came in with his family in 1835, followed by Erastus Barnes, Henry H. Selter, and others.

In 1835, Gilson went back to New York State for his family, brought them without delay to the Shingle Diggings, and becoming a resident there, commenced making shingles on his own account; he, like a majority of the shingle-makers, "squatted" where it suited him, and making shingles where he could find desirable timber. For three years the business of shingle-making was carried on with much spirit, quite a number of people were engaged in it, and the Diggings grew to the dignity of an important settlement. In 1837, Gilson had prospered so well that he purchased that year all the shingles made in the Diggings. He bought at one time 1,300,000, and employed Indians to run them down the river to St. Joseph, upon reaching which place he had a force of 20 redskins, whose performances in taking the shingles out of the river and landing them on the dock are said to have been very lively and interesting. All the shingles made at the Diggings were thus transported to St. Joseph to market, and as there was a good demand for them the Diggings became a thriving place.

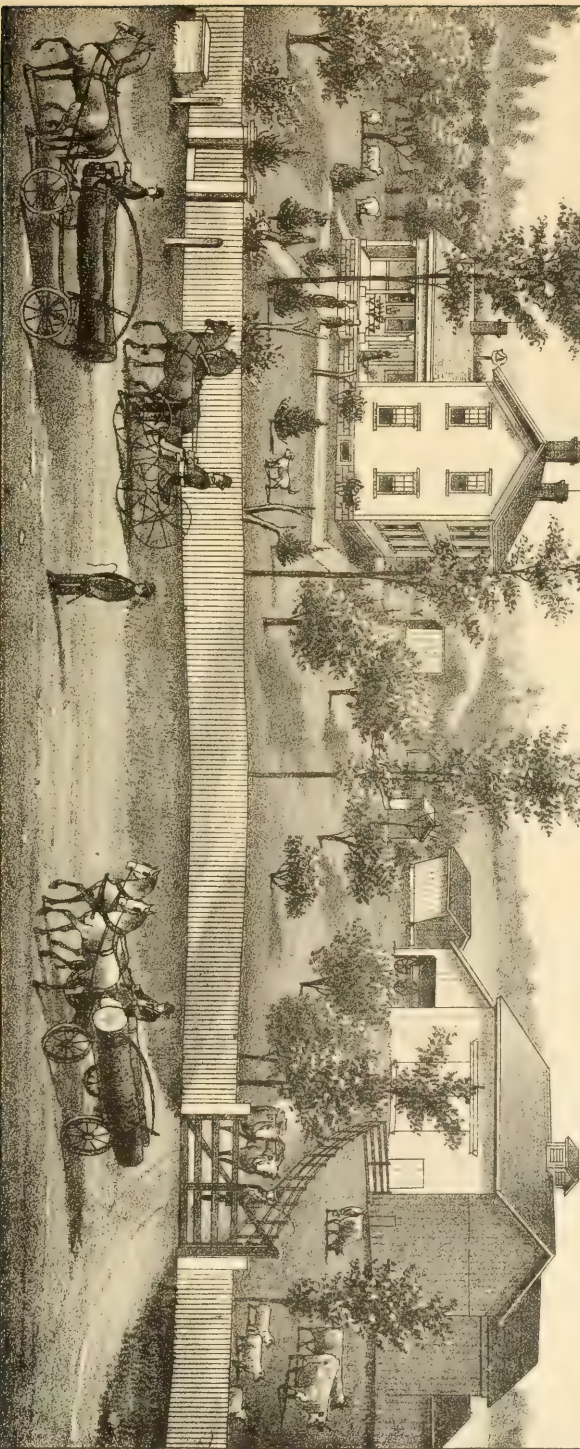




EDWARD BRANT.



MRS. EDWARD BRANT.



RESIDENCE OF EDWARD BRANT, WATERVLIET T<sup>P</sup>, BERRIEN CO., MICH.



So well did it flourish as a settlement that in 1837 a school was desired, and the inhabitants of the Diggings applied to the township (St. Joseph) for assistance in supporting a school. The application being denied, the shingle-makers remembered that E. P. Deacon had agreed to clear the "school land" near the Diggings, and that he had failed to complete the work. They proceeded therefore to take possession of the timber remaining on the land, worked it up into shingles, and, with the proceeds of the sale thereof, started a school by engaging Mary Youngs (a daughter of one of the shingle-makers) as teacher. She taught about six months in the log cabin used by Job Davis as his residence when he first settled there. Lydia Kingsley, of St. Joseph, was afterwards engaged, and taught in a log school-house put up in the woods. That school, however, was the last one taught in that neighborhood.

The Diggings was not without the benefit of public religious teachings. In 1837, Simeon Woodruff, a Presbyterian minister and settler in Bainbridge, preached occasionally at Mr. Gilson's house. The first child born in the Diggings was Mr. Christy's, the second was Mr. Ormsby's, and the third Mr. Gilson's.

In 1838, the material for shingles being exhausted, the shingle-makers departed for other places,—Mr. Ballengee to Missouri, Gilson, Youngs, and Selter to Bainbridge, and the others farther east and west. Shingle Diggings became therefore an abandoned settlement, and at this point drops out of the history of the township.

Moses Osgood, living at Perch River, Jefferson Co., N. Y., in 1836, engaged that year to accompany Isaac Moffatt—Smith & Merrick's land-agent and manager—to Michigan, and upon his arrival in Watervliet worked about the mills. In the following year he sent for his family, and after that continued to live in Watervliet village about two years, working meanwhile for the mill firm. He then bought 40 acres of land on section 19, a mile and a half west of the site of Coloma, and after living there five years sold out, in 1842, to James Paul, who had just come from Chautauqua Co., N. Y., and who lived upon the place until his death, in 1872. The farm occupied by Paul is the one now owned by William Merrifield.

Upon selling out to Paul, Mr. Osgood bought a place directly opposite, and in 1844 sold that to John Merrifield, of New York State, just then arrived. Mr. Osgood then moved to a farm a half-mile east, changed again a mile farther east, went to Schoolcraft, Mich., where he remained about four years, returned to Watervliet township, where he settled, near the Coloma burying-ground, and lastly moved to a place on section 20, where he died, in 1876. His widow lives on the place now with her son-in-law, Mr. Glidden. Mr. Osgood was the pioneer of the territory into which he moved in 1838, after leaving Watervliet village, between which place and his farm there was not a single settler.

#### WATERVLIET VILLAGE.

The first improvement made at what is now known as Watervliet village was effected in 1833, by Sumner & Wheeler, who put up a saw-mill on Mill Creek, near the present site of Swain & Olney's saw-mill. It will be remembered that in the history of Shingle Diggings, reference

is made to Mr. Sumner as having interfered materially with Griffith & Co.'s mill-building enterprise. After that affair Sumner & Wheeler built the saw-mill on Mill Creek, and employed two brothers named Van Dusen, from Prairie Ronde, to run the mill for them. The mill was a small one, propelled by a "flutter wheel," but managed to turn out considerable lumber, some of its first work being the timber for the boarding-house frame which Mr. Levi Ballengee erected at Shingle Diggings. The Van Dusen brothers lived in a slab shanty near the mill, and were, beyond question, the first white inhabitants at that point. The Van Dusens managed the mill until 1835, when one Crocker, a mill-wright, rented it, and moving, with his family, upon the place, took possession.

In 1836, Jesse Smith, of the firm of Smith & Merrick, of French Creek, Jefferson Co., N. Y., visited this section to make arrangements for clearing large tracts of land which the firm owned in what are now the townships of Bainbridge, Watervliet, and Hagar, the greater portion being in Bainbridge, in that district now covered by the German settlement. Mr. Smith was accompanied by Israel Kellogg and several laborers, the latter of whom, under the direction of Mr. Kellogg (who acted then and afterwards as Smith & Merrick's representative and land-agent), did some work at clearing land and built a saw-mill near Sumner & Wheeler's, which latter Smith purchased, and leased that, as well as the new one, to Crocker. Lumber was low, and as Smith preferred to turn his attention to clearing land and putting in wheat,—which he did to a great extent,—he paid but little heed to the firm's milling interests.

Smith returned to New York in 1836, leaving Kellogg to look after the firm's interests, and in that same year Smith & Merrick sent out Isaac Moffatt with thirty-two Frenchmen to finish the work on the Michigan lands. Moffatt and his men sailed from Buffalo in a vessel belonging to the firm, and loaded with all sorts of supplies for the new settlement. Moffatt got his men and supplies safely to Watervliet, and at once put up a store about opposite where Walden's store now stands. He built also a grist-mill, which, with the saw-mills, he rented to Crocker. His men were set to work digging a tail-race (the one now used), building a dam, and clearing land, and as his force numbered upwards of forty, there was already a community worthy the name of a settlement. It is said of the thirty-two Frenchmen brought out by Moffatt that they used to eat a barrel of pork every three days. Of them only two are known to be living in the vicinity of Watervliet,—Edward Eber, a farmer, in Hartford township, and Felix Rossette, a tavern-keeper, in Hartford village. A third—John La-deaux—died in the county almshouse in 1879.

The mills soon passed from Crocker to John Stronner, who was, in 1846, succeeded as tenant by James Redding, who was running them in 1848, when Smith & Merrick sold out their entire mill property to Isaac N. Swain, then living in Concord, Jackson Co., Mich., but previously of Jefferson Co., N. Y. Besides the mill property, Mr. Swain bought 960 acres of land thereabout, and further converted a tannery building that had been put up at that point by William Tilman, into a grist-mill, into which he put two



run of stones, the old grist-mill being abandoned and afterwards moved into the village, one-half being now used as a residence and the other as a cooper-shop.

Mr. Swain soon found an opportunity to sell his mills to Medbury & Aldrich, and removed then to Monson, Mass. Medbury & Aldrich replaced the saw-mill with the large mill now used by Swain & Olney, and during their possession the grist-mill was destroyed by fire and rebuilt. They sold out to Jason Carr, who in turn sold the saw-mill to a Mr. Shanks, and continued to operate the grist-mill himself. In 1858 there came a great flood that washed away the dam, bulkheads, etc., damaged the mills seriously, and overflowed the surrounding country. When Carr saw the ruin that had been wrought to the mill property he was so affected that he fell down and died. Shank was made a bankrupt, and became, it is said, a fish-merchant (the first available business he could turn his hand to), in his desire to do something.

Carr & Shanks having carried the property along under mortgage to Mr. Swain, the latter was compelled to take it back after the disaster, and from 1858 to 1862 he permitted it to remain in the condition brought about by the flood. In the last-named year, however, he organized the firm of Swain, Olney & Fisher, who built a new dam, made necessary repairs, and set the mills in motion once more. Mr. Fisher sold his interest to Parsons & Baldwin, when the firm-name was changed to Swain, Olney & Co., and as such remained until 1874, when Parsons & Baldwin retired, leaving the firm of Swain & Olney to continue the business, which they have done until the present time.

The firm have at times employed as many as 40 or 50 men in their mills, but have at present a force of only 15. Their saw-mill is fitted with 52 saws, including 1 gang and 1 slabber, capable of sawing 30,000 feet of lumber daily. At present the cut is about 6000 feet per day. The grist-mill has three run of stones, and is devoted chiefly to custom work.

In 1856, H. R. Holland built a saw-mill on Mill Creek, east of the village, and in 1870 sold it to Justus Sutherland, who added a grist-mill with three run of stones, which began to grind wheat March 4, 1873. These mills have been operated by Mr. Sutherland since 1870.

Jonas Ivery was the pioneer blacksmith at Watervliet, the date of his settlement being 1837. His daughter was married to Martin Tice, of Bainbridge, in 1838. Ivery moved from Watervliet to Millburg, and afterwards to the far West.

*Stores.*—The first store opened in Watervliet was the one started by Isaac Moffatt in 1836, when he came to the country with his company of 32 Frenchmen. His store was called the "Mill Store," and the stock put into it was the cargo of supplies Moffatt brought in his vessel from Buffalo. This mill store was kept by Moffatt and Israel Kellogg, in the interest of Smith & Merriek while that firm controlled the mill property, and when they sold out to Swain of course Swain took the store also. When Swain came in, Redding retired from the mills, and started in a store known as the "Variety Store." Thus there were two stores—this was in 1848—for the first time in the history

of Watervliet. When Redding died (in 1849) he was succeeded by Clay & Ensign, and after a time Ed. Goodale, who had been a clerk at Swain's, commenced on his own account as a storekeeper. He sold to Wheeler & Gates, and afterwards the succession of storekeepers was Holland & Smith, W. W. Allen, H. C. Matran, Matran & Burnside, and Parsons & Baldwin. The mill store was continued by Swain until Swain, Fisher & Olney came in, and after that Parsons & Baldwin took it,—the latter firm opening their present store when they retired from the mill business.

The general stores now in the village are those of L. D. Walden, Parsons, Baldwin & Co., and W. W. Allen. Tucker & Jaffrey have a drug-store, Pierce & Welsh a hardware-store, Daniel Woodward a meat-market, A. G. Wigeant a furniture-store, Silas Tooley a harness-shop, and Mrs. Pierce a millinery. Besides these stores, there are blacksmith-shops, cooper-shops, shoe-shops, etc.

*Taverns.*—The first house of entertainment in Watervliet was a boarding-house for mill hands, opened by W. W. McKee in a building which stood opposite the site of Walden's store. This building was afterwards sawed in two, and is still doing duty,—one-half as Bradt's blacksmith-shop and the other as Mr. Teetzel's residence. When Mr. Swain became the mill proprietor, he built a store and tavern upon the lot now occupied by Walden's store, the mill store having to that time been on the opposite side of the road. The tavern built by Mr. Swain was, like McKee's house, primarily intended as a boarding-place for the mill hands, but as both places accommodated travelers they were taverns, although not called so. In 1867, Swain's store and tavern were destroyed by fire. The store only was rebuilt, and it is still standing.

The public-house now kept in the village by Samuel Wolcott was built for a tavern by John Lake in 1847, but not opened as such until ten years afterwards. Andrew Bartlett was the first landlord. His successors have been Abram Smith, — Hibbard, — Pockett, William Brown, and Samuel Wolcott, the present proprietor, who has been in possession since 1870.

*Post-Office.*—The post-office at Watervliet village was established in 1849, when Isaac N. Swain was appointed postmaster. Prior to that time Mr. Swain had a contract with such of the inhabitants as favored the arrangement to obtain their mail at the Bainbridge post-office twice a week. At the close of the first year of the contract, Mr. Swain succeeded in inducing the government to establish the Watervliet office. James B. Lindsley succeeded Mr. Swain, and in 1856, B. B. Tucker took possession of the office, to relinquish it, in 1860, to Wm. Brown, the tavern-keeper. W. W. Allen was appointed in 1868, and kept the office in his store until 1877, when he resigned, and E. R. Welsh, the present incumbent, received the appointment.

*Railway Depot.*—Upon the completion of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, to Watervliet, in 1869, L. A. Mason was appointed depot agent. In 1871 he was succeeded by W. E. Walden, who still occupies the place. In 1869 a grain-elevator was attached to the depot. Large quantities of grain are annually shipped from this station, while the shipments of fruit during the season are consid-

erable, one shipper alone having forwarded 2000 barrels of apples in 1878. Peach shipments have risen to such an aggregate that 3000 baskets were sent out on one train during the busy era. In 1878 about 15,000 baskets were shipped to Chicago from Watervliet.

*The Village Plat.*—Smith & Merrick laid out the village, and gave to it originally the narrow strip occupied by Main Street between the creek and the river. Mr. Swain made several additions, notably the addition south of the railway-track known as "Newtown," where great improvements in the way of a blast-furnace and other manufacturing were promised. For some reason the schemes failed, although the town lots were sold and improvements to some extent were made there.

#### COLOMA VILLAGE.

About 1840, John Williams, of St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., made his appearance in Watervliet with his family, and being unable to purchase a farm, agreed with Israel Kellogg, resident land-agent for Smith & Merrick, to work a tract of land on what is now the site of Coloma village. Kellogg put up a log house for Williams upon the spot now occupied by Dr. Baker's house, and built for him also a frame barn, which stood a little west of where the liberty-pole stands. Williams worked the place about two years, but with little success. He afterwards removed to Bainbridge, and died there. Adam Prouty took the place after Williams' departure, but remained only two years and then moved away. George Becker, of Jefferson Co., N. Y., who had traveled with his wife and six children from Buffalo to St. Joseph by way of the lakes, happened along about the time Prouty moved out (May, 1844), and took possession of the cabin. He purposed, however, remaining there but a short time, as he had before leaving his New York home exchanged his farm there with Smith & Merrick for 80 acres in the southern portion of Watervliet, near Michael Humphrey's farm. To that place Becker soon moved his family, but shortly afterwards exchanged it for a farm south of Coloma, where he died in 1873, and where his widow now lives.

James S. Johnson (a tailor), of Yates Co., N. Y., settled in St. Joseph Co., Ind., in 1837, and in May, 1844, in company with George C. Merrifield, of that place, visited Michigan. In partnership they bought of Smith & Merrick 320 acres of land, that embraced the tract upon which Williams and Prouty had worked, and of which they had cleared about 140 acres. Johnson and Merrifield sowed the land to grain and returned to Indiana for their families. Merrifield's family refusing to move, he sold his interest in the Michigan farm to Johnson, and the latter packed up, and with his wife and three children set out for Watervliet. Upon their arrival they occupied the log house in which Williams, Prouty, and Becker had lived, and there they continued to reside until Johnson's death, in 1847. Abner Crossman, of Bainbridge, took a portion of Johnson's farm, married Johnson's widow, and after living on the place a little while, moved to a farm just east of Watervliet, where he died, and where his widow still survives him.

Stephen R. Gilson, of whom mention was made in the history of Shingle Diggings, who turned the first furrow in

Watervliet, and who in 1838 became a settler in Bainbridge, went afterwards to Chicago, and in 1844 returned to Watervliet, where, on section 20, he bought of Arthur Bronson, of New York, 60 acres of land, upon which tract (at Coloma) he is still living. When Gilson settled there the only inhabitants in the vicinity were George Becker and his family, to whom allusion has already been made. The Johnsons did not come on until a little later, and lived there until 1847. In 1849, Stephen R. Gilson and Gilson Osgood made the first important improvement there in the erection of a water saw-mill on "Tannery Creek." In 1850, Gilson sold out his interest in the mill to Austin Boyer, who sold in turn to Gilson Osgood, who, becoming then sole proprietor of the concern, changed it to a steam-mill.

Gilson Osgood, alluded to in the foregoing, was a man of considerable importance in the early settlement of Watervliet, and was connected in an especially conspicuous way with the history of Coloma. He moved from Ohio to Battle Creek, Mich., in 1839, and in 1841 left that place to settle in Watervliet township, in response to the solicitations of his brother Moses, who had preceded him. Gilson came on with his wife and three children, bought 60 acres of land of Smith & Merrick, adjoining his brother Moses' place on the south, in section 30, and remained with him until his own log cabin was completed. While living on his farm he undertook, in 1849, the erection on Tannery Creek of a saw-mill, in company with S. R. Gilson, and at the same time removed his family to a place near the mill. He had been appointed the agent for Israel Kellogg, who had been the representative of the land-owning firm of Smith & Merrick, but had removed to Kalamazoo. Osgood also joined Martin Musser, Odell, and Clark in building a tannery on Tannery Creek, and put up a shanty, into which he put a small stock of goods, and called it a store. Although not a very extensive one, it was nevertheless a great convenience to the neighboring settlers, and deserves, moreover, distinct mention as the first store opened in the place now known as the village of Coloma. Israel Kellogg kept a store in that neighborhood before Osgood opened business, but Kellogg's store was a quarter of a mile or more west of the site of Coloma.

*Dickerville.*—The story goes that when Gilson Osgood opened his store his first day's trade was a heavy one, for the announcement had gone forth, and many gathered from far and near. Money was at that time an exceedingly scarce article in the backwoods, and the customers brought generally an assortment of farm produce to exchange with Mr. Osgood for his "store-goods." Indeed, fully nine-tenths of his business on that first day was in "dicker," and the idea being started that the just budding village should be called "Dickerville," popular opinion recognized the appropriateness of the designation, and "Dickerville" it was christened, and so remained until 1855, when Stephen Gilson changed it to Coloma. Mr. Osgood's store stood near the present Osgood House, and in time was replaced by a store of much more elaborate pretensions, in which Mr. Osgood carried on business some years. The Osgood House property he bought in 1858, and materially improved, since which time it has remained in the possession of the family,

—his widow and son (Marcus) now residing there. In 1867, Mr. Osgood removed to the village of St. Joseph, where he was landlord of the Perkins House until his death, in 1868. Prominently identified, during his residence in Watervliet township, with the history of that portion of Berrien County, he occupied a conspicuous place in the local events of his time, and as the agent for the sale of Smith & Merrick's extensive landed property, he came to be widely known, and much respected.

*Merchants.*—Israel Kellogg has already been mentioned as having kept a store at Watervliet village, and later near the site of Coloma village; but, as he was not on the site of the village, he cannot be considered as one of its pioneer traders. Gilson Osgood opened the first store, which, with his saw-mill, gave "Dickerville" a start in 1849. The storekeepers at Coloma, dating from Mr. Osgood's time, may be named in their order of location, as follows: Henry L. Harris, B. F. Osgood, Perry & Marvin, Redding & Gilson, J. H. Marvin, G. W. Longwell & Co., Dickinson & Stoddard, Marvin & Osgood, Marvin & Woodward, William Stoddard, Minot Ingraham, A. D. Allen, John Sherman, Hamilton & Miller, Luce Bro.'s, Alonzo Vincent, John Brough, John Thomas, Theodore Russell, R. Hewsons & Co., T. J. West & Co., Lysander Vincent, Hewson & Grant, Vincent & Gammer, H. W. Peck & Co., R. R. Hewson, Ryno & Gilson (drugs), Mrs. I. T. Howe, H. W. Peck, Mrs. Miller. The storekeepers of Coloma are now Minot Ingraham, John Thomas, Ryno & Gilson, Vincent & Gammer, R. R. Hewson, Mrs. Miller, Mrs. I. J. Howe, H. W. Peck.

*Mills and Tannery.*—It has already been observed that Stephen R. Gilson and Gilson Osgood put up a saw-mill on Tannery Creek, at Coloma, in 1849, and that Martin Musser and others built a tannery on the same stream. Osgood put steam-power into his saw-mill in 1850, and in 1852 the explosion of its boiler, April 19th, entailed a sad calamity in the killing of two children,—Charlotte Osgood and Shumway Musser,—who, with other children, were playing about there at the time. Other people were injured and the mill was badly damaged, but no further loss of life was occasioned.

• Upon his return from California, Stephen Gilson erected a steam saw-mill at Coloma, on the bank of the Paw Paw. After that Ira Wilks began the construction of a grist-mill on Tannery Creek, but got no further than the completion of the frame. Roland Osgood and John W. Knapp finished it, put in the machinery, and started it in 1861. It changed owners several times until 1866, when Sawyer Ball came into possession. In 1876 it was damaged by a flood, and in 1877, Mr. Ball replaced it with the present steam mill, which has three run of stones, and does a flourishing custom business.

The tannery built by Musser and others has been in disuse since 1878. Its last occupant was John Thomas, who carried it on from 1865 to 1878. P. C. Weimer has a saw-mill in Coloma, in connection with which he operates a basket manufactory, and between the two enterprises carries on a lively trade.

*Pioneer Blacksmith.*—Abram Smith, who opened the pioneer blacksmith-shop on the south side of the Paw Paw, in Hagar, was also the pioneer blacksmith in Coloma. He

settled near the place in 1845, and when Gilson & Osgood built their saw-mill, in 1849, Smith did all the mill blacksmithing. He put up the frame of the house built by Ives Wallingford in 1850,—the first frame house in Coloma. The lumber of which that house was built was the first lot sawed by Gilson & Osgood's mill. Mr. Smith is still pursuing his old business of blacksmithing in Coloma.

*The Coloma Post-Office.*—Prior to 1857 the people at Coloma and vicinity received their mails at Watervliet village. In that year an office was established at Coloma, and Dr. H. M. Marvin appointed postmaster. He was succeeded in 1859 by J. H. Marvin, who retired in 1861 in favor of C. C. Perry. Mr. Perry's successors have been J. H. Marvin, A. I. Brush, J. H. Marvin (third term), and Lysander Vincent, who was appointed in 1874.

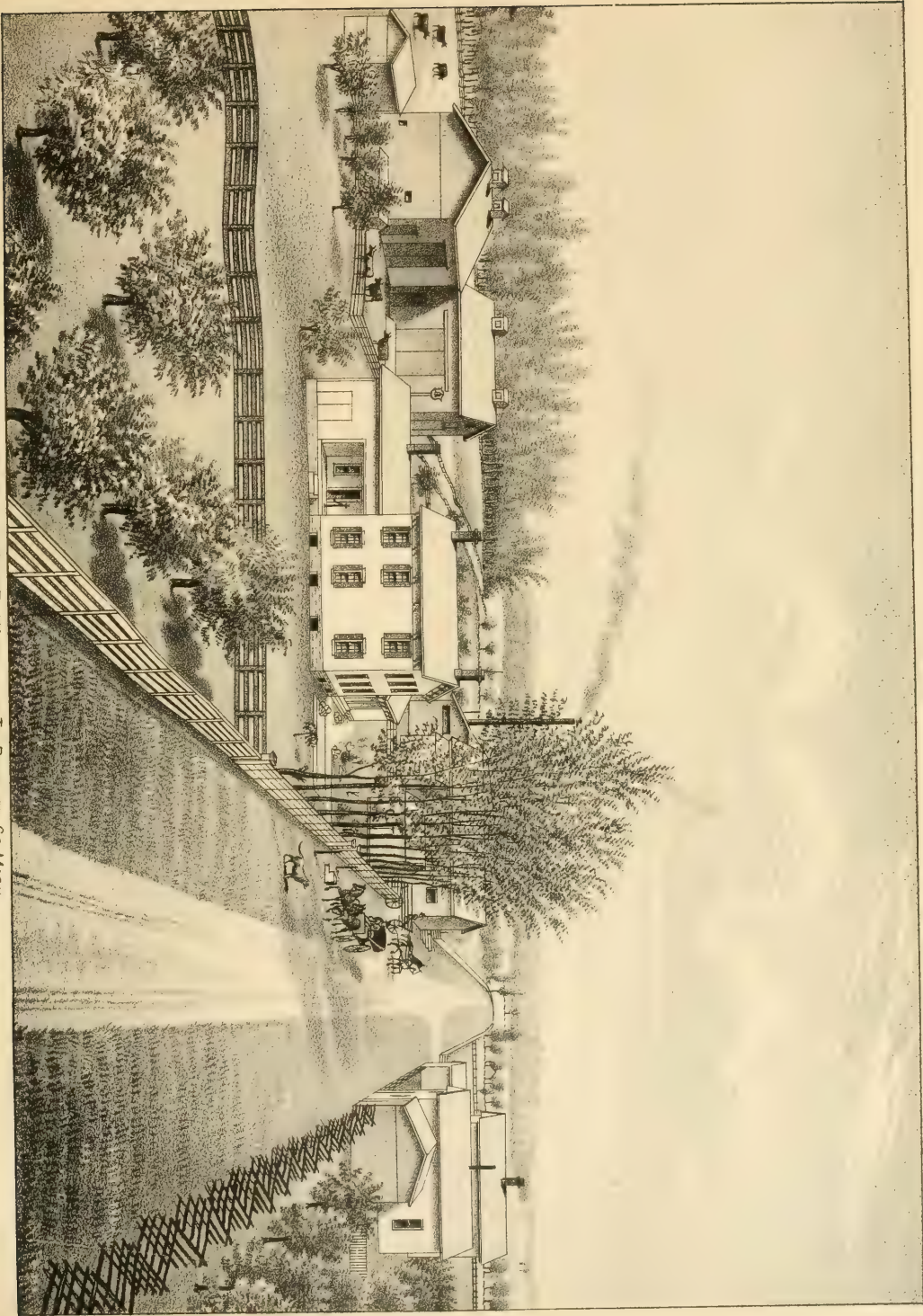
*The Name Coloma.*—In 1850, Stephen R. Gilson, his son Warren, and one Anton Timart, a tanner, of St. Joseph, fitted out a team and wagon for California, and at the same time Calvin Dickson, of Watervliet, and Wallis Taber, of Bainbridge, fitted out another, both parties starting in company for the land of gold. When Gilson left for California, in 1850, "Dickerville" contained, besides his own, the families of Gilson Osgood, Ira Wilks, Martin Musser, Abram Coleman, Charles Bostwick, and Abner Crossman. In 1853, Mr. Gilson returned from California, conveyed his family to Benton (they had remained behind in Dickerville), and after a two years' sojourn there he returned to his old place in Watervliet township, made a purchase of considerable property in that vicinity, put up a steam saw-mill on the bank of the Paw Paw, platted the village, and setting aside the time-worn and not very euphonious appellation of Dickerville, gave it the name of Coloma, in remembrance of the village near which he lived during his stay in California. Coloma is the Spanish name of a fragrant and beautiful flower that grows on the Pacific slope.

*The Taverns of Coloma.*—In 1851, Charles Bostwick discontinued the select school he started in 1849 and sold the school building to Moses Sargent, who converted it into a tavern. One Hibbard was the landlord after Sargent's time, and in 1858 Gilson Osgood bought the property, materially added to and improved it, and opened it as the Osgood House. As such it has been known ever since, and has been conducted by an Osgood; Marcus, a son of Gilson Osgood, being now the landlord. In 1871, Minot Ingraham built the St. Cloud Hotel at the railway depot, and is still its proprietor.

#### NEW COLOMA.

In 1869, pending the completion of the railroad to that point, certain land-speculators, to secure the location of the railway-station on its present site, donated the ground for it, and having, in anticipation of such a move, purchased quite a land-tract near there, laid out village lots, and used extraordinary efforts to sell them and to convince prospective purchasers that the building of the railway-station at that point would create a new village which would entirely extinguish old Coloma and enrich those who were fortunate enough to secure their village lots. Some sales were made, dwellings and stores began to embellish the plain, and everything seemed to indicate that the new Coloma would really





RES. OF JOSEPH KNAPP, WATERVLIET T<sup>p</sup>., BERRIEN CO., MICH.



eclipse the old town. But its growth was suddenly checked by the reluctance with which the neighboring people patronized the business enterprises of the new town, and by the persistency with which everybody, except owners of lots in the new village, stood by the old town. As a result, New Coloma closed its stores for want of patronage; people who had promised to pay for lots forfeited them, and the original speculators, having advanced much money to pay for improvements, found them left on their hands. Naturally, they were bankrupted, and New Coloma became a barren reminder of promised greatness, which is much its aspect to-day.

#### SETTLEMENTS IN WATERVLIET AFTER 1842.

The hard winter of 1842-43 is still vividly recollected as a season of exceedingly cold weather and deep snows. Much hardship and suffering were experienced by settlers, and upon their stock especially the rigors of that period entailed considerable loss of life. Traveling about the country was oftentimes a matter of difficult undertaking, for the heavy snows frequently made the roads impassable for days. Game perished for lack of food, and instances are related by dwellers in Watervliet of wild turkeys coming into the village and feeding tamely upon corn thrown to them,—the depth of the snow in the country and its long continuance having deprived them of their usual means of subsistence. One man tells how he went out into the woods one day in search of his cows and found no less than seven deer lying upon the snow, dead of cold and hunger. Altogether the "hard winter" was a memorable one, and will scarcely be forgotten by those who passed through it.

During the hard winter of 1842-43, Alonzo and Austin Beaman came to Watervliet from New York, with their families, and settled on adjoining farms,—Alonzo on what is known as the Yates place, and Austin on section 1, the farm being now known as the Stickney place. Austin sold to Stephen Hastings, moved to Watervliet, where he kept Swain's boarding-house a year, went to Hartford, and in 1865 returned to Watervliet, where he died in 1874. Stephen Hastings, above spoken of, was from Massachusetts, and upon purchasing Beaman's farm was joined by his brother Rufus, both of them living on the place together. Stephen afterwards bought another farm on the same section, and died there in 1851. Rufus now lives in Hartford. Alonzo Beaman sold his farm in 1851 to Abram Yates, who lives on it now, Beaman removing to Iowa, where he has since remained. The farm once occupied by Rufus Hastings is now owned by Zephaniah Stickney. When the Beamans settled they had no neighbors nearer than Watervliet village. That part of the country was unbroken, and as to roads they were, of course, out of the question. Lucy, daughter of Austin Beaman, the first white child born in the township on that side the river, lives now in Watervliet village.

In the summer of 1844, James I. Redding, of St. Joseph Co., Ind., came to Watervliet, with his wife and seven children, and moved into a building which Israel Kellogg had been using for a store and dwelling, but which was then abandoned, Kellogg having gone to Kalamazoo to live. This old store just stood west of the present Osgood House,

and there Kellogg lived and traded a short time after he removed from Watervliet village, although from all reports he could not have traded very extensively since his stock of goods was small, as was his store. Redding had bought his farm of Smith & Merrick through Gilson Osgood, but he did not like the place, and after remaining about a year and a half gave it up and moved to Watervliet, where he rented Smith & Merrick's mill, and afterwards opened a store there, which he continued to keep until his death, in 1849. Of the seven children who came to Michigan with him in 1844, the only one living in the township is Mrs. Russell McKee.

Simeon Hawks, of Franklin Co., N. Y., started for Michigan in 1844, with his wife and eight children. At Rochester the old folks and four of the youngest children halted a while, the four eldest children going on, and the parents following soon afterwards; all met at Watervliet, according to previous understanding. They lived in the village long enough to enable Mr. Hawks to buy of Smith & Merrick a farm on section 24, east of the village, and to put up a cabin, when all moved out there. In the following year—that is to say, 1845—Erasmus D. Earl and wife, the latter being Mr. Hawks' daughter, came to Watervliet and located on a farm near the Hawks family. The elder Hawks died on the old place in 1864, and there his son Cortes now lives. Of the eight children who came with the paternal Hawks in 1844, those living in the township are Mrs. Henry Hutchins, Cortes, and Azar Hawks. Mr. Earl moved to Iowa in 1857, and still resides there.

John Merrifield, of New York State, was a settler in Watervliet in 1844, and upon his arrival bought Moses Osgood's 80-acre farm, on section 30, upon which 25 acres had been cleared and broken; Osgood having also set out an orchard of 100 trees. The elder Merrifield died there in 1851. Of the sons who came out with him, William and S. P. now live in the township.

The spring of 1844 brought also Jarrett Ingraham and his family to Berrien County from New York State. They journeyed overland to Bainbridge, where Mrs. Joseph Vincent (one of Ingraham's daughters) lived, and remained with her until fall. Ingraham located in Watervliet, where he had bought several hundred acres of land, on sections 4 and 5. At the time of Mr. Ingraham's location there no settlers were on that side of the river except Austin and Alonzo Beaman. Mr. Ingraham had intended half of his land-purchase for his son Minot, who, with his wife and child, joined his father in the fall of 1845, by which time the elder Ingraham had underbrushed a road from the river to his place, and on the latter had put up a log cabin, into which Minot moved for a temporary home. When Minot came, the only roads thereabout were the St. Joseph and Paw Paw road, passing east and west between Coloma and Riverside. In the following spring he was chosen a highway commissioner, and did some effective work in laying out much-needed roads. It is worthy of note that the two-horse carriage in which Minot Ingraham and his family traveled from Detroit to Watervliet (having shipped it *via* Lake Erie from Buffalo) was the first vehicle of that description ever owned in the township.

In the spring of 1845, besides assisting in laying out



roads, Minot Ingraham joined with Stephen R. Gilson in establishing a ferry across the Paw Paw River at Coloma. The elder Ingraham exchanged his Watervliet farm, in 1848, with George Peters for a farm in Bainbridge, where he died in 1852. Peters sold the Ingraham tract to Andrew Pitcher in 1850. Minot lived on his farm until 1869, when he moved to Coloma, where, in 1871, he built a hotel and store, near the railway-depot, and where he now lives. The original 280 acres he bought through his father he still owns, and leases to his sons.

Ives Wallingford, with his wife and four children, moved from St. Joseph Co., Ind., to Watervliet in the spring of 1844, having bargained with Alfred Sensebaugh for land on section 19, which Sensebaugh had taken from Smith & Merriek on contract, cleared and broke 20 acres, and then turned the contract over to Wallingford. The latter moved his family into a log school-house, and lived there until his own shanty was finished. Mr. Wallingford lived on the farm until 1850, when he moved into what is now the village of Coloma, and there, in that year, built the first frame house erected there. It stands yet, adjoining the Osgood House on the southwest, and is occupied as the residence of Mr. Shaner. Since 1850 Mr. Wallingford has resided in Coloma.

Abner Bratton, of Genesee Co., N. Y., was a settler in 1844, having moved into Calhoun County in 1838, and from there to Watervliet in 1844. He bought 80 acres on section 19, adjoining William Merrifield on the east, of Smith & Merriek, and after living there three years moved to a farm on section 30, where he died in February, 1876. His son Milo lives in the township, on section 31.

In April, 1845, a party of 13 entered Watervliet in company from Elkhart, Ind., whence they had journeyed in wagons. The party included Crain Valentine, his wife, and five children, Martin Musser (Mrs. Valentine's brother), his wife, and four children. Valentine bought 40 acres on section 28, on the Watervliet and Coloma road, and Musser 80 on the same road half a mile west. Musser put, with Gilson Osgood, Odell, and Clark, a tannery on Tannery Creek, and removing afterwards to 40 acres east, near Watervliet, put up a second tannery. Musser went to Nebraska in 1864, and now lives in Kansas. Mr. Valentine still lives upon the place he settled in 1845. When Valentine and Musser settled there was no inhabitant on the east-and-west road passing from Watervliet to Coloma, except the Redding family. The road itself was but a single wagon-track through a wilderness of blackberry bushes, and passable only with considerable difficulty.

In October, 1844, Ira Wilks, of Orange, Cuyahoga Co., Ohio, engaged with William Fairbanks to take a drove of cattle from Orange to Berrien Springs, Mich., and while there he bought 93 acres of land on section 21, in Watervliet, belonging to one Williams, a lawyer of Cleveland. He visited Chicago, and returning to Ohio, prepared to remove as a settler to his Michigan purchase. In October, 1845, accordingly, he set out from Orange with his father, Nathan, his mother, his brother-in-law, Abram Coleman, and the latter's wife,—the company traveling overland in wagons drawn by horses and oxen. Arriving in Watervliet, they moved into a cabin on land previously occupied by

Martin Musser, and lived there until places of their own could be prepared for habitation. Coleman and the elder Wilks bought of Smith & Merriek 40 acres each on section 28. Wilks died there about a year after his arrival. Coleman died on his farm in 1870. Ira Wilks lived in Watervliet until 1870, and then went to Iowa, whence, returning not long after, he resumed his residence in Watervliet, and still lives there. He relates that when he came, in 1845, the only traveled road was the St. Joseph and Paw Paw road, which in Watervliet was at best a rough thoroughfare, confined by a high growth of bushes to a single track just wide enough for one wagon, and provided at stated points with "turn-outs."

Harvey Kingsbury was a settler in 1845 upon a farm east of Watervliet village, and in the same year William Duvall, with his family, moved from Bainbridge to section 31 in Watervliet, where he had bought a farm of a Mr. Angell in 1844. At the same time he bought 80 acres south of Watervliet village, which he sold to John Tyler. He lived upon section 31 until his death, in 1878. His children now living in the township are Mrs. Briggs Gould and G. G. Duvall.

Henry R. Holland, originally of St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., went to Chicago in 1844, and in 1846 came to Watervliet village, where he put up a blacksmith-shop opposite the saw-mill, and purchased also an unfinished dwelling-house begun by Cornelius Williams, the house being now the residence of Mr. Van Natter. Mr. Holland became somewhat famous as a maker of axes, and people came frequently from Paw Paw and points equally distant to buy Holland's axes. In 1849 he went to California, but soon returned, in 1850, and entered a farm near Watervliet village, on sections 23 and 26, where his son Edward lives. In 1856 he opened a store in Watervliet village, as one of the firm of Holland & Smith, and continued in the trade until 1859. Mr. Holland removed to Missouri some time ago, but visits Michigan frequently to look after his interests in the State.

Delos Bryant settled in Hagar in 1845, coming from Calhoun Co., Mich. He located in 1847 upon section 29 in Watervliet, and after living there until 1870 removed to Coloma, which is now his home.

W. W. McKee (a brother-in-law of Isaac N. Swain), now a resident on the Watervliet and Coloma road, came in February, 1848, to Watervliet village, with his wife and seven children, having traveled by team from Ohio, in which State he had been a settler two years. Mr. McKee bought a farm of I. N. Swain, but during the ensuing seven years continued to reside in the village, meanwhile cultivating his place. In 1855 he moved there with his family, and since then has made it his home. Mr. McKee says that when he became a resident of Watervliet village, in 1848, there were living there the Reddings, Dr. Wheeler, H. R. Holland, Cornelius Williams, Philo Woodruff, and the Stoughtons. On the present road to Coloma were the Wilks, Valentines, and Colemans. On the east were the Tamlins, Hawks, Kingsburys, and Smalls. On the south the nearest neighbor was distant three miles.

Jesse Woodward, a Vermonter, came West in 1849, and joined his brother Abner in Hagar township. He remained there a few days, and then established his family in Dicker-

ville, while he busied himself with the task of clearing a tract of 120 acres of land on section 21, which had belonged to Griffith, Hoyt & Co. In 1850 he moved his family, and there made his home until 1876, when he changed his residence to Coloma, where he now lives. Abner, his brother, just mentioned, left Hagar in 1854 and settled upon a farm adjoining Jesse, where he died in 1857.

In the fall of 1850, Uriah Harris, of Ohio, settled with his family upon 118 acres of land formerly occupied by Gilson Osgood. He died there in 1865, leaving a widow, who now resides in Coloma. In 1850, also, Andrew Pitcher, of Bainbridge, bought of George Peters 280 acres of land on sections 4 and 5, which Peters had bought of Jarrett Ingraham. Pitcher lived on the place until 1873, when he moved to Coloma, which has since been his residence. When Pitcher settled there the only family in that region north of the river was that of Minot Ingraham, and the only house between Pitcher's and South Haven was that of a Mr. Youngs.

Elkanah Carter, who lives just west of Coloma, was in 1838 a resident of Watervliet, having in that year come from New York State to work for Smith & Merrick. He returned to New York in 1840, and in 1865, making his second trip to Watervliet, became a permanent settler.

#### SOLDIERS OF 1812.

On section 6, in the northwest corner of the township, lives William H. Shiver, whose father, John, living, at the age of ninety-four, near his son's place, was a soldier of the war of 1812, during which conflict he served as teamster. He was at a later period in the employ of the Hudson Bay Company, and occasionally tells of his rugged experience while in the latter service,—a service, he says, full of danger, hardship, and suffering, although not devoid of a certain kind of interest. William Shiver settled on section 6 in 1858, and at that late day there were but three houses between his place and Coloma,—the houses of Mr. Van Hoesen, Charles Roome, and Moses Osgood. Shiver bought his land of Isaac K. Finch, and when he moved upon it it was all a forest except one acre. Deer were exceedingly plentiful, roads were few and poor, and the pioneer's existence in that quarter brought quite as much of privation as it had in other portions of the township fifteen years before.

Another old soldier living in Watervliet is George Smith, father of Sebastian Smith. He came to the township in 1859, since which time he has lived with his son. He served eight months in the war of 1812–15, and although in his eighty-eighth year is a man of fine, commanding physique, promising fair to enjoy at least another decade of life.

#### PHYSICIANS.

Dr. J. H. Wheeler was the first physician to locate at Watervliet (in 1846), although before his time Dr. J. H. Crawford, the first settled physician in the township, used to practice at Watervliet occasionally, but at no time did he live there. Dr. Wheeler moved subsequently to Coloma.

Dr. B. B. Tucker commenced medical practice in Watervliet in 1857, and since that time, until recently, he has pursued his profession in the village. He is now virtually retired from active practice, although still conducting a pros-

perous drug business, with which he has been concerned for many years.

Following Dr. Tucker the physicians in Watervliet may be named as Drs. Lamb, Lindsley, Dunning, R. B. Lawrence, L. B. Foster, and S. D. Walden, the latter three being now the practicing physicians of the place.

The first physician to practice in Watervliet has already been named in Dr. J. H. Crawford, who in 1841 settled about a mile south of the site of Coloma, near Becker's Lake. Dr. Crawford did not intend to practice medicine when he became a settler, but circumstances, aided by frequent appeals for his services, led him to take it up, and he soon acquired a practice that employed about his whole time and took him over a wide range of territory. Although business was good, the country did not agree with Dr. Crawford,—that is to say, sickness began to fasten itself upon him as well as upon others, and succumbing eventually to illness and the loneliness of his situation in a wild country, he returned to Ohio, his place of former residence. So anxious was he to get away that, being too ill to walk or sit up even, he caused himself to be conveyed eastward upon his sick-bed.

Dr. Crawford's successor as a practitioner in the township was Dr. J. H. Wheeler, who settled in Watervliet village about 1846. Upon the death of his wife he removed to Coloma, and after practicing there for a time occupied a farm west of the village, and not long after left the township.

In 1855, Dr. H. M. Marvin came to Coloma, and with the exception of one year, spent in the government service, has practiced continuously in the village until the present time.

While Dr. Marvin was serving as surgeon in the United States army, in 1864, Dr. Hamilton practiced in Coloma about four months, until his death. The physicians are Drs. Marvin, Wakeman, Ryno, and Baker.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL LIST.

Watervliet, originally a part of St. Joseph township, was set off as a part of Paw Paw township March 7, 1834, attached to Bainbridge April 2, 1838, and was set off in 1846 from the latter as a separate township. The township records dating from 1846 to 1868 were destroyed by fire in 1867, and thus much documentary evidence bearing upon Watervliet's early history is lost, while the list of township officials can be given only from 1868 to the present time. The township was named from Watervliet village, which was originally known as Waterford; but that name being borne by another postal station in the State, a change was made to Watervliet, a Dutch term signifying "flowing water."

The affairs of the township are directed by a township board, whose members in 1879 were W. M. Baldwin, Supervisor; W. A. Baker, Township Clerk, and Abram Smith, Justice of the Peace. The school inspectors were R. R. Lawrence, Sawyer Ball, and Wm. A. Baker. The justices of the peace were Sawyer Ball, Abram Smith, Oscar Terry, and E. H. Goldman. The following list is of persons who have filled the offices of supervisor, clerk, treasurer, and justice of the peace from 1868 to the present time:

- 1868.—Supervisor, James H. Marvin; Clerk, H. C. Matran; Treasurer, James W. Weimer; Justices of the Peace, William Brown, Isaac B. Standish.
- 1869.—Supervisor, James H. Marvin; Clerk, W. M. Baldwin; Treasurer, J. W. Weimer; Justice of the Peace, Austin Beaman.
- 1870.—Supervisor, James H. Marvin; Clerk, Charles C. Perry; Treasurer, J. W. Weimer; Justice of the Peace, J. H. Marvin.
- 1871.—Supervisor, William H. Merrifield; Clerk, Charles C. Perry; Treasurer, J. W. Weimer; Justice of the Peace, George A. Ray.
- 1872.—Supervisor, Joseph W. Weimer; Clerk, Edwin R. Havens; Treasurer, Marcus Osgood; Justice of the Peace, Charles C. Perry.
- 1873.—Supervisor, Sawyer Ball; Clerk, Edwin R. Havens; Treasurer, Marcus Osgood; Justice of the Peace, Austin Beaman.
- 1874.—Supervisor, S. P. Merrifield; Clerk, Edwin R. Havens; Treasurer, Charles Kennicott; Justice of the Peace, Edwin R. Havens.
- 1875.—Supervisor, S. P. Merrifield; Clerk, Edwin R. Havens; Treasurer, Charles Kennicott; Justices of the Peace, Elias R. Welsh, George A. Ray, Sawyer Ball.
- 1876.—Supervisor, P. A. Bowe; Clerk, E. R. Havens; Treasurer, John W. Knapp; Justices of the Peace, Sawyer Ball, Oscar Terry.
- 1877.—Supervisor, S. P. Merrifield; Clerk, Sawyer Ball; Treasurer, W. M. Baldwin; Justice of the Peace, Abram Smith.
- 1878.—Supervisor, S. P. Merrifield; Clerk, John Thomas; Treasurer, William Baldwin; Justice of the Peace, R. N. Van Matter.
- 1879.—Supervisor, W. M. Baldwin; Clerk, William A. Baker; Treasurer, John W. Knapp; Justices of the Peace, E. H. Goldman, Oscar Terry.

## RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church of Coloma.*—The early records of the Coloma Methodist Episcopal Church are lost, and the fragments of history obtainable about the first days of the organization are necessarily meagre. About the year 1844 a Methodist class was formed at a school-house about a mile west of Coloma, and from the fact that a hill near there, known as Mount Hope, was donated to the church for a cemetery, the class was named Mount Hope. It may be here observed that the soil of Mount Hope proving unsuitable for the purpose, the proposed cemetery was not established there. Among the members of the Mount Hope class whose names can be recalled were Martin Musser and wife, Robert and Eliza Merrifield, James S. Johnson and wife, Jeremiah Smith and wife, Alfred Sensebaugh and wife, J. H. Crawford and wife, —Martin Musser being the class-leader.

After Coloma began to assume the dignity of a village, the class changed its place of worship to that point, and continued to use the township school-house until the completion at Coloma, in 1859, of the Congregational church edifice, which from that time until October, 1879, served as the place of meetings. At the time last mentioned, the Methodists dedicated a handsome church of their own, which they had built at Coloma during the summer. From 1844 to 1847, when the church was attached to the Silver Creek circuit, the pastors were Revs. A. C. Shaw, I. C. Abbott, and E. House. From 1847 to 1856, when it was attached to the St. Joseph circuit, the pastors were Revs. T. P. McCool, E. L. Kellogg, Ransom Goodall, Geo. King, B. F. Doughty, Charles Barnes, Thomas Clark, J. W. Robinson, W. F. Jenkins, Milo Corey, T. H. Bignall, R. Watson, S. Hendrickson, T. G. Jakeway, Charles Barnes. Since 1856 the church has been attached to the Coloma circuit,

and the pastors have been Wm. Stafford, T. G. Jakeway, E. L. Kellogg, J. Hoyt, H. M. Joy, A. J. Eldred, H. Caldwell, Rowland Soule, G. S. Harder, H. Penfield, D. C. Woodward, E. D. Bacon, F. Glass, H. Hall, T. Edward, J. P. Force, C. C. Olds, V. Mason, I. B. Tallman, G. C. Elliott, G. W. Gosling, A. R. Boggis,—the latter being the pastor, October, 1879.

The membership is now 60, and church affairs are prosperous to a gratifying extent. The officers are as follows: Class-Leader, Delos Bryant; Trustees, J. M. Guy, T. Becker, J. M. Worden, T. R. Gilson, S. Bachman, E. Carter, A. W. Crumb, D. Bryant, T. Carter; Stewards, J. M. Guy, T. Becker, S. Bachman, J. M. Worden, A. E. Kingsley. The pastor holds services each Sunday, and preaches each Sunday also in Watervliet village.

*A Union Sunday-School*, supported by the Congregationalists and Methodists, has sessions each Sunday in the Congregational church. The scholars number 40, and are under the charge of Sawyer Ball, superintendent, and a corps of 8 teachers.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church of Watervliet.*—The church now worshipping at Watervliet village, and attached to the Coloma circuit, was organized about the year 1846, although the exact date of that event, as well as early events of interest, cannot be recited, for the reason that the early church records are lost. James I. Redding was the first class-leader, and for twenty-three years, or until 1869, the church met for worship in the Watervliet school-house. In the year mentioned the church edifice now in use was erected. The list of pastors who have served the church will be found identical with that given in the history of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Coloma, since both churches have always been in the same charge. The church trustees are now W. W. Allen, Oscar Terry, S. C. Price, Sebastian Smith, and J. J. Brooks. W. W. Allen, Oscar Terry, and A. N. Woodruff are the Stewards, C. H. Johnson the Class-Leader, and John Worden the District Steward. The church membership is 69.

*A Union Sunday-School*, with a flourishing membership of from 80 to 100 scholars, meets in the church every Sabbath. Mr. George Parsons is the superintendent, and is assisted by 12 teachers.

*The First Congregational Church.*—Pursuant to a call to organize a Congregational Church in Watervliet, a council convened in Coloma, June 16, 1853, with Rev. Wm. C. Denison as moderator and Rev. Eleazer Andrus as secretary. Certificates were presented by Rev. William H. Osborn, Charles C. Johnson, Ives Wallingford, James Scott, Lucina Marvin, Lucina Marvin Osborn, Maria Wallingford, Mrs. Scott, Lucy Ann Crumb, Sarah M. Johnson. Rev. William H. Osborn, formerly a Free-Will Baptist minister, was engaged as pastor, and Charles C. Johnson chosen deacon. The first sacrament was administered by Rev. Thomas Jones. Preaching was at first held in the "Dickerville" school-house. March 26, 1854, 10 members were received into the church. Rev. Mr. Osborn ceased his labors with the church in June, 1856, from which time to June, 1857, there was no minister. Elder A. Rowe was then called to the charge, at which time the church membership was exceedingly feeble and scattered, and, to quote from the church



records, "religion was in a low state." Jan. 9, 1858, there was an upward movement, when 13 members were added, and James Patterson elected deacon. In 1855 the erection of a church edifice was begun, but the completion lagged until 1859, when the house was dedicated; the Home Missionary Aid Society eventually coming to the assistance of the church in the matter, while members of the Methodist Church likewise gave some aid, wherefore the structure was known as the Union Church. Elder William B. Campbell began his term as pastor in 1860. From 1865 to 1867 there was no regular pastor, but in the latter year Rev. E. M. Shaw assumed charge, and remained one year. Upon the retirement of Mr. Shaw the church ceased its active existence, although still retaining its organization, and this condition of affairs endured until December, 1876, when Rev. W. B. Williams, superintendent of missions, revived the church, preached a few times, restored a measure of the lost strength, and in September, 1877, secured Rev. N. D. Lamphear as pastor. Mr. Lamphear was in charge October, 1879, when the membership was 25. At that time, E. P. Luce and J. L. Marvin were officiating as deacons.

*Christian Church.*—In 1857, 35 persons met in the red school-house, just over the river from Coloma, and by Elder B. I. Curtis were organized as the Christian Church of Coloma. Jesse Woodward, who was then chosen deacon, has continued in that office to the present, James Stalker being now a deacon with him. Succeeding Elder Curtis the pastors have been Elders Ira B. Winch, — McGeorge, — Wilson, — McDaniel, G. W. Sherman, — Norman, and Reason Davis. Upon beginning his term of service, in March, 1878, Mr. Davis inaugurated a spirited revival, and so fruitful were his labors that at the close of the revival 130 persons had been received as members of the church. Mr. Davis still serves as pastor, and preaches in the school-house "across the river"; and although the membership of the church is claimed to be 125 no church edifice has yet been erected. Previous to 1875, when the members of the faith in Deerfield worshiped with this congregation, the membership reached at times as high as 200. A flourishing Sabbath-school, in charge of James Stalker, is attached to the church. Jesse Woodward, one of the first members of the church, served as superintendent of the Sabbath-school fifteen years previous to 1876.

#### BURIAL-GROUND.

The village grave-yard first used is still to be seen, but it has long been a disused, forlorn-looking place. Four or five weed-covered graves, surrounded by a picket fence, are there, and near there is what is said to be an Indian mound, where Indian bodies were once buried, and where bones have been turned over by the pioneer plowshare. In the old grave-yard John Stronner buried two children, and there also Mr. Miller, a brother of James Redding's wife, was buried.

#### SCHOOLS.

Reference has already been made elsewhere to the first school and first school-teacher in Watervliet. Especial attention is called to the fact that in its earliest days Dickerville was chosen as the location of a select school of some

pretensions. Charles Bostwick erected in 1849 a good-sized building, which he opened as a school, and of which he promised something more than ordinary in the way of educational achievements. Bostwick himself was a teacher, and to assist him in conducting the school he engaged S. P. Merrifield, then, as now, a resident in the neighborhood. Under their administration the institution flourished for a time, but upon the establishment of common schools it lost its prestige, and being discontinued, was succeeded in the same structure by a tavern, now the Osgood House. The condition of the schools of Watervliet, Sept. 1, 1879, as shown in the report for that year, was as follows: Number of districts, 7 (5 whole, 2 fractional). Number of children of school age, 570. Average attendance, 442. Value of school property, District No. 1, \$1500; No. 2, \$2500; No. 3, \$100; No. 4, \$500; No. 5, \$250; No. 7, \$600; No. 8, \$800; total, \$6350. Whole number of teachers, 16. Amount paid for teachers' wages, \$1693.50. School directors, District No. 1, S. Shoup; No. 2 (graded school), Oscar Terry; No. 3 (fractional), Ch. Becht; No. 4, Perry Johnson; No. 5 (fractional), Milo Baker; No. 7, J. H. Jones; No. 8 (fractional), G. W. Blackman.

#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Coloma Lodge, No. 162, F. and A. M.*, was chartered Jan. 13, 1865, with the following members: John L. Marvin, W. M.; W. W. McKee, S. W.; Milo Bratton, J. W.; Archibald Stewart, A. I. Brush, Gilson Osgood, Marcus Osgood, J. C. Pike, J. H. Marvin, and B. B. Tucker.

The Worshipful Masters who have served since 1865 have been J. L. Marvin, B. B. Tucker, J. H. Marvin, W. W. McKee, Milo Bratton, H. M. Marvin, Archibald Stewart. The membership Oct. 1, 1879, was 34, when the officers were J. L. Marvin, W. M.; Archibald Stewart, S. W.; James Hanna, J. W.; Marcus Osgood, Sec.; Jesse Woodward, Treas.; H. M. Marvin, S. D.; Thomas Becker, J. D.; George Golden, Tiler.

*Henry Chamberlain Lodge, F. and A. M., No. 308*, was organized Jan. 17, 1873, when B. B. Tucker was chosen Master, B. W. Sutherland, Senior Warden, and J. W. Knapp, Junior Warden. The Masters of the lodge since organization have been B. B. Tucker, B. W. Sutherland, and S. D. Walden. The membership is now 22, and the officers are S. D. Walden, M.; B. W. Sutherland, S. W.; John Hammill, J. W.; L. J. Barnard, Sec.; J. S. Burnside, Treas. The lodge holds its sessions in Watervliet village.

*Coloma Lodge, No. 140, I. O. O. F.*, received its charter Jan. 20, 1871, and as charter members had I. B. Winch, J. O. Keith, Jesse Woodward, George Strong, and E. Brant. There are now 45 members, and officers as follows: G. G. Duval, N. G.; R. R. Hewson, V. G.; M. V. Buchanan, R. S.; J. M. Luce, P. S.; Martin Miller, Treas. Regular sessions are held every Wednesday.

*Degree Lodge, Daughters of Rebecca, No. 19*, was chartered Feb. 22, 1879, with 20 members, but worked from February, 1874, under dispensation, as Lodge No. 73. The membership was 30 in October, 1879, when the officers were Mrs. S. E. Miller, N. G.; Mrs. M. V. Buchanan, V. G.; Agnes Duval, R. S.; Mrs. George Hewitt, Treas.; Mrs. S. Shupe, F. S.; J. H. Jones, D. G. M.

*Oviatt Lodge, No. 160, I. O. O. F.*, was organized April 27, 1871, with the following members: R. C. Brown, N. G.; T. A. Pockett, V. G.; W. W. Allen, Sec.; Cortes Hawks, Treas.; and H. E. Holland, Wesley Vincent, and C. H. Johnson. Members received at the first meeting were S. D. Walden, D. C. Johnson, H. B. Bradt, J. V. Hone, Darius Chatfield. The lodge worked under dispensation until Jan. 18, 1872, when a charter was granted. The Noble Grands of the lodge since its organization have been R. C. Brown, T. A. Pockett, S. D. Walden, C. H. Johnson, D. S. Newton, H. B. Bradt, S. C. Price, Darius Chatfield, D. C. Johnson, H. E. Holland, Henry Gammer, J. D. Wigeant, D. A. Wright, D. Randall, and Darius Chatfield.

The membership is now 28 and the officers as follows: D. Randall, S. P. G.; D. Chatfield, N. G.; P. O. Bowe, V. G.; H. B. Bradt, Sec.; Lute Jaffrey, P. Sec.; Charles Johnson, Treas.; Duane Wigeant, I. G. Regular meetings are held every Monday night in Watervliet village.

*The Watervliet Silver Cornet Band* flourished briskly for a space of six years. It was organized by S. D. Walden in 1872, with 13 pieces, and until 1878, under the leadership of Mr. Walden, was an affair of some consequence. In that year the band was dissolved and the property sold.

*Home Grange, No. 188, P. of H.*, was organized Dec. 30, 1873, at the house of Michael Smith, in Hagar township. The charter members were Lyman Cole, Lucinda Cole, William Jeffrey, Almira Jeffrey, De Witt Guy, A. Barnum, S. A. Barnum, Alfred Smith, Mary Smith, Isaac Farnum, Angeline Farnum, Michael Smith, Margaret Smith, George Merrifield, Belle Merrifield, Roswell Curtis, C. H. Curtis, Emma Curtis, C. D. Stanley, M. R. Stanley, Franklin Ripley, Leonard Dade, Sarah Dade, J. C. Lewis, Porter Buckley.

May 12, 1877, Coloma was declared to be the centre of jurisdiction, and the grange domicile was therefore removed to that village, where it has since remained. The membership Oct. 1, 1879, was 30; the officers were Miram Fish, Master; J. L. McKean, Lecturer; H. W. Peck, Steward; E. Buckley, Assistant Steward; I. K. Shimer, Overseer; Mrs. Deetrick, Chaplain; William Collier, Treas.; Helen Finch, Sec.; R. Lee, Gate-Keeper; Mrs. Jane Huyck, Ceres; Sarah Fish, Pomona; Mahala Collier, Flora; M. M. Shimer, Lady Assistant Steward.

*Watervliet Grange, No. 149*, was organized in 1873, and in 1876 losing much of its membership to newly-organized granges in the neighborhood, was dissolved that year.

*Watervliet Lodge, No. 903, I. O. G. T.*, was organized Oct. 28, 1875, with members as follows: S. M. Shirey, L. Reuseau, C. A. Hawks, Mrs. Delano, E. Shirey, F. Griffith, A. Griffith, H. Gammer, S. H. Dill, E. Delano, L. Delano, E. N. Delano, M. S. Slater, G. Hutchinson, E. Hutchinson, E. R. Holland, D. C. Johnson, Mrs. Gammer, S. L. Randall, D. S. Wigeant, C. F. Teetzel, W. Griffith, S. S. Dill, D. A. Wright, L. E. Dill, I. M. Dill, W. Teetzel, J. E. Dill, Flora Johnson, P. L. Delano. The Past Worthy Chief Templars are D. C. Johnson, S. L. Randall, S. H. Dill, Mrs. Kuapp. The present membership is 45. The officers are D. C. Johnson, W. C. T.; Mrs. Delano, W.

V. T.; Mrs. Bradt, W. Chap.; Hayes Dill, W. Sec.; L. E. Delano, W. A. S.; R. E. Wigeant, W. F. S.; Uriah Wood, W. T.; Mertie Burke, W. M.; John McDonald, W. D. M.; Tempie Wigeant, W. I. G.; Perry Newcomb, W. O. G.; Minnie Brooks, W. L. H. S.; Myra Spencer, W. R. H. S.; Mrs. Kuapp, P. W. C. T.

*Coloma Lodge, I. O. G. T., No. 652*, was organized in 1859, but thriving poorly, lapsed into inactivity. In 1869 there was a reorganization, with 14 members, and for a few years matters prospered; but in 1877 another era of inaction set in, and from that time to the present the lodge has had no meetings.

*The Order of United American Mechanics*, said to be the only one of its kind in the State, was organized March 9, 1878, with 24 members, and for a time held regular sessions at Watervliet village, while a permanent prosperity appeared to be assured. After a time, the interest of the members flagged, and sessions of the organization have been very few during the past year. Efforts are being made to revive the matter, but the show for success is by no means flattering.

#### CURIOUS RELIC.

A curious relic was discovered at Watervliet in 1837, during the digging of the race for Smith & Merrick's mills. Joseph Matran, one of the workmen, and now a farmer of Bainbridge, turned up with his spade a tooth of enormous size. It passed into the hands of scientific men, and was produced for discussion in numerous assemblies of the learned, who decided that it had belonged to some creature larger by far than the elephant or any other beast of the present day, and among whom it created for a time a very marked sensation.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### EDWARD BRANT.

This gentleman is the son of Mason and Almira (Tobias) Brant, and one of a family of six children. He was born in Ionia Co., Mich., May 7, 1845. His father was a native of New York, and his mother of Ohio. The elder Brant was a farmer by occupation, and removed to Ionia Co., Mich., in 1838. He went to California in 1849 and died there, leaving his wife and children to struggle for their own maintenance. Mrs. Brant again married, sold her home in Ionia, and came to Berrien County, accompanied by four of her children.

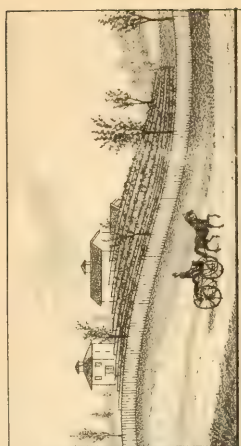
Edward Brant remained with his mother until he had reached the age of thirteen years, when his services were hired by a man named Andrews, and for six months' work he received a *shirt and a pair of overalls*. His stipulated wages were five dollars a month, but were never paid. His subsequent experience was more encouraging, Messrs. Cassidy and Pearl paying him in full for his labor. For six years he was in the employ of Pierce & Co., extensive lumber dealers, who furnished work for sixty men, Mr. Brant being their foreman. At the age of twenty-one he married Miss Martha Carpenter, of Covert township, Van



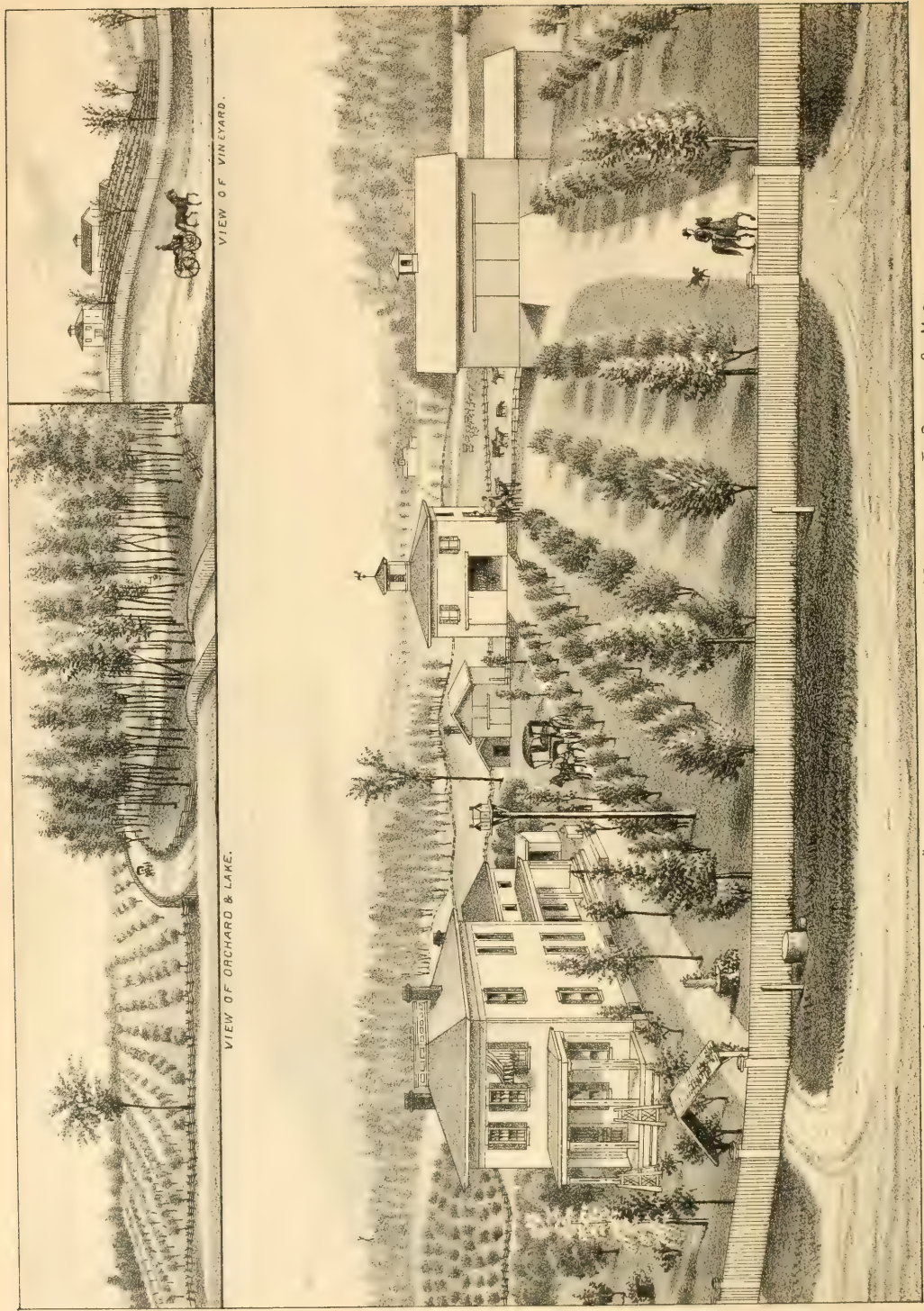




VIEW OF ORCHARD & LAKE.



VIEW OF VINEYARD.



"LAKE VIEW FARM." — RES. OF HARVEY C. SHERWOOD, WATERVLIET TP., BERRIEN CO., MICH.

Buren Co. Her parents, who were natives of Canada, had a family of eight children, and settled early in Michigan. Her mother died when the child was but three years old, and her father's death occurred in 1869. About the time of his marriage Mr. Brant purchased twenty acres of land, which is included in his present farm of three hundred and sixty-three acres. This place has an excellent grain-producing soil, and is well adapted also to the raising of stock. Its owner has at present a fine flock of sheep, and besides his farming operations is extensively engaged in lumbering. His possessions in timber-land aggregate about eight hundred acres, in Berrien and Montcalm Counties, and he gives employment during the entire year to about forty men. Mr. and Mrs. Brant are the parents of four children, viz.: Mason, born Jan. 7, 1867; Carrie, born Nov. 11, 1869; Ida, born Aug. 7, 1871; Mertie, born May 15, 1879. The meaning of the appellation "self-made man" is often perverted, but in the case of Mr. Brant the title is deservedly appropriate, and the result of his labors is an excellent example of what may, through industry, perseverance, and shrewd business tact, grow from a small beginning.

#### HARVEY C. SHERWOOD.

Mr. Sherwood, who is the son of Amos and Mary (Campbell) Sherwood, and the seventh in a family of eleven children, of whom six are now living, was born Feb. 9, 1835, in Onondaga Co., N. Y., of which his mother, who was of Scotch descent, was also a native; his father was born in Connecticut, but was of English descent. His parents were married in Onondaga County, Jan. 25, 1821. Mr. Sherwood remained at home until he was of age, and was given a thorough academical and scientific education, attending different seminaries and the academies at Homer and Onondaga Valley, graduating in the year 1853. His father, who in early life was a merchant, became afterwards a farmer, but remained an active business man, and died about the time his son reached his majority. H. C. Sherwood then went to Syracuse and engaged in business with his brother, Le Grand Sherwood. In 1865 their copartnership was dissolved by mutual consent, and H. C. Sherwood continued in business as a wholesale and retail grocer until 1870, being quite successful. In the latter year he disposed of his business in Syracuse and came to Michigan, and began improving his present fine farm, known as "Lake View," on the bank of Paw Paw Lake. Until 1875 he only spent his summers here, returning for the winters to Syracuse, but in that year he removed with his family—consisting of his wife and one son, Robert H., born Jan. 12, 1864, who is now at Olivet College—to Michigan, where he permanently located.

Mr. Sherwood was married, Sept. 4, 1861, to Elizabeth, youngest child of D. Alvord, one of the first to engage in the manufacture of salt at Syracuse, and who settled in Onondaga County in 1796.

The present home of Mr. Sherwood consists of four hundred acres, lying on sections 11 and 12, in the township of Watervliet, and is especially adapted to fruit-raising. Mr. Sherwood already has forty acres set with peach, apple,

and pear-trees, and sixteen acres of peach-trees are in fine bearing condition, the net profit from this source alone having been over ten thousand dollars in three years. This farm, when it became the property of Mr. Sherwood, was covered by a thick growth of timber, but at present about three hundred and fifty acres are improved and in a state of cultivation. Mr. Sherwood also pays considerable attention to the introduction of fine stock, which none appreciate better than he, and he is the present owner of two hundred Merino sheep, thirty head of cattle, and nine horses, some of the latter being of the famous Percheron Norman breed of draft horses. He raises considerable grain of various kinds; also owns a tract of fine timber-land lying in Allegan and the southern part of Berrien Counties. He takes great pride in his farm, and labors to make it a model of its class. He is a member of the State Pomological Society, and takes deep interest in its affairs. He is also a member of the executive board of the Western Michigan Agricultural and Industrial Society. Politically, he has been a life-long Democrat. He and his wife united with the First Presbyterian Church of Syracuse, N. Y., soon after their marriage.

#### W. W. ALLEN

may be justly ranked among the self-made men of Watervliet township. He was born Aug. 28, 1836, in Stafford, Genesee Co., N. Y., and was the oldest in a family of four children. His parents—Albert and Sophronia (Tanner)



W. W. ALLEN.

Allen—were natives of New York. In 1837 his father came to Michigan and located at Jackson, where he remained about one year and removed to Geauga Co., Ohio, where he died in 1844. His occupation had been that of a miller. Two of his children, a son and a daughter, also died within the same time, and his widow was left with two children and but little means. She returned to Genesee



County, N. Y., and W. W. Allen made his home with an uncle, on the latter's farm. His mother with her youngest child moved to Paw Paw, Mich., where she was married to Mr. N. R. Woodruff, and settled in the town of Bainbridge, Berrien Co. Her son remained with his uncle until he was twelve years old, when he followed his mother to Michigan, and for seven years lived with them in Bainbridge. At the end of that time—or at the age of nineteen—he engaged as clerk in the store of E. Smith & Co., at Paw Paw, and remained with them five years. In 1860, in St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., he was married to Miss Jennie Irving, who was the youngest in a family of four children. Her parents had formerly resided in Canada, but were of Scotch descent, and removed to New York when the daughter was quite young. Mr. and Mrs. Allen are the parents of two children: Irving W., born April 26, 1863, and Blanche W., born Feb. 4, 1867. After his marriage Mr. Allen settled in Watervliet, and engaged in the mercantile business, which he has since continued, with marked success. His stock has been enlarged at various times until he has at present one of the finest stores in the county, and its name—"The Centennial Store"—is familiar to all. Mr. Allen began with a limited capital, but his credit was excellent and he was proved worthy of confidence, and his success in business is indeed gratifying. His early educational advantages were extremely limited, and beyond "*subtraction*" the principles of arithmetic were a blank to him. Politically he is a Republican, and cast his first vote for the lamented Lincoln. For nine years he held the office of postmaster, and finally resigned, as his business affairs occupied his time too fully to admit of his attending to the office. Mr. Allen and his wife united with the Methodist Episcopal Church in 1874. The parents of Mrs. Allen died when she was young. Mr. Allen is now the only living representative of his father's family,—except his mother,—his brother's death having occurred in the winter of 1873.

#### JOSEPH KNAPP,

son of Nathan Knapp, is one of a family of ten children, and was born in Tioga Co., Pa., July 18, 1835. His parents were natives of New York, and his father was a soldier in the war of 1812. The son remained at home until he was twenty-seven years of age, acquiring a fair education. In 1853 his father removed to Michigan and located at Berrien Springs, and two years later changed his residence to Watervliet township, and purchased land on section 17. He died Sept. 12, 1877, his wife's death having occurred April 12, 1874; both are buried in the Coloma Cemetery, and a fine monument to their memory has been erected by their son, Joseph Knapp. Joseph was married March 19, 1862, to Mrs. Maria Clark, of this township, and by her is the father of three children,—Edward, born April 30, 1863; Hiram, born July 6, 1865; Annette, born Oct. 20, 1867. After his marriage, Mr. Knapp settled on forty acres on section 17, where he still resides, having since added to it ninety-six acres. Mrs. Knapp had three children by her first husband, and Elisha, the oldest, is now living with Mr. Knapp. In

1871, Mr. Knapp engaged in the manufacture of fruit-baskets, and has been very successful in that business. In 1874 his building, with all its machinery, was destroyed by fire, but was rebuilt within sixty days, and he now gives employment to a number of persons, varying from twenty-five to thirty-five. In April, 1875, he was called upon to mourn the loss of his wife. Feb. 27, 1876, he was married to Mrs. Josephine Warner, a native of Vermont, from which State her parents—also natives thereof—removed to Michigan in 1856, after having spent a few years in Massachusetts. By her first husband she had one child,—Olive H. Warner, who was born in Williams Co., Ohio, Nov. 26, 1863.

In political matters, Mr. Knapp is a Republican, although he claims the privilege of voting for the persons who seem to him best fitted for office. He is a member of the Christian Church, and donates liberally to all religious denominations.

#### S. P. MERRIFIELD.

This gentleman was born Sept. 12, 1827, in Benton township, Yates Co., N. Y., and is one of a family of eleven children,—seven sons and four daughters,—all now living. His mother's maiden name was Simmons, her family being

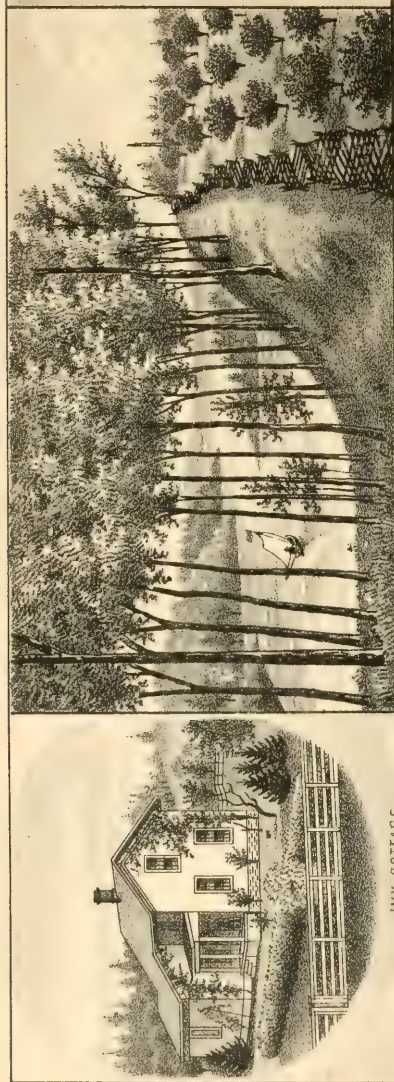


S. P. MERRIFIELD.

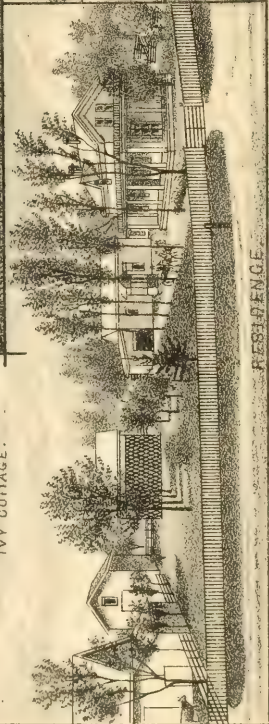
very highly esteemed. When the son was five years of age, his father removed to Potter, in Yates County, where he remained until 1844. In that year he emigrated to Michigan, and settled on section 30, Watervliet township, Berrien Co., where he died, in October, 1851, having reached the age of sixty-six years. S. P. Merrifield assisted on the home-farm until he was twenty-two years of age, when he left for the purpose of attending school, but was prevented by sickness from so doing. Returning to the old neighborhood in New York, he remained two years, working on a farm summers and teaching school winters. In the fall of 1851 he began attending school at Oberlin, Ohio, where he remained six months. He subsequently spent two years in traveling, visiting several Western States, and occasionally obtaining employment at teaching. In 1857, while in



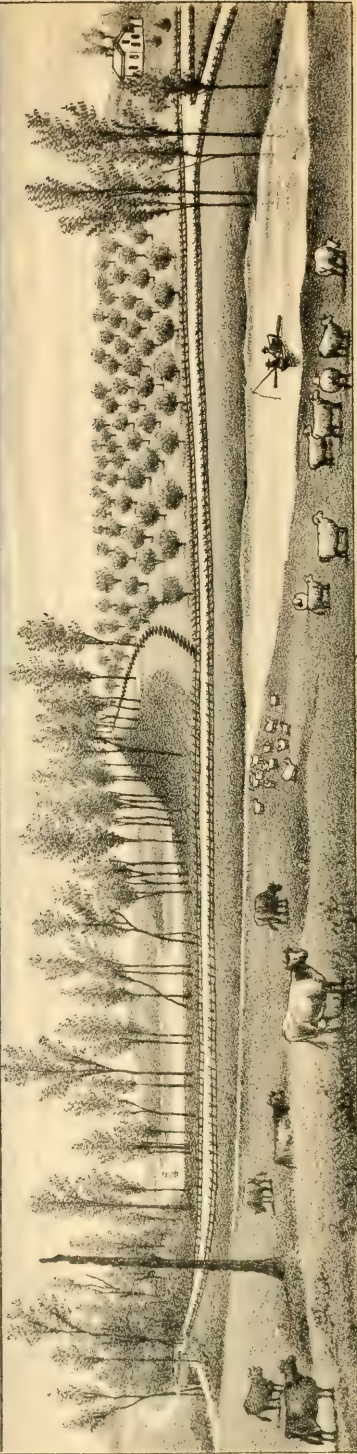




IVY COTTAGE.



RESIDENCE.



VIEWS OF POMONA POINT - PAW PAW LAKE - PROPERTY OF SEBASTIAN SMITH, WATERVLIET Tr., BERRIEN Co., MICH

Ohio, he was married to Miss S. A. Dayton, the only daughter in a family of six children. Her mother, a native of Connecticut, died in 1856, and her father, whose native State was New York, died in the spring of 1859. After his marriage Mr. Merrifield remained on the farm of his father-in-law, in Ohio, nearly fourteen years. His only child, Adin, was born Oct. 14, 1858, and in March, 1879, journeyed to California, where he is now residing. In 1871, Mr. Merrifield removed to Michigan, and settled on the place he now occupies, in Watervliet township. Mr. Merrifield was formerly a Republican in politics, and held the positions of supervisor and school inspector five years. He has more recently united with the Greenback party. For seven years he attended to his duties as an ordained minister of the Universalist Church, in connection with his occupation as a farmer, but is at this time a liberal Spiritualist. His entire life has been a busy one.

### SEBASTIAN SMITH.

This gentleman, the son of George Smith, is the third in a family of five children, and was born May 11, 1826, in Redfield, Kennebec Co., Me., of which town his parents were also natives. When he was thirteen years of age Sebastian Smith went to New Brunswick, where he lived and worked with his uncle, Oliver Smith, until he was twenty-four. July 9, 1850, while in the province named, he was married to Miss Harriet, daughter of John and Rebecca Barker, and by her was the father of five children, three of whom are now living. In 1849, before he was married, his uncle died and left him executor of his will. In 1854, after the final settlement of his uncle's business, he came to Michigan, and selected a site for a future home, and sent for his family, which arrived in the fall of 1855. His uncle's affairs were in such a state that he could pay his nephew nothing, and the latter, upon his arrival in Michigan, was the possessor of the very small sum of fifty cents; but he soon found employment at rafting lumber for the firm of Medbury & Aldrich, who had just become proprietors of the Watervliet Mill. He remained in their employ nearly two years. In the fall of 1856 he formed a copartnership with Henry R. Holland, and together they built a saw-mill on Mill Creek, and operated it two years, when they dissolved partnership. At that time Mr. Smith had accumulated one hundred dollars in cash, as the result of his extreme labor. The panic of 1857 dealt roughly with him, he only saving one hundred and sixty acres of land (on which was an incumbrance of fifteen hundred dollars), ten thousand feet of lumber, and five bushels of corn (which he never received), and seventy-five cents in cash. He again found employment in rafting lumber, and in 1868 built a house on his place which cost sixteen hundred dollars, his father furnishing him with means to pay off the indebtedness upon his land. In 1859 his house was destroyed by fire, but was replaced in ninety days. To this farm he has made numerous additions, and now owns five hundred and thirty-two acres, of which two hundred and fifty are improved, sixty being included in an apple orchard. Mr. Smith has been an extensive shipper of fruit; in 1878

one car-load of apples—one hundred and fifty barrels—was shipped from his orchard direct to London. The farm shown in the view accompanying this notice is located on section 14, about two miles from the homestead, and one mile north of the village of Watervliet; it contains one hundred and twenty acres, twenty of which are set to fruit, and twenty more will be utilized in the same way in 1880, when Mr. Smith's entire orchard will contain one hundred acres.

Mr. Smith is a Democrat in politics and belongs to no religious body. Until he was thirteen his years were spent on his father's farm, where he found plenty of hard work and but small opportunity to obtain an education. By perseverance, however, aided by his mental and physical vigor, he became possessed of much practical knowledge, which fitted him for the duties of life in no small degree.

### CHAPTER XLV.

#### WEESAW TOWNSHIP.\*

Description and Original Land-Entries—The Early Settlers—Land-Owners in 1844—Township Organization and List of Officers—New Troy Village—Hill's Corners—Schools—Religious Societies.

THE township of Weesaw contains 36 full sections, and is bounded on the north by the township of Lake, east by Buchanan, south by Galien, and on the west by the townships of Chickaming and Three Oaks. It is quite destitute of abrupt elevations, and is more nearly level than any township in the county. The northwesterly and central portions of the township are low and marshy, much of which has been reclaimed, making excellent grass-land. The eastern portion is high rolling land, well adapted to grain crops. The western part embraces rich loamy lands of very fine quality. West and southwest of New Troy there is a large admixture of sand. Originally the township was heavily timbered with beech, maple, ash, basswood, whitewood, and black walnut, largely the two latter. The township was delayed many years in its settlement from this fact, and sections were purchased for the timber by parties owning mills, and who held the land until the timber was cut off. The land is now in fine condition, and in the possession of an enterprising, thrifty people, and the future prosperity of Weesaw is assured by the energy of its inhabitants. The township has but few lakes, and its roads are nearly all straight and in excellent condition. Its principal water-course is the Galien River and the branches that form it. The northern branch rises in the north part of Buchanan township, and flows westerly, with many windings mainly through the second tier of sections from the north line, and joins the main stream formed there by the confluence of this and other branches. The largest branch rises in Galien and flows northerly. Thence the river flows west through New Troy and passes into Chickaming township. Blue Jay Creek rises in the southwest part and flows westerly, and joins the large branch on section 20.

The original entries of government land on the several

\* By Austin N. Hungerford.



sections of Weesaw township were made by the following-named persons, viz:

- Section 1.*—R. W. Landon, G. Kimmel, W. Stephens, J. Hickman.  
*Section 2.*—G. Kimmel, Mary J. Gould, Henry Blinn, Chas. P. Beard, J. H. Armstrong, W. Bardin, W. Stephens.  
*Section 3.*—Chas. F. Beard, J. W. Willis, R. W. Landon, John Orris, M. J. Gould, P. Humphrey, T. Dennison.  
*Section 4.*—R. W. Landon, Isaac Sherwood, Elisha Alvord.  
*Section 5.*—D. Murry, J. Smith, Townsend & Co.  
*Section 6.*—J. Sherwood, S. Gould.  
*Section 7.*—S. Gould, R. S. Morrison, E. Hitchcock, A. Edwards, B. Redding, C. W. Reed.  
*Section 8.*—W. Stevens, Townsend & Co., B. Redding, H. Gould, C. J. Lanman, J. Front.  
*Section 9.*—Wm. Smith, Elisha Alvord, E. Grice, W. Stephens.  
*Section 10.*—W. Stephens, John H. Armstrong, — Kimmel.  
*Section 11.*—Armstrong, — Stephens, J. Garwood, S. Garwood, J. Rush.  
*Section 12.*—J. Hickman, W. Dodd, W. Stephens, — Martin.  
*Section 13.*—J. Harris, T. D. Vail, J. Rush, J. Maple.  
*Section 14.*—Wood & Roof, T. D. Vail, Andrew Caton, W. & L. C. Redding, Arthur Squim, Ozman Eddy.  
*Section 15.*—J. Turner, J. Darwin, J. Turner and J. Redding.  
*Section 16.*—School lot.  
*Section 17.*—J. Rush, N. Willard, B. Butterworth, H. Gould, J. Redding, H. A. Ranstead, J. Murphey.  
*Section 18.*—B. Butterworth, J. Murphey.  
*Section 19.*—H. A. Ranstead, — Stephens, S. Gould, C. Hoag, B. Butterworth, S. Edes, D. G. Jones.  
*Section 20.*—N. Willard, J. Rush, S. Cannon, J. Mitchell, H. Bement.  
*Section 21.*—W. Scott, T. H. Richardson, Patrick Sullivan, John McDonnell, Daniel Darby, L. L. Harding, Morris Dulin.  
*Section 22.*—Wm. Hollabrough, Wm. Stephens, D. G. Bouton, S. L. Maynard, M. Turner, Lewis Beuton, J. B. Phyle.  
*Section 23.*—Elisha Alvord, J. Wills, Sr., Lydia Ingersoll, W. Ernhart, Eli Habbell, J. P. Ingersoll, B. F. Pennell, J. W. Utley.  
*Section 24.*—J. Parote, J. Wills, N. Millard, W. Ernhart, J. Ryan, J. Jack.  
*Section 25.*—W. Stephens, J. Allen, N. Wilson, T. Helves, J. A. Stokes.  
*Section 26.*—J. Wills, J. A. Stokes, J. H. Rugg, D. Sharp, J. Davis.  
*Section 27.*—V. L. Bradford, Silas Stearns, Henry B. Hoffman.  
*Section 28.*—V. L. Bradford, J. Snyder, M. Dulin, E. Murdock.  
*Section 29.*—J. Mitchell, W. Scott, Ruel Blackman, Jas. Smith, T. M. Bennett, J. Bennett, N. Millard.  
*Section 30.*—Townsend & Co., N. Millard, W. Massar, J. Turner, J. Gerrish, W. White, N. Turner.  
*Section 31.*—G. B. Avery, J. Gerrish, Wm. Scott, John Burch, J. Curry, C. Thomas.  
*Section 32.*—W. Cash, W. B. Gray, R. Hunt, N. Millard, V. L. Bradford.  
*Section 33.*—V. L. Bradford, John Hunt, J. Snider, H. B. Hoffman.  
*Section 34.*—E. Murdock, Sally Batts, M. M. Price, O. Paddock, Vail Smith, Wm. Stearns, M. Paddock, C. Clopp.  
*Section 35.*—Simeon Berry, S. S. Ford, J. L. Allen, A. Dow & Co., H. B. Hoffman, W. Cash, B. Redding.  
*Section 36.*—W. Stephens, F. Hutchinson, J. W. McKinley, — Cochran, J. Front, B. Redding.

#### THE EARLY SETTLERS.

The territory that comprises this township remained entirely unsettled until about 1836, when the first pioneers came in. Squatters had been on the land in different parts, but left no permanent improvements. Among the first to settle were Phineas Stratton, Timothy Atkins, and others, about 1836. Phineas Stratton was a native of New York, and located on 40 acres in the southwest quarter of section 7. His son James lived on the homestead. Another son, Nathaniel, married, in 1843, a daughter of Mrs. Murdock, who lived for some time on section 34, and is now at Sau-

gatuck, Allegan Co. Harvey lives at New Troy, and John at Michigan City.

Timothy Atkins was a native of Southern Ohio, and came here about the same time as Stratton. He lived in what is now New Troy. Several of those who came in about that time did not locate on farms, but lived near the mills and worked in them.

Charles McCracken was also at New Troy, and was township clerk in 1844-46. He died mysteriously at that place, and parties were arrested, but nothing was proved and they were released.

Sidney S. Ford located in the village. He was a justice of the peace in 1839.

Stephen Hobart settled also at Troy, and was elected treasurer of the township in 1839, and in 1847 moved to Buchanan and died there. He was from Ohio. William H. Gould settled first at New Troy. He was supervisor in 1842, 1844-47. He moved west to Missouri. John Rugg lived in the township, on the northeast quarter of section 20. He was a justice of the peace in 1839. He afterwards removed to Niles township. Erastus Hart also lived in the township, and was justice of the peace in 1847. George Brong was a blacksmith, and lived about a mile north of Hill's Corners, on the northeast quarter of section 2. He was a justice of the peace in 1843. Rugg, Hart, and Brong were the only families who lived out of New Troy in the township before 1840. Ezra Stoner was the first town clerk, in 1837, and justice of the peace in 1839. Joseph G. Ames and Hiram Gould (a brother of Solomon and William) were commissioners of highways. Samuel Garwood also filled that office, but he was located in what is now Galien township. Solomon Gould, a brother of Hiram, was located at the settlement of New Troy, and he, with Hiram, built the first mill. He was one of the first justices. John J. Knapp was also here before 1840, and located on the southeast quarter of section 18.

During and after the year 1840 settlers came in rapidly. Pitt J. Pierce, a native of Hamburg, Erie Co., N. Y., went to Ohio when twelve years of age, and emigrated to Weesaw in the spring of 1840. He located 160 acres on the east half of the southwest quarter and west half of the southeast quarter of section 9. He still lives on the farm. Arnold W. Pierce, the eldest son, lives at New Troy, and is the town clerk, a position he has held for nine years. A daughter, Lucinda, married Richard Jennings, and lives at New Troy.

Alpheus Hill, a native of Connecticut, emigrated to Ohio, and in 1840 to Weesaw, settling in New Troy, where he remained until the spring of 1846, when he removed to what is now known as Hill's Corners. He was a justice in 1841. Abner, the eldest son, cut the first trees at the Corners, and is now living at New Troy. Edward, another son, kept the first store at Troy, and died there. His widow married A. A. Morley; his daughter Mary married P. J. Pierce; Elmira married William S. Pierce; Maria married Henry H. Pike, of Niles; Louisa lives in La Porte, Ind.

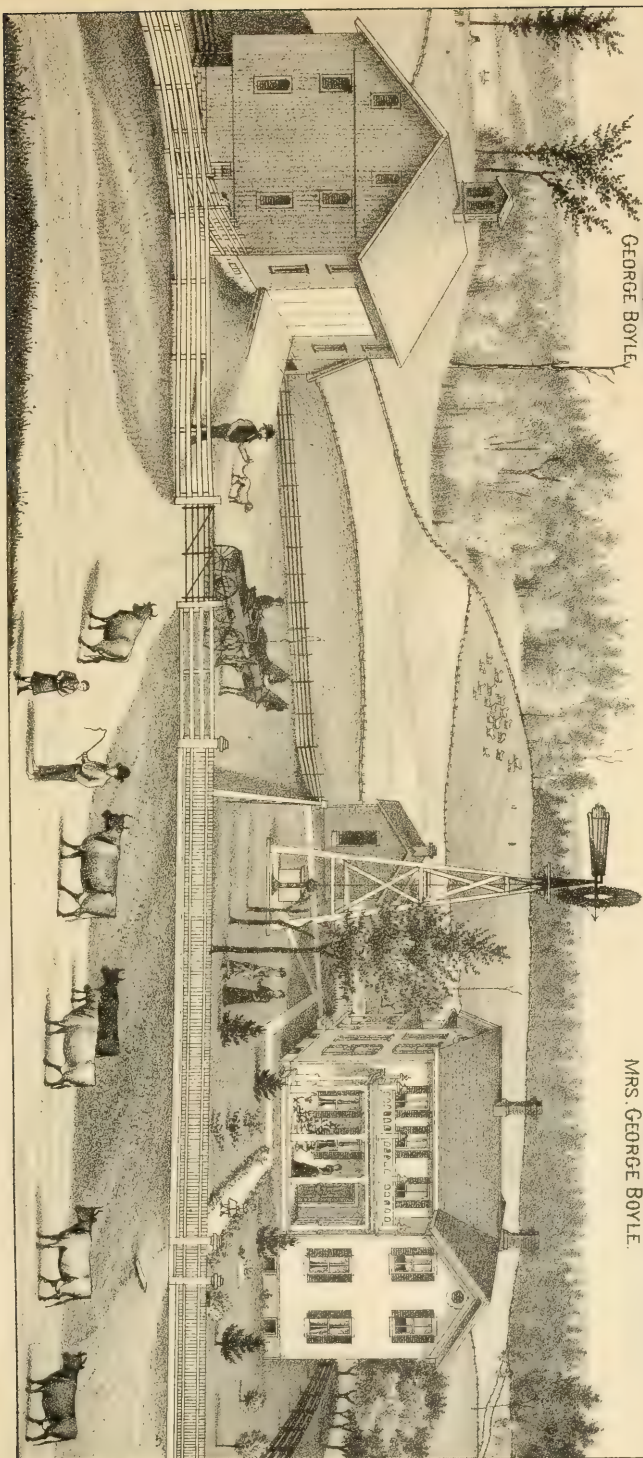
William S. Pierce, a brother of Pitt J., came in about the same time, and located on the northwest quarter of



GEORGE BOYLE.



MRS. GEORGE BOYLE.



RESIDENCE OF GEORGE BOYLE, WEESAW TWP., BERRIEN CO., MICH.





section 10, adjoining his brother. His son lives on the place. A son, Albert, is in California. He was town clerk in 1847-49.

William Strong, in 1841, settled on the northeast quarter of section 2, where his son now lives. Henry Searles settled at the Corners in 1845. Samuel Washburn settled, in 1842, on the southeast quarter of section 3. He was treasurer in 1844-46 and 1849. Hiram Wells located on the northwest quarter of section 11, in 1845, where Peter Smith now owns. He was town clerk in 1848.

All the settlers mentioned above located in the north part of the township before 1845.

In June, 1840, Matthew M. Paddock, a native of Washington Co., N. Y., bought 200 acres of land in the south half of section 34, in the township of Weesaw, and 40 acres adjoining, in the northwest quarter of section 2, now in the township of Galien, and built a cabin on the 200 acres. He still lives on the farm. He was justice of the peace in 1844, and town clerk in 1850. When he settled there were no families west of him. John Unrugh, John P. Johnson, and Richard Huston lived south of his place, in Galien. Settlers were few in that section for ten years succeeding 1840.

About 1842 the family of Ephraim Murdock located the northwest quarter of section 34, where his widow, with her youngest son, still lives. Her eldest son, John, lives on the southeast quarter of section 32. Robert Eaton settled, about 1846, on the southwest quarter of section 25, now owned by A. T. Hall.

Hugh Lamb, with his wife and sons, emigrated from New York State, and purchased the John Rugg farm, on the northeast quarter of section 26, in October, 1851. His son William settled on the northwest quarter of section 25, east of his father, where he still lives. Alexander lives on the southwest quarter of section 36, and Thomas lives south of his brother Alexander, on the same quarter section. Curtiss lives on Terre Coupée Prairie.

Elijah Hall purchased 120 acres in Weesaw, in the southeast quarter of section 36, and 80 acres adjoining it on the east, in Buchanan township. He lived on the 80 acre tract for a time, but now lives in Weesaw.

Benjamin F. Pennell and Union Pennell, brothers, emigrated to this township about 1849, and located in the northeast quarter of the township, near New Troy. Benjamin F. was supervisor from 1850 to 1858; Union was treasurer from 1853 to 1859, and justice of the peace two terms, from 1852.

Ambrose A. and Thomas Morley came to New Troy in 1853, and built a mill on the river. Ambrose was the first postmaster; he is still living at Troy, and keeps the hotel.

Dr. A. B. Herman, a native of Ohio, came to Niles township, where he lived a short time, and in 1855 came to Troy and established practice there as a physician. He now lives in Buchanan.

Alonzo Sherwood is a son of Seth Sherwood, one of the earliest settlers on the St. Joseph River, in Niles township. He settled on the north half of section 5, originally entered by D. Murray. He engaged largely in lumbering and farming. A horse-railroad was run for several years from his Oak Grove saw-mill, along the line of the township, to

Brown's Station on the railroad and to Brown's Pier on the lake. Mr. Sherwood purchased 240 acres in Weesaw, and 240 acres in Lake township. He was supervisor in 1869, '70, and is now (1879) a member of the Legislature.

*The Land-Owners in Weesaw in 1844*, as shown by the assessment roll of that year, were as follows: Stephen Hobart, William Strong, Joseph Thornton, Alpheus Hill, George Brong, Samuel M. Washburn, Joseph Williams, P. G. Stratton, Samuel Stratton, C. Wheeler, Pitt J. Pierce, William S. Pierce, William H. Gould, John J. Knapp, Erastus Hart, John Rugg, W. M. Maynard, S. C. Maynard, Mary Murdock, M. M. Paddock, N. Stratton, T. Atkins, John Porter, Charles McCracken, Francis Finnegan, J. H. Armstrong, J. Hickman, W. Stephens, T. Denison, Isaac Sherwood, H. Alvord, D. Murry, J. Smith, Townsend & Co., Sherwood Gould, John Law, E. Hitchcock, A. Edwards, C. W. Reed, B. Redding, C. J. Landmann, E. Alvord, W. M. Smith, J. Garwood, S. Garwood, J. Rush, W. Dodge, — Martin, J. Harris, T. D. Vail, J. Maple, Wood & Rapp, W. Redding, L. C. Redding, Osmer Eddy, J. Redding, J. Turner, J. Dawson, R. Butterworth, H. A. Ranstead, N. Willard, S. Gould, C. Hoag, S. Edes, D. G. Jones, J. Mitchell, H. Bennett, W. Scott, — Richardson, J. B. Uhle, J. Willison, W. Earnhart, M. Willis, P. Y. Parrote, M. Ryan, M. Jack, N. Willson, T. H. Ives, M. A. Stokes, J. Davis, V. L. Bradford, H. F. Hoffman, Y. Mitchell, T. M. Burnett, A. Bennett, W. Massey, Y. Garrish, W. White, Y. Bursch, T. Thomas, R. Hunt, W. Cash, Paul Smith, Sally Butler, A. Daw & Co., T. Barry, J. W. McKinly, T. Hutchinson, W. Stephens, Y. Frost, W. Hall.

The lands in the village of New Troy were at that time held as follows: N. Willard & Co., the larger part of blocks 1, 2, 6, 7, 8, 19, 20, 21, 22, and 24. Francis Finnegan on block 3; R. C. Payne on blocks 3, 4, 18, 10, and 11; A. Hill on block 3; Stephen Hobart, 10 and 11; Samuel Stratton, 3; Charles McCracken, 11; W. H. Gould, 11 and 13; A. Calvin on block 11; Strand on 3; P. Castle, blocks 3, 4, 5; Sanford on 11; Strand on blocks 12, 13, 17, and 18. Valuation for 1844, \$25,401.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND LIST OF OFFICERS.

The act that created the township of Weesaw, approved March 20, 1837, provided that "All that portion of the county of Berrien designated by the United States survey as townships 7 and 8 south, of range 19 west, be and 'the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of Weesaw, and the first township-meeting therein shall be held at such place in said township as the sheriff of the county of Berrien shall designate and appoint."

In the organization of the township of Bertrand, in the previous year, the territory now known as Galien—being township 8 south, of range 19 west—was attached to Bertrand. In the erection of Weesaw this was taken from Bertrand and became part of the territory of Weesaw, to which it belonged till Feb. 29, 1844, when it was set off as Galien.

The township in 1840 contained but 142 inhabitants; 1845, 155; 1854, 404; 1860, 753; 1870, 1243.

The records of the township were kept on loose sheets of paper until 1841, and the names of officers prior to that time are gleaned from highway reports, oaths of office, and other papers.

The officers of the year of organization are not known, except Ezra Stoner, the first township clerk, who, as such, entered a record of a road Nov. 15, 1837. Joseph G. Ames, Hiram Gould, and Samuel Garwood were commissioners of roads; John P. Johnson, justice of the peace. The principal township officers from 1839 to the present time have been as follows:

- 1839.—Joseph G. Ames, Supervisor; Ezra Stoner, Town Clerk; Ezra Stoner, John Rugg, Solomon Gould, and Sidney S. Ford, Justices of the Peace; Stephen Hobart, Treasurer.
- 1841.—James Edson, Supervisor; James H. Willson, Jr., Town Clerk; James Edson, Treasurer; John P. Johnson and Alpheus Hill, Justices of the Peace; Matthew M. Paddock, School Inspector.
- 1842.—William H. Gould, Supervisor; Daniel Bellinger, Town Clerk; Samuel Garwood, Treasurer; M. M. Paddock and William H. Gould, School Inspectors.
- 1843.—William Burns, Supervisor; Daniel Bellinger, Town Clerk; Samuel Garwood, Treasurer; George Brong, Justice of the Peace; Daniel Bellinger, Samuel M. Washburn, and William Burns, School Inspectors.
- 1844.—Wm. H. Gould, Supervisor; Charles McCracken, Town Clerk; Erastus Hart, Matthew M. Paddock, Justices of the Peace; Samuel M. Washburn, Treasurer and School Inspector.
- 1845.—Wm. H. Gould, Supervisor; Charles McCracken, Town Clerk; Samuel M. Washburn, Treasurer; Joseph Thornton, Justice of the Peace; Lorenzo Thornton, School Inspector.
- 1846.—Wm. H. Gould, Supervisor; Charles McCracken, Town Clerk; Samuel M. Washburn, Treasurer; B. F. Pennell, M. M. Paddock, Justices of the Peace.
- 1847.—Wm. H. Gould, Supervisor; Wm. S. Pierce, Town Clerk; Stephen Hobart, Treasurer; Samuel Stratton, Erastus Hart, Justices of the Peace; Lorenzo Thornton, School Inspector.
- 1848.—Wm. H. Gould, Supervisor; Hiram Wells, Town Clerk; John H. Rugg, Treasurer; Pitt J. Pierce, Justice of the Peace; B. F. Bennett, School Inspector.
- 1849.—Benjamin M. Lyon, Supervisor; Wm. S. Pierce, Town Clerk; Samuel M. Washburn, Treasurer; William S. Pierce, Levi Logan, Benjamin M. Lyon, Justices of the Peace; Truman Royer, John J. Knapp, School Inspectors.
- 1850.—Benjamin F. Pennell, Supervisor; Matthew M. Paddock, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer; Daniel B. Mead, School Inspector; James W. Wells, Justice of the Peace.
- 1851.—B. F. Pennell, Supervisor; Daniel B. Mead, Town Clerk; James W. Wells, Treasurer; Hiram Wells, Justice of the Peace; Benjamin M. Lyon, School Inspector.
- 1852.—B. F. Pennell, Supervisor; D. G. Brown, Town Clerk; Samuel M. Washburn, Treasurer; Union Pennell, Justice of the Peace; D. B. Mead, School Inspector.
- 1853.—Samuel M. Washburn, Supervisor; Wm. S. Pierce, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer; Samuel Stratton, Justice of the Peace; B. F. Pennell, School Inspector.
- 1854.—Benjamin F. Pennell, Supervisor; Wm. S. Pierce, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer; Otis Stearns, John J. Knapp, Justices of the Peace; Thomas Morley, School Inspector.
- 1855.—B. F. Pennell, Supervisor; Robert Eaton, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer; Daniel Holmes, David Beard, Justices of the Peace; B. F. Pennell, School Inspector.
- 1856.—B. F. Pennell, Supervisor; Wm. H. Streeter, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer and Justice of the Peace; A. B. Herman, School Inspector.
- 1857.—B. F. Pennell, Supervisor; Robert Eaton, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer; Daniel Oyler, Hiram Wells, Justices of the Peace; B. F. Pennell, Robert Eaton, School Inspectors.
- 1858.—B. F. Pennell, Supervisor; Benjamin McDaniels, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer; Benjamin McDaniels, Job Gaunt, Justices of the Peace; W. W. Fuller, School Inspector.

1859.—Theodore A. Hoskins, Supervisor; Wm. S. Pierce, Town Clerk; Union Pennell, Treasurer; B. F. Pennell, School Inspector; M. M. Paddock, John Brown, Justices of the Peace.

The records from 1859–67 are missing. From the latter year to 1879 the officers have been as follows:

- 1867.—Ebenezer P. Morley, Supervisor; Reuben M. Shafer, Town Clerk; Samuel Smith, Jr., Treasurer; Richard V. Clark, Thomas J. Osborn, School Inspectors; John C. Marks, Justice of the Peace.
- 1868.—Ebenezer P. Morley, Supervisor; W. W. Kempton, Clerk; Samuel Smith, Jr., Treasurer; William S. Morley, Justice of the Peace; Peter Smith, School Inspector.
- 1869.—Alonzo Sherwood, Supervisor; W. W. Kempton, Town Clerk; Samuel Smith, Jr., Treasurer; Henry Searls, Justice of the Peace; John S. Painter, School Inspector.
- 1870.—Alonzo Sherwood, Supervisor; W. W. Kempton, Town Clerk; Samuel Smith, Jr., Treasurer; Burr Benton, Justice of the Peace; William R. Gondar, School Inspector.
- 1871.—Benjamin C. Sandford, Supervisor; Arnold W. Pierce, Town Clerk; L. Francis, Treasurer; B. C. Sandford, Justice of the Peace; Union Pennell, School Inspector.
- 1872.—Benjamin C. Sandford, Supervisor; Arnold W. Pierce, Town Clerk; Lothern Francis, Treasurer; Levi Logan, Justice of the Peace; William Spooner, School Inspector.
- 1873.—George Pierce, Supervisor; Henderson Ballengee, Town Clerk; Lothern Francis, Treasurer; John T. Beckwith, Justice of the Peace; Evan L. Fitch, School Inspector.
- 1874.—E. P. Morley, Supervisor; A. W. Pierce, Town Clerk; Austin Adams, Treasurer; Otis Stearns, Justice of the Peace; Alvin Morley, School Inspector.
- 1875.—E. P. Morley, Supervisor; A. W. Pierce, Town Clerk; Henderson Ballengee, Treasurer; Alvin Morley, Superintendent of Schools; Otis Stearns, School Inspector; James E. Borden, Justice of the Peace.
- 1876.—George Pierce, Supervisor; A. W. Pierce, Town Clerk; H. Ballengee, Treasurer; L. H. Dunning, Superintendent of Schools; Reuben Shafer, School Inspector; Milton Morley, Justice of the Peace.
- 1877.—George Pierce, Supervisor; A. W. Pierce, Town Clerk; Gottlieb Hagerly, Treasurer; Daniel Holmes, Justice of the Peace; Joseph M. Rogers, Superintendent of Schools; William R. Gondar, School Inspector.
- 1878.—George Pierce, Supervisor; Gottlieb Hagerly, Treasurer; A. W. Pierce, Town Clerk; Otis Stearns, Justice of the Peace; Joseph M. Rogers, Superintendent of Schools; Peter Smith, School Inspector.
- 1879.—John T. Beckwith, Supervisor; A. W. Pierce, Town Clerk; Peter Smith, Treasurer; James E. Borden, Justice of the Peace; George H. Riley, Superintendent of Schools; Andrew J. Norris, School Inspector.

#### NEW TROY VILLAGE.

About 1836, Solomon and Hiram Gould located the southeast quarter of the southeast quarter of section 7, and the southwest quarter of the southwest quarter of section 8, and built a saw-mill at what is now the village of New Troy. It was known as the "North Mill." Nelson Willard, of Buffalo, N. Y., Joseph G. Ames, of New Hampshire, and Ezra Stoner, a native of Maryland, bought an undivided half of the land and the water power, and built on the other side of the stream a mill which was known as the "South Mill."

At that time the residents of the village were Solomon Gould and wife, Hiram Gould and wife, William H. Gould, and the mother of the Goulds. Stoner and Ames were single men. Timothy Atkins, Charles McCracken, Sidney S. Ford, and Alanson and John Pidge were also residents.

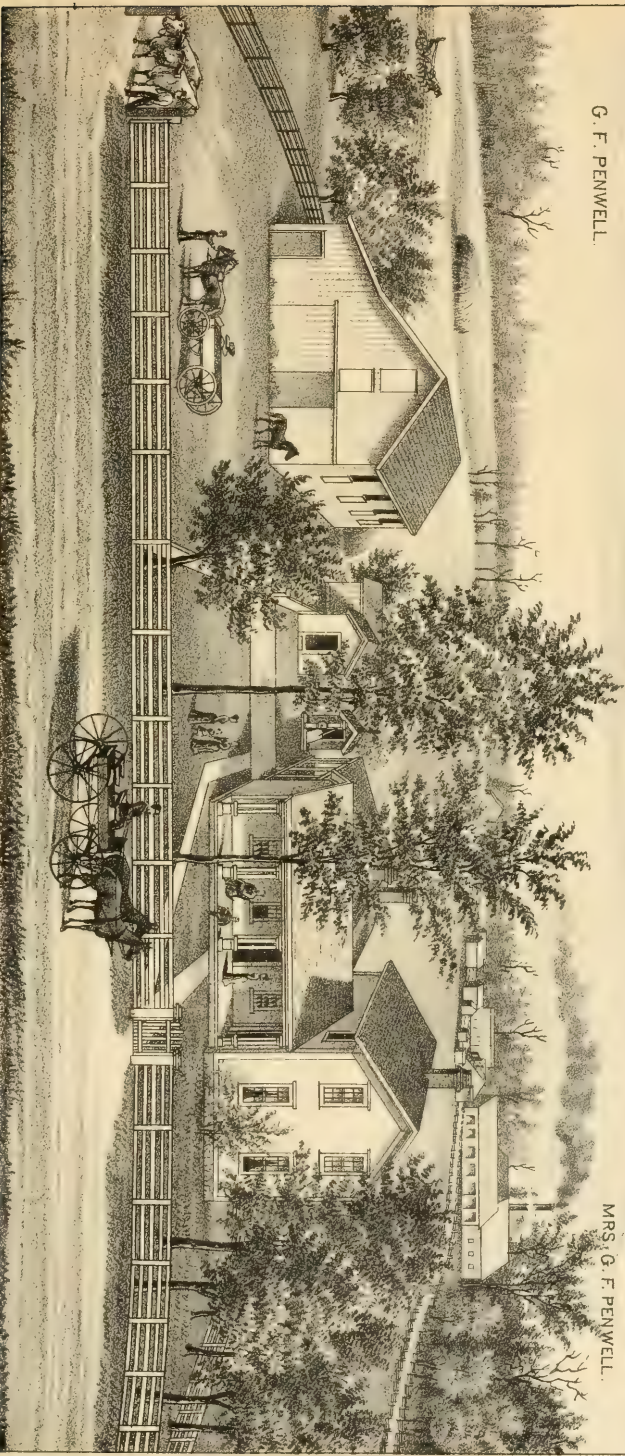




G. F. PENWELL.



MRS. G. F. PENWELL.



RESIDENCE OF MR. <sup>AND</sup> MRS. G. F. PENWELL, WEESAW TP., BERRIEN CO., MICH.





Phineas E. Stratton lived a short distance from the settlement.

The village of New Troy was platted in 1837. The lots were divided between Goulds, Willard, Stoner, and Ames, the mill property known as the "mill reserve" being held in common, each occupying their mill-sites. Solomon and Hiram left the village about 1838. Joseph G. Ames was supervisor in 1839, and the same year bought a farm on Terre Coupée Prairie, in Bertrand, where he was supervisor in 1841 and member of the Legislature in 1844. He afterwards moved to New Buffalo, and thence to Three Oaks, where he died. Ezra Stoner was the first township clerk, but soon after left there. The mill property became virtually abandoned. It came afterwards into possession of Luman Northrop and Francis Finnegan, and was for many years the subject of litigation, which ceased when, in 1853, it came into the possession of the Morleys, who re-erected a saw-mill on the site of the Gould mill. The lumber manufactured by the Gould mill was rafted down the river to New Buffalo, and lightered to vessels on the lake.

Edward Hill, son of Alpheus Hill, started the first store, and soon after kept a tavern. Anson Hays started the first public-house.

The post-office was established about 1860. Ambrose A. Morley was the first postmaster, and was succeeded by Dr. C. Bostwick, George B. Hiller, and Charles Smith, who is the present postmaster. The village now contains about 170 inhabitants, 35 dwellings, a public hall, a church, post-office, hotel, school-house, four general stores, a drug-store, two blacksmith-shops, wagon-shop, woodenware-factory, saw-mill, grist-mill, and one physician.

#### HILL'S CORNERS.

This settlement is located at the intersection of sections 1, 2, 11, and 12, and was first settled upon by Alpheus Hill in 1846. A post-office was started in 1854, with Wm. S. Pierce as postmaster. He was succeeded by Elijah Strong, Charles Beard, and Aaron E. Gardner. It has since been removed. Henry Searles settled near the Corners in 1845. Hiram Wells also settled here the same year. The settlement now contains a store, a church (Baptist), post-office, blacksmith-shop, and a few dwellings.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school of which anything can be learned was taught in Troy about 1842, by Miss Louisa Hill, now of Laporte, Ind. It was taught in a log house standing on the bank where Ambrose A. Morley's barn now stands. The first record of schools is in 1843, when the districts were recorded as given below: district No. 1, composed of sections 7, 8, 9, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, and 21; district No. 2, of sections 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, and 15, both in township 8, range 19; district No. 3, of sections 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 34, 35, and 36, in township 7; district No. 4, of sections 19, 20, 21, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, and 33, same township; district No. 5, of sections 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 16, 17, and 18; district No. 6, of sections 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, and 15, the last two being also in township 7; districts No. 3, 4, 5, and 6 were in what is now Galien.

A new school district was formed Jan. 29, 1846, composed of sections 21, 22, 23, 26, 27, 28, 33, 34, 35. The township was redistricted June 19, 1847.

Sarah Ogden was examined and received a certificate to teach school in District 5, Dec. 26, 1843. William M. Willson received certificate Dec. 5, 1844, and John Johnson, Jan. 13, 1845.

The following school record was recorded Aug. 5, 1853:

	Scholars.	Money Rec'd.
District No. 1.....	44	\$28.75
" " 2.....	18	17.71
" " 3.....	44	28.75

The township was redistricted March 20, 1854. The apportionment of mill-tax for schools May 1, 1855, was as follows:

	Scholars.	Money Rec'd.
District No. 2 (fractional with Lake).....	3	\$1.20
" " 5.....	23	9.16
" " 6.....	22	8.76
" " 1.....	35	13.94
" " 3.....	32	12.75
" " 4 (fractional with Buchanan).....	24	9.56
Totals.....	139	\$55.37

The school record for 1879 shows as follows: number of children of school age: District No. 1, 70; No. 3, 144; No. 4, 61; No. 5, 55; No. 6, 36; No. 7, 50; No. 8, 62.

Value of school-houses: District No. 1, frame, \$3000 (Hill's Corners); No. 3, frame, \$4500 (Troy); No. 4, frame, \$500; No. 5, frame, \$1300; No. 6, frame, \$400; No. 7, frame, \$1000; No. 8, frame, \$100. Districts Nos. 3, 5, 6, 7, and 8 are whole districts, and 1 and 4 are fractional.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*Methodist Episcopal Church of New Troy.*—As early as 1840 preaching was held occasionally in this section by the Rev. William Morley, of Portage Prairie, and a class was soon after formed. No organization was perfected for several years, and preaching has been only occasional. In 1863 the present church was built. The society now has three classes, and numbers about 75 members. They are supplied with preaching by the ministers having Dayton and Galien in charge. Their names will be found in the history of the Dayton Church, in the township of Bertrand.

*The Baptist Church of Weesaw.*—A meeting was held in the school-house at Berrien, Feb. 8, 1845, for the purpose of consultation as to the propriety of organizing a Baptist Church. It was decided to call a council, and letters were sent out to different churches to meet on Saturday, February 22d, at ten o'clock. Meeting was called, but as no delegates appeared it was adjourned until March 29th, when the council convened,—Elder Pratt, of South Bend; Elder Price, of Cassopolis; Elder Stecker, of Edwardsburg; Elder Tenbrook, of Niles; and brethren Deacon J. Rudd, J. Warren, J. B. Corey, B. D. Townsend, and others. Sermon by Elder Pratt. It was unanimously agreed to organize a Baptist Church, to be known as the First Baptist Church of Berrien.

The constituent members were John S. Foot, Clark Boss, John B. Nixon, Morris Frost, Union Pennell, Oliver Spaulding, Adna Hinman, Hiram Wells, Levi Logan, Thomas Freed, Silas Stearns, Julia Foot, Nancy Nixon, S. M. R. Nixon, Catherine Green, Amanda S. Pennell, Jo-

anna Spaulding, Ruth Hinman, Juliet Frost, Sabey Frost, Amy A. Carpenter, Wealthy Wells, Martha Caton, Caroline Logan, Mary Boss, Elizabeth B. Pennell, Zilpah A. Stevens, and Sarah Freed. John S. Foot was chosen deacon Aug. 11, 1845.

The society held their meetings for several years at school-houses in the different parts of the country, and in 1854 it was decided to build a house of worship at Hill's Corners. This was done, and the edifice was first used June 3, 1854. It was called Galien Church for several years, and in 1876 the name was again changed to the Baptist Church of Weesaw. The first pastor was Daniel B. Mead, who commenced his labors in June, 1848. He was succeeded by the Revs. John Master, S. L. Bulis, A. E. Simons, D. D. Joslyn, William Simons, Charles D. Manley, Joseph Goodrich, B. P. Russell, Moses M. Meacher, R. H. Spafford, and Charles A. Smith, who is the present pastor. The present membership is 36.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### GABRIEL F. PENWELL

was born Oct. 3, 1826, and is a son of A. C. and Sarah Penwell. His father was born December, 1797, in New Jersey. His mother, Miss Sarah Rope, was a native of North Carolina, was born Nov. 20, 1801, and married Mr. Penwell in Indiana in 1825. To them were born ten children, Mr. G. F. Penwell, the subject of this sketch, being the oldest. He remained at home with his father, assisting on the farm until twenty-one, when he was married to Miss Eda Ann Morris. After marriage Mr. Penwell moved to Missouri, remaining there about two years, and during that time buried his wife and the two children who were born to them. He then settled in South Bend, Ind., where he was again married, in 1852, to Miss Rebecca Reeves. In the spring of 1858 he came to Michigan, settling in the town of Galien; he engaged in the lumbering business, and built a mill the same year. Mr. Penwell was divorced from his second wife, and in June, 1855, was again married, this time to Miss Harriet Harner. They have had ten children, four now living. This wife died Aug. 19, 1874, and, Dec. 31, 1874, Mr. Penwell was again married to Mrs. Maria J. Dutton, widow of the late George Dutton, a native of Michigan. She was a daughter of Salem and Harriet Taylor.

Mr. Taylor was a native of Kentucky, Mrs. Taylor, of Vermont, and were married in South Bend, Ind., in 1837,—Mrs. Penwell being the oldest in a family of nine children. Mrs. Penwell had four children by her first husband, Mr. G. D. Dutton, only two of whom survive, burying her husband and the other two during the year 1869. In politics Mr. Penwell is an unswerving Democrat. Socially, he is affable and genial, possessing an ardent attachment to friends, and gives to deserving objects with an open hand. Since he came to Michigan in 1853, he has by industry and perseverance accumulated considerable property, successfully carrying on farming and lumbering, owning at one time two thousand two hundred acres of land in this town. He is at present the proprietor of the handle-factory shown in his sketch, is still enjoying good health, and has every reason to feel gratified over his eventful and successful life.

### GEORGE BOYLE

was born Dec. 3, 1835, in Lake township, of this county. His father's family consisted of thirteen children. His parents were Germans, and came over to America about 1831, settling on a farm, where George first learned to love the life of a farmer. He assisted his father on the farm until he was twenty years old. At that time he married Ann, daughter of Mary and John Husted, settling on a farm of seventy-five acres, given him by his father, in Oronoko township. He sold this land in 1864, and bought where he now resides. His first purchase was one hundred and fifty-one acres, to which he afterwards added one hundred and two acres, making for himself a home of which any man should be proud. This farm has been well managed, he being one of the largest and best farmers in this part of the country. His early educational advantages were limited. In politics he is a Republican, in religion a liberal.

Mr. and Mrs. Boyle have had seven children, viz.: Samantha L., born May 12, 1858, died Oct. 10, 1859; Thomas E., born Aug. 1, 1859; Laura A., born June 27, 1861; Sarah A., born June 29, 1864; Ira G., born Oct. 17, 1869; Melvin G., born July 12, 1874; Myra M., born Aug. 19, 1876.

Mr. Boyle has been a successful business man. His capital has been his health, his industry, and his ambition. With a proper use of these no man could fail. These qualifications were just what was required in a new country, and by their practical application his success was insured.







COURT HOUSE AND COUNTY OFFICES, VAN BUREN CO., PAW PAW, MICH.

# VAN BUREN COUNTY.\*

## CHAPTER XLVI.

### ERECTION AND ORGANIZATION OF THE COUNTY —LOCATION OF COUNTY-SEAT.

Erection, Boundaries, and Organization of the County—Location of the County-Seat—Organization of Townships—Township Changes.

THE early history of Van Buren County, which is synonymous with that of the Indians who roamed through its forests, is given in the chapters devoted to both counties which begin this volume, while the account of its settlement by the whites is to be found in the various townships; this and the following chapters are devoted to those matters which concern Van Buren County at large, but have no connection with Berrien County.

The county of Van Buren was formed by an act of the Legislative Council of Michigan, approved Oct. 29, 1829, which created no less than thirteen counties at once, viz.: Washtenaw, Ingham, Easton, Barry, Jackson, Calhoun, Kalamazoo, Van Buren, Hillsdale, Branch, St. Joseph, Cass, and Berrien. Eight of these were named after the President, the Vice-President, and the six cabinet officers. This county, it is hardly necessary to say, took its name from Martin Van Buren, of New York, subsequently President of the United States, but then just becoming prominent in national politics, having been called to the office of Secretary of State by President Jackson on his inauguration in the month of March preceding. The section (of the act before mentioned) erecting and bounding this county reads as follows:

"SEC. 8. That so much of the country as is included within the following limits, viz.: beginning where the line between ranges 12 and 13 west of the meridian intersects the base line, thence west on the base line to the shore of Lake Michigan, thence southerly along the shore of said lake to the intersection of the line between townships 2 and 3 south of the base line, thence east between said townships to the intersection of the line between ranges 16 and 17 west of the meridian, thence south on the line between said ranges to the intersection of the line between townships 4 and 5 south of the base line, thence east on the line between said township to the intersection of the line between ranges 12 and 13 west of the meridian, thence north on the line between said ranges to the base line, be and the same is hereby set off into a separate county, and the name thereof shall be Van Buren."†

The formation of a county at that period, however, by no means necessitated the exercise of the usual functions pertaining to a county, or even made it certain that there

were any people living within boundaries designated by the Council or Legislature. It merely indicated that in the opinion of the State authorities the territory described in the act would make a good county at some future time.

On the 4th of November, 1829, the Governor of the Territory approved an act of the Legislative Council temporarily attaching Van Buren and several other counties to Cass County for judicial and legislative purposes. The following day, Nov. 5, 1829, the territory of Van Buren County, already described, with a large territory lying north of it, and several survey townships of Cass County, were formed into the township of Penn. On the 29th of March, 1833, the north part of that portion of Penn lying in Cass County was formed into the township of Volinia, and the territory of Van Buren County was attached to it for township purposes. That territory was formed into the township of Lafayette on the 26th of March, 1835. The details in relation to these changes are given in the sketch of the organization of the townships.

It was not until the year 1837 that the people of Van Buren County were deemed sufficiently numerous to justify them in assuming the responsibilities of local self-government. On the 18th day of March in that year an act organizing the county was approved by the Governor of Michigan, which had then become a State. The sections pertinent to our history read as follows:

"SEC. 2. That the county of Van Buren be and the same is hereby organized, and the inhabitants thereof entitled to all the rights and privileges to which by law the inhabitants of the other counties of this State are entitled.

"SEC. 3. All writs, prosecutions, and other matters now pending before any court, or before any justice of the peace, to which the said county is now attached for judicial purposes shall be prosecuted to final judgment and execution; and all taxes heretofore levied shall be collected in the same manner as though this act had not passed.

"SEC. 5. The Circuit Court for the county of Van Buren shall be held for one year from the first day of November next, at such place as the supervisors of said county shall provide in said county, on the first Monday in June and December in each year, and after the first day of November, 1838, at the seat of justice in said county.

"SEC. 8. There shall be elected in the county of Van Buren on the second Monday of April next all the several county officers to which by law the county is entitled."

The act by its terms went into effect on the first Monday of April, 1837. The first election of county officers was held, in accordance with the law, on the second Monday of

\* By Grisfield Johnson.

† Territorial Laws, vol. ii. page 736.



April, 1837. The following officers were elected: Wolcott H. Keeler and Jay R. Monroe, Associate Justices; Jeremiah H. Simmons, Judge of Probate; Samuel Gunton, Sheriff; Daniel O. Dodge, Treasurer; Nathaniel B. Starkweather, County Clerk; Jeremiah H. Simmons, Register of Deeds; Junia Warner, Jr., John R. Haynes, and Humphrey P. Barnum, Coroners; Humphrey P. Barnum, Surveyor.

In the September following, at a special election, Andrew Longstreet was elected sheriff in place of Samuel Gunton, resigned, and Joshua Bange, treasurer, in place of Daniel O. Dodge, resigned.

Not only was the county formed seven and a half years before its organization, but a county-seat was provided for it more than a year previous to that event. In 1835 the Governor, acting under a general law, appointed three commissioners—Charles C. Hascall, Stillman Blanchard, and John W. Strong—to locate the county-seat of Van Buren County. These commissioners selected the site of the present village of Lawrence as the proper place for the county-seat. Deacon Eaton Branch, of Lawrence, says the commissioners stuck the stake designating the site of the court-house in the centre of the public square in the village of Lawrence.

Whether there was some informality in the proceedings or whether it was necessary to pass a supplementary act we know not, but on the 28th of March, 1836, a law was enacted authorizing the Governor to confirm the action of the commissioners, which reads as follows:

"SEC. 1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of Michigan that the Governor be and he is hereby authorized to issue his proclamation confirming and establishing the seat of justice of the county of Van Buren at the point fixed for said seat of justice in said county by Charles C. Hascall, Stillman Blanchard, and John W. Strong, commissioners appointed for that purpose, as appears by their report on file in the office of the Secretary of State; provided that the proprietors of said seat of justice for said county shall pay into the treasury of this State the amount advanced from the Territorial treasury for said location, with interest thereon from the date of such advance, and shall produce the certificate of said payment to the Governor within sixty days from the passage of this act."

But when the county was organized most of the few inhabitants lived in the western part, and Paw Paw was more convenient for them than Lawrence. Moreover, few and poor as were the accommodations at Paw Paw, they were still fewer and poorer at Lawrence. So, as will have been observed, section 5 of the act organizing the county provided that the Circuit Court should be held at such place as the supervisors might direct until the 1st day of November, 1838, and after that at the seat of justice of the county.

At the first meeting of the supervisors, on the 27th of March, 1837, a resolution was adopted (quoted under the head of "Organization of the County") which "decided that the courts of said county be held at the school-house in the village of Paw Paw."

On the 18th of March, 1838, an act amending the act organizing the county was approved, which reads as follows:

"SEC. 1. That all Circuit Courts to be held in and for the county of Van Buren previous to the first day of January, one thousand eight hundred and forty, shall be held at such place within the said county as the Board of Supervisors for said county shall direct.

"SEC. 2. This act shall take effect and be in force on and after the first day of November next."

At the meeting of the supervisors on the 25th of October, 1838, the board adopted the following resolution:

"Pursuant to an act entitled 'An act to amend an act to organize the counties of Ionia and Van Buren,' approved March 18, 1838, the supervisors of said county of Van Buren decided that the Circuit Court for said county shall be held at the school-house in the village of Paw Paw."

The courts were accordingly held at the place designated during the two succeeding years. As the time approached when the county business was to be done at the legal seat of justice,—viz., at Lawrence,—it was found that the weight of influence was still in favor of keeping it at Paw Paw. Petitions to that effect were accordingly sent to the Legislature, and that body was persuaded to pass, and the Governor to sanction, the following law:

"An act to provide for the vacation of the present seat of justice of Van Buren County, and to locate the same in the village of Paw Paw, in said county.

"SEC. 1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the State of Michigan, that the county-site of Van Buren County be and the same is hereby vacated and removed to the village of Paw Paw, in said county, upon such land as shall be deeded to the county for that purpose; *Provided*, That the quantity of land shall not be less than one acre, to be located under the direction of a majority of the County Commissioners or the Board of Supervisors, as the case may be, who are hereby required to make such location and fix the site for such county-seat in said village within one year from the passage of this law, and to take a deed of the land aforesaid, to them and their successors in office, for the use and purpose of the county of Van Buren, and shall have the deed recorded in the register's office in that county; and provided, further, That the title of said land so to be conveyed as aforesaid shall be good, absolute, and indefeasible, and the premises free from all legal incumbrances.

"SEC. 2. All writs which have been or may be issued out of the Circuit Court of said county since the last term thereof, whether the same were made returnable at the village of Paw Paw or at the present county-seat, shall be returned to and heard and tried at the village of Paw Paw aforesaid, at the time they were made returnable.

"SEC. 3. This act shall take effect and be in force from and after its passage.

"Approved March 6, 1840."

From that time to the present Paw Paw has been the legal as it had previously been the actual seat of justice of Van Buren County.

There was, however, some difficulty in regard to the precise place in Paw Paw where the court-house should be located, as appears by the records of the Board of Supervisors and commissioners. On the 1st day of April, 1840,

the County Commissioners, who were then exercising the functions of a Board of Supervisors, adopted the following resolution :

" *Resolved*, That the site for the seat of justice for the county of Van Buren be, and the same is hereby, located and fixed in that portion of block number eleven known as lots number one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, and eight, in the village of Paw Paw, being the same land appropriated for that purpose by the proprietors of said village, the aforesaid location being made agreeable and in conformity with the act of the Legislature of the State of Michigan approved March 6, 1840.

" *Resolved*, That the clerk of said county be, and is hereby, required to procure quit-claim deeds from the proprietors of said village for the land mentioned in the foregoing resolution, and cause the same to be recorded in the register's office of this county."

On the 30th day of January, 1841, the Board of Commissioners adopted the following resolution :

" It appearing that the title of the site for the county-seat, as located and fixed by the Board of Commissioners on the first day of April, 1840, not having been perfected, therefore it is resolved that the act or resolution of the commissioners locating and fixing the site for the seat of justice in the county of Van Buren on block number eleven in the village of Paw Paw is hereby annulled and vacated."

It was then resolved and determined by the board that the site for the seat of justice of the county of Van Buren (the title having been given) be located and fixed on block No. 40 in the village of Paw Paw.

On the 8th of April, 1842, Isaac C. W. Millard gave the county a warranty deed of lots 5, 6, 7, and 8 in block 12 in Paw Paw, and received in return a perpetual lease of block 41.

On those lots the court-house was built, and there justice is supposed to have had its seat to the present day.

#### ORGANIZATION OF TOWNSHIPS.

The first legislative action affecting the township organization of Van Buren County was a law passed by the Legislative Council of the Territory of Michigan, approved by the Governor on the 5th of November, 1829, one section of which reads as follows :

" All that part of said county (Cass) known as townships Five and Six, and the north half of township numbered Seven south, in ranges Thirteen and Fourteen west, and the county of Van Buren, and all the country lying north of the same which is attached to and composes a part of the county of Cass, shall form a township by the name of Penn, and the first township-meeting shall be held at the house of Martin Shields, in said township."

It is evident that most of the inhabitants of the new township resided in Cass County, while Van Buren and the country north of it was included within its legal jurisdiction for the benefit of any straggling settlers who might locate there. On the 29th of March, 1833, an act was approved organizing Allegan County into Allegan township, and attaching it temporarily to Kalamazoo County, which separated the northern country from Van Buren County. On the same day a law was approved setting off township 5 in range 13, and also in range 14 (being the north part of that part of Penn township which was in Cass County), as the township of Volinia, leaving Penn township to the south and entirely separate from Van Buren. By the same

act Van Buren County was attached to Volinia township for all township purposes.

It remained thus until the 26th day of March, 1835, when it was formed into the township of Lafayette, the boundaries of which corresponded with those of Van Buren County. Lafayette was organized by the election of officers in the spring of 1836, the county being still temporarily attached to Cass.

On the 11th of March, 1837, just a week before the organization of the county, an act was approved dividing Lafayette into the seven townships of Antwerp, Clinch, Lafayette, Decatur, South Haven, Lawrence, and Covington. Antwerp comprised township 3 south, in range 13 west, having the same boundaries as now. Clinch comprised townships 1 and 2 south, in range 13 west, and the same numbered townships in range 14. Lafayette was composed of township 3 south, in range 14 west, its boundaries being the same as those of the present township of Paw Paw, except that the latter has received a small addition from Waverly. Decatur embraced township 4 in range 13, and township 4 in range 14, being the present townships of Decatur and Porter.

South Haven consisted of township 1 in range 15, townships 1 and 2 in range 16, and the same numbered townships in range 17, being the present townships of South Haven, Geneva, Columbia, Covert, and Bangor. Lawrence was composed of townships 2 and 3 in range 15, and township 3 in range 16, being the present townships of Arlington, Lawrence, and Hartford. Covington was composed of township 4 in range 15, and the same numbered township in range 16, being the present townships of Keeler and Hamilton.

The subsequent formations and changes have been as follows: Covington was discontinued by act of the Legislature on the 22d of March, 1839. The east half of it (township 4, range 15) was made the township of Alpena, while the western half (township 4, range 16), together with township 3 in the same range (taken from Lawrence), became the township of Keeler. The name of Alpena was changed to Hamilton on the 19th of March, 1846. On the same day Hartford was formed from Keeler, comprising township 3, range 16.

Waverly, Alpena, and Arlington were erected on the 16th of February, 1842. The first two embraced the whole of the territory of Clinch, which was thus annulled. Waverly comprised townships 1 and 2 in range 14, being the present Bloomingdale and Waverly; while Alpena occupied the same numbered townships in range 13, being now known as Pine Grove and Alpena. Arlington, taken from Lawrence, had the same boundaries as now, being township 2 in range 15.

Bloomingdale, Columbia, and Porter were formed on the 19th of March, 1845. The first, taken from Waverly, consisted of township 1 south, in range 14 west. The second, taken from South Haven, occupied township 1 in range 15 and the same numbered township in range 16, being now known as Columbia and Geneva. The third, taken from Decatur, consisted of township 4, range 13, its present territory.

Pine Grove was formed by the Legislature from Alpena

on the 17th of March, 1849, its boundaries, which were the same then as now, including township 1 south, in range 13 west.

Marion was the first town organized by the Board of Supervisors, and was formed from South Haven on the 11th of October, 1853. Its name, however, was changed to Bangor by the board on the 14th of the same month. Its boundaries were the same as now, comprising township 2, range 16.

Geneva was formed from Columbia by the supervisors on the 5th of January, 1854, comprising its present territory, —township 1 south, range 16 west.

Deerfield was formed from South Haven by the same authority on the 8th of October, 1855, consisting of township 2, range 17. Its name was changed to Covert on the 29th of March, 1877.

The name of the township of Lafayette was changed to Paw Paw on the 15th of March, 1867.

## CHAPTER XLVII.

### COURTS—RECORDS—COUNTY BUILDINGS—CIVIL LIST.

Establishment of Courts—Circuit Court—County Court—Probate Court—The Register's and Treasurer's Offices—Record of Wolf Bounties—County Buildings and Property—The Old Jail—The Court-House—The Present Jail—Poor-House and Farm—The Present Fire-Proof Building—Van Buren County Civil List.

#### ESTABLISHMENT OF COURTS.

The following is quoted from the first record of the Board of Supervisors of Van Buren County, and is an account of their action in accordance with the act organizing the county:

"1837. The supervisors of the towns of Van Buren met at the village of Paw Paw on the 27th day of March, A.D. 1837, and organized by appointing D. O. Dodge clerk, the business of said meeting being for locating the place for the Circuit Courts of said county. Whereupon it is decided that the courts of said county be held at the school-house in the village of Paw Paw.

"D. O. DODGE, Clerk."

In accordance with this action, the first court was held in the frame school-house situated on Gremps Street, Paw Paw, on a lot north of where John G. Sherman now lives. Court was held there until the court-house was completed, in 1844.

The following is the first record of the Circuit Court in Van Buren County:

"STATE OF MICHIGAN, )  
"VAN BUREN COUNTY, )

"Be it remembered, that at a stated session of the Circuit Court of the State of Michigan within and for the county of Van Buren, begun and held, pursuant to law, at the court-house in Lafayette, in said county, on the first Monday (being the 6th day) of June in 1837, present, Hon. Epaphroditus Ransom, Circuit Judge, Wolcott H. Keeler and Jay R. Monroe, Esqs., Associate Judges, the grand jury

being called, the following persons appeared and answered to their names, to wit, Peter Gremps, Jeremiah H. Simmons, Joseph Woodman, Rodney Hinckley, Joshua Bangs, Edwin Barnum, John Reynolds, John D. Freeman, George S. Reynolds, Dexter Gibbs, Joseph Luce, Asa G. Hinckley, E. L. Barrett.

"Peter Gremps was appointed by the court foreman of this grand jury, and was authorized to issue subpoenas for and administer oaths to witnesses. The grand jurors were sworn and received the charge of the court and retired; after a few moments' deliberation they returned to court and reported that no business was brought before them, and they knew of none for their consideration.

"No business was brought before the court, and the court adjourned without day.

"Signed in open court the 6th day of June, 1837.

"EPAPHRODITUS RANSOM,

"Presiding Judge."

The December term, 1837, was held before the same judges. A petit jury was called, consisting of Philotus Hayden, Zebina Stearns, Aaron Barney, Beman O. Keeler, Hale Wakefield, George Ransom, Wells Gray, Joel Tomlinson, Daniel A. Alexander, Joseph Butler, Jacob S. Carrier, Lewis Johnson, Robert Nesbitt, and George S. Reynolds.

The first case brought up for trial was that of Robert Nesbitt vs. George S. Reynolds,—an appeal from the judgment of a justice of the peace. Proofs and allegations were presented and the jury retired, and after due consideration returned and rendered a verdict in favor of the plaintiff, for the sum of sixteen dollars and forty-two cents. The court affirmed the decision, and the costs were also directed to be paid by the defendant. There was no further business before the court at that time.

The circuit judges who have presided over the courts since the organization of the county are as follows: Epaphroditus Ransom, June term, 1837-48; Sanford M. Green, March term, 1848-49; Charles W. Whipple, April term, 1849-52; Abner Pratt, March term, 1852-57; Benjamin F. Graves, September term, 1857-66; George Woodruff, October term, 1866-67; Flavins J. Littlejohn, April term, 1867-69; Charles R. Brown, August term, 1869-74; Darius E. Comstock, July term, 1874-75; Josiah L. Hawes, the present incumbent, from April term, 1875.

#### COUNTY COURT.

The County Court was established by law in 1846, and the first term was directed to be held on the first day of March, 1847.

An election was held in Van Buren County in November, 1846, when the Hon. A. W. Broughton was elected county judge and John R. Haynes second judge.

The court convened at the day appointed in the court-house at Paw Paw. Present, Hon. A. W. Broughton, Judge.

The first case brought up for trial was that of James Scott vs. George S. Reynolds. This court was discontinued in 1850.



## PROBATE COURT.

Of the first proceedings of this court no record can be found prior to 1858, as the early records of this office were destroyed by fire.

The first probate judge was Jeremiah H. Simmons, who held the office for two terms.

## REGISTER'S OFFICE.

This county being attached to Cass County prior to its organization, all deeds, mortgages, and other legal papers pertaining to Van Buren were kept at the county-seat of that county.

Transcripts of such papers were made from the Cass County records, and are on file in the register's office at Paw Paw.

The first deed on record bears date November 3, 1831, and was given by Jacob and Elizabeth Charles to Samuel Morris, conveying eighty acres,—the west half of the northwest quarter of section 35, township 4 south, in range 14 west.

The first deed recorded after the organization of the county was made April 7, 1837, by which Wolcott H. Keeler and Elizabeth, his wife, of Covington, conveyed to Truman Foster, of the same township, the northwest quarter of section 11, township 4 south, in range 15 west, for the sum of one thousand dollars.

The first mortgage owned bears date Oct. 13, 1835, and was given by Martin Wolcott to William Corry. The land on which it was a lien was the northeast quarter and southeast quarter and the north half of the northwest quarter of section 1, township 3 south, in range 15 west.

The marriage records contain as the first record the marriage of George S. Reynolds to Rebecca Luke, bearing date July 24, 1836. Signed, Daniel O. Dodge, Justice of the Peace.

## TREASURER'S OFFICE.

The earliest valuation of the property of the county by townships, on record in the treasurer's office, was made in 1839, and is as follows:

CLINCH.	
Non-resident real estate.....	\$163,252
Resident real estate.....	21,504
"    and personal.....	3,596
Total.....	\$190,352
ANTWERP.	
Non-resident real estate.....	\$33,535
Resident and personal.....	\$9,521
Total.....	\$64,056
LAFAYETTE.	
Non-resident real estate.....	\$29,287
Resident and personal.....	28,016
Total.....	\$57,303
DECATUR.	
Non-resident real estate.....	\$60,806.77
Resident and personal.....	23,781.00
Total.....	\$84,587.77
SOUTH HAVEN.	
Non-resident, resident, real estate and personal..	\$160,219.10
ALPENA.	
Non-resident real estate.....	\$52,241
Resident and personal.....	21,384
Total.....	\$73,625
LAWRENCE.	
Non-resident, resident, real estate and personal..	\$123,649.90

## RECORD OF WOLF-BOUNTIES.

In looking over the proceedings of the Board of Supervisors, we have found recorded numerous accounts of bounties voted and paid for the slaughter of wolves in the county. It has suggested itself to us that a list of the payments, with the names of the recipients, might be interesting to some of our readers, both as showing who were the wolf-hunters of the pioneer days, and as portraying the advance of civilization corresponding to the decrease in wolf slaughter. At the first meeting of the supervisors, on the 27th of March, 1837, they adopted the following resolution:

"Voted to raise five dollars per head for each wolf and panther which may be killed the ensuing year, and that the county treasurer pay for each one so killed in said county out of any moneys remaining, after paying the county expenses, in his treasury."

Although the vote provided a bounty for killing panthers, we have not been able to discover a single record of a payment for that service. Either panthers were very scarce, or the hunters were not disposed to meddle with such very unpleasant subjects.

Besides the county bounty of five dollars there was a State bounty of eight dollars,—which was paid by the county authorities and refunded by the State,—making in all thirteen dollars for each wolf.

At the meeting in October the accounts were audited and allowed of Luther Branch, for four wolves, \$52; John Condon, three wolves, \$39; Joseph Butler, one, \$13; Cah-Cah (an Indian), one, \$13.

By November, 1838, the county bounty had been raised to \$8, and the commissioners voted \$16 to Thomas Green, for the joint State and county bounty.

By July, 1839, the State and county bounties had both been reduced to \$4, making a total of \$8 for each wolf. At the meeting of the commissioners in that month the accounts were allowed of John Williams, for two wolves, \$16; John Condon, three ditto, \$24; Henry Potter, two ditto, \$16; Amos S. Brown, Jr., eight ditto, \$64; Luman Brown, three ditto, \$24. In November, 1839, the following accounts were allowed: John Little, one wolf, \$8; Cah-Cah, ditto, \$8; Daniel Wilcox, ditto, \$8; Amos S. Brown, ditto, \$8; James Scott, ditto, \$8. In December, 1839, John Little, one wolf, \$8. Total for 1839, twenty-four.

In April, 1840, Daniel T. Pierce, one wolf, \$8; Amos S. Brown, Jr., ditto, \$8; John Little, ditto, \$8; Wells S. Brown, ditto, \$8; Luman Brown, ditto, \$8. In June, 1840, Amos S. Brown, Jr., one wolf, \$8; Henry Mower, two ditto, \$16. In October, 1840, Henry Mower, one wolf, \$8. In November, Henry Coleman, one wolf, killed by A. Manly, \$8; Daniel Wilcox, one ditto, \$8. In December, Austin Walden, one wolf, \$8; James Johnson, ditto, \$8. Total for 1840, thirteen.

July, 1841, A. S. Brown, Jr., four wolves, \$32; Wells S. Brown, one ditto, \$8; Jonathan N. Howard, one ditto, \$8. October, John Smith, one, \$8. December, George W. Springer, one, \$8; Harpman Salisbury, two, \$16; Martin Allen, one, \$8; Clark A. Lapham, one, \$8; Simon O. Keeler, one, \$8. Total in 1841, thirteen.

January, 1842, Harpman Salisbury, two wolves, \$16;

John Smith, one, \$8. March, 1842, G. W. Springer, one wolf, \$8; Harvey Potter, two, \$16; C. A. Lapham, two, \$16; Theodore E. Phelps, one, \$8; Horatio N. Phelps, one, \$8. In September of this year the supervisors voted to pay \$5 in addition to the bounty already allowed by law for each full-grown wolf, and \$2.50 for each whelp. This, in December following, gave James Scott, for two wolves, \$26; William Wilson, one ditto, \$13; Cah-Cah, one ditto, \$13. Total in 1842, fourteen.

In March, 1843, allowed Peter Dopp, one wolf, \$13; H. Howard, ditto, \$13. October, Notawawis, one, \$13; Cah-Cah, one, \$13; Elizur Hogmire, one, \$13. Total in 1843, five.

In 1844 there is no record of any bounties being paid. The supervisors seem to have thought that it was not yet time to stop killing wolves, for they raised the reward so that the State and county bounties amounted to \$20 per wolf. Under this stimulus the hunters went zealously to work, and in October, 1845, accounts were allowed of John Longwell, one wolf, \$20; John Condon, ditto, \$20; Orson Atkins, ditto, \$20; Joseph Brown, ditto, \$20; William Impson, five young wolves, \$50. This seems to have been considered rather too good a crop, and on the same day that the accounts were allowed the supervisors voted that \$5 county bounty should be paid for each grown wolf and \$2.40 for each whelp, and no more.

The State bounty was then evidently \$10, and in October, 1846, payments were made as follows: Nahum B. Eager, one wolf, \$15; Harvey Barrett, three ditto, \$45; Aaron Kinsman, two ditto, \$30. On the 13th of October the county bounty was entirely abolished by the board, leaving only the State bounty. Total number killed in 1846, six.

As the State bounty was \$10, however, there was still a considerable inducement to use the rifle or the trap, and on the 2d of October, 1847, Aaron Kinsman received, for one wolf, \$10; Francis McMinn, ditto, \$10. About this time the State bounty seems to have been reduced to \$8, for during the same month we find records of payment to Charles E. Michelson, for one wolf, \$8; James Wood, five wolf whelps, \$20. Total for the year, three wolves and five whelps.

In January, 1848, Oliver S. McOmber received, for one wolf, \$8. From that time there were no more cases reported until the 13th of October, 1851, when Hiram Ewalt produced proof of having killed one full-grown wolf, for which he received \$8. One year later Joseph Mintucnagaa, an Indian, received the usual \$8 from the State through the Board of Supervisors, and this ended the chapter. So far as appears, this was the last wolf slaughtered in Van Buren County, the deed being very appropriately performed by one of the race of hunters who were long the lords of all this land.

#### THE COUNTY BUILDINGS AND PROPERTY.

##### THE OLD JAIL.

As early as the 23d day of June, 1838, before the county-seat was permanently located at Paw Paw, the Board of Supervisors, at a special meeting, took the following action:

"Voted, that the sheriff be authorized to build a suitable building to serve for a jail for said county; the expense of said building shall not exceed four hundred dollars.

"Voted, that the jail shall be built on the ground appropriated for that purpose by the proprietors of the village of Paw Paw in said county."

The same year the Board of County Commissioners superseded the Board of Supervisors. At their first meeting, held on the 21st of November, 1838, they approved the vote of the supervisors directing the sheriff to build a county jail.

At an adjourned meeting of the commissioners held on the 19th of January, 1839, the amount allowed for building a jail was extended to six hundred dollars. The structure in question was accordingly erected in the spring of 1839; and at a special meeting of the commissioners held on the 3d of June, 1839, they audited the accounts of Mason and Avery for building jail, \$450. Other accounts on jail, \$124.05. Total, \$574.05. This jail was built of hewed logs laid upon each other, and was about 30 by 20 feet in size. It had two stories; the lower one being occupied by three cells and a small hall, while the upper one was intended for the use of the jailer's family, and was reached by stairs on the south side. It was situated on the outside of St. Joseph Street, between Brown and Lagrave Streets.

##### THE COURT-HOUSE.

On the 1st of April, 1840, the site of the court-house was fixed on block 11 in Paw Paw, but on the 30th of January, as already mentioned, it was changed to block 40.

The county offices were kept in a private building belonging to Joshua Bangs, and in January, 1841, it was resolved by the commissioners to hire the building another year for fifty dollars. At the same time they allowed school district No. 1, in the township of Lafayette, the very moderate sum of three dollars for the use of the school-house by the Circuit Court.

On the 8th of February, 1841, the commissioners met "for the purpose of taking into consideration the propriety and measures for building a court-house," but adjourned without action. On the 1st of March, 1841, they passed the following resolution:

"Resolved, That the sum of four thousand dollars be, and the same is, hereby appropriated for the purpose of building a court-house in and for the county of Van Buren."

They then directed William Mason to draft, or cause to be drafted, the plan for a court-house.

Nothing more was done until the 2d day of April, 1842, when the commissioners resolved to contract for building a court-house, provided that responsible parties would agree to furnish the materials and build it for not over three thousand dollars. On the 7th of April the commissioners gave notice that they would receive propositions for building the court-house until noon of the 8th of that month,—an exceedingly short notice.

On the 8th of April Reuben E. Rhodes and Stafford Godfrey entered into a stipulation with the commissioners, agreeing to build a court-house, according to the specifications on file in the county clerk's office, within eighteen months from that date, and thereupon the commissioners gave them an order on the treasury for two thousand four

hundred and ten dollars. Henry N. Rhodes gave a bond to finish the mason-work in the same time for four hundred and ninety-four dollars. Isaac W. Willard, as before mentioned, gave the county a deed of lots 5, 6, 7, and 8, on block 12, in Paw Paw, as a site for the court-house; and the commissioners paid to J. T. Noyes three hundred and thirty-one dollars to clear the lots of incumbrances. Josiah Andrews was appointed to oversee the building of the court-house.

The work of building the court-house was not completed within the specified time, but in the summer of 1844 it drew near its close. On the 14th of August, in that year, the Board of Supervisors (which had resumed its former authority) ordered the purchase of twenty-four chairs for the court-house. The following day the workmanship and material of the court-house, built by Churchill & Godfrey (who had taken the place of Rhodes & Godfrey as contractors), was declared to be according to the contract.

On the 18th of October, 1844, a resolution was passed allowing the citizens of Paw Paw to grub up such trees on the court-house lot as should be designated by a committee consisting of Major Heath, John Ramsey, and C. P. Sheldon, provided they would fill up the holes. Courts were held in the court-house in the autumn of 1844.

The court-house thus built, which is still occupied for that purpose, is a plain white frame structure, on the south side of Main Street in Paw Paw, with a steeple upon it, and in size and appearance very much resembles a village church.

#### THE PRESENT JAIL.

During the October session, 1854, the Board of Supervisors passed a resolution designating the village of Lawrence as the location of the county-seat, and submitting the question of removal thither to the people.

On account of this action, the leading citizens of the village of Paw Paw, for the purpose of retaining the county-seat at that place, presented to the board, at the January session in 1855, an agreement, in which they pledged themselves to "erect, build, and complete, in a good and substantial manner, at our own expense, and without cost or charge to the county, a good and substantial jail, for the use of and to be the property of said county. The jail to be constructed of such materials and to be of such size, construction, and finish, and be located on such lot or place in the village of Paw Paw, as shall be designated or ordered by the Board of Supervisors, or a committee of the board duly appointed by the board and authorized by them to make such designation, and to be fully completed, to the acceptance of the board, or its committee duly appointed, by the first day of January, 1856, and which shall be worth, when completed, not to exceed \$3000. *Provided*, that the Board of Supervisors will pass a resolution not to take any further proceedings to present the question to the vote of the people, and wholly abandon the same."

This agreement was accepted on the part of the supervisors, and the jail was erected on its present location. In January, 1856, the Board of Supervisors resolved itself into a "committee of the whole, to examine the jail building." After the examination it was moved and carried that the jail be accepted and the bonds canceled.

#### POOR-HOUSE AND FARM.

Some action had been taken previous to 1865, by the Board of Supervisors, in reference to a poor-house farm, but with no results. On the 8th day of October, in that year, the superintendents of the poor of the county urged upon the board, then in session, the necessity and importance of purchasing a farm for the use of the county paupers. On the 11th of October the committee on county buildings recommended the board to purchase one hundred and sixty acres of good farming land, partially under improvement, for poor-house purposes.

After due consideration it was decided to purchase, and Robert Nesbitt, J. B. Potter, and Charles Sellick were chosen a committee to make a selection and report the location, price, etc.

On the 3d day of January, 1866, this committee reported several farms, with description of location, soil, improvements, and prices. Several of the farms were visited, and it was finally decided to purchase the farm of Rufus Tillou, in the township of Hartford, containing one hundred and seventy-three acres, for forty dollars per acre. The committee reported this farm as "containing one hundred and seventy-three acres, with one hundred acres improved, thirty acres chopped, and twenty-five acres timbered, a good orchard of fifty bearing-trees (mostly apples), a substantial house twenty-eight by twenty-eight feet, barn thirty-three by fifty, with addition fifteen by thirty-three feet. This farm is located on the south side of the Watervliet road, three miles west of the village of Lawrence, and is the northeast quarter of section 13 and the south part of the southeast quarter of section 12." The purchase was consummated, and the place in question has since belonged to the county. The buildings were improved and enlarged from time to time to their present condition.\*

#### THE FIRE-PROOF BUILDING.

Efforts had been made several times to provide a safe repository for the county records, but not until Oct. 21, 1873, was any action taken that promised success in that direction. At that time Messrs. Barnum and French were appointed a committee to draft plans and specifications for county offices. On the 13th of January, 1874, Mr. Cox was added to the committee. On the 6th of January, 1875, the records of the county were reported unsafe, and on the 8th of the same month a resolution was passed by the supervisors appropriating one thousand dollars to erect a fire-proof building for the use of the county officers, provided the citizens of Paw Paw would raise the sum of two thousand dollars.

The building was erected in the summer of 1875, and completed in September of that year, at a cost of four thousand dollars.

The superintendents of the poor, in their report to the Board of Supervisors in December, 1879, earnestly urged upon the board the importance of greater facilities and increased accommodation for the poor of the county. The statistics given below are taken from that report. The poor-house contains twenty-seven paupers. Sixty permanent paupers are kept by the county outside of the poor-house. Twenty-one insane persons are kept at the asylum at Kalamazoo, at an annual expense of \$2059.80. The amount paid out for farm expenses in 1879 was \$2299.57, with a credit from products of \$583.82. Total expenses for the year, \$9509.92. Value of farm, \$6840. Value of stock, \$1131.55.



## VAN BUREN COUNTY CIVIL LIST.

In this list are given the names of those citizens of the county who have held State or county offices, with the date of their election or appointment thereto.

## PRESIDENTIAL ELECTOR.

1860, Philetus Hayden.

## STATE SENATORS.

1849-50, John McKinney; 1851, Philetus Hayden; 1853, Fitz H. Stevens; 1855, Lyman A. Fitch; 1859, Philetus Hayden; 1863, Samuel H. Blackman; 1867-69, Nathan H. Bitely; 1871, George Hannabs; 1873, David Anderson; 1875, Albert Thompson; 1877, William O. Packard.

## MEMBERS OF HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES (STATE).

1842, Fernando C. Annable; 1844-45, John Andrews; 1846, Josiah Andrews; 1847, Philetus Hayden; 1848, John McKinney; 1849, John Andrews; 1851, Morgan L. Fitch; 1853, Charles P. Sheldon; 1855, Joseph Gilman; 1857, Elisha J. House; 1859, Fabius Miles; 1861, Jonathan J. Woodman; 1863-65, Jonathan J. Woodman, Buel M. Williams; 1867, Jonathan J. Woodman, Amos S. Brown; 1869-71, Jonathan J. Woodman,\* William H. Hurlbut; 1873, Samuel H. Blackman, Emory H. Simpson; 1875, Alexander D. Copley, George B. Yeckley, William Thomas;† 1877-79, James E. Ferguson, E. Parker Hill.

## MEMBERS OF STATE CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTIONS.

Convention of 1836, Charles B. Avery; Convention of 1850, Isaac W. Willard; Convention of 1867, Samuel H. Blackman and Charles Duncombe.

## CIRCUIT JUDGE.

1874, Darius E. Comstock, held till his death, in the year 1875.

## JUDGES OF PROBATE.

1837-40, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1844, Frederick Lord; 1848-52, Elisha Durkee; 1856-60, Augustus H. Nash; 1864, Chandler Richards; 1868-72, George W. Lawton; 1876, Alfred J. Mills.

## COUNTY JUDGES.

1846, Aaron W. Broughton; 1850, Jason A. Sheldon.

## SECOND JUDGES.

1846, John R. Haynes; 1847, Frederick Lord; 1850, Lyman G. Hill.

## ASSOCIATE JUSTICES.

1837, Wolcott H. Keeler, Jay R. Monroe; 1841, Evert B. Dyckman, John R. Haynes; 1842, John R. Haynes, Henry Coleman; 1844, W. H. Keeler, David Van Antwerp.

## CIRCUIT COURT COMMISSIONERS.

1838, Wolcott H. Keeler, Peter Gremps, Morgan L. Fitch; 1840, Andrew Longstreet; 1841, Lyman G. Hill; 1852, John R. Baker; 1854-56, Nathan H. Bitely; 1858, Samuel H. Blackman; 1860, Hiram Cole; 1862, John B. Upton; 1864, Joseph W. Huston; 1866, George W. Lawton; 1868, Ashbel H. Herron; 1870, William H. Tucker; 1872, Benjamin F. Heckert; 1874, Oran W. Rowland; 1876, Albert Jackson; 1878, John Knowles.

## PROSECUTING ATTORNEYS.‡

1840, Aaron W. Broughton; 1842, Frederick Lord; 1844, Aaron W. Broughton; 1847, John R. Baker; 1849, Samuel H. Blackman; 1850, Frederick Lord;§ 1852, Wm. N. Pardee; 1854, Frederick Lord; 1856, Nathan H. Bitely;|| 1858-60, Chandler Richards; 1862, Hiram Cole; 1864-70, John B. Upton; 1872, Darius E. Comstock; 1874-78, Benj. F. Heckert.

\* Speaker in 1869 and 1871.

† Elected to fill vacancy caused by death of Mr. Yeckley.

‡ Walter Clark, a lawyer of Kalamazoo, was temporarily appointed by the court to act as prosecuting attorney at the terms held in Van Buren County in 1839, and perhaps earlier. On the 14th of December, 1839, the supervisors of Van Buren County voted Mr. Clark \$50, as a year's salary as prosecuting attorney.

§ First election of prosecuting attorney by the people.

|| Mr. Bitely was elected but could not qualify, as he was not a member of the bar of this State, although he had been admitted to practice law in Ohio.

## TREASURERS.

1837, Daniel O. Dodge; 1838, Joshua Bangs; 1840, Frederick Lord; 1842-44, John McKinney; 1846, Theodore E. Phelps; 1848-52, Emory O. Briggs; 1854, Alexander H. Phelps; 1856-58, John M. Redlan; 1860-62, Aaron B. Dyckman; 1864, Samuel H. Blackman; 1866-70, Edwin Barnum; 1872-74, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1876, Hannibal M. Marshall; 1878, Stephen W. Duncombe.

## REGISTERS.

1837-38, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1840-42, Fitz H. Stevens; 1844, Emory O. Briggs; 1846, Elisha C. Cox; 1848, Joseph Cox, Jr.; 1850, Wm. H. Hurlbut; 1852, Eusebius Mather; 1854, Edward A. Thompson; 1856, Samuel G. Blackman; 1858-60, Thomas B. Irwin; 1862-64, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1866, E. Parker Hill; 1868, Don C. Rogers; 1870, Milan D. Richardson; 1872-74, Kirk W. Noyes; 1876-78, Samuel Ellis.

## SHERIFFS.

1837, Samuel Gunton; 1838, Andrew Longstreet; 1840, John McKinney; 1842, William Hill; 1844, John Smolk, Jr.; 1846, William Hill; 1848, Henry C. Clapp; 1850, William Hill; 1852, Henry C. Clapp; 1854, William Hill; 1856, Noble D. Richardson; 1858, John H. Stoddard; 1860, Calvin Durkee; 1864, Noble D. Richardson; 1866, Edwin K. Farmer; 1868-70, William R. Sirrine; 1872-74, John E. Showerman; 1876, John Wachsmuth; 1878, Nathan Thomas.

## COUNTY CLERKS.

1837, Nathaniel B. Starkweather; 1838, Edward Shultz; 1840, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1842, Joseph Gilman; 1844, James B. Crane; 1846, Lyman H. Fitch; 1848-50, S. Talmadge Conway; 1852, Franklin M. Manning; 1854-56, Stillman F. Breed; 1858, S. Talmadge Conway; 1860-62, Martin Ruggles; 1864-66, Ashbel H. Herron; 1868-70, Oran W. Rowland; 1872-74, Samuel Holmes; 1876-78, Henry S. Williams.

## SURVEYORS.

1837, Humphrey P. Barnum; 1838, John D. Compton; 1840, Eleazer H. Keeler; 1842, Alonzo Crane; 1844-46, Samuel H. Blackman; 1848-52, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1854, William H. Harrison; 1856-58, Samuel A. Tripp; 1860, Orville B. Abbott; 1862, Peter J. Speicher; 1864, Charles J. Monroe; 1866, Charles D. Lawton; 1868-70, Almon J. Pierce; 1872, Augustus H. Teed; 1874-78, Almon J. Pierce.

## CORONERS.

1837, Junia Warner, Jr., John R. Haynes, Humphrey P. Barnum; 1838, Lyman G. Hill, Levi H. Warner; 1840, Junia Warner, Jr.; 1842-44, Charles U. Cross; 1846, Joshua Woodman; 1848, Chas. P. Sheldon; 1850, Alexander H. Phelps; 1852, Harrison Dyckman, Nathan Jaquish; 1854, John Hunt, Nelson H. Marshall; 1856, John Hunt; 1858, Ashbel H. Herron; 1860, Jefferson Edmunds, Stephen B. Morehouse; 1862, Albert R. Wildey, Asahel S. Downing; 1864, John Andrews, Abel Brown; 1866, John Andrews, Loyal Crane; 1868, Thomas A. Granger, Geo. L. Seaver; 1870, Wm. R. Hawkins, Daniel Van Auker; 1872, Oscar F. Thomas, William P. Bryan; 1874, Elisha B. Moon, Loyal Crane; 1876, Michael Mason, James P. Fox; 1878, Henry M. Brodrick, Albert S. Haskin.

## COUNTY COMMISSIONERS.

By a law passed in the spring of 1838 three county commissioners were elected, who superseded the supervisors and exercised their functions. The first three determined their terms of one, two, and three years by lot; afterwards one was to be elected each year, holding three years. The Board of Commissioners was abolished, and the Board of Supervisors resumed their former functions by a law passed in the spring of 1842.

1838, Peter Gremps (for three years), W. H. Keeler (for two years), Morgan L. Fitch (for one year); 1839, Silas Breed; 1840, Andrew Longstreet; 1841, Lyman G. Hill.

## CHAPTER XLVIII.

## THE PRESS OF VAN BUREN COUNTY.

The Pioneer Newspapers of the County—Journalism at the County-Seat—The Press of South Haven—Newspaper Enterprises at Decatur, Lawton, Hartford, Bangor, and Lawrence.

## THE PAW PAW DEMOCRAT.

THE history of the press of Van Buren County began in January, 1843, when H. B. Miller, of Niles (known later as "Buffalo" Miller, of Chicago), sent his brother-in-law, one Harris, over to Paw Paw, with press and printing material, to start a newspaper, chiefly for the purpose of printing the county tax-lists. Harris got out a six-column folio weekly, which he called the *Paw Paw Democrat*. Its politics were Democratic, and its office of publication was on Main Street just east of the present bank building. Harris was consumptive and did very little work. He died during the winter of 1842-43, and his death ended the history of the *Democrat*, Miller carrying the press and material back to Niles.

## PAW PAW FREE PRESS.

During the next two years Van Buren County was destitute of a newspaper, but in January, 1845, a lawyer named Samuel N. Gantt and a printer named Geiger brought a "two-pull" wooden Ramage press, and the other necessary material for a printing-office, by wagon, from Detroit to Paw Paw. On their arrival, they issued a four-page five-column weekly, which they christened the *Paw Paw Free Press*.

In the course of the season, however, Mr. Geiger became disgusted with the general course of events, and with Gantt in particular, and accordingly one night he carried off the screw of the press, threw it into the Paw Paw River, and fled to Detroit. Gantt mourned the loss of Geiger much less than that of the screw, the latter being indispensable to the working of the press. He offered a reward of ten dollars, and A. V. Pantland, who happened to know where Geiger had thrown it, fished it out of the river.

Mr. Gantt continued to publish the *Free Press* until the spring of 1846, when he sold it to John McKinney, then county treasurer, and began the practice of law at Paw Paw.

Mr. McKinney owned and published the paper until January, 1846, when he disposed of it to E. O. Briggs. After a newspaper experience of thirteen months Mr. Briggs sold the *Free Press* in January, 1848, to S. Tallmadge Conway, who had been a printer in the office since August, 1846, and who had done a little newspaper work on the *Paw Paw Democrat* as early as 1842. Mr. Conway retained the ownership for the previously unprecedented time of six years and a half. The paper then (July 10, 1854) passed into the hands of a stock company. A few weeks' experience, however, was enough for the stockholders, at the end of which they transferred the *Free Press* to I. W. Van Fossen. Soon after this gentleman went into possession the *Paw Paw Free Press* ceased to exist, so far as the name was concerned, though the publication still continued.

## PAW PAW PRESS.

This was the new name by which the *Paw Paw Free Press* was baptized soon after Mr. Van Fossen became the owner. Even this did not satisfy him, and in the early part of 1855 he took the whole county into the scope of his paper's name.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY PRESS.

Such was the appellation upon which Mr. Van Fossen finally settled, and this appeared to be satisfactory to all concerned, for under this name and by the same publisher the paper was issued for nearly thirteen years, until the 3d of January, 1868, when the office was destroyed by fire. This interrupted the publication for a few months, but in the summer of 1868 Mr. Van Fossen revived his paper, and continued to publish it until 1872. He then leased the office to Frank Drummoud, who during the campaign of that year supported the cause of Greeley and Brown. In the winter of 1872-73, Mr. Van Fossen sold the property to E. A. Lanphere and G. W. Mathews, who determined on another change of name.

## PAW PAW COURIER.

With the change came a change of politics, for Messrs. Lanphere & Mathews, eschewing the Greeley issue of the year, made the *Courier* an exponent of Republican principles, and published it as such until the beginning of 1877, when they sold it to E. A. Blackman and E. A. Park. These gentlemen made it a Democratic paper, and published it until the 4th of August, 1877. Then they consolidated another journal with it and extended its name, as will be related below.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY PRESS (No. 2).

During the ownership of the *Courier* by Lanphere & Mathews, Messrs. E. K. Park and George F. Sellick, job printers at Paw Paw, started a new Democratic paper there, to which they gave the old name of the *Van Buren County Press*. Perhaps Mr. I. W. Van Fossen was attracted by the name with which he had so long been identified, for he soon purchased the *Press*. He speedily transferred it to O. D. Hadsell, who changed its name to another, which had, like that one, already seen service in the county.

## PAW PAW FREE PRESS (No. 2).

Under this name Mr. Hadsell conducted his venture until the 4th of August, 1877, when he sold it to Blackman & Park, the owners of the *Paw Paw Courier*.

## PAW PAW FREE PRESS AND COURIER.

The *Free Press* and the *Courier* were then consolidated, and in order to please the readers of both sheets Messrs. Blackman & Park consolidated the names as well as the papers, issuing the new journal under the name of the *Paw Paw Free Press and Courier*. Like both its predecessors, this was a Democratic sheet, and has flourished in that faith to the present day. On the 23d of November, 1878, Mr. Park withdrew, and Mr. E. A. Blackman has since been the sole editor and proprietor.

It will be seen that the present *Free Press and Courier* is the legitimate successor of the first newspaper established

in Van Buren County, except the old *Paw Paw Democrat* of 1842, as well as of another line of papers now united in the same channel. We have, therefore, briefly sketched the journals of various names whose shades may be supposed to linger around the sanctum of their successor before delineating the career of others.

#### THE TRUE NORTHERNER.

This journal boasts a continuous existence under the same name of twenty-five years, and in that respect is the oldest paper in the county. It was founded in March, 1855, as a Republican weekly journal, on the very first organization of the Republican party, by George A. Fitch, then publishing the *Kalamazoo Telegraph*, and has maintained that political status since then without change. Mr. Fitch sent John B. Butler over to edit and publish the *True Northerner*, but in August of that year Butler retired and Fitch sold the material to John Reynolds and E. A. Thompson, pledging himself, however, to edit and publish the paper until March, 1857. R. C. Nash was employed as editor, but retired in January, 1856, and was succeeded by L. B. Bleeker and S. F. Breed. On the 19th of February, 1856, Samuel H. Blackman and S. F. Breed became the sole proprietors of the *True Northerner*. In 1858, Thaddeus R. Harrison purchased the paper from them and remained the owner until 1866, although during the latter part of that period it was leased to Charles P. Sweet. In the year last named Mr. Harrison sold the *True Northerner* to Thomas O. Ward, who retained possession until the 28th of August, 1870.

At that time S. Talmadge Conway, whose connection with the press of Paw Paw has already been noticed, became editor, publisher, and proprietor of the *True Northerner*, and has so remained to the present time.

The *True Northerner* has a circulation of about two thousand, and ranks among the leading Republican papers of Western Michigan.

#### THE NATIONAL INDEPENDENT.

In March, 1878, Charles S. Maynard founded the *National Independent*, at Paw Paw, as a Greenback organ, issuing the first number on the 8th of that month. Mr. Maynard conducted the paper until the 15th of January, 1879, when he sold it to R. C. Nash. In April following the *Independent* was transferred to Smith & Wilson. Mr. Wilson soon retired, and W. E. Smith became sole editor and proprietor. The *National Independent* suddenly ceased to exist in the latter part of December, 1879.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY TRIBUNE.

This paper, published by T. O. Street, was the pioneer of Decatur journalism, but its career was so very brief that it is difficult to ascertain even the date of its existence. It was, however, about 1864.

#### DECATUR CLARION.

The *Tribune* was succeeded by the *Decatur Clarion*, which flourished (or languished) for an equally brief period, under the editorship of Moses Hull, and then became forever silent.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY REPUBLICAN.

This is the first permanent newspaper in Decatur, and was founded in 1867, by E. A. Blackman and C. F. R. Bellows (the latter being then the principal of the union school, and now the occupant of a professor's chair in the University of Michigan). Mr. Bellows retired after a brief experience, leaving the control of the paper to Mr. Blackman. Under his control the *Republican* expounded the principles of Republicanism until 1872, when it supported Greeley and Brown. In 1873 it passed into the ranks of the Democracy. In 1876, Mr. Blackman sold his paper to H. C. Buffington (formerly of the Cass County *Republican*), who brought it back into the Republican fold, where it has since remained. In December, 1879, Mr. Buffington disposed of the paper to A. M. Wooster, the present proprietor. The *Republican* is a four-page, twenty-eight-column journal, issued every Wednesday, and is one of the prominent newspapers of the county.

#### THE IRON CITY AGE.

This was a weekly publication, established in Lawton in 1860 by Joseph Twell. It expired in 1867.

#### THE LAWTON GAZETTE.

After the decease of the *Age*, George W. Lawton, Esq., began the publication at Lawton of the *Lawton Gazette* (weekly), which, however, was printed at Paw Paw. The *Gazette* lasted until 1869.

#### LAWTON TRIBUNE.

In September of the year last named J. H. Wickwire established the *Lawton Tribune*, a four-page, six-column journal, sixteen inches by twenty-two. It passed successively into the hands of Cowgill & Jennings, Ambrose Moore, Jr., Orris Strong, and Ezra Hayden, and expired in 1873.

#### HARTFORD DAY SPRING.

The first number of this paper was issued Thursday, Nov. 16, 1871, by O. D. Hadsell and Alonzo H. Chandler, the latter, however, retiring in a few weeks. It was continued by Mr. Hadsell until Oct. 28, 1876, when it was purchased by Wm. H. H. Earle. He edited and published the *Day Spring* about a year, when Luther Sutton assumed the editorship, since which time Mr. Earle has been the proprietor and publisher and Mr. Sutton the editor.

#### SOUTH HAVEN SENTINEL.

The *South Haven Sentinel* was founded in June, 1867, by Capt. David M. Phillips, of Albion, as a six-column neutral paper. In June, 1868, it was sold to Dr. Samuel D. Tobey, who transferred it to Capt. William E. Stewart in September of the same year, he having been in charge of the mechanical department since August, 1867. Capt. Stewart has successfully conducted the *Sentinel* during the period of almost twelve years which has elapsed since his purchase, and in 1870 was enabled to enlarge it from six to eight columns per page.

#### SOUTH HAVEN RECORD.

This paper was started on the 12th of August, 1878, as a Greenback sheet, by J. Densmore. Mr. Densmore pub-



lished it until May, 1879, when he sold it to parties in Kalamazoo. It was then removed to that place, where it continues to support the interests of the Greenback party.

#### FONETIC KLIPS.

This curious little sheet, which is issued monthly by A. J. Pierce, was started on the 1st day of January, 1879. It is devoted to the introduction of phonetic spelling, which is now being used to a very limited extent by some of the journals of the country.

#### BANGOR JOURNAL.

The journalism of Bangor is of recent date, and will occupy but a very brief space. In February, 1873, Charles Gillett began the publication at that place of a weekly paper, which was called the *Journal*. The venture was not a success financially, and with the autumn of the same year the pioneer newspaper of Bangor closed its brief career.

#### BANGOR REFLECTOR.

From the ashes of the *Journal*, however (that is, from its old type and press), arose the *Bangor Reflector*, the first number of which was issued in December, 1873. This paper was published by W. W. Secord, with limited success, until April, 1875, when it passed into the hands of its present proprietor, C. C. Phillips. Under his management its circulation has steadily increased, until it ranks as one of the leading weeklies of the county. It is a five-column, eight-page sheet, and is a staunch advocate of Republican principles.

#### LAWRENCE ADVERTISER.

On the 1st day of February, 1875, Theodore L. Reynolds issued the first number of the *Lawrence Advertiser*, an independent, seven-column paper located at the village of Lawrence. After Mr. Reynolds' death, in November, 1876, Mrs. Reynolds continued the publication until the 1st of March, 1877, when the *Advertiser* passed into the hands of George A. Cross, John B. Potter being the manager. On the 20th of April, 1877, Mr. Cross sold the paper to Robert L. Warren, who has since been the editor and proprietor. Mr. Warren made the *Advertiser* a Republican sheet, and such it has since remained. On the 1st of October, 1877, he leased the office to Messrs. Van Hoesen & Bates, who have since then published the *Advertiser*, while Mr. Warren has retained the editorial management.

## CHAPTER XLIX.

### THE LEARNED PROFESSIONS.

The Van Buren County Bar—The Medical Profession in Van Buren County—Van Buren County Medical Society—Homoeopathy and other Physicians.

#### THE VAN BUREN COUNTY BAR.

The first lawyer in Van Buren County was Aaron W. Broughton, who came previous to 1839. He, however, was engaged in the mercantile business in the township of Hamilton for several years, during which time he rarely or never

practiced his profession. He was appointed the first prosecuting attorney of the county, and served from April, 1840, to April, 1842, receiving fifty dollars for the first year's services and seventy-five for the second. He was also appointed prosecuting attorney for 1844 and 1845. He practiced at Paw Paw for several years after that, and was practically the only county judge of Van Buren County, holding the office from 1846, when it was established, until 1850. A successor was elected in the latter year, but the office was abolished by the constitution of that year.

Frederick Lord, who is still a resident of Paw Paw, was the second lawyer in the county and the first in Paw Paw. He became a resident of that village in the spring of 1839, taught school and studied law, and was admitted to the bar in 1840. He was almost immediately elected county treasurer, and in 1842 was appointed the second prosecuting attorney of Van Buren County. He was also the first person elected to that office by the people under the constitution of 1850, and was second judge of the county court, from 1847 to 1850. For several years Mr. Lord has not been engaged in the duties of his profession.

George L. Gale, a lawyer, settled in Paw Paw a little later, remained about ten years, and then went to California.

Samuel N. Gantt, a lawyer, located in Paw Paw in 1845, but for a little over a year he was engaged in publishing a newspaper there. In the spring of 1846 he began practicing law there, but did not remain long.

J. R. Baker located at Paw Paw in 1844 or '45. He was a very zealous, energetic man, and soon became prominent in the county. Besides taking an active part in politics and land business, Mr. Baker was a successful lawyer, and was employed in a large portion of the cases litigated in Van Buren County, and in some of the adjoining counties. He was prosecuting attorney from 1847 to 1849. He also bore a prominent part in the prosecution of Reynolds, for murder, in 1854, which resulted in sending the accused to the State-prison for life.

In 1858, Mr. Baker formed a partnership with Chandler Richards, a new-comer in Paw Paw, the firm-name being Baker & Richards. The partnership continued ten years. During this time Mr. Baker left the greater part of the law business to his partner, occupying himself much with other matters, but always being considered one of the leading men of the county. The partnership between Messrs. Baker & Richards was dissolved in 1868. The former gentleman died in June, 1873.

Elisha Durkee settled in Paw Paw, October, 1845. He was a native of Orleans Co., N. Y., and had been admitted to the bar of the Supreme Court of that State in 1843.

When Mr. Durkee arrived at Paw Paw there were only the three lawyers before mentioned in the county, but these four were amply sufficient to do all the business. There were but two terms of the Circuit yearly, and at these the calendar would be cleared in one or two days.

There was, however, considerable justice-court business, which, if less lucrative for the counsel, was more interesting to spectators than the stateliter proceedings of the Circuit. The first case Mr. Durkee tried was before a justice of the peace who lived in the woods three miles from Paw Paw. Messrs. Broughton and Baker were both employed

on the other side, and all three of the counsel had to make their way among the trees as best they could, for the road was only cut out a part of the distance. On their arrival they found a log house with one room, which served as parlor, dining-room, kitchen, bed-room, and court-room. The justice's wife lay sick on the bed in one corner, the court, counsel, and parties clustered thick around the table in the centre, and the jurymen disposed themselves as best they could against the wall.

The trial began, and after a short time the jury asked to be excused, and all went out. In a few moments they returned and the trial proceeded. It was not long, however, until the jury asked to be excused, and again unanimously retired. When this had occurred the third time Mr. Durkee thought he would see what was going on. He followed the jurors to the barn, and found they had a jug of whisky there, furnished by the opposite party. He was at first inclined to object to this, but finally concluded that he could manage a drunken jury as well as his opponents, and kept still. And in fact, when the case was finished at midnight, the jury gave a verdict in favor of his client.

Mr. Durkee practiced at Paw Paw until 1866, when (his health failing) he retired to his farm in Antwerp, where he still resides. He was judge of probate of Van Buren County from 1848 to 1856.

Samuel H. Blackman located in Paw Paw shortly after Mr. Durkee. He soon became a successful practitioner, and in 1849 was appointed prosecuting attorney, holding the office until it was made elective by the constitution of 1850. Mr. Blackman has continued to keep an office at Paw Paw until the present time, being now the senior practicing member of the Van Buren County bar.

William N. Pardee was a member of the bar, and served as prosecuting attorney from 1852 to 1854, but did not practice long after expiration of his term of office.

For many years there seem to have been no accessions to the bar of Paw Paw, but in the latter part of 1857 Joseph W. Huston opened an office at that place. He was a wide-awake lawyer and politician, and soon made his mark at the bar. During the war he entered the military service, and received a commission as major. After the close of hostilities he resumed practice at Paw Paw, and for a time was the postmaster of that place. About 1870, Maj. Huston removed to Idaho, and has since been appointed the attorney-general of that Territory.

In 1858 two more disciples of Blackstone made their home at Paw Paw,—M. S. Bowen and Chandler Richards. The former only remained two or three years, and then removed to Coldwater, Branch Co.

Mr. Richards, as before stated, entered into partnership with Mr. Baker, and practiced with him ten years, taking the laboring oar in the management of cases in court. Having dissolved his partnership with Mr. Baker in 1868, Mr. Richards was absent from the county four years. Returning to Paw Paw in 1872 he resumed practice, and has ever since been one of the leading lawyers of the county.

T. H. Stevenson was admitted to the bar in 1862, and practiced in Paw Paw until his death, which occurred in 1872. Mr. Stevenson was a man of marked ability, both as to knowledge of law and as to skill in the management

of causes, and during the latter part of his career stood at the head of the Van Buren County bar.

Calvin Cross located in Lawrence in 1857. He opened an office in Bangor about 1873, and has practiced there most of the time since then with marked success, being now the head of the firm of Cross & Withey.

John B. Upton began practice in Lawrence in 1859. After carrying on business there successfully until 1867, he removed to Decatur. Mr. Upton was prominent in both law and politics, and was prosecuting attorney of the county four terms (from 1864 to 1872), the longest period that the office has been held by a single individual. Mr. Upton removed to Big Rapids, Mecosta Co., about 1875.

A. W. Brown located in Lawrence in 1860, but removed to Lenawee County the following year.

Hiram Cole, an able lawyer, a native of Cayuga Co., N. Y., opened an office in Decatur in 1857, and practiced there with decided success until his death, which occurred in April, 1870. Mr. Cole was prosecuting attorney of the county from 1862 to 1864. He was successively the head of the firms of Cole & Shyer, Cole & Parkhurst, Cole & Foster, and Cole & Upton.

Charles Shyer, a promising young lawyer, and a gentleman highly respected by the people, located at Decatur previous to the war, and became the partner of Mr. Cole. In 1863 he became the captain of Company K in the new battalion of the 1st Michigan Cavalry. He served with distinguished courage, and was killed at the battle of Cedar Creek, in the Shenandoah Valley, October 19, 1864.

George W. Lawton was admitted to the bar at Detroit in 1861, and has been in practice since that time, except when in the army. He entered the service as second lieutenant in the 4th Michigan Cavalry in 1862, served throughout the war, was severely wounded at Dallas, Ga., and was brevetted major in the Atlanta campaign. He has practiced successfully at Lawton since the war, and was probate judge of Van Buren County from 1872 to 1876.

Jonathan S. Parkhurst, a native of Oswego Co., N. Y., who was admitted to the bar at Detroit in 1858, located at Decatur in 1863, and practiced there until 1870. He then removed to Kansas, but returned to Decatur in 1876, where he has since been in active practice.

We have now given brief sketches of the lawyers who began practice in Van Buren County before the close of the war of 1861-65, and of two or three others. We next transcribe from the records of the county clerk a list of those who have been admitted to the bar of Van Buren County (with the dates of admission) since the first day of April, 1864, back of which time those records do not extend.

Ashbel Harrison Herron, April 20, 1864; Newton Foster, April 16, 1867; Isaac E. Barnum, April 16, 1867; Joseph Herron, Oct. 31, 1867; William H. Tucker, Jan. 19, 1869; Wm. C. Chubb, April 19, 1869; Oscar W. Field, Aug. 16, 1869; George L. Linden, Aug. 16, 1869; John Knowles, Aug. 16, 1869; Orris C. Lathrop, Oct. 20, 1869; W. Scott Beebe, April 11, 1870; Theodore E. Hendrick, April 11, 1870; John R. Carr, April 19, 1870; James M. Davis, Nov. 26, 1870; Jay J. Sherman, April 13, 1871; Oscar F. Januash, April 15, 1872; Oran W.

Rowland, Nov. 13, 1872; Edgar A. Crane, March 29, 1873; James B. Judson, March 31, 1873; James S. Maury, Jan. 20, 1875; C. H. Engle, Jan. 20, 1875; Wm. H. Buchanan, May 24, 1875; O. N. Hilton, June 22, 1875; David K. Prentice, Oct. 6, 1875; Wm. H. Mason, Sept. 5, 1876; Samuel Holmes, April 10, 1877; Thoratton Hall, Jan. 30, 1878; Elias J. MacEwan, March 27, 1878; Charles A. Harrison, Jan. 30, 1878; Frank E. Withey, Dec. 10, 1878.

Of the gentlemen above named, Messrs. Knowles, Rowland, Hilton, Mason, Holmes, and Harrison are now practicing at Paw Paw; Messrs. Tucker and Sherman are at Decatur; Mr. Engle at Hartford; and Mr. Withey at Bangor. Newton Foster, after being in partnership for a time with Franklin Muzzy, of Niles, returned to Decatur, where he had studied, and practiced there with marked success until his death, in 1877. W. S. Bebee also practiced at Decatur from his admission until 1877, when he removed to Portland, Oregon, where he is now engaged in the duties of his profession. O. W. Field, who studied with Mr. Foster, and was at one time in partnership with him, was in practice at Decatur from his admission until his death, in the winter of 1874-75. Mr. Lathrop located in South Haven on his admission, but removed to Illinois in 1875.

Besides, there have been several disciples of Blackstone who were admitted outside of the county, and who have located in it, either temporarily or permanently, since the war. H. M. Lillie began practice at South Haven in 1867 or 1868, practiced there most of the time for five or six years, and subsequently died. A. H. Chandler came to South Haven about the same time as Lillie, practiced there a few years, left the county, returned, and is now practicing at Hartford. A Mr. Fordham, a lawyer, was at South Haven prior to Mr. Chandler, but did not practice, and removed to Kentucky. Benjamin F. Heckert located at South Haven in May, 1869, practiced there until he was elected prosecuting attorney, in the fall of 1875, when he removed to Paw Paw, where he still holds that office. Darius E. Comstock opened an office at South Haven in July, 1870, and remained until the 1st of January, 1874, when, having been chosen prosecuting attorney, he removed to Paw Paw. He was appointed circuit judge in 1874, but died while holding the office, in January, 1875. Jerome Coleman, though long a resident of this county, was admitted elsewhere soon after graduating from the University of Michigan, in 1871, but has since practiced at Decatur. Alfred J. Mills, one of the later accessions to the bar of Paw Paw, is now the probate judge of the county.

We close this sketch with a list of the lawyers now residing in Van Buren County, with their places of business: Paw Paw, E. R. Annable, S. H. Blackman, C. A. Harrison, B. F. Heckert, O. N. Hilton, Samuel Holmes, John Knowles, W. H. Mason, A. J. Mills, Chandler Richards, and O. W. Rowland; Decatur, Jerome Coleman, J. S. Parkhurst, J. J. Sherman, and W. H. Tucker; Bangor, Calvin Cross, Austin Herrick, James F. Maury, and F. E. Withey; South Haven, William N. Cook, James H. Johnson, and C. J. Monroe; Hartford, C. H. Engle and A. H. Chandler; Lawton, George W. Lawton and S. A. Tabor; Lawrence, Robert L. Warren.

## THE MEDICAL PROFESSION.

It is hardly necessary to say that the life of the early physicians in Van Buren County, as well as throughout the State of Michigan, was one of great hardship. All their traveling was necessarily done on horseback, and the settlements were so widely scattered that they were obliged to traverse immense distances in order to visit their patients.

Rising early and retiring late, the pioneer doctor rode from one lone log cabin to another, now following a scarcely perceptible roadway, where the boughs met close above his bending head, now striking boldly through the untrodden woodland, now struggling through a marshy interval, and anon urging his tired steed into a bridgeless stream, perchance compelled to swim a part of the way across, and emerging drenched to the skin on the opposite shore. Practicing medicine was no holiday work in Van Buren County from 1835 to 1850.

According to the oldest residents, the first physician in Van Buren County was a Dr. Barrett, who was invited to Paw Paw from Stone Arabia, N. Y., in the summer of 1835. He practiced at Paw Paw only three or four years (perhaps less), and then removed to Kalamazoo, where he died.

The first physician who settled permanently in the county was Dr. Levi H. Warner, who came with his family from Sweden, Monroe Co., N. Y., in the fall of 1835, with the families of John Hill, Theophilus Bangs, and Joshua and Joseph Luce. These families all settled at Paw Paw or vicinity. Dr. Warner practiced his profession in the county until 1847 or 1848, when he returned to New York.

The next was Dr. Harvey Manley, a native of Ashtabula Co., Ohio, who located at Breedsville in the spring of 1837. He purchased a farm of two hundred and forty acres on section 29, in the immediate vicinity of Breedsville, where he lived for many years, and followed his profession.

Dr. Torrey, a graduate of a medical college in one of the Eastern States, came to Paw Paw in 1837, and practiced medicine for several years. His health failing, he returned to New England, where he soon after died.

Josiah Andrews is a native of Cayuga Co., N. Y. He studied medicine in that State, and graduated at Fairfield Medical College, Herkimer Co., N. Y. He came to this State in 1838, located at Paw Paw, and commenced the practice of his profession. His ride embraced all the settled portions of the county. He was associated in after-years with Dr. H. C. Clapp, and is now associated with Dr. L. C. Woodman. In later years Dr. Andrews has mostly been engaged in office-work and consultation. He represented his district in the Legislature in 1846.

Dr. Joel Camp, a native of Ohio, came to this county as early as 1846, and was practicing at South Haven in that year. He soon after settled at Breedsville, where he practiced till the fall of 1853, when he removed to Lawrence. He subsequently went to Kalamazoo to reside, but about 1867 returned to Bangor, where he is still engaged in the duties of his profession.

Dr. John W. Emory, a native of Alstead, N. H., graduated at Woodstock Medical College, in that State. He practiced many years before coming to this State.



In 1848 he came to Paw Paw and engaged in his former business. With the exception of four years spent in Vermont, he has lived and practiced in Paw Paw to the present time.

Dr. Geo. Bartholomew, a native of Jefferson Co., N. Y., came to Keeler in 1846, and bought a farm, where he remained two years. He then removed to Paw Paw, and spent three years in that place. He was in the employ of the Panama Railroad Company as a physician five years, but returned to Keeler in 1869, where he is still in practice.

Dr. C. P. Prindle came to Lawrence in the year 1848, and practiced till the fall of 1852.

Dr. J. T. Keables, a native of Norwich, Conn., studied medicine, and commenced practice in 1849, at Joliet, Ill. In 1851 he came to Decatur, and has practiced in that place till the present time, with the exception of three years' service as surgeon in the 3d Michigan Cavalry.

Dr. Charles T. Baker is a native of Howard, Steuben Co., N. Y. He graduated in the medical department of the University of Michigan in 1854, and in the fall of that year came to Decatur. He has been in practice in that village ever since, except during a term as surgeon in the army in the war for the Union.

Dr. Wm. B. Hathaway, a native of Jefferson County, N. Y., studied medicine with Professor Trowbridge, in Watertown, N. Y., graduated at Castleton College, Vt., in 1851; came to Allegan in the fall of the same year, moved soon after to Breedsville, and in 1853 located at South Haven. He was the first regular physician in that township, and remained there till 1861, when he removed to Paw Paw, where he still resides and practices.

Dr. G. W. Rogers is a native of Cortland Co., N. Y., and studied medicine with Dr. Curtiss, of Geneva College, N. Y. He practiced five years in that State, and in May, 1857, came to Decatur, where he is still engaged in his profession. He attended lectures at Chicago, and is a member of the State Medical Society.

Dr. Charles M. Lee graduated at the medical college in Geneva, N. Y. He was a native of Fulton, N. Y., and came to South Haven in 1856. He remained three years and then returned to New York.

Dr. Henry C. Clapp, a native of Cayuga Co., N. Y., came to Paw Paw in 1842. After teaching school a short time he commenced the study of medicine with Dr. Andrews, of that village. He attended lectures and graduated at Laporte, Ind., in 1846. He returned to Paw Paw, where he practiced seven or eight years, and then removed to Chicago. He afterwards went from that city to California, where he died.

Dr. M. F. Palmer was the first resident physician of Hartford. He located at the village about 1852, and commenced a practice which he still continues.

Dr. Nelson Rowe, a well-educated physician, came to Lawrence in the spring of 1853, and practiced there until his death, in January, 1864.

Dr. A. S. Haskin came to Lawrence in 1857. He has been in constant practice to the present, and is secretary of the County Medical Society.

*The Van Buren County Medical Society.*—The following is the first record of this association:

"At a meeting of a number of the physicians of Van Buren County, convened according to previous notice, April 15, 1856, at the office of Dr. Josiah Andrews, at Paw Paw, it was on motion resolved that a medical society be organized for this county. A preliminary organization was effected, and an adjournment to April 29th, when a permanent organization was perfected by the election of the following officers, and the adoption of a constitution: Josiah Andrews, Paw Paw, President; H. C. Clapp, Paw Paw, Vice-President; J. Elliot Sweet, Keeler, Secretary; J. Andrews, Treasurer. The persons whose names are given below are the constituent members: J. Andrews, J. Elliot Sweet, L. C. Woodman, C. T. Baker, G. B. Davidson, H. C. Clapp."

Dr. Sweet remained secretary until January, 1878, when he was succeeded by A. S. Haskin. Meetings of the society are held every three months, in January, April, July, and November.

The officers in 1879 were L. C. Woodman, of Paw Paw, President; T. H. Briggs, Vice-President; A. S. Haskin, of Lawrence, Secretary.

The following is a list of the members in 1879: Paw Paw, Josiah Andrews, John W. Emory, William B. Hathaway, L. R. Dibble, L. C. Woodman; Hartford, J. Elliot Sweet, M. F. Palmer, William A. Engle, A. E. Palmer; South Haven, J. O. Gunsolly, G. V. Hilton; Decatur, J. T. Keables, C. T. Baker; Lawrence, A. S. Haskin, O. B. Wiggin, E. S. Cleveland; Watervliet, B. B. Tucker; Mattawan, T. H. Briggs, David Brown; Dowagiac, C. W. Morse; Bangor, J. E. Ferguson; Keeler, George Bartholomew; Breedsville, N. J. Cranmer; Gobleville, A. E. Bulson; Bloomingdale, H. R. Bulson, W. B. Anderson.

Regular physicians resident in the county not members of the society are Drs. Rose and Dillon, Decatur; Dr. William E. Rowe, Lawrence; Dr. John L. Cross, Bangor; Dr. E. B. Dunning, Paw Paw; Dr. Joel Camp, Bangor; Dr. M. E. Bishop, South Haven; Dr. William C. Freese, South Haven; Dr. Charles Carnes, Covert; Dr. L. A. Barber, Bloomingdale; Dr. Rankin, Bloomingdale.

*Homœopathic and other Physicians.*—The physicians of this practice have no county society. The names of those who have practiced and are still practicing in the county are given as well as can be ascertained:

Dr. C. M. Odell, a native of Canada, graduated at Queen's College, Toronto, as an allopathic physician in 1835, and practiced there in both allopathy and homœopathy before coming to this State. He came to Mattawan in 1850, and to Paw Paw a little later. After the establishment of the Homœopathic College at Detroit he attended lectures there, and graduated in 1873. He is still in practice at Paw Paw.

Dr. Eugene Bitely, a native of New York, graduated at Cleveland in 1853, and settled at Paw Paw, where he practiced till his death, March 31, 1873.

Dr. S. Rowe, an eclectic physician, came to Lawrence in 1853, and still practices there.

Dr. Zenas Sikes came to the township of Keeler, and was one of its earliest settlers. He was a physician of the Thompsonian school, and for several years was the only practitioner in the township.

The homœopathic physicians now in practice are Dr. West, of Lawton; Dr. H. M. Brodick, of Decatur; Dr. A. M. Hendrick, of Paw Paw; Dr. C. D. Gibson, of Bangor; and Dr. J. W. Megan, of Pine Grove.

## CHAPTER L.

## COUNTY SOCIETIES.

Van Buren County Agricultural Society—Paw Paw Valley Agricultural Society—Van Buren County Pomona Grange, P. of H.—Van Buren County Pioneer Association—Farmers' Mutual Fire Insurance Company of Van Buren County.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY.

The early records of this society, if there were any such, are not to be found, but the following facts concerning it have been obtained from some of its early members.

The society was organized in the summer of 1850, with Jay R. Monroe as president. The first fair was held in the court-house square, the stock being tied to the trees and the court-room being used as a floral hall. The fair was held in the same place in 1851. In 1852 it was held in the village of Lawrence, south of where the Methodist church now stands. In 1853-55 the annual expositions were held at Paw Paw.

In 1855 the people of the western part of the county furnished lumber, and built sheds, stalls, and stands on the public square at Lawrence, and the fair of that year was held at that place.

In 1856 the lumber was taken down and removed to Paw Paw. The society leased of Peter Gremps lands west of the river, which were fenced, and on which the necessary buildings were erected with the lumber brought from Lawrence.

From that time the fairs of the society were held on the leased grounds until 1870, when the directors purchased twenty acres of land half a mile west of the village of Paw Paw. The grounds were fenced, and a floral hall and commodious stalls were erected that year. In 1872 a judges' stand and grand stand were erected. The society is now in a prosperous condition, and the property is valued at \$10,000.

The officers of the society for 1879 are as follows: David Woodman (2d), President; Joseph Kilburn, Vice-President; C. A. Harrison, Secretary; N. M. Pugsley, Treasurer. Directors for two years: O. P. Morton, J. T. Bangs, Aaron Van Auken, E. P. Mills, C. W. Youngs, T. W. Vallean.

The following is from a report of the secretary, and is a comparative statement of the society:

## INDEBTEDNESS OF THE VAN BUREN COUNTY AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY, Oct. 10, 1878.

Mortgage on grounds.....	\$1500
Notes held by N. M. Pugsley.....	1025
Notes held by bank.....	650
Interest on same.....	300
Total.....	\$3455

## INDEBTEDNESS, OCTOBER, 1879.

Mortgage notes.....	\$1500
"    upon which all interest is paid.....	111.5
".....	\$2615
Reduction.....	\$840

## RECEIPTS AND EXPENSES SINCE 1870.

1870.—Receipts (in this is included from county, \$340; life members, \$207—\$547).....	\$1627.93
Expenses.....	1647.48
1871.—Receipts.....	1180.35
Expenses.....	1198.82

1872.—Receipts (county, \$250; life members, \$113—\$363).....	\$1629.30
Expenses (in hands of treasurer, \$143.13).....	1486.15
1873.—Receipts (life members, \$200).....	1624.65
Expenses.....	1664.54
1874.—Receipts (appropriated from county, \$168.75).....	1670.75
Expenses.....	1899.14
1875.—Receipts (appropriated from county, \$133.33).....	1589.77
Expenses.....	1596.72
1876.—Receipts (appropriated from county, \$133.33).....	1238.02
Expenses.....	1235.36
1877.—Receipts (appropriated from county, \$100).....	1636.22
Expenses.....	1687.66
1878.—Receipts.....	2505.49
Expenses.....	2138.21
1879.—Receipts.....	1649.84
Expenses.....	1340.20

## NUMBER OF EXHIBITORS AND ENTRIES SINCE 1874.

	1874.	1875.	1876.	1877.	1878.	1879.
Exhibitors.....	353	429	400	377	424	380
Horses.....	128	152	166	152	231	218
Cattle.....	52	50	47	33	82	49
Sheep.....	52	49	57	51	59	47
Swine.....	18	16	41	54	57	48
Poultry.....	9	16	31	18	19	37
Totals.....	259	283	342	308	448	394

## PAW PAW VALLEY AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY.

In 1863, on account of the disaffection occasioned by the continuance of the fair-grounds of the county society at Paw Paw, a Horse-Fair Association was organized at Lawrence, and a tract of twenty-five acres of ground was leased of Holland B. Clark for its use. The grounds were fenced, a track was graded, and stands, stalls, and a floral hall erected, at a cost of nine thousand dollars. E. O. Briggs was elected president, and J. R. Baker secretary.

Fairs were held in 1864-66, but the receipts were not sufficient to meet the expenses, and they were therefore discontinued.

In 1871, pursuant to call, a large number of the citizens of Van Buren County met at Chadwick's Hall, in the village of Lawrence, on the 7th day of January, 1871, and formed themselves into an association "for the encouragement and advancement of agriculture, manufactures, and mechanic arts," under the name of the Paw Paw Valley Agricultural Society, it being intended to embrace the townships of the western and central portions of Van Buren County. The following officers were duly elected: President, Samuel Hoppin; Treasurer, Isaac C. Bunnell; Secretary, John B. Potter; Directors, Eaton Branch, Oscar M. Southard, Samuel Hoppin, Holland B. Clark, Rufus Tillon, Jay R. Monroe, Alvin Sturtevant, Samuel G. Mather, James M. Blowers, Chandler Richards, John B. Potter, Fabius Miles, Newell Crussey.

The grounds of the Horse-Fair Association were occupied by the society, under the leave of that association, and the first fair was held Oct. 11-13, 1871.

At a meeting of the society in 1877 its scope was extended so as to include the townships of Watervliet, Pipestone, and Bainbridge, in Berrien County, and of Volinia, Wayne, and Silver Creek, in Cass County.

The officers for 1880 are Erastus Osborne, of Hamilton, President; Amos Dupp, of Lawrence, Vice-President; Robert L. Warren, of Lawrence, Secretary; Charles Rockwell, of Lawrence, Treasurer.

VAN BUREN COUNTY POMONA GRANGE, No. 13, PATRONS OF HUSBANDRY.

This society was organized at Lawrence, on the 26th of October, 1876, by C. L. Whitney, State Lecturer, and J. J. Woodman, Master of the State Grange, with sixty constituent members. The first officers were David Woodman (2d), Master; Oscar Caldwell, Overseer; Arthur Hayden, Lecturer; Henry Goss, Secretary.

David Woodman (2d) was the Master till October, 1878, when Oscar Caldwell was elected. In October, 1879, David Woodman (2d) was again elected to the chief position. The society now contains about one hundred and twenty-five members.

All Patrons of Husbandry who have attained the fourth degree, and are in good standing in the subordinate granges, are eligible to the county grange.

VAN BUREN COUNTY PIONEER ASSOCIATION.

Pursuant to call, a large number of the old settlers of Van Buren County met at Chadwick's Hall, in the village of Lawrence, on the 22d day of February, 1872. Gen. B. F. Chadwick was chosen chairman, Hon. M. L. Fitch was assistant chairman, and S. T. Conway secretary. A committee was appointed to draft a constitution and by-laws, which were adopted by the meeting, and an association was then organized under the above name, with the following officers:

President, Jay R. Monroe; Vice-President, E. Barnum; Secretary, S. T. Conway; Executive Committee, David Wise, Pine Grove; Silas Breed, Alma; C. M. Merrill, Antwerp; S. Corey, Porter; Ashbel H. Herron, Bloomington; R. J. Myers, Waverly; N. M. Pugsley, Paw Paw; Elijah Goble, Decatur; J. A. Howard, Columbia; D. D. Briggs, Arlington; Eaton Branch, Lawrence; Calvin Field, Hamilton; Clark Pierce, Geneva; Charles U. Cross, Bangor; Lewis Miller, Hartford; R. Irish, Keeler; D. T. Pierce, South Haven; Myron Fish, Deerfield. Speeches were delivered by Jay R. Monroe, Joseph Woodman, Dr. J. Andrews, and J. R. Hendryx.

The fourth annual meeting was held in Decatur. The town hall was decorated with evergreens and pictures. Upon the wall, behind the president's desk, hung a portrait of Adolphus Morris, the first pioneer of Van Buren County, above which were the words "Decatur, the pioneer town, welcomes her friends." A call was made by the president for all who came into the country between 1827 and 1835 to take the stand. About fifteen responded.

Jay R. Monroe was the president of the society until his death, in 1877, when Eaton Branch, of Lawrence, was elected, and still holds the position. Meetings are held annually in different parts of the county. The society has a present membership of five hundred and seventy-six.

The records, kept by Dr. J. Andrews, contain numerous interesting reminiscences of the early days, many of which will be found in the different township histories.

FARMERS' MUTUAL FIRE INSURANCE COMPANY OF VAN BUREN COUNTY.

This company was organized Sept. 12, 1863, with the following constituent members: T. R. Harrison, Myron Plumb, Joshua Bangs, A. M. Hanselman, Samuel Hayden,

Jehial Glidden, N. M. Pugsley, Jesse Wilson, Philip N. Teed, J. J. Woodman, Joseph Luce, P. I. Bragg, Edwin D. Whitney, Lyman Tuttle, James Bale, and S. W. Manning. The company was incorporated the same year, the first president being Jason A. Sheldon, and the first secretary William P. Stocking.

The business of the company is confined to Van Buren County. It insures all farm buildings and all personal property on farms against fire and lightning. The number of policies in force Jan. 1, 1880, was 865, covering property to the amount of \$1,189,975. The losses for 1878 were \$1850; those for 1879 were \$3633.42. The increase during the latter year is due to the extremely dry period which occurred in May of that year. Average cost of insurance for the past six years, about one-fourth of one per cent.

The salaries paid to officers in 1879 amounted to three hundred and seventy-five dollars and forty cents. The officers for 1880 are David Woodman, President; Chandler Richards, Secretary and Treasurer. The office of the company is at Paw Paw.

CHAPTER LI.

ANTWERP TOWNSHIP.\*

Boundaries and General Description—Pioneers of Antwerp—Antwerp Post-Office—Early Roads—Wayside Taverns—Mills and Millers—Township Organization and List of Officers—Lawton Village—Mattawan Village—Schools of the Township—Churches—Fruit Culture—Railways in Antwerp.

ANTWERP, lying on the eastern boundary of Van Buren County, is one of the seven townships formed from Lafayette, on the 11th of March, 1837, just before the organization of Van Buren County. In the United States survey it is designated as township 3 south, range 13 west, and is bounded as follows: on the north by Alma, on the south by Porter, on the east by the Kalamazoo County line, and west by Paw Paw.

Antwerp is a rich agricultural district, and within the past five years has been rapidly and profitably developing as an important fruit-raising region, especially in the vicinity of Lawton village, where the culture of the peach and the grape, already attended with gratifying results, promises something extraordinary for the near future. Manufactures are chiefly confined to flour-mills, of which there are four in the township, that produce largely for Eastern shipment. An extensive industry, known as the Michigan Central Iron Company, was carried on at Lawton village between the years 1867 and 1875, and inspired that town with a very lively activity, to which it has since been a stranger.

Lawton and Mattawan are the two villages of the township, the former being incorporated. Both are stations on the Michigan Central Railway, and both are important wheat-shipping points, Lawton being also one of the *termini* of the Paw Paw Railway. The east branch of the Paw Paw River, passing through the township in a northwesterly direction from the southeast, furnishes excellent water-

\* By David Schwartz.







MR. JOSEPH WOODMAN.



MRS. JOSEPH WOODMAN.

### ELDER JOSEPH WOODMAN.

Elder Joseph Woodman was born in Barrington, N. H., Feb. 12, 1790. When quite young, his father, John Woodman, with his family, became a pioneer settler in Caledonia Co., Vt. Joseph was the second child, and eldest son in the family, and in early life he developed those active qualities of labor, perseverance, and prudence, which crowned his life with success and honor. He was married to Tryphena Johnson, of the same county, Jan. 1, 1810, with whom he lived a happy union fifty-three years, she dying June 14, 1863, in the seventy-second year of her age, having had ten children, six of whom still survive. Riley, the eldest son, resides in Powhatan, Kan., the other five, viz.: David Woodman (2d), J. J. Woodman, Mrs. Joseph Luce, Mrs. Freeman Ruggles, and Mrs. H. P. Nelson, are residents of Van Buren County.

Soon after his marriage he, with his wife, joined the Free-Will Baptist Church. Earnest in his religious convictions, he soon to the labor of his hands joined that of the ministry, and engaged in preaching the gospel. In the spring of 1831 he sold the farm (among the hills) in Sutton, on which he had lived several years, and which he cleared and improved with his own hands, also the saw-mill which he built on the stream near his residence, and in July of that year emigrated to Western New York, and settled on a farm in Riga, Monroe Co., where he resided until the spring of 1835, when he with his family moved to Michigan, and settled upon the land which he located and which became his future home, on the Territorial Road in the township of Antwerp, east of and adjoining the village of Paw Paw. He was the first white settler, and built the first log house and the first frame barn in the township. His log house, built in three days and finished ready for occupancy, and into which he moved his family on the 10th day of May, 1835, was built on the spot now occupied by the fine residence of his youngest son, Hon. J. J. Woodman, to whom he sold all of his farm in 1861, except forty acres on which his residence stood, which he built in 1838, and in which he lived forty-one years, and until his death, April 2, 1879, at the advanced age of eighty-nine years, one month, and twenty-one days.

When he settled upon his farm there was but one small frame house, three log cabins, and a saw-mill on the territory now occupied by the beautiful and flourishing village of Paw Paw. There being no church of his faith near him at the time, he united with the Protestant Methodists, and was soon after ordained, and was actively engaged in the ministry until within a few years of his death, when advancing age compelled him to retire from the pulpit and active duties of a long and useful life, and seek the quiet and comfortable surroundings of his home and fireside. His second wife, Mrs. Mary Osmer, to whom he was married in the winter of 1863, faithfully ministered to him in his declining years.

He was a representative man of his time, and took an active part in the early politics of the State. He was magistrate of his township for nine years; and many were the suits tried before

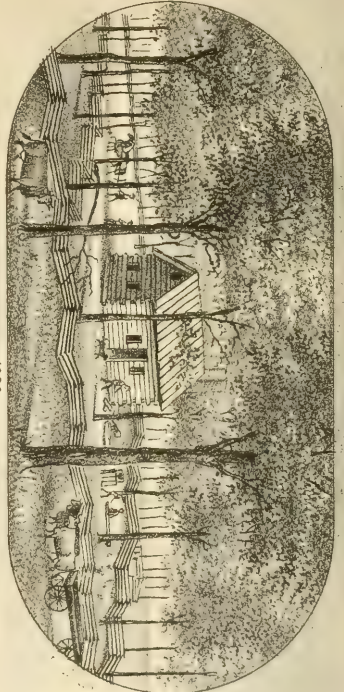
him, in which Charles E. Stuart, Miller, and Balch, of the Kalamazoo bar, were engaged as counsel. His name is associated with nearly all of the stirring events and public enterprises connected with the early settlement and development of the county; and he lived to see his children settled around him in comfortable homes; the red man and the forests pass away, and in their place a refined civilization with broad and rich cultivated fields and thriving villages.

From the records of the Woodman family, which have been carefully compiled and published, it appears to have been remarkable not only for numbers and longevity, but for unity, a morality. Their ancestor, Edward Woodman, came from England, and settled in Newbury, Mass., in 1635, and in 1856 his descendants numbered seven thousand four hundred; and we have been unable to ascertain that any one of this vast multitude, or their descendants down to the present time, has ever been arrested for crime. As an example of longevity, we note the twelve children of Joshua and Eunice Woodman, who settled in Kingston, N. H., in 1736. Of this family, one died at the age of ninety-seven, one at ninety-three, two at eighty-six, two at eighty-four, two at eighty-one, two at eighty, one at seventy-six, and one at sixty-eight. The combined ages of the twelve amounted to nine hundred and ninety-six years.

At a reunion of the Woodman family, at the residence of Hon. J. J. Woodman, in 1877, over eighty representatives of the family were present, and the occasion was one of interest, and of unusual occurrence. The venerable father was conducted to the parlor, where an agreeable surprise awaited him. On the walls hung the life-size portraits, recently painted, of himself and the wife of his youth, the mother of his children, who, though not lost or forgotten, is gone before. After looking at them earnestly and well, he simply remarked, "Yes, yes, that's Tryphena," and "Yes, that's me." The whole company were arranged upon the lawn in front of the house in the following order,—and were photographed by an artist who had been employed for the occasion: Elder Joseph Woodman, the subject of this sketch—who was then nearly eighty-eight years of age, and whose descendants numbered fifty-two—occupied the centre, with his three brothers and two sisters seated according to their respective ages upon his left; the united ages of the six amounting to five hundred and one years,—the youngest of whom was Rev. Jonathan Woodman, father of Dr. L. C. Woodman, of Paw Paw, in his eightieth year, and who had been constantly engaged in the ministry for sixty-two years; and is now pastor of a church, and preaching regularly in his native State, Vermont. On his right was his eldest child, Mrs. Sabra Luce, and her daughter, Mrs. Emily Abrams, and her daughter, Mrs. Ella Wattles with her infant son. Six octogenarian brothers and sisters on one hand, and five generations on the other, with seventy representatives of the family standing in the rear, all but four of whom are residents of Van Buren County.



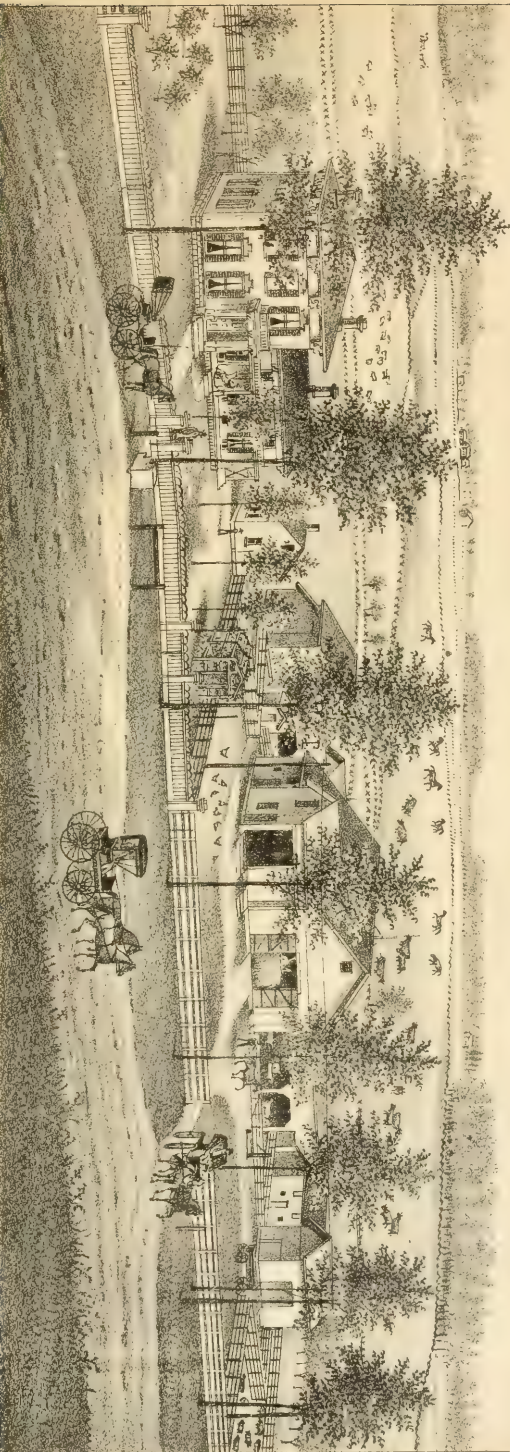
J. J. WOODMAN.



BULL. MAN, 10, 1835.



MRS. J. J. WOODMAN.



RESIDENCE OF HON. J. J. WOODMAN, ANTWERP, MICHIGAN. — ADJOINING PAW PAW ON THE EAST.





power for four large grist-mills. Generally, the soil is a sandy loam, although in some portions clay and gravel prevail. The surface of the country is strikingly even, and what few elevations there are of but little prominence, the most conspicuous being one south of Mattawan and one in the northeast, which afford picturesque views of the surrounding country.

The population of Antwerp in 1874 was 2209, and its assessed value in 1879 was \$465,000.

#### PIONEERS OF ANTWERP.

The present township of Antwerp invited the attention of the Western pioneer, for the special reason that its territory was largely composed of "oak openings," while it was remarkably free from swampy or low land. The soil, a fine sandy loam, promised ready cultivation, and when the inducements to settlers began to disclose themselves, the tide of migration westward brought settlers into Antwerp in considerable numbers, so that at a comparatively early day the township was generally given over to the hardy pioneers.

Even before roads were laid out, traveling through the township was no difficult matter, since there was little or no underbrush in the forests, and these latter were so open that the settler could drive through them anywhere without having to cut his road before him. Old settlers in Antwerp now living say that when they came into the country they were charmed with it. The woods were like vast orchards, in that one could see round about anywhere for the space of a quarter of a mile.

The early settlers found here and there clearly-defined traces of what have been termed prehistoric garden-beds. In the northern part of the township especially were these old beds discovered, grown over with giant timber, but marked by regular lines easily traced, and entirely convincing as to their earlier uses. On the farm of Nathaniel Bangs, on sections 4 and 9, one may yet see, in a piece of timberland, positive signs of the remote existence on that spot of these so-called garden-beds.

Opinions seem to be divided as to the identity of the first white settler in Antwerp. It was either Joel Tomlinson, who, according to the recollection of his daughter, settled upon section 22, Dec. 11, 1834, or Joseph Woodman, who settled on section 7 on the 10th of May, 1835. In the spring of 1836 a Mr. Bishop erected the framework of a mill, and had a dam nearly completed across the stream, but Mr. Tomlinson would not allow him to complete it, as the back water from the dam would overflow a very valuable spring of his. Mr. Tomlinson lives now in Ohio, at the advanced age of eighty-three, but cannot recollect whether he settled in the township in 1834 or 1835.

Mrs. Peter Moon, of Porter, a daughter of Mr. Tomlinson, says that after her father had been settled some time, she, with two sisters, started out with horses and wagon to discover whether there were any neighbors. In due time they reached a clearing on the Territorial road, and there were surprised to see old Jesse Abbe and his daughter hard at work plowing,—the young lady driving the oxen, and driving them, too, with a good deal of vigor.\*

\* As the Territorial road was not opened until the summer of 1835, and Abbe did not settle upon his land until the middle of May of

Settlements in the southern portion of the township, although first tending that way, were far from rapid. The incoming pioneer tide followed more generally the line of the Territorial road, and during 1835, 1836, and 1837 by far the greatest number of settlements in Antwerp were made on or near that important highway. With Antwerp, as with many towns in Michigan, it appeared to be the rule that nearly all the early settlers came from New York State, and in Antwerp's especial case, Monroe Co., N. Y., furnished a large majority of the first comers. The reason for this latter was that the Wadsworth family, of Monroe Co., N. Y., owned considerable land in Antwerp, and sent many settlers thither.

Joseph Woodman, one of the pioneers of Antwerp, died in April, 1879, at the age of eighty-nine, upon the farm (near Paw Paw village) which became his home in May, 1835, and remained his home until he died. In an address delivered by Mr. Woodman before the Van Buren County Pioneer Association in 1872, he thus graphically recited his experiences in 1835:

"I came to this country in the spring of 1835, landed at Detroit, and made my way to Kalamazoo through mud and mire with two teams,—a horse-team and an ox-team. The mud was terrible, and I had frequently to double up my teams to get through. I frequently met stages, with passengers on foot carrying rails or poles. They said it was hard fare, and that the driver wanted them to carry two rails apiece, but they couldn't see it. I had my family with me,—wife and six children,—and after much difficulty reached Kalamazoo, and succeeded in getting them into an old log house. I started alone then from Kalamazoo for Paw Paw, and was told at Grand Prairie that I could not get through that night, that I would be eaten by the wolves, but being young and vigorous I pushed on, and without mishap reached a cabin known as Dodge's tavern, standing upon the site of the now flourishing village of Paw Paw. On Saturday, in company with Silas Breed, I went land-viewing, and returned to Dodge's that evening. I asked Dodge if they had any meetings, and was answered in the negative. I told him we had a minister in our party, and we would like to have a meeting on the Sabbath, which we accordingly did, holding it in a slab shanty. On Monday, in company with Joshua Bangs, I went out on the Territorial road to locate land, and each selected a piece. I brought my family from Kalamazoo, and established them in Paw Paw in a blacksmith's shop.† I built a log house on my land, and moved my family into it on the 10th day of May, 1835. I went to clearing land, plowed seven acres with a wooden plow, and raised a fine crop of corn, potatoes, turnips, pumpkins, melons, etc."

When Mr. Woodman settled with his family upon his Antwerp farm, Paw Paw village contained one very small

that year, it would seem improbable that Tomlinson could live six months, and through one winter, within three miles of their only neighbor without knowing it. It seems quite certain that Mrs. Moon is mistaken in the time her father settled in the township, and that Joseph Woodman and his family are correct in their recollection and belief that they were the first settlers in the township.

† Mr. Woodman was himself an ordained Methodist Protestant minister.

‡ Rodney Hineckley's shop.

frame house, three log cabins, and a saw-mill. Upon the old homestead now lives his son, Jonathan J. Woodman (Master of the State Grange and Master also of the National Grange). Another son, David, lives in the southern portion of Paw Paw township, where he became a settler at an early day.

In the spring of 1835, Joshua Bangs, Silas Breed, and Elder Jonathan Hinckley, of Monroe Co., N. Y., started from there with Breed's team to look for land in Michigan, purposing to make Grand Rapids their objective point. They journeyed as far as Silver Creek, Ohio, by road, and found the travel so bad that—to use Mr. Bangs' words—"One of us drove the team while the other two footed behind, carrying rails with which to pry the wagon out of the mud-holes, and I tell you we had to do a heap of prying." They continued by way of the lake from Silver Creek to Detroit, and there, resuming their team, pushed on for Grand Rapids. At Marshall they overtook Joseph Woodman and his family, of Monroe Co., N. Y., bound also for Grand Rapids, and so they journeyed westward in company. Learning that the land-office was at Kalamazoo they halted there, and being persuaded to locate in Van Buren County, Woodman and Bangs made a land-looking tour through the present town of Antwerp. They were so well pleased that they selected land without delay, Bangs entering four 80-acre lots on section 5 and one on section 7, on the latter of which he put up a log shanty at once, as did Woodman, who had selected a farm adjoining Bangs on the west.

Bangs was then ready to go back to New York for his family, and as Woodman had also to return to that State, they, in company with Silas Breed, bound also eastward, started from Dodge's tavern, in Paw Paw, and traveled to Detroit, where they arrived just four days and a half later. Bangs got his family ready, and in the fall of 1835, when he made the start for Michigan, he was accompanied by the families of Dr. Levi Warner, Joseph Luce (both of whom settled in Paw Paw township), Theophilus Bangs, and John Hill. Joshua Bangs lived upon his Antwerp farm until he was chosen county treasurer, in 1837, at a special election, —D. O. Dodge, the first county treasurer elected, failing to act,—and then he removed his residence to Paw Paw. Mr. Bangs was thus the first actual county treasurer of Van Buren, although nominally the second. He held the office four years, when he resumed his residence in Antwerp, which has since been his home.

Theophilus Bangs, his brother, who came to Antwerp with him, settled upon section 19, where he lived about thirty years, and then removing to Paw Paw village, died there. John Hill, who also accompanied Joshua Bangs westward in 1835, located upon section 7. He got homesick in about three years, returned to Monroe County, and sold his Michigan farm to Jason A. Sheldon, who came out and settled upon it. Sheldon sold it to the present occupant, G. B. Chapin, and moved to the village of Paw Paw, where he resided several years, and then to a farm on section 5, where he now resides.

Philip Moon, of New York, settled upon section 5 in 1835. He died on the place in 1856. His son, Horace W. (who came out with Joshua Bangs), now lives on sec-

tion 16. Elder Samuel Gilman, father of Joseph Gilman, bought out E. H. Niles on section 5, and settled there in the fall of 1838. He afterwards sold his farm to J. R. Bangs, and moved to a farm on section 6, where he died, and where his daughter, Mrs. William Clark, is now living. A. F. Moon, now living in Georgia, settled in Antwerp, on section 17. Peter Moon, now of Porter, was a settler in Antwerp in 1835.

Among the land-lookers in Michigan in 1835 was John Hunt, of Vermont, who, being pleased with the land in the northern portion of Antwerp, entered 160 acres on section 1. He returned to Vermont, and in 1836 came again to Michigan to buy more land, but just at that time the land-office, overrun with applications for farming territory, was closed, and Hunt had to go back to Vermont without making additional purchases.

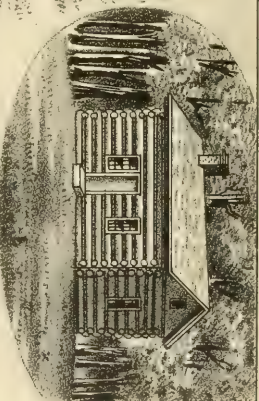
When he reached his Vermont home he began to make preparations for a move, with his family, to his Michigan farm, and May 1, 1837, he set out with his wife and four children. They proceeded by canal to Buffalo, where, finding the harbor so full of ice that vessels could not get in, they engaged a man to carry them and their goods in a wagon to Silver Creek,—thirty-six miles away,—where they were told they would find a steamer for Detroit. The rain poured down in torrents, the roads were knee-deep with mud, the man who drove for them was drunk, and the result was that after floundering two days through the rain and mire they were abandoned by the drunken Jehu in the woods when not much more than half-way to Silver Creek. They succeeded, however, in finding a party to carry them to their journey's end, and thus, after a three days' trip, they made the thirty-six miles, and reached the steamer. They left the boat at Toledo, went by horse-railway to Adrian, and there engaged a team at \$5 a day to convey them to Kalamazoo, which they reached at last, three weeks after their departure from Vermont. Leaving his family at the house of his brother Ormon, in Kalamazoo, Mr. Hunt went up to Samuel Wells' saw-mill in Antwerp, bought a lot of boards, and hired Jesse Abbe (who owned about the only pair of horses in the township) to haul them for him and put up his house. As an evidence of the high cost of life's necessities there at that time it may be mentioned that Mr. Hunt paid \$55 at Kalamazoo for a cook-stove (second-hand at that), "about as big," he says, "as a warming-pan." "When I started from Vermont," says Mr. Hunt, "I had \$800 in money, but when I got to Michigan I had \$300 less,—a pretty steep price for a trip that you can make now in thirty-six hours." Mr. Hunt still lives on the farm he bought in 1835, and is always glad to relate the stirring experiences of his pioneer days. Mr. and Mrs. Hunt, Mr. and Mrs. Morgan L. Fitch, Mr. and Mrs. Ezra Gates, and Mr. and Mrs. N. L. Surdam were married before they came to Antwerp in 1837, and of the married couples who came into the township at that early period are the only ones living in Antwerp.

Mr. Hunt was the first to build a barn in his neighborhood, and its completion was an event of no little importance in the locality, chiefly for the reason that Mr. Hunt showed his slow neighbors how much better it was to thrash on a barn floor than in the open air and on the





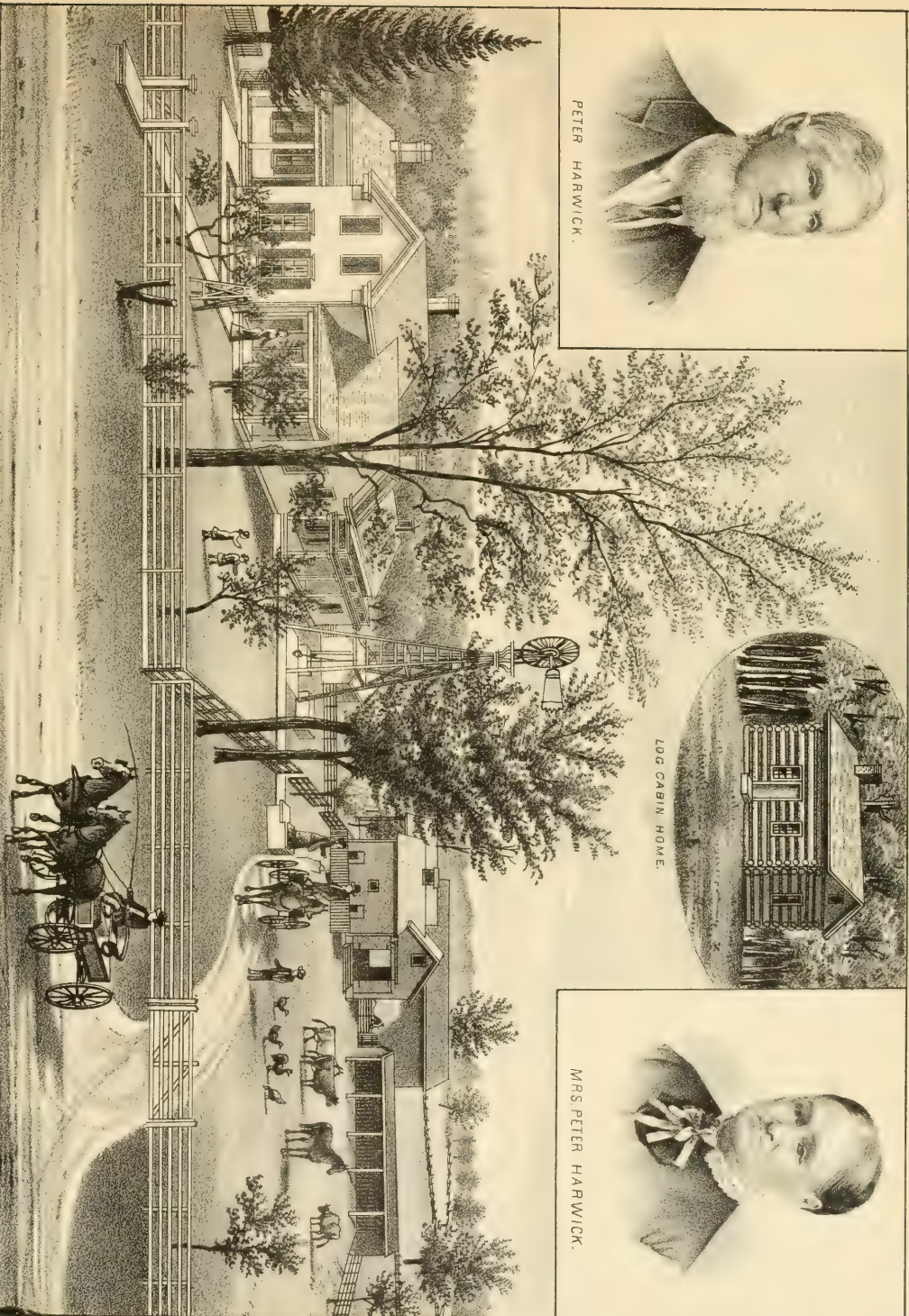
PETER HARWICK.



LOG CABIN HOME.



MRS. PETER HARWICK.



RESIDENCE OF PETER HARWICK, ANTWERP T<sub>P</sub>, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.



ground. Many of them had been thrashing their wheat in open lots. When they saw how great an improvement Mr. Hunt had effected in the premises by barn-thrashing, they quickly changed their tones of derision for those of admiration, and for a while Hunt was besieged by farmers requesting permission to thrash in his barn.

Among the more conspicuous early settlers were also Samuel Lull, a famous dairyman; Anthony Corey, a noted timber-hewer, who settled on the spot where Lawton village is now located; Hiram and Robert Morrison; Lyman Taylor, a brickmaker; Patrick Johnson; Harman Harwick and his son Peter; John McKinney; the Hathaways; Weldens; Silas F. Breed (the founder of Breedsville), and Isaac Borden. Peter Hinkley, a son of Elder Jonathan Hinkley, settled on section 4 in 1835, and sold to E. B. Dyckman in 1838.

The year 1836 brought many settlers to Antwerp. Among them was Wells Gray, who located upon section 2. He put up a log cabin with a loose board floor, and one day when a black-snake reared his ugly front through one of the floor cracks and glared at Mrs. Gray, that good woman was so alarmed and disgusted that when her husband came home that night she declared he must get a farm somewhere else, for she would not live in a place where snakes were liable to drop in on her at any time. So Gray sold his farm to Reason Holmes, and bought one on section 7, where his wife died in 1838. He married again, and lived on the same farm until his death, in 1867.

Ezra Gates, who was a son-in-law of Jesse Abbe, lived with the old gentleman a while, and then located upon section 2, where he still resides. Mr. Gates came from Ohio, and in explanation of the fact that his early school education had been neglected, used to say that when he was young he lived on the wrong side of the river,—that is, the river was between him and the school-house.

Samuel Longstreet, who came to Antwerp in 1836, located upon a farm near his brother Andrew, and from there went to Lawton, where he died. He held the office of justice of the peace at the time of his death, and for several years previously. In 1836 there came also Morgan L. Fitch, from Western New York, and in June of that year he bought of Thomas I. Daniels four 80-acre lots on sections 1, 2, 11, and 12, in Antwerp. Besides these he bought 80 acres on section 3, in Antwerp, for his brother, Lyman Fitch. He had to buy his land from a second hand because just at that time the land-office was temporarily closed by reason of being flooded with applications for land, and as a new order of things was contemplated, it was resolved to receive no more land-entries until matters in hand could be properly disposed of. In regard to the rush of land-lookers to Michigan at that time, Mr. Fitch says that when he reached Detroit, on his way to Kalamazoo, he found that all seats in the stages were engaged for six days in advance. Not caring to foot it, he managed to buy a horse after a three days' search, and so rode to Kalamazoo. Upon reaching there he was surprised to see an old Quaker (the then recorder of the city of Philadelphia) who was his fellow-passenger on the lake to Detroit, and whom he had left in the latter place, waiting for a chance to proceed westward by stage. "Why, my friend," exclaimed Fitch,

"how did you happen to get here so soon? They told me at Detroit there wouldn't be a chance in the stage for a week." "Well, I'll tell thee," replied Broadbrim. "I waited until ye were all gone from the stage-office, when I quietly approached the clerk, saying, 'if any of thy friends conclude they won't go to-day, thou mayst save a seat for me; I hand thee here two dollars, not for my ticket, but for thee: my ticket I will pay for beside.' When I came around at stage-time," continued the Quaker, "the young man had a seat ready for me."

After Mr. Fitch bought his land he went back to New York for his family, and in the spring of 1837 he came again to Michigan. He hired a young man named T. C. Benton to go West and work for him three years, and traveling by wagon to Huron, Ohio, whence they journeyed *via* lake to Detroit, the little party was six weeks making the trip from their New York home to Grand Prairie, in Michigan. At the latter place Mr. Fitch stopped with Lovett Eames, while engaged in building a frame house on section 2. Ezra Gates dug the cellar in half a day, and Eames, Fitch, and Benton built the house (that is, made it habitable) in a day and a half. Mr. Fitch lived on that place until 1876, when he moved to Mattawan, where he is now engaged in the warehouse business. Lyman Fitch came to Antwerp in the fall of 1837, lived with his brother Morgan until 1839, and then settled upon his own farm, where he resided until 1878, removing then to Paw Paw, his present home. After serving the allotted three years with Morgan Fitch, young Benton bought a farm on section 2, and lived upon it until his death.

The pioneer blacksmith of Antwerp was William Taylor, who brought a family, consisting of his wife and twelve children, from Ohio into the township in 1836, and located on the Territorial road, on section 3, where he set up his forge, and where he lived until his death. Taylor was a brother-in-law of Reason Holmes, and when he entered Antwerp put up a "rail-pen" on Holmes' place, where he lived until he could arrange matters for locating land and securing a permanent habitation. Taylor was an exceedingly industrious man, but thoroughly given over at one time to a conviction that he could invent a machine that would produce perpetual motion. He worked at this machine long and secretly, and became so absorbed in his work and in his belief that he had at last discovered the great secret that his conviction seems to have developed into a mania. He was satisfied that designing persons would seek to rob him of his discovery and his treasure, and when one day he learned that his machine had actually been stolen his distress was appalling. Conjecturing at once that some person had captured it for the purpose of securing a patent on it, Taylor managed to raise \$10, and engaged Philip Williams to dispatch it straightway to Washington for a  *caveat*, so that the designing robbers of the machine might be forestalled. After he received his *caveat* he was overcome with delight to find that his beloved machine had been restored to his shop during his temporary absence. It transpired afterwards that certain mischievous boys, desiring to annoy the old man, had stolen the concern and hid it in a barn. Taylor was sanguine that his machine was a great



success. He spoke enthusiastically to every one he encountered of the brilliant prospects in store for him, how he would be a great and a rich man, how future generations would rise up and call him blessed, and went so far even as to promise a few of his friends that he would make it his especial care to see that they were handsomely provided for just as soon as he should come into his great fortune. Taylor's marvelous machine of course proved a failure when, amid the breathless interest of a multitude, he essayed to give an exhibition of his great invention. Somehow one of the wheels flew into pieces, the whole affair was a disastrous fiasco, and the crestfallen Taylor returned, with a broken heart, to the prosaic details of blacksmithing, nor ever more tried to learn the secret of perpetual motion.

Among those who came from New York State westward in 1833 was James Ferguson, of Livingston County, who, with his wife and two children, traveled as far as Ypsilanti, Mich., and there rested a while to visit his brothers. He concluded to buy a farm in Calhoun County, and there he lived until 1836. Being then persuaded by Daniel Van Antwerp (the brother of Ferguson's wife), then with his father living in Antwerp township, to locate in the latter place, Ferguson struck his tent once more and continued westward. He bought 40 acres of land of Daniel Van Antwerp, on the road between Schoolcraft and Paw Paw, and put up a frame house. Ferguson lived but a few years after coming into the township, dying upon his 40-acre farm.

John Lyon, who was a settler upon a farm in sections 3 and 10 in 1836, died there during the sickly season of 1838. One of his children dying in 1836, it was buried in a spot over which the Territorial road passed, and under the roadway the bones of the little one are still reposing. Mrs. E. B. Wright, one of Mr. Lyon's daughters, now lives on the farm her father formerly owned.

In June, 1836, a little band of eight people came into the township, and by that number swelled the list of struggling pioneers, who were yet but a handful. In this company were Daniel Van Antwerp, his father (Harmon) and mother, his wife, and his four children. They came from Geneseo, N. Y., where Daniel Van Antwerp exchanged his farm with James Wadsworth (a member of the large land-holding family of that name) for twelve 80-acre lots in town 3 south, range 13 west, afterwards to be called by the name of these very settlers. Mr. Van Antwerp's land lay near the centre of the town, on both sides the Paw Paw and Schoolcraft road. So well pleased was he with the land, that upon his arrival he bought one more 80-acre lot in the same neighborhood. Daniel Van Antwerp's mother, who died May 4, 1837, was the first adult person who died in the township (John Lyon's child having died in 1836). She was buried in the Van Antwerp burying-ground, on sections 10 and 15, where seven or more people were buried in 1838, which was known as a fatal year among the settlers of Antwerp. Chills and fever prevailed in an aggravated form, and so little was understood about the treatment of the disease that four persons in the township succumbed to it. These four were John Lyon, John Barber, — Whittel, and Benjamin Markle. They were all buried in the Van Antwerp burying-ground, which became

afterwards a township cemetery, and as such is still used. Two other deaths occurred in the township that year. Daniel Woodman, a promising son of Joseph Woodman, aged eighteen years, died of brain fever on the 21st of September, and Mrs. Wells Gray about the same time in childbirth. Daniel Morrison, father of Robert Morrison, who came from Vermont in the fall of 1835, with a large family, and lived on the Agard place, in Lafayette, died the same year. The three latter were buried in the Paw Paw cemetery, but afterwards moved to the cemetery on section 7 of Antwerp. The widow of Daniel Morrison is now living in Paw Paw, at the advanced age of eighty-five years. It is said that Mr. Van Antwerp laid out the township cemetery on both sides the section line, so that a proposed road from Mattawan to Paw Paw should not pass through his property, and it was in consequence of his opposition that the road was run a half-mile south of the cemetery. There was afterwards laid out a second cemetery, on section 2, to the purchase of which sixteen men contributed. Bodies which had been interred promiscuously here and there were taken up and re-interred in this yard, which continues to serve its original purpose. Among its graves may be seen one of Elizabeth Quackenbush, the mother of Mrs. Rose, of Mattawan, whose age is recorded as having been one hundred and one years at the time of her death, in 1867. She had then 121 descendants, to wit: 14 children, 69 grandchildren, 34 great-grandchildren, and 4 great-great-grandchildren.

It appears strange now that chills and fever should have proved fatal, for at this day that disease is readily treated; but in those days they knew less about medicine than is known now, nor could they readily obtain quinine. Dr. Levi Warner, of Paw Paw, was the medical main stay, but although he was esteemed skillful, he failed to grapple successfully with the disease until six persons in Antwerp and adjoining townships had been carried off. After he mastered the disease he had no difficulty in curing his patients. The disorder was so wide-spread that at one time in 1838 there were more sick than well persons among the settlers.

Harmon Van Antwerp lived with his daughter, Mrs. Ferguson, until his death, in 1849. Daniel Van Antwerp died on his old farm, in section 9, in 1875. Two of his sisters are still living,—Mrs. Andrew Longstreet, of Antwerp, and Mrs. Philip Williams, of Kalamazoo County. His widow lives in Paw Paw. His daughter Ann, who taught Antwerp's first school, is Mrs. P. N. Smith, and lives on the farm her father occupied in his lifetime.

Andrew Longstreet, who came into Michigan from Lyons, N. Y., with his family, in June, 1833, located in Jackson County, and in 1836 entered 120 acres of land, just north of the present village site of Lawton. He was chosen, at a special election in 1837, sheriff of Van Buren County, and was the first active incumbent of that office, Samuel Gunton, of Lawrence, who had been elected at the regular election, declining to serve. In 1841 he married the widow of James Ferguson, and in 1843, having completed his official term, he re-settled in Antwerp, and in 1850, moving to the then newly-started village of Lawton, opened a shoemaker's shop there, and in 1851 was appointed the first postmaster of the place. In 1853 he moved out of the



RESIDENCE OF JAMES M. LULL, ANTWERP T<sub>P</sub>, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.



RESIDENCE OF HENRY WAITE, ANTWERP T<sub>P</sub>, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





township, and remaining away five years, returned to Lawton in 1858, where he lived until his death, in 1871. Col. Longstreet was a much-esteemed citizen, and took a prominent part in the local affairs of his day.

Jacob Plank located in 1837, north of what is now Mattawan, whence he soon passed farther west. Near there also, in 1838, settled James Murray, now a resident of Mattawan.

N. L. Surdam, a native of Sharon, Conn., was a settler in 1837 upon section 3, where he has continued to live to this day. Philip Williams located upon section 10 in 1836, and there lived until his death. It was at Mr. Williams' house that the first township-meeting in Antwerp was held.

Although Solomon Phillips, of Broome Co., N. Y., located a farm on sections 4 and 9 early in 1835, he did not occupy it until some years afterwards, for the reason, doubtless, that, being a bachelor, he preferred roving to settling. When he did marry, however, he was fortunate enough to marry a rich widow. His farm was always esteemed one of the most desirable pieces of land in the township. He moved, some years after his first settlement, to section 22, where he built, in 1858, with his brother Benjamin, the first grist-mill in Antwerp. He died a resident of the township.

In 1838, E. B. Dyckman, a widower with four children, living near Syracuse, N. Y., exchanged his farm there for one on sections 4 and 9, in Antwerp township, Michigan, and proceeding westward joined the noble band of Antwerp settlers. When he traded his New York farm, he was importuned to take one hundred barrels of salt, at one dollar per barrel, in part payment of the difference, but he was exceedingly unwilling to do so, although he did eventually consent to the proposition quite reluctantly. The salt was shipped to him at St. Joseph, and arriving at a time when salt was very scarce, Mr. Dyckman realized from six to ten dollars per barrel, and received through that lucky, accidental salt shipment an excellent start upon the road to future fortune. After remaining a few years in Antwerp, Mr. Dyckman removed to Schoolcraft, his present home.

Philip Hinckley, who came to Michigan with Mr. Dyckman, settled upon section 4, where he died, and where his son now lives. Philander N. Smith, who also came to Michigan with Mr. Dyckman, married one of Deacon Daniel Van Antwerp's daughters, and now lives on a portion of the old Van Antwerp farm.

Oliver Warner, who settled on section 6, in Antwerp, in 1836, lived there until his death, in 1879. A. M. Lane came West in 1836, and lived in the vicinity of Paw Paw until 1838, when he traded a house in that village to Joseph Butler for some land upon section 18, north of the river, in Antwerp. Butler, who had a large farm south of the river, sold out and went back to New York. Lane sold his land to Wells Gray, bought on section 5, and became one of Antwerp's settlers. He lived there until a few years ago, when he moved to Bloomingdale, his present home.

One of the earliest settlers in the southern part of the township was Levi Savage, who settled in 1835 upon section 36, but selling his place soon afterwards to Samuel Lull, he moved to a farm east of Daniel Van Antwerp's.

In 1842 he removed with his family to the far West and located eventually at Salt Lake City, where at latest accounts he was still living, a member of the Mormon Church. Samuel Lull's widow and son James still live on the old Savage place, in section 36.

John Cooper, of Ohio, who located upon section 36 in 1836, moved out of the township a few years afterwards. Daniel Bird settled on section 24 during the same year. He moved to Prairie Ronde, where he died. Nicholas Thompson, who lived also on section 24 about that time, went afterwards to Lawton village, where he died. On section 24 also J. B. Wildey was an early settler. He died a resident of Lawton village. J. K. Bingham, who built a saw-mill on section 21 in 1837, moved to Kalamazoo, where he died.

A Mr. Whittet settled on section 20 in the fall of 1837, and died in 1838, when his family returned to New York. Whittet began to "grub" his land before it was surveyed, and when he called in John Hunt, the surveyor, Whittet was much provoked with himself to find that he had grubbed quite a large piece on a lot adjoining his own.

The Markle family, consisting of the widow and her four sons,—Jacob, Benjamin, Elias, and David,—located on section 22 in the spring of 1837. Jacob and David live now in Porter. Elias lives in Antwerp.

Wolves and deer were abundant in Antwerp in the pioneer days, and the mighty hunters of the time found plentiful exercise for their sportive tastes, although indeed about everybody able to bear arms was at that period a hunter, since the finding of game was an easy business, and bountiful returns invariably marked the result of a few days' shooting. Mrs. Longstreet, of Lawton, says her brother, Daniel Van Antwerp (known as a famous deer-slayer), often went out after deer in the evening, and in an hour would return with a half-dozen or so. Wolves had a habit of approaching settlers' cabins as the day darkened into night, seeking the chance of carrying off small stock, and many were the raids the settlers used to make upon them at such times. Young William Van Antwerp, who was much given to playing upon the flute, used to tune his instrument regularly every evening. As soon as the melody commenced, the howls of wolves would resound from every side; when the flute stopped the howls would cease, but return with renewed vigor as soon as the music was recommenced.

#### ANTWERP POST-OFFICE.

About 1840, there being imminent danger of the stage-route being diverted farther north, Mr. John Hunt succeeded in having a post-office established in Antwerp, on the Territorial road, and Reason Holmes, who was the first incumbent of the office, kept it at his tavern. Philip Williams was the next postmaster, and upon the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad to Mattawan the office was removed thither, and the name changed to Mattawan.

#### EARLY ROADS.

The commissioners of highways met in Antwerp, April 11, 1837, and divided the township into road districts as follows:

No. 1.—Sections 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 16, 17, 18; Philip Moon, Overseer.

No. 2.—Sections 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15; John A. Lyon, Overseer.

No. 3.—Sections 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 34, 35, 36; Joel Tomlinson, Overseer.

No. 4.—Sections 19, 20, 21, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33; Andrew Longstreet, Overseer.

The Paw Paw road was surveyed April 13, 1837; the Bangs road April 14th; the Longstreet road April 11th; the Centre road April 12th; and Cooper's road April 13th; H. P. Barnum being the surveyor.

#### WAYSIDE TAVERNS.

The Territorial road, which passed between Detroit and St. Joseph, was constructed in 1835, and the considerable traffic upon that highway gave occasion, of course, for the creation of numerous roadside taverns, many of which, in the prosperous coaching days, were places of some note. That portion of the road passing through Antwerp township in a straight line east and west was laid out and constructed by Cyren Burdick, of Kalamazoo, who owned also land on section 1, in Antwerp. On the Antwerp road Jesse Abbe was the first to open a tavern. His place was on section 2, and consisted simply of a log cabin, with a couple of sleeping-rooms in the second story and below a kitchen and eating-room. The chief element in his entertainment was a bottle of whisky, and a much-prized element it was, too, for, as a rule, stage-coach passengers became thirsty every time they reached a stopping-place, and the whisky-bottle came in for a large amount of attention. Mr. Abbe kept his tavern until the stage-route was abandoned, and lived there afterwards as a farmer until his death.

A story still current is, that a traveler stopping one evening at Abbe's tavern told the landlord that he wanted to remain all night but had no money. He would promise, however, that if he were kept he would return some day and pay. "Stay?" exclaimed Mr. Abbe, "of course you can stay, and pay me when you can. I've had lots of customers, but I've never turned one away yet." The stranger stopped, and some days afterwards, passing again that way, called at Abbe's and said to the old man, "Do you remember that you kept me one night, and I didn't pay you?" "I don't remember," returned Abbe, "but lots of folks have done that thing here; maybe you did stop." He told the man to pay him what he pleased, and upon receiving his money grew suddenly animated with joy, exclaiming, "Hurrah for an honest man! Such a thing has never happened since I've kept this tavern, and I've trusted hundreds of people. If there was a paper anywhere near here, I'd put it in, sure."

Mr. Abbe was a man much given to eccentricity, although a man of piety, and a citizen whom his fellow-townsmen highly respected. Of the many stories yet told of Mr. Abbe, the following will show how devotedly attached he was to prayer and religious demonstrations.

One day while riding with John Hunt, the latter said to him, "Uncle Abbe, I'll be glad when I can get a comfortable place to sleep and six weeks' provisions ahead." "Neighbor Hunt," responded Mr. Abbe, with much seri-

ous earnestness, "if you don't pray more you'll never have anything of the sort." On another occasion a neighbor came to borrow Abbe's oxen. "Haven't any oxen," said Mr. Abbe, in reply to the application. "Haven't any oxen? Why, there they stand." "Oh!" exclaimed the old man, "those are not my oxen, they belong to the Lord; but I suppose if you want to borrow them the Lord will have no objection." Calling once upon Mr. Hunt, and seeing him at work in a field of fine corn, he cried out, "Neighbor Hunt, this is a fine field of corn, but you don't deserve it, for you don't pray enough." "Very well," replied Hunt, "you pray and I'll hoe, and we'll see who will raise the best corn." He once called upon Jonathan Woodman, and after a brief conversation patted Woodman upon the shoulder, saying, "Jonathan, you are altogether too fine a fellow for the devil to have."

The old gentleman had in his employ a lad who preferred resting to working, and frequently, when he wearied of labor, he would say to Mr. Abbe, "Shan't we go into the grove for a season of prayer?" and old Uncle Abbe, pleased beyond measure to note the pious growth of the youth's mind, would leave off work and pray an hour or so with the boy in the grove. The old man, thoroughly honest and trusting, never dreamed that the young sinner simply imposed upon him, so that he might indulge his lazy disposition. So strong was this desire for prayer upon him, that Mr. Abbe has often been seen by travelers praying upon the open highway, while his horse stood patiently by, waiting his master's readiness to go forward. Wherever he might be going, he would stop his horse when the prayerful spirit overtook him, dismount and pray zealously for half an hour or more. At a revival meeting a girl, happening to be moved by the spirit, arose and cried out, "Oh! I feel as if I were in the devil's iron chest, and that it was locked." "Yes, yes," shouted old Uncle Abbe, jumping suddenly up and gesticulating vigorously; "yes, brethren, she's in the devil's iron chest, and we've all got keys to it." He was devotedly sincere, and was esteemed a truly good man. Late in life he became a confirmed Spiritualist, and died a believer in that doctrine.

One of Mr. Abbe's sons was a settler upon section 12, where he died in 1858. His widow still lives there. Elisha Abbe, another son, lives near the place his father occupied.

Reason Holmes opened a frame tavern on the Territorial road, in section 1, during 1836. He had been living on Genesee Prairie, and buying a piece of land in Antwerp of Cyren Burdick, built a frame house which he called a tavern, and as such kept it a half-dozen years or more. After discontinuing his tavern-stand, Holmes devoted his attention to farming, and lived on his farm in section 1, until he died. His tavern building was the first frame dwelling put up in Antwerp.

As Samuel Millard kept tavern on the same road, just over the line in Kalamazoo County, there were within a stretch of less than three miles three taverns between Abbe's and Dodge's; at Paw Paw there was none.

#### MILLS AND MILLERS.

The pioneer miller of Antwerp was Samuel O. Mills, who in 1836 put up a saw-mill on section 26, through

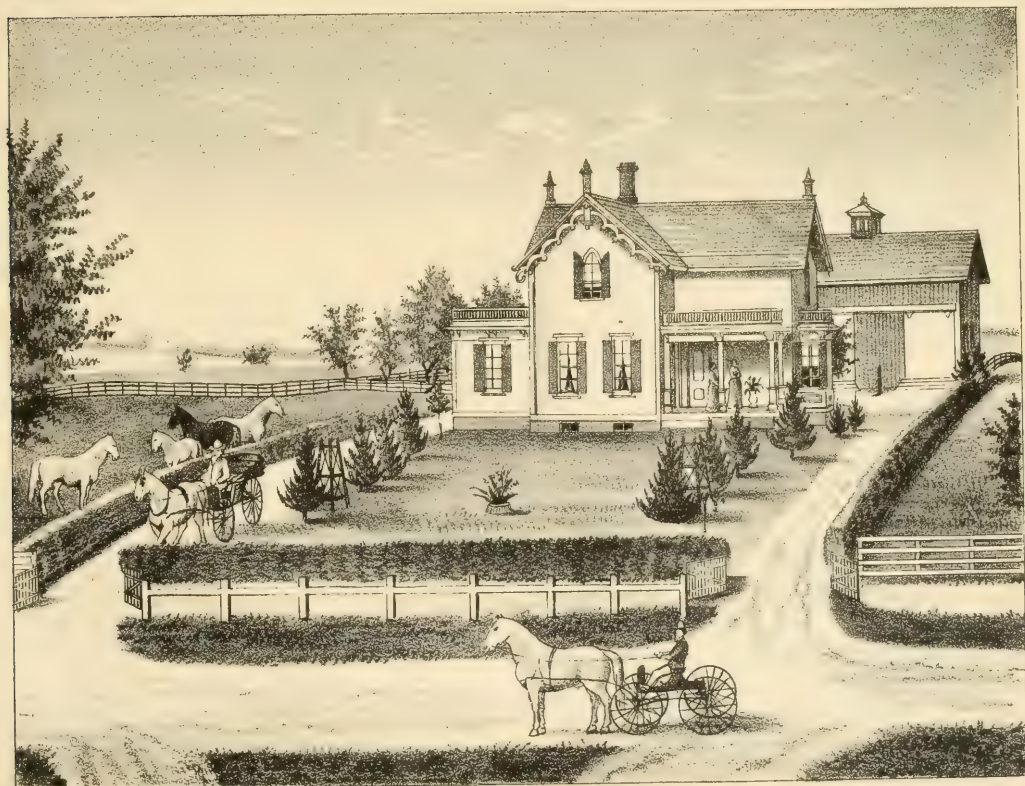


J. R. BANGS.



MRS. J. R. BANGS.

PHOTOGRAPH BY J. H. PRATER



RESIDENCE OF J. R. BANGS, ANTIWERP, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





which flows a tributary of the Paw Paw River. In 1849 Wells sold the mill to Charles Whalley and D. Longcoy, who in 1852 transferred their interest to Ira Carpenter. In 1855, however, Carpenter was compelled to relinquish the property, under an unsatisfied mortgage, to the Samuel Wells estate, represented by Hezekiah Wells. In the same year the Cowgill Brothers bought the mill, and operated it until 1856, when J. S. Cowgill became sole proprietor. In 1865 he tore it down, and in that year, upon about the same site, Cowgill, McKeyes & Co. put up a fine flouring-mill, at a cost of about \$15,000. In 1866 they built near there a saw-mill, which was destroyed by fire. The grist-mill is now carried on by C. D. Lawton.

John Bingham built in 1838, on section 21, the second saw-mill in the township. The site and power are now occupied by George H. Rix's fine grist-mill, containing three run of stones.

In 1858, Solomon and Benjamin Phillips built on the same stream the pioneer grist-mill. Their successors in the ownership of the property have been J. P. Hutton, Josiah Hopkins, and D. C. Coleman, the latter being the present owner.

Powell & Houck built a steam grist- and saw-mill at Lawton. In 1873 both mills were burned. Powell & Co. rebuilt the saw-mill, and are now engaged in the restoration of the grist-mill. A steam saw-mill, built by Dr. John Shanklin and Peter Mott at Lawton in 1853, blew up in 1856. It was rebuilt at once by Dr. Shanklin and N. H. Bitely, and in 1869 was destroyed by fire.

The fine grist-mill near the Paw Paw line, owned by E. O. Briggs and operated by A. Sherman and Briggs, was built by Asa Lamphear in 1869, and in 1872 sold to E. O. Briggs.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION.

Antwerp is one of the seven townships of Van Buren organized under act of the Legislature approved March 11, 1837, and was named by Harmon Van Antwerp (then the most aged inhabitant of the township) after Antwerp in Europe. It contained then an area of six miles square, and has since then had no change in its territory. At the first township-meeting, held on the first Monday of April, 1837, at the house of Philip Williams, Joseph Woodman was chosen Moderator, Samuel O. Wells, John A. Lyon, and John K. Bingham, Inspectors, and Philip Williams, Clerk of the Election. The officers chosen were: Supervisor, Andrew Longstreet; Clerk, John K. Bingham; Assessors, Theophilus Bangs, Reason Holmes, Joel Tomlinson; Commissioners of Highways, Joshua Bangs, Jesse Abbe, Joel Tomlinson; Constable and Collector, John Hill; Directors of the Poor, Jesse Abbe, Patrick Johnson. At a special meeting held May 4, 1837, John Cooper, Reason Holmes, Joseph Woodman, and Philip Williams were chosen Justices of the Peace, and John Cooper, Samuel O. Wells, and John A. Lyon, School Inspectors.

The names of those who have been elected annually from 1838 to 1880 to the offices of supervisor, clerk, treasurer, school inspector, and justice of the peace are given here:

1838.—Supervisor, M. L. Fitch; Clerk, J. K. Bingham; Treasurer, John Hill; School Inspectors, M. L. Fitch, John Hunt, E. H. Niles; Justice of the Peace, Jos. Woodman.

- 1839.—Supervisor, T. Bangs; Clerk, J. K. Bingham; Treasurer, Lyman Taylor; School Inspectors, L. A. Fitch, John Hunt, Reason Holmes; Justice of the Peace, John Cooper.
- 1840.—Supervisor, T. Bangs; Clerk, E. B. Dyckman; Treasurer, J. Tomlinson; School Inspectors, E. B. Dyckman, Joseph Gilman, L. A. Fitch.
- 1841.—Supervisor, T. Bangs; Clerk, E. B. Dyckman; Treasurer, Joshua Bangs; School Inspectors, M. L. Fitch, John Hunt, L. A. Fitch.
- 1842.—Supervisor, Joshua Bangs; Clerk, Silas Breed; Treasurer, I. S. Borden; School Inspectors, Silas Breed, John Hunt, L. A. Fitch; Justice of the Peace, Joseph Gilman.
- 1843.—Supervisor, T. Bangs; Clerk, Silas Breed; Treasurer, I. S. Borden; School Inspectors, John Hunt, M. L. Fitch; Justice of the Peace, William Spencer.
- 1844.—Supervisor, I. S. Borden; Clerk, P. Harwick; Treasurer, Th. Bangs; School Inspectors, John Hunt, M. L. Fitch; Justice of the Peace, L. A. Fitch.
- 1845.—Supervisor, P. Harwick; Clerk, P. Williams; Treasurer, L. Lawrence; School Inspector, M. L. Fitch; Justice of the Peace, C. M. Morrell.
- 1846.—Supervisor, Joshua Bangs; Clerk, P. Williams; Treasurer, L. Lawrence; School Inspector, James Murray; Justice of the Peace, M. L. Fitch.
- 1847.—Supervisor, John Hunt; Clerk, Silas Breed; Treasurer, L. Lawrence; School Inspector, Jos. Gilman; Justice of the Peace, W. B. Spencer.
- 1848.—Supervisor, John Hunt; Clerk, J. A. Sheldon; Treasurer, Hiram Green; School Inspector, L. A. Fitch; Justice of the Peace, A. Longstreet.
- 1849.—Supervisor, P. Harwick; Clerk, J. A. Sheldon; Treasurer, Hiram Green; School Inspector, J. Gilman; Justices of the Peace, S. Breed, H. Lincoln.
- 1850.—Supervisor, L. A. Fitch; Clerk, J. A. Sheldon; Treasurer, A. F. Moore; School Inspector, W. B. Mack; Justice of the Peace, J. Gilman.
- 1851.—Supervisor, H. Harwick; Clerk, J. A. Sheldon; Treasurer, A. F. Moore; School Inspector, J. J. Woodman; Justice of the Peace, H. Green.
- 1852.—Supervisor, D. Van Antwerp; Clerk, W. B. Spencer; Treasurer, A. F. Moore; School Inspector, Morgan Fitch; Justice of the Peace, A. Longstreet.
- 1853.—Supervisor, P. Harwick; Clerk, W. B. Spencer; Treasurer, A. Thompson; School Inspector, O. H. P. Sheldon; Justice of the Peace, S. Longstreet.
- 1854.—Supervisor, John Hunt; Clerk, J. J. Woodman; Treasurer, A. Thompson; School Inspector, M. L. Fitch; Justice of the Peace, W. Fox.
- 1855.—Supervisor, John Smith; Clerk, J. J. Woodman; Treasurer, A. Thompson; School Inspector, O. H. P. Sheldon; Justice of the Peace, H. Green.
- 1856.—Supervisor, John Hunt; Clerk, A. H. Thompson; Treasurer, N. B. McKinney; School Inspector, J. E. Sweet; Justice of the Peace, H. Lincoln.
- 1857.—Supervisor, John Hunt; Clerk, J. J. Woodman; Treasurer, N. B. McKinney; School Inspector, James Murray; Justice of the Peace, S. Longstreet.
- 1858.—Supervisor, N. H. Bitely; Clerk, J. J. Woodman; Treasurer, A. R. Wood; School Inspector, J. E. Sweet; Justice of the Peace, G. P. Smith.
- 1859.—Supervisor, L. A. Fitch; Clerk, J. J. Woodman; Treasurer, H. Cross, Jr.; School Inspector, A. C. Glidden; Justice of the Peace, P. H. Varney.
- 1860.—Supervisor, John Hunt; Clerk, J. J. Woodman; Treasurer, R. S. Griffin; School Inspector, N. H. Bitely; Justice of the Peace, G. R. Chapin.
- 1861.—Supervisor, Henry Fitch; Clerk, A. Flummerfelt; Treasurer, C. G. Harrington; School Inspector, H. H. Miller; Justice of the Peace, S. Longstreet.
- 1862.—Supervisor, L. A. Fitch; Clerk, G. W. Lawton; Treasurer, E. P. Mills; School Inspector, A. C. Glidden; Justice of the Peace, R. S. Armstrong.
- 1863.—Supervisor, O. H. P. Sheldon; Clerk, W. O. Fitch; Treasurer, N. B. McKinney; School Inspector, E. P. Mills; Justice of the Peace, N. B. Howell.

- 1864.—Supervisor, L. A. Fitch; Clerk, W. O. Fitch; Treasurer, N. B. McKinney; School Inspector, A. C. Glidden; Justice of the Peace, O. H. P. Sheldon.
- 1865.—Supervisor, Orrin Buck; Clerk, E. S. Dunham; Treasurer, P. I. Bragg; School Inspector, C. D. Van Vechten; Justice of the Peace, S. Longstreet.
- 1866.—Supervisor, J. J. Woodman; Clerk, L. E. Fitch; Treasurer, N. B. Rowe; School Inspector, I. M. Hayden; Justice of the Peace, C. Durkee.
- 1867.—Supervisor, A. C. Glidden; Clerk, Charles Kelsey; Treasurer, N. B. Rowe; School Inspector, J. H. Breed; Justice of the Peace, N. B. Howell.
- 1868.—Supervisor, N. B. McKinney; Clerk, Charles Munger; Treasurer, L. C. Fitch; School Inspector, W. B. Gorham; Justice of the Peace, O. H. P. Sheldon.
- 1869.—Supervisor, John Ihling; Clerk, Charles Munger; Treasurer, Charles Kelsey; School Inspector, E. S. Dunham; Justice of the Peace, J. L. Parker.
- 1870.—Supervisor, John Ihling; Clerk, Charles Munger; Treasurer, J. Smolk; School Inspector, J. Kellard; Justice of the Peace, C. M. Morrill.
- 1871.—Supervisor, N. B. McKinney; Clerk, Charles Munger; Treasurer, J. Smolk; School Inspector, F. J. Cowgill; Justice of the Peace, L. G. Hunt.
- 1872.—Supervisor, J. McKeyes; Clerk, C. L. Eaton; Treasurer, N. H. Bangs; School Inspector, C. H. Fisher; Justice of the Peace, A. C. Glidden.
- 1873.—Supervisor, L. A. Fitch; Clerk, M. C. Joiner; Treasurer, F. L. Churchill; School Inspector, W. B. Gorham; Justice of the Peace, A. C. Glidden.
- 1874.—Supervisor, John Smith; Clerk, L. C. Fitch; Treasurer, F. L. Churchill; School Inspector, M. H. Cross; Justice of the Peace, C. M. Morrill.
- 1875.—Supervisor, F. B. Adams; Clerk, C. S. Adams; Treasurer, E. Durkee; School Inspector, B. V. Love; Justice of the Peace, N. B. Howell.
- 1876.—Supervisor, J. McKeyes; Clerk, J. A. Gates; Treasurer, J. W. Johnson; School Inspector, F. Rice; Justice of the Peace, L. Bathrick.
- 1877.—Supervisor, J. McKeyes; Clerk, J. A. Gates; Treasurer, F. B. Adams; School Inspector, O. J. Graves; Justice of the Peace, I. M. Hayden.
- 1878.—Supervisor, J. McKeyes; Clerk, J. A. Gates; Treasurer, J. S. Buck; School Inspector, O. J. Graves; Justice of the Peace, C. M. Morrill.
- 1879.—Supervisor, J. McKeyes; Clerk, C. S. Adams; Treasurer, D. D. Nobles; School Inspector, E. W. Green; Justice of the Peace, L. C. Fitch.

The township board for 1879 was composed of Juan McKeyes, C. S. Adams, I. M. Hayden, and Lysander Bathrick. The school inspectors were E. W. Green, C. H. Lawton, and C. S. Adams. The justices of the peace were L. Bathrick, I. M. Hayden, C. M. Morrill, L. C. Fitch.

#### LAWTON VILLAGE.

In 1849, Nathan Lawton, of Watertown, N. Y., owned the land upon which the business portion of Lawton is now located, and when the place was selected for a station on the Michigan Central Railroad, Mr. Lawton laid out a town there. When in 1851 a post-office was about to be established there, Col. Andrew Longstreet, upon an application to that end, christened it Lawton, in honor of its proprietor. Mr. Lawton had previously donated ten acres of land for railway-depot buildings, which were erected in 1848. The station was known as Paw Paw, and sometimes called South Paw Paw, but after the creation of the post-office, Lawton was substituted, for station and town. Mr. Lawton, for whom the place was named, was at no time a resident of Michigan, although two of his sons—George W. and

Charles D.—have been citizens of Lawton village for many years.

When the Michigan Central Railroad was being constructed at the point now called Lawton, then a wilderness of bramble-bushes, Henry McNeil opened a store in a log cabin on the west side of what is now Main Street, near the line of the road. McNeil supplied the railway laborers with store goods, but dealt chiefly in whisky, of which the railroad hands consumed large quantities. He made considerable money at keeping store in Lawton, and removed to Minnesota. Andrew Longstreet, who had been living near the village on a farm, moved into it shortly after McNeil opened his store, and took possession of an unoccupied railroad laborer's shanty that stood on the corner now occupied by Ford & Dalton's store. Mr. Longstreet also started a shoe-shop on the west side of the street, opposite his house. While McNeil was keeping store there, Gilbert Johnson, of Paw Paw, opened a store near McNeil's, and called it "The Farmers' Headquarters." From that out the village began to grow.

Horace Sebring put up a hotel where the Robinson House now stands, but soon sold out to R. S. Armstrong, who died in the hotel in 1863. Hight & Smith succeeded as landlords, and sold out in 1866 to George W. Robinson & Brother, who in two weeks after coming into possession were burned out. They at once rebuilt the present Robinson House, of which George W. Robinson is landlord.

Next to Johnson in the order of succession as to store-keepers were John McKinney, William Selleck, Livingston McNeil, — Leonard, Fairbanks & S. Kiver, W. H. Smith, George P. Smith, Smith & Ingalls, Dr. Root, William & Charles Munger, N. B. McKinney, and others. Although it grew, Lawton grew slowly in its infancy, and in 1854, when Mr. Nathan Bitely located in the village, it contained Sebring's Hotel, two stores, a saw-mill, two or three frame residences, and a half-dozen log cabins. After that, however, its progress was more rapid.

With the establishment of the works of the Michigan Central Iron Company, in 1867, Lawton took a decided step forward in respect to both business and population, and during the iron company's existence the town reached a population of 2000. When the company ceased operations at Lawton, in 1875, the village lost many of its inhabitants, and numbers now about 800. A union school house erected at this place in 1867, at a cost of \$10,000, is a feature of considerable local pride. It is a handsome and commodious brick structure, contains four departments, including a high school, and has an average attendance of 219 pupils.

The mercantile trade of the town is represented by Ford & Dalton's general store, B. J. Desenberg and J. S. Cowgill's grocery-stores, Kinney, Adams & Co. and C. S. Adams' hardware-stores, Juan McKeyes and J. R. Doolittle's drug-stores, and L. Stern & Co.'s dry-goods store. The village manufactories are noticed elsewhere.

The Lawton post-office was established in 1851, and Andrew Longstreet appointed postmaster. His successors in the office were Henry McNeil, Livingston McNeil, A. H. Thompson, Richard Finley, and N. B. McKinney. Col. Longstreet, who had been absent from Lawton some



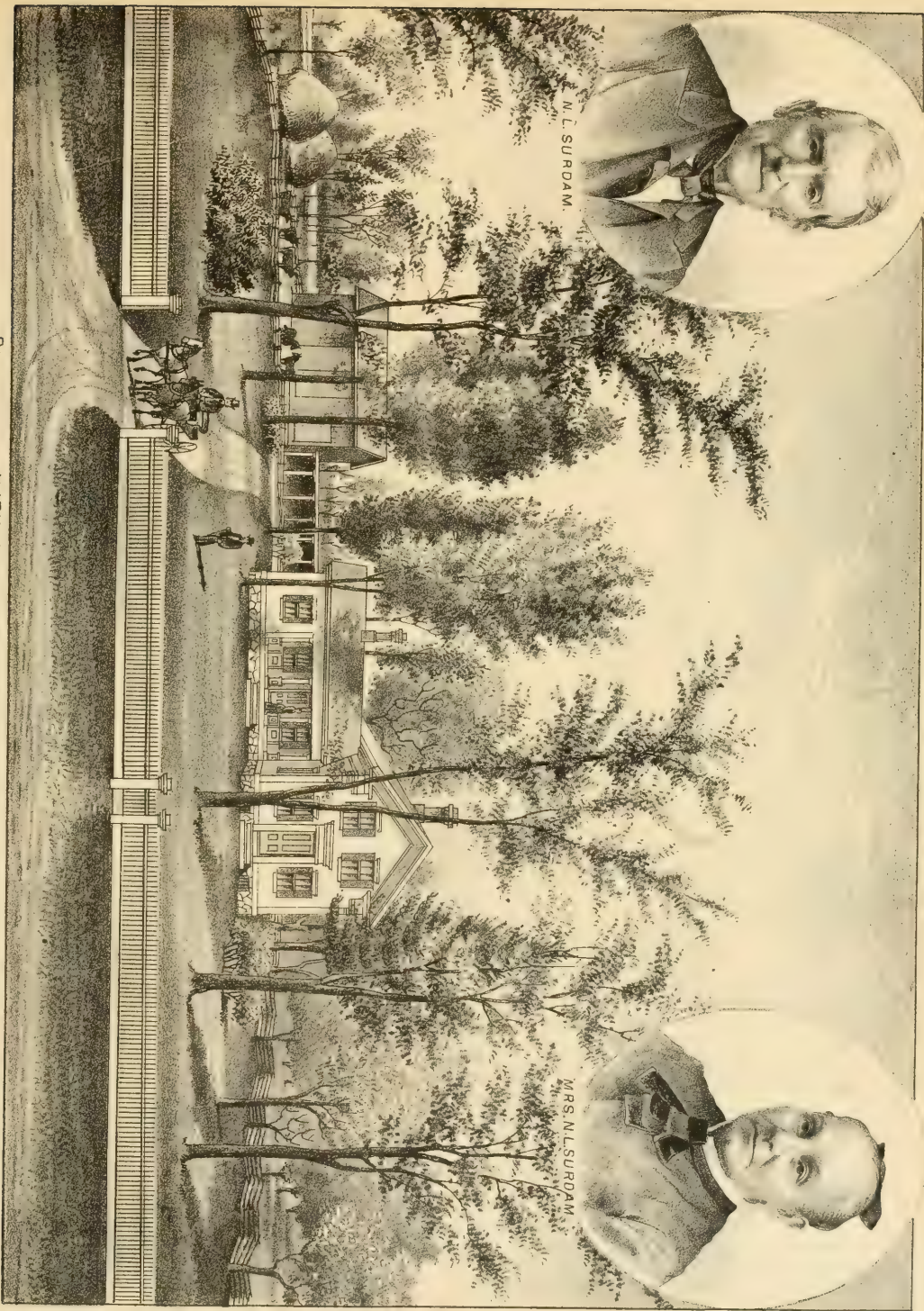
M. L. SURDAM.



MRS. N. L. SURDAM.



RESIDENCE OF NATHANIEL L. SURDAM, ANTWERP Twp, VAN BUREN Co., Mich.





years, was reappointed shortly after his return, and succeeded Mr. McKinney. Longstreet continued in the office until his death, in 1871, when he was succeeded by William H. Smith, who was succeeded, in 1879, by Otis Rider, the present incumbent.

*Lawton Village Incorporation.*—Oct. 15, 1858, the Board of Supervisors of Van Buren County passed a resolution incorporating the village of Lawton, and included within the village limits the following territory: the north half of the southeast quarter and the northeast quarter of section 32, together with the following-described parcels of land, to wit: commencing on the south side of the Michigan Central Railroad, where the quarter-line running north and south through section 32 crosses said railroad, and running south on said quarter-line twenty rods; thence west thirty-six rods and nine feet to the south line of the Michigan Central Railroad; thence in a northeasterly direction along the south line of said road to the place of beginning. Also all that part of the southwest quarter of the southeast quarter of section 29 known as Baker's and Thompson's addition, and the west half of the west half of the northwest quarter of section 33. Also a piece of land thirty rods in width, taken from the east side of the northwest quarter of section 32, extending from the Michigan Central to the north line of said section, and a piece thirty rods wide east and west and fifty rods long north and south, in the southeast corner of the southeast quarter of the southwest quarter of section 29.

The first election was ordered to be held in the village school-house on the first Saturday in December, and George P. Smith, John McKinney, and Calvin Durkee were appointed inspectors of said election.

At the first election, held Dec. 4, 1858, the aggregate number of votes cast reached 75. A full list of the persons annually chosen since 1858 to be president, clerk, treasurer, and trustees is given below, viz.:

- 1858.—President, Calvin Durkee; Clerk, N. B. McKinney; Treasurer, A. H. Thompson; Trustees, N. H. Bitley, Henry D. Lesure, Samuel Longstreet, John Munson, Platt Nims, James W. Wager.
- 1859.—President, Calvin Durkee; Clerk, N. B. McKinney; Treasurer, M. H. Smith; Trustees, James W. Wager, Jesse S. Smith, John Munson, N. H. Bitley, Samuel Longstreet, Thomas D. Ward.
- 1860.—President, Samuel Longstreet; Clerk, N. B. McKinney; Treasurer, G. D. Johnson; Trustees, N. H. Bitley, G. P. McNeil, Jesse S. Smith, C. P. Harrington, C. H. Maxwell, George P. Smith.
- 1861.—President, Andrew Longstreet; Clerk, R. H. Finley; Treasurer, J. S. Smith; Trustees, William Fairbanks, James W. Wager, M. H. Smith, E. B. Aldrich, H. V. Harwick, N. H. Bitley.
- 1862.—President, J. S. Smith; Clerk, R. H. Finley; Treasurer, B. F. Engle; Trustees, Thomas Scott, George W. Lawton, H. D. Lesure, George H. Schriver, Harlow Robinson, George W. Dye.
- 1863-64. —No record.
- 1865.—President, N. B. McKinney; Clerk, George P. Smith; Treasurer, Edward Root; Trustees, Andrew Longstreet, William H. Smith, N. B. Rowe, Charles D. Lawton, H. V. Harwick, Lucius K. Robinson.
- 1866.—President, William H. Smith; Clerk, Edwin S. Dunham; Treasurer, William J. McKinney; Trustees, H. V. Harwick, N. B. Rowe, C. D. Lawton, Edward Root, E. D. Simmons, A. W. Townsend.

- 1867.—President, William H. Smith; Clerk, E. S. Dunham; Treasurer, N. B. McKinney; Trustees, C. B. Lawton, N. B. Rowe, William Manger, J. L. Parker, M. H. Smith, S. C. Day.
- 1868.—President, Henry Ford; Clerk, William J. McKinney; Treasurer, Andrew Longstreet; Trustees, F. B. Adams, Calvin Durkee, L. T. Moore, Edwin A. Smith, Leonard Waldron, Charles M. Morrill.
- 1869.—President, Henry Ford; Recorder, James Atwell; Treasurer, Andrew Longstreet; Trustees (for one year), Stephen Jones, Orrin Robinson, James H. Conklin (for two years), David W. Powell, John W. Morrill, G. D. Johnson.
- 1870.—N. B. McKinney; Recorder, James L. Parker; Treasurer, A. L. McElheney; Trustees, George W. Robinson, Robert Lamoreaux, and Orrin Robinson.
- 1871.—President, D. W. Powell; Recorder, J. D. Monroe; Treasurer, L. G. Halsted; Trustees, F. B. Adams, G. B. Hill, T. J. McKinney.
- 1872.—President, Robert Lamoreaux; Recorder, Charles M. Morrill; Treasurer, R. S. Griffin; Trustees, Dudley Thornton, L. L. Halsted, Lucius Baker.
- 1873.—President, N. H. Bitley; Recorder, Charles M. Morrill; Treasurer, James S. Cowgill; Trustees, M. H. Smith, L. L. Halsted, Charles D. Lawton.
- 1874.—President, N. H. Bitley; Recorder, George P. Smith; Treasurer, James S. Cowgill; Trustees, John Jefferson, John Pelton, George W. Robinson.
- 1875.—President, L. L. Halsted; Recorder, C. S. Adams; Treasurer, N. B. McKinney; Trustees, Henry Stearns, N. B. Rowe, C. D. Lawton.
- 1876.—President, Joseph C. Ford; Recorder, C. S. Adams; Treasurer, B. J. Dusenbury; Trustees, Robert Lamoreaux, Juan McKeyes, J. W. Johnson.
- 1877.—President, J. C. Ford; Recorder, C. S. Adams; Treasurer, Henry Stearns; Trustees, W. W. Robbins, C. D. Lawton, G. W. Robinson.
- 1878.—President, J. C. Ford; Recorder, C. S. Adams; Treasurer, M. H. Smith; Trustees, H. C. Watson, C. G. Harrington, Lucius Baker.
- 1879.—President, Henry Ford; Recorder, J. W. Johnson; Treasurer, Myron H. Smith; Trustees, Henry Stearns, A. B. Jones, Louis Waldorff.

*Lawton Manufactures.*—Besides the mill interest at Lawton, there is the extensive cooper-shop of John Mayhard, in which 10 men are employed in making barrels; a plow-point factory, carried on by J. L. Wilcox; and the fanning-mill works of Smith & Walker. This latter establishment was founded in 1861, at Lawton, by Bonstead & Smith, and in 1862 that firm was succeeded by W. H. Smith, who in 1870 took in Mr. Walker as a partner. From 10 to 15 men are employed, and from 500 to 700 fanning-mills are manufactured annually, beside a considerable number of fruit-boxes and meat-saws.

Ledyard & Aldrich were engaged at Lawton from 1856 to 1873 in the manufacture of fanning-mills, of which they produced about 300 yearly.

*Michigan Central Iron Company.*—The works of the Michigan Central Iron Company at Lawton, although temporarily abandoned, resounded a few years ago with the hum of busy industry, and entered conspicuously into the elements of Lawton's then prosperous progress. During the nearly eight years' continuous existence of its active history the company contributed largely to the business and population of Lawton, and the discontinuance of its works was a severe check to the prosperity of the village.

As to the origin of the enterprise, the following narration will be found of interest. Early in the year 1867, Maj. Joseph Walker while passing westward, stopped at Lawton to visit C. D. and George W. Lawton, and incidentally



there arose a discussion touching the fact that Lawton ought, by reason of the presence near there of excellent timber-land, to be a good manufacturing point, and beyond that a peat-bed on the McKinney farm promised to prolong the supply of fuel even when the timber should be exhausted. This peat-bed had been purchased by Gen. Q. A. Gillmore, of the United States army, with a view doubtless to probabilities similar to those contemplated by Walker and the Lawtons.

The discussion referred to, speedily developed into an earnest interest in the subject, and when Walker left, it was with the understanding that the matter would not be allowed to rest there. Walker happening soon to call on Maj. T. D. Brooks, engaged in mining iron in the Lake Superior country, mentioned the Lawton subject to him, and was told that the most profitable project to be suggested in that connection was the manufacture of iron. Not only that, but he promised to take an interest in the business, and the result of the matter was that Walker, Brooks, and the Lawtons decided to undertake the organization of a company to make iron at Lawton. Walker accordingly proceeded eastward and interested Gen. Gillmore and other army officers so far that in the same year (1867) the Michigan Central Iron Company was organized, with a capital of \$150,000. Gen. Gillmore was chosen president, and Samuel Cantrell treasurer, while among the stockholders were Gens. Grant, Baruard, Porter, and others in the military service,—Gen. Grant being still one of the stockholders to the extent of \$5000. About 1500 acres of timber-land besides Gillmore's peat-bed were bought by the company, works were erected at Lawton, extensive docks constructed at Michigan City, and the business so pushed forward that on Dec. 24, 1867, the works were started, under the management of Henry Ford, a practical iron manufacturer. The ore, obtained at Lake Superior region, was landed on the company's docks at Michigan City, and transported over the Michigan Central Railroad to the works. About 150 hands were employed at the works and in clearing land, and for nearly eight years the enterprise was industriously and profitably maintained.

In April, 1875, however, depression in the iron trade led to what was intended to be only a temporary cessation of manufacture, but which has proved to be a suspension to this time. The company is, however, intact as an organization, and latterly there has been earnest talk among the directors looking to an early resumption of the business. Gen. Gillmore is still the president, and D. Van Nostrand secretary of the company. The property owned by the corporation is a valuable one, and includes the Lawton works, 2500 acres of land, and 600 feet of dock at Michigan City.

*The Lawton Foundry.*—Messrs. Wright & Agnew put up at Lawton in 1870 a foundry of considerable size, and in that year began the manufacture of castings, school furniture, etc., and employed from 10 to 15 men. They sold out in 1872 to Hill, Elmore & Co., who ceased operations in 1875. Since that time the foundry has been idle, except upon periodical occasions of no particular business moment.

*Lawton Railroad Station.*—The following table shows

the shipments (by car-loads) at Lawton Station, of flour, grain, lumber, and live-stock for the six months ending Dec. 1, 1879:

Month.	Flour.	Grain.	Lumber.	Live-Stock.
June.....	19	8	14	1
July.....	11	5	7	1
August.....	9	44	2	10
September.....	29	48	5	25
October.....	22	41	3	6
November.....	9	14	2	8
Total.....	99	160	33	51

*Lawton Lodge, No. 216, F. and A. M.*, was organized Jan. 10, 1867, with Grove C. Love as Master, H. F. Robinson as Senior Warden, and John Ihling as Junior Warden.

The Masters since the organization have been G. C. Love, H. Jackson, Charles Munger, John Ihling, George D. Boies, Frank B. Adams, Henry Ford, and H. C. Watson.

The officers Jan. 1, 1880, were H. C. Watson, W. M.; Henry Ford, S. W.; Elijah Warner, J. W.; J. W. Johnson, Sec.; M. H. Smith, Treas.; C. S. Adams, S. D.; Orrin D. White, J. D.; James Babcock, Tiler. The lodge has now a membership of 60, and is in a flourishing condition. Regular sessions are held in Masonic Hall, Lawton.

*Lawton Lodge, No. 83, I. O. O. F.*, was organized in 1861, and has now a membership of 28, although it had in 1870 100 members. The officers are W. D. Kinney, N. G.; C. G. Harrington, V. G.; D. W. Powell, Sec.; J. L. Wilson, Treas. Sessions are held in the I. O. O. F. building, Lawton.

*Monitor Encampment, No. 16, I. O. O. F.*, domiciled in the I. O. O. F. building at Lawton, was organized in 1864. The present membership is 16, and the list of officers as follows: T. D. Ward, C. P.; W. D. Kinney, S. W.; C. G. Harrington, J. W.; R. N. Still, H. P.; D. W. Powell, Scribe; N. V. Finch, Treas.

*Court Van Buren, No. 6, Ancient Order of Foresters*, was organized Nov. 3, 1878, with a membership of 19. D. W. Powell was chosen C. R.; Juan McKeyes, V. C. R.; and J. W. Johnson, Rec. Sec. The court has now a membership of 26, and is officered as follows: J. Gillespie, C. R.; N. V. Finch, V. C. R.; J. W. Johnson, Rec. Sec.; M. H. Smith, Treas.; H. B. Janes, S. W.; J. D. Tillou, J. W.; Robert Janes, S. B.; B. J. Desenberg, J. B. The regular meetings are held in Masonic Hall every Tuesday evening.

#### MATTAWAN VILLAGE.

While the Michigan Central Railway was in course of construction, Nathaniel Cheseboro, the attorney for the railway company, bought 40 acres of land on a portion of the site of the village of Mattawan, laid out a town, and called it Mattawan, after a village on the Hudson River in New York.

In 1848, Charles W. Scott made material additions to the plat, and really did all the work towards pushing the town to the front. He donated land to the railway company for depot purposes, conditioned that Mattawan should be made a regular stopping-place, but as the company ignored that condition subsequently, he sought to recover pay for the land, but without success. Elias Kinney and D. B. Webster made additions to Mattawan, and the march of enterprise set in as if fruitful results were destined to follow.



MR. JASON A. SHELDON.



MRS. JASON A. SHELDON.

### JASON A. SHELDON.

The gentleman whose name heads this sketch is worthy of conspicuous mention. He was born April 15, 1799, in Stephentown, Rensselaer Co., N. Y., and is one of a family of ten children. His father, Benjamin, was born in Dutchess Co., N. Y.; his mother, Elizabeth Gardner, was born in Newport, R. I., and both were of English descent. Jason's father was a Baptist minister. His grandfather was one of the first settlers of Stephentown township. Benjamin remained there until 1816, when the family moved to Western New York, and settled in what was called "the Genesee Country," latterly known as Orleans County, where Benjamin died in August, 1832. When about fifteen years of age Jason commenced assisting on the farm, and working at anything else he could find to do, until 1820, when he hired out on the Erie Canal, under the supervision of Major Adams, discharging each and every duty faithfully. He soon became foreman, which position he held three years. June 1, 1823, being then twenty-four years of age, he married Miss Sabrina M. Glidden, in the town of Clarendon, Orleans Co., N. Y. Her parents were natives of the Green Mountain State, where she was born June 4, 1799. To this marriage were born six children,—five sons and one daughter, viz.: Oliver Hazard Perry Sheldon, born Dec. 12, 1824, now married and living in Paw Paw; Ellen Adelia, born Oct. 10, 1826, died when two years of age; Asa Glidden, born Sept. 15, 1828, died June 15, 1857, in his twenty-ninth year; William S., born Nov. 22, 1830, now living in Antwerp township; Job G., born May 1, 1833, lives in Prairie Ronde, Kalamazoo Co.; Benjamin Clark, born Sept. 7, 1835, lives on part of the old homestead.

After leaving the canal Mr. Sheldon chose farming as his vocation, improving some wild land which he had previously purchased. In 1845 he sold his

farm, and with his family came to Michigan, settling in Antwerp township, on section 7, which is one mile east of Paw Paw village. His farm at first only contained one hundred and twenty acres, to which he afterwards added one hundred and seventy-five acres, improving his farm until 1854, when he sold a part of it to Mr. Chapin, dividing the remainder between his children. Since then he has lived on the interest of his money. There was no sudden accession of wealth, but slowly the work was carried forward year by year amid the severest hardships, until, in the lapse of time, ease and comfort have been reached. In January, 1879, Mr. Sheldon was bereft of his loving and faithful companion, who is kindly remembered by many friends.

In politics he is a Republican, though in early days a Democrat, representing his party in New York as supervisor for several years, also as justice of the peace. He represented his party in Michigan as judge of the County Court for one term, when the Court was changed to Circuit Court. He has also been town clerk and justice in Antwerp four years. He had only ordinary educational advantages, never attending any but a common school; yet, by making good use of the advantages within his reach, he has acquired a practical knowledge sufficient to enable him to do any ordinary business. Himself and wife were both members of the Free-Will Baptist Church since 1833, both joining at the same time.

Mr. Sheldon and his brother, William, who resides with him, are the only ones left of their father's once unbroken and happy family. Mr. Sheldon's mother died at her old home in New York, March, 1845, at the good old age of eighty-four; and when the lamp went out, they laid her in a sunny nook, where the marble marks her quiet resting-place.





The first house of any importance built on the village-site was a grocery-store, put up in 1850 by one John Cronkhite. He sold the place to Rev. J. J. Bliss, a Canadian, who came along that year, and making his residence on the ground-floor, opened a store in the second story. This building occupied the corner upon which the Front Street brick block stands. It is now standing upon the same lot as "Charity Hall." Bliss built also the warehouse near the railway, now owned by Morgan L. Fitch. He was a railway switch-man and preacher, as well as a trader, and divided his time between selling goods and preaching, first the Protestant Methodist and afterwards the Free-Will Baptist doctrine. Bliss sold his business to Henry Fitch, whose successors were Morgan L. Fitch and C. D. Van Vechten.

There was no hotel in the village until 1855, when J. F. Parmenter built the Antwerp House, on Front Street. George Conklin put in a new front and called it the Willard House. He was the landlord when the building was burned, in 1873. Henry Durkee built a hotel on the corner, near the present post-office, and called it the Union House. It was burned in 1866, and then Durkee put up the hotel now kept by Chauncey Bonfoey,—the only one in the village at present.

A post-office was established at Mattawan in 1850, when Rev. J. J. Bliss was appointed postmaster. Postmaster Bliss' duties were not very heavy, nor was his mail voluminous, since he found that a cigar-box was quite large enough to serve him as a receptacle for all the letters sent to the office. Mr. Bliss' successors in the office to the present have been John Smolk, James Murray, Raper Ward, Abel Brown, L. C. Fitch, S. S. Rascoe, and Isaac Stewart.

About 1869, Mattawan enjoyed an era of considerable prosperity and carried on an extensive business as a shipping-point for great quantities of lumber, which were sent in from mills north of the place. The population numbered at that time about 800, and the little town was flushed with signs of material prosperity. The completion of the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad, however, soon diverted the lumber shipments elsewhere, and Mattawan suffered a reaction. The village population is now (Jan. 1, 1880) about 400. The chief business interests are represented by Morgan L. Fitch (warehouse), E. Moore (general store), George H. Goodrich (hardware), and the grocery-stores of Stewart & Co. and L. C. Fitch.

*Mattawan Lodge, No. 268, F. and A. M.*, was organized Jan. 13, 1870, with Thomas H. Briggs as W. M., C. D. Van Vechten as S. W., and Clinton Fitch as J. W. The lodge has now a membership of 50, and is officered as follows: James McCarter, W. M.; D. W. Miller, S. W.; C. Bonfoi, J. W.; Isaac Birdsall, Treas.; C. O. Nash, Sec.; John Eves, S. D.; George Tillou, J. D.; James Day, Tiler.

#### SCHOOLS OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The first school-teacher in Antwerp was Ann, daughter of Daniel Van Antwerp, and the first school-house the log cabin of Joshua Bangs, on section 7, in the second story of which, in 1837, Miss Van Antwerp taught a subscription

school one term, and had perhaps a dozen scholars. Miss Van Antwerp married P. N. Smith, and now lives in the township, on section 9. After that first season a slab school-house was built, and did duty for some time near where the fine school-house on section 7 now stands. Lawton and Mattawan have each an excellent graded school and a handsome brick school-house, the one at Lawton being one of the best in the county.

Following is a statement of the condition of the schools of Antwerp, as per school report for the year 1879: Whole number of districts, 9 (of which 2 are fractional); total enrollment of children, 618; total average attendance, 374; whole number of teachers employed, 20; amount paid for teachers' wages, \$2331; value of school property, \$16,600. (District No. 4 is not included, because not reported.)

The school directors of the several districts at the date of the report were as follows: District No. 1, E. C. Towers; No. 2, Daniel Morrison; No. 3, Charles Race; No. 4, Reuben Clum; No. 5, J. Sheldon; No. 6, A. Harwick; No. 7, C. R. Williams; No. 8, M. H. Smith; No. 9, R. W. Brown.

The township was divided into four school districts May 4, 1837, and on July 25th of the same year two additional districts were formed. Feb. 26, 1839, primary-school money to the amount of \$14.08 was received from the Van Buren County treasurer and apportioned: \$8.32 to District No. 5, and \$5.76 to District No. 6.

The annual report of the board of school inspectors, made March 11, 1839, showed that there were six districts, that only two reported, and that the books in use were Cobb's "Elementary Spelling-Book," "First-Class Book," "Smith's Grammar," "Adams' Arithmetic," "English Reader," and "Olney's Geography." The first record of the selection of the school-teachers appears under date Dec. 5, 1843, when James Duncan, W. B. Mack, and Joseph Gilman were examined and approved as teachers.

Annual reports of the schools were made to the school inspectors regularly, but from 1838 to 1844 no complete report from all the school districts was received in any year, and the actual condition of the schools during that period cannot, therefore, be ascertained.

#### CHURCHES.

*The First Methodist Episcopal Church of Lawton* is the pioneer religious organization of the town, and dates the period of the formation of its first class back to 1855. There were but 8 members in that class, but it grew rapidly, however, and flourished as the years passed on until in 1869 the church membership numbered 215. The first pastor was Rev. S. Simmons, and the first class-leader Harvey Barker, of Porter, who was also a local preacher, and exceedingly zealous in behalf of the church. In 1860 the church was in charge of Rev. T. T. George, and included the classes of Lawton, Porter, Centre, the "Valley" class, and those of Marcellus and South Porter. Mattawan was afterwards included and set off in 1867. In 1860, Andrew Longstreet was leader of the Lawton class, which then included among its members Jason Atwell, William Powell, Calvin Durkee, William L. Barker, and Chauncey Hollister.

The church worshiped in the Lawton school-house until 1862, when the church edifice now in use was erected. It is a commodious frame structure, with seating capacity for 300 people. The present pastor is Rev. T. T. George. The leaders of the Lawton class to the present time have been Harvey Barker, Andrew Longstreet, William Barker, Henry Ford, James Wager, T. D. Ward, James Drowley, William Powell, William Harper, Walter Fredenburg. The officers of the church at present are: Trustees, W. S. Harper, T. D. Ward, Jason Atwell, Henry Ford, James Drowley, George Worden, and Harvey Harper. The stewards are T. D. Ward, W. S. Harper, Jason Atwell, and James Drowley. The class-leaders are William S. Harper and Walter Fredenburg. The recording steward is T. D. Ward. The Sabbath-school numbers about 100 pupils, and is in charge of Nathaniel Atwood (superintendent) and 10 teachers.

*The First Baptist Church of Lawton* was organized Nov. 11, 1865, in the Lawton school-house, by Rev. E. S. Dunham. Twelve members were on that occasion received into the church, to wit: E. S. Dunham and wife, Thomas Barker and wife, M. D. Williams and wife, John Stearns and wife, Jonathan Baughman and wife, Cynthia Smith, Helen M. Williams. Upon being organized, the church was attached to the Kalamazoo River Association. Rev. Mr. Dunham preached about a year, and was succeeded by Rev. Hezekiah West. Since Mr. West's time the church has been compelled to depend upon supplies. The Rev. Mr. Dunham, now living in Lawton, has been connected with the church since its organization, and has from time to time occupied the pulpit, serving altogether about five years. Mr. Dunham has been an active minister in the Baptist Church in Michigan since 1849, and has only latterly retired from the calling. The church membership is now about 60, and although dependence has long been upon supplies, preaching has always been enjoyed at least once each Sabbath. The Sabbath-school is in a flourishing condition, with an average attendance of 70, G. N. Birdsall being the superintendent. The church edifice now used was built in 1867. The officers of the church are Thomas Barker, Deacon; G. N. Birdsall, Clerk. Mr. Barker has been a deacon since the date of organization.

*First Presbyterian Church.*—Dec. 15, 1868, Rev. Calvin Clark, a Presbyterian missionary, assisted by Revs. E. F. Toof and William Fuller, organized the First Presbyterian Church of Lawton, at a meeting held in the Methodist Episcopal church of that village. Their first meeting was held in the morning, when 12 members were enrolled, to wit: Daniel Van Antwerp and wife, Harriet Van Antwerp, W. A. Twichell and wife, Theodore Perry and wife, R. S. Griffin and wife, O. G. Badian and wife, and Mrs. Solomon Phillips. At an evening meeting on the same day Mrs. Jeannette Morrill, Mrs. Mary Abbott, James M. Wells, and Geo. W. Lawton and wife were added to the membership. The ceremony of organization closed with the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, administered by Rev. Calvin Clark. Rev. John Kelland was called to be the first minister, and for some time thereafter the congregation grew in strength, but when the Iron Company's works discontinued operations many of the members (who were

employees of the company) moved from the village, and of course their withdrawal checked the church's progress. The organization has, however, prospered fairly, and includes at present a membership of 30. During Mr. Kelland's time services were held twice each Sunday, while the sessions of the Sabbath-school were held each Sabbath. Preaching is now enjoyed, however, but once a month, Rev. Theodore Marsh, of Paw Paw, supplying the pulpit. The society has never owned a church edifice. A public hall served at first, and later a building purchased by a few members of the society and converted into a chapel was and is still used, in common with members of the Protestant Episcopal faith. The church trustees are Freeman Rice and C. M. Morrill.

A *Protestant Episcopal Church* was organized several years ago in Lawton, but the membership was small, and the organization was discontinued after a brief season. Episcopalians in Lawton have, however, had periodical religious meetings in the village, and have managed to have occasional preaching. Rev. George P. Shetky, of Paw Paw, supplies them with preaching at present, and holds services once every three weeks in the Presbyterian chapel at Lawton.

*First Methodist Episcopal Church of Mattawan.*—In the absence of the early records of this church the date of the organization of the Mattawan class can only be vaguely given as about 1854. The place of the organization can, however, be stated as the Fitch school-house, north of Mattawan, and the name of the first pastor as Rev. Mr. Jones. Worship was held at the Fitch school-house two years, when the place of meetings was transferred to Mattawan. At that time the class was attached to the Lawton Church, and among its members were Lyman Lawrence and wife, Charles Scott and wife, Jacob Ward and wife, — Cobb, James Murray and wife, Raper Ward and wife, Mrs. Merritt Gates, and — Green. In 1866 the present church edifice was erected, and in 1867 the class was set off from the Lawton circuit. The charge of which Mattawan is a part includes, besides that class, the classes of Almena and West Oshtemo, and has a membership of 117. The class-leader at Mattawan is Elbridge Reed; the pastor is Rev. S. C. Woodward; the trustees, Bryan Stainton, E. B. Wright, David Brown, Philo Reed, Joseph B. Ford, Truman Bailey, and S. C. Hiscock; the stewards are W. S. Plumb, Elbridge Reed, and Bryan Stanton. Church services, as well as Sabbath-school sessions, are held every Sunday.

*First Congregational Church of Mattawan.*—At a church council held July 2, 1867, at the house of J. J. Johnson, for the purpose of organizing a Congregational Church in Mattawan, there were present Rev. Anderson, of Augusta; Rev. E. Strickland, of Dowagiac; Rev. E. Cleveland, of Lawrence; Rev. E. Hastings, of Paw Paw; and Rev. W. H. Hubbard, of Schoolcraft. The church was organized, and the following members received: J. J. Johnson and wife, W. O. Elmore and wife, Charles Kelsey and wife, Josiah Hopkins and wife, Luther J. Hopkins, Wm. Ward and wife, Milo Ward, Samuel Ward, O. P. Morton and wife, S. N. Mygatt, Louis Hitchcock, A. Kellogg, Mary A. Van Winkle, and Stephen Morton. Josiah Hopkins and Charles Kelsey were chosen deacons, and the

manual of the Kalamazoo Congregational Association was adopted, with a few alterations. The pastors of the church in their order of service are given as follows: Revs. Q. A. McFarland, Thomas Jones, Jonathan Crain, G. Dangramond, J. H. Williams, D. W. Comstock, and I. N. Tones. Upon the organization of the church a Sabbath-school was also formed, and in 1869 a house of worship was built. The church membership, which is now 25, was at one time upwards of 80. Rev. I. N. Tones, the present pastor, preaches every Sunday. The deacons are W. B. Gorham and W. B. Ward; the trustees, Peter Harwick, W. B. Ward, and Scott Glidden; and the clerk, W. B. Gorham.

A *Close Communion Baptist Church* was organized in Mattawan, at the house of N. B. Howell, in 1867, with 18 members. Up to the close of 1878 preaching was supplied from Kalamazoo as often as once every fortnight, and services were held in the Methodist church, a public hall, the school house, and other convenient places. The membership is now but 10, and since the close of 1878 the members have not met for public worship.

A *Universalist Church* was organized in 1873, with 16 members, by Rev. Asa Countryman, a Michigan missionary, at the house of C. D. Van Vechten. Mr. Countryman preached for the church a year, and during the ensuing two years Revs. Jacob Straub and ——— Mason preached once a month. After that the membership became reduced, and since 1876 no public services have been held.

#### FRUIT CULTURE.

Four years ago Antwerp township was not esteemed a region peculiarly adapted to the cultivation of such fruits as the peach and grape, and what was done in those departments was upon a very limited scale. At this time, however, the peach and grape culture is one of the important features of the township's industries, and promises moreover to expand in a very important way in the near future. Indeed, this valuable interest seems to be just developing, and among those who are urging it forward the opinion holds, and with much sanguine faith, that the fruit trade of Antwerp and the neighboring country will soon be far greater than at present.

The oldest peach orchard in the township is that of Nathan H. Bitely, who has been marketing the fruit for about twenty years, or since 1860. Mr. Biteley has also one of the largest vineyards in Antwerp. Messrs. L. L. Halstead and L. Baxter have old orchards, but a large majority of those now cultivated are but four years old.

Early in 1878 the fruit-growers in the neighborhood of Lawton moved for the organization of a society which should be devoted to the encouragement of their interests, and in April of that year, accordingly, the Lawton Pomological Society was formed, with N. H. Bitely as President, C. D. Lawton, Secretary, and A. B. Jones, Treasurer. The original membership of 40 has swelled to 50, and, according to the first defined purpose, includes fruit-growers of the townships of Paw Paw, Antwerp, and Porter, although there are also a few members from Decatur. It is estimated that fully 50,000 bearing peach-trees are owned by members of the society, while their vineyards and beds of small fruits are constantly expanding in area.

Lawton is the shipping-point whence in 1878 between 50,000 and 60,000 baskets of peaches and 30 tons of grapes, besides much other small fruit, were forwarded, Mr. C. Engle, a fruit-grower, of Paw Paw, himself shipping 7000 baskets of peaches. Antwerp is likewise a strong apple-producing region, and in the light of late important progress as a fruit-belt may confidently count upon a valuable commercial future.

#### RAILWAYS IN ANTWERP.

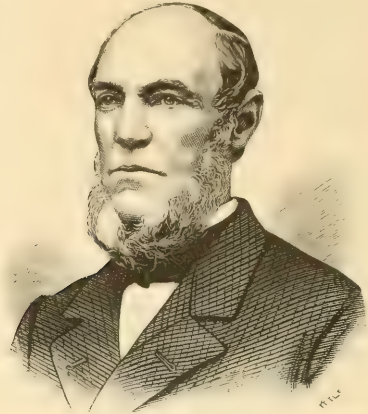
The Michigan Central Railway, passing through the township between the east and southwest, was completed in 1848, and created the two flourishing villages of Lawton and Mattawan. The Paw Paw Railroad, connecting the villages of Lawton and Paw Paw, was chartered April 25, 1857, but the company seeking to ignore Lawton by intersecting the Michigan Central Railroad between Lawton and Mattawan, were by the latter corporation denied the privilege, and having thus uselessly expended their capital the company abandoned the undertaking. In November, 1866, there was a reorganization, with an increased capital, and then the line was completed as it now exists.



## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.



MRS. LYSANDER BATHRICK.



LYSANDER BATHRICK.

## LYSANDER BATHRICK

was born May 18, 1812, in the town of Scipio, Cayuga Co., N. Y., and was the seventh in a family of nine children,—five sons and four daughters. His father, Stephen Bathrick, was born in Massachusetts, May 25, 1778. His mother, Catharine (Bachelor) Bathrick, was also a native of that State, her birth occurring Aug. 28, 1776, and her marriage with Stephen Bathrick being celebrated Dec. 25, 1799. Mr. Bathrick and his wife both died in the State of New York, the former Dec. 24, 1854, and the latter June 29, 1839. Of their family, six members are now living.

Lysander Bathrick passed his youth on his father's farm, after the manner of farmers' sons in those days, attending the winter terms in the district school, and assisting on the homestead through the summer months. After he became of age he hired his services at monthly wages, and with the money thus earned paid for one winter's tuition at Brockport College. Feb. 20, 1838, he was married to Miss Phebe Salisbury, whose parents, Joseph and Phebe (Westbrook) Salisbury, were born in Pennsylvania. She was a native of Monroe Co., N. Y., in which her birth occurred, July 28, 1819. The fruit of this union was four children, Rosina A., born March 9, 1839; Miranda A., born June 19, 1842; Pratt L., born May 15, 1848; Burt D., born March 23, 1862. These are all living. In 1841, Mr. Bathrick settled on a farm in Orleans Co., N. Y., and in 1866 sold it and came to Michigan, locating at Battle Creek, Calhoun Co. In 1869 he removed to Antwerp township, Van Buren Co., where his wife died, August

13th, in the same year. His present home consists of one hundred and nineteen acres on section 24, which, with the assistance of his youngest son, he manages. His oldest child, Rosina, is still in New York, and the others are married and settled near him. March 16, 1870, he was united in marriage with Mrs. M. Rose, a native of New York, in which State she was born Feb. 24, 1818. She is a sister of J. R. Bangs, of Paw Paw. Mrs. Bathrick (first) early became a convert to the Christian religion, and at her death was a member of the Congregational Church. The present Mrs. Bathrick also united with this church about 1870. Mr. Bathrick was formerly connected with the Methodist Episcopal Church, but is at present a member of none. His first wife was an advocate of all reforms, and with him was an earnest worker in the anti-slavery cause, rising from her bed on many occasions to assist some lonely refugee. Mr. Bathrick's house was the haven which such wanderers sought for temporary shelter and assistance, and they were ever welcomed, and, after rest and refreshment, were "sent on their way rejoicing." Mr. Bathrick's father was a participant in the second struggle with Great Britain (1812-15), and an early settler of Monroe Co., N. Y. His house, erected in 1811, was the fifth in the township in which he settled, and was covered with bark, as no lumber could be procured nearer than Rochester. His road was cut six miles through a dense forest. He did not locate with his family until Feb. 22, 1814, having lived previously in Cayuga County. Lysander Bathrick has been a life-long Republican, his principles being taught him by his mother. He has served as a justice of the peace in the township where he lives.

## JONATHAN J. WOODMAN,

so well known to very many, not only of the citizens of Van Buren County, but of the whole country, was born in Sutton, Caledonia Co., Vt., May 25, 1825.

He was the youngest son of Joseph and Tryphena Woodman, whose portraits appear upon another page in this work, and was nearly ten years of age when his father settled in Antwerp, early in May, 1835.

Western Michigan, except its few prairies, was then an almost unbroken wilderness. A few families arrived and settled in the neighborhood in the summer of 1835, and not unmindful of the fact that schools were an essential part of the civilization they had left behind them, they opened up in a primitive way the chances for an education in a slab shanty in Paw Paw village, to which the few children of the early settlers too young for work were sent.

About this time the flood-tide of emigration to Southern Michigan commenced, and the sturdy settlers engaged at once in opening up farms, building villages, and providing educational advantages for their children.

These were enjoyed by young Woodman to the extent of devoting the winter season to the village school, and the summer to labor on his father's farm, completing his school education at a private academy, under the tuition of the late Professor Vose, before he was twenty-one years of age.

His time in the village school and his academic course of a few terms had been so well improved, and had kindled in him such a desire to explore the fields of learning, the portals of which he had just passed, that to go to college was then his highest ambition. But a new country with its demands for improvement, a new farm with its demands for labor, and a large family with its demands for a living, left few dollars to devote to the less necessary collegiate education which his ambition coveted. His father could not help him, and he was compelled to abandon this cherished purpose.

He determined to enter a law-office and study law, and went to Kalamazoo, making his first application for a place in the office of Stuart & Miller.

Mr. Stuart was not in when the farmer-boy called to arrange for his future course in life. Mr. Miller, a few years his senior, raised on a farm, with a few years' legal practice, was well qualified to give good advice.

He said to young Woodman, "The profession is overcrowded, and the chances for a competence and future distinction are better and more certain for a young man intent on doing what he undertakes *well*, if he sticks to farming in this new and undeveloped country than at the bar." This opinion from an eminent lawyer cooled his ardor for professional life, and he returned home resolved to comply with the wishes of his father, and heed this friendly advice which had come to him unsought.

From henceforth he was ultimately to be a farmer, and he soon purchased forty acres of land adjoining his father's farm, incurring a debt of four hundred dollars, which was paid in installments with money earned by teaching. As he was well qualified, and it was more remunerative, he devoted six successive winters to that work, finding employ-

ment on his father's farm through the summer seasons. A forty-acre farm was too restricted for his ambition, and in the newly-discovered gold-fields of California he fancied he saw a prospect to secure means to enlarge his little farm, and enable him to prosecute his chosen vocation and secure the objects which attend success.

Resigning the position of principal of the Paw Paw union school in the spring of 1852, he joined the throng and crossed the Plains to meet and overcome, as best he might, the hardships of the venture and adventure of a two years' life in California.

Though he found no bonanza, he saved enough in two years of California life, by mining and other business in which he was engaged, to enlarge his farm, and soon made such valuable improvements as gave him the coveted standing which he has since so fully enjoyed,—an independent, enterprising Michigan farmer.

His services as teacher were in demand, and the two winters succeeding his return from California he spent in teaching. We conclude that his time during the winter of 1856 was not wholly devoted to teaching school, as we find on inquiry that on the 30th day of March following he married Miss Harty H. Hunt, daughter of John and Eliza Hunt, pioneer settlers in the township, of whom mention is made in this work. Mrs. Woodman was born in Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt., Oct. 20, 1834, and was but two and a half years old when her parents emigrated from Vermont and settled in Antwerp. Her educational advantages were very similar to those of her husband. In the common school, with a few terms at the Kalamazoo Female Seminary, under the tuition of that most excellent instructor, Mrs. Stone, she qualified herself for teaching school, and for several years previous to her marriage was successfully engaged in teaching. A small frame house was soon erected upon their one-hundred-and-twenty-acre farm, in which they commenced housekeeping and lived until their present residence was built, in 1868. They have but one child, Lucius Woodman, a promising lad of seventeen years of age.

In 1860, Mr. Woodman was chosen to represent Van Buren County in the Michigan Legislature, a position to which he was re-elected successively five times, to represent the eastern district, making twelve years of continuous service, during three terms having the additional honor of being selected by that body to serve as presiding officer (one term as Speaker *pro tem*. and two terms as Speaker), a distinction never accorded to any member of ordinary ability, nor given a second time to any person lacking in executive talent. In the late Centennial Exposition he was one of the board of managers representing the State of Michigan, his especial duty being to take charge of the agricultural exhibition of his State.

In 1878 he received from President Hayes the appointment of commissioner to the Paris Exposition, being one of the four to represent American agriculture. It is worthy of note that this appointment was made on the united solicitation of the entire Congressional delegation from his State, Mr. Woodman himself having no part in its procurement, nor even the knowledge that the position would be tendered him. The duties of the office took him abroad

early in May, 1878. During the summer months he was closely engaged in Paris most of the time. He found time, however, to make occasional excursions into the agricultural districts of France, and traveled extensively through several other countries in Europe, where, with the fondness of an enthusiast, he sought out everything new, if it seemed to have bearing upon the business in hand,—the development of truth in agriculture. These trips were delineated in letters to the *Grange Visitor* and *Post and Tribune*, and freely copied by the agricultural press throughout the Union.

Very soon after the grange movement became in Michigan a moving impulse Mr. Woodman identified himself with it, notwithstanding the opprobrium that thoughtless scribblers and senile orators had endeavored to cast upon it. He saw in the order a precious boon to American farmers, conditioned only upon their cordial support of an institution devised in their interest, and therefore dependent upon them for whatever power or force it might have in shaping affairs. Being thoroughly identified in the new work, it was soon apparent to his fellow-laborers that his abilities indicated a wider field than could be afforded by his local grange as the measure of his usefulness, and he was therefore elected, in 1874, Master of the Michigan State Grange, a position which he still holds, having twice been re-elected by a nearly unanimous vote. In 1875, at the ninth annual session of the National Grange, in Louisville, Ky., he was elected Overseer, the second office in the body, the term expiring in 1877. At the eleventh annual session, in Cincinnati, he was re-elected, and served with much ability at the sessions of the National Grange at Richmond and at Canandaigua, often occupying the chair of the Master, where his familiarity with parliamentary law and usage, and his natural tact as a presiding officer, brought to him the highest office in the gift of that body—that of Master—at its late session, in November, 1879.

Mr. Woodman has many qualities that have given him admirable fitness for the various official positions to which he has been called; but it is not the purpose of this sketch to make a careful analysis of character. It may be said, however, that as a presiding officer in a deliberative body he has, combined with the utmost readiness of decision, rare tact, that gives adverse ruling the character of graceful and courteous denial, soothing to those who seek the favors firmly refused. Intrenched in the most profound parliamentary lore, he occupies the chair as the embodiment of law, whose executive he becomes, with no favor nor harsh ruling to bestow, the plain purpose being to guide the proceedings of the body over which he presides by the rules it has itself established. As a speaker, he is entirely free from ostentatious display, although earnest and forcible, trusting rather to close argument and the logic of facts than to the arts of oratory.

As a farmer, entire system marks every department of his work. Except when official duties have made demands upon his time, he has not only given personal attention to the business of his farm, but has always taken hold of its manual labor with the "come boys" activity that usually makes success certain.

In 1860 he purchased one hundred acres of his father's

farm, this time incurring a debt of four thousand dollars. Other additions have been made until he now owns over five hundred acres of land, with three hundred and seventy-five acres under cultivation.

In practical farming he holds tenaciously to the idea that a mixed husbandry, thorough cultivation, with a liberal supply of fertilizers, and a systematic rotation of crops is essential to success.

His motto is system, economy, and punctuality in all farm operations, as well as other business, and "an intelligent calculation on probabilities."

His farm lies just outside the village of Paw Paw, the county-seat of Van Buren County. His residence, within half a mile of the post-office, gives him all the society advantages which village life affords. He has a fine residence and other farm-buildings sufficient for the needs of a large farm, but exhibits no lavish expenditure. With but one child, his family is always reinforced with the hired help necessary to run a large farm, and his considerate treatment of all his employees when at home makes them careful of his interests, and there is little of that change from year to year which is so common among farmers.

Mr. Woodman has been successful in his own business affairs, successful in official life, and honored for the faithfulness with which he has discharged every duty imposed upon him, and now, at the age of fifty-four, we find him surrounded with every comfort and convenience found in a well-ordered home.

The fortuitous circumstances of life that seem to attend some men more than others have fallen to his lot.

With a wife familiar with farm-life from childhood, and eminently qualified to adapt herself to every situation, her practical good sense and sound judgment have contributed in no small degree to their financial prosperity, while her fine social and intellectual qualities have made their home an attractive centre of a large circle of friends who are always welcome at their hospitable board.

She is an earnest worker in the grange, as well as in other social and benevolent enterprises; and, with her husband, has been honored with high positions in both the State and National Granges. She was elected Flora of the State Grange in 1875, a position which she still holds and fills with grace and dignity. In 1877 she was elected Pomona of the National Grange, and promoted to the office of Ceres in 1879, being the highest office held by a lady in that body.

#### HENRY WAITE

was born in Washington Co., N. Y., Sept. 10, 1825, and was the ninth in a family of fifteen children,—five sons and ten daughters. His father, Green Waite, was also a native of Washington County, as was also his mother, Lida (Moon) Waite. Mr. and Mrs. Waite, Sr., were married about 1808-9, and when Henry was five years of age the family removed to Livingston Co., N. Y., where the son worked on his father's farm summers, and attended school winters. When seventeen years of age, Henry Waite, at the request of his parents, started for Michigan to join his brother in Hillsdale Co., Mich., and learn the carpenter's



trade. With ten dollars in his pocket, and his clothing rolled up in a pack, he left home and proceeded on foot to Rochester. Arriving finally at Adrian, Mich., he walked from there to his brother's, having two dollars and a half left on his arrival. He remained most of the time with his brother for two and a half years, and experienced homesickness almost constantly. He returned to New York and stayed two years, at the expiration of which time he came again to Hillsdale, and subsequently to Van Buren County, where he stayed but a short time, returning to Hillsdale, and thence to New York, walking as far as Niagara Falls. March 26, 1850, he was married to Miss Caroline McCrossen, whose father was a native of Ireland, and mother of New York. In the latter State Mrs. Waite was born, Dec. 9, 1831. Mr. and Mrs. Waite have no children of their own, but have an adopted daughter, Leonora, now thirteen years of age. After their marriage, Mr. Waite rented a farm for two years, after which he purchased fifty acres of land in Ontario Co., N. Y., and removed to it. He sold his place in the fall of 1855, and returned to Michigan, purchasing seventy acres in Almena township, Van Buren Co., Mich., obtaining credit for most of it. For about ten years he remained on this farm, clearing and improving it, and finding employment at sheep-shearing, well-digging, and teaming, and says he made his money "not on the farm, but off from it." He sold his place in 1865, and worked land on shares for two years, then purchasing his present home, on section 5, in Antwerp township. He also owns land in Almena, upon which he pastures sheep. He is considerably interested in sheep-raising, and has a flock numbering one hundred and twenty-six. Mr. Waite's farm had very little improvement upon it when he purchased it, but he has persevered in his efforts to transform it into a pleasant home, and with what success may be judged by a glance at the view which appears in this work. Mr. Waite has ever been an industrious, hard-working man. For seven years he was engaged in thrashing grain, and followed well-digging until within recent years. His mother died in 1867, and his father, who for two years had lived with him, died in 1869. Mrs. Waite's father died March 9, 1865. Her mother is living with her, having nearly reached the age of eighty-seven years. Mr. Waite is a Republican in politics, and both he and his wife have been members of the Christian Church for twenty years.

#### JAMES M. LULL

was born in Broome Co., N. Y., June 9, 1830, and was one of a family of eleven children. In the spring of 1839 he came to Michigan with his father, Samuel Lull, who settled first in Kalamazoo County, and in 1844 removed to the township of Antwerp, Van Buren Co., and located on section 36. His parents were both natives of New York, in which State his father died Aug. 12, 1874, at the age of eighty years. The latter's widow is now living with her daughter in Kalamazoo County, at the age of eighty-two years.

When James M. Lull arrived at the age of twenty-one years he removed to Ohio, and during his residence in that

State was married to Miss Emily Crane, a native of Massachusetts, who had come to Ohio with her parents when but two years of age. About two years after his marriage, Mr. Lull removed to Michigan, locating with his family on their present home of one hundred and sixty acres, in the township of Antwerp, Van Buren Co., clearing and improving it in the succeeding years. Mrs. Lull's mother died in Ohio, April 15, 1855; her father is still living. Mr. and Mrs. Lull are the parents of three children, as follows: Clarence A., born in Ohio, March 9, 1852; Emma F., born Feb. 25, 1857, in Michigan; Juliette, born Sept. 25, 1866. Mr. Lull, aside from his regular business as a farmer, has devoted considerable attention to raising fine stock, and is at present the owner of ten blooded cattle and several Percheron horses. He has every reason to be pleased with his success in life, and enjoys the reputation of being an excellent farmer. His educational advantages were somewhat limited, but his knowledge is of that practical character which enables its possessor to achieve success in the business walks of life.

#### PETER HARWICK.

This gentleman's parents, Elias and Cynthia (Ryan) Harwick, were natives of Montgomery Co., N. Y. Elias Harwick was born Sept. 29, 1789, and died June 14, 1871. His wife, Cynthia (Ryan) Harwick, was born Nov. 7, 1792. They were married Oct. 30, 1813. Soon after their marriage they removed to Monroe County, and not long afterwards to Livingston County. From the latter they came to Michigan in 1841, and located in the township of Antwerp, Van Buren Co., where Mr. Harwick purchased and occupied a farm on section 16. About twenty-six years later, his health being broken down, he removed to Paw Paw village, where he died, and where his widow is now living.

Peter Harwick, the oldest child of the above, and one of a family of eight,—all sons but two,—was born Oct. 19, 1814, in the town of Mendon, Monroe Co., N. Y. He lived with his parents until 1837, in which year he was married to Miss Belva Root, who was born at Fort Ann, Washington Co., N. Y., May 28, 1813, and married Mr. Harwick in Erie County, where she was then living with her parents. After his marriage Mr. Harwick began farming independently in Caledonia, Livingston Co., N. Y. In October, 1842, he removed to Michigan, with his wife and child, and settled on section 16, Antwerp township, Van Buren Co. His possessions upon his arrival here were a small team of horses and fourteen dollars in money. He purchased eighty acres of land on section 16, and borrowed forty dollars of his sister in order to make the first payment upon it. The place was entirely unimproved, and almost by his individual efforts has it reached its present condition of thrift. To his original purchase he has since added a like amount, and is now the owner of the southeast quarter of section 16,—one hundred and sixty acres. He lived during the first few months with his father, in the meanwhile erecting a log house on his own place. In order to get lumber to finish it with he went to Breeds-ville, cut timber, hauled it to a saw-mill and had it sawed,

and then drew it to his home. The house was finished and occupied in April, 1843. A severe and protracted struggle for a livelihood then began, and difficulties of manifold nature were constantly arising. But the energy and perseverance of the young pioneer triumphed in the end, and prosperity and plenty were showered upon him by favoring fortune. Judge Bazel Harrison, the well-known pioneer of Prairie Ronde, Kalamazoo Co., furnished him with wheat at one time when his store of money was entirely exhausted, and thus made one more in his long list of friends. The judge lived to be one hundred and three years of age, and went down to his grave with the consolation of having never known an enemy, and it was such deeds as this that won him the confidence and esteem of all. Mr. Harwick gratefully remembers the favor, and scarcely knows what he should have done but for the judge's kindness.\* Mr. Harwick's education was acquired in the common schools of his boyhood, generally two miles from home, whose advantages were scarcely equal to those of the schools of the present day. He has lived sixty-six years and won the esteem of his acquaintances, and been elected to several offices by his townsmen,—supervisor, town clerk, etc. In politics he is a Democrat; his occupation has always been that of a general farmer. Mr. and Mrs. Harwick have had but one child,—Allen Harwick,—who is now married, and residing on the farm with his father. Mrs. Harwick is a member of the Congregational Church.

#### J. R. BANGS.

The ancestors of this gentleman, upon the side of his father, were Scotch, and those of the name in America are descendants of three brothers, who emigrated previous to the Revolution. Mr. Bangs' grandfather, Joshua Bangs, was born in Ingham, Mass., Feb. 26, 1764, and served in the war as a cabin-boy on board an American privateer. He was captured by the British, taken to England, and held a prisoner until the war was over, when he returned to Boston, Mass. He died in the town of Sweden, Monroe Co., N. Y., July 13, 1837. His wife, Anna (Folcon) Bangs, was born in Massachusetts, Nov. 17, 1766, and died in Sweden, N. Y., Jan. 4, 1844. Nathaniel Bangs, the father of J. R., was born in Massachusetts, March 4, 1789, and removed to Wheelock, Vt., where, on the 6th of October, 1809, he was married to Mary Woodman; afterwards removing to Sweden, N. Y., purchased one hundred and thirty acres of land, on which he lived until his death, Aug. 13, 1835; his wife is still living. Miss Woodman's father, John Woodman, was born March 30, 1763, and married Sarah Foy, Dec. 17, 1787. Both were of English descent.

J. R. Bangs, the sixth in a family of nine children, was born in the town of Sweden, Monroe Co., N. Y., Feb. 6, 1824. Until he was seventeen, his time was passed on the farm of his father, except during the winters, which were devoted to study in the district schools. At the age mentioned he was employed at monthly wages, still continuing

his winter schooling. March 10, 1844, he was married to Miss Lucy M., daughter of Mills and Catharine Davis, in Ogden, Monroe Co., N. Y. Mrs. Bangs' parents were of English descent and natives of Livingston Co., N. Y. She was born in Livonia, April 14, 1828; her mother's maiden name was Adams. Her father died when she was but a year old, and a year later she was taken into the family of her uncle, Samuel Brigham, who resided in Ogden, Monroe Co., and with him she was living when married. After their marriage, Mr. Bangs rented a farm for three years, afterwards purchasing eighty acres of land in the town of Ogden, Monroe Co., for which the sum demanded was two thousand eight hundred dollars. One hundred dollars only were paid down, and the place was occupied five years, at the end of which time he sold it for three thousand two hundred dollars, and removed with his family, in the fall of 1854, to Michigan. He had visited the State the previous spring and invested in lands situated north of Grand Rapids. Not being satisfied with the location, he exchanged the land for what is better known as the Elder Gilman farm, in Antwerp township, Van Buren Co., on section 5. Upon this he located and remained about fifteen years, making extensive improvements. In 1870 he disposed of his place and removed to the one he now occupies, one-half mile east of the village of Paw Paw. Here he has built a neat residence (a view of which is seen in this work), and made many and valuable improvements. He has also taken an active interest in the propagation of improved stock, especially horses, and has introduced several fine animals of the Percheron Norman breed, which he secured in Illinois. In company with Mr. C. Bilsborough he is the owner of six, one of which is in Albion, Mich. In politics, Mr. Bangs is a Republican; though often solicited to allow his name to be used as a candidate for township offices, he has never sought them. Mr. and Mrs. Bangs were members of the Christian Church in New York and brought letters with them to Michigan, but have not united with any church in the latter State. Although they have a pleasant and thrifty home, it has never been made merry by the voices of children of their own.

#### ORANGE STEPHENS.

This gentleman was born April 11, 1822, in Chittenden Co., Vt., and was the second child and oldest son in a family of seven. His father, Royal Stephens, was born also in Chittenden County, on the same farm upon which the son was born. Mr. Stephens' mother, Sally (Richardson) Stephens, was born in Addison Co., Vt., and married his father about 1818. In 1832 the family removed to Niagara Co., N. Y., and located on a farm. His father sold out in May, 1836, and came to Michigan, and purchased two hundred and eighty acres in Ingham County. At the age of twenty years Orange Stephens left home, and found employment for about five years by the month, after which he was married to Miss Mary A., daughter of R. S. and Esther Armstrong, who was born in Addison Co., Vt., Sept. 2, 1823, being the second in a family of five children. Mrs. Stephens came to Michigan in the spring of 1844, and engaged in teaching school, making her home with her sister. Her

\* John Hunt, of Antwerp, also went his security for hardware to finish his log house with, whom he also remembers with gratitude.





ORANGE STEPHENS.



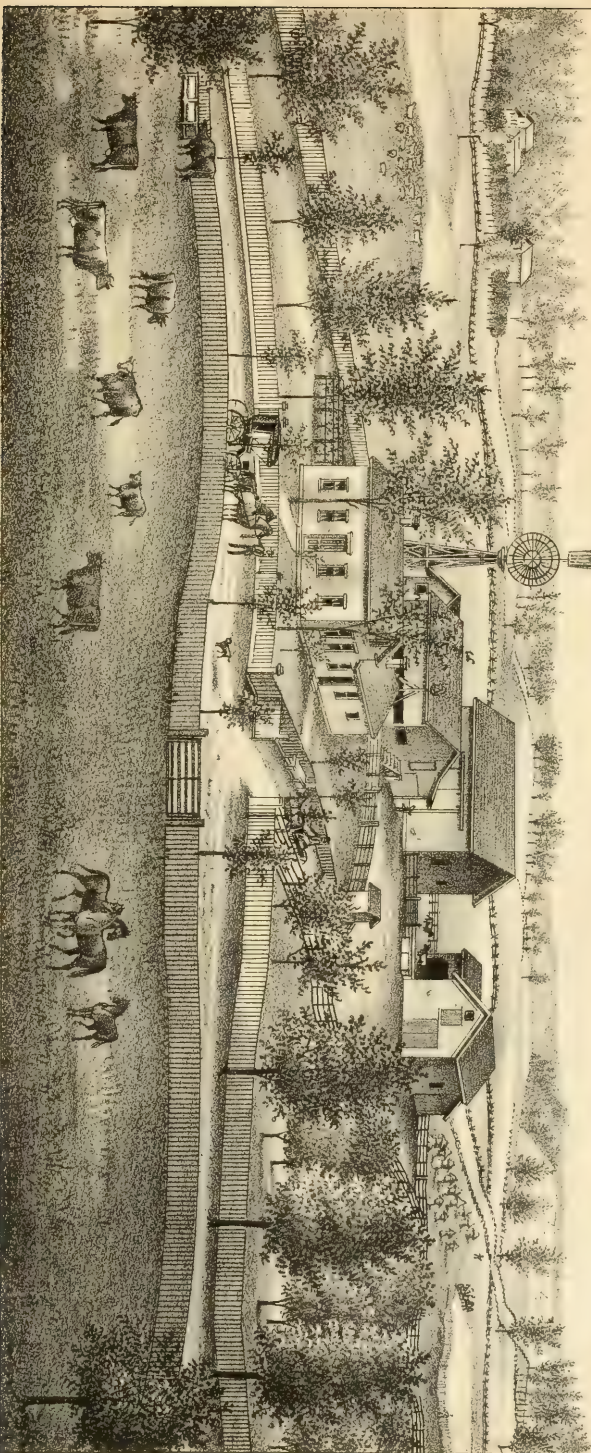
MRS. ORANGE STEPHENS.



MRS. F. E. STEPHENS.



F. E. STEPHENS.



RESIDENCE OF ORANGE STEPHENS, ANTWERP T<sup>H</sup>, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





mother died in Vermont, Oct. 12, 1841. Her father came to Michigan about 1854, settled in Lawton, Van Buren Co., and kept hotel until his death, in 1863.

After Mr. and Mrs. Stephens were married they consolidated their earnings and purchased one hundred and twelve acres of land in Sandstone township, Jackson Co., Mich., upon which they resided until 1853, when Mr. Stephens went to California. In July, 1855, he returned to his family, who in the mean time had sold the farm, and coming to Van Buren County purchased one hundred and twenty acres of land in the township of Antwerp, to which he has since added a like amount. Mr. and Mrs. Stephens are the parents of two children, as follows: R. E. Stephens, born May 16, 1848, married and living in La Crosse, Ind., and being employed on the railroad; Frank E., born July 10, 1857, married, Dec. 3, 1878, to Miss A. A. Beardslee, a native of Pennsylvania. Her parents came to Michigan in 1866, and are now residing in Mattawan. Frank E. Stephens and his wife live on the farm with his parents.

During his stay in California Mr. Stephens engaged in mining, with fair success. His father died April 17, 1867; his mother is now living on the old homestead in Ingham Co., Mich. Mr. Stephens is a Republican in politics, as is also his son, and has held the office of highway commissioner, but has never been a seeker for office. In his religious views he is liberal, and has been a member of the Masonic order since 1864. His advantages for obtaining an education were limited.

#### N. L. SURDAM.

Among the early pioneers who migrated from the far East to build up a home and fortune in the then almost pathless wilds of Western Michigan came Nathaniel L. Surdam, who in September, 1835, located a farm—his present home—in Antwerp township, Van Buren Co.

Of his ancestors, his paternal grandparents resided in Salisbury, Litchfield Co., Conn., where they followed the occupation of farming. Among their three sons was Christopher, the father of Nathaniel, who was born in Salisbury, in October, 1773; learned the mill-wright and ship-carpenter's trades, working at these principally through life; was married, about 1794, to Miss Elizabeth Lockwood, who was born at Sharon, Litchfield Co., Conn., May 20, 1775, where her parents, in affluent circumstances, had lived as farmers for many years. Christopher S., while yet a young man, moved with his family to New York City. As foreman in the navy-yard, he worked at ship-building for several years; but disliking the many evils, restrictions, and contagious diseases of the city,—his wife having nearly died with both smallpox and yellow fever,—they returned to Sharon, Conn., which was ever afterwards their home. His subsequent life was principally devoted to mill-wright work, building foundries, forges, mills, etc. He died in 1825, at the age of fifty-two, his wife surviving him many years. They had five sons and three daughters: William, born at Sharon, Conn., Sept. 17, 1795, where he still lives; Betsey, born Nov. 16, 1797, at Sharon, where she died; Eunice, born in New York, died when a child; Trowbridge

L., born at Sharon, June 8, 1806, moved from Broome Co., N. Y., to Washtenaw Co., Mich., in 1833, and died in 1876; Lewis L., born at Sharon, June 23, 1808, moved to Illinois, purchased three farms, and died in Michigan in 1878, when on a return trip from Connecticut; Eunice, the second, born at Sharon, March 31, 1813, lived and died on a farm in Illinois; John W., born in Sharon, Sept. 2, 1815, located at Manchester, Mich., and died in 1865. All the brothers were carpenters and joiners, excepting William, who was a master-millwright.

Nathaniel L. was born in New York City, Jan. 26, 1803. He spent his early life in Western Connecticut, received a common-school education, and worked five years as an apprentice to Daniel St. John, a master-builder. He continued at the business there five years longer, erecting some of the finest dwellings, school-buildings, and churches in that country. He went to Broome Co., N. Y., in 1830, worked at his trade, and was married, Sept. 16, 1832, to Miss Caroline Fuller. He bought a farm near the Pitcher mineral springs, Chenango County, and resided there two years, carrying on his farm and trade, until the death of his wife, in April, 1835, when he sold out and returned to Broome County. In the following September he came to Michigan, and located his present farm in Van Buren County.

Mr. Surdam married, May 4, 1836, as his second wife, Miss Nancy Dickinson, of Broome County, whose paternal grandparents resided in East Windsor, Conn., where her father, Seth, was born in 1772. He emigrated to Broome County in 1800, where he carried on a farm, tannery, and shoemaker's shop, and where he resided until his death. Himself and family, and his brothers' and sisters' families around him, were peaceable, industrious, moral people, mostly Baptists, and himself a deacon of that church. The ancestors of his wife, Rhoda Elton, came, generations back, from Switzerland to Connecticut, where she was born in 1773; she died in Broome County in 1820. They had three sons and two daughters,—Rockwell, born March 5, 1798, deceased; Horace, born in November, 1800, deceased; Linus, born May 14, 1812 (settled near them as farmers, tanners, and shoemakers); Pamela, born in 1796, moved on a farm in Hillsdale, Mich., and died there in 1838; and Nancy, born June 8, 1809.

Shipping their goods by water to Detroit, Nathaniel Surdam and wife started Oct. 11, 1836, in a top-buggy, with one horse, for Western Michigan, more than six hundred miles distant; after a weary journey through the almost impassable swamps of Canada they reached Genesee Prairie, Kalamazoo Co., November 16th, where they stayed through the winter. They built a small frame house and moved on their farm the next spring.

There, far from childhood's home and friends, among Indians, wild beasts, and an occasional white settler, they endured the hardships of pioneer life, felling trees and clearing land, going to Little and Big Prairie Ronde, "Egypt," for grain, and to Kalamazoo and Portage to get it ground; experiencing many privations and a thorough "seasoning" with ague and malarial fevers; laboring hard on the farm, mostly unaided for many years, beside building barns, dwellings, and doing much shop-work for others.

Looking back over the forty-four years that have passed, they can now see the vast change which time and labor have wrought. Kalamazoo had then but three frame houses, Paw Paw a few more, the forests of Mattawan and Lawton had barely heard the echo of a pioneer's axe, and a steam-whistle was unheard for many years. Although age has crept over the pair, having lived in the spirit of the motto, "pay as you go and live within your means," the slow accumulations of years of honest toil have gathered round them, and they are no longer poor.

They have traveled but little since coming to Michigan, and have joined no secret societies or church organizations here, although members in good standing of Methodist Episcopal and Baptist Churches in the East. Mr. Surdam never was an aspirant for political honors. They have had two children, both born in Michigan,—Julia Ann, Sept. 21, 1837, died Nov. 17, 1855; Frederick W., youngest of the family and writer of this sketch, has spent his life thus far upon the old place, in educating himself and helping to improve the homestead farm.

## CHAPTER LII.

### ARLINGTON TOWNSHIP.

Location and Topography.—Settlements and Settlers.—Early Roads.—Civil and Political.—First Township Meeting.—Township Officers, 1843 to 1880.

THE township of Arlington, otherwise designated as township No. 2 south, of range No. 15 west, is an interior division, and situated near the centre of Van Buren County. It was formerly part of the old township of Lawrence, and became a separate organization in 1842, the name of Arlington having been suggested by one of its earliest residents,—a Revolutionary veteran named James Stevens, to whom it brought pleasing recollections of his native town in the Green Mountain State.

Contiguous township organizations are Columbia on the north, Waverly on the east, Lawrence on the south, and Bangor on the west.

The most important water-courses are the Black and Paw Paw Rivers. The former, in its flow to the southwest, crosses section 6; while the latter, flowing in the same direction, cuts off a large portion of section 36, the same being attached to Lawrence township. Several small creeks also traverse the township, Elizabeth Creek being the largest of these. A number of lakes are observed, the largest, Scott's Lake, being situated mainly upon section 1.

The soil of Arlington has by the industry of its inhabitants been brought to a high degree of cultivation. It is naturally of great productiveness, being composed of a rich sand and clay loam, admirably well adapted to the growth of corn, fruit, wheat, and other cereals.

The last census (1874) reported 1664 acres of wheat and 1529 acres of corn harvested in 1873, of which the products were 24,794 bushels of the former, and 54,070 bushels of the latter grain.

The surface is undulating, and in some localities these elevations and depressions are marked. The township was especially rich in timbered land, and from that fact the labor of the early pioneers was more arduous than in many other portions of Michigan, where the prairies and "oak openings" greatly modified their toil. Trees of black walnut, ash, whitewood, and oak grew to enormous proportions, one of the former, it is said, having measured at a point 3 feet above the earth 35 feet and 8 inches in circumference.

Limestone, utilized to a considerable extent, has been found in the eastern part of the township. The census of 1874 returned a total of 1362 inhabitants.

### SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS.

The first settler within the limits of the present township of Arlington, William N. Taylor, when twenty-two years of age, joined his fortunes with the party composing the Breedsville pioneers (see history of Columbia township) and came to Michigan first in the fall of 1835. His reminiscences regarding the journey from Detroit to Breedsville are most amusing. The oxen purchased in Detroit were both "off steers," and he as their driver, had a most difficult time guiding them around stumps, over logs, etc. The men, women, and children of the party, except Wells G. Brown, walked the entire distance, and following directly behind the other, or after the manner of Indians. The women and smaller children, however, generally mounted the wagon when fording streams. In crossing Elizabeth Creek, the young wife of Jonathan N. Howard, Elizabeth, was by a sudden lurch of the vehicle thrown from her seat into the creek. From this incident the stream derived the name it bears to-day.

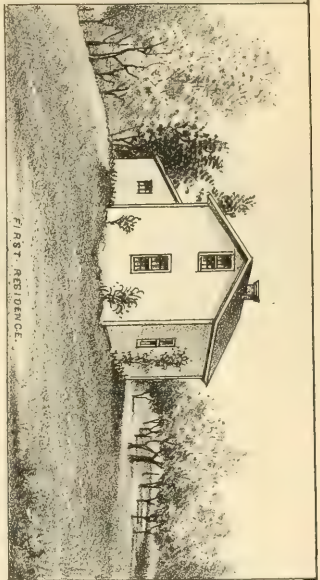
Soon after their arrival in Breedsville, Mr. Taylor purchased 120 acres of land, situated on section 8, in township 2 south, of range 15 west. He remained with his friends in Breedsville nineteen days, assisting them to erect houses, etc. Then, as they could afford to pay him but 50 cents a day for his labor, and their food consisted almost wholly of potatoes roasted, frequently eaten without salt, he turned his footsteps to Kalamazoo, where he worked for some time in the old Kalamazoo House. A few weeks later he went to Comstock, Kalamazoo Co., where he "tended tavern." Afterwards he worked in the Comstock grist-mill, and upon Caldwell's farm. In the winter of 1836-37 he returned to Hinckleyville, Monroe Co., N. Y., where he married Miss Philinda Kelsey, of Skaneateles, Onondaga Co., N. Y., who was then visiting friends in Hinckleyville.

With his wife, he came back to Michigan in the spring of 1837, arriving at Comstock in May. Here his wife remained until he went forward and built a small bark-roofed shanty upon his land-purchase. Upon its completion it was occupied by himself and wife. He cleared several acres the same summer, but the season was so far advanced that he was only able to raise a small crop of turnips, and the major portion of that crop was destroyed by his neighbor's cattle, the "off steers" owned in the Breedsville settlement. Charles U. Cross, living one mile west of him, and where, Mr. Taylor thinks, he settled in the fall of 1836, was his nearest neighbor.





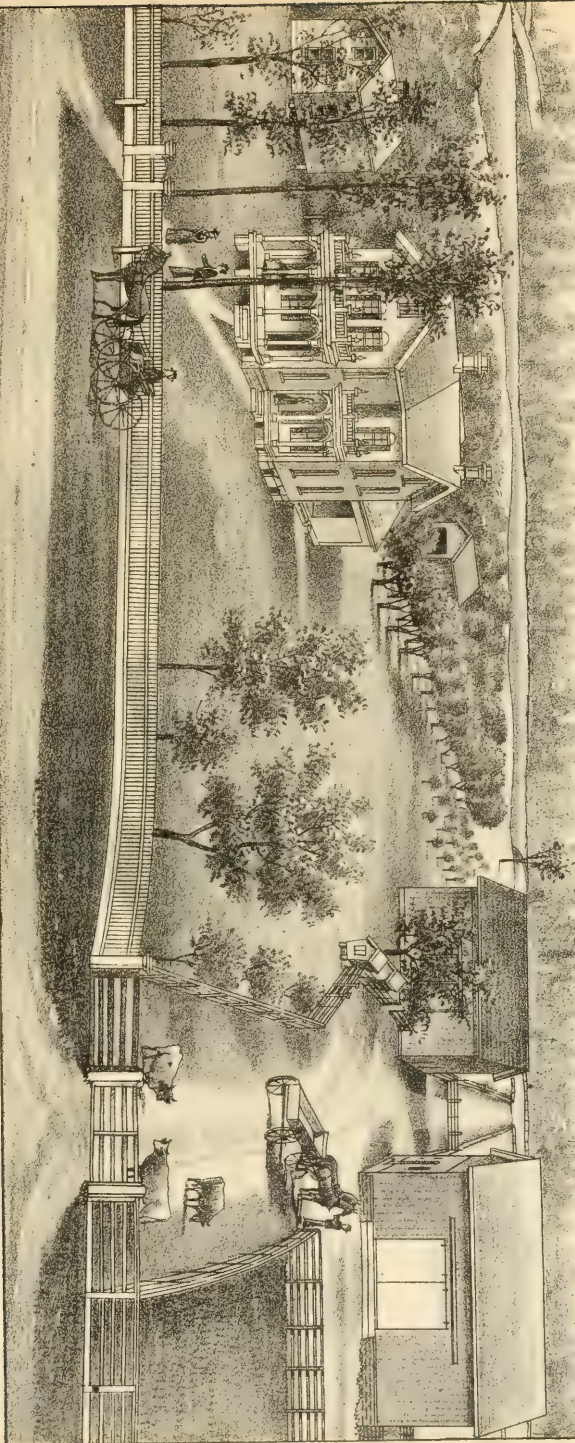
MRS. ALVIN CHAPMAN.



FIRST RESIDENCE.



ALVIN CHAPMAN.



RESIDENCE OF ALVIN CHAPMAN, ARLINGTON TWP. VAN BUREN CO., MICH.



Illustrative of life in the backwoods at an early day, Mr. Taylor relates that a few months after his settlement he was able to cover his cabin with a shingle roof. The blazing logs in the huge corner fireplace would so heat the cabin's interior in midwinter that the water from the melted snow ran down the outside of the logs, and again freezing formed icicles. The one-legged bedstead occupied by the pioneer couple was fastened to the cabin walls, into and through the chinks and crevices of which the water made its way, and coming in contact with that portion of the bedding next the walls, would so freeze them together that for days Mrs. Taylor, in the performance of her household duties, was unable to take off the sheets and spreads while "making the bed." Indeed, Mr. Taylor says that on awakening one morning the dire necessity awaited him, in his attempt to arise, of either tearing loose from his sole undergarment, or of being thawed out with a kettle of hot water!

The house of "Uncle Bill," as he was familiarly called, was noted among the youth of pioneer days as a jolly place for dances, fun, and conviviality. In the mean time he devoted all his energies to the clearing and improvement of his lands. By persevering efforts he overcame all obstacles, and eventually converted a fair portion of Arlington's forests into a productive farm. He built the first framed barn, many who assisted in the "raising" coming from distant settlements. In 1868 he removed to his present place of residence, in the village of Lawrence.

The next settler in this township was James T. Hard, a son-in-law of Elder Hinckley. He, too, came from Hinckleyville, Monroe Co., N. Y., and settled upon a portion of section 5 in the fall of 1837. Afterwards he removed to the farm now occupied by A. Heath, and ultimately migrated to the State of California.

One of the most active spirits in the early pioneer experiences of Arlington was Major Heath, who removed from Jefferson Co., N. Y., in 1837, to Jackson Co., Mich., and two years later, being much impressed with the quality of the land and the fine timber, entered a farm on sections 19 and 30, choosing the latter as a point upon which to erect a log house. The country was still in a very primitive condition when Mr. Heath arrived. No roads led to his possessions, and they were accessible only after he had, with his axe, made a highway through the forest. His house of logs was roofed with troughs after the fashion of those early times. He desired, however, to have some reminder of civilization in its construction, and secured, after a walk of six miles, a board with which to construct a door, thus rendering his home more pretentious in its appointments than those of his neighbors.

While building this house he remained with Mansel M. Briggs, who located in the township of Bangor adjoining. Mr. Heath took an active interest in public affairs. He was chosen the first supervisor, and filled other offices of importance. His judgment and experience made him a person of influence in the neighborhood and a useful citizen. He subsequently removed to Iowa, but returned again to Van Buren County, and purchased land in the extreme southeast corner of Bangor, where he resided until his death. His son, Charles E. Heath, now lives on section 25 of the latter township.

The little circle of pioneers was not broken by the death of one of its members until the winter of 1841. The family of Major Heath was first invaded, and Mrs. A. H. Heath, the partner of his early toil, was the chosen one. Her remains were buried in the cemetery on section 30, and the funeral services were the earliest held in the township.

Among other pioneers who were here prior to making the assessment of Lawrence in 1839, and who were designated on that roll as resident tax-payers of township No. 2 south, of range No. 15 west, were R. Gillman on section 5, Ransom Kellogg on section 5, S. M. N. Brooks on section 29, and Robert Christie, an inn-keeper, and the owner of 22 village lots.

The following statistics show the total number of tax-paying inhabitants in the township in 1839, also the location of their lands, value, etc.:

Names.	Section.	Acres.	Real and Personal Estate.	Taxes to be paid.
James T. Hard .....	5	114	\$344	\$2.75
R. Gillman .....	5	112	388	2.70
William N. Taylor .....	8	120	260	2.88
Ransom Kellogg .....	5	160	480	3.84
Major Heath .....	30	136	420	3.75
S. M. N. Brooks .....	29	40	120	.96
Robert Christie .....	village lots		110	1.60

Allen Briggs was a native of Bennington, Vt., from which point his parents removed to Oneida Co., N. Y., and subsequently to Lewis County. After again changing his New York residence, he, in 1838, visited Ohio, Indiana, and Michigan, and devoted some time to prospecting in the latter State. He entered, in company with his two sons, the following summer (1839) 40 acres on section 19, and began the arduous task of hewing out a home in the dense forest with which the township was then covered. In the summer of 1840, after having in the mean time constructed a house of logs and otherwise arranged for the comfort of his family, he sent for them. After a long and tedious journey by canal to Buffalo from Orleans Co., N. Y., and thence by lake to Detroit, and the remaining distance of one hundred and eighty miles by wagon, they reached their wilderness home. Mr. Briggs from his first settlement in the township took an active and leading interest in all public enterprises. His education was superior to that of most of the early pioneers, and he was thus enabled to be of signal service to them in the transaction of matters of business. He also held many offices of importance in the township, which he filled with ability. Mr. Briggs' death occurred at his home in Arlington in the year 1868; he having reached the advanced age of eighty years.

His son, Emory O. Briggs, preceded his father to the township by a few months. Together with his brother, in February, 1839, he left the paternal roof, and, with many blessings besought for them and their undertaking, started for Michigan. One horse carried their luggage and provisions for the journey, while the would-be pioneers, aged respectively seventeen and nineteen, wended their way on foot. Their route lay, first, from their starting-point to the Niagara River at Lewiston, where the stream was to be crossed, and thence through Canada to Detroit, whence they were to proceed to Van Buren County. On landing in Canada, these two beardless youths, with no arms save pocket-knives, and with their solitary steed, were, on pre-



tense of being recognized as rebels in the so-called "Patriot war," then hardly closed, arrested by a squad of Her Britannic Majesty's soldiers, armed with loaded muskets and fixed bayonets, and triumphantly marched through the streets of Queenstown to the headquarters of the commanding officer, by whom they were ordered to the guard-house.

This last order was, however, countermanded before their arrival at the guard-house, and they were returned to the august presence of the commander, by whom they were questioned and searched. The ferryman who brought them was also closely interrogated. After much more delay in examinations and other formal proceedings, they were suffered to depart, the sage verdict having been rendered that they were not regarded as dangerous or hostile to her Majesty's interests. After ten days of tedious travel through slush and mud, snow and frost, they reached Detroit, and ultimately, Van Buren County. They were at first employed in cutting a highway through the dense wilderness of the county, and receiving for this labor the sum of \$50, expended it in the purchase of 40 acres of land, on which their parents subsequently settled, and which was entered in the name of Allen Briggs.

William N. Taylor and James T. Hard were their nearest neighbors in Arlington. With the exception of a very circuitous road, which followed an Indian trail, and admitted the passage of but one vehicle at a time, there was no highway.

Emory O. Briggs employed his winters as a teacher, and found plenty of labor to occupy his hands during the summer months. His skill as an engineer was early called into requisition, and many of the first roads of the townships were surveyed by him. To the land originally purchased Mr. Briggs has added from time to time until he has become one of the largest land-holders in the township. He has also filled many official positions, both in the township and county. His present residence is Paw Paw, where he is largely engaged in commercial pursuits.

The same year (1840) came Alvinzy Harris, who located upon 53 acres on section 19, having come from St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., and become a resident of the State two years previously. He was a man of much force of character and good judgment, and was the recipient of many local offices within the gift of his fellow-townsmen. Mr. Harris found his land entirely uncleared, and depended upon his own sturdy arm for the improvements that were made. His son, Jefferson D. Harris, now lives upon the homestead, having added to it by a purchase of 80 acres.

With Mr. Harris came Morrison Heath (also a native of St. Lawrence Co., N. Y.), who settled upon 40 acres on section 30, which he improved. He was one of the small band of early voters when Arlington became an independent organization, and on that occasion was appointed inspector of elections.

The year 1840 brought with it other accessions to the little colony of settlers. William Bridges came from Livingston Co., N. Y., to Breedsville in 1837, and in the spring of 1840 he entered 40 acres on section 8. The land was entirely uncleared, and, like many pioneers who had preceded him, he erected his shanty in the midst of the forest. Deer were abundant, and the wolves were nightly prowlers about

his humble habitation. Mr. Bridges was, however, undeterred by difficulties or discouragements, and very soon after his settlement had many acres cleared and under cultivation. He was a man of quiet, unobtrusive habits and unfailing industry, and was much respected by his neighbors.

James Stevens was one of the pioneers of 1840, having emigrated in that year with his wife from Livingston Co., N. Y., and made his home with Allen Briggs, whose step-father he was. He was an octogenarian, and was accorded the privilege of naming the township.

Mr. Stevens possessed a prouder claim to the regard of his friends in that he was one of the bravest soldiers of the Revolution, having served for six years and seven months under Washington's immediate command. Nor did he lay down his musket until the last gun was fired and the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown insured not only victory but peace to the infant republic. With the entertaining reminiscences of the conflict fresh in his recollection, it may be imagined that Mr. Stevens was always a central figure in the family group during the long winter evenings devoted to social intercourse. He died in 1847, much esteemed by all.

Joseph Ives was another of the New York State pioneers who arrived in 1840, and located on section 29, where he improved a farm. He was one of the earliest voters and an office-holder the first year of the township's existence. Soon after came a settler named James M. Bierce, who located upon the same section, where he cleared land and built a log house.

In 1842 the township was organized, and the few settlers that had become residents assembled to choose officers for the ensuing year. The accessions to the population had been so small that but 14 electors were present on this occasion. They were William N. Taylor, James G. Cochran, Emory O. Briggs, Joseph Ives, Morrison Heath, Major Heath, James Stevens, Allen Briggs, William Bridges, William Dyckman, William H. McGeorge, James T. Hard, Alvinzy Harris, and Conrad Hogmire. Of this number but three survive,—William N. Taylor, who resides at Lawrence; Emory O. Briggs, living at Paw Paw; and James G. Cochran, who is still a resident of the township. The latter gentleman had become a resident of Arlington the year previous, having removed from Livingston Co., N. Y., in 1838, and settled at Breedsville, from which place he removed two years later, and purchased 40 acres on section 29 from Martin Brooks, and afterwards located upon section 9, where he now resides. Mr. Cochran retains a vivid recollection of the hardships he endured as a pioneer. On his arrival in the county there were no mills in Van Buren County, and a journey in search of provisions involved a pilgrimage of forty-two miles, and consumed seven days in going and returning. Afterwards a mill was built at Paw Paw, which diminished the distance.

A melancholy event caused much grief to Mr. Cochran's family soon after their settlement. Samuel Watson, the father of Mrs. Cochran, while on his return home from Paw Paw lost his way and died in the woods, in the north portion of the township, before succor could reach him. In the family of Mr. Cochran occurred the earliest birth in Arlington, that of his son, Andrew M., in 1844.

William Dyckman, another of the early pioneers, settled in 1840 upon section 24, where he cleared and cultivated a large farm, upon which he lived until his death. He was active in promoting the interests of Arlington, and held important township offices. To quote the language of one of the old residents, "he was justice of the peace since he could remember." Adjoining, and upon the same section, was the farm of an early pioneer named Delong. Mr. Delong was somewhat distinguished as a man of means who had money to loan,—a fact which was so uncommon as to make him a central figure in financial transactions. His sons now occupy the land he improved.

At very nearly the same time came E. B. D. Hicks, who located upon section 25, where he still owns a large and productive farm and enjoys the reputation of being one of the most successful tillers of the soil.

The family of Hogmire, from their early settlement and the large share they have had in the growth and development of the township, may be regarded as worthy of distinguished mention. Daniel Hogmire left the attractive land of Western New York for a home in the wilds of Van Buren County in 1842, and selecting Arlington as a favorable point of location, entered 40 acres on section 9. William Bridges was a near neighbor, with whom he enjoyed a temporary shelter until he had erected a log house on his land. For a while he followed his trade of carpenter, returning to the East during the interval to bring his family to their primitive home. In the breaking up of the land, oxen were in general use, as being better adapted to the work than horses, but one of the latter being in use in the neighborhood.

Mr. Hogmire purchased an interest in the pineries of Columbia township, and engaged in the manufacture of shingles, for which as the country became populated there was a considerable demand. Later he purchased 80 acres on section 21, where he built a fine brick residence and where he now resides.

Conrad Hogmire left Livingston Co., N. Y., in 1842, and located with William Bridges, on section 8. He purchased 40 acres of land, but died soon afterwards.

Henry Hogmire purchased 80 acres on section 8, cleared and built upon it a frame house. Later he removed to Paw Paw, where he died.

John Hogmire settled in 1850. He bought 80 acres upon section 20. This he soon rendered productive, and continues to reside upon it.

The name of Bigelow is also a prominent one in the annals of the township, and Livingston Co., N. Y., the former home of so large a proportion of the early pioneers, included this family in the number it sent to cultivate the forests and prairies of the West.

Rufus Bigelow came to the township during the severe winter of 1843, and purchased from a settler who had preceded him, 80 acres on section 17. Some slight improvements were made, but no habitation had been built by the former owner. He remained two years in the family of Daniel Hogmire, meanwhile building a comfortable log house. Allen Briggs and Daniel Hogmire were his nearest neighbors. The lands around him were mostly uncleared, and no roads near him were yet improved.

The tax-paying residents of the township in 1844 were James T. Hard, William Bridges, William N. Taylor, James M. Bierce, Joseph Ives, Charles Hall, William Dyckman, Samuel Goodenough, Morrison Heath, Alvinzy Harris, Allen Briggs, Emory O. Briggs, Robert McClintock, James G. Cochran, Major Heath, Amos R. Kellogg, Henry Delong, William Delong, Daniel Hogmire, Isaiah T. Hunt, E. B. D. Hicks, Elisha W. and Melancthon Gage.

Additional residents mentioned in 1845 were William Dyckman (3d), Calvin Goodenough, Rufus Bigelow, Isaac Drake, Conrad Hogmire, and Timothy Bewley.

In 1845, Calvin J. and Samuel Bigelow arrived, the latter of whom purchased 80 acres of J. R. Monroe, on section 21. Calvin J. bought 80 acres on section 20, and later, 40 additional on section 21, and 160 on section 17, a part of the latter being afterwards disposed of to J. Bridges and David Massey. Samuel lived for some years with his brother Rufus, and ultimately erected the frame house he at present occupies.

A school was early held in the Bigelow neighborhood, at the houses of the residents, Miss Ann Eliza Fisk being the presiding genius of the school-room. The first school is, however, conceded to have been in the Heath neighborhood, with Miss Mehitable Northrop as the earliest teacher. The log school-house was located upon the southeast corner of section 25, of Bangor, portions of the two townships forming a fractional school district. Early religious services were held at the houses of Mr. Bigelow and other settlers, Elder Knapp being the expounder of sacred truths to the little band of worshipers. With his sacred calling he combined the versatile gifts of an itinerant tradesman (he was sometimes familiarly spoken of as a peddler), and the excellence of his pots and kettles inspired much praise from the good housewives of his parish.

George Meabon removed from Livingston County in 1845, and remained with Daniel Hogmire while he built a log house upon 40 acres he had purchased. The industry with which he persevered in his pioneer labors has been rewarded, and his farm now embraces 200 acres of well-tilled land.

Homer Adams came from New York State in 1845, and located on section 20. He was active in the public interests of the township, and held many offices of trust. Though now a resident of Breedsville, he still owns his farm.

Ira Orton claimed Orleans County as his former home, from which he emigrated in 1845, and exchanged with A. S. Barnum land in New York State for 40 acres on section 20. With Mr. Adams, his brother-in-law, he occupied a log house that had been built and vacated by Eaton Branch, on section 29, until he could erect one on his land. Not a tree had been chopped on his purchase, excepting those felled by the Indians in search for honey. His neighbors were Melancthon and Elisha Gage, who were located on section 29, but have since removed to Lawrence. Deer were abundant, and seemed to have no sense of fear. They would frequently be seen feeding with the cattle.

Henry Earl came from New York State, and purchased on section 24, where he resided until his removal to South Haven.

Samuel Hoppin early purchased 80 acres on section 5 of Ransom Kellogg, a portion of which had been improved. He has rendered it very productive, and has erected upon it a fine brick residence, which he at present occupies.

Amos Hamlin located upon 80 acres on section 36, and still resides upon this farm, which has been perceptibly improved by his labor.

J. F. Kidder, formerly of Orleans Co., N. Y., purchased of the Ostrom Company 80 acres on section 27. An abandoned blacksmith-shop, not far away, afforded shelter for his family until more comfortable quarters were secured. He followed his trade of carpenter, and found ready employment in the erection of houses and barns for the later settlers. He was followed soon after by a pioneer named Magoon, who very speedily became weary of the privations experienced in the wilds of Michigan and departed.

#### EARLY ROADS.

During the early settlement of the township of Arlington highways were not abundant, and pioneers were occasioned much inconvenience by the obstacles that met their progress in traversing the country. The earliest surveyed highway was known as the Monroe road, which followed a diagonal course through Arlington, and connected Paw Paw with South Haven. This was followed by the Bridges road, described as "commencing at the quarter stake on the east line of section 8, township 2 south, of range 15 west; thence running north five degrees, thirty-eight chains, and eighty-five links; thence north eighty-five and a half degrees, seventy-nine chains, and fifty links to the northeast corner of said section." Surveyed July 20, 1842, by E. O. Briggs, township clerk.

Another early road between Arlington and the township of South Haven was surveyed Oct. 10, 1843, by A. Crane & Co. A road designated as the Brown and Taylor road began at the quarter post on the east side of section 7, running thence south eighty-five and a half degrees west, seventy-two and twenty-five one-hundredths chains, on the quarter line through the centre of section 7, and ending at the quarter post on the west side of said section 7. Surveyed Oct. 12, 1843, by A. Crane & Co. Other roads followed these as the presence of settlers made them indispensable.

#### CIVIL AND POLITICAL.

Township number 2 south, of range number 15 west, by an act of the State Legislature, approved March 11, 1837, became part of Lawrence township, and continued as such until 1842, when by an act of the Legislature, approved February 16th of the latter year, it was erected as a separate township under the name of Arlington.

#### FIRST TOWNSHIP-MEETING.

The first meeting of the electors of the township of Arlington was held at the house of Allen Briggs, on the 5th of April, 1842. James T. Hard, Allen Briggs, Morrison Heath, and Alvinz Harris served as inspectors of election. The officers elected were Major Heath, Supervisor; Emory O. Briggs, Township Clerk; Allen Briggs, Treasurer; Alvinz Harris, William N. Taylor, Assessors; Major Heath,

James T. Hard, Emory O. Briggs, School Inspectors; William Bridges, James T. Hard, Directors of the Poor; Joseph Ives, Alvinz Harris, James T. Hard, Highway Commissioners; William Dyckman, Allen Briggs, James T. Hard, Major Heath, Justices of the Peace; James G. Cochran, William N. Taylor, Constables.

#### TOWNSHIP OFFICERS, 1843 TO 1880.

##### SUPERVISORS.

1843-45, Major Heath; 1846-47, Isaiah F. Hunt; 1848, Abram Lewis; 1849, Major Heath; 1850-51, Homer Adams; 1852, Alvinz Harris; 1853-55, Homer Adams; 1856, Sidney Fuller; 1857-60, Emory O. Briggs; 1861, Marquis Woodward; 1862-65, Emory O. Briggs; 1866, Homer Adams; 1867, Arvin Heath; 1868-69, J. D. Harris; 1870-76, Arvin Heath; 1877-78, J. D. Harris; 1879, Orton Schermerhorn.

##### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1843, Alvinz Harris; 1844, Emory O. Briggs; 1845, Alvinz Harris; 1846, Homer Adams; 1847-54, Calvin J. Bigelow; 1855-56, M. Woodward; 1857-59, Calvin J. Bigelow; 1860-61, James B. Cushman; 1862, Calvin J. Bigelow; 1863, John Stanley; 1864, Calvin J. Bigelow; 1865, J. W. Gray; 1866, Calvin J. Bigelow; 1867, W. A. Burlingame; 1868-70, C. J. Bigelow; 1871-76, G. W. Monroe; 1877, Levi De Haven; 1878-79, M. D. Trimm.

##### TREASURERS.

1843-45, Allen Briggs; 1846-47, Homer Adams; 1848, Clark Lewis; 1849, Homer Adams; 1850-51, Alvinz Harris; 1852, Homer Adams; 1853-56, N. D. Richardson; 1857-59, Homer Adams; 1860, Marquis Woodward; 1861, Homer Adams; 1862, William A. Burlingame; 1863, J. D. Harris; 1864-66, John Stanley; 1867-76, Mitchell H. Hogmire; 1877-78, Miles Monroe; 1879, G. W. Monroe.

##### SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1843, Amos R. Kellogg, Major Heath; 1844, Emory O. Briggs; 1845, Amos R. Kellogg, Duane D. Briggs; 1846, Hezekiah More; 1847, Amos R. Kellogg; 1848, Ira Briggs; 1849, Simon M. Heath; 1850, Enoch White, Henry Earl; 1851, Marquis Woodward, Duane D. Briggs; 1852, Marquis Woodward; 1853, William A. Burlingame; 1854, S. M. Heath; 1855, Gideon Hall; 1856, Levi W. Heath; 1857, Emory O. Briggs; 1858, Levi W. Heath; 1859, J. D. Harris; 1860, Emory O. Briggs; 1861, Homer Adams; 1862, Levi W. Heath, Emory O. Briggs; 1863, J. D. Harris; 1864, Emory O. Briggs; 1865, James Washburn; 1866, J. D. Harris; 1867, Alfred B. Palmer; 1868, James Buckley; 1869, William A. Burlingame; 1870, James Buckley; 1871, A. B. Palmer; 1872, B. F. Ewing; 1873, John B. Wilcox; 1874-75, William A. Burlingame; 1876, John B. Wilcox; 1877, John E. De Haven; 1878, M. Hogmire; 1879, John E. De Haven.

##### ASSESSORS.

1843, W. N. Taylor, Daniel Hogmire; 1844, William Dyckman, Daniel Hogmire; 1845, Hezekiah More; 1847, Benjamin Herrington, James M. Bierce; 1848, A. M. Hamlin, Benjamin Herrington.

##### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1843, William H. McGeorge, James T. Hard; 1844, William Dyckman, Isaiah F. Hunt; 1845, Duane D. Briggs; 1846, Major Heath; 1847, James T. Hard; 1848, Allen Briggs; 1849, Daniel Hogmire, Samuel Hoppin; 1850, Henry Earl; 1851, Isaiah F. Hunt; 1852, L. H. Bailey, Allen Briggs; 1853, Daniel Hogmire; 1854, Henry Earl; 1855, Allen Briggs, William Dyckman; 1856, Charles Hubert, Abram Lewis; 1857, Mitchell S. Smiley; 1858, William Dyckman, E. O. Briggs; 1859, Robert C. Smith; 1860, Homer Adams, O. E. Barnum; 1861, Henry Earl; 1862, Arvin Heath, Marquis Woodward; 1863, R. C. Smith, A. M. Hamlin; 1864, Duane D. Briggs; 1865, D. Van Antwerp, W. N. Taylor; 1866, Moses L. Kidder, Erastus Cutler; 1867, A. G. Russell, Moses L. Kidder; 1868, Duane D. Briggs; 1869, John B. Wilcox; 1870, J. N. Pritchard, Jeremiah Bridges; 1871, A. G. Russell; 1872, Joseph W. Gray; 1873, A. W. Soringer; 1874, Joseph W. Gray; 1875, Arvin Chapman; 1876, Joseph W. Gray; 1877, E. B. D. Hicks, James Wright; 1878, C. J. Bigelow; 1879, Andrew Whitman, Joseph Duge.



## HIGHWAY COMMISSIONERS.

1843, J. T. Hard, Joseph Ives; 1844, William Bridges, Daniel Hogmire, Joseph Ives; 1845, E. W. Gage, J. M. Bierce, A. R. Kellogg; 1846, John P. Fisk, William N. Taylor, Elisha W. Gage; 1847, H. F. Bewin, Abram Lewis, R. M. Bigelow; 1848, William Dyckman, Joseph Ives; 1849, William Dyckman; 1850, L. H. Bailey; 1851, Marquis Woodward; 1852, William Dyckman; 1853, John Simmons; 1854, Robert Smith, Arvin Heath; 1855, Henry Earl; 1856, Arvin Heath, Samuel Hoppin; 1857, E. M. Preston, A. A. Holly; 1858, A. A. Holly, J. D. Harris; 1859, Duane D. Briggs; 1860, G. W. Monroe; 1861, Joseph W. Gray; 1862, A. A. Holly, Samuel Smiley; 1863, Samuel Monroe; 1864, A. A. Holly; 1865, J. H. Nichols; 1866, Samuel Monroe; 1867, Henry F. Northam; 1868, Philip Eckler; 1869, A. B. Palmer; 1870, Charles E. Monroe; 1871, Alanson Ives; 1872, S. S. Fuller; 1873, C. E. Monroe; 1874-76, Alanson Ives; 1877, John Stanley; 1878, C. E. Monroe; 1879, Judson J. Moses.

## DIRECTORS OF THE POOR.

1843, Allen Briggs, Joseph Ives; 1844, Isaiah F. Hunt, Alvin Harris; 1845, J. T. Hard, Isaiah F. Hunt; 1846-47, William Bridges, Samuel Goodenough; 1848-50, Morrison Heath, William N. Taylor; 1851, Joseph Ives, E. Eaton.

## DRAIN COMMISSIONERS.

1875, George Pryne; 1878, S. P. Johnston.

## SUPERINTENDENTS OF SCHOOLS.

1875-76, William A. Burlingame; 1877, A. B. Palmer; 1878, M. Hoguire; 1879, A. B. Palmer.

## CONSTABLES.

1843, Conrad Hogmire, Henry Delong, William N. Taylor, Rufus Bigelow; 1844, J. G. Hamilton, W. N. Taylor, J. M. Bierce, Conrad Hogmire; 1845, William N. Taylor, Duane D. Briggs; 1846, E. B. D. Hicks, D. D. Briggs, B. F. Stafford; 1847, Theodore Hunt, E. B. D. Hicks, Calvin Goodenough; 1848, B. F. Stafford, Thomas F. Gray, Emerson Magoon, Watson Durand; 1849, Benjamin Herrington, Duane D. Briggs; 1850, George W. Heath, Titus Kellogg, Clark Lewis, Isaac P. Ives; 1851, Samuel Bigelow, Isaac P. Ives, W. N. Taylor, D. D. Hathaway; 1852, Rufus M. Bigelow, E. M. Preston, Clark Vandervort, William Washburn; 1853, E. M. Preston, Emerson Magoon, Samuel Smiley, William Washburn; 1854, E. M. Preston, J. P. Ives, William N. Taylor, Samuel Smiley; 1855, J. P. Ives, William Delong, Asa Durin, Samuel Smiley; 1856, Asa Durin, Warren Babcock, James Kidder, J. P. Ives; 1857, Samuel Smiley, Ignatius Denoon, L. W. Heath, T. M. Hamlin; 1858, Henry Howe, A. M. Hamlin, Reuben Putney, Samuel Smiley; 1859, O. E. Barnum, A. E. Hamlin, R. M. Bigelow, Isaac Shaver; 1860, H. K. Nichols, Michael Dyckman, Nathan Whitney, John Stanley; 1861, E. C. Hazard, James Gilbert, M. T. Kidder, C. M. Bridges; 1862, O. A. Church, C. B. Babcock, David Massey, James Gilbert; 1863, Michael Dyckman, J. F. Bridges, J. E. Drake, Miles Monroe; 1864, L. A. Orton, Miles Monroe, Michael Dyckman, Theodore G. Hunt; 1865, O. A. Church, Theodore G. Hunt, E. P. Orton, E. C. Hazard; 1866, C. B. Babcock, E. S. Delong, G. E. Brainard; 1867, E. C. Hazard, Sherburn Kidder, G. E. Brainard, T. G. Thomson; 1868, Dighton Eckler, Philetus Hathaway, Charles C. Monroe, David Hogmire; 1869, C. E. Monroe, Sherburne Kidder, E. C. Hazard; 1870, E. C. Hazard, Russell Chubbuck, Abraham Helms, G. W. Monroe; 1871, E. C. Hazard, H. K. Wells, S. C. Crawford, C. I. Wright; 1872, Jasper Burrell, E. C. Hazard, Wilbur Drake, C. I. Wright; 1873, C. I. Wright, Wilbur Drake, Jasper Burrell, Abraham Helms; 1874, Russell Herrington, James Gilbert, Wilbur Drake, Myron Sanborn; 1875, A. W. Wilcox, Edward Crannell, W. W. Gurnsey, E. C. Hazard; 1876, Russell Herrington, James N. Drake, A. W. Wilcox, G. R. Heath; 1877, George Bronner, B. D. Hicks, Gabriel Dage, Perry Johnson; 1878, Frank Burrell, James Washburn, M. Thompson, Sylvester Meacham; 1879, Julian Harris, Andrew Cochran, Barney Hicks, Milton Thompson.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH.

## ALVIN CHAPMAN

is descended in a direct line from Robert Chapman, the first settler, who came from Hull, in England, to Boston, in August, 1635. He removed in the following November to Saybrook, where some of his descendants still remain.

Alvin Chapman was born in the town of Westbrook, May 26, 1827, and on the 22d of October, 1848, he married Laura Wright, also a native of Westbrook, where they continued to reside until 1855. In the year last named they removed to their present home, in Arlington, Van Buren Co., where they have since made their residence.

Mr. Chapman has been a very successful farmer; possessing a farm of great fertility, he has, by industry and good management, brought it into a high state of cultivation, with fine improvements,—a better estimation of which can be obtained from a view of them, which we give on another page.

## CHAPTER LIII.

## ALMENA TOWNSHIP.

Description of the Town and its Early Settlements—Early Mills and Mill-Owners—Township Organization and Civil List—Churches in Almena—Schools—Almena and Paw Paw Telegraph Company.

## DESCRIPTION OF THE TOWNSHIP AND ITS EARLY SETTLEMENT.

ALMENA, originally a portion of Clinch, lies upon the eastern border of Van Buren, and is known as town 2 south, range 13 west. Its boundaries are Pine Grove on the north, Antwerp on the south, Kalamazoo County on the east, and Waverly on the west.

At least one-third of the township is covered by a great swamp which extends in a northeast and southwest direction. The earliest settlements were made in the territory lying south of the swamp, although pioneers penetrated soon afterwards into the northern and western sections. Good water-power, which attracted the attention of the first white settler, is found on a fork of the Paw Paw flowing through the town towards the west, and suffices now to supply two mills.

Although the town has two post-offices, it has no village, the nearest approach to a hamlet being at Almena Mills, where there is a grist-mill and store. In the south the soil is sandy and productive. In the north there is much heavy timber and a clayey soil, although one may find in that portion also many excellent farms.

Almena's population in 1874 was 1009. Its assessed value in 1879 was \$324,000.

Tradition has erroneously referred to one Joseph Derosier, a Canadian Frenchman (probably a half-breed), as the first white settler in Almena. Derosier was doubtless the first white man who came to the township, but he was scarcely a settler. He had an *Ottawa* squaw for a wife

and squatted in 1833 upon section 23, near the swamp, where he put up a cabin, but his business was simply that of an Indian trader, guide, rover, trapper, and interpreter, but not a settler in the full meaning of the term.

There was another French Canadian (with a deaf-mute squaw for a wife), called Mousseau, who was a companion of Derosier, but, like the latter, he was nothing above an Indian hunter. Derosier was known in the town until 1854, when he died in Waverly. Mousseau died in South Haven.

The great Indian trail from Chicago to Grand Rapids passed through Alpena. It was on this trail that Derosier lived, and in the vicinity of his place, until 1845, numerous Indians of the *Pottawattamie* and *Ottawa* tribes encamped from time to time. They were chiefly hunters, fishermen, and beggars, but never occasioned the whites any trouble or even concern. Two of them tried their hands at farming, but made failures of course. Finally the red men left the region and were seen no more. The first road of any consequence laid out was the Kalamazoo and Paw Paw road, which was in its time a thoroughfare of considerable traffic. It is yet the mainly traveled highway running east and west through the southern portion of the town.

The first actual settler in Alpena was Jonas Barber, of Prairie Ronde, who came hither in the spring of 1835, and built a saw-mill on the stream flowing through section 28. Barber had land near the present grist-mill, and lived there in a shanty. He intended to build a grist-mill at that point, but abandoned the idea.

Before Barber's advent, however, Junia Warner, Jr., Horace Bonfoey, and one Potter came from New York to Alpena, in the spring of 1834, in search of land. Warner entered 240 acres, lying in both Alpena and Antwerp; Bonfoey located a tract on section 29, in Alpena; Potter declined to make a location, and with Warner and Bonfoey returned to New York.

In the spring of the following year (1835) Warner, his father (also named Junia), and Horace Bonfoey came again to Alpena, for the purpose of preparing their land for permanent settlement. Warner and his father bought a few boards at Jonas Barber's mill, and putting up a cabin on section 31 began at once to clear some land, and having put in a crop and built a double log house, Junia, Jr., went back to New York for his family, while the elder Warner concluded to remain at Kalamazoo, where he labored at his trade as mason until September of the same year, when Junia, Jr., reaching Kalamazoo with his family, on his way to Alpena, the old gentleman joined them, and all were soon installed upon the Alpena farm, where they found a fairly comfortable home in the log house built by father and son the previous summer. The widow of Junia Warner, Jr., lives now in Paw Paw, and in describing their trip from Detroit to Alpena says, "We traveled in a wagon drawn by three oxen, and although we made but fifteen miles a day, we were kept mighty busy at that." Junia Warner, Jr., who had been a Methodist circuit preacher in New York, continued to preach more or less in the West from the time of his settlement in Alpena until

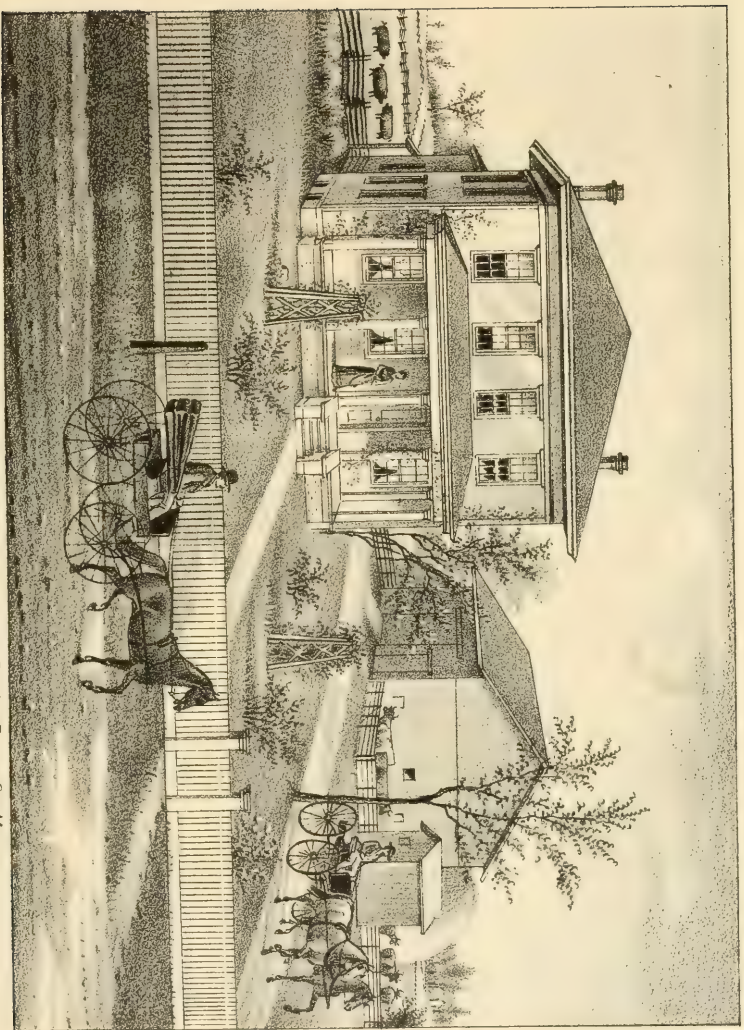
his death there, in 1847. He was known far and wide as Elder Warner, and although averse to preaching, because of ill health, he was so persistently called, from here and there, to preach a funeral sermon or organize a church, that he could not well avoid ministerial labor, and, as a consequence, he was almost as busy as a preacher as he was as a farmer. His widow now lives in Paw Paw, hale and vigorous, at the age of seventy-four. His father died in Alpena in 1841. His mother died in Paw Paw, January, 1880, at the advanced age of ninety-six.

Horace Bonfoey, who came with the Warners in the spring of 1835, was from Otsego Co., N. Y., and made a settlement in Alpena, upon section 29, where he lived until his death, Jan. 11, 1873. At the time of his location he, the Warners, Jonas Barber, and Derosier were the only white inhabitants of Alpena. Of Mr. Bonfoey's children, those now living in Alpena are Russell W. Bonfoey and Cyrena Hall.

In the fall of 1834, William Ranney, and John, his son, Campbell Waldo, Frederick Krull, Alvin Hall, Russell Palmer, and Freeman Hall came to Alpena in company on a land-hunting expedition. Ranney bought land on sections 14, 23, 25, and 26; Palmer and Krull on section 24; Freeman Hall on section 26; and Alvin Hall on the same section, adjoining Freeman's place. Of the seven, however, John Ranney and Freeman Hall were the only ones who became actual settlers. Returning East with the rest of the company after the lands were located, John Ranney came West again alone in 1835, and made a settlement on section 25, upon land his father had located. Ranney was a bachelor, and the story goes that when he left his New York home for the West he was engaged to be married to a charming girl, and the understanding was that he was soon to return for the wedding. The girl, however, speedily proved false to her vows, and not long after John's departure married an idle, brainless fellow. Ranney took the matter so much to heart that he forsook womankind and resolved to die a bachelor. Meanwhile, the girl who had jilted him led a sorry life with her worthless husband, who, fortunately for her, died before many years. She wrote to Ranney informing him of the event, thinking, it might be, that his heart still warmed towards her, and that she might win him back; but Ranney paid no heed to her communication, and she died not long after in an insane asylum. True to his resolve, Ranney lived a bachelor, and died on his Alpena farm in 1863.

Willard Newcomb, who bought of Potter (he who came west with the Warners in 1834) land entered by the latter in Alpena, settled in the town in 1835, and put up a blacksmith-shop on section 29. Freeman Hall, who came to Alpena in 1834 with the land-looking party of seven, returned hither in 1836, and effected a permanent settlement on section 26, which has since been his home. When he settled, there were in the town only the Warners, the Newcombs, the Bonfoeys, John Ranney, and Mears the miller.

Samuel C. Annable, now a resident of Alpena, came to the town with his family in November, 1835, and settled upon a farm in sections 23 and 26, previously located by



RESIDENCE OF ALONZO W. STEVENS, ALMENA T<sup>R</sup>, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





his father-in-law, William Ranney. He found a temporary home for his family in John Ranney's log cabin, and in the spring of 1836 built a comfortable house on his own place.

Asahel S. Downing, a resident of Cayuga Co., N. Y., migrated to Alma in the spring of 1836, with his family and his father-in-law, Isaac Barnum. They went first to Paw Paw, and stopped six weeks with Edwin Barnum. Downing and the elder Barnum then went into Alma and bought land on sections 29, 32, and 33 of Willard Newcomb and Horace Bonfoey. The mill-site now occupied by Brewer's mill was on the property, and there Barnum intended to erect a grist-mill, but before the undertaking was commenced he was stricken with apoplexy, and died the year following his settlement in the town. Downing assisted Mr. Barnum to put in a crop of wheat, and then moved to a place of his own on section 28, where he put up a frame house in 1837, and in that house—since then enlarged and improved—he still lives. Mr. Downing's residence was the first framed house of any consequence erected in town. Downing opened also a blacksmith-shop on his place, and carried it on for more than twenty years.

Henry, son of Isaac Barnum, lived with his father until the latter's death, and then settled upon section 29, remaining there until his death, in 1856.

Isaac Barnum had come West in 1835, and determining then to be a settler when he should come again the following year, he resolved to provide a supply of wheat beforehand, and so purchased a quantity of Dr. Brown, of Prairie Ronde. When Mr. Barnum came out in 1836 he sent Mr. Downing over to Brown's to get the wheat, with instructions also to take it to mill. When Downing reached Brown's he learned that the latter had gone to Virginia on a visit, carrying the key of the barn with him. Downing returned home without the wheat, but on a second trip secured it and carried it to Redmond's mill in Prairie Ronde. The miller being unable to grind the grist then, Downing went home empty-handed a second time.

Two days afterwards he went to Redmond's for his flour, and he was told that the people of the neighborhood having voted Redmond's mill-pond a pestilence-breeding nuisance, had torn the dam away, and so there was Barnum's grist yet unground, and the family at home waiting for the bread which came not. Downing was much discouraged, but he loaded up the wheat once more and carried it to Comstock's mill, four miles east of Kalamazoo. There he left it, and returning in two days, eventually secured his flour, greatly to his joy no doubt, for in the work of securing it he had made four trips to mill, traveled about one hundred and forty miles, and consumed ten days of his time.

Between 1836 and 1840 the settlements were quite numerous, and included those of John Campbell, Albert Fosdick, Bridget Finley and her five sons, Nahum Eager, Chauncey Abbott, Asa Crofoot, Blakelee Burns, Abel Burns, Jacob Plank, T. C. Benton, Samuel Turner, — Libby, and others.

Asa Crofoot visited Alma in 1835, and entered 160 acres on sections 25 and 26. He made a small clearing,

and then went to Schoolcraft, where he obtained employment, and from time to time, as he could, he improved his Alma farm. In 1844 he married, and in that year located permanently in Alma, and still lives on the place he entered in 1835.

Chauncey Abbott, living on section 23, settled there in 1840, after a two years' residence in Oshtemo. Bridget Finley settled on section 12 in 1839, with six children, of whom Michael and James had farms of their own. Mrs. Finley died in 1864, on the place now occupied by her son James. About the time of the advent of the Finleys, Harvey Fosdick and John Campbell settled in that neighborhood. Amasa Tenney, now on section 28, came to Michigan in 1838, and to Alma in 1840, where he bought a farm of Asahel S. Downing. John Maxfield and wife, parents of Mr. Tenney's wife, came out at the same time, but did not like the country and went back to New York.

Samuel B. Fisk, a mill-wright and house-carpenter, located in Lawrence in 1844, and in the fall of that year settled in Alma, which has since been his home. Samuel Mills bought land on section 34 in 1843, and lived there until his death, in 1860. His son, E. P., now resides on the farm. Allen McPherson settled on section 36 in 1845, and in 1846 Samuel Hayden on section 34, Jacob Erkenback on section 36, and W. F. French on section 23.

Alva T. Stevens was a settler in Alma in 1837. He lived afterwards in Kalamazoo, but finally returned to Antwerp, where he located permanently on land he entered (in Alma and Antwerp) in 1837, and where he died in 1865. His son, A. W., resides now in Alma.

L. A. Brown, now a resident of Alma, came hither with his uncle, Julius Wilson, in 1856. Foster Johnson and N. W. Waite, although settlers in Michigan in 1837, did not come to Alma until 1861. O. H. P. Sheldon, who settled in Antwerp in 1846, did not become a resident of Alma until 1871.

The pioneers of Alma were not called upon to endure the average hardships experienced by settlers in many parts of Van Buren County, for to those in the south especially Paw Paw was close at hand, with its conveniences of civilization, while the country itself, composed of fine oak openings, was easily penetrated, and had accessible roadways everywhere. The year 1838 was the sickly year, and many people died of fever and ague. So prevalent was the disease that there were at one time but three well persons in the entire town,—Mrs. Isaac Barnum, Horace Bonfoey, and a colored farm-hand named Henderson. These three looked after the sick ones, and certainly had their hands full.

Exciting adventures with wolves were not infrequent among the settlers. Mr. F. C. Annable relates how he was coming home one night from an Indian camp, with two venison hams strung across his shoulder, and how the wolves chased him. He ran for life, and made up his mind to sacrifice the hams to his hungry pursuers; but fortune favored him, so that he reached home in safety, hams and all. "But bless you," says he, "I was the worst scared young man you ever heard of." The "big swamp" was a dreaded place, and nearly every pioneer of Alma was lost in its mazes at one time or another, until they began to find out that to follow the streams up would be

sure to lead to an opening. After that the danger of being lost in the swamp frightened no one.

On the north side of the swamp the first settlement was made by Nathan Williams and his son-in-law, John Condon, who came to Almena in the summer of 1836, and made a clearing on section 12. In the following year they crossed the swamp, and making a location on section 4, lived there until 1865, when they, with their families, moved to Iowa. Condon was equally noted as a farmer, fiddler, hunter, and trapper. He owned an exceedingly well-trained wolf-dog, and the State, county, and town bounty aggregating \$30 on each wolf-scalp. Condon gathered first and last a bountiful harvest of dollars from that source.

Next in order of settlement in the region north of the swamp came Jacob Currier and David Showerman. The latter had been at work in Gremps' saw-mill at Paw Paw two years, when, in 1838, he settled on section 7, in Almena, on the Allegan road, and there, after a while, opened a tavern. He died in Almena in 1863.

Currier, who had been engaged in milling, with Morrill and others, in the southern portion of the town, made a settlement on section 7, and being by trade a machinist, set up a small shop on his place, which fronted the Allegan road. He died there in 1844. His widow married William Markille, who came to Waverly in 1843, and to Almena in 1845, since when he has occupied the old Currier farm. William H. Stephens, now living on section 4, was a bachelor when he made a settlement there, about 1840, and he has lived there ever since.

James Ketchum, who lives on section 9, says that when he came there, in 1843, with his father Elibu, the settlers on the south side of the swamp included Newton Canady, Nathan and Joseph Williams, John Condon, Henry Van Tassell, Jerome Thrasher, Daniel Frary, and William H. Stevens.

Henry Campbell, a New Yorker, came to Almena in 1838, and worked at the company's saw-mill until 1839, when he married a daughter of Willard Newcomb and made a settlement in Waverly. Leaving there in 1844, he located in Almena, upon section 8, where he died in 1872, leaving a widow who still survives him.

Thomas Clark, from New York, lived in Almena a year before locating, in 1847, upon a farm in section 18, where Alvin Crowell had preceded him as a settler. Mr. Clark still lives on the place, and his sons, James, Robert, and William, are living in the town. Silas Breed, the founder of Breedsville, in 1835, moved from there to Antwerp, and afterwards, in 1851, to section 7, in Almena, having bought the place of John Crowell, a previous settler thereon. Mr. Breed died in 1878. His widow and her son Silas now occupy the farm.

J. W. Stoughton, who came to Michigan with his father in 1824, became himself a settler in Oakland County in 1844, and in 1856 removing to a place in Almena previously occupied by Josiah Hopkins, has lived there to the present day.

The first birth among the settlers in the township was that of a child of Elder Warner. The same child was also

the first to die in the new settlement,—the year of its birth and death being 1836. Isaac Barnum, whose death occurred in 1837, was probably the first adult person who died in Almena. Interments were made upon the Warner place until 1840, when the Almena cemetery was laid out. At that time seven bodies were transferred from other places and interred in the public burial-ground. The second child born was a son to Jacob Currier, Dec. 9, 1838. His name is George S. Currier, and from his birth to the present day he has been a resident of Almena. The first marriage was that of Alonzo Cobb, a school-teacher, to a daughter of Willard Newcomb,—Charles M. Morrill, justice of the peace, performing the ceremony.

The jury list of the township in 1842 was as follows: Jacob S. Currier, Roswell Cook, Jacob H. Van Antwerp, Amasa Tenney, Willard Newcomb, Benjamin Eager, C. H. Abbott, Nathan Eager, David Showerman, J. H. Rockwell.

The voters in the town in 1843 numbered 18; in 1844 they were 34; in 1845 there was an increase of 54; in 1857 to 137; in 1861 to 144; and in 1874 to 224.

#### EARLY MILLS AND MILL-OWNERS.

As already chronicled, Jonas Barber built a saw-mill on section 28 in 1835, and after operating it a short time, disposed of it to Maj. Edwin Mears, of Paw Paw. In 1836 he sold it to a company composed of Charles M. Morrill, Nathaniel Livermore, Jacob Currier, and Thomas Brown, who came there from Lowell, Mass., in the year named. They pursued the business on a large scale, and did also something in the way of farming upon adjacent land. The company gave up the business after carrying it on a few years, Livermore removing to Paw Paw in 1847, and then returning to Massachusetts. Jacob Currier bought a farm on section 7, and lived there until his death, in 1844. Morrill farmed afterwards on the Territorial road in Antwerp; he engaged later in milling in Pine Grove, and removed ultimately to Lawton, where he now lives. Thomas Brown went back to Massachusetts after closing out his interest in the Almena mill. The mill property passed to the possession of Daniel O. Dodge, and was best known as the Dodge mill. Walter Wise endeavored at a later date to utilize the power in the manufacture of heavy paper, but the scheme proved unsuccessful. The only saw-mill in the town now is the one on section 28, known as Brewer's mill.

Prior to 1838 the nearest grist-mill was at Kalamazoo, but in that year Gremps & Willard's mill at Paw Paw furnished more accessible facilities. The first grist-mill erected in Almena was put up in 1859 by S. W. Fisk. That mill-site was originally owned by Jonas Barber, who contemplated the erection there of a grist-mill, but reconsidering his determination sold the property to Stout & Co., of Kalamazoo, from whom Horace Bonfoey purchased it, and put up on it a saw-mill and carding-machine.

#### MAIL SERVICE.

The southern portion of the town was for years supplied with mail facilities only at Paw Paw, until the creation in 1856 of an office called Brewerville, at Brewer's mill, where



Brewer also opened a store. Lawrence Brewer was appointed the first postmaster, and when the office was removed to the neighborhood of Fisk's grist-mill, and the name changed to Almena, Samuel B. Fisk was appointed. His successors in the office to the present time have been Simeon Brown, Ira Johnson, William R. Cotter, Russell W. Bonfoey, and Hubbard H. Hill.

Waverly post-office, now in Almena north of the swamp, was originally established in Waverly township. Dr. Babbitt, who was instrumental in having the office established, was the first postmaster. Orlando H. Newcomb was Babbitt's successor, and upon Newcomb's death, the present incumbent, Hiram Goble, was appointed. In 1874 the office was removed from Waverly to Almena township.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL LIST.

One of the seven towns created in 1837, when Van Buren was divided, was the town of Clinch, which embraced what are now the townships of Waverly, Almena, Bloomingdale, and Pine Grove. There was considerable discussion in reference to the name to be given the original town, and without coming to any agreement the inhabitants sent their petition to the Legislature with the various proposed names attached, and suggested that a choice might be made from the list. When they learned how the town was named the impression was that the name of Clinch had been given as an intimation to the citizens that instead of differing so widely in the matter of christening they ought to have been more harmoniously *clinched*. It proved, however, that I. W. Clary, member of the Legislature, had chosen the name in honor of Judge Clinch, of Georgia, whom he greatly admired. When, in 1842, the town of Clinch was divided, F. C. Annable, then in the Legislature, presented the petition for a division, and named both new towns,—the western half Waverly and the eastern half Almena. At that time Indian names were in favor for new towns, and Mr. Annable, recollecting something about an Indian princess known as Almena, bestowed that name upon his own town. In 1848 the northern half of Almena was set off and organized as a township with the name of Pine Grove.

Appended will be found a full list of those who have been elected since 1842 to the offices of supervisor, clerk, treasurer, and justice of the peace.

- 1842.—Supervisor, Charles M. Morrill; Clerk, Junia Warner; Treasurer, H. Barnum; Justice of the Peace, J. S. Currier.
- 1843.—Supervisor, Samuel Turner; Clerk, G. H. Brown; Treasurer, Junia Warner; Justice of the Peace, A. Tenney.
- 1844.—Supervisor, J. A. Ranney; Clerk, G. H. Brown; Treasurer, F. C. Annable; Justice of the Peace, A. S. Downing.
- 1845.—Supervisor, J. A. Ranney; Clerk, G. H. Brown; Treasurer, F. C. Annable; Justice of the Peace, Samuel Mills.
- 1846.—Supervisor, G. H. Brown; Clerk, Samuel Turner; Treasurer, J. B. Hudson; Justice of the Peace, D. Showerman.
- 1847.—Supervisor, Henry Barnum; Clerk, G. H. Brown; Treasurer, J. B. Hudson; Justice of the Peace, Samuel Turner.
- 1848.—Supervisor, Henry Barnum; Clerk, O. J. Heusted; Treasurer, Freeman Hall; Justice of the Peace, J. A. Chase.
- 1849.—Supervisor, J. B. Hudson; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, Freeman Hall; Justice of the Peace, Samuel Mills.
- 1850.—Supervisor, F. C. Annable; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, Elam Warner; Justice of the Peace, David Showerman.
- 1851.—Supervisor, F. C. Annable; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, F. Hall; Justice of the Peace, Amasa Tenney.

- 1852.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, F. Hall; Justice of the Peace, A. S. Downing.
- 1853.—Supervisor, J. A. Ranney; Clerk, J. G. Brown; Treasurer, Asa Hoyt; Justice of the Peace, B. F. Stevens.
- 1854.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, Asa Hoyt; Justice of the Peace, Josiah Hopkins.
- 1855.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, Asa Hoyt; Justice of the Peace, A. S. Downing.
- 1856.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, Asa Hoyt; Justice of the Peace, N. H. Soule.
- 1857.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, Abner Soule; Treasurer, Asa Hoyt; Justice of the Peace, D. Showerman.
- 1858.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, Asa Hoyt; Treasurer, Chauncey Palmer; Justice of the Peace, Samuel Mills.
- 1859.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, Asa Hoyt; Treasurer, Chauncey Palmer; Justice of the Peace, Chauncey Abbott.
- 1860.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. L. Warner; Treasurer, Chauncey Palmer; Justice of the Peace, Asa Crofoot.
- 1861.—Supervisor, C. B. Palmer; Clerk, E. L. Warner; Treasurer, A. Bonfoey; Justice of the Peace, A. Herron.
- 1862.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. L. Warner; Treasurer, C. B. Palmer; Justice of the Peace, Jesse Wilson.
- 1863.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. L. Warner; Treasurer, C. B. Palmer; Justice of the Peace, C. H. Abbott.
- 1864.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. L. Warner; Treasurer, C. B. Palmer; Justice of the Peace, James Stoughton.
- 1865.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, R. W. Bonfoey; Justice of the Peace, Charles Dean.
- 1866.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. D. Whitney; Treasurer, Jesse Wilson; Justice of the Peace, Allen Watson.
- 1867.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. D. Whitney; Treasurer, Jesse Wilson; Justice of the Peace, C. H. Abbott.
- 1868.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. D. Whitney; Treasurer, Jesse Wilson; Justice of the Peace, George W. Myers.
- 1869.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, E. D. Whitney; Treasurer, Jesse Wilson; Justice of the Peace, C. B. Palmer.
- 1870.—Supervisor, Silas Breed; Clerk, I. H. Johnson; Treasurer, Jesse Wilson; Justice of the Peace, Asa Crofoot.
- 1871.—Supervisor, S. W. Fisk; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, L. A. Brown; Justice of the Peace, C. H. Abbott.
- 1872.—Supervisor, S. W. Fisk; Clerk, W. F. French; Treasurer, L. A. Brown; Justice of the Peace, C. W. Brown.
- 1873.—Supervisor, W. F. French; Clerk, A. D. Stocking; Treasurer, L. A. Brown; Justice of the Peace, W. H. Stevens.
- 1874.—Supervisor, W. F. French; Clerk, A. D. Stocking; Treasurer, L. A. Brown; Justice of the Peace, A. H. Lockwood.
- 1875.—Supervisor, W. F. French; Clerk, A. D. Stocking; Treasurer, P. N. Teed; Justice of the Peace, C. Goodwin.
- 1876.—Supervisor, J. H. Darling; Clerk, A. D. Stocking; Treasurer, P. N. Teed; Justice of the Peace, C. H. Abbott.
- 1877.—Supervisor, J. H. Darling; Clerk, C. B. Palmer; Treasurer, P. N. Teed; Justice of the Peace, J. D. Abbott.
- 1878.—Supervisor, W. H. Stevens; Clerk, Frank Cure; Treasurer, Samuel Hayden; Justice of the Peace, N. Lillibridge.
- 1879.—Supervisor, C. B. Palmer; Clerk, S. A. Breed; Treasurer, P. N. Teed; Justice of the Peace, C. Goodwin.

#### CHURCHES IN ALMENA.

In the southern portion of the town Elder Warner used to preach the Methodist doctrine to the pioneers, and north of the swamp the settlers enjoyed the benefits of religion through Baptist and Methodist societies organized in Waverly shortly after 1840.

The *Free-Will Baptist Church of Waverly*, although organized in the latter town and still retaining the old name, has its church edifice in Almena, a short distance across the line, on Covey Hill. The organization was effected in 1843, at the house of Isaac Brown, in Waverly, with 13 members, whose names were Harvilad Thayer and wife, Jonah Austin and wife, Isaac Brown and wife, Jephtha Waterman, Lucy Herron, Lucinda Aldrich, Peter Haines

and wife, Polly Marble, and Elizabeth Brown. Rev. Peter Haines, who organized the church, lived in Cooper, Kalamazoo Co., and for a year or more came over to preach in Waverly once a month. Services were held in private houses until 1844, when the Bell school-house being built, that was occupied as a house of worship. Until 1866, various school-houses in Waverly and Alma were used, but in that year the present church edifice in Alma was erected. The first deacons were Harvland Thayer and Isaac Brown. The pastor to succeed Mr. Haines was Rev. W. H. H. Myers, of Bloomingdale, who filled the pastorate about twenty years. After him came Elders Darling, Stanford, Whittaker, Keyser, Prescott, and Mrs. Annie Barton, —the latter now occupying the pulpit. The church membership is about 75, and that of the Sabbath-school (of which Silas A. Breed is superintendent) is 100. The deacons of the church are C. M. Brown and David Loveland.

*The First Methodist Episcopal Church of Alma* was organized in 1853, and attached to the Oshtemo circuit, with Mattawan, Genesee Prairie, and the "Hurd" district. The members of the first class were five in number,—Philip Teed and wife, James North and wife, and Ann Smith. Philip Teed, who was chosen class-leader at the outset, has served in that capacity uninterruptedly until the present time. Among the early pastors were Revs. Wilson, Williams (under whose ministry many members were added to the church), Watson, Beach, Hendrickson, Haviland, and Hoag.

The Alma school-house was used as a place of worship until 1869, when the church now in use was occupied. It was dedicated in December of that year, the dedication sermon being preached by Dr. Joslyn, of Grand Rapids. The church is now in the Mattawan circuit, and has a membership of 14. The pastor is Rev. S. C. Woodman, and the trustees P. N. Teed, Hubbard Hill, and Abel Burns.

*The Free-Will Baptist Church of Alma* was organized in May, 1877, at the Methodist Episcopal church, with a membership of 40. The deacons then appointed were G. W. Failing and Martin Erkenbeck, who still serve. Elder Darling, who organized the church, was the first pastor. Elder Roberts preaches now once in two weeks in a public hall at Alma Mills. The church has now a membership of 30, and the Sunday-school an attendance of 50.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school taught in the town was held in the Warner settlement in a log cabin. The first teacher was Elizabeth Merry, a sister of the wife of Elder Junia Warner, and after her the teachers were Miss Myers and a Mrs. Palmer. East of that a log school-house was put up near where the grist-mill stands, and in that a Mr. Hurd, first, and then F. C. Annable taught a subscription school.

Statistics of the public schools of Alma are given below, as found in the school report of 1879, viz.: Number of children of school age, 303; average attendance, 262; value of school property, \$3110; amount paid for teachers' wages, \$849. List of school directors at date of report: District No. 2, G. W. Failing; No. 3 (fractional), G. W. Van Dorn; No. 4, D. C. Lockman; No. 5, C. B.

Palmer; No. 7, W. Roland; No. 8 (fractional), F. Cure; No. 9 (fractional), G. R. Palmer; No. 10, George Lemon.

#### ALMA AND PAW PAW TELEGRAPH COMPANY.

This company was organized in 1876, by Edward Annable and others, and duly incorporated under the laws of the State, for the purpose of providing telegraphic communication between Alma and Paw Paw, as well as to afford similar conveniences to persons living on the route.

The company has now seven miles of wire in operation, and is doing excellent service, not only in the way of convenience of communication, but in the matter of furnishing practical experience in telegraphy to each of its patrons, all of whom have the privilege of direct communication from their homes with any point on the line. Edward Annable, chosen the first president, still serves in that capacity.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### EDWARD P. MILLS.

Philo Mills, the grandfather of the above-named gentleman, was born in Connecticut, about 1770, and not long after 1800 removed to Livingston Co., N. Y. He had a family of fourteen children, of whom Samuel Mills, the father of Edward, was the oldest, his birth occurring in 1803 in Connecticut. He was, like his father, a farmer by occupation. In 1843, Samuel Mills settled in Alma township, Van Buren Co., Mich., on the farm now owned by his son, E. P. Mills. He was a very ambitious, enterprising citizen, and did his duty as a pioneer, and no doubt his struggles incident to the improvement of a large farm, hastened his death. He was the father of nine children, who are all living but one, and six of whom came to Michigan with him. They were named as follows:

Henry, the oldest, is now in the mercantile business at Howell, Livingston Co., Mich., where he married the eldest daughter of William McPherson, an old settler and prominent citizen of the place.

Lyman, who married a daughter of William Sprague, of Oshtemo, Kalamazoo Co., is now living the greater portion of the time in Howell. His wife is deceased, and his daughter is the wife of Mr. Badger, of the "Burdick House" at Kalamazoo.

Julia, married to Owen P. Morton, of Texas township, Kalamazoo Co., where she resides with her husband.

Edward P., is now living in Alma.

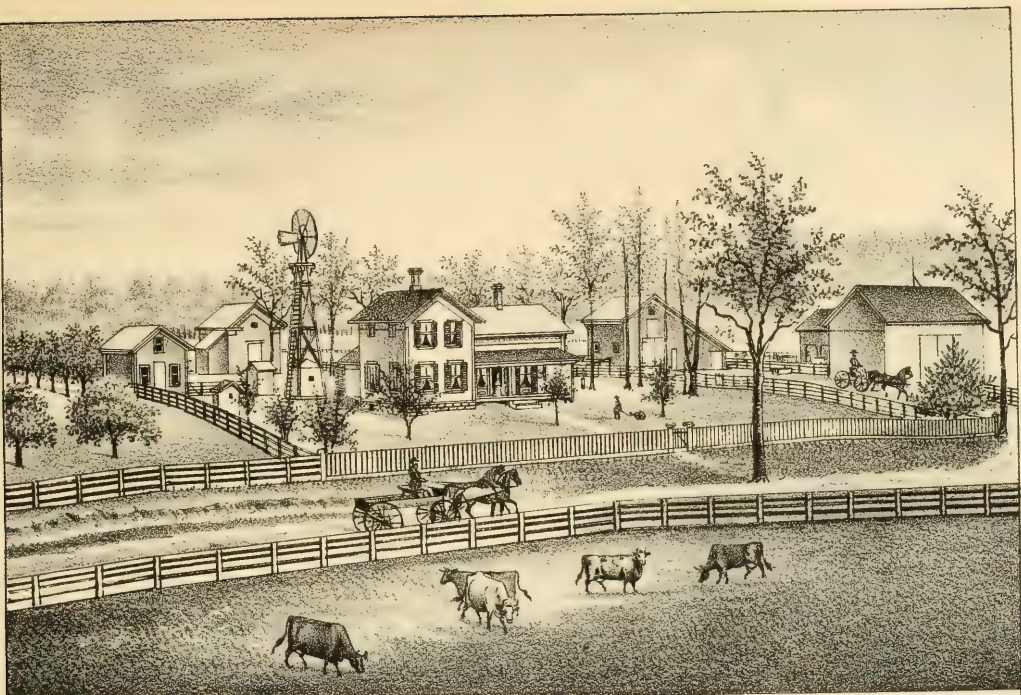
Lucius W., a teacher by profession, a graduate of the normal school at Ypsilanti, taught three years in the upper peninsula of Michigan, and in 1879 at Plainwell, Allegan Co. Married Laura, daughter of Dr. Kinney, of Ypsilanti, and is now teaching at Lawrence, Van Buren Co.

Mary E. died in infancy.

Harriet E. married Dr. J. P. Stoddard, of Albion, Calhoun Co., his father being also a physician, and recently removed from Albion to Muskegon, Mich.

Eugene W. married Nellie Hubbard, of Paw Paw, Van Buren Co., and is now carrying on a farm in California.





RESIDENCE OF ASA CROFOOT, ALMENA, MICHIGAN.



RESIDENCE OF EDWARD P. MILLS, ALMENA TP, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





Frances A. taught in various high schools at Albion and elsewhere, and was married to F. A. Wheelock, a dry-goods merchant of that place.

These children were all teachers, except Eugene, and were engaged in numerous district and public schools. Maria Warner, the wife of Samuel Mills, was also a native of Connecticut, and the daughter of David Warner. She was one of a large family of children, and when very young removed with her parents to Livingston Co., N. Y., where she was married to Mr. Mills. Samuel Mills died in 1860, on the farm now owned by his son, where by industry and economy he acquired a competency, and was respected by all who knew him. His widow is living with their youngest daughter, Frances, at Albion, Mich.

After the death of his father Edward P. Mills purchased the interest of the other heirs, and owns and occupies the old homestead. Aside from his attendance at the district schools, he spent about a year at school in Paw Paw. His life as a teacher lasted through six terms of district school. At the age of twenty-two, until which time he had remained on his father's farm, he took a farm "on shares," working upon it summers and teaching school in winters. He was born Aug. 11, 1834, in Livingston Co., N. Y., and was therefore but a youth when he came to Michigan. July 3, 1859, he was married to Miss Phoebe A. Winslow, daughter of Samuel and Eunice Winslow, of Antwerp, Van Buren Co., Mich. Until 1867 he lived in different parts of the county, but in the latter year purchased the old farm of his father, and has since resided upon it. Mr. Mills and his wife are both members of the Presbyterian Church at Paw Paw. Politically, Mr. Mills is a Republican, and has held several offices of trust and responsibility in town, county, and in the church. Whenever improvements have been discussed in his township or county, Mr. Mills has been among the foremost to proffer aid and to urge on the work to completion. As a man and a citizen he stands very high in the estimation of all who know him. He is, without ostentation, a true gentleman, and his wife is a most estimable lady, and with such attributes as they possess the home of Mr. and Mrs. Mills cannot fail to be a happy one, although no children have added their sunshine to it. The stranger at their door feels a genial presence, and adds his testimony to that of others as to the excellence of this worthy couple. May the hand of Time rest lightly upon, and Providence continue to give them prosperity.

#### ASA CROFOOT.

Mr. Crofoot's ancestors were from Massachusetts. His father, Joseph Crofoot, was a native of that State, and a farmer by occupation; the latter's wife was also born in the Old Bay State. This couple moved to Cayuga Co., N. Y., and lived in the township of Aurelius, near the city of Auburn, where they both died, the husband about 1870-71, and the wife some years previous.

Asa Crofoot was born in the township named on the 8th of June, 1814. His parents' means were limited, and the boy earned most of the money to pay for his schooling,

attending the district schools of the day. When nine or ten years old he left home and went to Ontario Co., N. Y., where he lived about four years with an uncle near Canandaigua. Returning to Aurelius, he found employment at farming, and continued until his removal West. On the 3d of March, 1836, he left Auburn and started for Michigan, arriving in what is now Almena township, Van Buren Co., about the middle of the month. The trip was made with a horse and cutter through Canada. He had placed a saddle in the sleigh before starting, to be used in case the sleighing was not good, but did not find it necessary to take it out, as the snow was unusually deep for the season. That winter is recollected as having been especially severe, and the snow remained on the ground until quite late in the spring. Mr. Crofoot purchased two eighty-acre lots from the government, the deed being signed by President Van Buren. His means were then exhausted, and he at once sought for employment. Proceeding to Schoolcraft, Kalamazoo Co., he found an old friend in the person of Ira Lyon, uncle of Lucius Lyon, the surveyor. He hired out to him, and continued in his employ about nine years, in the meanwhile hiring some clearing and breaking done on his farm in Almena. Dec. 8, 1844, he married Ira Lyon's daughter, Charlotte Augusta, and early in March, 1845, located with his wife on the farm,—the same he now occupies,—moving into the frame house which had been erected by his orders. When Mr. Crofoot first came to the township, in 1836, it contained but two or three settlers, and the Indians many times outnumbered the white inhabitants. Mrs. Crofoot gave birth to a daughter—Charlotte A. Crofoot—on the 14th of April, 1847, and on the same day her soul went to join the innumerable throng "waiting the judgment day." The daughter was married, April 22, 1865, to Henry French, of Almena township, and is now living in Montcalm Co., Mich. On the 26th of January, 1856, Mr. Crofoot was married to Eleanor Erkenbeck, daughter of Jacob and Helen Erkenbeck, of Almena township. She was born in Johnstown, Montgomery Co., N. Y., Nov. 17, 1829, and came with her parents to Almena in the fall of 1846, settling on the farm where her widowed mother now resides, her father having died Nov. 8, 1877. Mr. and Mrs. Crofoot are the parents of the following children, viz.: Euphemia, Frank, Fred (who died at the age of three), Eva M., Asa E., all of whom are living at home. Mr. Crofoot has increased his home-farm to two hundred and twenty-five acres, and is the owner of several others. He belongs to no religious organization; his wife is a member of the Dunkard Church. Mr. Crofoot was a Democrat until, as he says, the scales fell from his eyes, under the administration of President Buchanan, since which time he has been a Republican. Although not an active worker in the political field, he has held a few township offices, and was commissioner of highways for twenty-one years. He was one of the early members of the grange, and has long been a director in both the County Agricultural Society and the Van Buren County Mutual Fire Insurance Company. After working for others at stipulated wages for twenty years, he has amassed a comfortable amount of this world's goods, and undoubtedly enjoys their possession.



JACOB ERKENBECK.

## JACOB ERKENBECK.

This gentleman's life has been comparatively uneventful, so far as concerns the public, or society in general, and yet he has taken his full share of life's burdens and duties, and performed them faithfully, although unostentatiously. As one of the early settlers of this portion of Van Buren County, he is entitled to honorable mention. He was a native of the State of New York, and was born March 18, 1801. Dec. 19, 1824, he was married to Helen Cole, who survives him. Mr. and Mrs. Erkenbeck were the parents of eight children, as follows: Cornelius, born Oct. 18, 1825; Maria, born June 25, 1827, died Aug. 22, 1866; Eleanor, born Nov. 17, 1829; Catharine, born Nov. 25, 1831; Wil-



MRS. JACOB ERKENBECK.

liam, born Feb. 10, 1834; Nicholas, born Feb. 25, 1836, died May 23, 1866; Martin, born Sept. 14, 1838; John, born June 1, 1845.

In the fall of 1846, Mr. Erkenbeck removed to Michigan with his family, and settled on the farm now occupied by his widow. He purchased eighty acres of land, and paid for it by trading off his team and wagon. It was very much of a struggle for him to take care of his family, but he finally triumphed over hardships and difficulties, and at his death, which occurred Nov. 8, 1877, he left them in good circumstances. His occupation was that of a farmer, and in it he was ultimately successful. Both he and his wife were members of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

## ALONZO W. STEVENS.

Silas Stevens, the great-grandfather of Alonzo, was a soldier in the war of the Revolution, and the worn old powder-horn which he carried is now in the possession of Jared A. Stevens, of Florence, Ala. He was born May 20, 1755, in Southwick, Mass., and married Lucy Simons, who was born Aug. 30, 1752; moved to Herkimer Co., N. Y., 1796. Their children were seven in number,—three sons and four daughters. Their son, Jared Stevens (grandfather of Alonzo W. Stevens), was born May 3, 1782, and married Mary Brown, who was born Jan. 10, 1785. They became the parents of eight children,—five sons and three daughters.

Alvah T. Stevens, the father of Alonzo, was the oldest in the family of Jared and Mary Stevens, and was born Nov. 16, 1806. On the 21st of June, 1832, he was married to Lucy Hubbard, and by her he had four children,—four sons and two daughters. His wife died in 1852, and he afterwards married Mrs. Laura Love, a widow residing in Cass Co., Mich. By her he had four children,—two sons and two daughters. Of the ten children, all are

living but two. One son, George E. Stevens, who was a member of the 6th Michigan Volunteer Infantry, died at New Orleans during the war of the Rebellion. Almeda, the oldest daughter, and wife of G. W. Lewis, of Allegan County, died in the fall of 1879. Another son, Jared A. Stevens, was a member of the 25th Michigan Infantry, and is now residing, with his family, near Florence, Ala. Mr. Stevens was a native of Herkimer Co., N. Y., in which his father owned a farm. When the son was small the family removed to Jefferson Co., N. Y., and settled in the town of Ellisburg, near the village of Belleville, where the young man assisted on his father's farm as soon as his age and strength would permit. Miss Hubbard, to whom he was married at Belleville, was the daughter of an early settler in the vicinity. In the summer of 1837, Alvah T. Stevens left the old home in New York and proceeded to Michigan via the Erie Canal and the great lakes, and finally arrived at St. Joseph. He had traded his farm in New York for two hundred and forty acres in Van Buren Co., Mich., lying partly in Almena township and partly in Antwerp. He at first located, however, south of Mattawan, in the township







MRS. CHARLES U. CROSS.



MR. CHARLES U. CROSS.

### CHARLES U. CROSS.

Uriah Cross, the great-grandfather of Charles U. Cross, the subject of this sketch, was a native of Covington, Conn., and was born about the year 1774. His ancestors were English on the father's and of Scotch on the mother's side. He had ten children,—Moulton, Calvin, Abram, William, Lucy, Electa, Anna, Rebecca, Orrin, and Wealthy. He participated in the Revolutionary war as an orderly sergeant, in the regiment commanded by Ethan Allen; was present at the capture of Fort Ticonderoga, and was in active service till near the close of the war, when he was severely wounded. He removed to Bennington, Vt., where several of his children were born. From thence he removed to East Hamilton, Madison Co., N. Y., about the year 1790. He afterwards removed to Georgetown, N. Y.

Calvin Cross was born in Bennington, Vt., in 1762, and came with his father's family to New York. He married Polly Osmer, and had ten children,—Ashbel, Lydia, Mary, Ambrose, Orrin, Amanda, Edmund, Charles U., Calvin, and Fanny.

Charles U. Cross was born in Georgetown, Madison Co., Dec. 25, 1814. When about three years of age he was adopted by his uncle, Samuel Payne, a wealthy farmer of Hamilton. He received a thorough mathematical and classical education at Hamilton Academy. His life while at his uncle's was that of a student, athletic in mind as well as in person, but was not marked by striking events. As the intended heir of his childless uncle, he looked forward to a career in which earning his own livelihood did not appear as one of the factors. In a spirit of adventure he came to Michigan in the summer of 1834, in company with J. R. Monroe, and located in his uncle's name what is now a part of the village of Bangor. Soon after his uncle died intestate, and left Mr. Cross to depend entirely upon his forest tract of Michigan land and his own resources. In the spring and summer of 1835 Messrs. Cross and Monroe opened a road from Paw Paw to South Haven. In the winter of 1835-36 he taught school on Big Prairie Ronde. He was married to Mary S. West at Hamilton, N. Y., Sept. 6, 1836. Mrs. Cross was the daughter of Orrin and Mary (Hubbard) West, who were born respectively in 1789 and 1791, and were married March 26, 1816. They had four children,—Evelyn; Mary S., born Feb. 6, 1818; Sarah M.; and Abijah H.

Mary S. resided with her parents until she came West with her husband immediately after their marriage. They made their home with John Insle on Big Prairie Ronde until their log cabin was completed at Bangor, into which they moved March 8, 1837, becoming the first family that settled

in what is now Bangor township. Then commenced that hard struggle for existence, which was the lot of all or nearly all of the early settlers; and the family of Mr. Cross probably were not exceptions to the general rule. Although the education of Mr. Cross had apparently unfitted him to endure the privations of a pioneer life, yet the frequent calls for his services as a surveyor and counselor gave him more lucrative employment than was found by some of his more muscular neighbors.

Mrs. Cross was well qualified for the wife of a pioneer, being of a genial and fearless disposition. And the "white squaw," as the Indians called her, had much need of her courage when, alone by the fireside at night, the sound of the wind moaning and sobbing among the tall pines was only varied by the long drawing howl of the wolf. They had seven children, viz.: Samuel P., born April 14, 1838; Orrin W., Feb. 21, 1841; Sarah M., Jan. 6, 1843; Herbert S., April 1, 1845; John S., May 4, 1849; Charles U., Jr., Dec. 25, 1853; and Albert C., Nov. 1, 1855. Of these but four are now living,—Samuel P., Sarah M., John S., and Albert C. Herbert S. was killed by a railroad accident at Lawton, Sept. 21, 1863; Charles U., Jr., died when an infant; Orrin W. served with distinction through the war, was promoted to lieutenant, and died within a few days after reaching home after his discharge, in September, 1865.

In 1846, Mr. Cross, in company with his brother, Calvin Cross, erected a saw-mill on the site now occupied by J. H. Nyman. This was conveyed wholly to Calvin Cross in the spring of 1850. July 11, 1867, he platted Cross' addition to the village of Bangor, and watched with pride and pleasure the rapid growth of the village. He was largely instrumental in securing the location of the railroad to this point, and gave liberally of his means towards this enterprise, as well as to induce the Bangor Furnace Company to establish their works at Bangor.

He lived only to see the dawn of that prosperity which he had so materially assisted to promote, and which has been so abundantly sustained since his death. He died where he had fought the battle of life, May 9, 1872, on the same spot where thirty-five years before his log cabin was built. His wife survived him two years, and died at the old homestead, Nov. 17, 1874.

Charles U. Cross was a man of extended influence and the strictest integrity; one who will long be remembered by the people of Van Buren County for his genial manner and wise counsels, his sterling honesty, and his munificent patriotism.

"Requiescat in pace."

of Antwerp, where he had purchased forty acres, and lived on that and on a rented farm in Texas township, Kalamazoo Co., for twelve or thirteen years. The farm for which he had traded his New York homestead was in a state of nature when he moved upon it, no improvements of any kind having been made. A board shanty was erected and occupied by the family, and subsequently an unfinished frame was purchased, moved to the place, and completed. This was used for some time. Another house was bought and moved on, and occupied until three or four years before Mr. Stevens' death, when he erected a fine frame residence. He was always a farmer; was a Whig, and afterwards a Republican in politics. He held several township offices, although he was never an active politician. His death occurred Aug. 12, 1865, in Antwerp township, Van Buren Co., Mich. His brother, Horace Stevens, who came with him from New York, stayed but five or six years, living with him part of the time, and finally returned to New York, in which State he now resides.

Alonzo W. Stevens, the oldest of his father's children, was born near Belleville, Jefferson Co., N. Y., Aug. 18, 1833, and was consequently but four years of age when he came with his father to Michigan. Until he was twenty-six years old he remained with his father on the home-farm. Finally, in company with his father, he purchased the place he now occupies, on section 25, Almena township, on which no improvements had been made. They cleared forty acres together, and the balance of the one hundred and sixty was cleared by Alonzo himself. He has since sold twenty acres, the farm now containing one hundred and forty. For a year after buying this place he boarded with his father. He was married, Feb. 25, 1860, to Miss Hortense Phillips, and soon after occupied the farm, living for several years in a board shanty. Mrs. Stevens traces her ancestry back to the Pilgrim Fathers of Plymouth, Mass., but is herself a native of the township of Freedom, Wood Co., Ohio, where she was born Feb. 24, 1840. Her mother was a daughter of Joseph Fuller, who had come to Wood County, with his family, in 1835. Mrs. Fuller's parents were from Bristol Co., Mass. Jacob Phillips, the father of Mrs. Stevens, was also an early settler of Wood Co., Ohio. His father was a native of Germany.

Mr. Stevens is a Republican in politics, but is not an active politician. He has held a few of the minor offices in his town. He is a member of the Masonic order, and is prominent in connection with the township grange, to which latter Mrs. Stevens also belongs. She is an Episcopalian in religion, and evinces taste in literary matters, having furnished numerous articles for publication. Mr. and Mrs. Stevens are the parents of two children, sons, who both died in infancy. Had they lived they would now be, respectively, fifteen and ten years of age.

## CHAPTER LIV.

### BANGOR TOWNSHIP.\*

Boundaries, Soil, and Streams—First and Early Settlements and Settlers—Resident Tax-Payers in 1856—Civil History—Village of Bangor—Incorporation and Village Officers—Hotels—Manufacturing Enterprises—Bank—Societies and Orders—Religious Societies—Public Schools.

#### BOUNDARIES, SOIL, AND STREAMS.

THE township of Bangor is one of the interior divisions of Van Buren County, and situated northwest of its geographical centre. In the United States survey it was designated as township No. 2 south, of range No. 16 west.

Adjoining township organizations are Geneva on the north, Arlington on the east, Hartford on the south, and Covert on the west; and being but a few miles distant from Lake Michigan, it enjoys many commercial advantages from its location.

It is well watered, the most important stream being the Black River, which in its flow towards Lake Michigan crosses the northeast corner, and at the village of Bangor affords good water-power privileges, which have been utilized for many years. Smaller streams tributary to it flow through the centre and northwest portions, and numbers of small lakes also dot its surface.

Van Auken Lake, embracing portions of sections 28, 32, and 33, is the largest of these. In the centre of the township is School Section Lake, and north of it Pleasant Lake, while Duck Lake is located on section 26, and southeast of it a number of smaller lakes. A portion of Rush Lake lies in the southwest corner of Bangor, and Mud Lake, a body of water insignificant in size and of little importance, lies on sections 26 and 27. The soil of the township varies in different localities. There is to be found in some places a gravelly loam, in others an admixture of sand, but the prevailing soil is a heavy clay loam. This enables Bangor to produce excellent crops of corn and wheat, and places it in the front rank among the townships of the county in its agricultural products.

The census of 1874 gives 992 acres of wheat and 944 of corn, which produced 13,237 bushels of the former and 37,957 bushels of the latter grain.

The surface of Bangor is gently undulating, presenting few sudden or abrupt declivities, and smooth and easily-tilled land prevails. This was originally covered with a heavy growth of timber, embracing beech, maple, whitewood, walnut, elm, pine, and hemlock. Good timber still abounds, but the clearing of the lands of the township has materially depleted the forests.

#### FIRST AND EARLY SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS.

In the year 1837 the newly-organized township of South Haven, which then embraced the present township of Bangor, boasted but a sparse number of inhabitants, and they, with two or three exceptions, were all living near the present village of Breedsville. (See history of Columbia township.)

Charles U. Cross, the first settler in this township, and the founder of the present village of Bangor, was then the

\* By E. O. Wagner.



sole representative in surveyed township No. 2 south, of range No. 16 west. He first settled upon the east half of the northeast quarter of section 12, and soon after erected thereon a habitation for himself and family. Although separated from his Breedsville neighbors by several miles of timbered lands, he found constant society in the presence of "land lookers," who daily claimed his hospitality. He devoted himself with much vigor to the development of the resources of the country, did much toward the growth of the village, and remained one of its residents until his death in 1872.

The settlement of Mr. Cross occurred in March, 1837, and in June, 1837, came John Smith, from Orange Co., N. Y., who located upon section 11. He had been apprenticed in early boyhood, and finding the confinement irksome had taken unceremonious leave of his employer and departed for a seafaring life. Following this pursuit for many years, and visiting almost every port on the face of the earth, he determined to devote his declining years to the rough experiences of a pioneer life. While clearing his land Mr. Cross opened the door of his cheerful but not very elegant home to him, and he remained there until the completion of his own house, when, with his wife and son, who had meanwhile arrived, he removed to it.

The next pioneer to the wilds of Bangor was John Southard, who came from Cayuga Co., N. Y., in November, 1837, and entered 480 acres on section 25, and immediately began the erection of a cabin, which was constructed in a very simple manner, troughs forming the roof of the building. After doing some labor in the way of clearing, Mr. Southard returned to the East and the following spring brought his family to their Western home. His presence during the winter enabled them at once to locate comfortably in quarters of their own, with no delays to inconvenience them. Mr. Southard's attention was at first devoted to clearing a spot on which to raise supplies for the subsistence of his family. During the interval he repaired to Little Prairie Ronde, a journey of thirty miles, for supplies, and to Kalamazoo for milling purposes, there being no grist-mill at a nearer point at that early day. The following summer a mill was built at Paw Paw, which materially lessened the distance. The year after Mr. Southard's arrival, 1838, the first school district was organized, and embraced nine square miles of territory. In that area were but three families and four children, the youngest, Samuel P. Cross, but an infant. A school was not opened, however, until 1845, under the teaching of Miss Mehitabel Northrop. It will be readily determined that the lady was quite beyond any sordid motives in the pursuit of her profession when it is stated that for her weekly labor she received the munificent sum of 8s., with the privilege of enjoying the hospitality of her patrons in turn. On the authority of Mr. O. M. Southard, who resides on the land entered by his father, John Southard, it may be stated that a school-house was built as early as 1840, in the southeast portion of the township. The earliest teacher was Miss Delia Rice, who enjoyed the hospitality of Mansel M. Briggs while in charge of the school.

Among the scholars were four children from the family

of John Southard and two from the family of Caleb Northrop. The building was constructed entirely of logs, with planks resting upon stakes for seats, and a writing-desk composed of a plank smoothed on one side. Since that time the educational interests of Bangor have steadily progressed. It now embraces five whole and four fractional districts, over whom preside, as directors, James A. Williams, C. C. Phillips, Chapin Reynolds, D. Chidester, William S. Charles, John Watkins, Benjamin Reist, O. G. Reynolds, Polk A. Wood. The number of children receiving instruction is 644, over whom are placed 7 male and 15 female teachers, whose aggregate salaries amount to \$3028.00. The total educational resources of the township amount to \$3488.83, \$342.38 of which is derived from the primary-school fund. The value of school property is \$11,300.

Caleb Northrop came the latter part of the year 1837, with his two sons, from Cayuga County, and entered 160 acres on section 36. Leaving his family in Lawrence, at the house of J. R. Monroe, he began the erection of a cabin for their occupation, to which they repaired on its completion. He then devoted himself to improving his land, and made much progress in his pioneer labor. On this farm he resided until his death, and by his industry and good judgment established a reputation as a successful farmer. The sons of Mr. Northrop manifested a keen interest in public affairs connected with the township, and held many offices of trust. One of them still resides in Bangor.

Mansel M. Briggs came as a pioneer to the State in 1836, and selected Bangor as a home in 1838. He first resided upon the farm of John Southard, taking a contract to clear a tract of land for him, and meanwhile erecting a small house, which he covered with bark, for the occupation of his family. On the completion of his contract he removed to section 24, where he purchased a farm and erected upon it a comfortable log house. In 1854 he changed his location and removed to his present house, where he has since resided.

At the time of Mr. Briggs' settlement, and for many years after, Indians comprised a large proportion of the population of the township. Their constant intercourse with the whites aided much in civilizing them, so that ultimately but a trace of their former aboriginal life was perceptible, and some of them became possessors of comfortable homes.

Daniel Taylor came from Monroe Co., N. Y., in the latter part of 1837, and entered 160 acres on section 14. His son Charles had the year previous entered half a section, and retained 120 acres for himself, disposing of the remainder.

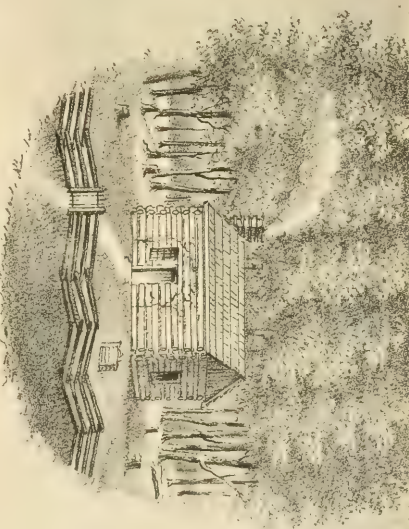
Another son, William M., had located in Arlington, and with him Mr. Taylor and his son Charles remained while building a house on their land. Mr. Taylor brought with him a horse and a yoke of oxen, and with these aids he speedily cleared five acres. He was obliged to go to Schoolcraft, a distance of thirty-six miles, for grain, and then to Kalamazoo to get it ground.

Mr. Taylor built his log house, entirely alone, no neighborly assistance being at hand. He walked daily to Breeds-

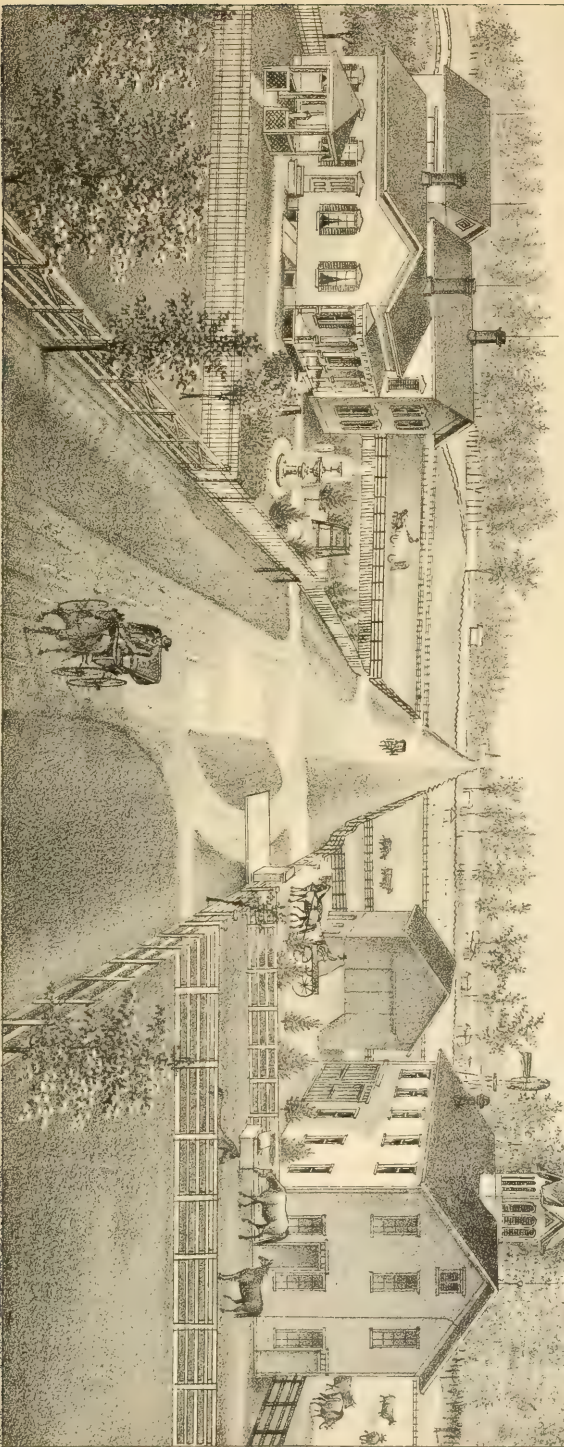
THOMAS CROSS.



LOG CABIN HOME



MRS THOS. CROSS.



RESIDENCE OF THOMAS CROSS, BANGOR Twp., VAN BUREN Co., MICH.





ville, a distance of seven miles, performed a day's labor, and returned at night. Of such sturdy material were the pioneers of Bangor made. To him may be accredited the raising of the first orchard, the seed for which was brought in his pocket from New York State. Perrin M. Northrop was also another settler prior to 1838, and located 140 acres upon section 36. He was a prominent pioneer.

There seem to have been no other settlers locating here during the years 1838-39, as is shown by the following copy of the assessment-roll of South Haven, made Nov. 13, 1839, and which includes the names of all designated as resident tax-payers in township 2 south, of range 16 west, viz.:

Names.	Section.	Acres.	Tax Paid.
Charles U. Cross.....	12	80	\$1.35
Daniel Taylor.....	14	160	3.59
Charles A. Taylor.....	14	160	3.20
John Smith.....	11	40	.65
John Southard.....	25	467	10.02
P. M. Northrop.....	36	141	2.83
Caleb Northrop.....	36	40	.78
Mansel M. Briggs, personal estate.....			20

Caleb Northrop was assessed for real estate only. Mansel M. Briggs for personal estate only. All others were taxed for both real and personal estate.

Thomas Kemp was one of the Cayuga County pioneers who came early. He entered 80 acres on section 34, and devoted his time for three years to the manufacture of maple-sugar, for which there was at that time a considerable demand. For this purpose he erected two shanties, and with the proceeds of this labor he was enabled to pay for his land. Returning to the East, he remained two years, and then became a permanent settler upon his purchase. He found much labor necessary in the preparation of his land for future crops, and was subjected to many deprivations. A journey to the nearest mill required a week, and many expedients were resorted to during the interval when bad roads or other obstacles made it necessary to postpone the journey. For many days the settlers lived on green corn grated and made into cakes, and regarded them as very palatable. It was not only impracticable but impossible to keep horses, as there was no fodder for them. William E. Kemp, brother of Thomas, came four years later and located upon 80 acres, which he purchased of his brother, on section 27, upon which he still resides. This land he improved and converted into a fine farm, though in a very primitive condition when he first secured it. Wild animals were abundant, and deer would frequently be seen feeding with the cattle within a short distance of the door.

Mason Wood emigrated from Jefferson County in 1838, and for a while followed the occupation of a peddler. He finally settled upon section 8, where he entered 240 acres of land and became the first settler in the northwest portion of the township. He immediately erected a log house, at the raising of which all the residents of the township were congregated. Mr. Wood was a man of much intelligence. He served acceptably as justice of the peace, and in his business transactions displayed a characteristic energy. He left to his sons, Polk, and Dallas Wood, a highly-improved farm, upon which they still reside.

Other settlers of 1840 were S. W. Bancroft, on section 35, Orlando S. Brown, on section 14, and William Jones, on section 24.

The 22 tax-paying residents in 1845 were Thomas Kemp, section 34; William E. Kemp, section 27; S. W. Bancroft, section 35; H. Potter, section 35; J. L. Northrop, section 36; P. M. Northrop, section 36; Mansel M. Briggs, section 36; J. Ball, section 36; John Southard, section 25; William Jones, section 24; Charles A. Taylor, section 14; Daniel Taylor, section 14; John Smith, section 11; William S. Camp, section 12; Mason Wood, section 8; William Henry, section 8; Charles U. Cross, section 12; R. Hoppin, section 12; Calvin Cross, section 12; Orlando S. Brown, section 12; William H. Hurlbut, section 13; and Hial Swan, section 13.

Daniel Van Auker removed to the township from Wayne Co., N. Y., in 1846, exchanging Eastern property for the land upon which he settled, on section 34, embracing 110 acres. He brought his family soon after, and enjoyed the hospitality of Thomas Kemp, who assisted him in building his house and removing to it. Aaron Van Auker came to Bangor the same year, and made his son's house his home. In April, 1850, he became lost in the woods, and for two weeks no tidings of the wanderer were received. An organized band of 100 men from the adjacent country continued the search for days without avail. The following summer his remains were found at the outlet of Mud Lake, to which place he had wandered and was drowned. This melancholy event for months cast its dark shadow over the community. John Van Auker, brother of Daniel, resides upon an adjoining farm.

Hiram Dean, who was a son-in-law of Aaron Van Auker, settled on land entered by the latter on section 33, upon which he still resides. He followed the trade of a carpenter, and erected a large number of the buildings in adjacent portions of the township. He is also known as a successful farmer.

Sterne D. Ripley's settlement occurred soon after that of the Van Auker family. He was a former resident of Western New York, and on his arrival in this township selected 118 acres on section 28, which he entered, and on which he built a log house. Mr. Ripley subsequently entered the army, and died in the service.

Charles D. Craft came early, and with his father settled upon section 13, where he soon established a reputation as a disciple of Nimrod. Later he removed to land on sections 15 and 16, where he now resides.

J. D. Kingston was a former resident of Jefferson Co., N. Y. In 1843 he came with his step-father, Hial Swan, to Van Buren County, the latter gentleman having entered 320 acres, embraced in the present townships of Bangor and Geneva. Mr. Kingston located upon section 13, and remained with Maj. Heath while building a log shanty and preparing a comfortable resting-place for his family. The nearest neighbor at this time was David Taylor, who had located upon the adjoining section. Mr. Kingston cut 20 acres of timber the first season, and cleared a sufficient tract on which to raise supplies for domestic use. The country was for the most part unsettled, Indians and wolves were plentiful, and occasionally a panther was to be seen, which caused no little consternation in the immediate vicinity.

Mr. Kingston brought with him a team of horses, which so captivated the eye of a settler whom they met on the

route that 40 acres of land with a house upon it was offered for them and refused. On his arrival he found the use of horses impracticable, and was glad to exchange them for a yoke of oxen. A grist-mill had been built at Paw Paw to which the settlers repaired for flour, though at an earlier period they were obliged to go as far as Kalamazoo with their grists.

Elder Gage was an early preacher, services being held in the Southard school-house. Elder Hinekey, of Breedsville, also officiated at the first religious services held in the township.

John Watkins, an Ohio pioneer, removed to section 3 of Bangor in 1855, where he purchased, in connection with E. P. Harvey, 105 acres. The land had been somewhat improved, and a log house built upon it, having originally been entered by the Ostrom Company. He followed, in connection with farming pursuits, the trade of carpenter, and, in company with John McNitt, was employed in the erection of the woolen-mills in Bangor. Mr. Watkins has never altogether relinquished the labors of his farm, and resides upon it still.

W. L. Thomas came from Otsego Co., N. Y., in 1856, and purchased 100 acres on section 17, remaining with one of the early settlers on section 12 while erecting a house and barn. With the aid of an ox-team which he brought, he improved four acres, and sowed it with wheat, which afforded them subsistence the following year. Mr. Thomas ultimately cleared and converted his land into a productive farm.

William S. Charles was a pioneer to the county in 1855, and three years later made the township his home. He at first worked a farm on shares, but by energy and judgment became the owner of 480 acres, a portion of which is highly cultivated, and on which he has built a fine brick residence. Mr. Charles, though in debt when he arrived, is now one of the most substantial residents of Bangor.

#### RESIDENT TAX-PAYERS IN 1856.

The resident tax-payers in the township of Bangor in the year 1856 were as follows: Thomas Curtis, N. Travis, William S. Travis, M. P. Watson, John Watkins, John Funk, Norman Brown, A. C. Earl, Francis Burger, Erasmus Burger, O. Goss, Daniel Wainwright, S. V. Arnold, A. Brown, C. B. Gross, Benjamin F. Hamin, Charles Quigley, M. C. Lacoek, W. A. Burlingame, Eliza Winters, A. P. Hunt, D. T. Fox, E. P. Harvey, Rossiter Hoppin, John Smith, William Kinney, Fred Taylor, William S. Camp, Charles U. Cross, B. F. Ewing, O. S. Brown, William H. Hurlbut, Alonzo Shepard, Willard Kingston, Solomon Ellis, Charles Ellis, Lafayette Kingston, J. D. Kingston, George Halleck, C. A. Taylor, Daniel Taylor, Noble S. Taylor, Carlton Coon, Charles D. Croft, Harvey Overton, O. M. Trudi, D. T. Taylor, Calvin Haner, — Mamqua, Daniel Disbrow, Philo Cook, Fletcher Harris, William Jones, A. M. Graves, J. S. Waterhouse, William Moon, James Southard, David Southard, Charles Southard, A. Updike, Henry Goss, John Clark, W. E. Kemp, John Spurbeck, Elijah Crow, Charles Gates, Harlow Dean, S. Reynolds, Sterne L. Ripley, Alexander Haner, Lorenzo Haner, A. H. Kemp, Alonzo Haner, L. Disbrow, L. S. Branch, Daniel

Dean, Joseph Caughey, John Van Auker, Amos Thompson, Hiram Dean, Daniel Van Auker, — Comatea, J. B. Sheldon, P. Pequadder, Benoni Lawson, Harvey Potter, Patrick Finley, William Webster, J. L. Northrop, Thomas Kemp, M. M. Briggs, Emory O. Briggs, P. M. Northrop; and the total amount of tax levied during the same year was \$1044.99.

#### CIVIL HISTORY.

By an act of the State Legislature approved March 11, 1837, surveyed township No. 2 south, of range No. 16 west, became part of the old township of South Haven. This relation, as regards this township, was continued until Oct. 11, 1853, when the Van Buren County Board of Supervisors, acting under the authority vested in them, erected as Marion the territory described as township No. 2 south, of range No. 16 west. Five days later, or Oct. 14, 1853, the supervisors amended their action to the extent of changing the name to Bangor.

The act as amended then read as follows:

"Notice is hereby given that the Board of Supervisors of Van Buren County, at the annual session holden at the court-house in said county, October, 1853, have set off and organized into a new township by the name of Bangor all that portion of the township of South Haven comprised in and known as township 2 south, of range 16 west, according to the United States survey, and have ordered that the first township-meeting be held on the first Monday of April, 1854, at the school-house in District No. 1, of the township of South Haven, situated on section 12, township 2 south, of range 16 west, and that Charles U. Cross, Perrin M. Northrop, and Mansel M. Briggs are appointed to act as a board of inspectors of said election.

"And that the next annual township-meeting in the township of South Haven be held at the school-house in District No. 4, of the township of South Haven.

"Dated at Paw Paw, Jan. 6, 1854.

"JOHN ANDREWS,

"Chairman Board of Supervisors."

*First Township Election.*—In accordance with the above notice, a meeting of the electors of the township was held April 3, 1854, and organized, with Charles U. Cross, Perrin M. Northrop, and Mansel M. Briggs as inspectors of the election. As a result of this meeting the following men were chosen township officers for 1854: Supervisor, Mansel M. Briggs; Township Clerk, Charles U. Cross; Treasurer, Perrin M. Northrop; Highway Commissioners, John Smith, David Van Auker; School Inspector, Charles B. Hurlbut; Justices of the Peace, M. M. Briggs, W. H. Hurlbut; Constables, David I. Taylor, Henry Goss, John L. Northrop, Francis Burger.

*List of Township Officers.*—The following list embraces the various township officers from 1855 to 1879, inclusive:

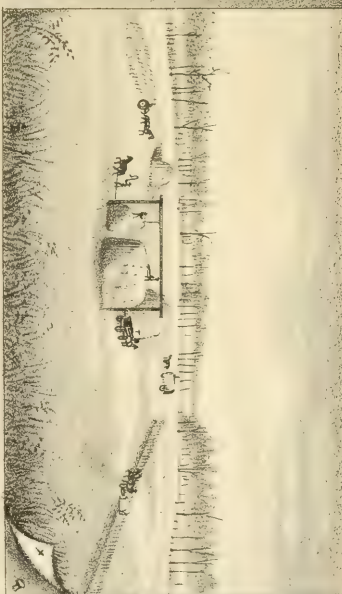
#### SUPERVISORS.

1855, William H. Burlingame; 1856, Charles U. Cross; 1857-58, William H. Hurlbut; 1859, Moses S. Hawley; 1860-61, Daniel Van Auker; 1862, Samuel A. Tripp; 1863, Daniel Van Auker; 1864-65, E. P. Harvey; 1866, Joel Camp; 1867, Ephraim Harvey; 1868-69, C. E. Heath; 1870, Daniel Van Auker; 1871-79, Charles E. Heath.





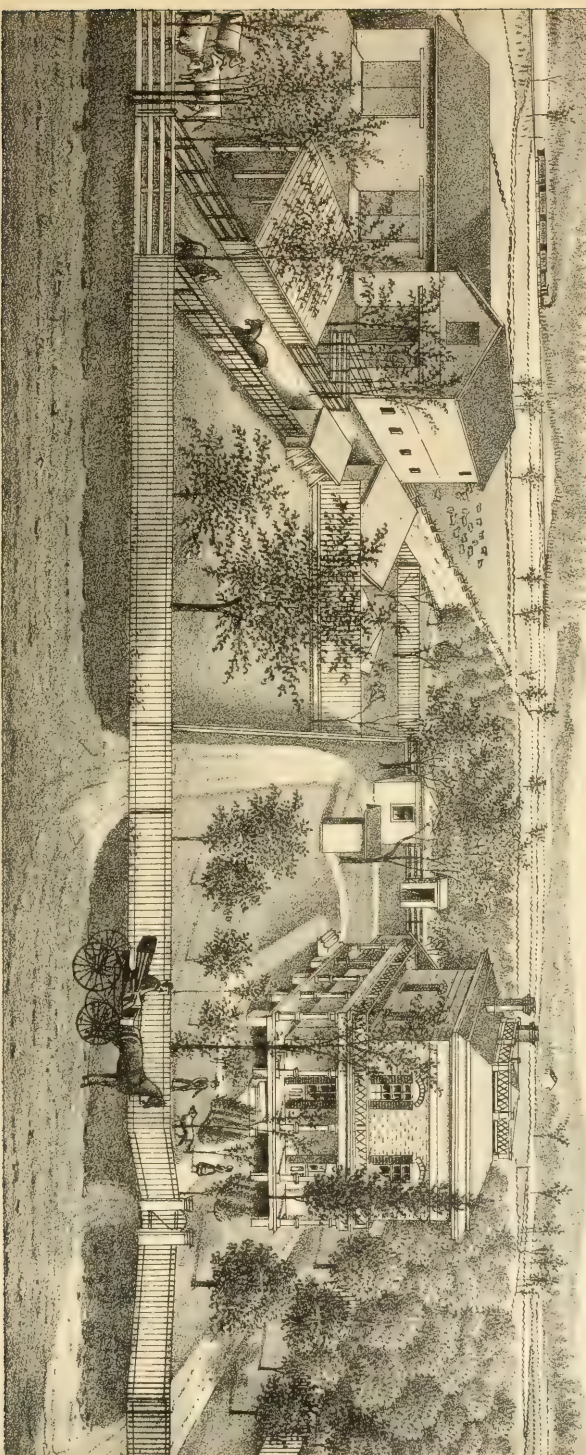
WM. CHARLES.



MEADOWS — HAYING.



MRS. WM. CHARLES.



RESIDENCE OF WILLIAM S. CHARLES, BANGOR TP., VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





## TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1855, A. P. Hunt; 1856, W. H. Hurlbut; 1857-58, E. P. Harvey; 1859, Harrison Balfour; 1860, Alonzo Shepard; 1861, H. M. Overton; 1862, Noble S. Taylor; 1863, E. P. Harvey; 1864-65, Alonzo Shepard; 1866, Dennis Chidester; 1867, A. J. Nymann; 1868, Fred. N. Overton; 1869-70, D. K. Charles; 1871, Alonzo Shepard; 1872-74, Josiah G. Miller; 1875, William B. Edmonds; 1876, Charles Southard; 1877, Charles W. Peters; 1878, Frank Lombard; 1879, Charles W. Peters.

## TREASURERS.

1855-56, Daniel Van Auker; 1857-58, H. M. Overton; 1859, Perrin M. Northrop; 1860, H. M. Overton; 1861, John Watkins; 1862, Isaac Cate; 1863, John Watkins; 1864, Richard Owens; 1865, Paul S. Reynolds; 1866, Asel A. Hough; 1867-68, W. S. Charles; 1869-71, Samuel P. Harvey; 1872-74, Horace Sebring; 1875, J. E. Sebring; 1876-77, R. C. Nymann; 1878-79, E. S. Harvey.

## SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1855, William A. Burlingame; 1856, Charles U. Cross; 1857, W. H. Hurlbut; 1858, William A. Burlingame; 1859, Adolphus Brown; 1860, William Burlingame; 1861, Harrison Balfour, M. S. Hawley; 1862, Samuel A. Tripp, Henry Goss; 1863, N. S. Marshall, Daniel Van Auker; 1864, Harrison Balfour; 1865, Charles U. Cross; 1866, Moses S. Hawley; 1867, Orson M. Baker; 1868, C. E. Heath; 1869, Orson M. Baker; 1870, F. N. Overton; 1871, D. K. Charles; 1872, Moses S. Hawley; 1873, D. K. Charles; 1874, Charles E. Heath; 1875-76, F. N. Overton; 1877, Daniel Van Auker; 1878, Thomas Cross; 1879, Oscar G. Reynolds.

## JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1856, Daniel T. Fox, Rossiter Hoppin, Daniel Van Auker; 1857, David T. Taylor; 1858, M. M. Briggs; 1859, Joseph H. Nymann; 1860, Daniel Van Auker; 1861, H. M. Overton; 1862, William Webster; 1863, John Watkins; 1864, Butler M. Smith, Harlow J. Dean, H. S. Worrall; 1865, William Webster, Daniel Van Auker, B. M. Smith, D. T. Taylor; 1866, M. S. Hawley, Harrison Balfour; 1867, James E. Ferguson, Dallas Wood; 1868, John Miller, Daniel Van Auker, O. M. Baker; 1869, W. S. Charles, N. S. Taylor; 1870, N. S. Taylor, W. N. Gilbert; 1871, Orson M. Baker, Daniel Van Auker; 1872, John Miller, M. M. Briggs; 1873, E. M. Hipp; 1874, O. Herrington, W. E. Tripp; 1875, Harrison Balfour; 1876, John S. Brown, E. G. Russell; 1877, Daniel Van Auker; 1878, H. M. Overton, D. W. Sias; 1879, John B. Royce.

## HIGHWAY COMMISSIONERS.

1855, W. H. Hurlbut; 1856, H. M. Overton; 1857, Henry Goss; 1858, William Webster; 1859, Joseph H. Nymann; 1860, Stephen Russell; 1861, Harlow Dean; 1862, William Cook; 1863, Alanson P. Hunt; 1864, Harrison Balfour; 1865, C. A. Taylor, Lewellyn Disbrow; 1866, James Stewart, John Watkins; 1867, H. M. Overton; 1868, E. P. Harvey, L. H. Perkins; 1869, W. M. Gilbert, Thomas Horton; 1870, Asel A. Hough; 1871, John Goss, Dallas Wood; 1872, W. N. Gilbert; 1873, Oliver Herrington; 1874, Edwin Ruthruff; 1875, W. N. Gilbert; 1876-77, Edwin Ruthruff; 1878, William Cook; 1879, Warren N. Gilbert.

## DRAIN COMMISSIONERS.

1872, J. G. Miller; 1873, Thomas Cross; 1874, William Kinney; 1875, John P. Goss; 1876, Thomas Cross; 1877, record not found; 1878, J. D. Kingston.

## SUPERINTENDENTS OF SCHOOLS.

1875, Moses S. Halvey; 1876, Adelbert Morton; 1877, Frank E. Withey; 1878, John H. Reese; 1879, John L. Cross.

## CONSTABLES.

1855, John L. Northrop, Henry Goss, Francis Burger, Harvey Overton; 1856, D. T. Taylor, M. S. Laycock, H. M. Overton, Henry Goss; 1857, William S. Camp, O. M. Trude, Henry Goss, J. L. Northrop; 1858, J. D. Kingston, J. L. Northrop, Charles Kelly, J. J. Clark; 1859, James Southard, Andrew Goss, Alvin P. Earl, Michael Yelder; 1860, Erastus Hazard, O. M. Trude, H. D. Smith, J. L. Northrop; 1861, James B. Travis, J. L. Northrop, O. M. Trude, J. G. Miller; 1862, H. S. Warallo, O. M. Trude, J. J. Clark, Fletcher Harris; 1863, J. L. Northrop, Harlow Merriman, O. G.

Reynolds, J. W. Whitney; 1864, Benjamin Reist, F. S. Taylor, Jacob K. Gring, Erastus Hazard; 1865, J. A. Hewitt, L. J. Raven, Thomas Cross, J. W. Cross; 1866, R. A. Earl, Henry Goss, Samuel P. Cross, Alonzo Palmer; 1867, James Gilbert, Thomas Horton, James J. Clark, William H. Willis; 1868, A. S. Palmer, C. G. Russell, J. J. Clark, F. Harris; 1869, J. F. Lee, J. J. Clark, Harlow Merriman, A. P. Hunt; 1870, R. A. Taylor, J. J. Clark, C. G. Russell, William Cook; 1871, J. B. Hopkins, Philander Hunt, J. J. Clark, Harlow Merriman; 1872, George M. Wilson, James E. Stewart, John Goss, Hezekiah Ditts; 1873, William G. Russell, John B. Hopkins, Alanson P. Hunt, J. J. Clark; 1874, G. W. Wilson, H. K. Nichols, Edwin Ruthruff, J. J. Clark; 1875, H. K. Nichols, G. W. Wilson, Walter Ruble, Henry Goss; 1876, Thomas Horton, E. L. Gilbert, A. P. Hunt, Solomon Jennings; 1877, John L. Van Auker, Lewis Wood, George W. Wilson, A. J. McLaughlin; 1878, G. W. Wilson, A. D. Hale, E. F. Ruble, H. K. Nichols; 1879, Charles Ford, James Gilbert, Chapin Reynolds, Harvey J. Cooper.

## VILLAGE OF BANGOR.

The village of Bangor is situated near the northeast corner of the township, a portion of its site extending into Arlington.

Good water-power privileges are here afforded by the Black River, and the village is also a station on the line of the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad.

The lands embraced within the corporate limits were purchased from the general government by the following-named parties: The east half of the southwest quarter of section 1, Bangor township, by J. R. Monroe; the southeast quarter of section 1, by Ostrom, Walker & Co.; the east half of the northeast quarter of section 12, by Samuel Payne; the west half of the northeast quarter of section 12, by T. S. Camp; the east half of the northwest quarter of section 12, by T. S. Camp; the northeast quarter of the southwest quarter, and the north half of the southeast quarter of section 12, by Tomlinson & Co.

In Arlington, the southwest quarter of section 6, by Peter Schermerhorn; the west half of the northwest fractional quarter of section 7, by John Allen; the east half of the northwest quarter of section 7, by J. R. Monroe, and the north half of the southwest quarter of the same section, by Horace Butler.

*First and Other Early Settlements.*—To Charles U. Cross, the first settler in the township, may be accorded the honor of being the first settler upon the village-site of Bangor. Mr. Cross came to the State of Michigan from Madison Co., N. Y., in 1834. Having come into the possession of lands entered by him in 1834, in the name of his uncle, Samuel Payne, he, about the 1st of March, 1837, began the construction of a log house upon the same, and in this dwelling his family (consisting of only his newly-married wife) was installed upon its completion, on the 8th of the same month. His attention was not wholly devoted to farming pursuits, however, for he depended much upon his profession as a civil engineer and surveyor. The country was meagerly supplied with roads and bridges, and an almost constant demand was made upon his skill for years to aid in their construction.

During the following spring (April 14, 1838) a son was born to Mr. and Mrs. Cross, who enjoyed the distinction of being the first white child born in the township.

The second settler in the village was Orlando S. Brown, who removed to the State from Monroe Co., N. Y., in

1837, and to Bangor in 1839. Mr. Brown had already entered 80 acres on section 14, in the township, on which he had made a slight improvement, when an opportunity was afforded him to effect an exchange for 80 acres on section 12, entered by Wm. L. Booth. One half of this land is now embraced within the village limits. On this ground but a single tree had been felled, probably by the Indians in search for honey. Its owner at once began a vigorous system of improvements. After the erection of a log house of sufficient dimensions to contain his family he cleared six acres and planted it with corn. The timber which at this time covered the present village limits was of the most gigantic proportions, some of the trees of black walnut and whitewood reaching six feet in diameter. For these splendid monarchs of the forest no market could be found, as the want of roads made their transportation in the form of lumber impossible. Later, the opening of highways created a demand, and ultimately made the timber of the settler one of his most profitable sources of revenue. Many Indians were to be found following the streams for fish or pursuing the hunt, those in the immediate vicinity being under the direction and control of a chief of the *Pottawatamies* named Pi-pa-wa. They were on amicable terms with the settlers, often exchanging supplies of game for bread, and were frequent visitors to the cabin of Mr. Brown. When overtaken by the approaching night, they found a cordial welcome and as comfortable a lodging-place as they desired upon the floor, where, wrapped in their blankets beside a blazing fire of logs, they slumbered, oblivious of care.

The early pioneers were for a time profitably employed by the highway commissioners in making roads, for which they were paid in orders. These orders, which were the nearest approach to currency obtainable, were exchanged in Paw Paw for supplies at a discount of twenty-five per cent. Mr. Brown while engaged in this lucrative pursuit was accustomed, when at a distance from his home, to build a hut of brush for shelter at night. A cluster of boughs answered as a bed, and a fire of logs modified in some degree the severity of the frost. Frequently the morning would find him almost enveloped in snow, and on many occasions the dinner was so frozen that his axe was called into requisition to cut it in pieces.

A schooner laden with apples and shipwrecked on Lake Michigan afforded an opportunity for raising an orchard. The seeds of the apples washed ashore were planted in 1841, and produced the earliest fruit raised in the township. Mr. Brown still resides within the village limits, on the land of which he became an early possessor.

Calvin Cross, a brother of the earliest pioneer in Bangor, came in May of 1844, and pursued his calling of a millwright. Discerning the advantages to be derived from the fine water-power, in connection with Charles U. Cross he erected in 1846 a saw-mill on the Black River, being assisted in its construction by William Rea, Orlando S. Brown, David Taylor, Christian B. Gross, and William H. Hurlbut. An examination of the records establishes the fact that this property was conveyed by Charles U. Cross and wife to Calvin Cross, May 3, 1850. Mr. Cross managed it for a period of six years, and then sold to Marcello

P. Watson, who conveyed in 1856 to Joseph H. Nyman, who subsequently erected upon the same site a sash- and blind-factory. Mr. Cross then removed to Paw Paw and erected a mill, and later another mill in Hartford, on the Paw Paw River, which was sold two years later. After following agricultural pursuits during the interval, he removed again to Bangor in 1873, where he now resides.

William Rea purchased in 1846 a fractional quarter lying in the township of Arlington, a portion of which is now embraced in the village. He improved this land, erected upon it a small dwelling, and removed his family there the following year.

William S. Camp settled upon 160 acres of land on section 12 in 1846, and became a resident of the hamlet. He took immediate measures to clear and cultivate his land, and resided upon it until his death, in 1870. The land was entered by his father, Thomas S. Camp. Rossiter Hoppin and Christian B. Gross soon after located within the village limits.

Marcello P. Watson was the earliest settler who embarked in commercial pursuits. In 1852, in connection with Albert Comstock, he purchased a stock of goods and opened a general store. The demand for their wares was not large, and the ambitious merchants found it expedient to reduce their stock, and finally to close it out, Mr. Watson soon after becoming the owner of the saw-mill.

A very marked impetus was given to the growth of Bangor and its business interests by the settlement of Joseph H. Nyman, who came from Niles, Mich., in 1856, and purchased the saw-mill and water-privilege. He replaced the old mill by a new and larger one, and the year following his arrival built a grist-mill. In 1865 he erected an extensive woolen-mill, having meanwhile much improved the water-power. Through his influence a post-office was established, of which he was postmaster,—the mail having been carried at first from Arlington. Later, a tri-weekly stage conveyed it from Paw Paw and South Haven to Bangor.

The store erected by Watson was in 1862 purchased by J. D. Kingston, and in response to the urgent demand of travelers in search of shelter and good cheer, he converted it into a hotel and became the first landlord of the place. L. S. Russell became his successor, who added considerably to its dimensions and sold to L. H. Perkins, who in turn sold to its present proprietors, when it was christened the Sebring House.

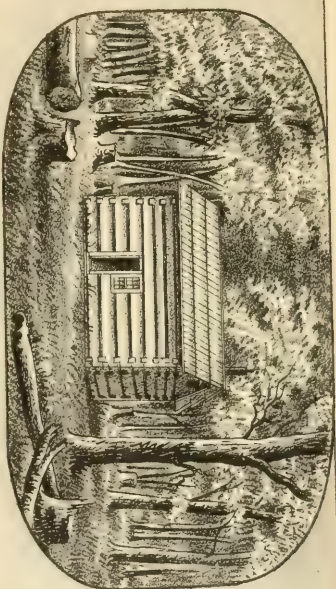
In 1864, A. B. Taft came from New York State and opened what was at the time the only general merchandise store in the place, in a building standing just north of the present site of the depot. The room was not only very limited in proportions but exceedingly dilapidated in condition, and the citizens did Mr. Taft the justice not to judge the quality of his stock by the uninviting aspect of the store. The same building did good service in the celebration of the opening of the railroad, in 1870. Mr. Taft was followed by the Ferguson brothers, who embarked in business on the north side in the spring of 1866, and the same summer Silas De Long opened a stock of goods, which the following year was sold to D. K. Charles.

The village was already assuming importance as a busi-





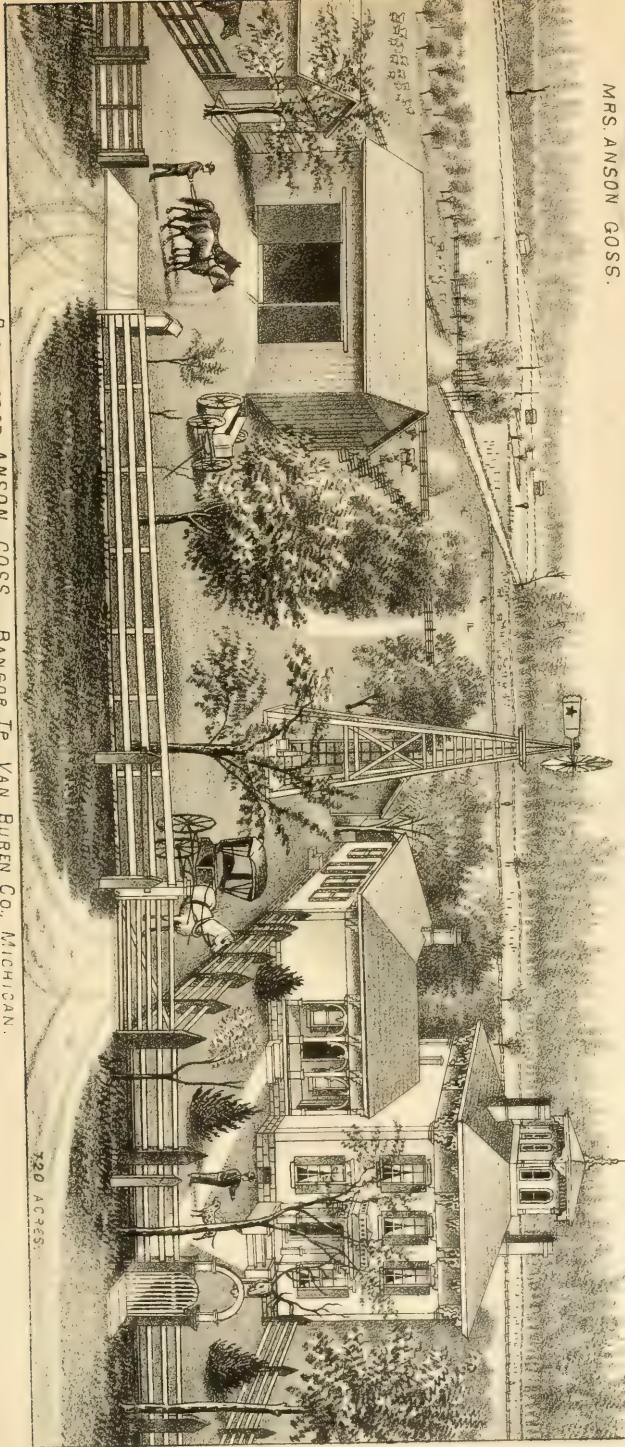
MRS. ANSON GOSS.



PIONEER HOME.



ANSON GOSS.



RESIDENCE OF ANSON GOSS, BANGOR TWP., VAN BUREN CO., MICHIGAN.

720 ACRES.



ness centre, and attracting enterprising settlers from adjacent parts of the State, when the question of building a railroad within its boundaries was agitated. The agent of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, now called the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad, visited the county and secured from the inhabitants of the township a pledge of \$30,000 to aid in its construction. This was by a subsequent decree of the State Supreme Court reduced to one-half that amount,\* and \$15,000 was raised by the citizens and paid towards the completion of the project. This railroad opened a means of transportation for the products of the adjoining country, and made Bangor a central point of shipment, very materially advancing the value of property and insuring for the little village a future career of prosperity.

The most powerful lever to the advancement of Bangor since the opening of the railroad has been the Bangor Blast Furnace. The company was organized in 1872, with a capital of \$100,000, and was influenced by the ample supply of hard timber and the inducements offered by leading residents of the township to locate in the village. Its extensive demand for material and its immense shipping interests have greatly advanced the business activity of the place.

The Bangor Chemical Works were next established, and they add materially to the industries of the village. These interests, supplemented by the prosperity of its business men and the ambition of its citizens, will eventually place Bangor among the most advanced villages of the State.

*Village Plats.*—The first plat of the village was made by Joseph H. Nyman, and recorded Nov. 12, 1860. It embraced 55 acres on the north side of the river, and was known as the village of Bangor. The year following Mr. Nyman built on one of the lots of this plat his present residence, which was the first dwelling erected on the north side of the river. The second plat was made by Charles U. Cross, July 11, 1867, and included about 63 acres, embracing the east half of the northeast quarter of section 12. North of this plat Mr. Cross owned 17 acres, which he disposed of in parcels, giving five acres to the Blast Furnace Company as a site for their works.

In 1872, Alexander H. Morrison platted the west half of the east half of the northeast quarter of section 12. In 1874 he also platted 80 acres in addition, embracing the east half of the northwest quarter of section 12, and later sold it. The latter plat is now cultivated as a farm.

*Incorporation, Village Officers.*—The act to incorporate the village of Bangor bears date March 21, 1877, and reads as follows:

"AN ACT to incorporate the village of Bangor.

"SECTION ONE.—The people of the State of Michigan enact that all the tracts of land situated in the townships of Bangor and Arlington, in the county of Van Buren, and State of Michigan, which are known and described as follows, to wit: the southeast quarter and the east half of the southwest quarter of section one (1), the northeast

quarter and east half of the northwest quarter, the northeast quarter of the southwest quarter, and the north half of the southeast quarter of section twelve (12); township two south, of range sixteen west, the southwest fractional quarter of section six (6), the northwest fractional quarter and the north half of the southwest fractional quarter of section seven (7), township two south, of range fifteen west, be and the same are hereby made and constituted a village corporate by the name of the village of Bangor, by virtue of and under the provisions of Act Number Sixty-Two of the Session laws of Eighteen Hundred and Seventy-Five, entitled 'An act granting and defining the Powers and duties of incorporated villages, approved April 1, 1875, and such amendments as made thereto.'

"SECTION TWO.—The first election for officers of said village shall be held on the third Monday of April, Eighteen Hundred and Seventy-Seven (1877), at the office of Sebring's warehouse, in said village, notice of which shall be posted in three public places of said village by the board of registration hereinafter appointed, at least ten days previous thereto."

The first election was held at the office of Sebring's warehouse, April 16, 1877. The officers of the village elected at that time and at subsequent elections have been as follows:

1877.—President, Ephraim Harvey; Trustees (two years), R. C. Nyman, John Desmond, Judson B. Hall, (one year) William H. Reynolds, James Salisbury, Mark Remington; Clerk, William H. Reynolds; Treasurer, John E. Sebring; Assessor, James E. Ferguson; Street Commissioner, Edwin Ruthruff; Constable, Thaddeus McNitt.

1878.—President, James E. Ferguson; Trustees (two years), Mark Remington, James Slinger, Josiah G. Miller; Clerk, William H. Davis; Treasurer, Nathan W. Deak; Assessor, Enoch S. Harvey; Street Commissioner, James Livermore; Constable, William Ford.

1879.—President, N. W. Drake; Trustees (two years), J. G. Todd, W. H. Davis, A. J. McLaughlin; Clerk, William H. Reynolds; Treasurer, H. D. Harvey; Assessor, E. S. Harvey; Street Commissioner, Edwin Ruthruff; Constable, W. G. Russell.

#### HOTELS.

*Sebring House.*—This hotel building had its origin as early as 1852, when the portion now in use as a kitchen was erected by M. P. Watson as a dwelling. Ten years later I. D. Kingston purchased the building, and opened the earliest house of entertainment in the village. Later it became the property of various parties, until its purchase by Horace Sebring in 1869. It had previously been greatly increased in capacity, and Mr. Sebring added other apartments after his purchase of the building. He established its reputation as a well-kept house, and drew by his uniform courtesy and attention a large patronage. In 1878 the building was still further enlarged. The proprietor died the same year, since which time it has been managed by his son, John E. Sebring.

*Russell House.*—This hotel is among Bangor's recent acquisitions, having been built in 1879 by C. G. Russell, who is also proprietor. It is conveniently located, and is obtaining a good patronage from travelers.

#### MANUFACTURING ENTERPRISES.

*The Bangor Blast Furnace.*—This is an establishment for the smelting of iron ore and the manufacture of pig iron.

\* The township voted a tax of \$30,000, which was declared unconstitutional and void; the \$15,000 was raised and paid by private subscription.



It is under the direction of a stock company, the officers of which are A. B. Hough, President, Cleveland, Ohio; J. D. Bradley, Vice-President, Chicago, Ill.; C. D. Rhodes, Treasurer, Chicago, Ill.; H. S. Pickands, Secretary and General Superintendent. The furnace was built in 1872, and began operation in November of the same year, the company having been led to choose Bangor as a location from the abundant supply of wood which the adjacent country affords, as well as for its convenience as a shipping-point.

The furnace has run steadily until the present time, with the exception of four weeks of each year, when it goes out of blast to permit repairs, which usually require that length of time for completion. The furnace, including the works, kilns, and wood-yards, occupies 10 acres of ground, and gives employment in all its branches to more than 400 men. The best single day's product of the furnace is 45 gross tons of pig iron, and the average day's results 36 tons. The month of March, 1879, indicated a yield of 1181 tons. There is daily consumed nearly 125 cords of wood, and the timber from a square mile of forest is consumed annually. The immense resources of the country in this particular are fully equal to the demand, which is supplied either by wagon or rail. These figures afford an idea of the magnitude of the business and the extensive employment given to the population of Bangor and vicinity. The enterprise is under the general direction of Maj. H. S. Pickands, and the furnace department is under the immediate supervision of Maurice Ring.

*The Bangor Chemical Works.*—These works, which are probably the largest of the kind in the world, are located in Bangor, adjacent to the blast furnace. They were built by Ira B. Lyon, of Flint, Mich., from plans and specifications furnished by H. M. Pierce, of Buffalo, N. Y., the products of the works being acetate of lime, from which acetic acid is produced, and wood alcohol. Of acetate of lime, 35,000 pounds, or 2 car-loads, is produced per week, while the yield of alcohol is 50 barrels per month. The pyroligneous acid, from which these products are reduced, is obtained by condensing the gases thrown off in the carbonization of wood in charcoal-kilns belonging to the Bangor blast furnace. In these kilns about 70 cords of wood are daily reduced to charcoal. Each cord will yield about 180 gallons of acid liquor, the entire 70 tons yielding about 60 tons of liquor, which must be daily handled in these chemical-works.

To give some idea of the magnitude of the work, a few figures are appended. There are six buildings of the following dimensions: engine-house, 22 by 30 feet; office, 14 by 22 feet; still-house, 16 by 30 feet; neutralizing-house, 24 by 56 feet; alcohol department, 30 by 50 feet; acetate department, 56 by 100 feet. The daily yield of liquid from the kilns is about 13,000 gallons. The tanks and stills hold in the aggregate about 50,000 gallons. There are 9 evaporating-pans with a capacity of 1356 cubic feet, and 2 drying surfaces of 1600 feet.

Mr. Pierce has recently greatly enhanced his reputation as a scientist by the discovery of a process of utilizing smoke for purposes of fuel.

*The Bangor Mills.*—The saw-mill, as has been previously

stated, was built by Charles U. and Calvin Cross in 1846, the latter gentleman having disposed of it to M. P. Watson, from whom it was purchased by Joseph H. Nyman in 1856. The next year he demolished the old mill and erected a new one in its place, with a capacity of 12,000 feet per day. In connection with it is a planing-mill and a sash-, door-, and blind-factory. Mouldings and scroll work are manufactured to order, and lumber and lath are embraced in the stock for sale. The mills are managed by R. C. Nyman, a son of the proprietor.

The flouring-mill was built by Mr. Nyman in 1857, and was in active operation in 1870, when it was destroyed by fire. The present structure at once replaced it, which has four run of stones and a capacity for 125 barrels of flour per day. It is a substantial three-story building, and fitted with all the machinery for making flour by the latest and most approved methods. The products of the mill formerly found a distant market, but more recently have been devoted to supplying the home demand.

*The Woolen-Mills.*—The woolen-mills were built by Mr. Nyman in 1860, and manufactured flannels, cloths, and yarn. They are substantially built, conveniently located, and have a capacity for a considerable business. They have not lately, however, been run to their fullest capacity. The mills are operated by John Crow, a son-in-law of the proprietor. All these mills are run by water-power supplied by the Black River, and rank among the most advantageous in the State for location and capacity.

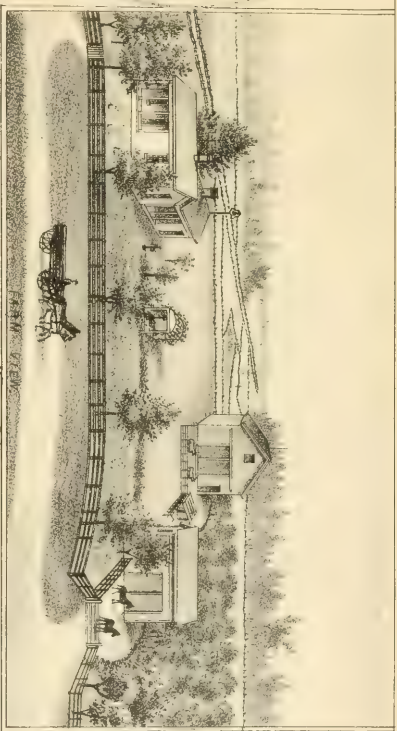
*Wagon-Manufactory.*—The wagon- and sleigh-manufactory of Stephen McMillan is one of the most important enterprises in the village of Bangor. He has twice been compelled to rebuild, owing to the demands upon his skill. In 1875 he erected the spacious brick building at present occupied, in which are manufactured wagons, carriages, sleighs, and a general custom work is also done. Seven men are constantly employed, and the shop has a capacity equal to the production of 100 wagons per year, exclusive of the manufacture and repair of sleighs. Four furnaces are constructed in the shop, each provided with Root's patent blower, which greatly facilitates the labor. Connected with the establishment is an extensive blacksmithing department.

#### MONROE'S BANK.

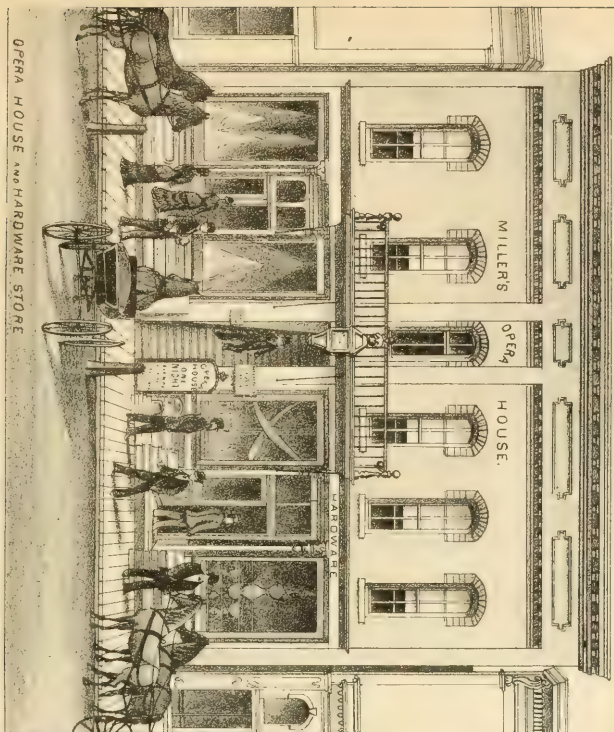
This bank was first established by E. M. Hipp, of St. Joseph, Mich., in 1872, as a bank of deposit and exchange. It was managed by its founder until 1874, when it was purchased by Messrs. J. E. Sebring & Co., and by them owned and conducted for three years, during which time the bank did a prosperous business. In 1877 it again changed proprietors, N. S. Taylor becoming the purchaser, who employed J. E. Sebring as cashier and general manager. The bank building later became the property of Messrs. Charles & Chapman, who rent it with the fixtures to the present banking company. It is now known as Monroe's Bank, and is still a bank of deposit, exchange, and collection, and under the same management as the First National Bank of South Haven. The officers are C. J. Monroe, President, South Haven, Mich.; S. R. Boardman, Vice-President, Chicago, Ill.; A. B. Chase, Cashier, Bangor, Mich.



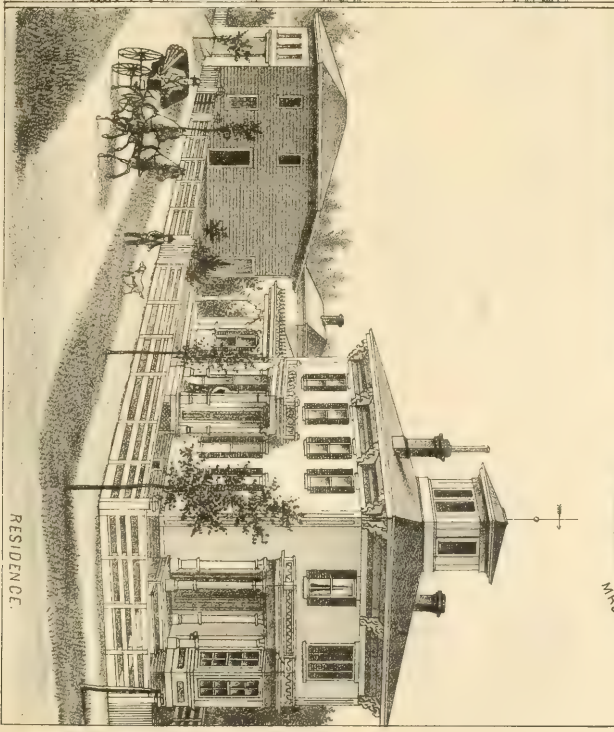
J. C. MILLER.



MRS. J. G. MILLER.



OPERA HOUSE AND HARDWARE STORE



RESIDENCE.

PROPERTY OF J. C. MILLER, IN AND ABOUT BANGOR, ME.





## SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Coffinbury Lodge, No. 204, F. and A. M.*—This lodge, which is one of the most flourishing in the county, obtained its charter Jan. 10, 1867, and began work with the following officers: Emory O. Briggs, W. M.; Dennis Chidester, S. W.; Charles U. Cross, J. W. It has since that time enjoyed a steady growth and a great degree of prosperity. Its meetings are held in a well-appointed hall in the Nyman block, which was designed, when the building was erected, for the use of the lodge, and has by them been neatly furnished. The present officers are A. J. Nyman, W. M.; John B. Hopkins, S. W.; Thaddeus T. McNitt, J. W.; George H. Remington, Sec.; Edwin Ruthruff, Treas.

*Tillotson Lodge, No. 165, I. O. O. F.*—This lodge was instituted June 26, 1871, and worked under a dispensation until Jan. 8, 1872, when a charter was granted by the Grand Lodge of the State. The charter members were James H. Besore, Joseph M. Coffelt, William H. Reynolds, James Slinger, Samuel Hoppin, W. H. Davis, Joseph H. Nyman.

The charter officers were J. H. Besore, N. G.; J. M. Coffelt, V. G.; William H. Reynolds, R. S.; James Slinger, P. S.; James E. Ferguson, Treas. The lodge meets Monday night of each week in a neatly-appointed lodge-room in the Reynolds block. The present officers are James Slinger, N. G.; A. B. Taft, V. G.; L. S. Russell, R. S.; William H. Reynolds, P. S.; M. Hammond, Treas. The lodge embraces 60 active members.

*Bangor Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star.*—This chapter was organized April 12, 1876, under a dispensation, its first officers having been the following: Mrs. Alice M. Cross, W. P.; John M. Burch, Vice P.; Mrs. A. M. Taft, Treas.; Mrs. J. A. Harvey, Sec.; Mrs. P. J. Cross, 1st Patron; Mrs. E. J. Ruthruff, 2d Patron; Mrs. M. Remington, 3d Patron; Mrs. S. M. Nyman, 4th Patron; Mrs. E. A. Hopkins, 5th Patron; Mrs. J. M. Burch, Conductor; Mrs. A. Chidester, Guard; A. B. Taft, Sentinel; J. S. Brown, Chaplain. The present officers are Mrs. S. M. Nyman, W. M.; A. J. Nyman, W. P.; Mrs. A. C. Cross, A. M.; Mrs. J. M. Burch, Sec.; Mrs. J. S. Cross, Treas.; Mrs. Phoebe Cross, Conductress; Mrs. G. H. Remington, Associate Conductress; Mrs. N. W. Drake, Chaplain; Mrs. M. McGrath, Adah; Mrs. Edwin Ruthruff, Ruth; Mrs. J. B. Hopkins, Esther; Mrs. George F. Foster, Martha; Mrs. J. Jefferson, Electa; Mrs. C. H. Dowland, Warder; C. H. Dowland, Sentinel.

## RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—In the fall of 1865, Rev. William Paddock held a series of meetings in what was known as the old red school-house, located southwest of the village. As the result of these meetings a class was organized embracing 45 members and probationers, who soon after took the preliminary steps towards the building of a church. Very strong inducements having been offered to build on the north side of the river, then the business centre of the little village, ground was broken and the edifice begun, under the direction of the building committee, consisting of Messrs. J. H. Nyman, N. S. Taylor, and John Miller. Rev. E. L. Kellogg, the next preacher in charge,

continued the work of building, and at the Annual Conference of 1868 succeeded in effecting a division of the South Haven circuit, by which Bangor and Geneva were embraced in the Bangor circuit. Rev. Irvin Skiunner, a young preacher, next presided over the Bangor charge, receiving a salary of \$575. The Stewards at this time were P. Hoag, J. Crakes, N. S. Taylor, A. B. Taft, H. Willis, T. Emerson, and E. L. Tucker; District Steward, A. B. Taft; Trustees, N. S. Taylor, A. B. Taft, E. L. Tucker, William Reynolds, J. H. Nyman, and D. K. Charles. In 1869, Rev. D. C. Woodard was appointed preacher in charge, with a salary of \$800, his field of labor being at Bangor and the Wood school-house. Under his ministry the church was completed and dedicated, but was unfortunately not free from debt. Rev. William McKnight was placed in charge in 1870, at a salary of \$700. Illness compelled him to retire from labor before his term had expired, and Rev. ——— Bacon filled the vacancy. In December, 1870, the society not being able to liquidate the indebtedness on the church building, it was sold under mortgage. The ladies of the congregation, however, with their accustomed zeal, soon raised a sufficient sum with which to purchase a lot for the erection of a new building. In 1871, Breedsville was annexed to the circuit, and Rev. G. W. Patterson became the pastor, with a salary of \$600, and later \$700. In 1872 the board of trustees was reorganized, and the church then became known as the Simpson Methodist Episcopal Church of Bangor. N. S. Taylor, A. B. Taft, D. K. Charles, and C. F. Ford were appointed a building committee, to superintend the erection of the new edifice. It was completed in 1873, at a cost of \$12,000, N. S. Taylor being the efficient chairman of the building committee. Rev. J. R. Odin was the pastor in 1873, with a salary of \$600, and was succeeded in 1874 by Rev. T. Clark, who received a salary of \$676. Rev. William Harper became preacher in charge in 1875, at a salary of \$895, with assistants at the various fields of labor under his charge. Rev. C. W. Pearson came in 1876, receiving \$600 as salary, but in consequence of failing health left the charge in care of Rev. William Jakeway in 1877. In 1877–78, Rev. E. H. Sparling filled the pulpit, at a salary of \$700 and \$600, respectively, Bangor having been set apart as a separate circuit. Rev. J. T. Iddings became pastor in 1879, with a salary of \$700.

The present officers are: Stewards, N. Drake, A. J. Lewis, A. B. Taft, S. McMellen, E. A. Withey, and J. L. Cross; Recording Steward, A. B. Taft; District Steward, J. L. Cross; Class-Leader, O. S. Brown; Trustees, D. K. Charles, C. C. Phillips, N. Drake, O. S. Brown, and A. J. Lewis.

There is connected with the church a flourishing Sunday-school of 100 scholars, the superintendent being C. C. Phillips and the librarian F. W. Bidwell.

*Church of Christ.*—Through the influence of several members of this church, who were residents of the village of Bangor and deemed it essential to carry out the principles which they had imbibed elsewhere, Elder William M. Roe, then pastor of the Church of Christ at Paw Paw, held a series of union services, with the pastor of the Methodist Episcopal Church of this place, in February, 1876. The

interest awakened in those services induced them to call to their aid Elder J. H. Reese, pastor of the church at Millburg, Berrien Co., who responded to their call on the 18th of March following, and organized them, according to New Testament usage, on the 22d of the same month, in Nyman's church building, on the north side of the village, with 13 members. J. L. Cutting and C. L. Brown were appointed overseers, and H. H. Williamson and J. A. Sherrod deacons. The record now shows 127 names, but death and emigration have lessened that number to 88. J. H. Reese and Ira B. Winch were added to the overseers on accepting the resignation of J. L. Cutting. A. Milliken, A. Whiteman, and J. B. Roys were added to the list of deacons on dismissing H. H. Williamson. Owing to an increase in membership and a desire to hold services every Lord's day, it became absolutely necessary to change the place of meeting, which was accomplished in October, 1878, by removing to Ransom's Hall, on the south side. The Sunday-school, under the wise management of Mr. C. L. Brown as superintendent, has been quite successful from the beginning. Its financial condition is good, and its average attendance is about 60 scholars at present.

Elder J. H. Reese has had the pastoral care since the organization of the church. The society is free from debt, and under an act of incorporation has secured a lot and pledges to the amount of \$700 for the erection of a place of worship.

*Church of God.*—This society was organized in the year 1867, by Elders R. H. Bolton and William Reading. Since that time the following ministers have had charge of the church: J. H. Besore, J. C. Drake, A. J. Hull, B. D. Bright, J. Selkirk, R. Robinson, J. E. Moffit, J. B. White, and W. Seifried, and 65 members have been received into church fellowship. The congregation worships in an edifice on the north side of the river.

A fine church edifice has recently been erected on section 8 by the United Brethren Society, but the writer has been unable to obtain a history of the organization.

#### PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

The first school district was organized July 25, 1838, and comprised the northeast quarter of the township, embracing nine square miles, and numbering but three families and four children.

The first school building erected within the limits of the present village was built by Calvin Cross in 1845, and located southwest of the centre of the village. It was for years known as the "red school-house," and the school was presided over by Miss Mehitable Northrop, who may be regarded as the pioneer teacher of the village. Other teachers followed, most of whom enjoyed the hospitalities of the district patrons and "boarded 'round." It being deemed advisable to change the site of the school building and afford more spacious quarters, on account of the increasing list of scholars, the building at present occupied was erected. There was, however, no change in the method of conducting the school until the coming of A. C. Martin as principal, in 1872. With his presence was manifested an increasing interest in education on the part of the citizens, which resulted, the second year of his engagement, in

the organization of a graded school. The building, which had not been wholly occupied, was finished, and with two competent assistants Mr. Martin inaugurated a course of study similar to that of other graded schools in the State. In 1879 the increase of pupils was so manifest as to require additional assistance, and the principal was allowed in all four assistants. The school, with its large number of pupils and its able corps of teachers, felt greatly the need of a spacious and comfortable building. The immediate demand for more space was met by removing the staircase and hall of the present building, all available space being thus utilized; a recitation-room of limited dimensions was provided for the high school. It is thought that a new school building will ultimately replace the one in present use. The instruction in all the departments of the Bangor Graded School has been so thorough that its pupils find themselves fully prepared for admission to the most advanced institutions of learning in the State.

The corps of teachers at present engaged are A. C. Martin, Principal; Mrs. A. C. Martin, Assistant; F. W. Bidwell, Grammar School; Miss Emma Cross, Intermediate Department; Miss Hattie Alvord, Primary Department.

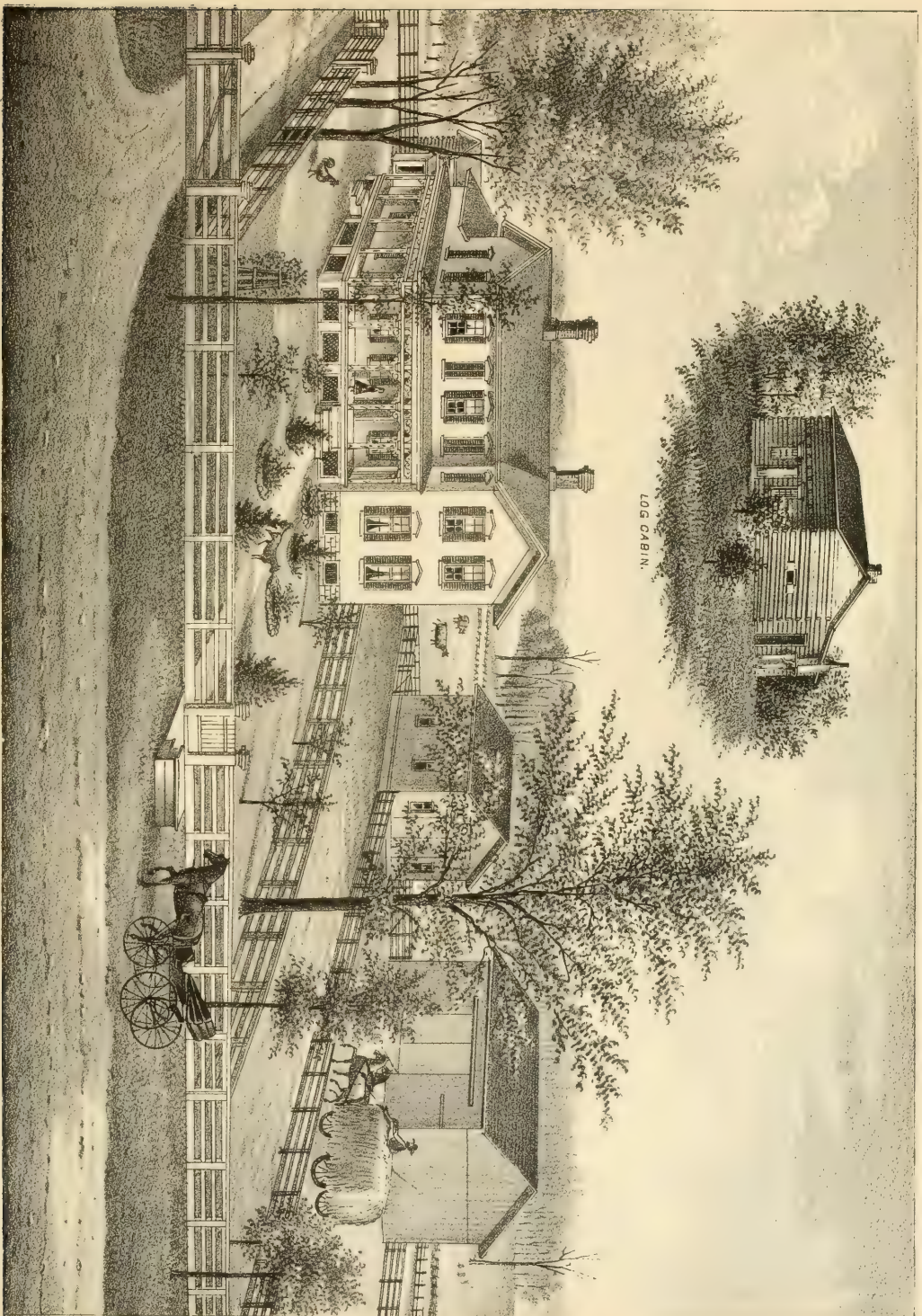
The members of the school board are C. C. Phillips, Director; George Remington, Moderator; W. B. Tripp, Treasurer; W. W. Davis, J. E. Ferguson, William Kinney, Trustees.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### WILLIAM W. KINNEY.

This gentleman's parents were married in 1821. His father, Buell Kinney, was a native of Connecticut, and his mother of New York. Buell Kinney, a clothier by occupation, worked at his trade in New York until 1837, when he removed with his family to Monroe Co., Mich., where he had purchased a farm. William W. Kinney was born in Cayuga Co., N. Y., Aug. 1, 1823, and remained with his parents until 1848. On the 22d of February in that year he was married to Miss Amanda Clark, who was one of a family of five daughters. Her father was born in Connecticut and her mother in Massachusetts. Mr. and Mrs. Kinney became the parents of nine children, of whom seven are living. After marriage they settled on a farm in La Salle, Monroe Co., Mich., where they remained until 1855. In that year Mr. Kinney purchased the farm he now occupies (sixty acres) in Bangor township, Van Buren Co. At that time it was unimproved, but the result of Mr. Kinney's labors upon it for twenty-five years will become apparent when the reader glances at the accompanying view. Mr. Kinney's mother died in Monroe County in 1853, and his father in Eaton County, where he was living with a daughter, in 1868. Mrs. Kinney's father died in Monroe County in 1850, and her mother in Bangor in 1872. Mr. Kinney is in politics a Republican, and in religion liberal. Although his own advantages in an educational line were not the best, he takes great interest in all affairs relating to schools, and has ever been among





LOG CABIN.

RESIDENCE OF WM. W. KINNEY, BANGOR, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





the foremost to improve the tone and character of the various institutions of learning in his locality. He has held a school office for seventeen years, and is a staunch supporter of the cause of education.

#### JOHN M. VANAUKEN.

This gentleman, the son of Aaron Vanauken, and one of a family of nine children, was born in Knox, Albany Co., N. Y., March 3, 1816. His parents were both natives of New York, although his mother was of German descent. When seventeen years of age, John Vanauken began to do battle with the world on his own account. In the spring



Photo. by Northrup, Bangor.

JOHN M. VANAUKEN.

of 1846 he purchased the land which he now occupies, including one hundred and fifty-five acres on section 33, Bangor township, Van Buren Co., Mich. It was entirely unimproved, but in the lapse of years a wonderful change has been wrought, and

"Where once frowned a forest a garden is smiling."

At the age of twenty-five, Mr. Vanauken was married to Miss Phebe A. Dawley in the town of Lyons, Wayne Co., N. Y., of which State her parents were natives. Nine children blessed this union, of whom but three are living,—a son and two daughters. Mrs. Vanauken died in November, 1857, and in 1860 Mr. Vanauken was married to Mrs. D. J. Northrop, a member of the Kingston family, of Jefferson Co., N. Y. She had come very early to Michigan. Her death occurred April 22, 1869, and Mr. Vanauken's household is now presided over by his youngest daughter, Mrs. Stowe. Mr. Vanauken has about seventy acres under cultivation, and is in every respect a thorough and enterprising farmer. He has dealt to some extent in fine stock, and takes much pride in having the best varieties. He at one time sold a pair of steers, two years old, whose combined weight was three thousand and twelve pounds. In politics he is a Republican, and in religion liberal. One of his sons served three years in the war of the Rebellion. Believing that "whatever is worth doing at all is worth doing well," Mr. Vanauken has risen from

comparatively poor circumstances to an enviable position as regards true worth and prosperity, and his own labors have accomplished this end.

#### THOMAS CROSS.

John Cross was born in Columbiana Co., Ohio, in 1810, married Miss Martha Sterling, and in 1840 removed to Hancock Co., Ohio, where he remained twenty-three years. In 1863 came to Bangor, where he purchased a farm, upon which he still resides. In Columbiana County three children, viz., James, Mary, and Margaret Jane, were born to them, and in Hancock County six more, named as follows: Thomas, Wilson, Cornelius, Jacob Sampson, Clarissa, and Nancy. Jacob Sampson and Clarissa died in Hancock County, and Wilson and Nancy in Bangor. Also Mrs. Cross died in Bangor, Jan. 27, 1877.

Thomas Cross was born in 1841, and when sixteen years of age, his father having only fifty acres of land and a large family, he started in the world for himself; worked for Thomas Morgan three seasons, going home to attend school during three winters; the fourth year worked for a Mr. Sampson; then moved to Bangor, where he arrived Oct. 16, 1861. Necessity compelled him to commence work at once, and in eighteen days he had earned as many dollars; then contracted with Daniel Taylor for one year's labor, receiving therefor one hundred and sixty dollars; second year received one hundred and eighty, and the third two hundred and twenty dollars. With this money, in 1863, he purchased his first farm of eighty acres, a view of his residence on which appears in this work. In November, 1864, he married Mary J. Bennett, a native of Cleveland, Whitley Co., Ind., who was born in 1844. Her father, Hiram Bennett, was born in Brooklyn, Madison Co., N. Y., in 1806; removed to Pennsylvania in 1824, to Indiana in 1834, and to Geneva in 1855, and since the marriage of Mr. and Mrs. Cross has resided with them. They removed to their farm in 1865. Their first child, Amanda J., was born in July of that year, died in July, 1876; Linford T., in September, 1867, died in July, 1870; Carrie L., in May, 1869; Gertrude M., in October, 1871; Irving J., in May, 1873; and Emma E., in September, 1875. In 1871, previous to the construction of the railroad,—anticipating it and realizing its tendency to advance the interests of his section,—he purchased three hundred and twenty acres, incurring a debt of five thousand dollars, necessitating the mortgaging of his original farm for full value. In 1872 the road was built, making a market for lumber. Then came the Chicago fire, to which point he made profitable shipments, and by disposing of one hundred acres to the Bangor Furnace Company he was enabled to remove all incumbrances. The reader will perceive from the foregoing that Mr. Cross has carved out his own fortune, with the assistance only of Mrs. Cross, who has contributed her share towards his success. His farm is highly cultivated, with fifty acres of timber, good improvements, and he claims the best barn in Van Buren County. His children are educated at home, employing a teacher in the house. A Republican since the organization of the party. Independent in circumstances, he enjoys all the comforts it affords.



JOHN SOUTHARD.



MRS. JOHN SOUTHARD.

Photos, by Northrup, Bangor.

## JOHN SOUTHARD

was born in Albany Co., N. Y., Feb. 4, 1795, and was the fifth in a family of eleven children. His parents were both natives of the State of New York. His grandfather, Thomas Southard, was born in Rhode Island, and served seven years in the American army during the war of the Revolution. John Southard was married, Feb. 16, 1823, in the town of Windham, Greene Co., N. Y., to Miss Harriet A. Haight. Her parents were natives of that State, and raised a family of eight children. In 1837, Mr. Southard emigrated with

his family to Michigan, and located in Washtenaw County, removing a year later to Bangor township, Van Buren Co., and settling on the farm which Mrs. Southard and her son now occupy on section 25. Mr. and Mrs. Southard raised a family of seven children, five of whom are now living. Mr. Southard received his education in the district schools of his day. His death occurred Oct. 30, 1864, after a wedded life of forty-one years, and when his existence had nearly reached the lengthened period of threescore years and ten.

## DAVID K. CHARLES.

The ancestors of Mr. Charles, as far as they can be traced, were originally from Scotland. His parents, however, were natives of Ireland; and in County Londonderry, of the "Emerald Isle," Mr. Charles himself was born, March 25, 1829, being the second in a family of twelve children. When he was twelve years old he came to America, in company with his uncle, Andrew Charles, who had lived in America several years, but was back visiting his old home; they arrived in New York in April, 1841. His father and the rest of the family emigrated ten years later. Andrew Charles was a harness-maker by trade, and had carried on the business in Angelica, Allegany Co., N. Y., for several years. David K. lived with him two years, learning the trade. At the expiration of two years, he worked in the same town one year at the tanner's trade. He then learned the art of St. Crispin,—shoemaking,—and worked at the latter until 1849, when he established a business of his own at Angelica. On the 8th of April, 1851, he was married, at that place, to Miss Caroline Barnum, daughter of David and Elizabeth Barnum, who was a native of Angelica, and whose parents were both born in New York. She is one of a family of seven children. To Mr. and Mrs. Charles have been born four children, as follows: Amelia C., born Feb. 13, 1852, died March 30, 1853; Emma C., born July 20, 1854; Clifton B., born June 21, 1857; Hattie E., born Dec. 22, 1858.

In July, 1858, Mr. Charles' property at Wellsville, N. Y., was destroyed by fire, after which he commenced business in Olean, where a like disaster occurred in 1866. This somewhat disheartened him, but he was not of the nature to be totally despondent, and removed with his family to Illinois. In 1867 he came to Michigan and located at the village of Bangor, where he opened an establishment for the sale of general merchandise, and continued in business five years. In 1872 he moved upon the farm he now occupies, on which is one of the finest residences in the township, a sketch of which is inserted in this volume. The farm contains four hundred acres, and is well adapted to both grain and stock-raising. Mr. Charles makes a specialty of hay, cutting about one hundred tons annually. His early schooling was in the district educational institutions where he lived, his attendance being principally during winters. At the age of twenty he entered Richburgh Academy, New York, and remained one term. In politics Mr. Charles is a Republican, but is in no sense of the term an office-seeker. Both he and his wife are members of the Episcopal Church, but as there is no society of that denomination in Bangor they have worked with the Methodist Episcopal Church. Their children, except the one who died in infancy, have all grown to maturity. The oldest daughter is married; Clifton, who has recently completed a four years' course at the Agricultural College, is working his father's farm. Mr. Charles, since his arrival

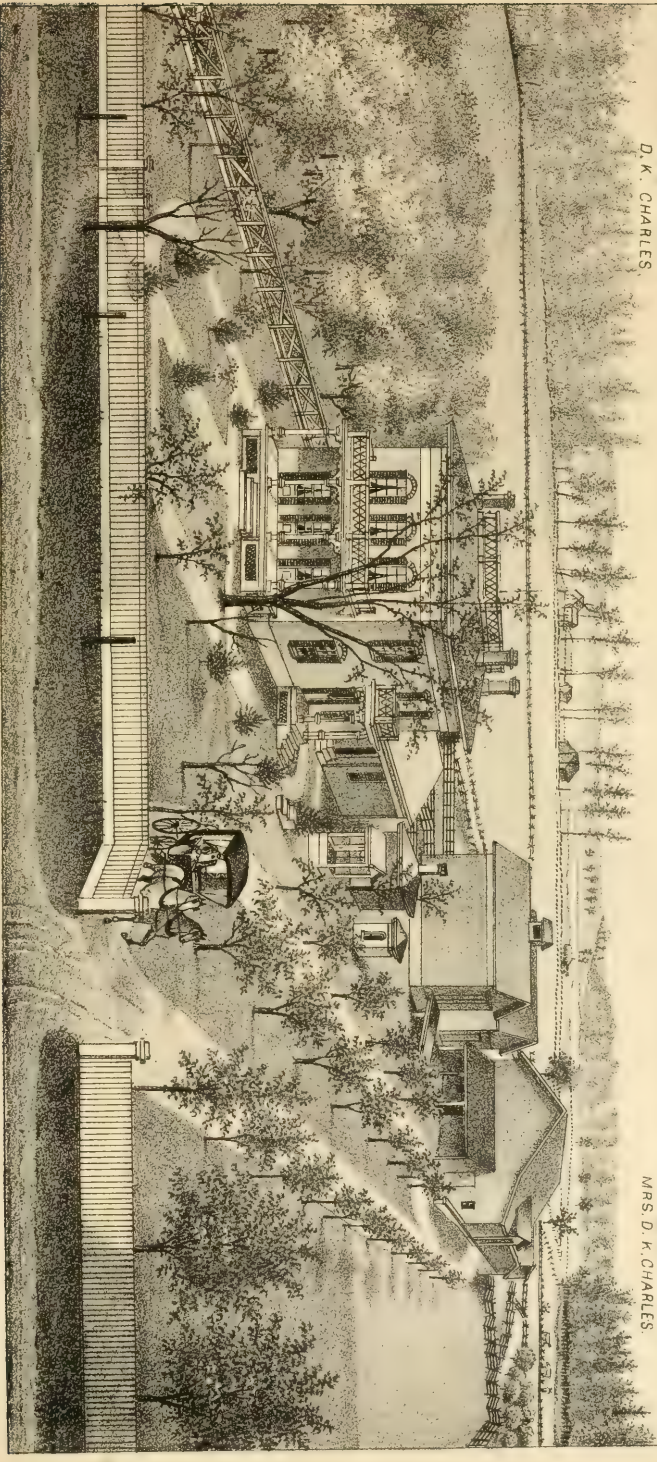




D. K. CHARLES



MRS. D. K. CHARLES



RES. OF D. K. CHARLES, BANGOR TP., VAN BUREN CO., MICH.



in the township, has erected seven dwellings and five barns, and aside from his farm owns a hotel and other property in Bangor village. His start in life was humble, but his ventures have been eminently successful, and great credit is due him for his achievements.

#### WILLIAM S. CHARLES.

This gentleman was born in County Derry, Ireland, June 28, 1839, and was the seventh in a family of twelve children. In the spring of 1851 he accompanied his parents to America, settling in Angelica, N. Y. When sixteen years of age he left home and came to Michigan, arriving at Detroit with but twenty-five cents in money remaining. His subsequent experience was for a time varied and somewhat exciting. He was for two weeks in the employ of Dr. Sweeney, at Dearborn, and subsequently found employment in Van Buren County as a wood-chopper until 1856. He then went to Allegan County, remaining until June of the latter year, and from thence to Paw Paw, where he lived three years, finally coming to Bangor, where, in 1860, he purchased forty acres of land, on which he still resides, and to which he has added numerous purchases, having at the present time a total of five hundred acres in the home-farm, besides lands in other portions of the county. Oct. 14, 1861, Mr. Charles enlisted as a private in Battery B, First Michigan Artillery, and was in the service of the nation three years and eight months. He was promoted, step by step, and on the 14th of November, 1864, received a commission as second lieutenant. He was an exemplary soldier, and was never absent from duty. His command formed a part of the Western army. He participated in the memorable battle of Pittsburg Landing, and took part in various engagements in Georgia and the Carolinas, having a varied experience, until the 21st and 22d of March, 1865. Oct. 31, 1865, he was married to Mary Jane Cramer, at Hudson, Mich. She was the only daughter of Abraham and Sarah (Sterling) Cramer, and was born in Medina, Lenawee Co., Mich., Nov. 29, 1840. Her parents were natives of New York, and came to Michigan not long before their daughter was born, settling in Lenawee County, where Mr. Cramer still resides. Four of his sons are now living. Mr. and Mrs. Charles are the parents of the following children, viz., Frank L., born Aug. 24, 1866; Carrie B., born Oct. 14, 1868; and two others, who died young. In politics Mr. Charles is a Republican; has for two years held the position of township treasurer, besides having held minor offices. In religious matters his views are liberal. His advantages for obtaining an education were of an ordinary nature.

#### ANSON GOSS.

The subject of the following sketch is a native of Shalersville township, Portage Co., Ohio, where he was born, July 29, 1834. His paternal ancestors boasted of a Scotch extraction, and were descended from the rugged character of the Highlanders. His grandfather, John Goss, and his grandmother, Polly Davidson Goss, reared a family of three

sons and five daughters. Ormond, the third of the family, and Anson's father, was born June 29, 1802. On the maternal side Anson is descended from pure English stock; his mother's father, Elisha Haven, was born at Montpelier, Vt., Jan. 28, 1772, and married a widow, Mollie Streator, whose maiden name was Goodell, Jan. 22, 1790. By this alliance there were five sons and four daughters. Roby, the sixth child, and mother of Anson, was born at Montpelier, the home of her parents, Aug. 22, 1804. They removed to the Western Reserve, Portage Co., Ohio, in 1819. There three of the family still reside.

Ormond Goss, in occupation a stone-cutter, emigrated to Ohio, where the matrimonial alliance with Roby Haven was contracted, March 12, 1829. They reared a family of four sons and two daughters, viz., Henry, Ruth, Anson, Fred, Polly, and John P.

Henry, having purchased a soldier's claim, came to Bangor township in 1853, and laid his claim on government land. A severe drought occurring on the Reserve, many, his father among the number, disposed of their dairy cows, and sought a climate less subject to such changes. Henry's parents were attracted by him to Bangor, and came on a tour of inspection, little expecting to be satisfied with its soil, timber, or climate, but were so happily disappointed that they secured one hundred and twenty acres of land on section 22, made arrangements for some clearing and the building of a log house, and returned to Ohio.

In the spring of 1854 the parents and remainder of the children, except Anson, removed to this claim in Bangor. In the following autumn he also came and located his first piece of land, the east half of the northeast quarter of section 22, which cost him the small sum of sixty dollars, —three shillings an acre.

Dec. 31, 1859, he married Mary Jane Vanauken, daughter of John Vanauken, of Bangor. He keeps his old log house, which is incorporated with the view of his present residence, to remind him of their beginning in life. They struggled together during the twenty years which have elapsed night and day, and by their industry, economy, and skillful management have amassed a snug little fortune, owning now seven hundred and twenty acres of land, a large amount of which is under cultivation and with good farm buildings; being a skillful mechanic, these he has superintended in construction. Mr. Goss is a man who never allows pleasure to interfere with his business, it seemingly being his greatest pleasure to push his business interests, and in this he certainly commands the admiration of all whose notice he attracts.

#### THOMAS KEMP.

This gentleman was born in Burwash, Sussex County, England, Nov. 15, 1813, and was the oldest in a family of thirteen children. His father, Thomas Kemp, Sr., and mother, Eleanor (Kirkland) Kemp, were both natives of England, although the latter was of Scotch descent. Thomas Kemp, Sr., emigrated to America in 1829, sailing from London the 9th of May, arriving at New York City on the 3d of July, and proceeding thence to Cayuga County, in



the same State, where they settled and remained until death. Mrs. Kemp died when her son Thomas was seventeen years of age, and her husband survived her until 1863.

Thomas Kemp, Jr., commenced to earn his own living when eighteen years old, finding employment near home until 1835. In that year he hired to Isaac Barnum, at twelve dollars per month, came to Michigan, and purchased his present farm, on section 34, Bangor township, Van

in Lawrence township, Van Buren Co., Mr. Kemp was married to Miss Julia Raven, who has borne him eight children, all but one of whom are living,—the deceased member being Thomas Francis, who was drowned July 15, 1877, aged sixteen. The father of the present Mrs. Kemp was a native of New Jersey, and her mother of New York, Mrs. Kemp being one of a family of six children. Her parents came to Van Buren County in 1840, and settled in



THOMAS KEMP.



MRS. THOMAS KEMP.

Photos. by Northrup, Bangor.

Buren Co. Mr. Kemp has been three times married, his marriage with Miss Cone, in Hartford township, being the first wedding celebrated among the settlers thereof. Mrs. Kemp died July 6, 1846. After her death Mr. Kemp visited Ohio, and before returning was married to Miss Mary Cone, a sister of his first wife. Less than a year afterwards his fireside was again left desolate, but the departing left, as did her predecessor, a child to take her place. Both these children are now living. Dec. 5, 1847,

the township of Lawrence, where her father died in July, 1843, and her mother in 1846. Mr. Kemp's educational advantages were not the best, and his attendance at public school aggregated but about five months. Both he and his wife have been members of the Methodist Episcopal Church since 1858, and have never shrunk from what appeared to be their duty. In politics Mr. Kemp votes with the Republican party on general issues, and in local matters for whom he considers most fit for the position in question.

#### ORLANDO S. BROWN

was born Sept. 29, 1816, in Monroe Co., N. Y. His father, Orlando Brown, was a farmer and a native of one of the Eastern States, and married a Miss Gould, of the same nativity. Mr. Brown, Sr., died when his son was but seven years of age. His widow married again, and in 1837 came with her husband to Michigan, settling in Monroe County. In 1839 they removed from the latter to Van Buren County, locating on section 13, in the township of Bangor, but a few months later trading for Mr. Brown's present place on section 12, consisting of eighty acres. Orlando S. Brown was married, Sept. 17, 1836, to Miss Polly Ann Taylor, in Monroe Co., N. Y. Her parents were natives of Connecticut, in which State she also was born. Their present home in Bangor was in the midst of a forest when they first occupied it, and the village of Bangor had scarcely been dreamed of. Mr. and Mrs. Brown became the parents of two children,—a son and a daughter; the latter is now deceased. Mrs. Brown died March 2, 1871, and on the

14th of August, 1872, Mr. Brown was married to Mrs. McCrary, a native of Indiana. Her parents were born in the State of New York. In politics, Mr. Brown was a Republican, and, with his wife, belonged to the Methodist Episcopal Church. His mother died in Bangor, Feb. 1, 1872. By his integrity as a man and his habits of industry and economy, Mr. Brown achieved his success in life. He held several of the offices in his township, and departed this life Feb. 2, 1880.

#### J. G. MILLER.

John and Fannie Miller were among the pioneers of the State of Michigan, having settled here before it was admitted as a State. They were natives of New York, were married there, and made a permanent settlement in Monroe Co., Mich., in 1831. Their children were as follows: L. B., born in New York; J. G., Cynthia S., L. C., John



PHOTO BY NORTON

O. S. BROWN.



MRS. O. S. BROWN.



RESIDENCE OF ORLANDO S. BROWN, BANGOR, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





F., Fannie, and Sophia J., born in Michigan. The children are all living but two,—Cynthia S. and Sophia J. L. B., John F., and Fannie are still residents of Monroe County; L. C. has made his home in Bangor.

J. G. Miller was born in 1833, and was reared surrounded by the impediments and difficulties usually attending the settlement of a new country. Losing his mother when only thirteen years of age, necessity compelled him to depend upon his own efforts for a livelihood, and he began his career under adverse circumstances. Realizing the advantages even of a limited education, he made a manly effort to secure one, and engaged for two winters in sawing wood, this affording him the opportunity of attending school. He afterwards worked two years, receiving as compensation three dollars per month, which enabled him to clothe himself and also to render assistance to his sisters. The following year his salary was doubled, and he then passed seven summers as an employee on the Wabash and Miami Canal, where he made his first one hundred dollars. Finding employment during a portion only of the last three years, he invested his money in a thrashing-machine and a horse, Esquire Thomas McManus, of Monroe County, becoming his indorser, as Mr. Miller was compelled to incur some indebtedness. In this business he remained until 1856, when he leased an uncle's farm. Cynthia and Lovisa superintended the internal arrangements of the household, Cynthia teaching a portion of the time, and here several members of the family were able to attend school. In 1858 he arrived with a team and wagon in Bangor, which he exchanged for forty acres of land. He immediately returned, securing a situation in a brick-yard. In the fall he purchased a horse and buggy and drove to Bangor, where he purchased the farm now owned by him, and of which a view appears in this work, giving in payment one hundred dollars, his first purchase of forty acres, and his horse and buggy. In 1860 he followed his trade, that of carpenter and joiner, and worked in a saw-mill as an employee of J. H. Nyman. In the spring of 1861 he returned to his trade, working at it until Sept. 25, 1861, when he united in marriage with Miss Eveline Watkins. They began their married life with a farm paid for and thirty dollars in cash.

Thomas Watkins, the father of Mrs. Miller, was born near Pittsburgh, Pa., in 1802. He married there, and moved to Mount Vernon, Ohio, where John and William were born. He lost his first wife in Mount Vernon, and afterwards married Miss Katie Spaugn. Mrs. Miller was born at Mount Vernon, Ohio, in 1836. James and Levi were also born there. Katie, Mrs. Miller's mother, died in Hancock Co., Ohio, to which place they removed in 1857. Mr. Watkins then married Melvina Litrick. The names of his last children are Henry, Martin, Francis, Martha Jane, Charles, and Jackson, who, with the exception of one who died in Ohio, are still living.

After Mr. and Mrs. Miller's marriage they passed eleven years on the farm, where three children were born, viz., Ida, July 10, 1862, died in 1872; Omar, Sept. 6, 1865; John J., Dec. 26, 1869.

Mr. Miller having achieved success in farming, and having acquired the necessary means, engaged in business

in the village of Bangor in 1872, having built a store in 1871. He commenced with a partner, whose interest he purchased in February, 1875. The village had been continually increasing in population, and the surrounding country been rapidly developed. Mr. Miller recognized the importance of having a public hall. The Opera House, of which a view is given, is the result. It is a building forty-four by ninety-four feet, with a seating capacity of five hundred. The hall is on the second floor, and Mr. Miller occupies a portion of the first floor as a hardware-store, renting the remainder.

Mr. Miller's career was begun as a poor boy. By energy and perseverance, united with economy and good business qualifications, he has secured a competency, and is now living in the enjoyment of the comforts and luxuries wealth affords. The records show him to be one of the heaviest tax-payers in his school district and township. Politically, he is a Democrat.

## CHAPTER LV.

### BLOOMINGDALE TOWNSHIP.\*

Boundaries, Soil, and Waters—First and other Early Settlements—Civil History—Bloomington Village—Gobleville—Berlramont—Anderson's Mills—Township Public Schools.

#### BOUNDARIES, SOIL, AND WATERS.

UPON the northern border of the county of Van Buren, with Pine Grove on the east, Waverly on the south, Columbia on the west, and Allegan County on the north, is situated the township of Bloomington.

It comprises the territory designated in the United States survey as township No. 1 south, of range No. 14 west, which, with the present township of Pine Grove, was organized as Bloomington in 1845. The surface is rolling, and originally was heavily timbered with pine, hemlock, and the many varieties of deciduous forest-trees indigenous to this latitude. Pine largely predominated in the northern part, yet it was found to a considerable extent in many other portions.

The soil is a sandy and clay loam, fertile and well adapted to the culture of fruits and the cereals. In the quality and extent of its productions Bloomington takes a front rank among the northern tier of townships.

Some twenty-two small lakes dot its surface, embracing a total area of about 1000 acres. Those dignified with names on the map are Great Bear (which also extends into Columbia township), Muskrat, Sweet, Twin, Three-Legged, Mud, Lake-Mill, Max, Little Brandywine, Thayer, and Smith's.

As forming outlets and inlets to the lakes mentioned numerous unimportant streams are observed.

The people are chiefly devoted to the pursuits of agriculture, and the State census of 1874 returned a total of 1690 inhabitants.

#### FIRST AND OTHER EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

During the bleak, cold days of December, 1837, the first settlement was made in this township by the brothers Mal-

\* By John S. Schenck.

lory H., William H. H., Reuben J., and Merlin M. Myers, accompanied by their mother and sisters, Sarah O. and Ruth Ann.

The Myers were natives of Oneida Co., N. Y., where their father died in 1826. In later years they removed to the town of Bergen, Genesee Co., N. Y. Here the widow's children had nearly all reached the estate of manhood and womanhood ere a removal was contemplated to the new State of Michigan.

In the spring of 1836 the brothers Mallory H. and William H. H. started out on foot and walked the entire distance from Genesee Co., N. Y., *via* Canada to this State.

For six months Mallory worked in Monroe County, and during the same time William in White Pigeon. The latter then returned to the State of New York, and brought out with him the remainder of the family, all being established at White Pigeon in the fall of 1836.

One year later they decided to settle permanently upon section 36, in this township, and here, as previously mentioned, they arrived amid the snows and wintry blasts of December 22d, with no shelter awaiting them other than that afforded by the tall monarchs of the forest.

The frozen earth—after snow one foot in depth had been melted away by a rousing fire—afforded them a resting-place the first night. The next day a rude cabin was built, which was followed soon after by a substantial log house, 14 by 33 feet in dimensions, which, with no floors, was roofed after the primitive manner,—with wooden troughs. Thus situated, their nearest neighbors seven miles distant,—at Breedsville and Paw Paw,—this family passed their first winter. Yet they were not idle. Slashings were made preparatory for crops the coming spring season, and considerable quantities of shingles were manufactured for the Paw Paw and White Pigeon markets. This latter branch of industry added materially to the exchequer of this family, as well as of all other settlers, during the first and second decades of their residence.

Mallory H. Myers, the eldest of this family of brothers, was twenty-three years old at the time of his settlement in this township. He was one of the first officers in the old township of Clinch, also of Waverly, and in 1845 was the first supervisor chosen in Bloomingdale. He now resides in the small village of Berlamont.

William H. H. Myers taught the first school, in the winter of 1838 and 1839. In later years he became a minister of the Free-Will Baptist Church. He died in 1865.

In the spring of 1838, Ashbel Herron, from Cayuga Co., N. Y., and Daniel G. Robinson, from Ohio, settled near the Myers', while Joseph S. Peck located in the extreme northwest corner of the township, on section 6. Mr. Peck's locality was for years known as "Pecktown," his early neighbors being Melvin Hogmire, Horace Humphrey, and Peter Smith.

Joseph Brotherton, from Cayuga Co., N. Y., settled upon section 34 in the fall of 1838.

During this year a school-house was built upon section 36, and the first marriage took place. The contracting parties—James Scott, of Decatur, and Miss Ruth Ann Myers, of the Myers settlement in Clinch—were married at the house of M. H. Myers, by Elder Warner.

Orlando H. Newcomb, who had previously lived in Almena, settled on section 36 in 1839.

Among other events of this year was the preaching of the first sermon, by Noah D. Sweet, Sunday, Aug. 11, 1839 (the services were held in the school-house); the burial of William Brownell, a young shingle-maker, who was the first person to depart this life in the new settlement. In December occurred the first birth. The child enjoying this distinction is now known as John Wesley Herron, of the village of Gobleville. Elder Warner also preached in the school-house during the fall of 1839. The same year two of the settlers' houses took fire in a mysterious manner and were burned with all their contents. Suspicion rested upon the Indians, who still frequented the country in considerable numbers; but they were finally dispelled by the uniformly friendly manner and general good conduct of the aborigines.

The following list of resident tax-payers of the old township of Clinch, made in the summer of 1839, will be of interest to early settlers, as well as to the general reader, for it proves conclusively just who the residents were at that time in the present townships of Almena, Waverly, Bloomingdale, and Pine Grove: John A. Ranney, Joseph Derosier, Asa Crofoot, Luther Howe, F. C. Annable, Blakely Barnes, Horace Boufoey, A. S. Downing, Samuel Turner, Ruhama Barnum, Henry Barnum, Freeman Hall, Bolivar Barnum, H. P. Barnum, C. D. Grimes, S. Grimes, Junia Warner, Jr., Willard Newcomb, Amon Covey, D. Crittenden, Benjamin Fink, W. Hurlbut, Morrill, Brown & Co., Levi Libbey, R. Bell, Nathaniel Livermore, Ashbel Herron, Mallory H. Myers, Reuben J. Myers, William H. H. Myers, Joseph Brotherton, Daniel G. Robinson, Joseph Peck, Joseph Williams, and John Condron. These residents then paid taxes to the amount of \$185.97.

Harvilad Thayer, a native of New Hampshire, who afterwards became one of the prominent men in this township, came here first in the fall of 1839, and purchasing lands situated on section 34, partly completed a dwelling-house thereon. He was then residing in White Pigeon, whither he had removed from Cayuga Co., N. Y., in 1836. On the 3d of March, 1840, his family arrived here in the woods and began improvements, in the near vicinity of which many descendants still live.

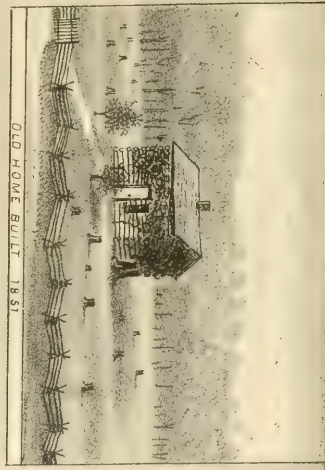
Other settlers of 1840 were Alanson Todd, on section 24; Ira S. Frary, on section 25; and N. Kennedy, on section 15. Dennis E. Whelan settled in 1842.

Henry Mower, who was born in the town of Woodstock, Windsor Co., Vt., removed from the latter State to Herkimer Co., N. Y., in 1829, from thence to St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., in 1830, and to Kalamazoo, Mich., in 1832. In Kalamazoo he entered the lands where are now situated the fair-grounds. From 1832 to 1843 he traversed on foot over the greater portion of Southern Michigan, while acting as guide to "land-lookers" and in the employ of Theodore Sheldon. He finally, in 1843, purchased land and settled where he now resides in this township.

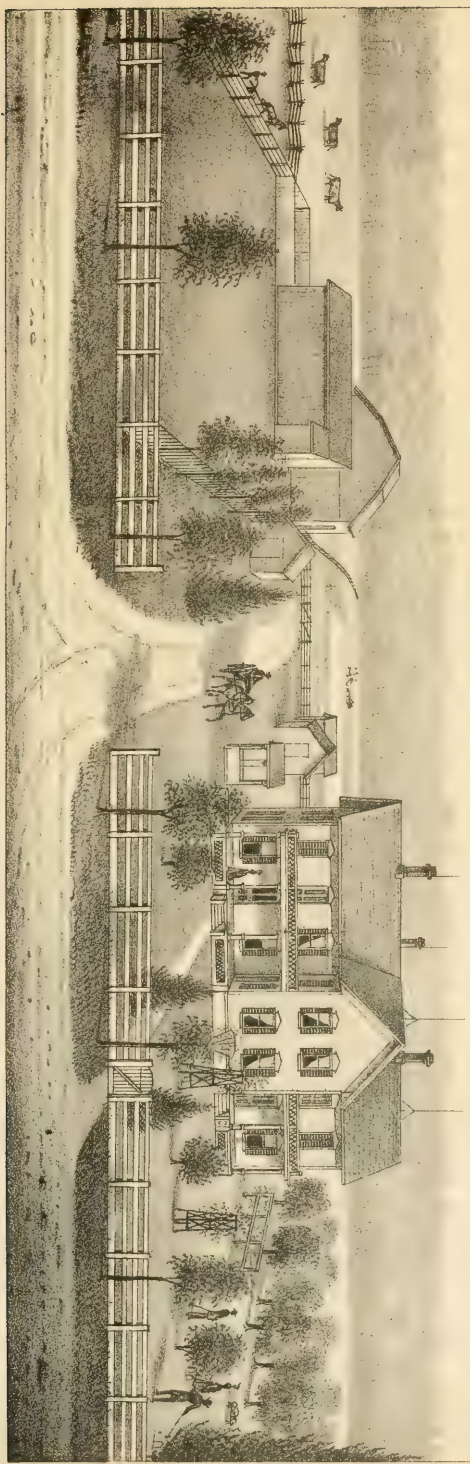
He was present at the first township election, in 1845, and was elected township clerk in 1846, an office which he continued to hold during the succeeding nine years. In 1849 he served as supervisor. Though chilled by the snows



MRS. H.H. HOWARD.



H. H. HOWARD.



RESIDENCE OF H. H. HOWARD, BLOOMINGDALE, VAN BUREN Co., MICHIGAN.





of nearly eighty winters, Mr. Mower is still the possessor of good mental faculties and much physical vigor, and to him are we indebted for many facts concerning the early history of this and neighboring townships.

Thomas Hodgson, another active pioneer, settled on section 30 in 1844.

The township of Bloomingdale was formed in 1845. The 22 persons returned upon the assessment-roll of that year as resident tax-payers were:

	Sec.		Sec.
Ashbel Herron.....	26	Daniel G. Robinson.....	25
William H. H. Myers.....	25	Peter T. Vallance.....	13, 24
Joseph Brotherton.....	24	Alanson Todd.....	24
Harviland Thayer.....	24	Ira S. Frary.....	25
Thomas Hodgson.....	26	Robert Moon.....	24
Dennis E. Whelan.....	25	Henry Mower.....	23
Mallory H. Myers.....	26	Elisha C. Cox.....	5
Levi W. Thayer.....	25	L. Jackson Lacy.....	1, 8
David Loveland.....	25	Melvin Hogmire.....	6
H. T. Houghton.....	Personal	Joseph Peck.....	6
Burroughs Abbott.....	25	Daniel G. Robinson & Co.....	16
Orlando H. Newcomb.....	36		

Additional tax-paying residents in 1846 were Reuben H. Ward, Jonathan Goodell, William L. Houghton, William H. Story, Alson A. Greaves, township treasurer, John Wait, Josiah Sweet, Daniel Jewell, and Henry Whelpley. The latter, as a boy, was one of the first settlers, coming here and working in the Myers settlement in 1838.

An early saw-mill (water-power) was erected by Daniel G. Robinson & Co., upon section 16, in 1848. Messrs. Myers & Newcomb built the first steam-mill, about three years later. John Hudson built the first grist-mill, in 1866. It was burned two or three years afterwards.

Here, as in other newly-settled regions, all the early settlers kept open house for the entertainment of weary and belated travelers. When ill, and previous to the coming of Dr. Barber, they were attended by Dr. Andrews, of Paw Paw.

Samuel Lane, at present a prominent resident of the village of Bloomingdale, removed from Monroe Co., N. Y., to Cheshire, then Trowbridge, Allegan Co., Mich., in the spring of 1845. He purchased 80 acres of land from the government, built a log dwelling, and became the third settler in that township. In 1848 he settled upon the Cox farm, section 5. About the year 1866 he sold the farm, and removing to the village of Bloomingdale, became one of its early merchants, also the first hotel proprietor. Among other quite early settlers were Harrison Cooley, Isaac L. Knapp, John Barnard, Truman B. Dougal, Henry W. Durand, Zenas L. Chase, Chester Barber, William J. Merwin, O. M. Bessey, Rufus M. Brown, Arch. W. Bishop, Alexander Miller, Christian Spiecher, Shadrach S. Austin, Harvey H. Howard, Matthew Munn, E. Baughman, the Haven brothers, and Henry Killefer.

Augustus Haven, from Portage Co., Ohio, in the spring of 1854 settled one mile west of the present village of Bloomingdale. There were then about 40 voters in the township, and Paw Paw was the nearest post-office station. The only framed dwellings were in the Myers and Herron settlements, and the Methodists—the only religious organization—held meetings in Joseph Peck's barn. Since his settlement here, as a farmer, merchant, and township official, Mr. Haven has been prominently identified with the varied interests of the township. In 1860, with a herd of 20

cows, he first began the manufacture of cheese. His cows were gradually increased to 40 in number. In 1870 he began using the milk of his neighbors' cows, and in 1873 cheese was made from the milk of 200 cows. Since 1877 his brother Warren has continued the business with success, yet Mr. A. Haven still manufactures individually from a herd of 30 cows.

In wealth, numerical strength, and the embellishment of their homes, great strides have been taken by the people of Bloomingdale since the completion of the railroad, in 1870. In its course through the township the line of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad traverses sections 15, 16, 17, 18, 22, 23, 24, and 25, and from the stations of Gobleville (on the east border), Bloomingdale (near the centre), and Berlamont (on the west border), the residents are afforded ample facilities for travel and the shipment of freight.

#### CIVIL HISTORY.

The territory embraced within the limits of this township, with Almena, Waverly, and Pine Grove, formed the old township of Clinch. It became Waverly in 1842, Bloomingdale in 1845, and by the erection of Pine Grove, in 1849, assumed its present proportions.

During a fire which occurred in the village of Bloomingdale, Aug. 23, 1878, the township records were completely destroyed, and it is now a matter of impossibility to ever compile a complete list of the township officers.

We learn from early residents, however, that the first township election was held at the house of L. Jackson Lacy, in April, 1845, and 17 votes were polled.

From records on file in the county clerk's office we find that the first officers elected were as follows: Mallory H. Myers, Supervisor; H. T. Houghton, Township Clerk; Ashbel Herron, Treasurer; Harviland Thayer, Orlando H. Newcomb, Assessors; Mallory H. Myers, Joseph Brotherton, Orlando H. Newcomb, Highway Commissioners; William H. H. Myers, Dennis E. Whelan, School Inspectors; Ashbel Herron, L. Jackson Lacy, Overseers of the Poor; Ira S. Frary, William H. H. Myers, Justices of the Peace.

Subsequent supervisors and justices of the peace elected, as shown by the same source of information,—*i.e.*, county records,—were as follows:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1846, Elisha C. Cox; 1847, L. Jackson Lacy; 1848, Harviland Thayer; 1849, Henry Mower; 1850-53, Ashbel Herron; 1854-55, Harrison Cooley; 1856, Isaac L. Knapp; 1857, Harrison Cooley; 1858, Ashbel Herron; 1859-60, Harrison Cooley; 1861-62, Harvey H. Howard; 1863-66, Henry Killefer; 1867-68, Timothy Cooley; 1869, Pliny Wait; 1870-71, Augustus Haven; 1872-77, Harvey H. Howard; 1878-79, James M. Robertson.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1846, L. Jackson Lacy, Ashbel Herron; 1847, John Barnard; 1848, L. Jackson Lacy, Harviland Thayer; 1849, Daniel G. Robinson, Reuben Ward, Truman B. Dougal; 1850, Ashbel Herron, John Wait; 1851, Henry W. Durand; 1852, Zenas L. Chase; 1853, Chester Barber, Zenas L. Chase; 1854, Harvey H. Howard, Wm. J. Merwin, O. W. Bessey; 1855, Rufus M. Brown; 1856, John Wait; 1857, Archibald W. Bishop, Alexander Miller, Christian Spiecher; 1858, Zenas L. Chase, Shadrach S. Austin; 1859, Rufus M. Brown; 1860, Thomas Hodgson, Henry A. Effner; 1861, Archibald W. Bishop; 1862, Ingraham Eaton; 1863, Rufus M. Brown; 1864, Thomas Hodgson, Casper Dunham; 1865, Archibald W. Bishop; 1866, Egbert Cooley; 1867-72, no record; 1873,

J. G. Lockard, James L. Clement; 1874, Marshall Ferguson, David H. Smith; 1875, Warren Haven, Egbert Cooley, H. H. Howard; 1876, Hiram E. Goble; 1877, Philiman Bush, John N. Herron; 1878, Oscar L. Millsbaugh, Calvin J. Baughman; 1879, Hyman H. Shaw.

The total number of votes polled in 1878 was 384.

In 1879, 345 votes were cast, and the following (present) township officers elected, viz.: James M. Robertson, Supervisor; William Killefer, Township Clerk; Fitz E. Adams, Treasurer; Horace M. Stout, Township Superintendent of Schools; John M. Baxter, Highway Commissioner; Hyman H. Shaw, Justice of the Peace; Samuel Lane, Lewis W. Vaughn, Benjamin C. Stout, John W. Gilson, Constables.

#### BLOOMINGDALE VILLAGE.

The village of Bloomingdale, situated west of the geographical centre of the township, is a station on the line of the Kalamazoo and South Haven branch of the Michigan Central Railroad.

It was platted by William Killefer and Lucius B. Kendall, May 23, 1870, the original plat embracing portions of sections 16 and 17.

An addition was made by George W. Haven, Sept. 15, 1870.

As a commercial centre it is the most important point between Kalamazoo and South Haven.

It contains three stores of general merchandise, two hardware-stores, one drug- and grocery-store, two church edifices (Baptist and Christian), Masonic and Odd-Fellows' lodges, one hotel, one graded school, two medical offices, several small mechanical shops, and about 300 inhabitants.

The first settler upon its site was Henry Killefer. About 1854, Davis Haven, of Portage Co., Ohio, purchased 160 acres in the vicinity of the present village, and soon after the entire north half of section 17. As an inducement for Mr. Killefer to settle here, he—Mr. Haven—gave him one acre of land, now embraced within the depot grounds. In the fall of 1857, Mr. Killefer came on from Putnam Co., Ohio, and erecting a small building, now a portion of the hotel, established his family in the second story, while he opened a small stock of boots, shoes, and groceries in the first. This was the first house erected on the village-site, although William J. Merwin and Rufus M. Brown were then living on the hill, about eighty rods east of the same.

Shortly after his settlement Mr. Killefer received the appointment of postmaster, and held the office until 1862. J. P. Howard was then appointed, and continued as postmaster to 1866. He was succeeded by William Killefer, who held it two years. In 1868, J. E. Rankin received the appointment, and in 1871 was succeeded by John Killefer, the present incumbent.

After occupying his first building three years, Mr. Killefer erected the building now owned by his son John. Some two or three years later he sold it to Barber & Lane, and built the store which, in December, 1868, with J. P. Howard's store and Barber Brothers' drug-store, was burned. The building now owned by Augustus Haven was erected by Mr. Killefer in 1869.

About 1860, Messrs. Merwin & Brown opened a store near their residence on the hill, previously mentioned.

Prior to 1869, Messrs. Barber & Lane established a mercantile business, which, until the near completion of the railroad, comprised, with those already named, the business men of the village.

The first passenger train on the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad arrived at the village July 4, 1870.

Augustus Haven then owned the one acre first settled upon by Mr. Killefer, having paid therefor \$800. Samuel Lane became owner of the original Killefer building, and removed it to the present hotel site. He built an addition to it, and first opened the present hotel.

A. W. Torrey set up the first steam saw-mill—a portable one—in the fall of 1870. It was removed to Bangor in 1878. Mr. Killefer built the present saw-mill in 1871.

Dr. L. A. Barber was the first physician. He had practiced previously while residing one mile west of the village. Drs. C. W. Morse and H. R. Bulson have also lived and practiced here. The present physicians are Drs. Barber and William B. Anderson.

#### VILLAGE CHURCHES.

*The First Methodist Episcopal Society\** in Bloomingdale was organized in the winter of 1856, by Rev. Mr. Corey, assisted by Rev. H. Caldwell, a junior preacher with him on the circuit, the society being in the Black River charge of the Kalamazoo district, Rev. I. Cogshall, presiding elder. The names of the original members were A. Miller, Class-Leader; W. C. Wait, Steward; F. Miller, J. A. Wait, H. E. Miller, E. Caughey, William J. Merwin, T. Merwin, L. Cook, M. Cook, and M. S. Miller.

They belonged to various charges, and part of the time were in the Niles district. In 1874, when Rev. Mr. Van Fossen was sent to them, they became a separate charge and head of a circuit, and have since built a parsonage valued at \$600.

The following pastors have officiated here since 1856. Their names may not be arranged correctly in the order of their succession, but are nearly so, viz.: Revs. Mr. Penland, T. T. George, W. I. Blowers, J. Hoyt, G. W. Tuthill, C. H. Fisher, J. R. Berry, D. C. Woodard, W. C. Maffatt, G. W. Goslin, J. S. Valentine, A. W. Torrey, — Van Fossen, J. F. Orwick, G. Daniels, A. E. Tanner, F. N. Jaynes, and C. H. Fisher again in 1879.

The society now numbers 75 members. They are in a prosperous condition, and hope in the near future to erect a church edifice.

*The Christian or Disciple Church†* of Bloomingdale was organized April 5, 1858, and held their early meetings in the school-house on section 15.

The 25 original members were Harrison Cooley, Austin Melvin, Frederick Melvin, Eli Bell, Margaret Bell, Russell Loomis, Rebecca Loomis, M. L. Healey, Maria Healey, R. F. Loomis, Mary F. Loomis, W. D. Ensminger, Polly Ensminger, George Pierce, Henrietta Pierce, Augustus Haven, William Armstrong, Abby Killefer, Azubah Cooley, Corintha Strong, Lueretia Brown, Julia M. Paxton, Marinda Loomis, Louisa Loomis, and Margaret Corning.

For some seven years they were without the services of

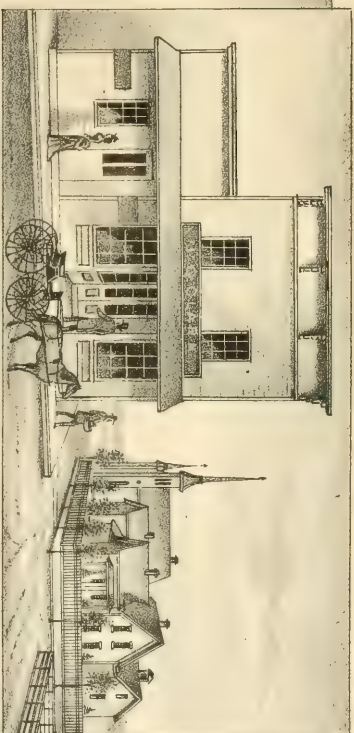
\* From information kindly furnished by the pastor.

† Information furnished by George W. Haven, Esq., church clerk.





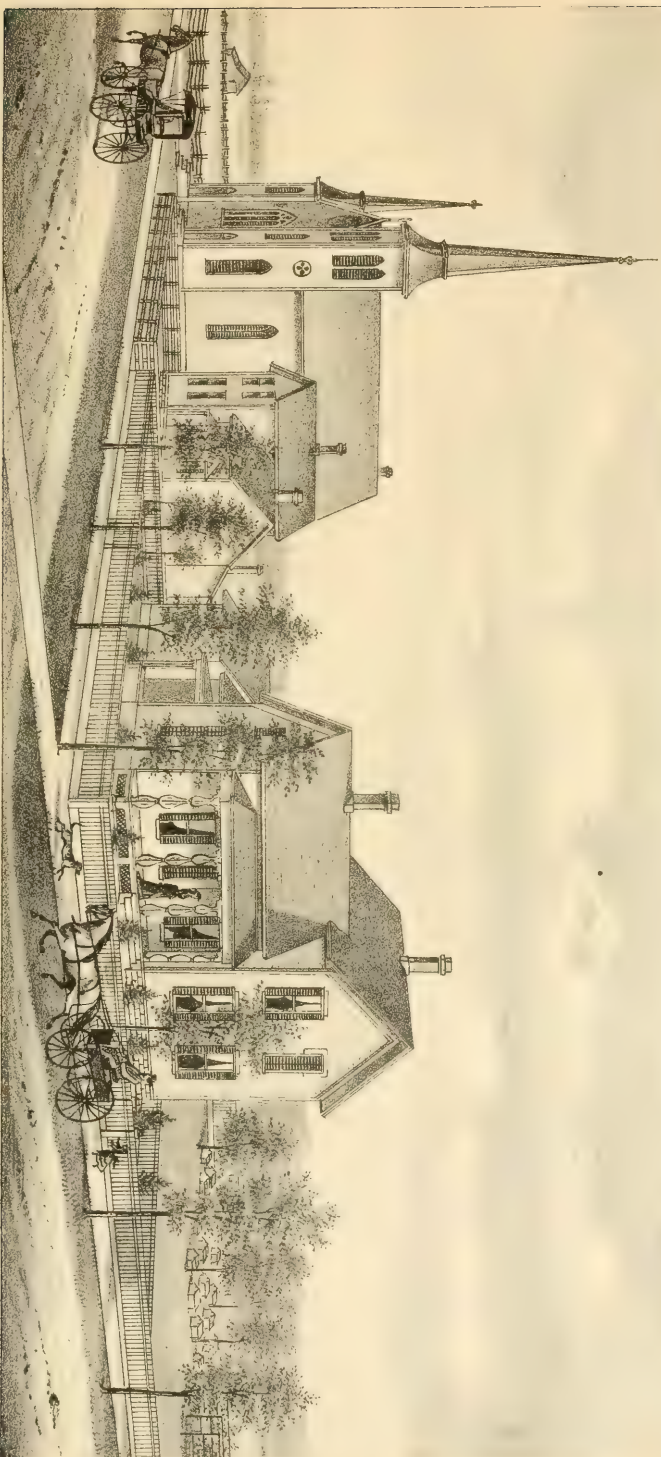
J. G. CLARK.



VIEW OF STORE.



MRS. J. G. CLARK.



"CHURCH AND PARSONAGE"

RESIDENCE OF J. G. CLARK, GOBLEVILLE, VAN BUREN CO., MICHIGAN.



a resident pastor. Since then they have had here with them Revs. Edwin Barnum, J. W. James, Elias Sias, and E. C. Faunce.

A house of worship was erected in the village of Bloomingdale in 1871, at a cost of \$3500, and has a seating capacity for 300 persons.

*The Baptist Church of Bloomingdale.*—The Baptist Church of Allegan, on the 8th day of July, 1853, granted to A. B. Eaton, Maria Eaton, Ann E. Palmer, M. E. Eaton, and L. J. Kannon, members of its body, the privilege of associating together as a branch church. This privilege they exercised as best they could in their scattered condition. They met in their log dwellings for prayer and the study of God's word, and were occasionally favored with the privilege of hearing from ministers who might happen among them. Elder H. Munger had purchased a farm on Eagle Lake, and was laboring to make it a home. Being in their midst, he held his membership with them, and his name frequently appears upon the record in connection with their meetings. Elder Case's name also appears on the record. The first baptism was administered by Elder Munger. Orrit Lane and Harvey Munger, son of Elder Munger, were by him baptized in Eagle Lake, April 9, 1854. From this small beginning the work went on, additions being made by letter, experience, and baptism, until March 2, 1859, when 32 had been added to the original number, 16 by baptism.

In the winter of 1858-59, Elder Burk, of the Protestant Methodist persuasion, held meetings at the Base Line school-house, which resulted in the conversion of a large number, among them many prominent heads of families. Finally, believing that there was an inconsistency between Elder Burk's teachings and church associations, they were baptized into the fellowship of the branch church.

On the 1st of March, 1859, two only of the original five were members of the branch. Two had been dismissed by letter and one had died, but with the additions that had been made to them they felt that the time had come when they should receive an independent organization, and take their place in the family of churches in defense of the truth.

Accordingly, on the 6th of March, 1859, a council convened at the call of the branch, composed of delegates from the churches in Paw Paw, Keeler, Hartford, Watervliet, and Allegan. After hearing the Declaration of Faith presented by the brethren, it was unanimously resolved to admit them into the denominational family, to be known as the "Base Line Church." Rev. A. J. Bingham, of Allegan, preached; Rev. H. Munger, then pastor at Keeler, gave the hand of fellowship; and Rev. Daniel Platt, of Allegan, gave the charge to the church.

March 12th the church met for the first time, as an independent organization; at which time they elected M. Lane and Egbert Cooley deacons, and S. Strong church clerk. Two were received at this meeting, one by experience, one by letter; and on the following day five were baptized by Elder Munger and the Lord's Supper was administered, this being the first mention of its celebration.

On the 3d of March, 1860, the church voted to extend a call to Elder Munger to continue his labors another year,

one-half the time for which they voted to raise \$150 by subscription. They also voted to ask the State Convention for aid, but no mention is made of their receiving any.

March 2, 1861, Elder Munger tendered his resignation, which was accepted by the church, on the ground that they were not able to pay him as much as he could get in other places.

It seems from these records that Elder Munger served the church from its organization up to this time, and meetings were held in the Base Line school-house.

In November, 1861, Rev. W. H. Prentiss became pastor, and continued until January, 1863. There appears on the record during this period some evidence of church trouble and several exclusions.

April 1, 1864, the church voted to hire Elder O. C. Dickinson for one year, one sermon each Sunday. It appears from the mention previously made that Elder Dickinson had been laboring with the church two months prior to this vote. Elder Dickinson tendered his resignation, Oct. 1, 1864, which was accepted. During his term of service the first record of any talk about securing a parsonage is recorded.

On the 1st of April, 1866, Elder J. H. Rasco became pastor of the church, and continued as such till September, 1868. On the 2d of January, 1869, the church elected I. E. Eaton clerk, S. Strong having resigned, and who died in November following. During the administration of Elder Rasco, Deacon Cooley resigned, and Timothy Church was elected deacon. There was also a committee appointed to select a site for a meeting-house, but it does not appear that they ever made a report. At that time there was a disagreement in regard to locations, which defeated all action.

In January, 1869, the church voted to request Elder Pierce to preach for them, and in March following, Elder McCarthy was mentioned as leading a covenant meeting, and subsequently referred to as pastor. April 10, 1869, the following resolution was adopted: "That Elder Rasco and Elder McCarthy be dropped, and no more considered as candidates for pastor of this church." This was to compromise differences of opinion in regard to pastor. In May following Elder Webb was hired to serve the church for one year. William Munger was invited, September 12, 1870, to preach for them as long as it should be thought best.

On the 5th of November Elder Pierce conducted meetings, and on the 13th, same month, the church voted to make an effort to secure his services.

A meeting was called March 4, 1871, to take into consideration the hiring of a pastor and building of a meeting-house and parsonage, but nothing came of it. Elder O. C. Dickinson was recalled to the pastorate of the church, commencing in June or July, 1871, and closing in February, 1873.

By this time the village of Bloomingdale, having become a railroad town, began to assume importance, and suggest to some that it was the proper place for the church to locate her buildings and centralize her labors.

During a portion of Elder Dickinson's time he preached every other Sunday morning in the Disciples' House in Bloomingdale, and the alternate Sunday morning at Base



Line. The church had already bought a house and lot in Bloomingdale for a parsonage. This had the effect to intensify preferences, and to render the canvass sharp for the ascendancy in locality of buildings and the place of meetings. The brethren finally compromised the matter of where the meetings should be held by agreeing to be united in the decision of the man who should be employed as minister. Rev. R. S. Dean commenced his labors as pastor in May, 1873, which still continue. For the first sixteen months he held meetings at the Base Line every Sunday morning. All the covenant meetings and the Sunday-school were held there. He established an evening appointment in Bloomingdale, and a Union Sunday-school was organized, in which the Methodist class were participants, they, at the time, holding meetings in the school-house every other Sunday morning. During this time the interest in the preaching and Sunday-school on the Base Line decreased, and that in Bloomingdale increased.

This had the effect to prepare the way for a change in the place of holding meetings, and in August, 1875, the church voted to abandon Base Line and make their headquarters in Bloomingdale. Notwithstanding Providence seemed to point so clearly to the wisdom of making the change, quite a number demurred, and some felt that it would result in loss to the church and the cause. In March following the Lord opened the windows of heaven and showered a gracious blessing upon the community, especially upon the Sunday-school, through the prayers of the faithful few who had asked in faith. This had its effect in uniting the church as to the wisdom of the removal. The still further divine blessing enjoyed through the visit of Elder A. P. Graves took away the last feeling that it was a mistake to transfer their interests to Bloomingdale.

During the year 1873 and the spring of 1874 the parsonage was enlarged and painted, and its surroundings greatly improved. In the spring of 1875 the church bought lots for a meeting-house, for which they paid \$200. Having no legal record in the county of Van Buren, measures were taken to effect the change of the name of the church from Base Line to Bloomingdale, and secure corporate powers and privileges, which were successful, and the title to the property was made to correspond therewith.

On the 23d of August, 1876, the corner-stone for a meeting-house was laid with appropriate services, Dr. Hodge, of Kalamazoo, making the address. The trustees of the church, to whom was committed the whole work of building, both in planning and securing the funds, worked with a will, and in spite of discouragements, which thickened as they advanced, gave a finished structure into the hands of the church, which was dedicated to the service of Almighty God on the 7th day of February, 1878, Dr. Hodge preaching the dedicatory sermon.

Thus the church, after long years of "wilderness life," are settled in the possession of a comfortable parsonage, a very neat and pleasant meeting-house, with good shelter for their faithful beasts, for all of which they have reason to praise their heavenly Father, as they endeavor to do.

Since the commencement of the present pastorate there have been added to the church by letter, 16; by experience, 18; and by baptism, 74. The total additions to the church,

in all ways, commencing with the five, have been 227. The total decrease, in all ways, has been 100, which would give a present membership of 132. This we find by actual count to be six less than the number on the records.

I. E. Eaton was succeeded as clerk by Charles H. Miller, in 1875, and he by E. M. Eaton, in 1877, who now holds that office. George Hopkins was elected deacon in 1877, and J. A. Leavitt in 1879.

During the entire history of the church there has been a good working band heartily engaged in the Sunday-school work. With very little interruption Deacon Lane has been the superintendent, and a large portion of the church take interest in the school. It has been the nursery of the church, very many having been transplanted from it into the more advanced position of burden-bearers in the church.

The above sketch has been compiled from the minutes of a meeting of the Kalamazoo River Baptist Association, held in Bloomingdale, Mich., Aug. 13 and 14, 1879.

#### VILLAGE SECRET ASSOCIATIONS.

*Bloomingdale Lodge, No. 221, F. and A. M.*—The first meeting of this lodge was held May 5, 1866, and they began work under dispensation. The following were the first board of officers: Samuel Holmes, W. M.; A. D. Munger, S. W.; H. H. Shaw, J. W.; Henry Killefer, Treas.; S. L. Barber, Sec.; L. K. Holmes, S. D.; E. A. Colwell, J. D.; Homer Shepard, Tiler.

A charter was granted Jan. 12, 1867, and the first officers elected thereafter were Samuel Holmes, W. M.; E. A. Colwell, S. W.; H. H. Shaw, J. W.; Henry Killefer, Treas.; M. A. Barber, Sec.; J. E. Rankin, S. D.; L. K. Holmes, J. D.; C. N. Remington, Tiler.

Samuel Holmes was re-elected Worshipful Master each successive year until January, 1873; then H. H. Shaw from 1873 to 1876, inclusive; Warren Haven served during the year 1877, and William Killefer in 1878 and 1879.

Other officers of the present year are H. H. Shaw, S. W.; Warren Haven, J. W.; J. E. Rankin, Sec.; H. H. Howard, Treas.; C. E. McArthur, S. D.; Philemon Bush, J. D.; Albert Taylor, Tiler.

The first meetings were held over Henry Killefer's store. After the store was burned but one meeting was held until Killefer's new store was erected. The lodge-rooms were then continued there till June, 1877, when they removed to their present quarters. For furnishing, fixtures, etc., the lodge has expended about \$500. Present membership, 55.

Regular communications are held Saturday evenings on or before the full moon, in the village of Bloomingdale.

*Bloomingdale Lodge, No. 161, I. O. of O. F.*, was instituted May 16, 1871, by Grand Treasurer A. H. Morrison.

The officers first installed were Stephen Baker, N. G.; Eugene Cooley, V. G.; C. H. Miller, Recording Sec.; J. M. Howard, Treas.; Stark Lampman, Warden; J. P. Howard, Conductor.

The first and all subsequent meetings have been held in Masonic Hall, both lodges renting in conjunction.

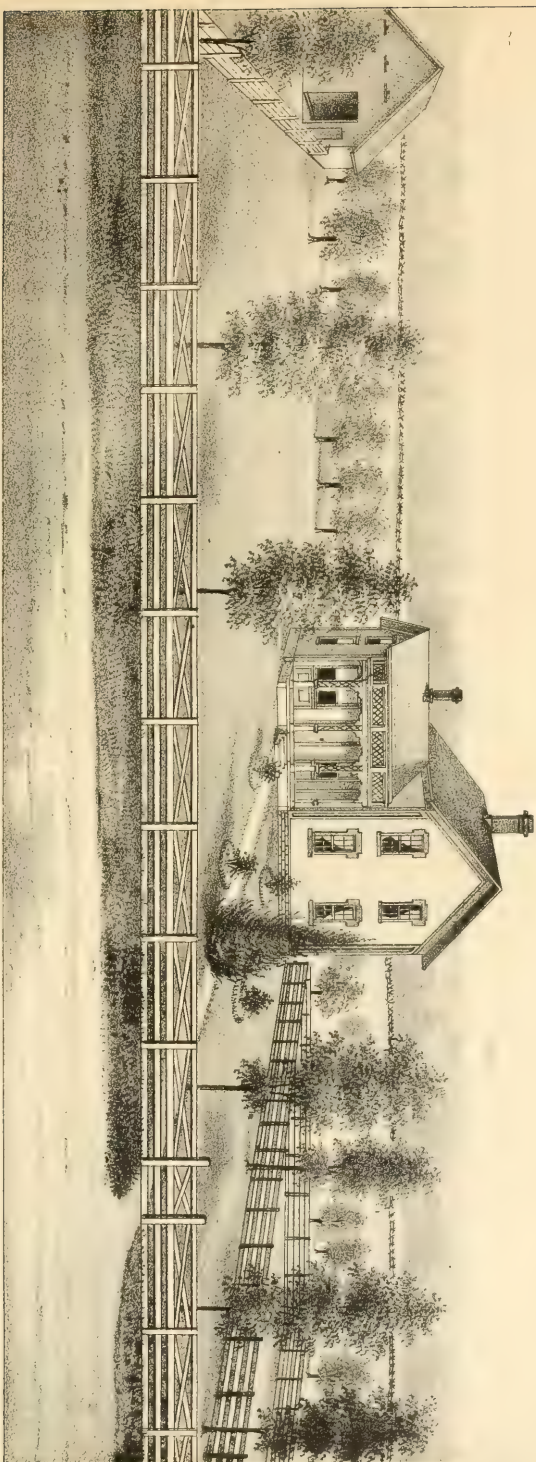
The presiding officers since first installation are named as follows: 1871 (last half), Eugene Cooley; 1872, J. P. Howard, C. H. Miller; 1873, Stephen Baker, L. A. Bar-



AARON K. TEDROW.



CATHARINE TEDROW.



RESIDENCE OF CATHARINE TEDROW, BLOOMINGDALE, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





ber; 1874, H. S. Groves, H. H. Howard; 1875, D. P. Gilbert, H. A. Starkweather; 1876, C. S. Brewster, C. H. Miller; 1877, R. S. Babcock, George Post; 1878, E. M. Eaton, William Killefer; 1879, C. V. Nash, J. M. Howard. Present membership, 45.

Regular meetings are held every Thursday evening.

#### GOBLEVILLE.

The village of Gobleville derives its name from the family named Goble, who were quite early settlers in its vicinity and proprietors of the village plat.

It is a station of some importance on the line of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad, or branch of the Michigan Central Railroad, and includes territory lying in both Bloomingdale and Pine Grove townships. The original plat was made by Hiram E. Goble, April 16, 1870, being part of section 25, township 1 south, of range number 14 west.

Warren Goble's addition was platted March 12, 1872, and included lands situated on section 30, of township number 1 south, of range number 13 west. The village now contains one church edifice (Free-Will Baptist), one hotel, two stores of general merchandise, one drug- and grocery-store, one harness-shop, one shoe-shop, one barber-shop, two blacksmith-shops; one cooper-shop, one meat-market, one grist-mill, one saw-, stave-, and shingle-mill, one cider- and lath-mill, a graded school, and a population of about 250 inhabitants.

The hotel seems to have been the first building erected here. It was built by John Goble, in 1864 or 1865, fronting the highway then known as the Allegan State road. In 1867, Hiram E. Goble built a store near the hotel, and Fessenden & Hayes established their blacksmith-shop. Dr. A. E. Bulson came in 1869, and during the ten years of his residence was very successful both in his practice and pecuniarily.

James G. Clark, from Monroe Co., N. Y., first settled two miles south of the village. After a few years' residence there he removed to Geneva township, in 1868. He came to the new village of Gobleville in 1870, and his recollections of those who had preceded him are already mentioned.

During the same year in which he built his store, John Fessenden erected the building now occupied as a harness-shop, and the railroad was completed to this point, Hiram E. Goble donating the depot grounds.

In 1871 the school-house was built, at a cost of \$2500.

Dr. Bulson's store and J. L. Clement's steam saw-mill were erected in 1873. Mr. Clement afterwards added buildings and machinery for the manufacture of lath, wood-turnings, shingles, and staves. Hiram E. Goble's saw-mill was built in 1874. The following year G. B. Boughton built his drug-store.

In 1877 the church edifice of the Free-Will Baptist Society was completed.

J. L. Clement's mills were burned in April, 1878. During the same fall he rebuilt stave- and shingle-mills. The Post Brothers then built their grist-mill, obtaining power from Clement's engine. The grist-mill is now separate and complete in all its appointments, and the Messrs. Post have since erected a saw-mill.

*Post-Office.*—The post-office was first established at "Lake Mills," Arch. W. Bishop, postmaster. In 1867 the office was removed to the village, Hiram E. Goble becoming postmaster, and the name of the office changed to Gobleville. Mr. Goble was succeeded by G. B. Boughton, who continued until the spring of 1878, when the present incumbent, Edward Keeler, received the appointment.

*The Free-Will Baptist Church of Gobleville\** was organized April 23, 1872, the ministers present being Revs. J. H. Darling and A. H. Whitaker.

Hiram E. Goble, S. A. Goble, A. E. Bulson, S. A. Bulson, James G. Clark, Mary Morris, and Delia Richardson composed the original members.

Their meetings were held in the school-house until 1877, when a house of worship was completed, at a cost of \$3300. It has sittings for 400 persons.

The building committee consisted of Messrs. J. G. Clark, A. E. Bulson, and J. L. Clement. Messrs. Ames, of Bloomingdale, and Roberts, of Kalamazoo, performed the work.

The church was dedicated June 2, 1878. Prof. R. Dunn, of Hillsdale, preached the dedicatory sermon.

In 1877 also a parsonage was erected, and the property of the society is now valued at \$4200.

Rev. J. H. Darling was the first pastor, and began his work in August, 1872.

Rev. J. M. Kaiser was here during the years 1873 and 1874, his successor being the present pastor, Rev. B. L. Prescott, who came in April, 1876.

A Sabbath-school was first organized in the summer of 1871, and has been very successfully continued to the present time.

James G. Clark was superintendent until the spring of 1874. Then Dr. A. E. Bulson held the office until his removal to Wisconsin, in October, 1879. Rev. B. L. Prescott succeeded him. The school numbers 120 pupils.

#### BERLAMONT.

The small village of Berlamont, formerly known as "Bear Lake Mills," is a station on the railroad between Bloomingdale and Grand Junction. The first settlers in its vicinity were William St. Clair, Stephen Baker, Anson Stafford, John Barnard, Russell Johnson, and — Boyer.

It now contains a hotel, store, post-office, the extensive mills of S. B. Anderson, and a population of about 100 inhabitants.

#### ANDERSON'S MILLS.

Dr. H. Anderson, from Genesee Co., N. Y., settled in Breedsville in 1855. Two years later he, together with Amos S. Brown, built a saw-mill at Bear Lake. In 1862 they purchased Heath's grist-mill, situated on the outlet of the same lake. Brown sold out his interests to his partner in 1868. In 1869, Col. David Anderson became a partner. During the year 1871 the Anderson Brothers built the grist-mill in Berlamont and removed the machinery from the old mill to it. The saw-mill and complete sets of wood-working machinery were added in 1874. The mills are now controlled by S. B. Anderson (son of David). His engine is of 100 horse-power, and from 10 to 25 men are employed.

\* From information kindly furnished by James G. Clark, Esq.

Col. David Anderson gained distinction during the war of the Rebellion as lieutenant, captain, major, and colonel of the 19th Michigan Infantry. Dr. H. Anderson has been supervisor, and an otherwise prominent citizen of the township of Columbia.

#### TOWNSHIP PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

During the year 1838 a school-house was built in the Myers settlement, on the extreme southwest corner of section 36. The first school was taught the following winter by William H. H. Myers, and his pupils, seven in number, represented the families of Ashbel Herron, Daniel G. Robinson, Mrs. Myers, and Joseph Brotherton.

Mr. Myers taught this school several terms. Mr. Charles A. Thayer, who, with his father's family, settled in the same neighborhood in the spring of 1840, recalls that he attended school the following winter. Mr. Myers was the teacher, and the pupils were Andrew, Mary, Nancy, Jane, and Harrison Herron, Henry Whelpley, Merlin M. Myers, Elisha, Elizabeth, Jared, and John Brotherton; Joseph Robinson, Levi W., Lucinda, Abigail, Charles A., and Jane Thayer.

An early school-house was erected in "Pecktown," yet not earlier, we believe, than 1844 or 1845. The people in the latter neighborhood were included in fractional district No. 2, which embraced portions of Bloomingdale, Columbia, and Trowbridge townships. (See Columbia township history.)

By the loss of township records we are unable to trace farther, with any degree of correctness, the development of schools and school districts in Bloomingdale.

From an incomplete report of the township board of education for the year ending Sept. 1, 1879, and now on file in the township clerk's office, we take the following statistics:

Number of districts (whole, 7; fractional, 2).....	9
Children of school age residing in the township....	547
Children attending school during the year.....	528
Non-resident children attending schools.....	32
Number of frame school-houses.....	9
Seating capacity of houses.....	795
Total resources during the year for school purposes \$3994.44	

The schools of fractional district No. 5 (village of Gobleville) and District No. 10 (village of Bloomingdale) are graded.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### JOHN SEBRING.

This gentleman was born Aug. 4, 1818. His ancestors emigrated early from Germany, and settled in the State of New Jersey. The tide of emigration which swept westward to Central and Western New York carried them as far as the Holland Purchase, in that State, and they chose a location in the county of Genesee. John Sebring, at the age of sixteen, after the death of his father, began life for himself as a journeyman cooper, and at nineteen was married to Betsey A. West, of Oneida Co., N. Y. In 1853, Mr. Sebring entered the mercantile business at Walworth, Wayne Co., N. Y., continuing until 1857, when he removed to Kalamazoo, Mich., and established a business—locally,

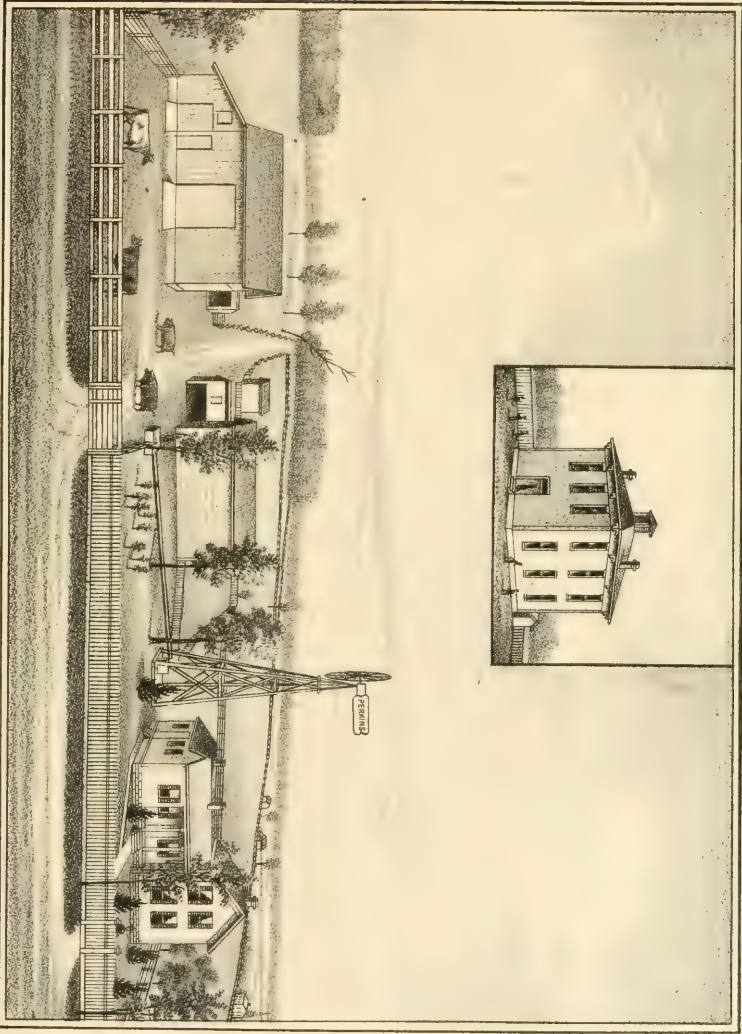
and "on the road"—in company with his son, J. L. Sebring, now a prominent citizen and produce merchant at that place. Mr. Sebring's wife died July 23, 1864, leaving eight children, who are all, except one, now living in Van Buren and Kalamazoo Counties. In 1865, Mr. Sebring was married to Clarissa S. Hall, and in 1866 retired from business and located upon a farm in the township of Porter, Van Buren Co. In the spring of 1867 he removed to Bloomingdale township, in the same county, where he now resides, an engraving of his home appearing in this work.

### AARON K. TEDROW.

This gentleman, who was another of those who stood bravely up to do battle with the wilderness of Bloomingdale, and carve therefrom a home, deserves honorable mention. He was born in Somerset Co., Pa., Dec. 3, 1827, and was the third in a family of seven children. At an early age he was deprived of his mother, and was thrown upon his resources at a time when many, in like circumstances, would have despaired. He learned the trade of a stone-mason, and worked at that and on the farm until he was twenty-seven years of age. In 1855 he married Catharine Koover, also a resident of Somerset Co., Pa., and having accumulated a few hundred dollars, he determined to emigrate, with his wife, to the West, settling finally on an eighty-acre tract which he purchased in Bloomingdale township, Van Buren Co., Mich. A log house was first erected, and the work of clearing and improving was commenced; and life was begun in earnest by this pioneer couple. To his first purchase Mr. Tedrow afterwards added three hundred and sixty acres, and resided upon the farm until his death, which occurred March 12, 1876. Although he held some local offices, he preferred to devote most of his time to his own business. Although he did not live to enjoy fully the results of his labors, he left a competence for his family,—a blessing not always bequeathed by a departing husband and father. To Mr. and Mrs. Tedrow were born the following children, viz.: Amanda, May 10, 1857; Elerann, March 1, 1860; Charles A., Nov. 5, 1862; John F., April 7, 1865; Sarah A., June 28, 1868; Florence, Nov. 5, 1871. All are living at or near home. Mr. Tedrow died comparatively young, but his memory will long be cherished by the relatives and friends who survive him.

### J. G. CLARK.

Mr. Clark was born in the town of Clarkson, Monroe Co., N. Y., in the year 1846, and was the eighth in a family of eleven children. His parents, Benjamin and Elizabeth Clark, came from Lincolnshire, England, in 1830, settling in the town where the son was born, and in which the father died, in 1854. In 1857, Mrs. Clark removed, with her large family of children, to Bloomingdale, Van Buren Co., Mich., where she purchased a small farm. J. G. Clark, who remained at home until he became of age, entered then into the mercantile business at Geneva, in company with his brother. Upon the completion of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railway, he withdrew from



RESIDENCE OF JOHN SEBRING, BLOOMINGDALE TWP, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





the partnership with his brother and opened an establishment at Gobleville. This venture proved a success, and in connection with it, during the past two years (1878-79), he has engaged quite extensively in bee culture. May 8, 1875, he was married to Hattie A. Goble, who has borne him one child, Pearl J. Clark, born July 25, 1876. Mrs. Clark's parents, Warren and C. M. Goble, came from Monroe Co., N. Y., and settled at Gobleville. Mr. and Mrs. Clark are members of the Free-Will Baptist Church at the village, to which they have contributed largely in both time and money, the church and parsonage having been erected mainly through their efforts. This church was organized in 1871, and a view of the church property may be seen in this work, in connection with that of the home of Mr. Clark.

### H. H. HOWARD

was born in Monroe Co., N. Y., on the farm of his parents, B. M. and Nancy (Hinkley) Howard, in the year 1825. The family was in prosperous circumstances. After the days of his infancy had passed Mr. Howard continued upon the farm until 1850, in which year he was married to Sarah, daughter of James B. and Adaline Cooley, also a native of Monroe County. With the characteristic energy of newly-wedded people, they sought for a suitable location in which to build up a home of their own, and turning their faces and footsteps westward, were soon among those who were striving for mastery with the mighty forests which covered the township of Bloomingdale, Van Buren Co., Mich. Each succeeding year witnessed the growth of their "clearing," and new fields of plenty "smiled again," and at present Mr. and Mrs. Howard are the occupants of one of the best-improved farms in the township. Mr. Howard has been chosen to the most responsible positions in the gift of his fellow-townsmen. In 1861, when public interest demanded that the best and most patriotic citizens should be at the helm, he was elected supervisor, and re-elected the following year. From 1872 to 1878 he held the same position, and was only retired later by a change in the ("Greenback") party majority. Without ostentation it may be affirmed that should a similar emergency to that of 1861 arise, Mr. Howard would undoubtedly be found an unswerving supporter of justice and equity and the principles of freedom. Such traits are doubtless owing, in the lives of many individuals, to the influences of home, and this—not taking into consideration his natural character—is the case with Mr. Howard. His estimable wife has been a consistent member of the Regular Baptist Church of Bloomingdale since its organization, and has always exerted what influence she possessed towards the elevation and refinement of her family, and mankind in general. To Mr. and Mrs. Howard have been born two children,—Clara A., Jan. 3, 1859, and Edward M., April 26, 1865. A glance at the accompanying views of the present and former residences of Mr. Howard reminds the observer of Carleton's famous poem, "Out of the Old Home into the New."

## CHAPTER LVI.

### COLUMBIA TOWNSHIP.\*

Location and Description of Township—Early Settlements and Settlers—Civil History—Villages—Breedsville—Columbia—Grand Junction—Secret Associations—Educational.

#### LOCATION AND DESCRIPTION OF TOWNSHIP.

OCCUPYING a central position on the northern border of Van Buren County lies the township of Columbia.

It was formed from South Haven in 1845, and embraces the territory designated in the field-notes of the United States as "township number one south of the base line, of range number fifteen west of the principal meridian."

The general surface is rolling, diversified by irregular ranges of low hills and numerous lakes. Heavy forests of pine, hemlock, oak, beech, and maple covered it originally. Pine and hemlock predominated, however, in the northern part.

The lakes, some 13 in number, cover an expanse of about 1300 acres, Saddle Lake being the largest. Other lakes are known as Mud, Deer, Little Bear, Base Line, Coffee, Dollar, Eleven, Fourteen, North, Monson, Jephtha's, part of Great Bear, and a portion of Scott's.

The outlet of Great Bear Lake, or the south fork of Black River, is the most important water-course, and affords good water-power privileges, which are utilized in the village of Breedsville.

The soil of the township is generally a sandy loam, intermixed here and there with clay. It yields abundantly of wheat, fruit, and all other products common to this portion of Michigan.

For many years lumbering was the principal occupation of the people; but with the disappearance of the monarchs of the forest agriculture is slowly assuming its due importance.

Ample railroad facilities are afforded by the Kalamazoo and South Haven branch of the Michigan Central Railroad and the Chicago and Michigan Lake-Shore Railroad. The former, running in a northwest course, intersects sections 5, 6, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, and 13, its stations being Berlamont, Columbia, Grand Junction, and Brown's. The latter passes from north to south through the western half of the township, intersecting in its course sections 5, 8, 17, 20, 29, 31, and 32, Grand Junction and Breedsville being stations. Both roads were completed in 1870.

Although settlements and their consequent development of the country did not commence in the northern half of the township until about 1868, the State census of 1874 returned a total population of 1736 inhabitants.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS.

In May, 1835, Rev. Jonathan N. Hinckley and Barnard M. Howard, both from Monroe Co., N. Y., visited the region now known as Columbia township, then unorganized territory attached to Cass County, and purchased several tracts of land in the immediate vicinity of the present village of Breedsville.

Upon the south side of the creek, and east of the present

\* By John S. Schenck.

mill-yard, they erected the walls of a log house, and after covering them with a bark roof they returned to their homes in the State of New York.

Early in the fall of the same year a party of about 25 persons, all from Monroe Co., N. Y., started out for the purpose of making a settlement on the new purchase. They journeyed *via* the Erie Canal to Buffalo, thence by Lake Erie to Detroit. In the latter city they bought an ox-team and wagon. Upon their wagon they loaded their household goods and the small children, and then, with the major portion of their number on foot, set out *via* the Territorial road for Paw Paw. It occupied two days to cut out roads and make their way from the last-mentioned settlement to the cabin awaiting them on the banks of the outlet. Here all arrived safely, however, Oct. 1, 1835, and here began the first settlement of any importance in the northern half of Van Buren County.

"This party of emigrants was composed of the following-named persons: Rev. Jonathan N. Hinckley, William N. Taylor, Silas Breed, his wife and children,—Stillman, Phoebe Ann, Hinckley, Joshua,—and an adopted daughter named Sarah Taylor; Samuel Watson, his wife and children,—Leonard, Lyman, Sarah,—and a grandson, whose name is unknown, all from the town of Parma; Jonathan N. Howard and his wife, Elizabeth, from the town of Sweden; Amos S. Brown, his wife, and children,—Elizabeth, Amos S., Jr., Wells G., Minerva, and Jesse R.,—from the town of Ogden.

The unfinished cabin was soon made in a habitable condition. The next house built was for Mr. Brown's family, which was followed soon after by the one erected for Mr. Watson's occupancy. These three houses sheltered the colonists during the first winter. Prior to that time, however, William A. Babbitt joined them. Elder Hinckley returned to New York in January, 1836, and did not again make this locality his residence until several years later.

The first death occurred during the winter of 1835-36, in the person of Sarah Taylor.

During the year 1836, Jonathan N. Howard and others erected houses for themselves, and Silas Breed built his saw-mill, which was then valued at \$700.

The events of the year 1837 were the organization of South Haven township, of which the residents were nearly all members of the Breedsville settlement; the arrival and settlement of Elijah Knowles, William Bridges, and George Cochrane, from Livingston Co., N. Y.; Dr. Hervey Manley, from Ashtabula Co., Ohio; and Myron Hoskins, from Paw Paw. Mr. Hoskins settled in Paw Paw in 1835, and it is believed erected the first framed house in this township.

The first child—Nancy—was born to Jonathan N. Howard and wife in 1837, and during the fall of the same year the second death took place. Samuel Watson, then about sixty years of age, had gone on foot to Paw Paw in quest of medicine for some member of his family. Upon his return he died alone in the woods, where his body was found upon a search being instituted. The parties named in the first marriage contract were George Cochrane and Miss Sarah Watson. By whom they were married, or the precise date of the wedding, is unknown.

In 1838 the first tannery was commenced by Elijah Knowles and John Barrows, the first school-house—in which Lorenzo D. Cate taught the first school—was built, and the settlement was still further increased in numbers by the arrival of Jephtha Waterman, Horace Humphrey, John Barrows, and probably a few others.

For several years the early residents procured their mail-matter at Paw Paw. Upon the establishment of the Breedsville office, Amos S. Brown became the first post-master, and Jesse R. Brown carried the first mail between Breedsville and Paw Paw. The assessment-roll of the townships of South Haven for the year 1839 shows that the resident tax-payers in township No. 1 south, of range No. 15 west, their location of lands, number of acres owned, and value of real and personal estate were as follows:

Silas Breed, section 33, 80 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$1090; saw-mill, \$700.

Elijah Knowles, section 32, 160 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$720.

Hervey Manley, section 29, 240 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$770.

Jonathan N. Howard, sections 19, 28, 240 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$705.

J. M. Babbitt, sections 1, 33, 160 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$515.

Myron Hoskins, sections 26, 32, 33, 880 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$880.

Leonard Watson, section 33, 40 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$140.

Amos S. Brown, section 32, 160 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$765.

Luman Brown, section 32, 80 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$240.

Jephtha Waterman, section 35, 69 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$162.

Horace Humphrey, section 1, 40 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$120.

Joseph Peck,\* section 1, 80 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$240.

D. C. Ackley, section 29, 80 acres; aggregate of real and personal estate, \$240.

Other names added to the rolls in 1840 were those of William A. Babbitt, Henry Babbitt, and Dustin Murch, and the total amount of taxes paid by the residents in that year was \$30.23.

Thomas P. Page settled in the village of Breedsville in 1841. He, with many others, kept an open house for the accommodation of travelers. About 1848, when the stages began running between Paw Paw and South Haven, he opened a regularly licensed hostelry.

Charles W. Luce, a present prominent resident of the township, settled on section 23 the same year.

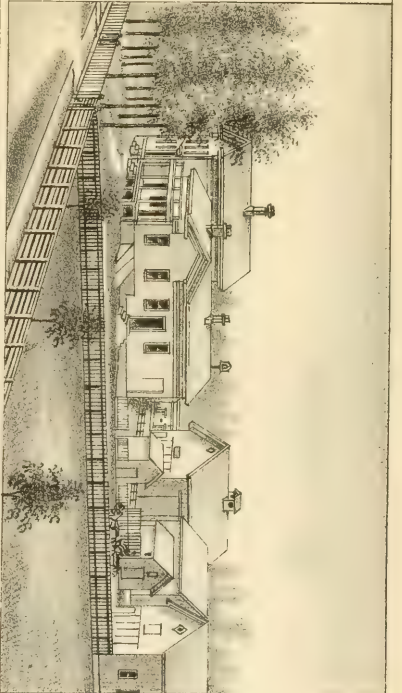
Alexander Lytle, township treasurer for a long period of

\* Joseph Peck, of "Pecktown," was a resident of the present township of Bloomingdale, section 6, but owned land on section 1, in this township. Messrs. Breed, Knowles, Manley, Howard, Babbitt, Watson, and Amos S. Brown were the only ones assessed for personal estate, and, except three, the foregoing twelve men comprised all the resident tax-payers of the then township of South Haven in 1839.





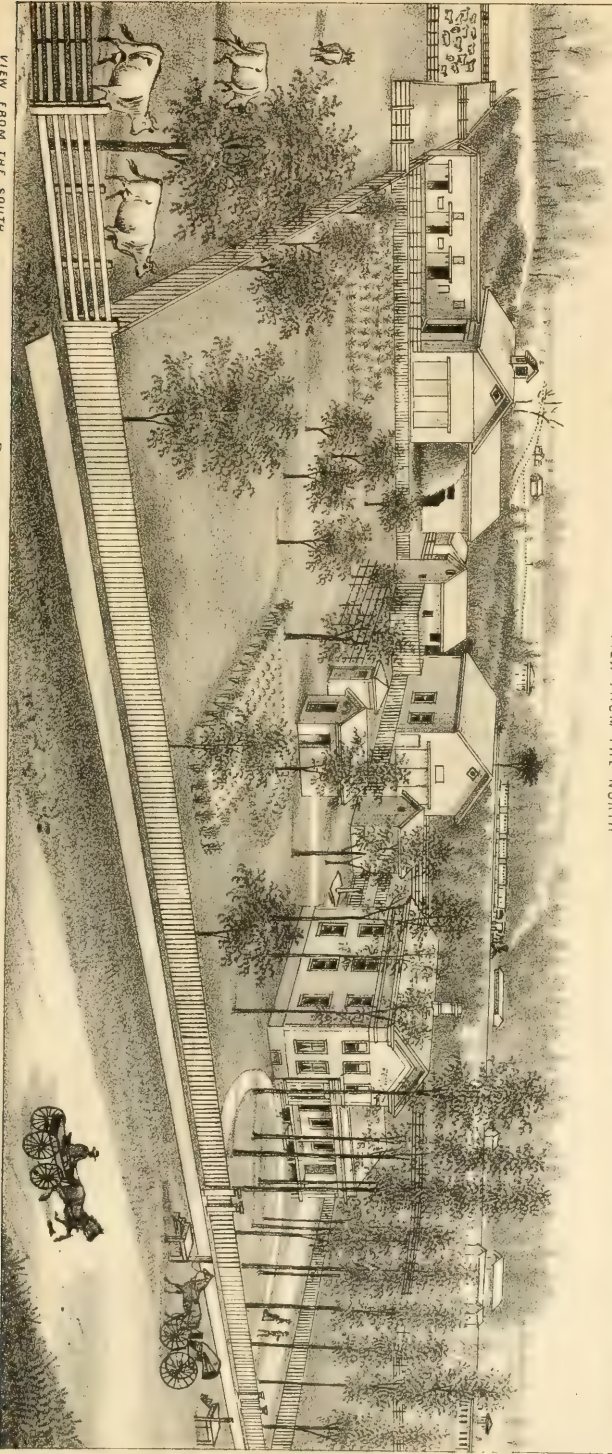
S. D. BROWN.



VIEW FROM THE NORTH



MRS. S. D. BROWN.



VIEW FROM THE SOUTH.

RESIDENCE OF MRS. S. D. BROWN, BREEDSVILLE, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.



years, early purchased lands situated upon sections 28 and 34, and settled here in 1842.

Other early settlers, who were here prior to 1845, were Peter Smith, Lyman Loomis (the first supervisor of Columbia), Jethro Barber (one of the earliest pioneers in the county), Amos E. Barber, Edmond Sawtell, David Barker, Hiram Chappell, James Richards, S. N. Pike, A. Bugsbee, and James Moore.

Jonathan N. Hinckley, a grandson of Elder J. N. Hinckley, came from Barry, Orleans Co., N. Y., in the fall of 1845, and settled where he now resides, having purchased an improvement made by Jephtha Waterman. Mr. Hinckley drove out his team of horses, coming by the route south of the lakes. In the spring of 1846 his family, accompanied by his brother Marenus, joined him here. Henry Mower was his nearest neighbor on the east, and Paw Paw the nearest post-office station.

Among other quite early settlers in this township were E. L. Bushnell, who first came to Van Buren County in 1833; John King and his brother, 1845; Eli Bell, 1849; A. H. L. Teal, 1851; the Lacells, 1852; E. T. Pepper, 1854; Dr. H. Anderson, 1855; R. Jones, 1856; and James Thompson, 1857.

In 1858 the first grist-mill was erected by Heath, on the outlet of Great Bear Lake.

No improvements of any importance, except in the vicinity of "Pecktown," were made in the northern part of the township until 1868 to 1870, when they were hastened by the contemplated building of the railroads.

#### CIVIL HISTORY.

Upon the organization of the county, in 1837, South Haven was one of the seven townships then formed, and the inhabitants of the territory now known as the township of Columbia comprised nearly all the residents of South Haven. This geographical condition of affairs, as regards this township, was continued until 1845, when, by an act of the State Legislature, townships 1 south, of ranges 15 and 16 west, were set off as the township of Columbia. Geneva became a separate organization in 1854.

*Compilations from Township Records.*—It was proposed under this head to give in full the proceedings of the first township elections, other early items of interest, and complete lists of township officers elected annually from 1845 to 1879, inclusive; but, in consequence of the unaccountable disappearance of records to 1858, they can only be given from the last-named year to 1879, inclusive, as follows:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1858-59, Amos S. Brown; 1860, Doctor H. Anderson; 1861, Jonathan N. Howard; 1862-64, Amos S. Brown; 1865, Doctor H. Anderson; 1866-67, William H. Knowles; 1868, V. F. Randall; 1869-70, Norman H. Adams; 1871, Jonathan N. Howard; 1872, William H. Knowles; 1873, Amasa M. Brown; 1874, Duane D. Briggs; 1875-79, Amasa M. Brown.

#### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1858, Enoch White, Jr.; 1859, Thomas P. Page; 1860, Lemuel C. Clow; 1861, James M. Gray; 1862-79, Abner D. Enos.

#### TREASURERS.

1858, Jonathan N. Howard; 1859-64, Alexander Lytle; 1865, Jonathan N. Hinckley; 1866-69, Alexander Lytle; 1870, James M. Gray; 1871, William H. Knowles; 1872-78, Alexander Lytle; 1879, William H. Knowles.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1858, William W. Smith, Richard Bessey; 1859, Doctor H. Anderson, Thomas P. Page, C. La Rue; 1860, Charles B. Hurlbut; 1861, Jonathan N. Howard, Sumner Bisbee; 1862, Charles B. Hurlbut; 1863, C. Lane, Chester C. Leathers; 1864, Chester C. Leathers; 1865, Eleazer C. Vincent; 1866, Charles B. Hurlbut; 1867, Joel C. Sayre, Richard B. Cooper; 1868, Chester C. Leathers, A. G. Eastman, William R. Fox; 1869, Richard B. Cooper; 1870, Augustus D. Munger; 1871, A. G. Eastman; 1872, George M. Osman, D. S. Headley; 1873, Richard B. Cooper, J. D. Seringer, George W. Chrouch; 1874, Stephen Baker, George M. Osman; 1875, A. G. Eastman, H. W. Burkholder, Charles S. Sharon; 1876, Norman H. Adams, A. T. Anderson, James Smith; 1877, C. J. Slafter; 1878, Eri Summay; 1879, Charles B. Hurlbut.

#### HIGHWAY COMMISSIONERS.

1858, Uriah H. Chapman; 1859, Jonathan N. Hinckley; 1860, Obed W. Quint; 1861, A. E. Barber; 1862, O. Hoag, Albert E. Bessey; 1863, Doctor H. Anderson, Jesse R. Brown, Timothy P. Bewley, Hiram B. Hayes; 1864, Richard B. Cooper; 1865, Joseph Bogardus; 1866, Amos E. Barber; 1867, Jonathan N. Hinckley, Jesse R. Brown; 1868, Wells G. Brown; 1869, Amos E. Barber; 1870, Chester C. Leathers; 1871, William Rodenbough; 1872, Edwin T. Pepper; 1873, Amos E. Barber; 1874, William Redding; 1875, Edwin T. Pepper; 1876-77, Wells G. Brown; 1878-79, John A. Wright.

#### DRAIN COMMISSIONERS.

1876, Asahel A. Hough; 1877, Henry Hice; 1878, Benjamin Smith.

#### TOWNSHIP SCHOOL SUPERINTENDENTS.

1875-76, Seneca Anderson; George R. Baker, appointed October, 1876; 1877-79, Levi Ackley.

#### SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1858, Francis M. Jones; 1859, Doctor H. Anderson, Samuel Clow; 1860, Abner D. Enos; 1861, William H. Knowles, Doctor H. Anderson; 1862, Norman H. Adams; 1863, Charles B. Hurlbut; 1864, Valentine Bennett; 1865, William W. Smith; 1866, Robert Baker; 1867, William W. Smith; 1868, Jonathan N. Hinckley; 1869, William H. Knowles; 1870, Wells G. Brown; 1871, N. J. Cranmer; 1872, George W. Chrouch; 1873, Seneca Anderson, Chester C. Leathers; 1874, William H. Knowles; 1875, Seneca Anderson; 1876-77, Charles B. Hurlbut; 1878, N. R. Baldwin; 1879, A. Throop Anderson.

#### CONSTABLES.

1858, Uriah H. Chapman, James M. Moore; 1859, James Gilbert, James Crooker, Amos E. Barber, George M. D. Tucker; 1860, William H. Knowles, O. Gesler, Joseph Allen, Amos E. Barber; 1861, Uriah H. Chapman, Marenus Hinckley, Thomas P. Page, John Barnard; 1862, Amos E. Barber, Truman Fletcher, Augustus D. Munger, Jefferson Ostrander; 1863, John W. Fisk, Amos E. Barber, D. D. Root, Charles Leathers; 1864, Hiram B. Hayes, Amos E. Barber, Uriah H. Chapman, John W. Fisk; 1865, William Lafferty, Uriah H. Chapman, Amos E. Barber, John W. Fisk; 1866, William Lafferty, A. G. Eastman, Charles Leathers, Jerome Rockwell; 1867, William Lafferty, Stephen Baker, Uriah H. Chapman, O. Gesler; 1868, George Rossmann, Thomas P. Page, Dana D. Root, John Starbuck; 1869, Millard J. Smith, Charles Leathers, E. Wood, G. Reynolds; 1870, Benjamin Brown, Millard J. Smith, A. G. Eastman, George W. Cheesebro; 1871, William Rhodes, George W. Cheesebro, J. M. Gray, Benjamin F. Woodruff; 1872, Solomon Cox, William Peck, Arthur W. Barber, Gilbert W. Hudson; 1873, William Curtis, Willard J. Smith, E. V. Allen, H. P. Siboll; 1874, H. P. Siboll, A. Root, Millard J. Smith, George Bidwell; 1875, Amos E. Barber, George S. Bidwell, Henry P. Siboll, Fred. H. Brown; 1876, Amos E. Barber, Edward Fox, William Lafferty, Daniel Ramsay; 1877, Elijah E. Brown, Edward Fox, William Lafferty, Amos E. Barber; 1878, William Lafferty, O. H. Barker, Orlando C. Fox, Stephen Stafford; 1879, William Lafferty, Charles F. Peck, O. J. Barker, L. D. Townsend.

#### RESIDENTS IN 1845.

Tax-paying residents in 1845, and the sections upon which their lands were situated, were as follows:



Sec.		Sec.	
Peter Smith.....	1	Horan Chappell.....	19
Horace Humphrey.....	2	James Richards.....	33
Lyman Loomis.....	1, 33	Elijah Knowles.....	32
Amos S. Brown.....	32	Knowles & Barrows.....	33
Wells G. Brown.....	28	S. N. Pike.....	33
Thomas P. Page.....	33	A. Buzsbee.....	31
Jethro Barber.....	33	Rev. Jonathan N. Hinckley	
Amos E. Barber.....	32	18, 20, 28, 29, 33, 35	
Dustin Murch.....	33	Jephtha Waterman.....	13
Edmond Sawtell.....	32	Charles W. Luce.....	23
Jonathan N. Howard.....	19, 28	Alexander Lytle.....	28, 34
Harvey Manley.....	29	James Moore.....	34
David Barker.....	29		

## VILLAGES.

**Breedsville.**—The village of Breedsville, which enjoys the distinction of being the oldest settlement in the northern part of the county, is situated in the southern part of the township, on the outlet of Great Bear Lake. It is also a station on the line of the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Railroad.

It contains one church edifice (Methodist Episcopal), Masonic, Knights of Pythias, and Odd-Fellow's lodges, one commodious hotel, three stores of general merchandise, one grist-mill, one saw-mill, one extensive tannery, several small mechanical shops, and about 350 inhabitants.

The original owners of its site were Barnard M. Howard, Miss Laura White, Amos S. Brown, Sr., Rev. Jonathan N. Hinckley, and Samuel Watson. Although quite regularly laid out, no survey and plat has ever been placed on record.

Thomas P. Page kept the first tavern, and Lorenzo Painter, Wadson & Co. opened the first store. Previous to their establishment of a store here they had brought in goods and exchanged with the early settlers for shingles, produce, etc. The grist-mill was built by Wells G. Brown in 1873.

**Columbia.**—A village-site of this name was platted by Marvin Hannahs, William F. Dickinson, and Samuel Rogers, Feb. 20, 1871. It is merely a station on the line of the Kalamazoo and South Haven branch of the Michigan Central Railroad.

**Grand Junction.**—This village, as its name implies, is situated at the junction of the two railroads which intersect the township. It was platted by Samuel Rogers, Marvin Hannahs, Conrad Crouse, and George W. Chrouch, Dec. 8, 1871. It contains three stores of general merchandise, two hotels, one restaurant, blacksmith-, wagon-, and shoe-shops, and about 200 inhabitants.

Settlements were first made here in the fall of 1869 by David Young, a native of England. Mr. Young emigrated to America in 1848. In 1855 he settled in the township of Geneva, which was then a comparatively wild region. His nearest neighbor, Jesse Lane, was three miles distant, and many Indians frequented the vicinity.

In 1869 he purchased six lots in the prospective village of Grand Junction, and during the fall of the same year became its first settler. The two railroads were then in process of construction, and his nearest neighbors were in Breedsville. Soon afterwards he began the erection of the building known when completed as "Young's Hotel," and opened the same in 1871.

The next settler was a colored man named Hungerford, who kept boarders.

Conrad Crouse, a German, and one of the village proprietors, sold the first goods, about 1874, in the building now occupied by himself and others as a dwelling.

Merchandising has since been carried on here by John Collins, Harvey Munger, Henry P. S. Voll, William H. Knowles, and others.

John Collins was the first postmaster. The office has since been held by Harvey Munger and W. A. Teazell, the present incumbent.

Patrick Mead opened the first smithy in 1872, and during the same year the first physician, Dr. Delaplaine, located. He has been succeeded by Drs. Webster, Andrews, and Cornell.

The school-house was built in 1871. John A. Wright built his saw-mill in 1874.

George W. Chrouch, another of the village proprietors, was the first station-agent and an energetic citizen.

The country immediately surrounding the village was originally heavily timbered with pine and hemlock. During the burning of Chicago, forest fires, wide-spread and very destructive to life and property, raged with great violence in many portions of the Western States. Such an one swept around and over the little hamlet of Grand Junction. After destroying thousands of acres of valuable timber, the fiery element spent its force in Allegan and Ottawa Counties, yet not before the village of Holland was laid in ashes. Here the depot and every other building was destroyed, except Young's Hotel and a portion of the Temperance House.

The small village of Berlamont, lying partly in the township of Bloomingdale, and the site of Anderson's extensive mills, is mentioned more particularly in the history of the latter township.

## SECRET ASSOCIATIONS.

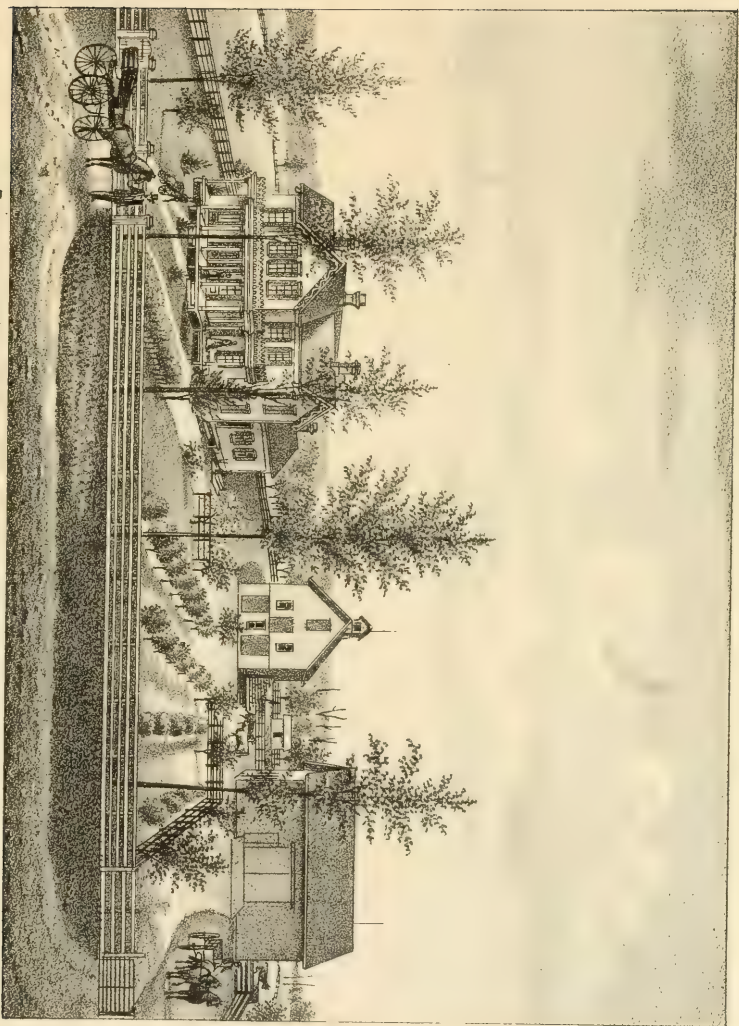
**Headley Lodge, No. 163, I. O. O. F.**, was instituted, under a dispensation, May 31, 1871, the first members being A. G. Eastman, Abner D. Enos, Chester C. Leathers, H. C. Kelley, Samuel Hoppin, and T. P. Bewley. They met in Masonic Hall. The first board of officers installed were A. G. Eastman, N. G.; Chester C. Leathers, V. G.; Abner D. Enos, Sec.; T. P. Bewley, Treas. A charter was granted Jan. 18, 1872. The Noble Grands during succeeding terms to present are shown as follows: 1872, Chester C. Leathers, Abner D. Enos; 1873, C. Herold, A. G. Eastman; 1874, John Swan, Henry Hice; 1875, Chester C. Leathers, S. Snell; 1876, O. Hoag, A. E. Barber; 1877, L. D. Townsend, S. Snell; 1878, H. J. Scrimger, George R. Heath; 1879, Abner D. Enos, S. Snell.

The present officers (January, 1880) are L. D. Townsend, N. G.; George Rossman, V. G.; George R. Heathe, Sec.; Abner D. Enos, Permanent Sec.; James M. Gray, Treas. Regular meetings are held Saturday evenings of each week, in their lodge-rooms opposite Snell's hotel.

**Bailey Lodge, No. 287, F. and A. M.**, was chartered Jan. 13, 1871. The first officers were Duane D. Briggs, W. M.; P. C. Hathaway, S. W.; and P. A. Dulerrow, J. W.

**Damascus Lodge, No. 6, K. of P.**, was chartered March 21, 1873.

These lodges all have their lodge-rooms in the village of Breedsville. Further data concerning the Masonic and



RESIDENCE OF W. J. DENNIS, COLUMBIA TWP., VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





Pythian lodges, and also of the Methodist Episcopal Church, were earnestly solicited, and promised by official members, but we failed to obtain the desired information.

#### EDUCATIONAL.

As previously mentioned, the first school-house was built in the Breedsville settlement in 1838, and Lorenzo D. Cate taught the first school.

From the township records we learn that School District No. 1, comprising sections 19, 20, 21, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, and 33, was formed Jan. 31, 1845. Fractional District No. 2, including sections 1 and 12 in this township, and portions of Trowbridge and Bloomingdale, was organized Dec. 26, 1845, by Jonathan N. Howard, Hervey Manley, Daniel Foster, Sidney Smith, William H. H. Myers, and Henry T. Houghton, school inspectors of said townships. This meeting was held at the house of Horace Humphrey.

Lewis Van Vliet was granted a certificate to teach the school in District No. 1, Nov. 29, 1845, and one year later, Dec. 16, 1846, John Roby was licensed to teach the same school.

The sum of \$7.36 was received from the county treasurer in July, 1847, which was apportioned to District No. 1, it having 23 children of school age. Also during the same year Miss Adelia Sexton received a teacher's certificate.

The teachers licensed in 1848 were Miss Minerva Brown, Miss Mary R. Platt, Miss L. L. Gray, and Joel Camp.

The apportionment of school moneys received in March, 1848, was as follows: total received, \$42; paid to District No. 1, having 25 scholars, \$42. In July of the same year \$19 was received. The apportionment gave to District No. 1, \$14.41; to Fractional District No. 2, \$4.59.

Miss Harriet Brown received a certificate in 1849, and the following was the July apportionment same year: District No. 1, 25 scholars, \$8.25; Fractional District No. 2, 22 scholars, \$7.21. Other early teachers, from 1850 to 1853, were Miss Sarah A. Peacock, Miss H. D. Peacock, William B. Hathaway, Miss Minerva Brown, and Miss Harriet N. Ladd.

#### SCHOOL STATISTICS OF 1879.

Number of districts (whole, 7; fractional, 2).....	9
Children of school age residing in the township....	432
" attending school during the year.....	354
Frame school houses.....	9
Seating capacity.....	528
Value of school property.....	\$5360
Number of teachers employed (male, 3; female, 11) ..	14
Paid male teachers.....	\$601.00
" female.....	\$979.25
Total expenditures during the year.....	\$2172.90
Cash on hand, Sept. 1, 1879.....	\$679.86

### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

#### A. S. BROWN.

One of the first four families that located in the township of Columbia was that of A. S. Brown, Sr.; this occurred in the fall of 1835. Mr. Brown came from the town of Essex, Chittenden Co., Vt., where the subject of our sketch, A. S. Brown, was born in the year 1819. The members of Mr. Brown, Sr.'s family who came to Van

Buren County with him, besides A. S. Brown, Jr., were his wife, Mrs. Eliza (Bullock) Brown, Welles G., Jesse R., Minerva, and Sarah,—the latter remaining in Paw Paw, where she still resides. Besides these who came with him, there were Amasa M. and Luman (who remained in Vermont). Amasa is a practicing physician there. Luman, at a later period, followed the family to Michigan, entered the army, was wounded at the battle of Pittsburg Landing, and died from its effects. Sarah, Minerva, and Amasa M. are the only surviving children.

A. S. Brown, Sr., purchased upon his arrival a farm of eighty acres, and with the three younger boys, A. S., W. G., and J. R., continued the working of this farm until his death, which occurred in 1842, at which time the boys formed a copartnership, and remained with interests united until the beginning of the Rebellion, when W. G. withdrew. Previous to this, in 1860, A. S. had married Miss Sarah Deming, daughter of Roswell and Mariana U. (Boughton) Deming, who were married in Avon, Livingston Co., N. Y., where Phileas C., Amos, William, Sarah, Almena, Martha, and Catharine were born, the last named dying in infancy. The others are still living, the first four in Michigan, Almena in Livingston Co., N. Y., and Martha in Minnesota. Mrs. Brown's mother had died in Livingston County, March 3, 1841, Mr. Deming removing with two of the children to Arlington, Van Buren Co., where he remained until Sarah's marriage to Mr. Brown, after which he made his home with them. The two brothers finally dissolved partnership, and in the division of property A. S. became owner of the homestead, a view of which appears in this work, and where the four children of Mr. and Mrs. Brown were born, the dates and names as follows: Sarah E., born April 3, 1862; Henry A., born Aug. 8, 1863; Ella C., born April 28, 1865, died July 30, 1867; Amos S., born May 3, 1867, died Aug. 8, 1869.

Mr. Brown, from time to time, added to the original purchase until his farm contained over two hundred acres. His health failing him, he proceeded to Minnesota, hoping the change would be beneficial, but such was not the case, and on the 4th of September, 1872, he died. By his pre-eminent abilities he arose from comparative obscurity, and has bequeathed to his family a handsome fortune. The soundness of his judgment and sterling integrity had secured for him a high place in the estimation of his fellow-citizens, whose voluntary suffrages had for nearly thirty years retained him almost constantly in some official position. During the years 1867-68 he represented his district in the State Legislature on the Republican side with fidelity and ability. Public enterprises and improvements always found in him a liberal and efficient patron. Mrs. Brown resides at the old home, using the means her husband provided for her in the education of their children.

#### J. N. HINCKLEY.

Dexter and Elizabeth (Doty) Hinckley were natives of New York, and were married in Monroe County, where J. N., Levilla, Marenus, Nancy, and Betsey Jane were born. J. N. was born in 1819, received a limited education, and at the early age of fifteen was compelled, of necessity, to

become the support and mainstay of the family. He worked upon the Erie Canal six seasons, and then removed to Columbia township, Van Buren Co., Mich., his mother, Marenus, Levilla, and Jane accompanying him. Nancy had previously married and settled in Columbia, and Mr. Hinckley bought an adjoining farm of forty acres, for

living. Charlotte married B. W. Cornwall, and lives on the home-farm. Flora married R. Holland, and lives in Charlevoix Co., Mich. Ella married Joseph Baxter, and lives in Bloomingdale township. The others are living at home.

Mrs. Hinckley died May 2, 1873; she was a devoted wife, a faithful mother, and loved and respected by all who



J. N. HINCKLEY.



MRS. J. N. HINCKLEY.

Photos. Ly I. L. Northrup, Bangor.

which he paid one hundred dollars. Several years later he bought forty more, and has continued adding to the original forty until now he is the owner of one hundred and eighty acres.

He married Miss Harriet L. Bessey and settled upon the place now occupied by him. Of this union seven children were born, viz., Charlotte A., Flora E., Orrin N., Ella J., May E., Perry N., and Harriet A., all of whom are still

knew her. Mr. Hinckley afterwards married Mrs. Elizabeth Leathers.

When Mr. Hinckley first came to Michigan he had four hundred dollars, and by good management, economy, and industry has secured a competency, and now, in the afternoon of life, takes the world easy. He is a Republican in politics, and much interested in the grange, of which he is a member.

## CHAPTER LVII.

### COVERT TOWNSHIP.

Deerfield changed to Covert—Description of the Township—Pioneer Settlers in Deerfield—The Village of Covert—Resident Tax-payers in 1856—Civil History—The Congregational Church.

#### DEERFIELD CHANGED TO COVERT—DESCRIPTION OF THE TOWNSHIP.

THE township of Covert was for many years after its organization known as the township of Deerfield. This name proving inconvenient, from the fact that there were other towns and villages of the same name in the State, a bill was introduced into the Legislature in 1876, by W. O. Packard, Esq., praying that it be changed to Covert, which was accordingly done. It is designated as township 2 south, range 17 west, and is located on the western side of Van Buren County, its western border being washed by the waters of Lake Michigan. On its northern side lies South Haven, on the east Bangor, while Berrien County joins it on the south.

By Edgar O. Wagner.

Its name was suggestive of the early pioneer days, when the deer roamed unharmed through its forests; and when circumstances rendered a change in its cognomen necessary these reminiscences were not ignored in its subsequent christening. The soil of Covert presents a very attractive field of labor to the agriculturist, and is especially well adapted to the growth of fruit. It is a mixture of sand and clay, which is very productive, and yields abundant crops of corn and wheat. Notwithstanding this fact settlers were tardy in availing themselves of its advantages, and it was not until 1844 that the first settler broke the soil and began clearing the forests. The surface is gently undulating until the lake-shore is approached, when it becomes broken and uneven, abrupt and often picturesque hills adorning the landscape. One or two of these have from their height and striking appearance something of the dignity of mountains, and are objects of some interest to the traveler. From their summits is afforded a view of the lake, which is at once commanding and expansive. Covert is well watered by numerous streams which meander through its limits, principal among which is Brandywine Creek, a considerable stream, which flows west of the centre of the town-



WM. PACKARD.



W. O. PACKARD.

### WILLIAM PACKARD.

The grandfather of this gentleman was born in Bridgewater, Mass., and at the age of fourteen years entered the Revolutionary army. At twenty-four he was married to Miss Edson, and by her became the father of eight children,—five sons and three daughters. His occupation was that of a farmer. Among his children was Amasa Packard (father of William), who, at the age of eighteen years, married Lucinda, daughter of John Ford, her parents being also natives of Bridgewater,—where Amasa Packard was born, Jan. 6, 1788. After their marriage Mr. and Mrs. Packard occupied a tract of wild land, which they improved and resided upon until 1832, when they removed to Ohio.

William, son of Amasa and Lucinda Packard, was born in Plainfield, Mass., July 23, 1808, and was the first in a family of eight children,—five sons and three daughters. Until he had reached his majority he assisted his father on the home farm, and for two years subsequently hired "by the month." May 19, 1831, he married Mary F., daughter of Thaddeus and Mary Rude, a native of Massachusetts. The wedded pair removed to Rensselaer Co., N. Y., and occupied a farm which Mr. Packard had previously purchased. In 1836 they changed their residence to Chatham township, Medina Co., Ohio, where Mr. Packard bought and cleared a farm, and remained upon it until 1859. In the latter year he removed to Allegan Co., Mich., and in 1870, to the place he now occupies in Covert township, Van Buren Co.

Mr. and Mrs. Packard are the parents of the following children: William O., born Sept. 14, 1832; Alfred S., born Sept. 22, 1834; Mary P., born August 18, 1836; Helen

Celestia, born Oct. 28, 1842, died at the age of six months. July 14, 1863, Mr. Packard was called upon to mourn the loss of his wife, who died and was buried in Allegan Co. Sept. 5, 1864, Mr. Packard was married to Mrs. Mary F. Rood, widow of Marshall Rood. Her death occurred in Covert township August 25, 1875; and on the 19th of September, 1876, Mr. Packard was married to Josephine L. Seymour, daughter of William H. and Ruth Seymour. This union has been blessed with one child,—Ruth Celestia, born Oct. 5, 1879. Mr. Packard united with the Congregational Church in 1844. He is a staunch Republican in politics, and has been the recipient of numerous favors from his fellow-citizens, in the shape of offices of greater or less importance. While a resident of Ohio he occupied all the official positions in his township, and was twice chosen to the Legislature from Allegan Co., Mich. Since he settled in Michigan, Mr. Packard has, in company with his sons, been extensively engaged in the lumber business, their possessions at one time including upwards of four thousand five hundred acres of timber, with four saw-mills in full operation. In 1877, Alfred S. Packard withdrew from the firm, and is now individually engaged in business. William Packard and his son, William O. Packard, are yet associated, and own and operate the saw-mills at Covert, one saw- and planing-mill having a run of stone attached for the purpose of grinding feed. Mr. Packard's brother, Josiah Packard, with his son-in-law, belonged to the firm of Packard, Sons & Co. for eight years. William O. Packard was elected to the State Senate in 1876, from Van Buren County, serving one term.





ship, and finds an outlet in Lake Michigan at the northwest corner of section 8.

On section 30 is Mud Lake, which, though not of large size, is the only lake of consequence, and affords attractions to the lover of piscatorial sports. Covert, however, derives its importance from the fact that it lies adjacent to Lake Michigan, and is thus afforded commercial facilities which are denied its inland neighbors. The last census, 1874, does not indicate a flattering yield of grain, but since that time much additional land has been cultivated and its productiveness greatly increased.

#### PIONEER SETTLERS IN DEERFIELD.

The township is a comparatively new one, and very little progress was made in its development until after 1860. Its timbered lands, until the enterprise of later residents made them the chief sources of its revenue, offered many obstacles to the pioneer, and retarded rather than promoted its advancement. It contained no rich prairie land, and every acre of tillable soil was obtained at a cost of much labor in clearing. The coming of the earliest settler occurred in 1845. In that year Benoni Young migrated from the distant State of Maine and located upon section 13, where he entered 160 acres. Here, with his family, in the midst of the forest, he lived for seven years an isolated life, with no other settler in the township, and for a long period no indication of an increase in its population. His nearest neighbor, Mason Wood, resided in the township of Bangor, and became a resident after Mr. Young's arrival. Isaac Swain, another neighbor, lived in the township of Watervliet. Mr. Young was obliged to depend chiefly upon his own exertions for the improvement of his farm, and realizing this fact, he began with a will the preliminary work of chopping and erecting the necessary buildings for the comfort of his family. By industry he soon rendered a portion of this land productive, and proved the fine quality of the soil in the abundant crops which he produced. Mr. Young, however, seems not to have been strongly attached to the scene of his early pioneer experiences, for in 1861 he made the township of Hartford his home, and still resides there. In his family occurred the earliest birth in Covert, that of his daughter, Marietta Young. His home was the scene during the year 1859 of a very merry gathering, which celebrated the earliest marriage in the township, that of Miss Jane Young, his daughter, to Mr. Allen Fish. They still reside in Covert.

The next settler was John Peters, who purchased a farm and located upon section 32, the land having been previously owned by one Ingraham. He did not, however, remain long to improve his purchase, but removed to Berrien County. He afterwards entered the United States army and died in the service.

Matthias Farnum's settlement soon followed that of Mr. Peters. He chose section 7 as a location, and built upon it a saw-mill, the first in the township, in which for a period of years much of the lumber was sawed which was used in the construction of the frame houses and barns of the township. Mr. Farnum later removed to Benton Harbor, where he now resides.

On the site of this early mill was built in 1857 a saw-

mill, which formed the nucleus of an extensive enterprise under the direction of a settler named Paul. The scheme of this ambitious company seemed to have been one of no small magnitude, contemplating the running of 60 saws which were to be propelled by steam furnished by three huge boilers. The settlement was christened Paulville, and boarding-houses were erected for the numerous choppers. The enterprise, however, proved a failure, and the decline of the little village of Paulville on the shore of Lake Michigan was scarcely less rapid than its mushroom growth. No vestige of its former importance remains, and other mills have performed the labor that was intended by its projectors to have been accomplished by this.

Canada sent a pioneer to the township in the person of James Dobbyn, who arrived in 1854 and entered 280 acres on section 32. John Peters and family extended to the Canadian settlers a cordial welcome, and offered them such shelter and hospitality as was possible in their limited quarters. This was gladly accepted during the interval of six weeks in which Mr. Dobbyn was engaged in constructing a cabin for his household, and sixteen souls at this time composed the family circle.

Mr. Dobbyn at once began the work of clearing and improving his land, and with the aid of the axe and the fire about five acres were soon cleared. During this period he suffered much from illness, which seriously impeded his progress, but a sufficient tract had been improved to render the family a modest subsistence. Arriving without a team their early labors were made the more arduous, and indeed this fact was the more apparent in their progress towards their new home, when all the household goods they possessed were borne upon their backs. Very great aid was afforded Mr. Dobbyn in his early struggles as a pioneer by the abundance of game to be found. Not only did this supply their larder with fresh and dried meats, but much of it was shipped to Chicago, where good prices were realized.

The earliest school-house was built in the neighborhood of Mr. Dobbyn's farm, by the side of the highway, on section 33. The young lady who guided the youthful minds of Covert at this early day was Miss Geraldine Taft, who had just attained the age of fourteen summers, maturity of years not being deemed an essential element in the qualifications of a district school-teacher. The years of her oldest pupil fully equaled her own, while the youngest had seen but four summers.

The pupils at this early school were Josephine Lee, Henry Wygent, Violetta Wygent, John Dobbyn, Jane Dobbyn, Emma Dell, Isabella Dobbyn, William Lee, David Lee, William Wygent, Richard Dobbyn, Lita Fish, Mary Dell, Sarah J. Dobbyn, and Solon Ingraham.

In connection with this it may be stated that the township is now divided into five whole and one fractional districts, the directors of which are William Y. Trafford, Henry Curtis, Franklin Ganson, David Leslie, D. Ballen, and Bryan Everhan.

The number of children receiving instruction is 287, who are taught by 1 male and 9 female teachers, to whom in salaries the sum of \$1366 is paid. The value of school property is \$4375, and the total resources are \$2065.67, of which \$172.12 is derived from the school fund.

John Wygent arrived during the winter of 1854, with his family, and settled upon section 32, in the house vacated by John Peters. He cultivated and improved his land, converting it into a valuable property, but finally was attracted by the flattering prospects held out to the emigrants who were fast populating Nebraska, and became a resident of that Territory. Archibald Wygent arrived soon after, but ultimately made Watervliet his home, where he still resides.

Hiram Fish was another of the New York State pioneers who came in 1854. He selected section 21 as a home, where he became a considerable land-owner, having entered 360 acres. This he began early to improve, his first efforts being devoted to the building of a log house. During the interval he remained at Watervliet. Mr. Fish was among the most active of the early pioneers, and manifested a deep interest in affairs pertaining to the welfare of the township. This, however, did not conflict with the more pressing business of cultivating his farm, to which he devoted himself with an energy which was afterwards amply rewarded. His three sons—Allen, Miram, and Draper—still reside in the township.

Frank Beal entered, in 1855, 80 acres under the graduation act. He found his land entirely uncultivated, and began at once the work of chopping a sufficient space on which to erect a house, meanwhile remaining in Berrien County. His land lay upon sections 34 and 35. With him came William Kelley and W. W. Lampson, who entered 160 acres on section 35. William and J. McConnell took up their abode on section 36, where they still reside.

The settlers were principally occupied at this time in laying out and improving highways. For this service fair wages were paid by the commissioners, which greatly aided them in living, and afforded them means to carry on the work of clearing and improving their lands. Often while engaged in this labor at a remote distance from their home night overtook them, and such shelter as the woods afforded was gladly accepted. With a log for a pillow and a cluster of boughs for a couch, they would enjoy the rest which toil had made sweet, regardless of the howling of the wolves around them. The first highway cut through the forests of the township was probably the one leading to the saw-mill of Matthias Farnum. James Dobbyn and his neighbors also cut an early road in the immediate vicinity of their own homes.

William A. Dell, who enjoyed the distinction of having been chosen as the first supervisor, was a former resident of New York State, from which he emigrated in the summer of 1855 and purchased 80 acres in Covert, on section 29. Mr. Dobbyn's log house afforded him a temporary abode, while the neighbors made a "bee" for the purpose of building a cabin for his family. His experiences were not unlike those of other pioneers, but Covert seems not to have offered permanent attractions, as later years found him a resident of Watervliet, where he died.

The same year came Reuben Lee, who settled upon section 33, where he purchased and improved 60 acres. He seems to have found the township a more congenial abode than his neighbor, Mr. Dell, as he is still a resident upon the farm he purchased.

Ohio sent to Deerfield a pioneer in the person of J. Enlow, who purchased of John House, in 1857, a farm on section 12. This land was entirely uncultivated, and no settlers had located in the immediate vicinity, the nearest neighbors being Mason Wood, in Bangor, and a settler upon section 11. His family were left in Lawrence while he engaged in the construction of a log house, he himself making Bangor his temporary abode during its progress. After the house was completed Mr. Enlow removed his family, and at once found an extended field of labor in the clearing of his land. The southern portion of the township having been earliest settled, the centre and northern sections were at this time almost in their primitive condition. No roads were visible, those originally surveyed having been covered by a heavy growth of brush, which, from want of travel, made them almost impassable. The Indian trail was the highway most used until late emigration made good roads a necessity. Mr. Enlow succeeded in improving this land and developing its resources, and ultimately cleared a fine farm, upon which he now resides.

Dawson Pompey came from Indiana in 1866, and purchased of William Sherburne 160 acres on section 13. This farm had previously been owned by Benoni Young, and was the first land cleared in the township. Mr. Pompey had, therefore, to undergo none of the severe experiences of his pioneer neighbors in its early improvement. He has by his industry added greatly to its productiveness, and is esteemed as one of the most successful farmers in Covert.

The township has in later years had many accessions to the ranks of its agricultural population, but none of them can properly be included among its pioneers.

#### THE VILLAGE OF COVERT.

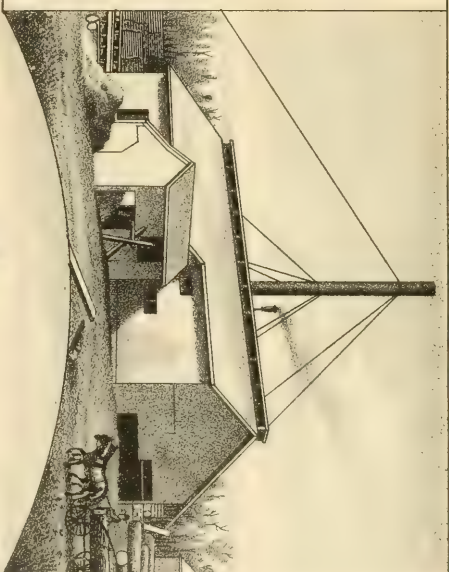
The hamlet of Covert—which by courtesy is termed a village, though not incorporated—is located principally on section 14, though a portion of it crosses the section line and covers a part of section 13. Its growth may be regarded in some respects not only as rapid but remarkable, the year 1866 having witnessed the earliest effort which later resulted in a promising settlement. Messrs. Hawks & Lambert, of Niles, Mich., being attracted by the very luxuriant growth of timber in the township, purchased timberlands in the vicinity, and immediately began the erection of mills, locating them where the grist-mill of Packard & Sons now stands. They carried on a lumbering business for three years, when their interest was purchased by Packard & Co.

To these gentlemen may be ascribed the credit of having promoted the growth of the village, and placed the township on a business equality with the most enterprising townships of the county. Alfred H. Packard, Jr., had previously established himself upon section 2, where he had in 1868 erected saw-mills and made large purchases of land. Messrs. Packard & Co had added much to their timbered lands purchased of Messrs. Hawks & Lambert, and finding the capacity of the mill already built insufficient, erected in 1872 a mill of larger dimensions, which was operated by steam. One of these mills was later devoted to sawing and planing, and a grist-mill was

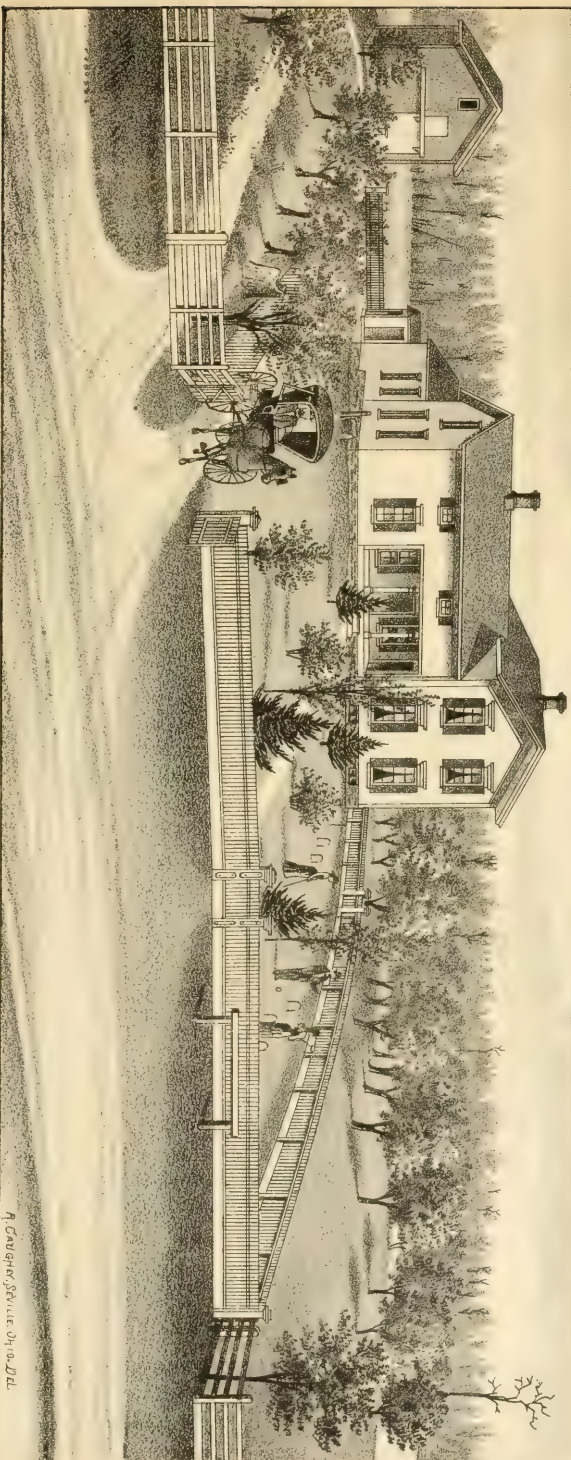




A. S. PACKARD.



MRS. A. S. PACKARD.



RESIDENCE AND SAW MILL OF A. S. PACKARD, COVERT T<sup>R</sup>, VAN BUREN CO., MICHIGAN.

A. Condit, Sculp. Chgo. Ill.



built for the purpose of doing custom work. In this mill corn, and feed of various kinds are ground, but no flour. The saw-mills have a capacity of 4,000,000 feet a year, and the firm also deal largely in bark and wood. They employ in the various departments of labor about 40 men, most of these being engaged in chopping. A horse-railroad has been built from the mills to the lake, which affords them superior advantages of shipping. For this purpose substantial piers have been built on the lake-shore at the terminus of the horse-railroad.

The mills of Alfred H. Packard, Jr., saw nearly 6,000,000 feet of lumber annually. They also have a horse-railroad, which conveys lumber directly to the lake. The market for this lumber is found in Milwaukee, Chicago, Racine, and other lake-ports. The store was formerly connected with the business, but is now owned by Josiah Packard, who removed from Ohio, and was previously a member of the firm of Packard & Co.

There is much business activity manifested in Covert aside from the lumber interest. Josiah Packard conducts a general merchandise store, in which an extended trade is had. E. G. Allen & Co. deal in drugs and medicines, with which they combine groceries, and E. A. Rood is a heavy dealer in hardware. In addition there are two blacksmith-shops, kept by O. B. Shine and Mark Peters; one watch- and clock-shop, kept by J. R. Shine; one livery-stable, owned by S. D. Kenney; one market, kept by G. H. Michaels; one shoe-shop, the proprietor of which is — Colvin; and a master-builder, G. R. Ross, who has shown much skill in the construction of the new church at Covert.

Dr. G. D. Carnes, the only allopathic physician, enjoys an extensive practice.

The public school is under the superintendence of De Forest Ross, with Miss Ellen Shaw as assistant.

#### RESIDENT TAX-PAYERS IN 1856.

The following list embraces the resident tax-payers in Deerfield (now Covert) for the year 1856: Matthias Farnum, Benoni Young, Charles Phillips, Allen Fish, Draper Fish, Miram Fish, John Burnham, Ira H. Derby, William A. Dell, James Dobbyn, John Wygent, A. G. Wygent, Reuben Lee, F. Beal, W. W. Lampson, William Kelley, Nelson Kelley, George Sinkler, J. Packard, R. Parker.

#### CIVIL HISTORY.

This township, originally forming part of the old township of Lafayette, was included within the boundaries of South Haven by an act of the State Legislature erecting the latter township, bearing date March 11, 1837. It continued as South Haven until Oct. 8, 1855, when, by the action of the Board of Supervisors of Van Buren County, surveyed township No. 2 south, of range No. 17 west, was organized as Deerfield. Its name was changed to Covert by the State Legislative body, then in session, March 29, 1877.

*First Township Election.*—Pursuant to the act of organization, the electors assembled at the house of Hiram Fish on the first Monday in April, 1856, and organized by choosing William A. Dell chairman, Miram Fish and John

E. Wygent inspectors of election, A. G. Wygent and Miram Fish clerks. As the final result of this meeting the following-named officers were declared elected, viz.: William A. Dell, Supervisor; Miram Fish, Township Clerk; Draper Fish, Treasurer; Hiram Fish, J. E. Wygent, Franklin Beal, Highway Commissioners; Benoni Young, A. G. Wygent, John A. Hunt, Reuben Lee, Justices of the Peace; A. G. Wygent, William A. Dell, School Inspectors; R. Packer, Allen Fish, A. E. Wygent, George Sinkler, Constables; Hiram Fish, Wallace Lawson, Directors of the Poor.

*Township Civil List.*—The township officers elected at subsequent annual town-meetings (from 1857 to 1879, inclusive) have been as follows:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1857, William A. Dell; 1858–59, Miram Fish; 1860–61, George H. Barker; 1862–63, Miram Fish; 1864–67, George H. Barker; 1868, William F. Trafford; 1869, Miram Fish; 1870–74, George H. Barker; 1875–76, George Grant; 1877–78, O. S. Shaw; 1879, George Grant.

#### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1857, James Dobbyn; 1858, A. Cress; 1859, William A. Dell; 1860, James Dobbyn; 1861, Miram Fish; 1862, R. R. Randall; 1863–64, William A. Dell; 1865, R. R. Randall; 1866, J. S. Packard; 1867, William F. Trafford; 1868, W. M. Simpson; 1869–70, Jeremiah Hartman; 1871–74, J. S. Bunnell; 1875, George H. Barker; 1876, O. S. Shaw; 1877–79, E. G. Allen.

#### TREASURERS.

1857–59, John A. Hunt; 1860, A. G. Wygent; 1861–63, Allen Fish; 1864–65, James Dobbyn; 1866–67, Miram Fish; 1868, Robert Bartley; 1869, George H. Barker; 1870–75, William F. Trafford; 1876, James Dobbyn; 1877–78, Robert Bartley; 1879, William J. Shattuck.

#### SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1857, William Willcomb; 1858, A. G. Wygent; 1859, Charles Phillips, J. S. Packard; 1860, O. F. Ingersoll; 1861, George H. Parker; 1862, O. F. Ingersoll, J. S. Packard; 1863, C. H. Sherborne; 1864, G. H. Parker, O. F. Ingersoll; 1865, J. S. Packard; 1866, G. H. Barker; 1867, Charles Lockwood; 1868, George H. Barker; 1869, Miram Fish; 1870, D. B. Allen; 1871, Thaddeus Rood; 1872, D. B. Allen, Miram Fish; 1873, D. B. Allen; 1874, Miram Fish; 1875, James O. Keith; 1876, A. B. Sherborne; 1877, D. B. Allen; 1878–79, George H. Barker.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1857, James Dobbyn, J. S. Packard, Benoni Young; 1858, William Willcomb, Miram Fish; 1859, C. C. Leathers, J. S. Packard; 1860, William Sherborne; 1861, Miram Fish, G. H. Barker; 1862, William Sherborne; 1863, John A. Hunt; 1864, William Willey; 1865, J. S. Packard, R. R. Randall; 1866, W. F. Trafford, Miram Fish; 1867, W. F. Trafford; 1868, Bryant Millman, G. H. Barker; 1869, William Kenney, A. R. Sherborne; 1870, Miram Fish; 1871, J. S. Packard; 1872, Daniel Lutz; 1873, A. R. Sherborne, William H. Wynn; 1874, Miram Fish; 1875, William F. Conner; 1876, J. S. Packard; 1877, Thaddeus Rood; 1878, E. G. Allen, Gordon Sinclair; 1879, J. O. Keith, E. O. Rood, Miram Fish.

#### HIGHWAY COMMISSIONERS.

1857, Franklin Beal; 1858, H. F. Wing, S. C. Paul; 1859, Franklin Beal, Draper Fish; 1860, Charles Phillips; 1861, W. W. Lamson; 1862, Draper Fish, George Andrews; 1863, C. H. Sherborne, W. Patterson; 1864, J. W. Tripp, George F. Mast; 1865, J. S. Packard, C. W. Darling, Allen Fish; 1866, J. W. Tripp, Draper Fish; 1867, Charles Lockwood, Draper Fish; 1868, C. W. Bunnell; 1869, Stephen Reed, Bryant Hillman; 1870, I. S. Bunnell; 1871, J. S. Packard; 1872, Draper Fish; 1873, I. S. Bunnell; 1874, R. R. Randall; 1875, C. E. Lockwood; 1876–78, W. J. Shattuck; 1879, Robert Bartley.



## DRAIN COMMISSIONERS.

1872, Charles Phillips; 1873, Stephen Reed; 1874, R. R. Randall;  
1875, William E. Knapp; 1876, C. O. Frazier; 1877, F. W. Conner;  
1878, John A. Hart; 1879, Jacob Gunsaul.

## SUPERINTENDENTS OF SCHOOLS.

1875, Brainard Allen; 1876-78, D. B. Allen; 1879, A. N. Ballen.

## CONSTABLES.

1857, George Sinkler, J. B. Greenlee, S. B. Greenlee, Ernest Lepolt;  
1858, C. M. Blom, George Sinkler, A. G. Wygant; 1859, R. B.  
Cooper, Allen Fish, William A. Dell, George Sinkler; 1860, W.  
H. Sherborne, Ira A. Derby, William A. Dell, George F. Mast;  
1861, George F. Mast, George Andrews, W. W. Lamson, William  
A. Dell; 1862, George Andrews, George Sinkler, Charles H. Sher-  
borne, C. T. Tilton; 1863, Reuben Lee, Charles H. Sherborne, H.  
P. Sinkler, John Burnham; 1864, William A. Dell, T. H. Hum-  
phrey, W. McConnell, B. F. Jenkins; 1865, R. R. Randall, George  
Sinkler, B. F. Jenkins, C. W. Darling; 1866, R. R. Randall,  
George Sinkler, J. A. Derby, J. W. Tripp; 1867, Charles Phillips,  
Lyman Ingram; 1868, Thomas Anderson, R. R. Randall, W.  
S. Lambert, Charles Stoddard, Sr.; 1869, John Lilly, Jeffries  
Reed, John Carpenter, A. Lilly; 1870, Thomas Wynn, G. P.  
Williams, S. G. Jameson; 1871, L. S. Bunnell, D. W. Wesnall, R.  
R. Randall, Thomas Anderson; 1872, Orin Hill, C. O. Frazier,  
Charles Burton, John West; 1873, T. B. Wynn, O. Shine, N.  
Kelley, C. E. Lockwood; 1874, H. L. Dobbyn, E. M. Symonds,  
William Chapin, N. Bartes; 1875, Thomas J. Chaffee, Ezekiel  
Milliman, B. F. Wynn, Alfred Packard; 1876, George Michaels,  
William Tripp, A. Lovelace, Thomas J. Chaffee; 1877, J. Dalsen,  
H. Curtis, T. B. Wynn, J. Hartman; 1878, John Dalsen, George  
Michaels, Jeremiah Hartman, Frank Stewart; 1879, E. Milliman,  
F. B. Harris, C. O. Frazier, George Michaels.

## THE CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH.

The Congregational Church at Covert was organized Sept. 27, 1870, Rev. D. F. Peet and Rev. — Anderson officiating at the services held on the occasion. Its early membership embraced the following names: Josiah Packard, Elizabeth Packard, Perlia Packard, Margaret Smith, Edward Rood, Pamela Packard, Alfred Packard, Flora Rood, Mary Packard, William Packard, E. P. Shaw, Mrs. E. P. Shaw, Milan Packard, W. F. Trafford, Martha E. Trafford, Gordon Sinclair, Thaddeus Rood, Martha Rood, Flora A. Allen, and D. B. Allen. The early services were held in a barn fitted for the purpose, and soon after the members convened in a new school-house that had meanwhile been built. The congregation, however, increased so rapidly that these quarters were too limited, and Packard's Hall was opened for the use of the congregation.

For a period of more than five years this spacious apartment was occupied as a place of worship without expense to the society. The first regular pastor, Rev. F. W. Bush, began his ministry in January, 1873, and a parsonage costing \$1500 was ready for his occupancy and paid for on his arrival.

In 1878 the congregation determined to erect a house of worship, and in August of that year began the work. The building is of wood, with stone foundations, and having a side-tower from which entrance is effected into both audience- and lecture-rooms. These rooms open into each other through doors mounted on rollers and running into the walls. The edifice is well built, neatly finished, and will seat comfortably 400 people, having cost, completely furnished, more than \$4000. The building was finished in October, 1879, and the dedicatory services were held on the 5th day of November, 1879. These exercises, which were

conducted by the former pastor, Rev. F. W. Bush, Revs. E. A. Paddock, and N. D. Lamphear, were of a very interesting character. The church roll embraces a membership of 90, the present pastor being Rev. Levi Parsons Spellman.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

## EDWARD A. ROOD.

This gentleman traces his ancestry back to days of Puritanism in New England, his mother, whose maiden name was Abigail Hawes, being a direct descendant from a member of the colony which crossed the Atlantic in the "Mayflower," and settled at Plymouth, Mass. His father, Josiah



EDWARD A. ROOD.

F. Rood, was born in Buckland, Franklin Co., Mass., and was married to Miss Hawes, June 13, 1815. Their children were as follows: Abigail G., born April 16, 1816; David, born April 25, 1818; Marshall, born May 26, 1820, died April 12, 1854; Aurelia, born Sept. 16, 1822, died June 19, 1860; Josiah, born June 30, 1824, died July 10, 1863, in the army; Henry F., born March 1, 1828, died March 13, 1852; Susan A., born March 21, 1831, died Feb. 15, 1864; Thaddeus, born June 8, 1833; Edward A., born May 18, 1840. Of these the oldest son now living is a missionary in South Africa. Josiah F. Rood died Aug. 19, 1864, his wife's death having occurred July 28, 1863.

Edward A. Rood came from Massachusetts to Michigan in 1861, and settled in the township of Ganges, Allegan Co. After one year he returned to his old home, and on the 25th of October, 1863, he was married to Miss Flora M. Warner, daughter of William and Annis Warner. She was born Oct. 24, 1843, and was the third in a family of four children. Her brother, Edwards W. Warner, died in the army; Eliza A., her oldest sister, was married to W.

J. Shattuck, and is now living with her husband in the township of Covert. The youngest sister is now the wife of George Campbell, residing at Florence, Mass.

Mr. Rood and his wife are the parents of two children,—Frank E., born Oct. 27, 1864, and Lillian A., born Oct. 7, 1868. Mr. Rood came to Michigan for the purpose of entering the employ of Messrs. Packard & Sons, and remained with them about eleven years. In 1863 he purchased land in Allegan Co., Mich., and at present is the owner of two hundred acres in the township of Covert, Van Buren Co. In 1873 he established a hardware store, which he still continues to operate, handling agricultural implements and a general line of hardware. Mr. Rood and his wife are members of the Covert Congregational Church, having united with it at its organization. Politically, Mr. Rood is a Republican, but he has not aspired to office.

#### ALFRED S. PACKARD,

son of William and Mary (Rude) Packard, was born in Rensselaer Co., N. Y., Sept. 22, 1834, and was the second in a family of four children. His father was a native of Massachusetts. In 1836 the family removed to Ohio, where Alfred S. Packard remained with his father, working on the farm and lumbering, until he became of age. On the 1st of May, 1859, he married Laura A., daughter of Iram and Cynthia Packard, she being a native of Plainfield, Mass. To this couple was born one son, Ernest H., his birth occurring April 2, 1870, and his death five months later. Mrs. Packard died April 10, 1870, and on the 22d of June, 1871, Mr. Packard was married to Mary E., daughter of Nelson T. and Emily C. Burnham, who was born in Middletown, Conn., April 28, 1846, and moved, with her father, to Ohio, in which State she resided until her marriage. Mr. Packard came from Ohio in 1859, and settled in the township of Ganges, Allegan Co., Mich.; removed from Ganges to Deerfield (now Covert) in 1867. Until 1877 he was in business with his father and brother, but in the fall of that year a division was made, Mr. Packard taking what is known as the "upper mill" property. He now owns and operates that, also one at South Haven, and has a horse-railway from the former to a pier on the lake-shore, four miles distant. He is at present the owner of two thousand five hundred acres of land, from which he is clearing the timber, and his home is situated on two hundred acres already cleared and well improved. Mr. Packard is a Republican in politics, and both himself and wife are members of the Congregational Church.

#### CHAPTER LVIII.

##### DECATUR TOWNSHIP.\*

The Pioneer Township and its Early Settlers—The Swamp Road—Township Organization and Civil List—Decatur Village—Churches—Schools—Incidents.

##### THE PIONEER TOWNSHIP AND ITS EARLY SETTLERS.

DECATUR, known as town 4 south, range 14 west, lies in the southern tier of townships bordering upon Cass County, and enjoys the distinction of being the township that re-

ceived the first white settler in Van Buren County. Its boundaries are Paw Paw on the north, the Cass County line on the south, Porter on the east, and Hamilton on the west. Originally covering a territory six miles in width by twelve in length, half of its area was set off to Porter in 1845, so that it remains to-day six miles square.

Decatur is a fine wheat-growing township, and as to general agriculture will compare favorably with any township in the county. The wheat shipped at Decatur station for the six months ending Dec. 1, 1879, aggregated 84,000 bushels. The business of sheep-raising is likewise an important and profitable feature of farming industry. Farmers who pay especial attention to sheep-raising own flocks numbering from 500 to 1000.

Decatur bears the palm as the pioneer township of Van Buren County in point of early settlement, and until 1831 contained within its limits only the family of the man who led the way into Van Buren County as its first white settler,—Dolphin Morris, a resident of Deer Creek, Scioto Co., Ohio, who, accompanied by his father, Henry D. Swift, and Jacob Morlan, came to Decatur, and on the 27th of March, 1829, began to cut logs for a cabin, which he built upon section 35, near the centre of its southeast quarter. During the first week in April he moved his family into the cabin, and from that time forward remained a settler in the township. Morlan settled in Cass County, while Swift, although he worked for Mr. Morris, did not become an actual settler until 1831. For two years, therefore, Mr. Morris was the only settler in Van Buren County, although he was not without neighbors in Cass County.

Dolphin Morris' log cabin was a historical structure, and deserved preservation among the pioneer relics of Van Buren. It not only sheltered the first family of white settlers in the county, but beneath its roof occurred the first birth and first death. Within its walls the first sermon was preached and the first school taught, while it enjoyed likewise the minor distinction of being the first hotel in the county. The material structure has passed away, but the spot upon which it stood is well remembered.

Dolphin Morris continued to be a resident in Decatur until his death, in January, 1870. His son Henry lived on the old place until Sept. 28, 1879, when he and his wife were murdered in a mysterious manner. Dolphin Morris split with his own hands the first rail, and turned the first furrow in Van Buren County. Mr. Morris' sons now living are Samuel, Elias, and Amos, the latter residing in Lawton and the two former in Cass County. Elias Morris is now the oldest person living of those born in Van Buren County.

H. D. Swift, who came to Michigan with Dolphin Morris, located a piece of land on section 36, and being without funds to purchase it, held it as a "claim," and selling the claim to Le Grand Anderson in 1831, was enabled with the money thus obtained to buy a tract near at hand, and upon that place he lived until his death.

George Tittle, a brother-in-law to Dolphin Morris, came from Ohio in 1831, and settled upon 80 acres on section 35, where his son Dolphin now resides. George Tittle died on the old farm in 1866.

\* By David Schwartz.

Samuel, a brother of Dolphin Morris, came to Cass County in the spring of 1829, and after a residence there of two years settled in Decatur, in 1831, upon section 36, where he lived until his death.

Le Grand Anderson came from Ohio to Michigan in the spring of 1831, and bought 434 acres of land in Decatur township, on sections 26 and 36, there being in the tract 80 acres of prairie land. Instead of working his own lands, he rented 40 acres in Cass County, on Young's Prairie, and broke it. He returned to Ohio in the summer, and in October of the same year came back to Michigan to close his land purchases. Journeying once more to Ohio, he came back in the spring of 1832 to Michigan, bringing with him on this occasion men and teams, with which he worked his land and put in crops. In the summer of 1832 he brought his family from Ohio, and in November of that year they became permanent members of the infant settlement. Mr. Anderson lived on section 36 which was his home, until his death, in 1869, and which is now the home of his son, L. R. Anderson. His other children living in the township are William and Jane. The only settlers in November, 1832, in what is now Decatur were Le Grand Anderson, Dolphin and Samuel Morris (brothers), George Tittle, their brother-in-law, H. D. Swift, and David Curry.

David Curry, one of Decatur's foremost pioneers, was a young unmarried man when, in 1830, he migrated from Indiana to Volinia township, Cass Co., Mich., in search of a new home. He lived in Cass County two years, and marrying, determined to settle in Decatur, where, upon section 34, he entered 160 acres adjoining Dolphin Morris' farm, and whither he removed with his wife in 1832. At that time there were already on the ground Dolphin and Samuel Morris, George Tittle, John Eckenberger, Le Grand Anderson, and H. D. Swift. Mr. Curry's cabin measured 18 by 20, but had neither floor, window, nor door. Puncheon floors were common enough, but Mrs. Curry preferred to have no floor until she could have a better one, and accordingly in the January following their settlement Mr. Curry hauled from Whitmanville, twelve miles distant, some rough lumber with which a floor was laid. Mrs. Curry then enjoyed the satisfaction of knowing that her floor, even if rough, was the only "sawed" floor in the township, and that she lived also in what was then conceded to be the best house not only in Decatur, but on the "Prairie." Mr. Curry lived until 1846, when he was killed by a fall from a wagon. Five of his children still occupy the old homestead, to wit: Jonathan, Joseph Q., Juliette, David Q., and Elizabeth. David Q. served through the war of 1861-65 as a member of the 4th Michigan Cavalry, and participated in the capture of Jefferson Davis, his *souvenir* of that incident being a pair of saddle-bags taken from Gen. Reagan, of Davis' cabinet. David Curry's old log cabin, which stood near the present Curry home, has passed from view, but the old "lean-to" is yet preserved although in a state of decay.

Joseph Van Hise, a resident of Butler Co., Ohio, came to Decatur in 1835, located 80 acres on section 13, and then hired out to work a year for John Eckenberger, a settler then in Decatur. After serving his year Van Hise went back to Ohio, and in the fall of 1836 brought his

family out, put up a log cabin on his 80-acre farm, and lived on the place until his death, in February, 1873. His widow and son Jared are now living on the farm. Another son, William K., lives on a place adjoining it on the west. With Joseph Van Hise came also to Decatur in 1836 his brother, William O. Van Hise, and his father (Oakey) and mother, the parents living with William O., on section 24. The latter subsequently removed to Cass County, where he now resides.

John Eckenberger, of whom mention has been made, lived two miles south of Joseph Van Hise. He sold his farm to Jacob Charles, of Cass County, and moved farther west, but returning again to Decatur, died in the township, as did Mr. Charles.

A Mr. Lantrekin, who lived with his family on section 23 in 1836, moved away soon afterwards and was heard of no more. Thomas Scott and family lived in that year on section 13, in a cabin put up by one Johannet. Scott went to Schoolcraft, and becoming afterwards a resident of Antwerp and later of Illinois, died in that State. John W., a nephew of Thomas Scott, came from Ohio to Decatur in the spring of 1837, and worked as a farm laborer until 1842, when he returned to Ohio, married, and in 1844 came back to Decatur and located upon the farm he now occupies.

In the northern part of the township settlements were not made until a comparatively late date, and until even the beginning of the history of Decatur village that section was sparsely peopled. Joseph Van Hise used to say that when he was town treasurer, in 1848, there were but three tax-payers north of Lake of Woods, and to reach them required from him a day's journey, which in the end gave him cash collections to the amount of fifty cents.

The first white child born in Van Buren County first saw the light in Dolphin Morris' rude log cabin, Aug. 4, 1830. The child was Lewis Creighton, a son of Dolphin Morris, and the little fellow gave up his young life, under the same roof, December 20th of the same year, this being the first death in the county. In that cabin, too, May 11, 1832, was born Elias Morris, now living in Cass County; the second white child born in Van Buren, and now the oldest of all natives of the county. The first marriage in the county was that of Elijah Goble, of Cass County, to Eliza Tittle, of Van Buren. John Shaw was the justice who performed the ceremony, and Sept. 28, 1833, was the date on which the knot was tied. Daniel Alexander and Margaret Tittle were the second couple married in the county, and set up housekeeping in the old Morris cabin.

Among the trials of the settlers in 1831 was the failure of seed-corn, which threatened much distress, but Dolphin Morris was equal to the occasion. He dispatched one Kirkendall and John Tittle, a lad of fifteen, to Fort Defiance, on the Maumee River, one hundred miles distant, for a fresh supply. They made the distance with a pack-horse, returned one Saturday night with two bushels of seed-corn, and on Sunday morning the settlers turned out and planted it. The crop raised from that planting was about all the corn they had that year. June 20, 1835, was memorable



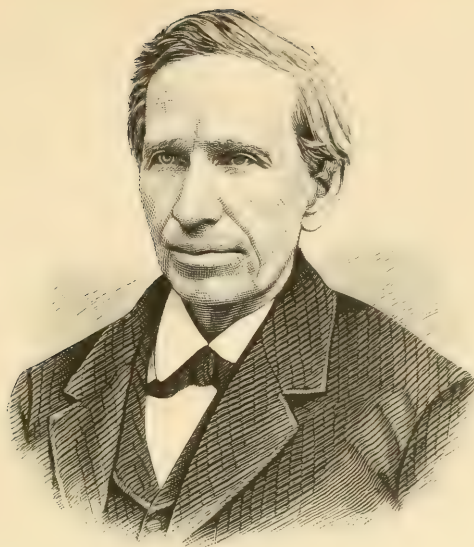


Photo. by C. F. Pritchard, Decatur.

### ALEXANDER B. COPLEY.

Alexander B. Copley is of English descent; his ancestor on the paternal side, four generations back, having emigrated from England to Boston in the beginning of the eighteenth century, and settled in Suffield, Hartford Co., Conn. He was born in Champion, Jefferson Co., N. Y., March 11, 1822. He subsequently resided with his parents at the manufacturing villages of Whitesboro', New York Mills, Walden, and Mattawan, in that State, until Sept. 12, 1829, when he removed to Dayton, Ohio, from which place the family emigrated to Michigan Territory, arriving at Little Prairie Ronde July 1, 1833. His education was limited to the meagre facilities afforded at that early day by the common schools of the Territory, having been a pupil in the first school taught in Van Buren County, in the winter of 1834-35.

Left at the age of twenty with a widowed mother, and one brother and five sisters younger than himself, to help care for,—added to the illness of his father several years previous to his death,—there was not much time to cultivate the intellect, had there been opportunity to do so.

By occupation he is a farmer, taking a just pride

in agricultural experiments and improvements. He has on his farm over a mile of the finest Osage hedge in Western Michigan.

In 1850 he married Jane H. Hathaway, sister of B. Hathaway, Esq., the "Farmer Poet" of Michigan; his family at the present time consists of himself, wife, and two sons, the elder of whom is married and manages the farm.

In 1874 he moved to the village of Decatur, where he now resides. He is president of the First National Bank of Decatur, of which institution he was one of the original stockholders. Mr. Copley has frequently been honored by his fellow-citizens with places of trust and responsibility, having served as supervisor of Volinia township, Cass Co., for six years, and representing the northern district of that county in the Michigan Legislature for the sessions of 1865-72, and the eastern district of Van Buren County for the session of 1875.

The magnificent road built across the swamp south-east from Decatur was projected and brought into successful operation largely through his individual efforts.



because of a severe frost, that destroyed almost all the crops except those near the small lakes.

It is told of Dolphin Morris that in 1832 he started for Niles to mill, and encountering a terrible snow-storm as well as very bad roads, he was fourteen days making the trip, and when he got home it was with but the fore-wheels of his wagon, his team, and a bag of flour.

A stage-route was opened through Decatur between Cassopolis and Paw Paw in 1838, and was for some years thereafter a much-traveled thoroughfare. Along that line, now covered in part by the valley road, was erected the first telegraph road put up in the State. In Decatur there were on the road no wayside inns, although Jacob Charles, who lived near "The Spring," kept at times a house of public entertainment.

#### THE SWAMP ROAD.

In the year 1848, when the growth of Decatur village was sluggish, the subject of a road through the great swamp was agitated, and in a little while it became apparent that such a road was a vital necessity, since without it there could be no communication with the district on the south and south-east. Beers & Sherwood undertook the construction of the road, which was estimated to cost \$2000, the railroad company giving \$500 and the villagers \$300 towards it. Except for one-fifth the distance, which was planked, the road was built of split puncheons about ten feet in length, laid on pole stringers, and being but a single track, had turn-outs at intervals. It was a rough thoroughfare, but a great convenience. The first person to cross it towards the south was Miss Hathaway (now Mrs. A. B. Copley), who, arriving at Decatur Nov. 6, 1849, was conveyed by Mr. Goddard, station-agent, over the road to her home, the roadway having been completed three days before. A new road, west of the old one, was built in 1856, and in 1865 material improvements were put upon it, the total expenditures upon the road then amounting to \$15,000.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL LIST.

Under the act of Legislature, approved March 11, 1837, dividing Van Buren County into seven townships, Decatur embraced the territory now occupied by Decatur and Porter, and received its name in honor of Commodore Stephen Decatur, a naval hero of the war of 1812. In 1845 the township of Porter was organized from the eastern half of Decatur, each afterwards having a territory six miles square, as at present.

The records of the township dating from 1837 to 1844 are not to be found, and the civil list for that period is, therefore, unobtainable. From 1844 to 1880, however, the records are perfect, and the names of those who have been chosen annually between those years as supervisor, clerk, treasurer, and justice of the peace are given below:

- 1844.—Supervisor, Stephen Kinney; Clerk, G. S. Freese; Treasurer, Nathan Cook; Justice of the Peace, V. C. Smith.
- 1845.—Supervisor, Lyman Sanford; Clerk, Joseph Van Hise; Treasurer, Thomas Scott; Justice of the Peace, Thomas Scott.
- 1846.—Supervisor, Lyman Sanford; Clerk, James Boyd; Treasurer, Thomas Scott; Justice of the Peace, W. C. Van Hise.
- 1847.—Supervisor, Lyman Sanford; Clerk, James Boyd; Treasurer, Thomas Scott; Justice of the Peace, W. C. Van Hise.

- 1848.—Supervisor, Lyman Sanford; Clerk, W. O. Van Hise; Treasurer, James Van Hise; Justice of the Peace, Ralph Mason.
- 1849.—Supervisor, Lyman Sanford; Clerk, W. O. Van Hise; Treasurer, James Boyd; Justice of the Peace, George B. Sherwood.
- 1850.—Supervisor, N. Lefever; Clerk, W. N. Pardee; Treasurer, James Boyd; Justice of the Peace, W. N. Pardee.
- 1851.—Supervisor, W. O. Van Hise; Clerk, Henry Canoll; Treasurer, James Boyd; Justice of the Peace, W. O. Van Hise.
- 1852.—Supervisor, Lyman Sanford; Clerk, H. Canoll; Treasurer, Hiram Potts; Justice of the Peace, William Campbell.
- 1853.—Supervisor, Lyman Sanford; Clerk, R. Barden; Treasurer, J. T. Kenble; Justice of the Peace, M. F. Merrill.
- 1854.—Supervisor, Jeremiah Teed; Clerk, E. M. Pool; Treasurer, J. T. Kenble; Justice of the Peace, N. Jaquish.
- 1855.—Supervisor, Jeremiah Teed; Clerk, E. M. Pool; Treasurer, J. E. Hollister; Justice of the Peace, John C. White.
- 1856.—Supervisor, George Bennett; Clerk, E. M. Pool; Treasurer, W. E. Trowbridge; Justice of the Peace, George Bennett.
- 1857.—Supervisor, George Bennett; Clerk, J. A. Stafford; Treasurer, H. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, H. C. Millard.
- 1858.—Supervisor, J. Teed; Clerk, J. A. Stafford; Treasurer, H. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, O. T. Welch.
- 1859.—Supervisor, O. T. Welch; Clerk, J. A. Stafford; Treasurer, W. E. Trowbridge; Justice of the Peace, E. S. Parker.
- 1860.—Supervisor, O. T. Welch; Clerk, W. K. Van Hise; Treasurer, Charles H. Keyes; Justice of the Peace, I. W. Powers.
- 1861.—Supervisor, O. T. Welch; Clerk, W. K. Van Hise; Treasurer, D. C. Brown; Justice of the Peace, H. C. Millard.
- 1862.—Supervisor, E. P. Hill; Clerk, Charles Shier, Jr.; Treasurer, M. Hinckley; Justice of the Peace, O. T. Welch.
- 1863.—Supervisor, E. P. Hill; Clerk, Charles Shier, Jr.; Treasurer, M. Hinckley; Justice of the Peace, W. K. Van Hise.
- 1864.—Supervisor, E. P. Hill; Clerk, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, G. W. Geer; Justice of the Peace, George Bennett.
- 1865.—Supervisor, E. P. Hill; Clerk, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, H. A. Northrop; Justice of the Peace, H. C. Millard.
- 1866.—Supervisor, E. P. Hill; Clerk, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, George Bennett; Justice of the Peace, C. Hollister.
- 1867.—Supervisor, C. Hollister; Clerk, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, George Bennett; Justice of the Peace, W. K. Van Hise.
- 1868.—Supervisor, Eri Beebe; Clerk, L. D. Roberts; Treasurer, C. Hollister; Justice of the Peace, J. Richards.
- 1869.—Supervisor, Eri Beebe; Clerk, N. Foster; Treasurer, C. Hollister; Justice of the Peace, H. C. Millard.
- 1870.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, N. Clark; Treasurer, W. E. Trowbridge; Justice of the Peace, C. H. Haskins.
- 1871.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, N. Clark; Treasurer, W. E. Trowbridge; Justice of the Peace, William Hall.
- 1872.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, J. G. Haynes; Treasurer, D. Squier; Justice of the Peace, O. W. Field.
- 1873.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, J. G. Haynes; Treasurer, D. Squier; Justice of the Peace, J. W. Lewis.
- 1874.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, Samuel Ellis; Treasurer, A. N. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, George Bennett.
- 1875.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, Samuel Ellis; Treasurer, A. N. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, J. Ransford.
- 1876.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, Samuel Ellis; Treasurer, A. N. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, J. G. Haynes.
- 1877.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, J. G. Haynes; Treasurer, A. N. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, W. Pritchard.
- 1878.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, J. G. Haynes; Treasurer, A. N. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, N. S. Rathbun.
- 1879.—Supervisor, R. Nutting; Clerk, J. I. Sherman; Treasurer, A. N. Chamberlain; Justice of the Peace, W. K. Van Hise.

Decatur had in 1874 a population of 2306, and in 1879 an assessed valuation of \$523,300.

#### DECATUR VILLAGE.

Until 1847 the present site of the village of Decatur was simply a hunting-ground, and a favorite place of resort it was for the Nimrods of the time as far back as 1834, while near at hand, on the banks of Pickerel Lake, anglers gath-



ered from far and near, for the waters of that lake were in the olden time very abundantly supplied with fish.

In 1847, Beers & Sherwood, of New York City, had acquired government grants for 5000 acres of land, in which was included the site of the present village of Decatur, and when the Michigan Central Railway began to push its way westward from Kalamazoo they determined to lay out a village on the line and call it Decatur. They donated land for depot buildings, which were put up in 1848, in which year also the railway was completed from Detroit to Niles. October 7th of that year an excursion-train from Detroit to Niles, in celebration of the opening of the road, passed through Decatur.

The village did not, however, begin its growth until 1849, when it was platted according to the original design, and christened Decatur. C. S. Tucker, who had been boarding railroad hands in a shanty south of the depot, opened a boarding-house in a building previously used by Beers & Sherwood as an office, which stood upon the place now occupied by the Duncombe House. In the same year a number of village lots were occupied, and stores were opened by A. H. Dixon, Goss & Dixon, and T. E. Phelps, in the order named. Hiram Lee, now living in the village and resident longest therein, bought the first village lot, in 1848, before the village was platted. It was designated as the third lot west of the public square. The completion of the swamp road, in November, 1849, opened communication with a hitherto unapproachable tract of country, and gave to the new village a decided impetus. The first village school-house was built in 1848, and school was taught in it during the winter of 1848-49 by Miss Sarah Cook, whose pupils numbered 20.

*Trade, Past and Present.*—In 1854 the present business centre of the village was occupied by a drug-store, two general stores, and one dry-goods store. Jan. 1, 1880, the village population was closely estimated at 2000, and, in the matter of mercantile trade, there were five general stores, two hardware-stores, two drug-stores, five grocery-stores, one furniture-store, one shoe-store, and various small business stands. Ten brick store buildings of some pretensions embellish the main street, and bestow upon the town an air of substantial thrift. Decatur is famous as a great "trading town," and is likewise an important grain-purchasing point, and makes large annual shipments by railway, as will be seen in a table of statistics printed elsewhere.

In the earlier history of the village, when no man dared venture upon opening a store, trading was done at Kalamazoo or Paw Paw. Dixon's store, which stood where Hathaway's store now is, was esteemed a fine establishment for that day,—indeed, some thought it rather finer than was needed. Theodore Phelps' store stood on "Chadwick's Corner," and was ultimately converted into a hotel, known as the Downs House. In 1851 the main street of the village boasted the stores of A. H. Dixon, Theodore Phelps, and E. Ingalls, and a bar-room, kept by Robert Willis. Willis was then known as the wealthiest man in Decatur, but subsequently his prosperity declined and he sunk to poverty.

Henry Canoll was keeping a drug-store in the building put up by Dr. Bartholomew, and on the corner now occu-

pied by the Duncombe House. L. R. Barker was keeping the Decatur House. Barker had taken the place originally set up by Charles Tucker as a railroad boarding-house, added a front, named it the Decatur House and made it a reputable hotel.

At that time the spot now occupied by the thriving village of Decatur was literally in the woods, and the sight of deer and wolves in the very heart of the village is said to have been no uncommon one.

George Sherwood, an employee of Beers & Sherwood, was one of the first justices of the peace in the village, and with William N. Pardee practiced law whenever occasion required, but occasions of that sort were not plentiful enough to call for extraordinary exertions on their part.

In 1850, Beers & Sherwood engaged Nathan Wilcox to put up a steam saw-mill near the village. A whisky-distillery subsequently took the place of the mill, although its career was brief.

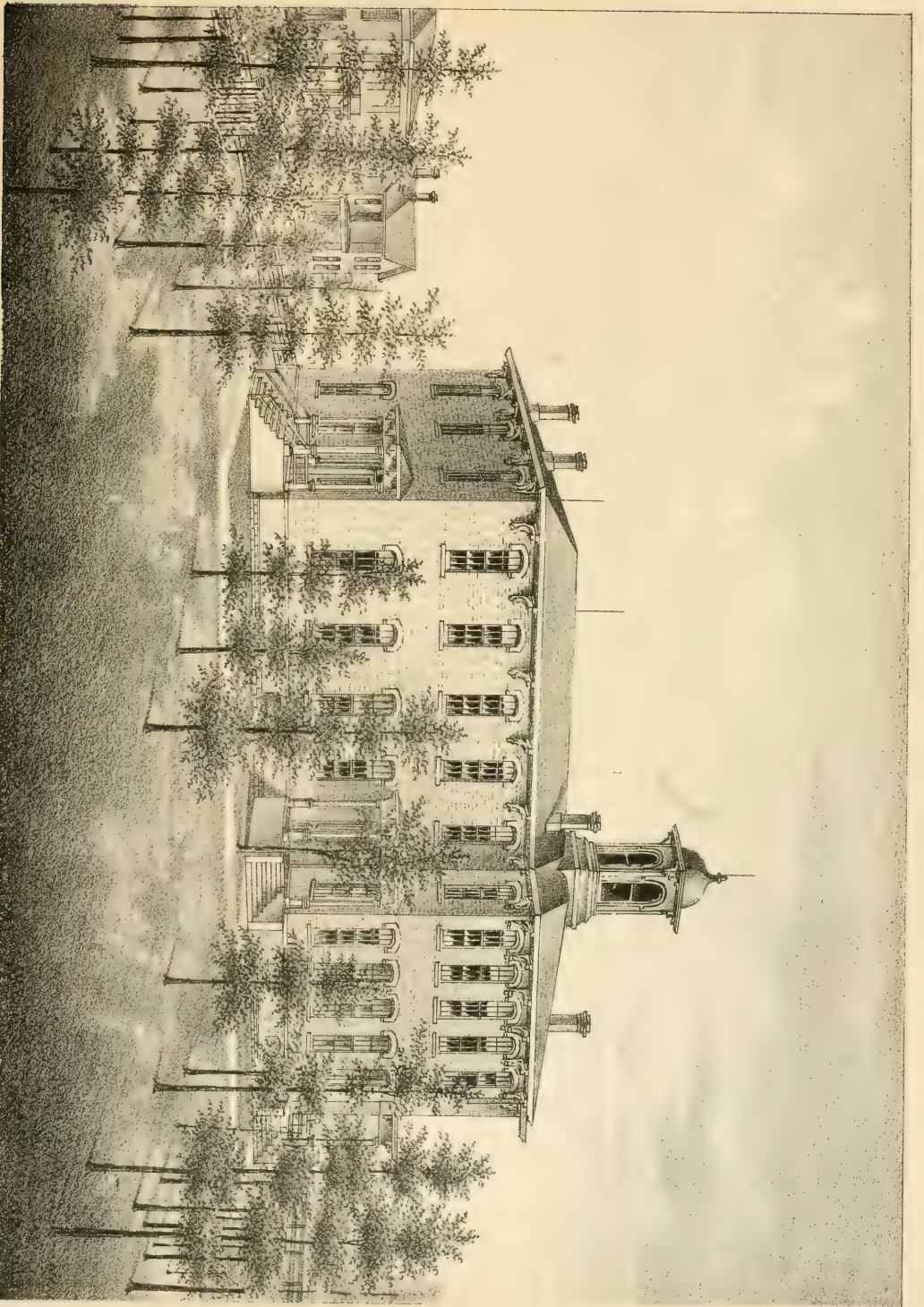
The first carpenter and joiner to locate in Decatur village was L. T. Olds, who came July, 1849, and who was for five years one of the only two mechanics plying their trades in the village. In July, 1849, the railway-depot, the kitchen of what was afterwards Barker's Hotel, and three dwellings comprised all there was of Decatur village. During the first five years of its existence the village was increased by about 75 new buildings,—12 of which were erected by Robert Willis as tenements. L. T. Olds (above mentioned) and Mary Elliott, who were married by 'Squire George Sherwood, May 18, 1850, were the first couple married in the village.

*Village Physicians.*—Decatur's first physician was Dr. Bartholomew, who put up in 1848 a small office and drug-shop on Railroad Street,—the building now doing duty as Shelter's Hotel. Dr. Bartholomew remained but a short time before taking the California fever, and went away to the Pacific slope. He now resides in Keeler. During Dr. Bartholomew's time, and subsequent thereto, Dr. Wells, of Little Prairie, visited Decatur frequently to teach a singing-school, and occasionally practiced also the healing art in the town. In 1851, Dr. J. T. Keables opened an office in Decatur, and since that time has practiced medicine in the village continuously. Dr. Foster, of Climax Prairie, made a location in Decatur about 1855, but made his stay a short one. For some years Dr. Keables had the field to himself, and, like all physicians of the day, practiced over a wide extent of territory. The physicians of Decatur now number six,—Drs. Baker, Broderick, Dillon, Keables, Rogers, and Rose.

*Town Hall.*—One of the most imposing architectural features in the village is the town hall, in which the post-office has roomy quarters, and where the township and village authorities have their offices. A commodious public hall gives accommodation for public entertainments, as well as town-meetings. The structure is of brick, measures 37 feet front by 72 deep, was erected in 1870, and cost upwards of \$11,000.

*The Union School.*—The school in School District No. 4 (embracing Decatur village) was organized in 1862 as a graded school. In 1863 work on a new school building was begun, and in September, 1864, sessions were held in

DECATUR UNION SCHOOL BUILDING.







the edifice. It is of brick, of handsome and substantial appearance, cost \$12,000, employs 7 teachers, has an average attendance of about 400, and requires for its annual support about \$4300.

*Post-Office.*—A post-office was established about 1852, and George Sherwood appointed postmaster. W. N. Pardee succeeded Sherwood, and Charles N. Poor in turn followed Mr. Pardee. After him Theodore Phelps was the incumbent. Upon his death his widow was appointed his successor, and following her Eri Beebe filled the place, which he relinquished to J. W. Rogers, the present occupant. The office receives and delivers four daily mails, and twice a week receives and delivers a stage mail. The sale of stamps, envelopes, etc., average about \$600 each quarter, money-orders issued average \$1300 each month, and money-orders paid about \$600 during a like period.

*The Village Press.*—Decatur's earliest newspaper was called the *Van Buren County Tribune*, and its earliest publisher T. O. Sweet. The *Decatur Clarion*, edited by Moses Hull, was the successor of the *Tribune*. These and other newspapers will be found mentioned more fully in the general county history.

*Village Incorporation.*—The village of Decatur was incorporated by the board of supervisors Oct. 11, 1859, and reincorporated by Legislative act approved March 16, 1861. The first president of the village was E. P. Hill, and the first recorder Orrin S. Welch, both of whom were elected in 1859. The earlier records of the village are somewhat imperfect, and the list of those who have been chosen presidents, recorders, treasurers, and trustees each year can be given only from 1862 to 1880:

- 1862.—President, E. P. Hill; Recorder, Charles Shier; Trustees, Hiram Cole, Myron Hinkley, J. H. Wallace, Carlton Wheeler, Charles N. Poor, John Tarbell.
- 1863.—President, J. Teed; Recorder, C. J. Poor.
- 1864.—President, C. Wheeler; Recorder, L. C. Noble.
- 1865.—President, C. Wheeler; Recorder, W. T. Gerow.
- 1866.—President, E. P. Hill; Recorder, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, William Hodges; Trustees, E. L. Hawkes, R. Nutting, J. B. Higgins.
- 1867.—President, J. M. Moore; Recorder, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, E. D. Clark; Trustees, O. S. Abbott, H. A. Northrop, D. C. Rogers.
- 1868.—President, J. M. Moore; Recorder, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, E. D. Clark; Trustees, J. B. Higgins, R. Nutting, E. L. Hawkes.
- 1869.—President, E. P. Hill; Recorder, W. T. Gerow; Treasurer, E. D. Clark; Trustees, O. S. Abbott, M. Hinckley, J. S. Dowd.
- 1870.—President, James Haynes; Recorder, David Squires; Treasurer, J. P. Warner; Trustees, W. Tuttle, Jr., D. W. Stevens, Jacob Kissell.
- 1871.—President, Eri Beebe; Recorder, H. C. Church; Treasurer, W. E. Trowbridge; Trustees, R. Nutting, A. A. Abbott, D. C. Rogers.
- 1872.—President, E. Beebe; Recorder, A. A. Abbott; Treasurer, W. E. Trowbridge; Trustees, Thomas Browning, William Tuttle, W. Russell.
- 1873.—President, H. J. Hendryx; Recorder, E. A. Blackman; Trustees, R. E. Nicholson, F. N. Chadwick, R. Nutting.
- 1874.—President, H. J. Hendryx; Recorder, E. A. Blackman; Treasurer, S. N. Thomas; Trustees, Thomas Browning, E. P. Hill, Walter Russell.
- 1875.—President, Eri Beebe; Recorder, Jerome Coleman; Treasurer, S. N. Thomas; Trustees, L. F. Rawson, David A. Squier, John L. Harrison.

1876.—President, H. A. Northrop; Recorder, Samuel Ellis; Treasurer, S. N. Thomas; Trustees, A. N. Chamberlain, L. D. Roberts, Henry Bull.

1877.—President, Lucius Nutting; Recorder, R. E. Nicholson; Treasurer, S. N. Thomas; Trustees, M. Hinckley, George Bennett, E. F. Ruggles.

1878.—President, Lucius Nutting; Recorder, Charles W. Barrett; Treasurer, S. N. Thomas; Trustees, L. D. Roberts, Dennis Jordan, William Pritchard.

1879.—President, E. P. Hill; Recorder, A. B. Johnson; Treasurer, S. N. Thomas; Trustees, A. B. Copley, William Tuttle, L. F. Rawson.

*Railway Shipments.*—Decatur is an important wheat and lumber shipping-point, and as a matter of interest a table is presented showing the shipments at the station of the three leading articles of grain, lumber, and stock for the six months ending Dec. 1, 1879, the figures in each case representing car-loads.

Month.	Grain.	Lumber.	Stock.
June.....	31	23	2
July.....	10	22	...
August.....	70	15	9
September.....	58	22	12
October.....	68	19	17
November.....	3	13	13
Totals.....	240	114	53

During the year 1878 the shipments of apples at Decatur station aggregated 10,000 barrels.

*Manufactures.*—There is at the village of Decatur a manufacturing interest of considerable importance, which contributes in no slight degree to the prosperity of the town.

M. Hinckley & Co occupy about two acres of ground for a barrel and stave manufactory, and employ from 25 to 40 men. They turn out about 3,000,000 staves yearly, and an equal proportion of barrel-heading, besides making about 10,000 apple-barrels and 5000 packing-barrels. The works were established in 1858 by Jones & Chapin, and since 1871, Mr. Hinckley, of the present firm (which was organized in 1876), has been interested as a partner.

Daggett & Percy, of Chicago, are doing a very flourishing business at Decatur in the manufacture of wooden butter-plates, fruit-packages, fruit-baskets, etc. They occupy a building formerly used by R. Hoppin & Son as a tannery, and have been engaged since January, 1879, in the present enterprise. About 20 men are employed. The manufactory is in charge of Mr. Charles King, who is the representative at Decatur of the owners.

John M. Conkling & Brother carry on a foundry, which was built in 1870 by Mason & Herring. The present firm took possession in 1876, and since then have been steadily employed in the manufacture of plows and iron castings of all kinds.

The other manufacturing industries are Charles Duncombe & Co.'s grist-mill (with five run of stones), built in 1867 by Abbott & Matthews; J. J. Balcomb's custom grist-mill, with two run of stones; H. B. Babcock's planing-mill, and the saw-mills of Bull & Ackley and Enoch Hopkins.

*Bank.*—Previous to Oct. 15, 1870, Decatur village had enjoyed only such limited banking facilities as were furnished by the private banks of John Tarbell and Joseph Rogers. On the date above noted the First National Bank

of Decatur was chartered, with a capital of \$75,000, the first directors being Messrs. Charles Duncombe, C. W. Fisk, A. B. Copley, Levi B. Lawrence, E. P. Hill, O. S. Abbott, and A. S. Hathaway. A. B. Copley was chosen president and E. P. Hill cashier. The capital of the bank is now \$50,000; its circulation, \$45,000; deposits, \$45,000; loans and discounts, \$55,000. In 1873, Mr. Charles Duncombe put up a fine brick building for the use of the bank, which the institution subsequently bought. The president of the bank is A. B. Copley and the cashier L. D. Hill.

#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Decatur Lodge, No. 99, F. and A. M.*, was organized Jan. 14, 1858, with 23 members, after having worked under dispensation a year. Under the charter H. Canoll was Master; M. Winner, S. W.; and J. E. Hollister, J. W. Of the 9 members of the lodge when it was constituted 8 of them were Hubbell Warner, Loomis Warner, James F. Avery, M. Winner, — Barney, — Sloan, H. Canoll, and Edward Harris. The membership is now 30, and the officers as follows: Enoch Hopkins, M.; George Pollard, S. W.; Charles Schuster, J. W.; William Meade, Sec.; H. A. Northrop, Treas.; Marvin Hinckley, S. D.; Warren Botsford, J. D.; M. Winner, Tiler.

*Decatur Chapter, No. 75, R. A. M.*, was organized Jan. 10, 1871, with 10 members, of whom Horace Arnold was H. P.; James Haynes, K.; and E. R. Farmer, Scribe. The membership is now 16, and the officers: H. A. Northrop, K. and Acting H. P.; Enoch Hopkins, Scribe; Henry Bull, Acting Sec.; S. N. Thomas, Treas.; L. D. Roberts, 3d V.; Orrin Hodges, 2d V.; Loomis Warner, 1st V. The lodge and chapter occupy a handsomely appointed room in Chadwick's block, Decatur village.

*Sprague Lodge, No. 113, I. O. O. F.*, was organized Oct. 28, 1867, with 5 members. The membership in January, 1880, was 50, when the officers were Norman S. Hammond, N. G.; Peter Pardounet, V. G.; George W. Wait, R. S.; Johnson Parsons, P. S.; Benjamin Adams, Treas. Regular sessions are held every Tuesday night at Decatur village.

*Decatur Grange, No. 346*, was organized in June, 1875, with 60 members. L. R. Anderson was the first Master, — Thomas the first Secretary, and Jonathan Curry the first Treasurer. The officers Jan. 1, 1880, were Oscar Cadwell, M.; S. Roberts, Overseer; James Cadwell, Steward; John Lewis, Assistant Steward; C. A. Moulton, Sec.; Mary Powers, Chaplain; Julia White, Sec.; William Powers, Treas.; Mrs. Blades, Ceres; Mrs. Lurkins, Pomona; Mrs. Kidder, Flora; Mrs. Lewis, Lady Assistant Steward. The membership is now 54. Regular sessions are held once in two weeks in Trowbridge's hall, Decatur village.

*The Decatur Reform Club.*—A strong temperance movement was inaugurated in Decatur in the spring of 1877, by O. D. Beebe, of Kalamazoo, and H. C. Rogers, of Dowagiac, and so popular did the new departure become that when the Rogers Reform Club was organized in Decatur village, April 15, 1877, upwards of 800 persons were enrolled as members. A reading-room was opened in the village, and subsequently the name of the club was changed to the one it now bears. The reading-room, which is still

maintained, is free to all, and is a place of pleasant and profitable resort. The club membership numbers now about 300, and includes many prominent people. The officers for 1879 are Charles Labardy, President; J. H. Tuttle, Secretary; A. C. Copley, Treasurer.

#### CHURCHES.

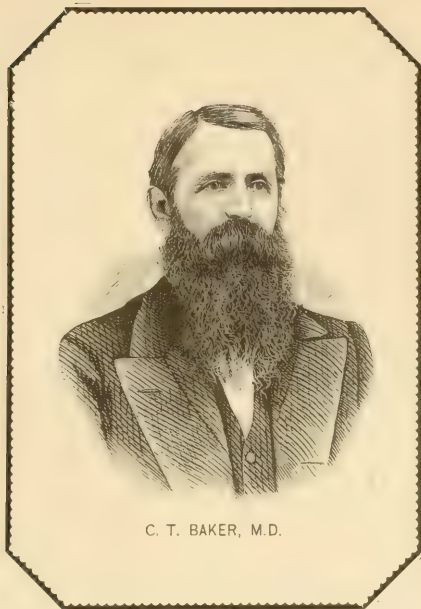
In 1831 public religious worship was held occasionally in Dolphin Morris' log cabin, and after that there was preaching in George Tittle's house and Le Grand Anderson's barn. Methodist preachers were itinerating through Michigan in those early days, and they stopped here, there, and at all places where the presence of new settlements promised a field for labor. Among the earliest Methodist preachers who held services in Decatur were the Revs. Felton, McCool, Cobb, and Elder Meek, an exhorter. There happened along also, once in a while, Baptist preachers and those of other denominations, but the names of these latter have not been preserved. A Methodist Episcopal organization was effected in 1834, and July 27th of that year a first quarterly meeting was held at George Tittle's.

Beyond the limits of Decatur village there is but one church building in the township,—that of the colored Baptists, in the northwest. Although small, this church congregation supports preaching once a week. There are in the south part of the township two church organizations,—Disciple and Methodist Protestant (worshiping in school-houses),—which are in a flourishing condition.

*The First Presbyterian Church* of Decatur village was organized by Rev. Marcus Harrison, an evangelist, Feb. 1, 1852, with the following members: Lydia Harrison, Mrs. Eli Rich, and Joseph McClintock, three in all. Mr. McClintock, who was chosen ruling elder, is still living near the town. Mr. Harrison concluded to make Decatur his home after organizing the church, and continued to preach for the little band during the ensuing three years. Jan. 4, 1853, the church was attached to the Kalamazoo Presbytery. During Mr. Harrison's ministry he bought a village lot and erected upon it the frame for a school-house and meeting-house. The lot and building frame he set apart to be donated to the First Presbyterian Church Society when it should be formed, and the society being organized during the pastorate of Rev. Samuel Fleming, who succeeded Mr. Harrison in August, 1855, the building of the church edifice was pushed forward, and Sept. 18, 1856, the house of worship, the first one in the village, was dedicated, the dedication sermon being preached by Rev. A. C. Tuttle, of Paw Paw.

The succession of pastors following Mr. Fleming includes Revs. T. C. Hill, S. R. Bissell, W. T. Bartle, J. J. Ward, E. M. Toof, E. P. Goodrich, Henry Hoyt, and C. W. Wallace. The elders are Joseph McClintock (who has served as deacon and elder since the organization of the church), W. E. Trowbridge, E. P. Hill, D. Hodges, and Jerome Coleman. The deacons are Joseph McClintock, W. E. Trowbridge, and D. Hodges.

The original church building was sold in 1869 to the Universalist Society, which, dissolving in 1877, disposed of the structure to the Catholic congregation, by whom it is now used. The Presbyterians replaced their old house of



C. T. BAKER, M.D.



RESIDENCE OF C. T. BAKER, M.D., DECATUR, MICH.





worship with the fine large church now in use, and expended upon it upwards of \$6000. The church has now a membership of 102, and in the Sabbath-school, of which Jerome Coleman is superintendent, the average attendance is 150. The number of members received into the church since its organization is 219. The church trustees are J. M. Conkling, Henry Upton, and John Pollock. D. Hodges, the clerk, has occupied that place since 1864.

*The Church of the Holy Family (Roman Catholic).—*About 1855, Rev. Mr. Koopman, a Catholic priest of Marshall, visited Decatur village, and arranged with the few families there and in the vicinity professing the Roman Catholic faith to hold religious services there once in three months. The first meeting was held in the house of Henry Brown, where Father Koopman preached four or five times, and after that, when Mr. La Belle, of Kalamazoo, took charge, the place of worship was transferred to the house of Mr. Dennis Jordan, which remained the church for ten years afterwards, or until the congregation gaining strength more commodious quarters were necessary, and so public halls were used. In 1877 the church edifice formerly used by the Universalists, and before that by the Presbyterians, was purchased. Father La Belle preached once in three months for about twelve years, and was succeeded by Fathers Sweeney, Herbert, and Roper, from Silver Creek. Father Wernert, of Paw Paw, has been in charge about a year, and holds services once a month. The attendance includes about thirty families. The church trustees are Daniel Kearney, James Howland, and James Cregan.

*First Methodist Episcopal Church of Decatur.—*The early records of this church having been lost, the date of its organization cannot be positively fixed, although it is generally believed that the class was first formed in 1856; at all events, it is known that in 1857 it contained but 7 members. Of those who joined the first class none now live in the village, and personal recollection even of early events cannot therefore be utilized. In 1860, however, the church had grown considerably in strength, and in that year a commodious church edifice was erected. The church embraces now three points, to wit: Decatur, East Decatur, and South Hamilton, of which the combined membership is 200. Rev. Mr. Carlisle, the present pastor, preaches at Decatur twice each Sunday.

The present officers of the church are as follows: Class-Leaders, E. F. Ruggles, W. C. Acton; Trustees, Thomas Browning, William Blowers, William Powers, J. G. Parkhurst, H. B. Clapp, W. H. Clark, J. F. Barry, E. F. Ruggles, William C. Acton; Stewards, J. N. Peters, W. M. Blowers, W. H. Clark, Thomas Browning, T. Threadgold, William Powers, J. M. Lombard, O. Beach.

The Sabbath-school, which has on its rolls the names of 170 scholars and an average attendance of 120, is in charge of E. F. Ruggles, the superintendent, assisted by 18 teachers. The volumes in the library number 220.

*A Protestant Episcopal Mission*, attached to St. Mark's Church of Paw Paw, has existed in Decatur since 1877. Services have been held in Trowbridge Hall once in four weeks, the average attendance being about 30.

## SCHOOLS.

The first school taught in Decatur was opened in 1835 in the house of Dolphin Morris. The teacher was William Alexander, and of his 20 pupils, several were from Cass County. Anderson was a relative of Le Grand Anderson, and coming from Virginia to visit Anderson, was persuaded to stop that winter and teach school. After a winter's term he went back to Virginia. John McKinney, of Porter, was a teacher in Decatur in 1837. Jonathan Curry, now living in Decatur, was one of McKinney's pupils.

Appended is a table of statistics relating to the schools of Decatur, from a report for the year ending Sept. 1, 1879:

Number of districts (whole, 6; fractional, 1).....	7
" children of school age.....	753
Average attendance.....	651
Number of school-houses (brick, 2; frame, 5).....	7
Value of school property.....	\$19,900
Number of teachers employed.....	22
Amount paid teachers' wages.....	\$3378.63
Total expenditures.....	\$5412

The school directors in 1879 were L. R. Anderson, W. K. Van Hise, E. F. Chappell, I. L. Harrison, F. Carpenter, A. M. Lyle, and Wm. Cole.

## INCIDENTS.

*The Morris Murder Mystery.*—One of the remarkable tragic sensations of the West during 1879 was the mysterious murder of Henry Morris and his wife at their residence on section 35, in Decatur township. On the morning of Monday, September 29th, the dead bodies of Mr. and Mrs. Morris were found lying in their home, where they had been shot down the previous night by an unknown assassin, whose identity has to this time remained hidden despite the most earnest efforts towards his discovery and the offering of large rewards to stimulate his pursuers. The mystery surrounding the tragedy was deepened by the evidence that a desire for plunder had nothing to do with the murder, since nothing of value was carried away, although valuable property was within easy reach. Van Buren County offered a reward of \$2000 for the capture of the murderer, but the constant exercise of the powers of the country's most skillful detectives has thus far brought nothing to light.

*The Meteor Commotion.*—The meteor of 1861 is well remembered on the south side of the swamp in Decatur, and the excitement it occasioned for a time is an almost fresh incident in the minds of many. Indeed, one valiant householder, with the knowledge of the newly-fledged Southern Rebellion keen upon him, made sure that the meteoric explosion was simply a rebel advance upon Decatur households, and rushing into his home with the cry, "The rebels are shelling us!" he proceeded to barricade doors and windows, put his family under arms, and, with musket in hand, declared that he was not only "ready for them," but that he would pledge himself to whip a dozen rebels single-handed. After a while he found out the true cause of his alarm, just as people in the neighborhood found out how he had laid himself out for war. It was a rich incident, and furnished food for merriment long afterwards.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.



DOLPHIN MORRIS.

## DOLPHIN MORRIS

was the oldest son of Samuel and Rebecca Morris, and was born in Loudoun Co., Va., Aug. 16, 1798. When but a small boy his parents moved to Ross Co., Ohio. His education was confined to what a youth could learn in about four or six weeks. He learned the alphabet and to write his signature, though not a very legible hand. However, in after-years he learned to read, and took great comfort in reading his Bible and the newspapers. When he was twenty-one years old, in company with a number of other young men, he started on a voyage down the Mississippi River, on a boat laden with corn and bacon, bound for New Orleans, then a small town. Before reaching their destination the boat grounded, and remained so for several days. The company becoming impatient, decided to undertake the journey on foot, so they (fourteen in number) provided themselves with cooking utensils, blankets, and a limited supply of provisions, thinking to accomplish the journey in a few days. But after several days' hard travel through forests, marshes, and streams, they began to get discouraged. As their supply of provisions was growing less every day, and no means of replenishing, they abandoned the idea of reaching the city, and concluded to turn their steps homeward as best they could, with but a small amount of money and no guide. The undertaking was a perilous one. Their supply was soon exhausted, or supposed to be. It turned out that Morris and two of his companions had each a biscuit, which they cut into fourteen pieces and distributed equally. These precious morsels sufficed to appease the gnawings of hunger, which were becoming almost unbearable.

The party still pursued their journey; three days passed and they had not tasted another morsel of food,—their situation was becoming desperate. Death by starvation, or how to avert it, were thoughts that occupied their attention. Would they resort to cannibalism or would they starve? The former was finally decided upon, and it was privately understood that the cook, an Irishman, who was one of



MRS. NANCY MORRIS.

their party who proposed it, should be the first victim. But Providence interfered and sent relief by way of a large terrapin, which the party succeeded in capturing. It was made into soup, which all partook of with a greedy relish, and the small fragments of meat distributed. Young Morris received the tail for his portion, and as he often remarked, "That was the sweetest morsel I ever tasted." The next day the party came upon an Indian village or encampment. The Indians being friendly, supplied the party with dried venison and such other provisions as they had.

The party being in a strange country and not knowing which way to go, tried to hire a young brave to pilot them to the settlement, but he would not go for any price, but kindly gave directions as best he could. The next day they reached a rude habitation, where they rested and were furnished with a supply of boiled cider, which, for the time being, revived their drooping spirits. Here they laid in a fresh supply of provisions, which lasted till they reached the settlement, where they were safe.

Though uneducated, he was a man of good ideas and sound judgment, an excellent calculator, and free from most of the vices which beset young men. His father being poor, he was early in life thrown on his own resources, and young Morris turned his attention to agriculture. He being sober and industrious, had no trouble in leasing land "on shares and furnished." He thus worked for several years, until he had the nucleus of a small fortune formed. He then conceived the not uncommon idea "that it was not good for man to be alone," and sought the hand and heart of Nancy Beaver, then a young girl of about eighteen years of age. They were married March 27, A.D. 1823. After the birth of three children—Samuel, Zarilda (now deceased), and Amos—Mr. Morris concluded to seek his fortune in the wilds of Michigan. In July, 1828, he, in company with his father, came to Michigan to see the country, and before he returned to Ohio made a claim on La Grange Prairie, now known as the Ritter farm. Im-



mediately on his return home he was taken ill, which prevented his moving until the 1st day of November, 1828, when he and his brothers, Samuel, John, and James, with his family and effects, and his father and family, all started for their future home. They arrived at Joseph Gardner's (a relative), at Pokagon, on the 1st day of December. Here they remained for the winter. During the winter he visited Little Prairie Ronde, and made his location on the south half of section 35, township of Decatur, on the north side of Little Prairie Ronde (having abandoned his former claim). In February, about the 15th, he came to Little Prairie and cut the logs for a cabin which he raised. A severe snow-storm precluded further operations, so he returned to his family. About the 1st of March he returned and completed his cabin, and moved his family into the same about the 20th of March, 1829.

This cabin was the first built in Van Buren County, and was known far and near, and many a weary traveler reposed beneath its rude roof and was warmed by its cheerful fire. For nearly two years Mr. Morris was the only settler in this county. His rude cabin not only sheltered the first white family resident in this now prosperous county, but under its roof the first school was taught by William Alexander, in the winter of 1833-34. Here was born the first white child in the county,—Lewis Creighton Morris,—Aug. 4, 1830, and here the little fellow left for his angel home, December 20th of the same year. Here was born, May 11, 1832, Elias Morris, the oldest living white person born in the county, now living in Cass County. Here it was that Daniel Alexander and Margaret Tittle (Peggy she was then called), the second couple married in the county, spent their honeymoon. A building that served to shelter the first family, was the first hotel, church, school-house, where the first birth and death occurred, where the first domestic altar in the county was set up, deserves more than a passing tribute, and its site should be marked, as a reminder of our early history.

Mr. Morris was a noble-hearted man, assisting all who came within his reach. Many of the early settlers bear testimony to his kindness. The family now living remember distinctly very many of the hardships incident to pioneer life, through which they, with their parents, passed. Many of these incidents are detailed in the township history.

Here, amid these hardships, Mr. Morris remained, and made for himself and family a home, to which by prudence and economy he was enabled to add, until at one time he was the owner of over eleven hundred acres of good farming-lands. Subsequently he gave to each of his children a fine farm; all located in the immediate vicinity of his home.

In 1865 the First National Bank of Paw Paw was organized, and Mr. Morris was one of the stockholders, and for about three years prior to his death he was one of the directors of the same. For twenty-five years prior to his death he was a very consistent member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and many a weary "circuit-rider" sought his home and shared his hospitalities.

In October, 1869, he was taken ill, grew gradually worse; finally, after an illness of nearly three months, surrounded by his sorrowing family and friends, he quietly passed away, gathered in as a sheaf ripened and ready for the Reaper.

## NANCY (BEAVER) MORRIS

was born in the State of Kentucky, Feb. 12, 1805, and when a small child moved with her parents to Ross Co., Ohio, and settled on a farm on Deer Creek, near Chillicothe. Her education was limited to a few months at the district school, where she learned to read and write. When about eighteen years old she was united in marriage to Dolphin Morris, and immediately began housekeeping in her father's log cabin on the farm, which he had vacated for one more modern. In 1826 she, with her husband, moved to another farm, which he rented, near London, same State, but owing to milk-sickness, which was very prevalent in that locality (the family being sick much of the time), it was decided to seek some healthier locality. So, on the first day of November, 1828, she, with her husband and three small children, started for Michigan, her future home, where she shared with her husband the hardships incident to pioneer life. Many times her courage was put to a severe test by some Indian tramp. Yet these red men, or rather their squaws, were often of real service, being friendly. They would often come to Mrs. Morris' house, help her wash, and do other work, and were extremely glad to be shown how to make bread, which she always took pleasure in showing them. Many times she was left entirely alone, with her children, to care for all the stock, etc., while her husband was absent on business.

She should be entitled to full credit for her share in the success in business affairs, which, in after-years, brought comfort and happiness to her husband and family.

Mrs. Morris was the mother of seven sons and four daughters, of whom only three (sons) are now living. She was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church for more than thirty years prior to her death, which occurred Oct. 14, 1877, in the seventy-second year of her age.

## CHARLES HENRY MORRIS,

youngest son of Dolphin and Nancy Morris, was born May 9, 1847. He married, Dec. 24, 1869, Esther A., daughter of Asa Jones, of Edwardsburg, Cass Co., Mich. After the death of his father and mother Charles H. became the possessor of the old homestead, where his father located in 1829. While in the midst of a useful and happy life, surrounded by a host of friends, with bright hopes of the future, he was on the night of the 28th of September, 1879, shortly after retiring, called to the door, and there shot twice through the heart by a cowardly assassin.

The fiend, not satisfied with the blood of one victim, entered the house, and immediately opened fire upon Mrs. Morris, whom he met coming, with a small revolver in hand, to her husband's rescue. She retreated to her bedroom, pursued by the fiend, who shot her twice through the body; she then entered a closet adjoining, where she fell and was shot twice more. Thus ended one of the most horrible tragedies ever perpetrated in any civilized community.

We also give a cut of the horse which carried the assassin through this frightful scene. He was ridden to South Bend, Ind., about forty miles distant, where he was found early the next morning in a very jaded condition.



Photos. by Pritchard, Decatur.

*Elias Morris*

SAMUEL MORRIS.

#### ELIAS MORRIS,

fourth son of Dolphin and Nancy Morris, was born in Decatur township, Van Buren Co., Mich., May 11, 1832, and is the oldest living white person born in the county. His education was obtained principally at the district schools in the vicinity, with the exception of three terms at the Wesleyan Seminary (now Albion College), at Albion, Calhoun Co., Mich. He married, March 12, 1857, Charlotte, daughter of Allen Dunning, of Edwardsburg, Cass Co., Mich.

Five children have been born to them; three only are now living. By occupation he is a farmer; he is now the owner of a fine farm, where he resides, just in the edge of Cass County, near his father's old home.

We present the readers of this work the portraits of Dolphin Morris and wife, Charles H. Morris and wife (brother of Elias), and a sketch of their house; these, together with his own portrait, are all inserted by Elias Morris as a tribute of love and respect to his deceased father, brother, and sister.

#### SAMUEL MORRIS,

eldest son of Dolphin and Nancy Morris, was born in Ross Co., Ohio, Aug. 17, 1824, and when a lad four years old, with his parents, moved to Michigan. His education was obtained at the district school in the vicinity of his father's, on the north side of Little Prairie Ronde, with the exception of four months at a select school at Paw Paw, taught by Professor Jesse Vose, now deceased. He being

the oldest child of his father's family, was, at an early age, taught to assist in all the different departments on the farm as occasion seemed to demand. One of his duties was to watch his father's sheep during the daytime to prevent the wolves from depredations on the young lambs; but despite his efforts, sometimes the hungry beasts would ignore his presence, seize upon a lamb, and run off with it. On one occasion seven wolves made their appearance at the same time, but owing to his courage and skill were prevented from doing serious damage.

Indians were frequently his playfellows, with whom he often joined in their sports. So familiar did he become with them that he learned to speak their language, and often joined them in target-shooting with bow and arrow, with which he became an expert, many times vanquishing his opponents, to their great chagrin. Indeed, so great was his skill, that he could shoot a bird at a distance of fifteen rods with great precision. He also became skilled in the use of the rifle, with which he took delight in hunting deer and other game. In fact, he furnished the family with meat a great portion of the time. Married, Oct. 3, 1852, Harriet C., daughter of Thomas Simpson, of Cass Co., Mich., and immediately commenced housekeeping on his farm on Little Prairie Ronde, Cass Co. He has always been engaged in farming, in which he has been very successful. Has also been one of the stockholders in the First National Bank of Decatur since its organization, and for a period of seven years has been a director of the same. He is a living witness to the growth and prosperity of Western Michigan, having shared in many of the hardships incident to pioneer life.



*CHAS. H. MORRIS.*



*MRS. CHAS. H. MORRIS.*



*OLD HOMESTEAD OF DOLPHIN MORRIS, AND LATE RESIDENCE OF CHAS. H. MORRIS, DECATUR, MICH.*





## DR. C. T. BAKER

was born in Howard village, Steuben Co., N. Y., Jan. 2, 1829, and was the youngest of a family of twelve children,—two having died previous to his birth. When but four years old his father, Andrew Baker, with his family, then consisting of a wife and six children (the rest having married and left home), moved to Allegany Co., N. Y. There he lived with his father, attending school and working on the farm, until after the death of his mother, which occurred March 25, 1844, aged fifty-nine years. After his mother's death he made his home with a brother-in-law, William H. Gordon, a merchant and lumberman living in Wellsville, in the same county. There he attended school and assisted as clerk and book-keeper until a short time before he commenced the study of medicine with his oldest brother, Dr. Andrew Baker, Jr., of Norwich, N. Y., where he also attended the academy for about two years.

In 1852-53 and 1853-54 he attended the medical department of the University of Michigan, at Ann Arbor, from which he graduated March 30, 1854. December 4th of the same year he located in Decatur, Mich., and commenced the practice of medicine. He has since resided at that place, with the exception of the time spent in the army during the war of the Rebellion, when he served as contract surgeon, and was assigned to duty at post hospital, City Point, Va., General Grant's headquarters. He was on duty at that place when Petersburg and Richmond were evacuated by the rebels, and also when General Lee surrendered his army to General Grant, and returned to Washington on the memorable 14th of April, 1865,—the day of President Lincoln's assassination.

He has been president, vice-president, and censor of the Van Buren County Medical Society, and has served as health-officer of the village and township of Decatur ever since the law establishing that office has been enforced. He is now surgeon to the Michigan Central Railroad at that place. In politics he is a Republican.

His father and two brothers, Hiram and John, with their families, came to Michigan in 1855, locating in Keeler township, where the father died July 10, 1856, aged seventy-seven years. The brothers are farmers in the latter township at this time. Three sisters are still living, viz., Mrs. Nancy Naramor, in Macomb Co., Mich.; Mrs. Fanny Dolbee, and Mrs. Elizabeth Gordon, both in Pennsylvania.

Dec. 31, 1857, Dr. Baker was married to Adelia M. Nutting, daughter of Lucius and Eliza B. Nutting.

## CHAPTER LVIX.

## GENEVA TOWNSHIP.\*

Boundaries and Topography—Settlement of the Township—Organization and List of Officers—Early Roads—Irrington—Schools—Religious Societies.

## BOUNDARIES AND TOPOGRAPHY.

The township of Geneva contains 36 full sections, and is the first full township from the lake in the north tier of townships. It is bounded on the north by Allegan County,

on the east by Columbia, on the south by Bangor, and on the west by South Haven. Its soil is varied and well adapted for fruit- and grain-raising.

The surface is somewhat broken in the central part, but is in the other portions generally level or slightly undulating. Like all the territory in Southwestern Michigan, it was originally heavily timbered with whitewood, basswood, beech, maple, and ash, and in parts pine and hemlock.

It is well watered by the south branch of the South Black River and its branches. It enters the township on section 34, flows northwesterly, and passes out at the northwestern corner of the town.

## SETTLEMENT OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The territory that now comprises Geneva was a wilderness after other townships east and north had become the homes of a few emigrants. The year that South Haven, then embracing several townships, was set off (1837) Clark Pierce, a native of Marlborough, Vt., bought of J. H. Monroe 160 acres of land, it being the southeast quarter of section 32, lying on the Monroe road, laid out two years before. He emigrated to Michigan in 1833, and lived at St. Clair for a time. After locating this land he built a log cabin, and lived alone about two years, his nearest neighbors being settlers at Breedsville and his brother Daniel, who was occasionally at South Haven, where he had bought land and put up a cabin. In the summer of 1839, Daniel and Clark Pierce rented 90 acres of land of Stephen Wilbur and Elias Rawson at Schoolcraft, and sowed it to winter wheat. They retained the farm together till the fall of 1841, when in October of that year Clark Pierce married Miss Royce, and remained on the farm till the fall of 1842, when he, with his wife and one son (A. J. Pierce, of South Haven), with their household goods, and a few young cattle, came back to the humble log cabin, and there passed two years of hermit life, being the only family in the township till 1845. The lands at South Haven had passed into the hands of a New York company, of which William A. and William L. Booth and Dr. Abbott were partners. Lewis A. Booth, a brother of William A., was the agent. In the spring of 1845 this company proposed to build a mill at that place and other improvements. Clark Pierce was hired to move there, erect a boarding-house and take charge of the property. His family moved there in 1845, having at that time two sons (Irving, the youngest, being the first white child born in Geneva township), and they remained at that place till June, 1846, when they returned to the farm, and from 1837 to February, 1846, no one had settled in the town. At that time Eri Eaton and Andrew Miner came in and settled near the centre of the town. In 1845, Mr. Pierce moved to Illinois, and in the spring of 1858 came back on the farm where he has since lived.

Considerable land had been bought by speculators, and emigrants were slow in coming in and paying their prices for land. In the latter part of the fall and winter of 1845-46, Eri Eaton and Leander J. Eastman came through this section of country to seek locations. On their return home, at Adrian, they purchased land of Cornelius B. Bogart, of that place,—Mr. Eaton 40 acres, Eastman 20 acres, and

\* By A. N. Hungerford.

Andrew Minor, a son-in-law of Mr. Eaton, 20 acres, on section 15. In the February following, 1846, Eri Eaton and Andrew Miner, with their families, came in and stopped a few days with Hiram Chappell, until they finished their own cabins. At that time Clark Pierce, on section 32, was the only man living in the township. Mr. Miner afterwards sold and bought of government 90 acres on the northeast quarter of section 3, where he still resides. Mr. Eaton is living with his daughter, Mrs. Wm. Beebe, at the centre of the township.

Philip Hoag, a native of Cuyahoga Co., owned a farm near Kalamazoo, and traded for land in this township, getting therefor 80 acres on the east half of northeast quarter and 80 acres on east half of southwest quarter. In 1848 he built a log house on the northeast quarter, where he lived until 1878, and moved to the southwest quarter, where he now lives. He was instrumental in getting the town set off from Columbia.

In 1847, Marvin Hannahs, of Albion, commenced a settlement on section 18, where he built a saw-mill (the first in the township) on the Black River. The lumber for the construction of the mill and the boarding-house in connection with it, was hauled from Breedsville. The first family who kept the boarding-house was that of Henry Hogmire. In the following year a large tannery was built by him at the same place, and he also erected a school-house, and made several other improvements as an inducement for settlers to locate in the neighborhood. Eri Bennett came to the place as foreman for Mr. Hannahs. He was elected justice of the peace in 1855-56, and supervisor in 1859. The demands of the tannery for bark gave employment to many at that time, and the settlers in the vicinity employed their time when not engaged in their own clearings in working for Mr. Hannahs.

The place was nicknamed Jericho by the workmen in the mill and tannery, but Mr. Hannahs named it Hunter. It was from this place that Joseph Sturgis and his assistants went down the river to commence the settlement that became South Haven. After the latter place became established, the Jericho or "Hunter" settlement lost its importance, but the nickname given it by the employees of Mr. Hannahs outlived both the tannery and the name bestowed by its proprietor.

Nathan Tubbs came from Grand Rapids to this town in 1849, and bought land in the southeast quarter of section 2, and remained here several years. He sold to John Chrisman, who in 1859 sold to Jerome B. Watson, a native of Monroe County, who moved on the farm with his family, where they still live. Mr. Tubbs was the first supervisor of the town.

Charles N. Hoag, brother of Philip, in the fall of 1851 left Ohio and emigrated to this town, purchasing on the southwest quarter of section 1, where he lived till 1858, and removed to Lawrence, purchasing a farm there. He returned again to Geneva in 1865, and bought 120 acres on the south half of section 3, where he now lives. Charles Davy in the winter of 1851-52 purchased 80 acres on west half of the southeast quarter of section 3. James Bates came in 1851 and settled on 40 acres on the northeast quarter of section 14, where his son Edwin lives.

Moses Welch, a native of Madison Co., N. Y., emigrated to Prairie Ronde, with his wife and three children, in the fall of 1847, and in the winter of 1850 bought of James Jones 80 acres of land on the southeast quarter of section 3, and moved upon it with his family Jan. 15, 1852. Mr. Welch was one of the first members of the Methodist class in the township, and was instrumental in getting the first road through to South Haven, in 1852, and in 1853 had the contract for building the east end of the causeway of logs along the section line between sections 4 and 9, Jesse Lane having the contract for the other part. Mr. Welch lives on the place where he settled in 1852. His present wife is a sister of Andrew Miner.

Jesse Lane in 1852 bought of William Knowles (a brother of Elisha, who settled at Breedsville in 1837) 160 acres, the northeast quarter of section 10. He afterwards traded with W. D. Metcalf, of Kalamazoo, and moved to Missouri.

James Kelly also in this year located land on the southeast quarter of section 4. Orrin G. Hoag, a brother, came in the fall of 1852, and settled near Charles and Philip, his brothers. Orrin and Charles married Laura and Harriet, sisters of Charles Brott. Philip Brooks, a native of Genesee Co., N. Y., came to this township in the fall of 1853, and settled on the southwest quarter of section 12. His widow and two sons are still on the farm.

Benjamin Knowles, from Livingston Co., N. Y., emigrated with his father, Elisha Knowles, to Breedsville in 1837. He went through to the mouth of the Black River with Clark Shaffer in 1849, when nothing was there except the single house built in 1845, and the ruin of the Monroe house. In 1852 he first located at Geneva, on the northeast quarter of section 10, where he still resides.

Charles Brott emigrated from Ohio to this township in 1855, purchasing the year before the south half of the northeast quarter of section 1, and has lived there to the present time. He married a daughter of Mr. Chappell, an early settler.

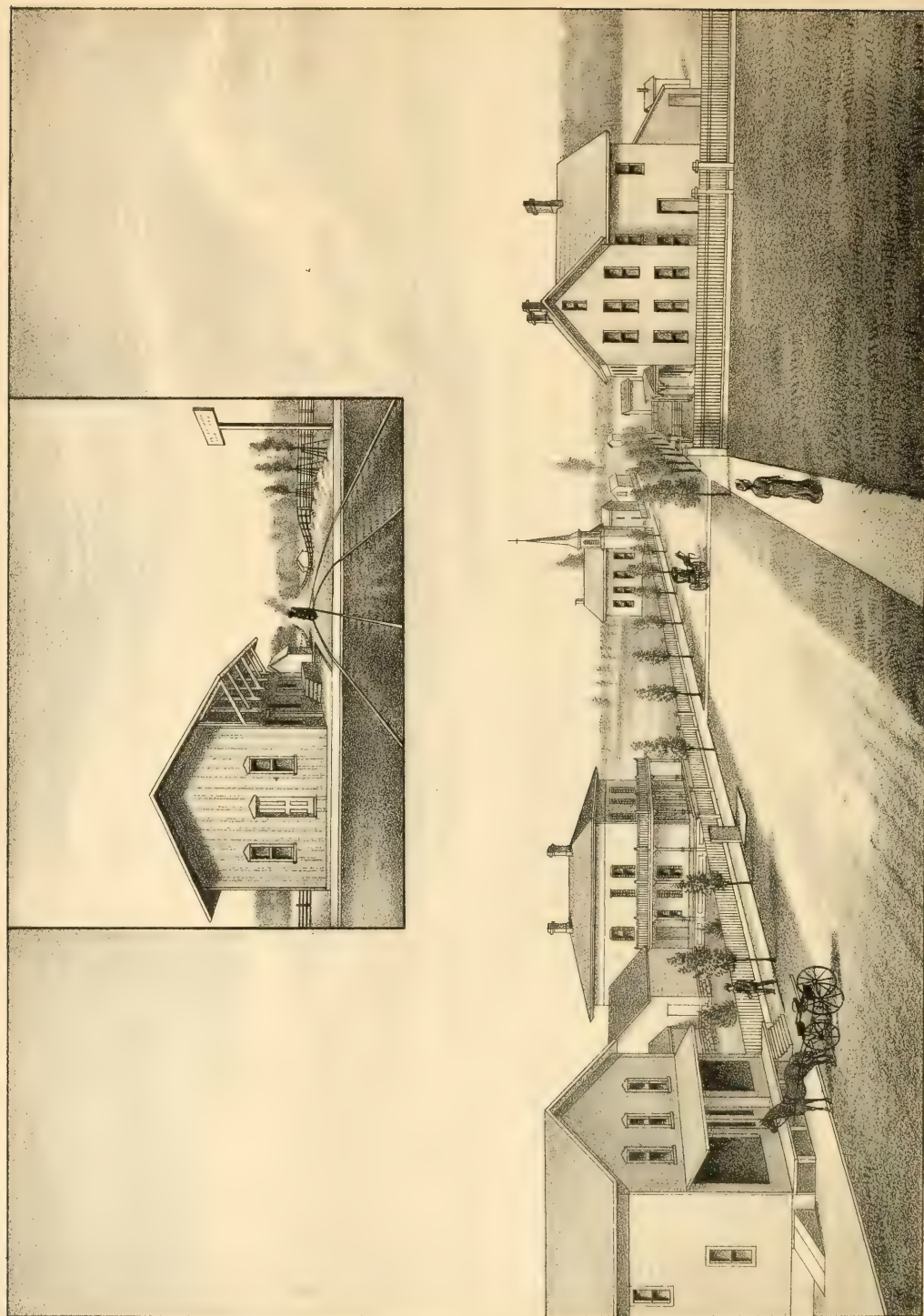
Samuel Lull, from Broome Co., N. Y., emigrated to Kalamazoo County in 1840, and to Geneva township in the spring of 1854. He bought his farm of John Glover, on the west half of the northwest quarter of section 11. With the exception of the little clearings of Nathan Tubbs, Moses Welch, and Charles Day, that neighborhood was then a wilderness. Mr. Lull is now largely engaged in the culture of peaches and apples.

About 1856, Daniel and Mahlon Funk settled on the southwest quarter of section 34. About the same time William Miller purchased 80 acres on section 33, and the same on section 34. George McKenzie was the first settler in the southeast quarter of the town, on section 36.

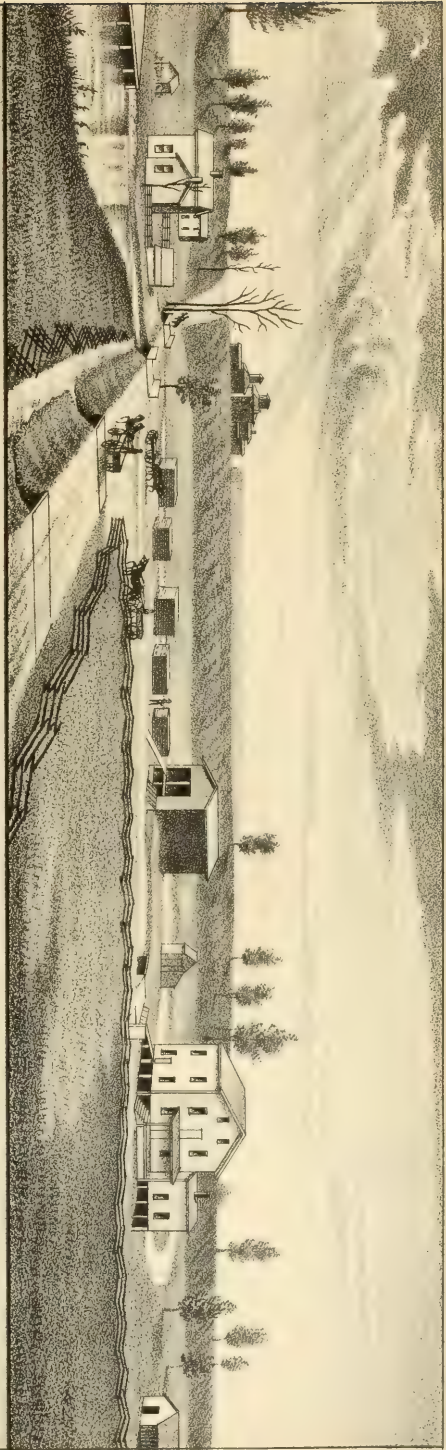
Between this time and 1862-63, Peter Chambers settled on the northeast quarter of section 8, where he still resides. Perry Kidney settled on the same section, where Mr. Cobb now lives. S. M. Trowbridge bought land on sections 6 and 7, on Black River, and erected a mill there known as Geneva Mills. He is now engaged in a flour- and feed-store in South Haven. Yetter settled on the Sand Hill east of Trowbridge's mill. James Peters, about 1862, lived on the southwest quarter of section 10. Anson Warner, a native



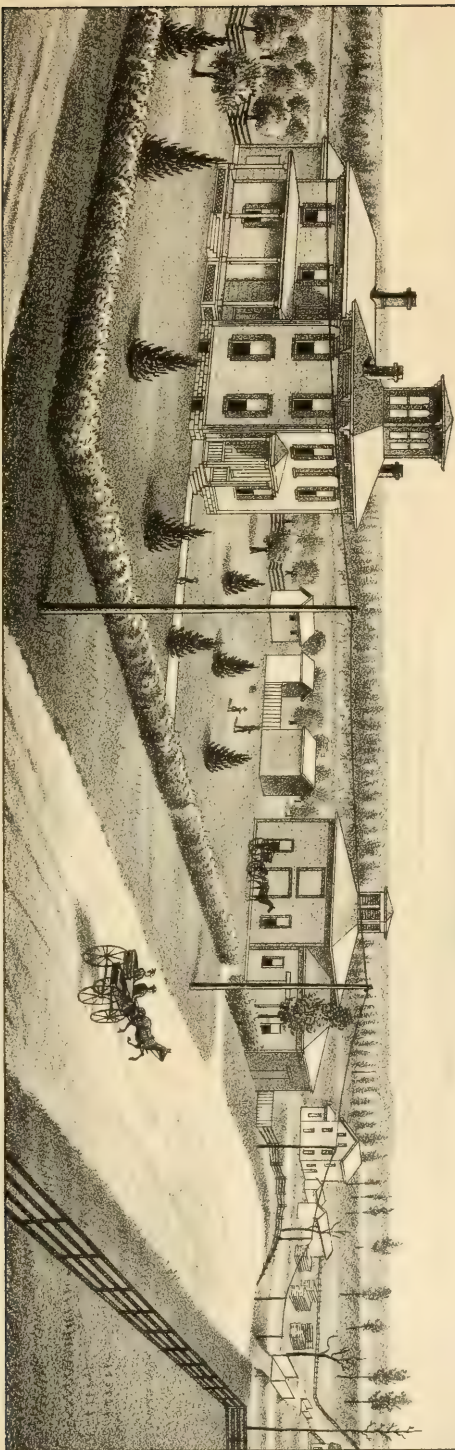




RESIDENCES OF GILMAN AND PHILENA WHITE, IRVINGTON, GENEVA T<sup>R</sup>, VAN BUREN CO., MICHIGAN.



GENEVA MILLS.



RESIDENCE OF S. W. TROWBRIDGE, GENEVA T<sub>R</sub>, (NEAR SOUTH HAVEN LINE) VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





of New York, came in 1863, and purchased on the southeast quarter of section 9. He was the first to settle on that section. Soon after, Lucius Mead and Sylvanus Cobb settled near him. Benjamin Westcott, a native of Wayne Co., N. Y., emigrated to Bangor in 1848, and in December, 1864, located on the southwest quarter of section 8, purchasing of Perry Kidney, where he still lives. William W. Worthington settled on section 18, near Mr. Westcott, in August of the same year.

George H. Reeves, from Connecticut, moved to Suffolk Co., N. Y., and emigrated to Geneva in 1864, settling where he still lives, on section 22.

Many others came in from 1858-64, among whom were Hubbard C. Pond, Abel Edgerton, Daniel D. Hathaway, F. M. Jones, J. G. Lafler, Henry Pease, Lewis B. Truesdell, and Daniel Rooker.

#### ORGANIZATION AND LIST OF OFFICERS.

This township, originally a part of Lafayette township, in the division in 1837 was made a part of South Haven. Again in 1845 it was set off from that township as a part of Columbia, then organized, and Jan. 5, 1854, it became a separate township by action of Board of Supervisors, by which body it was then

"Resolved, that township 1 south, range 16 west, situated at present in and belonging to the township of Columbia be, and the same is hereby set off from said township and organized into a new township by the name of the township of Geneva, and that the time and place for holding the first annual township-meeting in said township of Geneva shall be on the first Monday of April next, 1854, at the dwelling-house of Nathan Tubbs, on section 2, in said township, number 1 south, range 16 west, and that Nathan Tubbs, Clark Pierce, and Charles N. Hoag be and are hereby appointed to act as the Board of Inspectors of election to preside at said meeting."

Election was held accordingly on the 3d of April, 1854, when twenty-two votes were cast and the following officers elected: Supervisor, Nathan Tubbs; Township Treasurer, Philip M. Brooks; Township Clerk, Charles N. Hoag; Justices of the Peace, Eri Bennett, Leander J. Eastman, Jesse L. Lane, Philip Hoag; School Inspectors, Hiram Simmons, Francis M. Jones; Commissioners of Highways, Clark Pierce, Leander J. Eastman, Jesse L. Lane; Directors of the Poor, Eri Eaton, Clark Pierce.

The principal township officers from that time until the present have been those named in the following list:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1855-56, O. H. Burrows; 1857-58, Nathan Tubbs; 1859, Eri Bennett; 1860-61, Jerome B. Watson; 1862, Hubbard C. Pond; 1863, Jerome B. Watson; 1864, Abel Edgerton; 1865, V. D. Dille; 1866, Gideon Hall; 1867-68, Jerome B. Watson; 1869, S. M. Trowbridge; 1870-72, William R. Tolles; 1873-77, Jerome B. Watson; 1878-79, Goodwin S. Tolles.

#### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1855, Charles N. Hoag; 1856-57, Daniel D. Hathaway; 1858-60, Pomeroy Prince; 1861, F. M. Jones; 1862, J. G. Lafler; 1863, O. S. Hoag; 1864, J. G. Lafler; 1865-66, Samuel B. Phelps; 1867-68, Benson Paddock; 1869, J. G. Clark; 1870-71, James Martin; 1872-77, George H. Reeves; 1878, William A. Burlingame; 1879, George H. Reeves.

#### TREASURERS.

1855-60, Philip M. Brooks; 1861, Benjamin Clark; 1862, Philip M. Brooks; 1863, Henry Pease; 1864, James W. Peters; 1865-69, H. Wenban; 1870-72, Goodwin S. Tolles; 1873-78, James Martin; 1879, Gilbert Mitchell.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1855-56, Eri Bennett; 1857, Daniel D. Hathaway; 1858, Clark Pierce; 1859, Lewis B. Truesdell; 1860, Daniel Rooker; 1861, William Miller, Philip Hoag; 1862, Pierce M. Funk; 1863, Lewis B. Truesdell; 1864, Truman Fletcher, C. C. Terrill; 1865, F. Reeve, George McKenzie; 1866, Clark Pierce, Benjamin Knowles; 1867, Philip Hoag; 1868, J. N. Osborn; 1869, Jonathan T. Elliot, John N. Osborn; 1870, George McKenzie, Clark Pierce; 1871, John B. Hicks; 1872, Benjamin B. Clark; 1873, Clark Pierce, Edward S. Jelly; 1874, A. J. Wyman, Clark Pierce; 1875, John N. Osborn, John S. Hicks; 1876, Lucian F. Mace, George McKenzie; 1877, Philip Hoag, George McKenzie; 1878, George McKenzie; 1879, Edward S. Jelly.

#### SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1855-56, Clark Pierce; 1857, Charles N. Hoag; 1858, A. Edgerton; 1859, Lewis B. Truesdell; 1860, George McKenzie; 1861, Philip Hoag; 1862, H. A. Pond; 1863, Francis M. Jones; 1864, Manley B. Peters; 1865, C. H. Emerson, F. M. Schurz; 1866, Charles N. Hoag; 1867, Allen W. Davis; 1868, James Abbott; 1869, John N. Osborn; 1870, Benjamin F. Chapman; 1871, John N. Osborn; 1872, Francis R. Cady; 1873, Edward B. Jelly; 1874, Francis R. Cady; 1875, Aaron B. Gates; 1876, Irving W. Pierce; 1877-78, Charles H. Mace; 1879, James Martin.

#### SCHOOL SUPERINTENDENTS.

1875-76, John B. Hicks; 1877-79, John H. Tripp.

#### EARLY ROADS.

The first road laid out in the township was the road that crosses sections 32 and 30 diagonally, running in a north-wardly direction. It was laid out by Charles U. Cross and Judge Monroe, from Paw Paw to South Haven, in 1835, and was a continuation of the road from Prairie Ronde, laid out earlier. When the township was laid out the records of previous roads were transcribed from the Columbia records, March 30, 1853, as follows: Murch road, surveyed by Charles U. Cross, June 29, 1839; Stearling road, surveyed June 22, 1846; Eaton's road, surveyed June 25, 1846; Pierce's road, surveyed Dec. 14, 1846; Tubb's road, surveyed Oct. 5, 1852.

#### IRVINGTON.

Irvington is a hamlet on the line of the Kalamazoo and South Haven division of the Michigan Central Railroad, and lies in the northeast part of the township, in the centre of section 1. It was platted by Enoch Pease in July, 1871. It received its name from Irving Pierce, son of Clark Pierce, who was the first white child born in the township. It contains a Methodist church, depot, about thirty dwellings, three stores, steam-mill, coal-kiln, blacksmith- and wagon-shop.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school taught in the township was by Mrs. Caroline Miner, wife of Andrew Miner, about 1848, at her house. The pupils were the Eaton, Eastman, and Miner children. In the winter of 1849-50 a school was taught in the log house of Clark Pierce, by Laura Rogers, who was succeeded by Fanny Kidder. A school-house was built at Jericho by Marvin Hannahs, to induce emigrants to settle there, but some time elapsed before school was taught there. Ellen Fish was the first to teach in that house.

In the northeast quarter of the town Laura Pratt, now Mrs. Orrin S. Hoag, taught a school in 1853, in a rough shanty near Eri Eaton's. Angeline Foster, in the summer

of 1854, taught in a board cabin on Moses Welch's place. A school-house was erected about 1855 where the present school-house stands, in what is known as the Lull district. Mrs. Harriet Hoag, wife of Charles N. Hoag, and Augusta Smith, now Mrs. Benjamin Knowles, were both among the first teachers there. Soon after the organization of the township the taxable inhabitants met and petitioned the school inspectors to organize a school district. The petition was granted and signed by Francis M. Jones and Charles N. Hoag, inspectors. The petition for the first district was signed by B. Knowles, J. L. Lane, P. M. Brooks, O. S. Hoag, James Bates, Nathan Tubbs, M. Welch, and Henry Pease.

Feb. 24, 1855, a new district (No. 2) was formed by dividing District No. 1.

June 2, 1855, a school-house site was chosen on the northeast corner of the northwest quarter of section 11.

Oct. 6, 1855, the inspectors reported, as from District No. 1, 20 scholars between four and eighteen years of age, and voted to raise \$1 by tax for each scholar.

District No. 2 reported 17 scholars, and voted to raise \$180 for building a school-house, \$15 for contingent expenses, and \$17 for tuition purposes.

District No. 3 reported 6 scholars; no report of date of organization of this district.

Appropriation of school fund, 1857, \$25.97,—53 cents to each scholar,—District No. 1, \$10.60; District No. 2, \$12.19; District No. 3, \$3.18.

March 6, 1858, District No. 4 was organized, and was bounded by the base line on the north, town line on the west, sections 16, 17, 18 on the south, and sections 3 and 10 on the east.

The appropriation for 1857, as per taxes of 1856, are as follows (mill tax, \$81.07): District No. 1, \$22.89; District No. 2, \$26.31; District No. 3, \$6.87.

The township library was started while the township was a part of Columbia, and a subsequent division of books gave the new town a nucleus. At the present time the library numbers 251 volumes, 80 being purchased in 1878.

A list of the teachers receiving certificates from the inspectors from the organization of the town to 1868 is given, as follows:

1855.—Fanny Kidder, Jan. 26; same date, Angeline Foster; June 11, Amvietta Blood; April 15, Helen M. Fish.

1856.—Nov. 1, Wm. M. Welch; Nov. 7, Israel P. Boles.

1857.—May 1, Ruth Hunt; May 18, Mary E. Welch.

1858.—April 24, Augusta Smith; May 15, Lucinda E. Young.

1859.—April 30, Evaline Fellows; May 2, Sarah Shaver; Nov. 26, Sarah Young.

1860.—Nov. 5, Henry C. Rowman; Nov. 22, Francis M. Jones; Nov. 25, Olivia Kleckner.

1861.—April 15, Mary H. Briggs; May 18, Sarah A. Peacock; June 1, Amanda Raven; June 7, Aldena Hoag; July 15, Aurelia Ellsworth; Nov. 2, Mary Lulte; Nov. 18, Helen Ailsworth; Dec. 9, James Southard.

1862.—April 12, Eliza Clark; April 26, Adaline Deming; Nov. 1, Kate C. Peters, Martha E. Grover.

1863.—May 25, Mary A. Rowland; Nov. 9, Rebecca A. Burlingame; Dec. 2, Emily A. Loomis; Dec. 19, Helen M. Pool.

1864.—May 24, Georgia Williams; Nov. 5, Cordelia Worrall, Hannah Cross, Laura Pierce; Nov. 12, Aurelia Stillwell; Dec. 17, Aristene E. Metcalf.

1865.—April 8, Susan A. Cassidy; May 3, Janet Huribut; Nov. 4, Gideon Hall; Nov. 25, Carrie Longwell, Marion Balfour.

1866.—Jan. 6, Fanny Peacock; March 31, Mary Penrod; April 28, Ellen Chapin; May 19, Hattie Shaw, Hattie Fuller; Nov. 3, Laura Mayberry, Emmeline Rowley.

1867.—Jan. 12, Lettie Cornwall; Feb. 9, Elsie A. Crowell; March 16, Theresa Dean.

The following school statistics of the township are from the directors' report for 1879:

District.	Number of Children between 5 and 20 Years.	Number of Frame Houses.	Seating Capacity.	Value of Property.	Number of Teachers.	Wages of Teachers.
No. 1.	105	1	50	\$400	3	\$285
No. 2.	54	1	60	1000	3	152
No. 3.	37	1	32	350	1	150
No. 4.	73	1	80	1800	2	138
No. 5.	52	1	135	500	2	215
No. 6.	58	1	60	800	2	168
No. 7.	63	1	50	100	1	132
Total.....	442	7	467	\$4950	14	\$1240

#### RECEIPTS.

District.	Moneys on hand Sept. 1879.	Two-Mill Tax.	Primary-School Fund.	District Taxes for all purposes.	Raised from other sources.	Total Resources for the Year.
No. 1.	\$59.00	\$110.90	.....	\$158.24	\$1.00	\$329.14
No. 2.	1003.32	51.84	\$22.88	115.35	14.00	311.39
No. 3.	50.53	59.36	28.94	57.00	.....	195.83
No. 4.	6.16	79.68	37.92	92.50	19.75	236.01
No. 5.	128.39	60.60	33.12	48.53	17.25	287.29
No. 6.	22.66	62.62	28.32	159.38	29.75	302.73
No. 7.	14.96	.....	31.68	130.00	16.50	193.14
Total.....	\$385.02	\$524.40	\$182.86	\$761.00	\$97.35	\$1854.53

#### EXPENDITURES.

District.	Paid Teachers.	Paid all other purposes.	Amount on hand Sept. 1, 1879.	Total Expenditure during the Year.
No. 1.	\$285.00	\$21.51	\$21.63	\$328.14
No. 2.	152.00	68.74	90.65	311.39
No. 3.	150.00	33.85	11.98	195.83
No. 4.	138.80	49.50	47.71	236.01
No. 5.	215.00	20.10	52.19	287.29
No. 6.	168.00	40.41	92.82	302.73
No. 7.	132.00	11.05	50.09	193.14
Total.....	\$1240.80	\$245.16	\$367.07	\$1854.53

The school directors for 1879 were Jerome B. Watson, Samuel Johnson, Isaac M. Saunders, W. W. Hodge, A. A. Hough, Lewis D. Port, Levi Ackley.

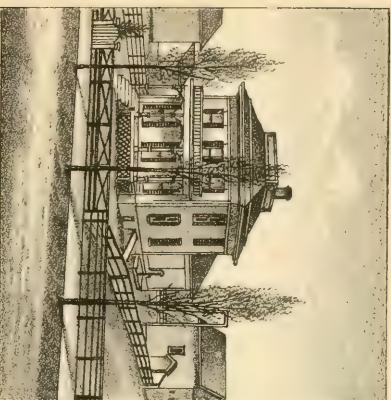
#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*Methodist Church.*—The first preacher in the township—one of the Methodist denomination—was the Rev. J. H. Robinson, who formed a class at the log house of Nathan Tubbs at the same time, March, 1854. The constituent members of that class were Nathan Tubbs and wife, Moses Welch and wife, Mrs. Harriet Hoag, Mrs. Catharine Miner, Mrs. Charles Davy, and Philip Hoag.

The circuit that included this territory embraced Breeds-ville, Bangor, Watervliet, Coloma, and St. Joseph. The ministers who succeeded Mr. Robinson on the circuit were the Revs. Thomas Clark, Hendrickson, Blowers, Rodgers, E. L. Kellogg, I. Skinner, Paddock, Thomas Clark, J. Odin, — Harper, — Van Fossen, Jaynes, and Lawrence, the present pastor. The church has about 80 members, with a Sunday-school containing 60 pupils,—Adam White, superintendent. The church was built at Irvington in the summer of 1876, at a cost of \$800.

A Methodist class was started at Chambers' school-house in 1875, at the close of a revival, under the charge of the Rev. E. H. Mackinney. The class is under the charge of the South Haven Church, and has been supplied with



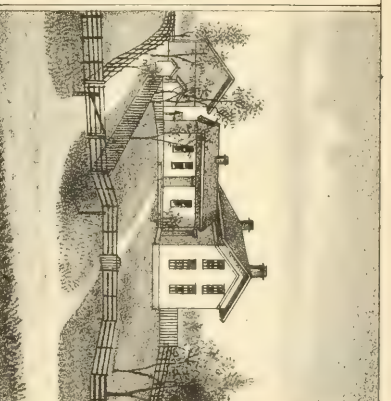


IRON WORKS OF J. H. BLYDEN, MICH.

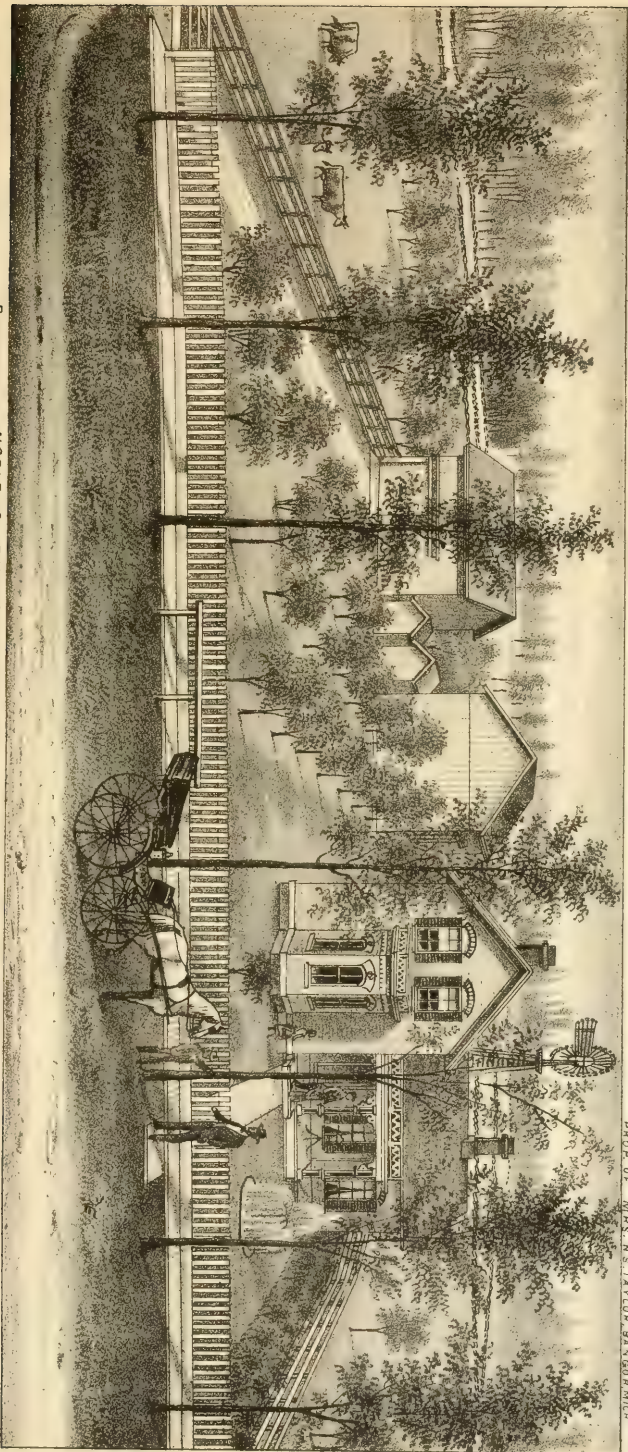


N. S. TAYLOR.

MRS. N. S. TAYLOR.



HOME OF MRS. N. S. TAYLOR, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.



RESIDENCE OF NOBLE S. TAYLOR, GENEVA TWP., VAN BUREN CO., MICHIGAN.



preaching by the Revs. H. Parker, W. A. Huhnberger, and N. D. Carroll. It has at present 15 members.

*Evangelical Association.*—The society was organized about 1872, as a branch of the Bangor Mission. Clarkson Cone and his wife were the only members. Additions were soon made to the number, and the Rev. David Roland was the first pastor, succeeded by the Revs. — Dewitt, Asel Russell, John Smaroz, George Provost, and John Snyder, the present pastor. Meetings are held at the Lee school-house, and the society now numbers 33 members, who reside in the townships of Lee, Casco, and Geneva.

A Free-Will Baptist Society was organized about 1855 or 1856, at what was early known as Eatonburg. The Rev. Mr. Burrows became their pastor. He was succeeded by the Rev. Mr. Myers. The society continued ten or twelve years and then declined.

In the fall of 1876 a Baptist Society was organized at the Geneva Centre school-house, with 9 members, by the Rev. George S. Martin. They now number 12 members, and still hold their services at the school-house.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### GILMAN AND PHILENA WHITE.

Peregrine White was born on the "Mayflower" in 1620, before the landing at Plymouth Rock. Nicholas White was a grandson of Peregrine White; married a Miss Gilman in 1725. Ebenezer White, second son of Nicholas, was born in Haverhill, Mass., in December, 1731. He married Hannah Merrill, by whom he had seven children,—three sons and four daughters. His wife dying, he married a second time, marrying for his second wife Ruth Emerson, by whom he had eleven children,—eight sons and three daughters. Gilman White, Sr., the ninth son of Ebenezer White, was born in Newburg, Vt., June 21, 1783. Gilman White, Jr., was born in Topsham, Vt., Dec. 4, 1812, and was the eldest in Gilman White, Sr.'s family of five sons and three daughters, of whom Adam White was the youngest. Adam, Gilman, and William B., another brother, all married sisters,—Adam marrying Ruth Eastman, Gilman, Nancy Eastman, and William B. marrying Philena Eastman, who, after the death of her husband, William B. White, which occurred in Black Brook, Clinton Co., N. Y., came to Irvington, where she has since resided. Aside from John D. White, who resides in Kalamazoo, and a sister, Mrs. Nathan Bigelow, who is also a resident in Kalamazoo, all of the other members of the family, except those named, have remained in the East.

We give upon another page a view of the residences of Gilman and Mrs. Philena White, at Irvington; a general store which is conducted by them also appears in the same view, together with a view of the depot and church. Adam White is prosecuting a large business in the manufacture of charcoal at Irvington, which is the principal industry there.

Although only for about three years have the above named resided at Irvington, yet they have become well known throughout that section of Van Buren County for enterprise, energy, together with ability, uprightness, and public spirit.

### N. S. TAYLOR

is the son of Daniel and Phoebe (Churchill) Taylor, and was born in Litchfield Co., Conn., in 1829. When an infant his parents removed to Brockport, Monroe Co., N. Y., where they lived eight years, removing to Bangor, Mich., Dec. 25, 1837, being among the first that made a permanent settlement there. As evidence of the unimproved condition of the country then, Mr. Taylor states that they frequently supplied their table with venison by shooting deer from the door, and often saw wolves near the house. The first winter was one of difficulties, but having taken up one hundred and forty acres of land, he (Daniel Taylor) proceeded to improve it, and always took an active part in all local improvements until his death, which occurred Jan. 9, 1865. His wife still survives, and has reached the age of eighty-nine, residing with a daughter near Lawrence.

N. S. Taylor was the youngest of the sons, and after becoming of age passed three years traveling in the West. Starting from Galena, Ill., went to California, where he arrived in 1852; remained four years, which were profitable ones to him. Returning in 1856, purchased one hundred and twenty acres of land near the old homestead in Bangor, and not only made fine improvements upon his own property, but has taken a prominent part in the general advancement of the township; has acted as an official for the same in several capacities, but has been much interested in its improvements, particularly in the erection of a Methodist church, contributing largely in that direction. Also contributed to the erection of the Bangor furnace and the railroad, and to the establishment of the press. Was a zealous supporter of whatever related to the Sunday-school interests, in fact using the means he had acquired in promoting the general good as well as his own interests.

In 1876 he wedded Mrs. Mary Smith, a very estimable lady residing in Bangor, visiting on their wedding tour all the principal Eastern cities and public resorts, and on their return purchased an elegant residence in the village of Bangor. Also bought a banking institution, with its interests, which he made a financial success. After two years an opportunity to dispose of this business was offered, which he accepted, and removed to his present residence in Geneva.

Mrs. Taylor's parents, John and Eleanor (Parrish) McNett, were natives of New York, and moved to Monroe Co., Mich., afterwards to Texas township, Kalamazoo Co., where Mrs. Taylor was born. When seventeen years of age she was married to Butler M. Smith, of Prairie Ronde, Kalamazoo Co.; moved to Kankakee, Ill., where their first son was born. After remaining there two years removed to Bangor, and purchased a farm of two hundred acres. Here three boys and one girl were born to them. They continued to reside on their farm until the death of Mr. Smith, who was a man not only loved and revered by his family and friends, but respected by all that knew him.





CLARK PIERCE.



MRS. CLARK PIERCE.

Photos. by Northup, Bangor.

## CLARK PIERCE

was born in Marlborough, Vt., in 1814, and lived with his parents, Joseph and Sally (Bartlett) Pierce, until his mother's death, which occurred when he was ten years old. In 1832, Clark made his advent in the State of Michigan, stopping first in St. Clair County, where he remained two years, removing thence to Prairie Ronde, Kalamazoo Co., and finally bought of J. R. Monroe a quarter-section of land on section 32, in the present township of Geneva, Van Buren Co., where he still resides. This purchase he made during the winter of 1837-38, paying twenty shillings per acre, thereby incurring an indebtedness which required some time to remove. He married Mary S. Roys, of Brady, Kalamazoo Co., Mrs. Pierce thereby acquiring the distinction of being the first resident white woman of Geneva township, Mr. Pierce being the first settler. There they have remained, witnessing the growth and development of the country about them, and have reared and educated their children, of whom they had six, viz., Almon J., Irving, Laura, Quincy, Gertrude, and Etta. Quincy died when twenty-three years of age. The rest are living in the vicinity of the old home, making the last years of their parents their best years.

The first school taught in Geneva was at their house, three terms having expired before a school-house was built.

His place was twenty-three miles from Paw Paw, the location of the nearest mill and post-office, and it required about three days to make the trip. He, as an employee, aided in building the first frame house in South Haven, living in it about eight months.

Almon J. Pierce enlisted in Company G, 19th Michigan Infantry, was taken sick, and re-enlisted, from convalescent camp, in Ellet's Marine Brigade of the Mississippi River, where he participated in the siege of Vicksburg. On returning from the army, he entered the State Agricultural College, remaining two years. His studies included the rudiments of surveying; and, leaving before completing the course, he began the practice of land-surveying in Van Buren and Allegan Counties. His success in this line gained him

the election of county surveyor in 1869, which position he has since filled, excepting one term.

Irving W. was a member of the 28th Illinois Infantry; was at Mobile; returning from the service, as did Almon J., uninjured.

Mr. Pierce was first a Whig, then an Abolitionist, and now a Republican. The family attend the Congregational Church, and are firm advocates of the principles of temperance. Mr. Pierce is known as one of the landmarks of Van Buren County. His name is familiar in every household, and he is eminently a self-made man.

## CHAPTER LX.

## HARTFORD TOWNSHIP.\*

Boundaries and General Description—Indian Occupancy—Early Settlements and Settlers—Organization and Township Officers—Post-Offices and Postmasters—The Village of Hartford—Societies and Orders—Schools—Religious Societies.

The township, lying in the southwest part of the county, is composed of 36 full sections, and is known as town 3 south, range 16 west. It is bounded on the north by the township of Bangor, on the east by Lawrence, on the south by Keeler, and on the west by the township of Watervliet, in Berrien County.

The surface is gently undulating, and originally was covered with a heavy growth of timber, consisting mostly of black walnut, beech, maple, ash, white and basswood, interspersed with oak, elm, and a little pine.

The soil through the centre from east to west along the line of the old Watervliet road is quite sandy. The south part of the township and that part north of the Paw Paw River is of a rich sandy loam, with a slight admixture of clay, and is equal in productiveness to any soil in the State. The valley of the Paw Paw River is narrow, and is composed of rich alluvium. The township is well watered by

\* By A. N. Hungerford.

the Paw Paw River and its branches, and by Rush Lake, which lies in this and the adjoining township of Bangor. The Paw Paw River enters on the south part of section 1, and flows southerly to the south line of section 11, then, in a winding course, westerly, and passes out of the township in the middle of section 18. The two larger branches rise in the southeast portion of the town, and flow in a northerly course, one making a junction on section 14, the other on the southwest part of section 8. One also rises in Bangor, with two or three branches, and joins the river at the east line of section 9. The Paw Paw River is a meandering stream as far as the forks below the village of Paw Paw, and in an early day was much used for shipping lumber and flour in flat-boats to St. Joseph. Mineral springs abound along the river, and on the farm of Fabius Miles, near the west line of section 12, is a sulphur spring, which issues from a mound about four feet above the level of the surrounding land.

#### INDIAN OCCUPANCY.

When the first white settlers began to locate in this section of country, bands of *Pottawatamies*, *Ottawas*, and a few *Chippewas* were quite numerous, and were roving over the country, settling (or rather camping) in different parts in different seasons. In the spring of the year they gathered near the large maple-groves to make sugar. The *sis-bah-quet* (sugar) they would exchange with the *che-mo-ke man* (white man) for such articles as they wanted, which generally was, first, whisky, next, whisky, then *quash-que* (bread) and *koo-koo-sh* (pork). The largest of these sugar "orchards" was in the southeast part of the town, on sections 23 and 24, from the Brown and Dowd neighborhood east to the Shafer and Johnson farms. Another was on the north side of the river, below Fabius Miles', on section 12, extending west down the river to the De Long neighborhood, and other smaller groves were in various parts of the town.

In the summer season they moved their wigwams to the borders of berry swamps and near good fishing. The largest of these berry swamps was in the southeast part of the town, on the northeast quarter of section 35, near Orson Olds. Another was in the northwest part of the town, on the west line and north of the river.

In the fall season they gathered on the lowlands, and selected a place for their wigwams in the heavy timber, where they were protected from the wind. The game was principally deer, wild turkeys, and the fur-bearing animals.

The most of the Indians were removed in 1838; a few remained and some returned, and in 1842 were again removed. Remnants of these tribes now live near Rush Lake, and in the townships of Hartford, Bangor, Covert, and Watervliet, at their intersection. They are mostly Catholics, and have a church at the south end of Rush Lake, which is attended by Father J. Roeper, of Silver Creek. A cemetery is near the church. The first church was built of logs, and was for many years attended by Father Barron, of Silver Creek. Within a few years a number of white families in the adjacent townships have become attached to the church. About ten families living in this township are members.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS.

The section of country embraced in this township was not surveyed until several years after its cession by the Chicago treaty of 1821. About 1829 the lands were first opened for settlement, and emigrants from Ohio, Pennsylvania, and the Eastern States began to flow in slowly along the St. Joseph River. Several years after, settlers began to press back from the river, and locate and clear the land. At that time the section of country all along the western slope north of St. Joseph and Benton Harbor was almost a complete wilderness, and Hartford was the home only of Indians and wild animals.

Not far from 1835 a noted hunter and trapper by the name of Harvey Saulsbury came first into what is now the township of Hartford, and built a cabin of basswood logs, with roof of bark, on the bank of the creek on the southwest quarter of section 14, on the farm of John N. Travis. This cabin was occupied by him in his hunting trips, in which he ranged the line of swamps from the Dowagiac to the Black River. There were no white settlers for a long distance, and this cabin was built as a half-way house between the northern and southern points of his range. His summers were mostly spent at Niles, and as the hunting and trapping season came on he started out, dressed in deer-skin trousers, blouse, and slouch hat, with his rifle on his shoulder and a load of traps on his back, would make his way to this place, and generally remain here till spring, occasionally going to Paw Paw to exchange his furs for articles to sell to the Indians. He continued his hunting and trapping excursions till about 1844-45.

As early as 1835 a man known as "South Bend Taylor" was in the habit of passing through this section of country about three times in the course of the winter, and gathering furs of hunters and Indians. He traveled generally on foot, and when his burdens were gathered they were either packed on Indian ponies and sent out to the settlements, or down the river to St. Joseph. He now lives at South Bend, Ind., and is over eighty years of age.

It is said that two men named Duncan and Sumner about 1828, before any settlements were in this section, followed up Paw Paw River as far as Watervliet, and built a saw-mill under the bluff, on the south side of the Paw Paw River, using the water of Mill Creek. This was near the mill of the Watervliet Mill Company. At about the same time three brothers by the name of Stone bought a tract of land in the northwest part of this township, on sections 5 and 8, for the timber. They cleared land for the logs, which were manufactured into lumber at the mill below. This continued for a short time, when a flood filled the raceway with sand; then they all left here, and their shanties became an Indian rendezvous. Sumner went to Cass County, where he was the founder of Sumnerville. The Stone brothers years afterwards sold their lands to Alvah De Long, for five shillings per acre, receiving their pay in lumber. It is now occupied by Asher and Allen De Long.

About Sept. 1, 1835, John Allen, a native of Vermont, left Ann Arbor for West Michigan, and located a number of lots in Van Buren County, established stage-routes; built mills, did business on the credit system, and failed. Mr.

Allen, Edwin Barnum, and Ephraim Palmer built a log house on the bluff bank of Brush Creek, about forty rods north of the present union school-house of Lawrence. Mr. Allen, not being satisfied with moderate profits and steady business, was seized with the speculative mania, and located a number of lots of land on what is now known as Hog Creek, about a mile east of Hartford village. He platted this land into lots and started an imaginary village, calling it Middletown. A good story is told in connection with the village, about as follows:\*

In 1836, Mr. Allen attempted to establish a stage-route from Paw Paw to St. Joseph, *via* Brush Creek, Middletown, and Waterford (Watervliet). Some five or six families who had gathered at Brush Creek, having heard of Middletown, supposed it to be quite a village, and some of the men of the settlement proposed to visit it. The company consisted of about half a dozen ragged men and as many barefooted boys; but one of the company, John Mellen, a Mohawk Dutchman, being rather more destitute of clothing than the rest, felt a little ashamed to go among strangers, when Humphrey Barnum offered to lend him a coat. Mellen accepted, and the company started out, passing a little south of where Holland Clark now lives. They soon struck the hills, and after going up and down for about half a mile, came to what seemed to be the last place in creation, being a deep hollow, about forty rods across and fifty or sixty feet below the land around it; and as much of the timber in and around it was pine, the name of Pine Hollow was given to it. Climbing out of this they soon came to Mud Lake, and a little farther west passed Sutton's Lake and came to the great Indian trail which passed through the country north and south from Pokagon to Lake Michigan, crossing the Paw Paw River at Sturgeon Ripple, and through the Indian settlements in Bangor, striking the lake at South Haven. A little west of this they crossed the town line, which brought the party into a town not yet settled by a white man. Working their way through brush, over logs, and across small streams, they reached Middletown Creek, and crossing it, took a seat upon the bank where the barn stands on the Bouvier place. There the party partook of their lunch, when Barnum told Mellen he would show him the village, and going a few rods he introduced him to the public square and other imaginary localities and business places, and also to the leading settlers, which were none other than mosquitoes, and he thought they had made themselves acquainted at least with some of the family. The joke was relished by the whole company, and was the source of considerable sport for years afterwards. The party, after surveying the village and its surroundings for a few hours, returned home tired and hungry, but entirely satisfied with their inspection trip to the new village.

With all the inducements offered, Middletown failed to realize the hopes of its projectors, and it was not even used for farm-lands for many years after.

Upon the failure of Mr. Allen a Mr. Grant, of Oswego, N. Y., came into possession of it by foreclosure of the mortgage, and long after Sylvanus Casselman bought the

land. Mr. Allen was a pioneer in three States,—Michigan, Iowa, and California. He was State senator from Washtenaw County in 1847–48, and in 1850 went to California, where he died.

The first actual settlers in the township were Ferdino Olds and family, consisting of his wife and daughter Julia (now Mrs. Ansel E. Reynolds). Mr. Olds was a native of Cayuga Co., N. Y., emigrated to this place in December, 1836, and located land on the middle of the north half of section 29, where W. H. Haven now lives. On coming through to the place the family stopped at the house of Lyman G. Hill (who was the nearest settler and lived in the northeast part of Keeler township) while he put up a small log cabin, which was completed Jan. 25, 1837, on which day the family moved into it. Here they lived a short time, but the family increased so rapidly that a larger house had to be built, and a family of ten children were raised, nine of whom are living. Mr. Olds died in October, 1856.

His brothers, Hezekiah and John, came in soon after. The latter settled on the southwest quarter of section 29, adjoining Ferdino; Hezekiah was (and is still) a bachelor and lived with John; Orson settled south of John on the same quarter-section, and lives now in the village. His farm was sold to Sylvester McNitt. Ira and Harry came in later. Ira settled on section 28, where William Day resides, and now lives in Keeler, near the north line. Harry was a carpenter. He lived here a few years and returned to New York. Edwin R. Olds, a son of Orson, married Harriet, a daughter of Ferdino Olds, and in 1858 bought the farm now owned by A. N. Spaulding on the northeast quarter of section 28, and was engaged in farming and lumbering for several years. He removed to the village and built the first hotel, known as the Olds House. He is now engaged in buying stock, grain, and wool, and is one of the foremost business men in the town. Ransom and Allen Olds are sons of Orson, and are engaged in the manufacture of sash, doors, and blinds, and are also building contractors.

Henry Hammond was the next settler, and located on the southeast quarter of section 34, where Mr. E. B. Greenfield lived. He erected a cabin for temporary use in the spring of 1837, where he lived till about the middle of May. Mr. and Mrs. Hammond unitedly worked together in building a log house 16 by 22, and moved into it as soon as completed. In this house, Jan. 3, 1838, a daughter was born to them, who was the first child born in the township. This was Catharine Hammond, afterwards the wife of Hiram E. Stratton.

Thomas Conklin, a native of Rutland, Jefferson Co., N. Y., came to Kalamazoo in 1834, but not liking the country returned to New York. In November, 1836, in company with his brother James and a Mr. Sellick, he came back to Kalamazoo. They had with them a yoke of oxen and a wagon. The first night in the wilderness was passed under many difficulties; they felled a large beech-tree, and building a fire against it cooked their food. They slept on the ground with the wagon-box turned over them. Snow fell during the night to the depth of two feet, and continued the next day, and the weather getting colder

\* This story and some of the incidents of the pioneers are gleaned from articles contributed by Luther Sutton in the *Day Spring* as historical notes, pioneer sketches, etc.





THOMAS CONKLIN.



MRS. THOMAS CONKLIN.



RESIDENCE OF THOMAS CONKLIN, HARTFORD TWP., VAN BUREN CO., MICH.



they decided to go to Battle Creek. While at Kalamazoo, in the fall of 1836, Thomas Conklin in behalf of himself, James his brother, Mr. Sellick, Burrell A. Olney, and James Spinnings, all schoolmates and associates, entered about 1000 acres of land and paid for it. The most of the members of this company were still in the East, and did not come out till the spring of 1837. In February of 1837, James Conklin and Mr. Sellick, with the assistance of Thomas, put up their log houses on sections 5 and 6 in Keeler township.

In March, 1837, B. A. Olney and James Spinnings came from the East, and they, together with Thomas Conklin, erected on Mr. Conklin's land a log cabin, 12 feet by 12, in which they lived together six weeks, chopping and clearing land, doing their own cooking. The furniture was rude, as was usual in those days; the only tool of the time was the axe. Marsh hay was gathered to fill an old tick to make a bed,—the three occupied the same bed, with two blankets for covering. About the 1st of May the party separated. After getting the land cleared, corn and potatoes planted, and a new log house built, Thomas Conklin returned to the East, married, and returned to the new home about the 1st of October, 1837. Mrs. Conklin was a teacher in the East, and here, in this new log house, the first children of Hartford township were gathered together and taught by her. Before the organization of this township, Gen. Chadwick, Mr. Conklin, and Orrin Sykes were the first school inspectors.

In 1839, Hezekiah Olds employed Thomas Conklin to erect for him a log house, 18 by 24 feet, in consideration for which service he was to receive a cow. The work was completed in thirteen days. Mr. Olds raked up the chips the same day and set them on fire, which not only burned the chips but the house also. Mr. Conklin lives near the village, and his son Luke on a farm adjoining. Luke was the first male child born in town, Dec. 3, 1838.

Burrell A. Olney, James Spinnings, and Thomas Conklin arrived in Hartford on the 14th of March, 1837, their land having been selected previously on part of the southwest quarter and west half of section 33. Mention is made of the selection of land and their first few weeks' labor together on another page. After the separation on the 1st of May, each commenced for himself. Mr. Spinnings lived with Mr. Olney, and died May 2, 1841, his being the first death in the township. By the 1st of June they had cleared six acres of timber and planted it to corn and potatoes. Mr. Olney returned to Jefferson Co., N. Y., and in the September following returned to the farm with his family, and for about a year did the work of the farm without a team. In the fall of 1838 he purchased a pair of oxen, which were used about ten years in the clearing up and logging incident to all new land in a timber country. He is a man of great physical energy and business ability, and has kept pace with the progress of the country. He left the farm about fifteen years ago and formed a partnership which became the firm of Swain, Olney & Co., in the village of Watervliet, entered into a large lumbering business, and is to-day engaged in buying grain, wool, and other produce. He is connected with his son Horace and Edwin R. Olds.

In 1837 or '38, George Washington Springer settled

near the southwest quarter of the township. His occupation was hunting, trapping, and fishing. He was noted for his success as a hunter and for telling stories which had a Munchausen flavor, and of which Springer was generally the hero. He moved away after about five years.

Rufus Sayers, of Wayne Co., N. Y., was one of the surveying-party who surveyed this section of country, and in 1836 he located the northwest quarter of section 24 and made arrangements with — Wetherby to clear 20 acres, for which he was to receive an eighty-acre lot. Wetherby made a clearing, built a log house, and lived there for a time, but soon left it. Sayers returned to New York, and in 1843 exchanged the land in Michigan with a neighbor, Horace Dowd, for land there, placing the value of this land at \$5 per acre. Mr. Dowd, who was a native of Massachusetts and had emigrated with his father's family to Wayne Co., N. Y., in 1828, came in the spring of 1844 to the farm he had purchased, with his family, consisting of his wife and three children. The farm was in a neglected condition, and about the first thing done was to burn the log cabin, which was nearly rotted down. Saplings had grown up in the clearing, and the place was as rough as at first. He was active in the organization of the Baptist Church in Hartford, and died July 4, 1870. His widow and sons, Jefferson S., Henry H., and daughter, Mary L. (now Mrs. A. H. Brown), all live on or near the first settled farm.

Robert Wilcox and Henry Miner, about 1837, settled on section 17,—Wilcox, where Z. K. Stickney now lives, and Miner across the road. They remained but a short time.

Smith Johnson settled on section 17, and in 1843 sold to William Thomas, a native of Washington Co., N. Y., who came to Hartford in 1843, and bought 50 acres on section 17, of Smith Johnson, where he still lives. He married a daughter of Ira Allen. He was elected to the Legislature in 1875, to fill a vacancy caused by the death of B. J. Geckley; was supervisor in 1844, and has held the office of justice of the peace for many years.

Caleb Johnson, brother of Smith, lived adjoining, and removed to Illinois about 1844. One Snay, a French Canadian, lived near the Johnsons for a few years. In the fall of 1837 William Everett and his son Richard B. came in and settled on section 26, in the southwest quarter, and Peter Williamson lived adjoining; the latter still lives on the place, Everett in Keeler. Alexander Newton settled on section 13. In March, 1839, Joseph Ruggles, with his family, emigrated from Huron Co., Ohio, in a wagon drawn by a yoke of oxen, and settled on the southeast quarter of section 31, where H. S. Jennings now lives.

In 1839, Alvah De Long, a native of St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., settled 40 acres in the northeast quarter of section 29, purchased of Ferdino Olds, where J. D. Robinson now lives; later, he bought the pine woods on the school section, and commenced the manufacture of shingles. Afterwards, in 1846, he bought the Stow property, and in 1850 he moved to California, where he died. His brothers, Asher and Allen De Long, own the property, the latter living on the farm, the former in the village of Hartford. Francis De Long, the father of the above, came to this town and



lived with his sons. He was a Revolutionary soldier, and died in the one hundred and third year of his age.

Ira Allen, a native of Vermont, emigrated to near Buffalo before the war of 1812, and was a soldier in the army at the time the British crossed to burn Buffalo, where he was wounded. He afterwards moved to Michigan, settling on the river Raisin, where he remained two years, then returning to New York. In 1835 he removed to Ann Arbor; to Lawrence in 1837, and to Hartford in 1839, locating on the north half of section 21, where James Beny now lives. He died about 1875, and was buried in the village cemetery. Four children are living,—Ira W., who opened a store at the village in 1855, and has been in business from that time to the present; Mary, the wife of William Thomas; Lucy, the widow of James Griffin; and William, who lives in California.

Josiah Hill settled on the east part of section 13. He was also from St. Lawrence County, and with Cornelius Williams bought out Alexander Newton.

Charles P. Sheldon, a native of Watertown, Jefferson Co., N. Y., came to this township in the fall of 1841; he was the first settler north of the Paw Paw River, and located on section 2. At that time remnants of the *Pottawattamies* and of the *Ottawas* lived near him, including Commodah, a war-chief of the *Ottawas*, with his sons, Fixwaxie, Paw Paw, and Nottawawas, also Watbimneto and his family, of the *Pottawattamies*. Mr. Sheldon returned to New York, and in the spring of 1842 brought on his family. The following spring he was elected supervisor, and during that year succeeded in getting a vote of the people to build a bridge across the Paw Paw River on section 10. He filled the office of supervisor several terms, and was justice of the peace eleven years consecutively. In 1852 he was elected from this county as representative for the session of 1853-54. He moved to Tipton, Cedar Co., Iowa, in 1855, and has since served that State in the Legislature.

The only road cut through this township was the old Watervliet road that ran from Paw Paw to St. Joseph, and was used as a mail-route. This was cut through in 1837 by the commissioners of Lawrence.

In the fall of 1836, 32 men, 28 of whom were Canadian Frenchmen, came to Watervliet from Jefferson Co., N. Y., in the employ of Smith, Merrick & Co., to work on the improvements they were then making in the construction of mills, digging a race, and clearing land, on the spot where, eight years before, Duncan & Sumner had their mill. The old race was cleaned of sand and was enlarged. Of this party were Felix Rasset, Sirell Rasset, A. P. Pinney, and Edward Eber. Soon after their coming in A. P. Pinney purchased large tracts, among which were section 13, and four eighths on section 17. In 1841, Felix Rasset purchased of Mr. Pinney the northeast quarter of section 17. A short time after, Sirell Rasset bought where Z. K. Stickney now owns, and Edward Eber on section 16; Eber went to California about 1860, returned, and now lives in the village. Felix Rasset built a frame house on the Watervliet road, in the fall of 1843. He now keeps the Rasset House in the village of Hartford.

The next spring Bartholomew Showrie settled at what is

now the village. He remained several years, and removed to Kansas. In that year occurred the first wedding, and it was quickly followed by two others. Thomas Kemp, of Bangor, was married to Mehitable Cone, a sister of Mrs. Ferdino Olds, on the 22d day of September, 1844, at the house of Mr. Olds. About the same time James Griffin and Lucy Allen, daughter of Ira Allen, and Edward Eber and Abigail Mellen were married at the house of Ira Allen, on the farm now occupied by James Beany. William Thomas and Thomas Conklin were present, and both being justices of the peace, each married a couple. The bridal parties went to Watervliet, joined Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Kemp, and held a wedding-feast together.

The Allen lands, located by John Allen in 1835, passed to a Mr. Grant, and subsequently became the property of the Ostrom Company, of which Courtlandt Palmer was the principal and Bela Hubbard, of Detroit, agent. In 1852, Job Dunham, and John and Lyman McNitt purchased of the Ostrom Company 240 acres on section 15, the west half of northeast quarter and northwest quarter. Mr. Dunham sold the west half of the northwest quarter to Andrew Bartlett; John McNitt sold the east half of the northwest quarter to one Percival; Lyman McNitt sold to James Griffin the south half of the west quarter of northwest quarter, and to Griffin and Almon A. Olds the northwest quarter of the northwest quarter.

In 1854, Roswell Hart, a native of Connecticut, emigrated to this place, having purchased of Courtlandt Palmer, of New York, the northwest quarter of section 15 and the contract of James Griffin. A part of the Hart farm is in the Olds addition. Mr. Hart was supervisor from 1871 to 1874, inclusive. In 1875, Mr. Hart moved to the southeast quarter of section 14, where he still resides.

During the year 1844, Ralph Taylor and his sons, Howland C. and Emory O. Taylor, and three sisters, natives of Rutland, Jefferson Co., N. Y., settled on the south half of section 4, and Austin Beaman, of St. Lawrence Co., N. Y., on land adjoining on the west. Howland C. Taylor lives now on the northeast quarter of section 20, and Emory O. Taylor in Wayne, Cass Co. Paul Weibar lived north of the river, also in the southwest quarter of section 11.

Fabius Miles, a native of Watertown, Jefferson Co., N. Y., taught school in that place for twelve years, and emigrated to this town in May, 1844, locating 300 acres on the west half of section 12, intersected by the river. On the northwest quarter of the section a water-power was fitted up, and improved in the autumn of that year. The first saw-mill in the township was built at this place, and completed about April 10, 1847.

Mr. Miles was supervisor in 1852, member of the Legislature of 1859-60, and has filled other positions with credit. He still lives on the farm he first settled. Wright, a son, is living in Colorado.

Abram Yates came with Roswell Hart from Monroe Co., N. Y., at the same time, and settled on the east half of the southwest quarter of section 15, where Clark Sampson now lives. He now resides in Watervliet.

Melville Hathaway in 1854 lived in the village, on the corner where now stands the Masonic block. He was lost on the steamer "Hippocampus," in Lake Michigan.

Harlow Griffin, a brother of James, lived on the site of the old *Day Spring* office.

Hilliard in the fall of 1854 came to the village of Hartford, and settled on section 15. He was one of the party that formed the original plat of the village, in 1859. He still lives in the village.

Truman Stratton, a native of Vermont, emigrated from Chautauqua Co., N. Y., in the spring of 1858, and purchased on the west side of centre line of section 16.

#### ORGANIZATION AND TOWNSHIP OFFICERS.

When this part of the Territory of Michigan was divided into counties, in 1829, the territory now called Van Buren County was set off and attached to Cass County for judicial purposes; and the township of Lafayette was formed March 25, 1835, comprising the territory of Van Buren County.\*

By an act approved March 11, 1837, this township was divided into seven towns, of which Lawrence was one, and included the present towns of Lawrence, Hartford, and Arlington. At the same time the township of Covington was formed, and included Keeler and Hamilton. In 1838 these townships were organized from that town; and Keeler also embraced in its new organization town 3 south, range 16 west (now Hartford), but in the spring of 1840 this was set off and made a separate township. It was first intended to be called Hartland (after the town Mr. Olds came from), but there being another of that name in the State, it was called Hartford, at the suggestion of Mr. B. A. Olney. The township was organized by an election of officers in April of that year, this first town-meeting being held at the house of Smith Johnson, in section 17.

The records of the township were destroyed by fire in June, 1877. The following list of officers is obtained from the records of the Board of Supervisors for the years given:

- 1840.—Supervisor, Joseph Ruggles; Town Clerk, Burrell A. Olney; Treasurer, Joseph Ruggles; Justices of the Peace, Alexander Newton, Richard B. Everett, Smith Johnson, Burrell A. Olney.
- 1841.—Supervisor, Joseph Ruggles; Town Clerk, Burrell A. Olney; Treasurer, Joseph Ruggles; Justices of the Peace, Richard B. Everett, Smith Johnson, B. A. Olney, Josiah Hill.
- 1842.—Supervisor, Burrell A. Olney; Town Clerk, Joseph Ruggles; Treasurer, Richard B. Everett; Justice of the Peace, Ira Allen.
- 1843.—Supervisor, Charles P. Sheldon; Town Clerk, R. B. Everts; Treasurer, B. A. Olney; School Inspectors, Freeman Ruggles, C. P. Sheldon, B. A. Olney; Justices of the Peace, R. B. Everett, Joseph Reynolds.
- 1844.—Supervisor, Charles P. Sheldon; Town Clerk, William Thomas; Treasurer, Thomas Conklin; School Inspector, C. P. Sheldon; Justice of the Peace, William Thomas.
- 1845.—Treasurer, Sylvester G. Easton; Justice of the Peace, B. A. Olney.
- 1846.—Supervisor, William Thomas; Town Clerk, William Thomas; Treasurer, Sylvester G. Easton; Justice of the Peace, C. P. Sheldon; School Inspector, Aaron P. Hammond.
- 1847.—Supervisor, Burrell A. Olney; Town Clerk, William Thomas; Justice of the Peace, R. B. Everett; Treasurer, S. G. Easton; School Inspector, Fabius Miles.

\* Prior to the organization of Lafayette township the territory of Van Buren County, part of Cass, and land still north was embraced in Penn township, which was organized Nov. 5, 1829, and which territory was a part of St. Joseph township, organized April 12, 1827.

- 1848.—Supervisor, B. A. Olney; Township Clerk, Martin Ruggles; School Inspector, Howland C. Taylor; Treasurer, William Thomas; Justice of the Peace, Austin Beaman.
- 1871.—Supervisor, Roswell Hart; Town Clerk, N. Thomas.
- 1872-74.—Supervisor, Roswell Hart.
- 1873.—Supervisor, R. Hart; Town Clerk, Nathan Thomas; Treasurer, H. M. Olney; Justice of the Peace, A. H. Chandler; School Inspector, O. D. Hadsell.
- 1878.—Supervisor, Lyman Bridges; Town Clerk, Thomas J. Johns; Treasurer, George H. Moore; Justices of the Peace, Albert H. Tuttle, Livara McNitt; Superintendent of Schools, James M. Lamb; School Inspector, William W. Shepherd.
- 1879.—Supervisor, Lyman Bridges; Town Clerk, Henry Spaulding; Treasurer, Thomas J. Johns; Justices of the Peace, J. E. Packard, Charles Mortimer; Superintendent of Schools, J. M. Rowe; School Inspector, Luther Sutton.

#### POST-OFFICES AND POSTMASTERS.

The first mail-route through the township was established in 1854, from St. Joseph to Paw Paw, and passed through the village, but no mail was delivered there, and the nearest office was at Watervliet. The mail was carried on horse-back for about a year. In 1855, one Dolph carried the mail, and this year the office was established at Hartford Centre, with James E. Griffin as the first postmaster. The mail contract was successively taken, after Dolph, by Samuel Wolcott, James Griffin, and Harvey Tamblin. At this time passengers began to be carried. William Thomas and Fairbanks also had the contract for a short time. Jacob Crager took the contract about 1864, and has held it to the present. The route, which at first was from Paw Paw to St. Joseph, has been shortened from time to time until now it extends from Lawrence to Hartford. The postmasters since the appointment of Mr. Griffin have been M. F. Palmer, W. A. Engle, Nathan Thomas, and the present incumbent, J. W. Travis.

#### THE VILLAGE OF HARTFORD.

About 1844, in the spring, one Bartholomew Showrie came to this place, purchased of A. P. Pinney a part of where the village now stands, erected a small log cabin, and cleared a small piece of land east of where the furniture-store of M. Boynton stands. He afterwards built a frame house, and still later removed to Kansas.

The only road was the road from Paw Paw to St. Joseph. A few years after his arrival, Martin Ruggles entered land from the State on section 16, and built the cabin afterwards occupied by Truman Fowler, which was near the present residence of Dr. M. F. Palmer. About 1852, Francis Wilkes, a bachelor, came to the place, and with Fowler erected a frame house on the south side of Main Street, corner of Centre, and put in a few goods and more whisky. James Griffin, with his wife, lived in the back part of the store. Thaddeus Drew was also here occasionally, but he was the traveling man of the party. At this time the place became somewhat notorious, and was known by the name of "Bloody Corners." The inhabitants, consisting of Fowler, Wilkes, Drew, and a few others, were always in active pursuit of horse-thieves, which were almost, but never quite, caught. About 1854-55 a better class of settlers began to gather at the Centre, and Roswell Hart, a native of New York, and Ware Hilliard, a native of New Hampshire, settled here, followed soon by Truman Stratton, John H. Van Ostrom, and James Wolcott.

In 1855, Antoinette Stoughton (now Mrs. Hurlbut) taught the first school in the village; the same year, Ira W. Allen and Willard Stratton built a store where the old *Day Spring* office stands, about 14 by 20, and one story high, and put in a small stock of goods. Dr. M. F. Palmer, in June, 1857, opened an office and commenced the practice of his profession. Benjamin Randall opened a blacksmith-shop on South Centre Street, west side. O. H. P. Baker (better known as Alphabet Baker) is said to have kept the first tavern, in part of what is now the Rasset House.

Cyrus Boynton, in the fall of 1858, opened a store in the Rasset House, and put in two cases of boots, several sacks of coffee, and a few dry goods. His store was the general resort for the long winter evenings.

The growth of the village was very slow until about 1870, when the building of the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad was an incentive to a more rapid settlement, and the village increased until at the present time it has a population of about 800. The business part of the village was nearly destroyed by fire in June, 1877, thirteen business places being burned. But it has steadily and healthily grown since, and now contains two churches (Baptist and Methodist), a brick school-house, the brick dwelling of Orson Olds, a brick hotel, Odd-Fellows' Hall, Masonic Hall, Reynolds' block, and thirteen business places in other blocks; five dry-goods stores, two groceries, two hardware-stores, two drug-stores, five blacksmith-shops, two wagon-shops, post-office, school-house, newspaper-office, two cabinet-shops, three millinery-stores, harness-shop, and stove-factory, two cider-mills, two saw-mills, two sash-, door-, and blind-factories, two markets, a lumber-yard, one flour-and-feed-store, two livery-stables, one jewelry-store, two restaurants, one boot and shoe-store, three insurance-offices, one hair-store, two warehouses, depot, telegraph- and express-office, two lawyers, and four physicians.

*Village Incorporation and Officers.*—Efforts had been made for several years to perfect the incorporation, but were not successful until 1877; the charter being granted April 1st of that year. The territory comprised the east half of section 16 and the west half of section 15. The officers were to be a president, recorder, six trustees, and a treasurer. The first election was held at the office of C. H. Engle, April 16, 1877, and the officers elected for 1877, '78, and '79 are as follows:

1877.—President, John W. Hubbard; Trustees, Henry P. Phelps, Edwin R. Olds, Valentine I. Stratton, William Bennett, George H. Morse, Russell W. Stickney; Recorder, Levi S. Warren; Treasurer, Volney E. Manley.

1878.—President, George H. Morse; Trustees, Henry P. Phelps, Edwin R. Olds, Valentine I. Stratton, William Bennett, Albert H. Tuttle, Henry Spaulding; Recorder, Levi S. Warren; Treasurer, Volney E. Manley.

1879.—President, Marvin L. Edmonds; Trustees, William Bennett, Albert H. Tuttle, Henry Spaulding, Arthur H. Young, Thomas J. Johns, William L. Pierce; Recorder, Levi S. Warren; Treasurer, Volney E. Manley.

*Plats and Additions.*—In the fall of 1854, Ware Hilliard, a native of New Hampshire, purchased a part of the land on which the village of Hartford stands. At that time Roswell Hart lived north of the village, on section 15, where

Eber Hart, a nephew, now lives, Mr. Hart having settled there the spring previous. Bartholomew Showrie lived in a frame house on the southeast corner of Watervliet road and Centre Streets, near the Rasset House; he had lived there since about 1843 and '44. Fowler lived in a log house near where M. F. Palmer now resides. Francis Wilkes lived in a frame house near the southwest corner of Watervliet road and Centre Streets; he afterwards sold to Truman Stratton. In March, 1859, Truman Stratton, Ware Hilliard, John H. Van Ostrom, James Smith, W. W. Shepherd, Roswell Hart, and M. F. Palmer laid out a plat of land for a village, which was surveyed by Sylvester McNitt, and contained a total of  $47\frac{26}{100}$  acres.

The first addition is known as Van Ostrom's, and is described as the northwest quarter of the southwest quarter of section 15, containing about  $3\frac{28}{100}$  acres; also a strip of land adjoining, and on the east of original survey,  $4\frac{20}{100}$  chains wide, extending to Main Street and the south half quarter-line running east and west through section 15, containing about 7 acres.

Hilliard's addition is dated Dec. 15, 1870, and is the southwest quarter of the southeast quarter of northeast quarter of section 16, excepting the railroad grounds, and contains about 8 acres.

A. E. Reynolds' addition bears date May 30, 1871; comprises the west half of the southwest quarter of the southwest quarter of section 15, and contains 20 acres.

Truman Stratton's addition is dated May 3, 1871, and comprises the west half of northeast quarter of southeast quarter of section 16, lying south of Main Street, and  $3\frac{1}{2}$  line of said sections; it contains 14 acres.

Allen, Huntley, and Stickney's addition, which bears date of Feb. 2, 1872, lies south of the centre of Main Street and west of the east  $\frac{1}{2}$  line of section 16, is  $10\frac{8.5}{100}$  chains square, and contains 10 acres; besides 6 rods wide through the same, owned and occupied by the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad Company.

E. R. Olds' addition is dated Jan. 4, 1875; it lies in the northeast part of the village, is a strip of land 4 chains wide from the south side of the southwest quarter of northwest quarter of section 15, except a piece of land on the west of same  $4\frac{6.2}{100}$  chains wide, and contains  $6\frac{1}{13}$  acres.

Freeman Stowe's addition (dated Jan. 4, 1875) lies in the southwest part of the village, and is a strip of land  $4\frac{7.5}{100}$  chains wide off the west side of northeast quarter of southeast quarter of section 15; it contains 10 acres.

Hilliard's second addition, dated May, 1875, contains 10 acres.

The Warren addition was made Feb. 23, 1876, and contains  $16\frac{6.9}{100}$  acres.

The whole number of lots in 1875 was 383, embracing an area of 134 acres.

*A Union School* was organized and commenced in the village of Hartford about the year 1860, and the brick school building was erected in 1873.

#### SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Florida Lodge, No. 309, F. and A. M.*—This lodge was instituted Jan. 17, 1873, with E. C. Hurd as Worshipful Master; Thomas J. Johns, Senior Warden; and James C.





*H. P. Phelps*



*Mrs. H. P. Phelps*



RESIDENCE OF HENRY P. PHELPS, VAN BUREN CO., N. Y.



Crandall, Junior Warden. They number at present 60 members. The present officers are George Moore, Worshipful Master; John P. Van Ostrom, Senior Warden; Volney E. Manley, Junior Warden; James Lamb, Sec.; Thomas J. Johns, Treas.

*Benevolence Eastern Star Lodge, No. 46.*—This lodge was instituted as Benevolence Lodge, No. 46, Oct. 3, 1877, with Mrs. Allie Manley as Worthy Patron. In October, 1878, it was changed to *Benevolence Eastern Star Chapter*; and the number was changed to No. 19 in October, 1879. The present officers are Mrs. Allie Manley, W. President; Jessie Thomas, Vice-President; Mrs. Bertha Reinhard, Sec.; and Mrs. Hortense Stickney, Treas.

*Charter Oak Lodge, I. O. of O. F., No. 231.*—This lodge was instituted May 7, 1874. The charter members were R. W. Stickney, Morris Jacobson, Luther Sutton, Oscar Stickney, and Geo. Harley. The lodge has a present membership of 48. The present officers are John Righter, Noble Grand; A. P. Shaw, Vice-Grand; H. E. Rich, Sec.; Allen Olds, Treas. Meetings are held in Odd-Fellows' Hall.

*Hartford Encampment, I. O. of O. F., No. 73.*—This encampment was organized Feb. 11, 1876, with the following charter members: James E. Durden, Charles G. George, Morris Jacobson, James H. Van Vrankin, Isaac S. Rosevelt, A. G. Eastman, O. W. Oviatt, and H. E. Holland. The present number of members is 30, with the following officers: Charles Hilliard, Chief Patriarch; H. Braught, Senior Warden; H. Spaulding, Junior Warden; C. Mortimer, Scribe; J. Jones, Treas.

*Hartford Rebekah Degree Lodge, No. 24.*—The lodge was instituted Feb. 22, 1879. The charter members were Henry Spaulding, Charles Mortimer, Geo. F. Collett, R. W. Stickney, John W. Hubbard, Luther Sutton, Chas. Hilliard, Mrs. Helen Spaulding, Elizabeth Mortimer, Addie Collett, Hortense Stickney, Annie M. Hubbard, Priscilla Sutton, and Mary Hilliard. The number of members at present is 45. The officers are Mrs. Geo. F. Collett, Noble Grand; Mrs. R. W. Stickney, Vice-Grand; Mrs. John W. Hubbard, Sec.; Mrs. A. P. Shaw, Treas.

*Hartford Lodge, No. 862, I. O. of G. T.*—This society of Good Templars was organized May 13, 1875, with 20 constituent members, and J. E. Sweet as Worthy Chief Templar; Mrs. P. A. Travis, Worthy Vice-Templar; Rev. A. G. Parish, Sec. The present membership is 20, and the officers at present are Luther Sutton, Worthy Chief Templar; Miss Clara Thompson, Worthy Vice-Templar; Mrs. Alice Russell, Sec.

*Charter Oak Lodge, No. 28, Knights of Pythias.*—This lodge worked under a dispensation, granted Oct. 27, 1875, until Jan. 25, 1875, when a charter was obtained. The charter members are as follows: Milton L. Palmer, James H. Curtiss, Wm. H. Lefler, Hugh W. Taplin, Aaron Waldorff, Albert Hale, Richard Hale, Hiram P. Simmons, Cortez Hawkes, Benj. F. Sweet, and William Cook. The lodge at present numbers 20 members. David C. Ray, Chancellor Commander; Ansel E. Reynolds, Vice-Commander; John Rassett, Prelate; M. F. Palmer, Keeper of Records and Seals.

*Hartford Grange, No. 89, P. of H.*—This order worked under a dispensation, granted Oct. 7, 1873, and a charter

was granted March 21, 1874. The present officers are J. D. Robinson, Master; Miss Ida Trey, Sec.; Geo. W. Shepherd, Treas. Membership of 50.

## SCHOOLS.

In 1837 the first school in the township of Hartford was taught by Mrs. Martha Conklin, wife of Thomas Conklin, in their house, while this territory was yet in the township of Lawrence. The next year Abigail Mellen taught in a log house, near where William Thomas now resides, and the same summer one was taught in a cabin opposite Mrs. Robert Olds.

The first school-house was built in the spring of 1842, and the first teacher therein was Olive Pool, with only five scholars. She received \$1.25 per week. District No. 5—in the village—was organized in July, 1854, and Antoinette Stoughton taught in the house of Harvey Tamblin. The first school-house in the village was built, about eighty rods from the Rassett House, in the spring of 1856. In the fall of 1871 the district was changed to a graded school, and the brick building was erected in the summer of 1873, at a cost of \$6000, including fixtures, and opened for services Oct. 31, 1873, with 140 pupils and A. L. Fox, principal. The principals since that time have been Horace B. Clapp, J. F. Smith, and J. M. Lamb, the present incumbent.

The following statistics are taken from the school report for 1879:

District.	Number of Children.	School-Houses.	Seating Capacity.	Value.	Number of Teachers.	Amount of Wages.
No. 1.....	15	1*	40	\$600	2	\$90.00
No. 2.....	34	1*	80	800	2	28.00
No. 3.....	50	1*	60	700	2	113.60
No. 4.....	42	1*	42	600	2	112.00
No. 5.....	60	1*	60	1,000	2	71.10
No. 6.....	54	1*	60	600	2	36.00
No. 7.....	206	1†	244	6,000	4	943.00
No. 8.....	50	1*	60	200	2	56.00
No. 9.....	53	1*	50	800	2	16.00
No. 10.....	46	1*	60	800	2	48.00
No. 11.....	74	1*	40	50	2	.....
Totals.....	750	11	769	\$12,150	21	\$1463.70

## RECEIPTS.

District.	Money on hand Sept. 1, 1878.	Two-Mill Tax.	Primary-School Fund.	District Tax.	Total.
No. 1.....	\$82.50	\$26.00	\$10.82	\$100.00	\$172.90
No. 2.....	17.80	60.00	15.64	40.00	139.28
No. 3.....	20.53	80.58	28.47	40.17	178.90
No. 4.....	27.95	45.80	31.47	100.00	226.71
No. 5.....	12.25	89.20	28.47	151.00	290.07
No. 6.....	67.27	116.55	27.52	.....	220.19
No. 7.....	9.45	326.30	134.55	1345.85	1930.71
No. 8.....	11.15	78.70	27.38	100.00	256.55
No. 9.....	90.19	.....	.....	.....	90.19
No. 10.....	70.11	73.50	21.82	59.50	252.95
No. 11.....	26.50	40.12	41.40	65.00	221.38
Totals.....	\$415.74	\$936.75	\$367.58	\$2001.32	\$3953.63

## EXPENDITURES.

District.	Amount Paid Teachers.	Total Expenditures, including Cash on hand.
No. 1.....	\$90.00	\$172.90
No. 2.....	95.00	139.28
No. 3.....	113.60	178.90
No. 4.....	112.00	226.71
No. 5.....	191.10	290.07
No. 6.....	166.00	220.19
No. 7.....	1663.00	1930.71
No. 8.....	186.00	256.55
No. 9.....	76.00	90.19
No. 10.....	138.00	252.95
No. 11.....	160.00	221.38
Totals.....	\$2995.70	\$3953.63

\* Frame.

† Brick.



The school directors for 1879 were Elias Whipple, Jerry Wilcox, Solon Root, J. S. Dowd, George W. Shepherd, J. D. Robinson, Charles Mortimer, A. J. Traver, J. M. Potes, Dennis Healey.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—About the year 1859 a class was formed in the village of Hartford, in the old school-house, of which John and Maggie Van Ostrom, Charles and Sarah Doty, and Fanny Goodenough were the constituent members. Charles Doty was the first class-leader. The first pastors were the Revs. J. Hoyt and C. C. Kellogg. For several years the charge was supplied by two ministers alternate. These were followed by Soule and Colwell, H. H. Joy and T. T. George, Hoag, G. A. Buell, John W. Miller, F. I. Beard, Fowler, John Webster, J. P. Force, E. A. Tanner, I. G. Parrish, C. Woodward, N. M. Steele, F. I. Bell, and E. V. Boynton, the present pastor. The church numbers at present about 80 members.

About 1869 the church organized a Sunday-school, with C. H. Engle superintendent, who still holds the position. It has an average attendance of 100. A church edifice was commenced in the summer of 1866, and finished in the summer of 1867, at a cost of about \$5000. The society at that time was in charge of the Rev. John W. Miller. The dedication sermon was preached by the Rev. Mr. Reed, of New York.

*First Baptist Church.*—In 1858, Horace Dow and family and others were dismissed from the church of Lawrence, for the purpose of organizing a church in Hartford. Letters missive were sent out to the churches at Lawrence, Paw Paw, Dowagiac, Niles, and Watervliet. Delegates were present from all the churches except Niles. The Rev. S. H. D. Vaughan, of Dowagiac, was chosen moderator, and the Rev. A. Handy, clerk. The meeting was held in the school-house in Hartford village, in November, 1858. After examination as to doctrine, etc., it was unanimously voted that the First Baptist Church of Hartford be recognized and received with the following constituent members: Horace Dow, Mary Dow, Sylvanus Reynolds, Emma Reynolds, James Wolcott, Maria Wolcott, Alvah McNitt, Sylvia McNitt, Jane Disbrow, Elvira Hunt, Clarissa Craw, A. H. Brown, Mary L. Brown, Chapin W. Reynolds, Ann Jane Casselman. Horace Dow and S. Reynolds were chosen deacons, and J. S. Dow church clerk. The sermon was preached by the Rev. S. H. D. Vaughan, and the right hand of fellowship was given by the Rev. A. Handy, of Paw Paw.

The Rev. E. S. Dunham preached before the organization, and the Rev. H. Munger was sent as a missionary upon the establishment of the church. He was succeeded by Albert Gore, William Simons, William Gates, E. A. McGregor, R. S. Dean, M. Meacham, J. F. Ross, J. G. Portman, Sherman Hendricks, and S. A. Cole, the present pastor. The church edifice of the Universalists was purchased in 1873, and repaired in 1879. The church membership is 42.

About 1854 the Rev. Mr. Rowe, of Lawrence, gathered together the Christian people of this place and formed a society known as Congregational. The Rev. Mr. Stevenson,

also of Lawrence, ministered to them a year or two. No permanent society was organized.

About 1860 a number of the inhabitants of the village of Hartford gathered together for the purpose of forming a Universalist society. Subscriptions were made for a church, and during the next year a church was built, at a cost of \$3400. It was dedicated June 23, 1861. The Rev. Mr. Countryman preached the sermon, and remained here during that summer. The church was built almost entirely by the energy and means of Thomas Conklin. A Sunday-school was organized with about 100 pupils, and was sustained for some considerable time. The church was finally sold to the Baptist society in the summer of 1873, and the society was abandoned.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### HON. FABIUS MILES.

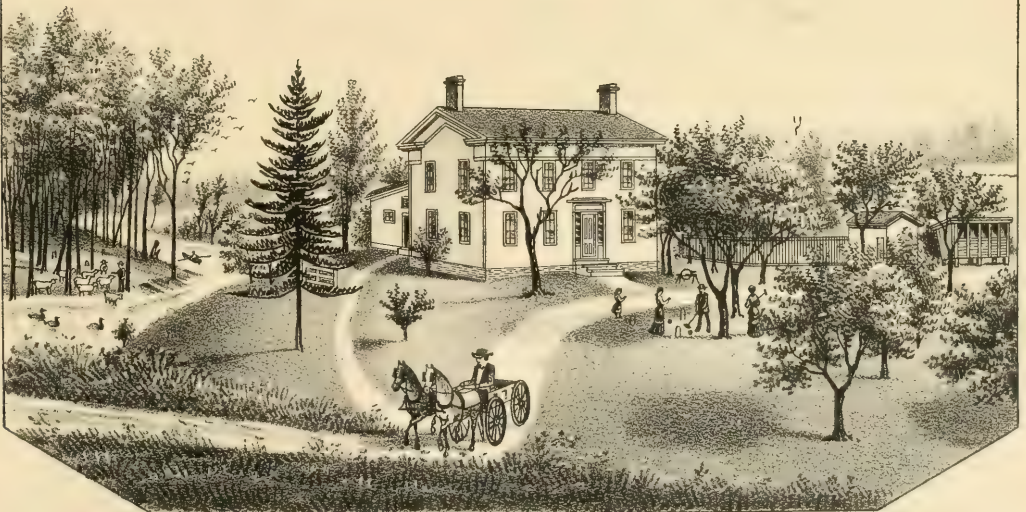
Jonathan Eastman Miles, the father of the above, was born June 2, 1782, in Hampden Co., Mass.; was one of a family of six sons and one daughter. Mr. Miles followed the occupation of a farmer his life long; was very successful as such, and a man of great ability. When about four years of age his parents removed with him to the State of New Hampshire; located at a point nearly opposite St. Johnsbury, Vt. At the age of sixteen he passed one year in Connecticut, and in 1799 went to Whitesborough, N. Y., and attended a school taught by one Dr. Stedman, under whom he completed his education. In 1800, with a sack of apple-seeds upon his back, he journeyed on foot to Watertown, N. Y., a distance of eighty-five miles. At that time but three families resided in what is now the township of Watertown, and but one, Hart Massey, on the site of the city. Johnson Howk, who lived about three miles from Massey's, allowed Mr. Miles to sow his apple-seeds on his place; and from this nursery sprang, and were transplanted, many of the best orchards in that region. He remained in Watertown until 1807, and there became acquainted with Miss Mary Sheldon, whom he afterwards married. She had come from Connecticut, about 1804, with her parents. In the fall of 1807 he took a prospecting trip through many of the Southern States, purchasing a pony in Alabama, which he brought to Watertown on his return, in the fall of 1808. The same season he was married to Miss Sheldon, who died in 1809, after giving birth to a daughter, Caroline May Miles, who is now living in Crete, Neb. After his marriage Mr. Miles settled upon the farm he continued to occupy until his death, which occurred in February, 1860. In 1810 he was married to Miss Lucinda Sheldon, a younger sister of his first wife, she having been born in 1791. By her he had seven sons and five daughters, all of whom reached maturity except one son, who died in infancy, and eight of the number are now living. One son, Pliny Miles, was for some time associated with his brother Fabius in the book business, in Watertown, afterwards becoming a noted newspaper correspondent, and wrote able articles upon various reforms in the gov-



PHOTO. BY CHAS. SCHMIDT.

*Belthiah Miles*

*Fabius Miles*



RESIDENCE OF FABIVS MILES, HARTFORD TP., VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





cument service, especially Postal Department; held situations with the New York *Tribune*, Hartford *Courant*, Boston *Post*, and the New York *Herald*. For three and a half years he was a very successful lecturer on certain scientific subjects in Great Britain, finally locating in London as correspondent from that city for the New York *Herald*. While on his way to witness and report the opening of the Suez Canal, in 1865, died on the island of Malta, in the Mediterranean. A sister of the above, Mrs. Eloise M. Abbott, well known in Van Buren County as a newspaper correspondent, in which business she has for many years been engaged, is now residing with her only child, a daughter, at San José, Cal. Emily, another sister, was a successful teacher in a female seminary at Watertown, of which a sister of Gen. Joseph Hooker was principal.

Fabius Miles was born in the township of Watertown, Jefferson Co., N. Y., Dec. 31, 1814. He received a good common-school education in the district where he lived, and in 1831-32 attended school in Buffalo; returning to Watertown in 1832, he continued his studies in the Watertown Academy, and for several years taught school during the winter months, and continued the prosecution of his studies, including that of the French language, which he studied under the instruction of a French professor, who was a lieutenant under Napoleon in his campaigns in Spain.

In 1838, Mr. Miles established the Watertown Normal School, which he continued with good success until 1844. Among the pupils was Dr. Bartholomew, of Keeler. Among the numerous patrons of his school was Madame De Lafolá, the former wife of Count Joseph Bonaparte, an American-born lady, who, after her removal to Paris, became the wife of a wealthy Paris silk merchant, named De Lafolá, subsequently returning to America. She was an accomplished French scholar.

May 1, 1844, Mr. Miles left Watertown, and came to Michigan to visit his brother-in-law and cousin, Chas. P. Sheldon, then living on the north side of Paw Paw River, on section 2, Hartford township. Mr. Miles then had no idea of locating here, but journeyed to Chicago, thence to Beloit, Wis., back to Elgin, down the Fox, Illinois, and Mississippi Rivers to Island Number Ten, finally returning to Michigan, locating where he now lives, on the north bank of Paw Paw River, Hartford township. In the fall of that year (1844) he commenced to build a saw-mill. He had brought with him to Michigan the sum of twelve hundred dollars, his net earnings as a teacher in Watertown, and had about one thousand dollars left when he began his mill. The best mill-wright in that section agreed that a mill on the plan he wished to follow would cost about three thousand dollars; but he expended his own capital and two thousand dollars borrowed, and his mill was not then nearly completed. Finding it impossible to obtain further credit, he took his valise on his back and started afoot towards his native town. He walked to Battle Creek, fifty-five miles, and there met a friend who loaned him seven dollars. This, in addition to the solitary English sovereign he had, made him feel more light-hearted, and he took the cars to Detroit, and a boat from there to Buffalo, where he arrived with twenty-five cents left. He boarded a packet-boat on the canal at Buffalo, and, fortunately, found friends who aided

him to get to Watertown. He succeeded in raising five hundred dollars, and in the latter part of July, less than a month after he left Michigan, he started back, and arrived in due time at his mill, on which he resumed work. With money sufficient to pay his men, it was again easy to obtain credit, and his mill was finally completed, and commenced operations in April, 1847. The irons for the mill were procured at Mishawaka, Ind., forty miles away. In 1859 he took a cargo of lumber to New York City via St. Joseph, the lakes, the Erie Canal, and the Hudson. He continued in the lumbering business, exclusively, until 1860. His first purchase of land was nine acres, including his mill-site; to that he has added at different times until he now has six hundred acres, of which nearly two hundred are improved.

On Christmas-eve, in Watertown, 1839, Mr. Miles married Miss Bethiah Mantle, a native of that place, born in July, 1817. She was of New England parentage, her mother being a daughter of Capt. Tilly Richardson, of Massachusetts, a Revolutionary soldier, who settled at Watertown in 1804. He had a large and respectable family, his children being mostly daughters, nearly all married, and continued to live near that place until their death.

In September, 1844, Mrs. Miles came alone to Michigan, and joined her husband, occupying, for a time, the house of Chas. P. Sheldon, with him and his family. There, on the 16th of October, 1844, a daughter was born to Mr. and Mrs. Miles, and named Rebecca Jane. She became the wife of Edward S. Jelley, and the mother of three children, and died in February, 1875. Her only living child, Isabel B., is now living with Mr. Miles. When their child was about three weeks old Mr. and Mrs. Miles moved into a log cabin, which had been erected on their own place. It was a characteristic structure of true backwoods style, with no floor, and a roof made of basswood troughs. While Mr. Miles was absent on his several trips, in 1845, his wife remained at home without fear of molestation, often for days and weeks together. On one occasion when her health was delicate he carried her *on his back* to the house of a neighbor, who had recently located, and lived about eighty rods distant, leaving her there during his absence. The trials and experiences of those days are yet fresh in the memory of Mr. and Mrs. Miles, and bind them more closely together. They had lost an infant son before leaving Watertown, and after the birth of the daughter mentioned became the parents of the following children: Florine, born in November, 1846, died in April, 1847; Silas Wright, born Sept. 1, 1848, now an invalid from consumption, sojourning at Colorado Springs, educated at Hillsdale College, and was always an active, industrious young man, possessing noble qualities; Pitt, born Aug. 2, 1850, was possessed of fine business ability, but died in December, 1873; Florine L., born Oct. 3, 1853, now living with her parents; Lydia May, born in May, 1859, married to Marsh Worthington, and now living at South Haven, Mich.

Politically, Mr. Miles was originally a Democrat, and voted three times for Martin Van Buren for President. He was an adherent to the school of Democrats in which Martin Van Buren and Silas Wright were leaders, and was thoroughly imbued with anti-slavery principles. He was

an active worker in the Free-Soil movement of 1848, and one of the organizers of the Republican party in Michigan in 1854. He was elected to the lower house of the Michigan Legislature in 1858, has been supervisor of Hartford township several times, and was for many years its principal school examiner. In 1872, Mr. Miles voted for Horace Greeley for President, and for Peter Cooper in 1876. Otherwise he has supported the Republican nominees. He has always been active in political affairs, and his voice has often been heard advocating the merits of his party candidates. In 1868 he was a delegate to the State Convention which nominated delegates to the National Convention. To the Greenback movement he now gives his support.

The hand of fortune has not always been held out to him, and he has undergone many trials; yet the noble heart of the *man* shows over all, and, with his excellent family to aid him, he, it is hoped, may triumph over all difficulties.

#### THOMAS CONKLIN.

Mr. Conklin's father, David Conklin, was born in the town of North Salem, Westchester Co., N. Y., and was of English descent. He had a family of seventeen children, of whom Thomas Conklin was the eighth.

Thomas Conklin was born in Rutland, Jefferson Co., N. Y., Jan. 2, 1811, on a farm to which his father had removed from Westchester County, and upon which the young man remained until he was of age, attending the district schools and assisting in the care of the place. From his father he never received any money; but when he became of age he was the possessor of ten dollars, which he had saved in small sums, from a cent to a shilling. With this amount of money he started for Rochester, paying eight dollars of it for stage fare. With a portion of what he had left he purchased an axe, and went into the country for the winter. For four successive seasons thereafter he hired out at the rate of one hundred dollars for eight months' work. In the early fall of 1836 he emigrated to Michigan, and purchased two hundred and twelve acres of government land in the township of Hartford. The snow soon fell to such a depth that he could not continue his improvements, and he spent the winter in Allegan County. He had been accompanied from Battle Creek to Hartford by his brother, James Conklin, and a cousin named Selleck, they having located previously at Battle Creek. The first night in the woods of Hartford was passed in a shanty made of a few boards and their wagon-box placed against a tree they had cut down. The forest resounded through the night with the howls of wolves. In March, 1837, Mr. Conklin returned from Allegan County, and, in company with B. A. Olney and James Spinnings, built a log cabin on his place, and again began improvements. The three lived in the cabin for some time, Messrs. Olney and Spinnings settling in the neighborhood. When the weather moderated Mr. Conklin built a log house, covered it with boards, and lived in it alone for six weeks, cooking his food beside a burning stump. He cut the timber from six acres of his land, planted some corn and potatoes, and about July 1, 1837, started on his return to New York. In August of the

same year he was married, in Jefferson County, to Martha Justina Ely, who was left an orphan when young. She attended the female seminary at Watertown, and became an excellent teacher. She was an estimable lady, and taught for the benefit of the children, although not always receiving her pay. After coming to Hartford she taught the first school in the township. Mr. and Mrs. Conklin came to Michigan soon after their marriage, and moved into the log house on the first day of October, 1837. The building contained no bedstead, and had neither doors nor windows, but was well roofed. A pole bedstead was constructed, of the fashion well known to pioneers, and the ticks were placed upon it. Mrs. Conklin became the mother of two children, one of whom, a daughter, died in infancy; Luke E., the son, was the first white male child born in the township, his birth occurring Dec. 3, 1838. He is married, has four children, and is a respected citizen of Hartford township. Mrs. Conklin died Dec. 6, 1843, and on her death-bed expressed the wish that her husband should marry Fannie Davison, who had assisted in caring for her during her sickness, and this union was consummated on the 29th of February, 1844. Mrs. Fannie Conklin became the mother of eight children, five of whom died young, and one died when fourteen years old, from the effects of the kick of a horse. Two of them are now living,—Charles Rodolphus, nineteen years of age, and Miland Chester, in his eighteenth year. Mrs. Conklin was a woman of unusual financial ability, and Mr. Conklin attributes a large measure of his success to her efforts during the twenty-three years they lived together. She was highly respected by all. Her death occurred May 25, 1867. Her father, George Davison, settled early in Keeler township, and was from near Angelica, Allegany Co., N. Y.

In June, 1867, Mr. Conklin was married to Samantha Kennedy (from whom he was divorced), who bore him three children,—T. J. Conklin, Odell Conklin, and Elon Conklin. All are living. May 26, 1879, he entered matrimony a fourth time, leading to the hymeneal altar Mrs. Nellie Poole Jones, divorced wife of Samuel Jones, who was living at Lawrence at the time of her marriage. She is the mother of a daughter, Blanche, by her first husband, and is an estimable lady. She was well and favorably known in former years as one of Van Buren County's most successful teachers.

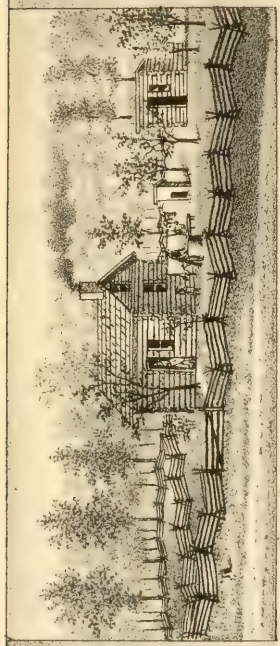
Mr. Conklin aided in building the Methodist church at Hartford village (although not a member), and paid one thousand dollars towards the Chicago and West Michigan Railway. He built a church in the village and sold it to the Baptist society, and has also erected a brick store building, beside aiding other religious societies. He is a Universalist in belief, and a Douglas Democrat in politics. His nephew, John Conklin, also a native of Jefferson Co., N. Y., who had been for several years a sailor, was chosen as one of the first crew of the original "Monitor" during the war of the Rebellion. Mr. Conklin moved upon his present farm, on section 22, in 1868, and is the owner of five hundred acres of land.



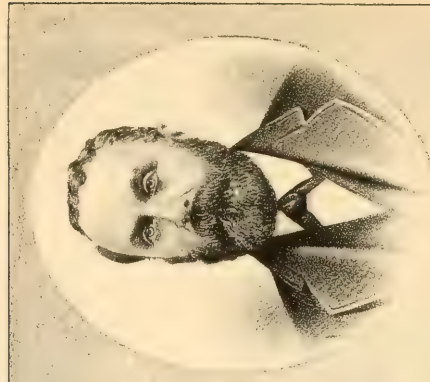




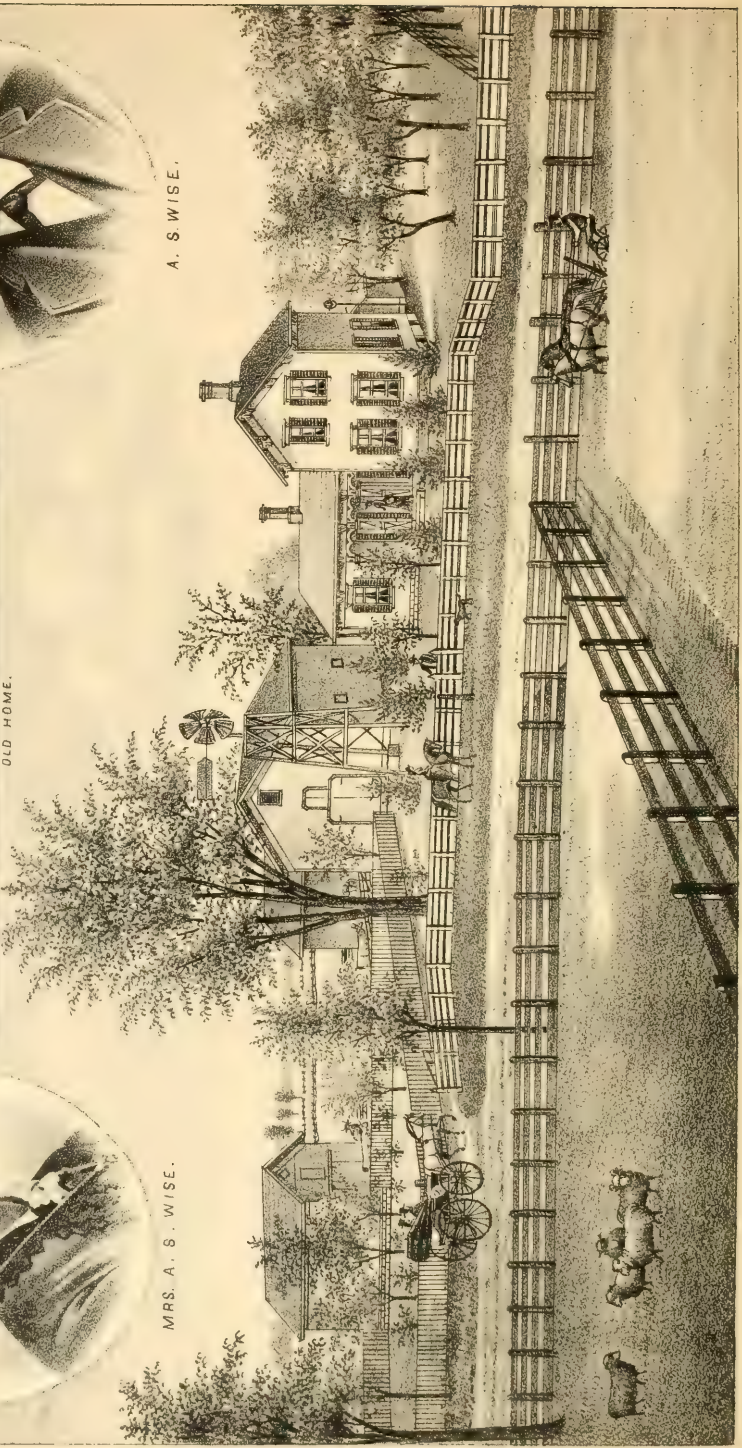
MRS. A. S. WISE.



OLD HOME.



A. S. WISE.



RES. OF A. S. WISE, HAMILTON, MICH.

## HENRY P. PHELPS.

This gentleman is the son of Alexander H. Phelps, who came from Parkman, Ohio, in 1841, and settled, with his family, in the village of Lawrence, Van Buren Co., Mich. He built a saw-mill, and for a few years was engaged in the milling business with his brother, Nelson Phelps, and Harrison Balfour. He was also, in connection with the mill, engaged in the mercantile business. Both he and his wife were natives of Ohio. Mr. Phelps lived in Lawrence until his death, which occurred March 1, 1878, and his wife is now living in that village. They were the parents of ten children,—six sons and four daughters,—who are all living, except two sons.

Henry P. Phelps, of Hartford, was born in Lawrence, April 7, 1842. At the age of twenty he left home, and enlisted in a regiment of sharpshooters,—the 66th Illinois Volunteer Infantry,—and was with Sherman in his various campaigns. He was taken prisoner near Dallas, Miss., and about three months afterwards was released on parole, but was not exchanged until about eight months from the time he was captured. At Peach Tree Creek, Ga., on the 22d of July, 1864, he was wounded,—the day being that on which the gallant McPherson was killed. Mr. Phelps remained in the service two years and eleven months, and in the winter of 1865–66, after his discharge, attended the Eastman Business College, at Chicago. In the spring of 1866 he entered the store of H. M. Marshall, at Lawrence, and remained with him a year and a half, after which he engaged in the mercantile business at Hartford, in partnership with his brother, William A. Phelps. The firm was continued about two years, during which time a branch store was established at Keeler. H. P. Phelps finally purchased his brother's interest in the business, and continued at Hartford, while the latter assumed entire charge of the store at Keeler. In September, 1879, Henry Phelps sold his establishment to Charles F. Young, who erected the fine three-story brick store he now occupies.

Sept. 29, 1869, Mr. Phelps was married to Jennie Smiley, daughter of Mitchell S. Smiley, who was originally from Maryland, and who settled in Arlington township, Van Buren Co., in 1851. Mrs. Phelps was born in South Avon, Livingston Co., N. Y., Sept. 25, 1849. Politically, Mr. Phelps is a Republican, and has been assessor of his township. He has also been interested to some extent in improvements in the village of Hartford, and is now engaged in the real estate and loan business at that place.

## CHAPTER LXI.

## HAMILTON TOWNSHIP.

General Description—Pioneers of Hamilton—A Winter Fright—Wolf Stories—Township Organization and Civil List—Religious Societies—Burial-Grounds—Schools—Hamilton Grange.

TOWNSHIP 4 south, range 15 west, originally a portion of Covington township, later known as Alpena, and now called Hamilton, lies upon the southern border of Van Buren County, and is bounded on the north by Lawrence,

on the south by Cass County, on the east by Decatur, and on the west by Keeler. The surface is generally level, and the soil, varied in its character, is richly productive in all classes of agricultural commodities. The northern portion was originally heavily timbered with walnut, whitewood, beech, maple, basswood, ash, and elm, while near the centre and in the south, oak openings prevailed. In the southeast there is considerable lowland, which is, however, being rapidly reclaimed to a valuable purpose.

In the north the town is watered by a branch of the Paw Paw, which affords excellent mill-sites. In the southeast a branch of the Dowagiac Creek rises in the Lake of the Woods, a fine sheet of water lying partly in Hamilton and partly in Decatur. There are also numerous other picturesque lakes, among the largest of which are School-Lot Lake, Pine Lake, Knickerbocker Lake, Johnson Lake, and Osborn Lake.

The Michigan Central Railroad line crosses the southeastern corner of the town, but has no station there, Decatur village being the nearest railway depot, as well as the general market-town.

Hamilton has no village within its limits, neither has it a store or church building. As to manufactures it has never boasted more than one grist-mill and two saw-mills, and the people of the town depend exclusively upon the interests of agriculture. Hamilton's population in 1874 was 1074, and in 1879 its assessed valuation was \$414,210.

## PIONEERS OF HAMILTON.

The first structure erected in Hamilton was a hunter's cabin, put up in 1833 upon section 17, by Benjamin Reynolds and Joel Clark, of Kalamazoo, who used to come over into what is now Hamilton on periodical hunting excursions. In 1834, Reynolds brought his wife over with him and occupied the hut, with the intention of remaining for a time at least, as a settler, although he had entered no land. One day, while Reynolds was away, his wife set out in search of their cow, and searching fruitlessly for a while, found, upon wishing to return home, that she was lost in the woods. She cried out for help, but none appeared until the next morning, when there came to her assistance John and James Nesbitt, settlers in Keeler, and then, to her surprise, Mrs. Reynolds found that she had wandered into Keeler township, several miles from home. The Nesbitts conveyed her to her house, and straightway, arriving there, she told her husband that she was disgusted with a life in a country where she could not take a walk without getting lost, adding, moreover, that she would not stop another hour. Despite her husband's protests against the move, she insisted upon going, and go she did. Reynolds settled shortly after in Porter, and there lived until his death.

The first land entry in Hamilton was made by Robert Nesbitt, who located a tract on section 4, April 15, 1835, and at once settled there with a view to the erection of a saw-mill upon Brush Creek, which flowed through his land. Mr. Nesbitt, who with his brothers John and James had been living in Kalamazoo, came with them farther West, and decided to stop in Hamilton, while they chose their homes in Keeler. Robert Nesbitt had for years been con-



cerned in the building of mills in Michigan, and, as already observed, he lost no time after locating in Hamilton in erecting a saw-mill. In October, 1835, he hauled 19 loads of lumber and supplies from Prairie Ronde, and pushed the mill-construction so rapidly that he began to saw lumber June 3, 1836. The same year he built a log house 20 by 30 feet, and by that time had the company in the township of a number of settlers, to whom extended reference will be made. Mr. Nesbitt's saw-mill was for years the only one for miles around, and when the Michigan Central Railroad line reached the vicinity of Decatur, it was run night and day in supplying the demand for lumber for the railway construction. So constant has been the work at his mill for upwards of forty years, that from 1836 to the present time (1880) he has worn out five mills.

In 1856 he built a grist-mill on the same site, and that mill he has operated continuously ever since. He was thus the first to enter land in Hamilton, he built the first saw-mill, as well as the first and only grist-mill, and to-day, living upon the place of his first settlement, he is the oldest settler in the township.

During his early days in Hamilton, Mr. Nesbitt added to his other extensive business interests the business of land-agent for A. P. Grant, of New York, and others, and sold for them thousands of acres of land in Hamilton and adjoining townships. He was himself the owner at one time of 2600 acres of land, and now, after fifty years of pioneer life in Michigan, he enjoys well-earned ease and comfort in the most elegant home in Van Buren County.

In May, 1835, Zebina Stearns came into the township and moved into the hunter's hut on section 17, earlier occupied by Reynolds and Clarke. Mr. Stearns afterwards entered land on that section, and continued to reside in the township until his death, in 1846. He was joined in the spring of 1836 by his son Sidney, who had before that been engaged in stage-driving between Detroit and Monroe. Sidney Stearns still lives in Hamilton, and ranks among the oldest settlers.

James, brother to Robert Nesbitt, came in 1835 from Keeler, and located four 80-acre lots on sections 13 and 14. He lived upon his Hamilton farm until 1849, when he was found one day, dead, in the bottom of his well. There were suspicions that his death was the result of foul play, but a searching investigation failed to establish any positive evidence to that effect, and to this day the tragic event has remained enveloped in mystery.

The year 1835 brought also Lewis Johnson, who came from New York to Jackson in 1834, and to Hamilton in the following year, with his father and Zebina Stearns. The younger Johnson entered land on section 18, and there made a settlement. His father remained with him three years, and then returned to New York. Lewis, the son, continued, however, a resident of Hamilton until his death, on the old place, in 1872. His son Andrew now occupies the place his father located.

Aaron Barney, a New Yorker, was another settler in 1835, and located upon land on section 30. His wife died in 1839, and he in 1858. His son Austin resides in Hamilton upon section 31.

A Mr. Lyon, who came in during 1835, remained but a

short time, and upon leaving sold his property to Philotus Haydon. Mr. Haydon was a man of considerable note in Hamilton, and was well known and prominent in the county. He was withal a man of frank expression, bluff and hearty in his manner, and much given to eccentric speech and action. It is said that while hunting one Sunday he killed a deer near a school-house where a Methodist meeting was in progress. Haydon cut the animal's throat, and upon attempting to carry his prize away found his strength unequal to the task, whereupon, as if struck with a sudden thought, he rushed into the meeting, and undeterred by the fact that the preacher was in the midst of his sermon, held up his bloody hands and cried out, with a loud voice, "I've killed a big buck, but he's too heavy for me. Come along some of you and give me a lift in getting him home." It needs no very vivid imagination to conceive that preacher and congregation must have been somewhat taken by surprise. Whether Haydon got his required help or not is not related, but the story is vouched for as true, and a truthful illustration of his independence and eccentricity. On another occasion, a minister coming to him for assistance on behalf of the church, he exclaimed, "Well, I don't believe a word you say in the pulpit, but here's ten dollars. I'll help you along anyway." Mr. Haydon took an active part in politics, and during the civil war of 1861-65 was among the foremost in the county in the work of aiding the Union cause, towards which he gave liberally of his means and time. He died in Hamilton in 1866, upon his farm in section 18, which was his home for thirty years. His sons, Mortimer and Arthur, are well-known citizens of the township.

James M. Lumbard and his father, Ebenezer, settled upon section 15 in 1836. James removed later to Decatur village, where he now lives. In the same year Henry C. McClure and his son Henry came from New York to make a settlement. The elder McClure returned soon after to New York, and the son afterwards removed to Decatur village, and died there.

James and Reason Comley, now living in Hamilton, occupy the three 80-acre lots which their father, John Comley, located in 1836, and upon which he lived until his death.

George W. Geer and his brother Elisha came from Connecticut to Michigan in June, 1836. George located 240 acres of land on section 32, and now lives on part of it with his son George N. In the days of 1836 roads were by no means found ready made for the pioneers when they came in. Indian trails were the best highways at hand, and over such roads the Geers found their way to their new settlement, while the dense forest gave no sign of occupancy except by the red man and wild beasts. Elisha Geer set up a cooper's shop on section 28, where he resided until his death.

Among the other immigrants in 1836 were S. T. Howell, Hale Wakefield, Caleb Bartlett, and Joseph McClintock. Howell, who hailed from Ohio, lives now in Kansas. Bartlett lived on section 19, and went to California in 1850. Joseph McClintock still lives on the land which he located in 1836, although he himself did not settle upon it until 1838 (a family by name of Luke working it for him two years).



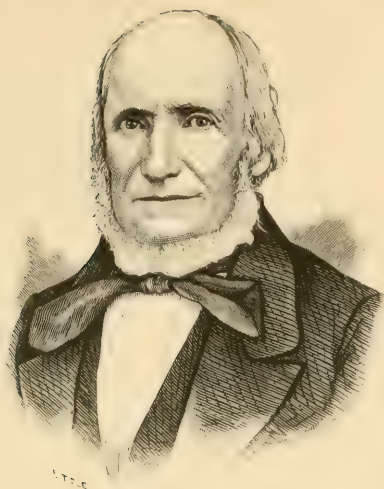




*G. G. B. Yeckley*

This gentleman was born in Gorham, Ontario Co., N. Y., in 1831; consequently, at the time of his death, which occurred on the 18th of March, 1875, he was just entering his forty-fifth year. At the age of twenty-two years he located at Ypsilanti, Mich., where he resided until 1860, when he removed with his wife to Hamilton township, Van Buren Co. He held the office of justice of the peace in Ypsilanti for several terms, being re-elected on account of his known capacity and unbending integrity. For the same reason he was chosen—and re-elected several terms—supervisor of the township of Hamilton, and received the handsome compliment of being elected chairman of the board of supervisors. In the fall of 1874 he was chosen to represent his district in the State Legislature, running far ahead of his ticket, his competitor being a fellow-townsmen, and a very capable and deservedly popular man. If, to do his whole duty to himself, his family, his neighbors, and the world—ever mindful of the Golden Rule, “Do unto others as ye would they should do unto you”—constitutes the true man, Mr. Yeckley, when weighed in the balance, was not

found wanting. No death which had occurred in the county for many years had caused more deep regret in the public mind, or given rise to a greater sense of public loss. His funeral was the most imposing ever witnessed in the county. It was under the direction of the grange of which he was an honored and useful member, the order of Odd-Fellows also participating. Several members of the Legislative body were in attendance. Mr. Yeckley was a thrifty and enterprising farmer, and at his death left an amiable and affectionate wife, whose maiden name was Eliza Reed, daughter of Samuel Reed. Six children were born to them, and five are living,—all at home. Mrs. Yeckley was born Jan. 11, 1829, in Connecticut, and came to Michigan when nine years old. She remains on the farm which her husband improved and owned when he died. The death of Mr. Yeckley, cut down in the midst of usefulness, is one of the mysterious dispensations of Providence. He died regretted by a host of friends, and his memory and that of his good deeds will long remain green in the hearts of the people of Van Buren County.



*A Barney*

#### AARON BARNEY

was born in the State of Massachusetts Oct. 11, 1785. In 1806 he removed to Jefferson Co., N. Y., and in 1821 to Michigan, landing at Detroit, where he remained one year. He then located at a point twenty miles west of that city, and three years later (1825) settled in Washtenaw County. In 1835 he came to Van Buren County, entering four hundred acres of land in Hamilton township, and eighty in Keeler. The land located in Hamilton was on sections 14 and 30, and in Keeler on section 25. Previous to emigrating to Michigan Mr. Barney was engaged in farming and milling, and after coming to Van Buren County was engaged in agricultural pursuits until his death, which occurred August 27, 1858.

June 10, 1804, he was married to Miss Cynthia Barney, and they became the parents of twelve children, of whom but three are living. Mrs. Barney died April 15, 1839; and on the 24th of May, 1840, Mr. Barney was married to Mrs. Lucy Millard, who died about 1872. During his life Mr. Barney held several offices of trust in his township.

In politics he was a Democrat, and in religious matters entertained liberal views. During his pioneer days in Michigan he experienced the various hardships and privations incident to backwoods



*A. M. Barney*

life, and at the end could contemplate a noble handiwork all his own.

#### AUSTIN M. BARNEY.

This gentleman was born in Jefferson Co., N. Y., Feb. 25, 1821, and was brought to Michigan at a very early age by his parents. As soon as his age and strength were sufficient he worked on the farm with his father, assisting in clearing the land and preparing it for cultivation. In 1840 he left the farm and found employment in a machine shop, and, after completing his trade, engaged as an engineer on the Mississippi River, which occupation he followed for ten years. The age and failing strength of his father rendered it necessary for the son to return to the farm, which he did; and he managed his father's business until the death of the latter, in 1858, when he assumed the entire control of the place, and continued to conduct the business thereof until 1871. In that year he purchased forty acres near the old homestead, and in 1879 added forty acres more. He has since become the owner of a farm of eighty acres in the township of Keeler. Nov. 4, 1861, he was married to Miss Caroline C. Barney, daughter of J. A. and A. Barney.

In political matters Mr. Barney has always voted and acted with the Democratic party.





In 1837 the settlers included Henry Coleman, Samuel Bradt, Jackson Pratt, and his brother Caulkert, George S. Bishop, Marcus Merriman, Calvin Field, and James Brooks. Bradt and Pratt have long since disappeared. Field and Merriman, who came in company from New York and located upon section 33, are both now out of the township. Field is in Kansas and Merriman in Paw Paw. Bishop went into the brick-making business, and put up a kiln on John Comley's place. The venture turned out a complete failure, for when the bricks were burned they crumbled to pieces, and Bishop, disgusted with the business, left and was heard of no more.

James Brooks bought land on section 33 of one Shepard, and with his little family, consisting of his wife and two children, set himself resolutely to the business of making a home in the forest wilds. That mission he bravely accomplished, and after a busy career of nearly forty years in Hamilton, he died in 1876, upon the place he first settled. He was one of the first members of the Methodist Episcopal society organized in the Field school-house, and remained one of its staunchest members until his death. Mr. Brooks was once lost in the woods so effectually that he wandered for four days and four nights, unable to find his way either to his home or to any other human habitation. Upon the termination of the first forty-eight hours of his absence the distress of his family aroused the settlers, and they organized with horns, guns, etc., a systematic search for the lost one. At the close of another forty-eight hours they found him, and a glad welcome they received. His children in Hamilton are Mrs. O. P. Maxon (whose husband came to the township in 1850), John and James Brooks, Mrs. Cyrus Youells, Mrs. Robert Sloan, and Mrs. George Sloan.

Marcus Merriman located land on section 33 in 1836, and in 1837 made a settlement. As neighbors he found Calvin Field, John Comley, Elisha Geer, George W. Geer, and Aaron Barney. Mr. Merriman, now living in Paw Paw village, recollects that the country was rather inviting in its character, consisting of oak openings, through which the eye could penetrate a long distance. Brush-fires in the woods used to occasion much alarm, and at times threatened settlers' dwellings when not carefully watched. Indeed, Mr. Merriman came very near losing his house by a fire of that kind, for returning home one evening he was just in season to see his fence ablaze, and threatening to sweep away his home,—a disaster which his timely arrival happily averted. Although not a famous hunter, he was nevertheless the hero of a bear-chase, in which he chased the bear, treed him, and eventually killed him, and transported his carcass homeward with feelings of lively satisfaction.

Of the pioneers who have been named above as having come into Hamilton during the years 1835-37, those who are known to be living now—January, 1880—are J. M. Lumbard, in Decatur; Sidney Stearns, G. W. Geer, Joseph McClintock, and Robert Nesbitt, in Hamilton; Marcus Merriman, in Paw Paw; and Calvin Field in Kansas. Among other early settlers were Barker, Thompson, Riddle, and several whose names cannot now be recalled; but their identification with the pioneer interest of Hamilton was a transitory one, and history can record their presence only as a passing incident. Leonard Tisdale, now residing

on section 33, had a prominent place in the foremost ranks of those who penetrated Hamilton as pioneers, as did Solomon Hagar, who lives now on section 28 with his son, S. B. Hagar, who has been supervisor of Hamilton since 1875.

George A. Bentley, Alexander Sloan, Ralph Mason, Eben Smith, and Palmer Earl were among the settlers of 1838 and 1839. Sloan was an Ohio man, and located with his family of a wife and eight children upon section 16, where he had a quarter-section of wild land, taken in exchange for his Ohio farm. He died upon that place in 1865. Of his sons, Alexander, Robert, and George now live in Hamilton.

Truman Foster, school-teacher and farmer, located in Hamilton in 1840, and remained a resident until his death. Before 1840 Mr. Foster taught school in Lawrence, and was the second school-teacher in that town.

Thomas Harris came from New York in 1842, with a family of fourteen children, and worked a place then owned by Henry McClure, and now by C. Duncombe, on section 17. He died in the township in 1863. His sons living in Hamilton are W. T., S. M., B. F., and S. R.

George Bennett, an early settler in Hamilton, now lives in Decatur village. His son John, residing in Hamilton, served during the civil war of 1861-65, as second lieutenant in the 4th Michigan Cavalry, and was a member of the detachment that effected the capture of Jefferson Davis.

In 1843, Stephen Osborn and wife, with a family of ten children, came from New York and settled in Hamilton, upon a place north of Osborn Lake. Mr. Osborn died in Hamilton in 1853. His widow still lives in the township, as do also his children,—Benjamin, James, Erastus, Horace, Charles, Harriet, and Mrs. Henry Geer.

The first child born in Hamilton was Mason Wakefield, whose natal day was July 5, 1836. The second was Mary, daughter of Robert Nesbitt. She was born in September, 1837, and died in her twentieth year.

The first marriage in the town was that of Robert Nesbitt and Maria, daughter of John Comley, all of Hamilton. The ceremony was performed at Mr. Comley's house Dec. 1, 1836, by John D. Freeman, a justice of the peace of Lawrence township, and although this was the pioneer wedding, it was a singularly quiet affair. True, the neighbors (what few there were) were at hand to wish the bride and groom unmeasured joy, but the wedding guests were few in number and composed of persons who, while earnest in their friendship, were not given to hilarity, for, in the pioneer days, joyous demonstrations were not so easily wrought out of the extremely matter-of-fact hardships and privations which intruded upon every hand.

The first death in Hamilton was that of a Mr. Knickerbocker, who, in the fall of 1835, located, with his family and his brother, upon the bank of the lake now bearing his name. Here he built a log shanty which, without floor, door, roof, chimney, or chimney, served as the habitation of the Knickerbocker family, until Knickerbocker, worn out by exhaustion and exposure, died in it of lung fever, only a few days after occupying the dwelling. Robert Nesbitt

and Zebina Stearns hearing of the case, went over and found, indeed, a cheerless picture. The dead man lay in one corner of the roofless hut, and a fire smoldered in another corner, while the weeping widow and children filled the measure of wretchedness. Stearns set out at once for Paw Paw for a coffin, and in due time returned in a sleigh with Peter Gremps and Elder Warner, the former having provided the coffin. Elder Warner preached the funeral sermon at the house, and, in accordance with Knickerbocker's dying wish, he was buried upon the island in the lake, and there his bones still lie. In the procession which followed him to the grave were the widow, Peter Gremps, Elder Warner, Robert Nesbitt, Zebina Stearns, William Knickerbocker, James and John Nesbitt, and one Wheeler, Robert Nesbitt's hired man. After her husband's death, Mrs. Knickerbocker returned to her friends in the East.

Sidney Stearns recites the story of the entrance of Lewis Johnson and his wife into Hamilton, as an illustration of how some pioneers began their arduous tasks in the Western wilds, literally with almost nothing save their hands as capital. He says that one day there came along the Territorial road to his father's door two foot-travelers, Lewis Johnson and his wife; he, with an axe over his shoulder and leading a cow, was followed by Mrs. Johnson, plodding wearily along under the weight of a bundle, which, with a bundle carried by Johnson, represented, together with the cow and axe, the sum of household effects possessed by the worthy pair. It was a slight outfit, it is true, but Johnson had secured his land and did not mind a short allowance of household supplies, since he knew his axe would do him good service, and the cow would do *her* share towards sustaining the family in one direction at least. The Johnsons stopped with Zebina Stearns until they completed their own cabin, and then, like their neighbors, struggled and fought for even the common necessities of life until persistence won success.

In September, 1837, Henry D. Coleman built upon the line of the Territorial road in Hamilton, on section 15, a commodious frame tavern, still standing and usually known as the "Brown Tavern." The Territorial road, passing through Hamilton from the west to the northeast, had up to that time no tavern upon it in that township; but in Keeler township there was a Territorial road stage-house, known as Keeler's. When Coleman completed his tavern, he set about providing business for it, and by shrewd tact succeeded in getting the stages to stop at his house instead of at Keeler's. Staging, as well as other travel, was very brisk at that road for many years previous to the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad, and as Coleman kept the stages at his house as long as the stage-route was maintained, he carried on a brisk and profitable business.

When Coleman got his tavern ready for trade he had just twenty-five cents in money on hand, and having a hotel, he wanted a store. Accordingly, he borrowed \$700, bought a small stock of goods, and opened business as a merchant in one corner of the tavern. Shortly after opening his house, Coleman succeeded in obtaining a post-office for Hamilton, and was himself appointed postmaster. He kept the office, of course, at the tavern, where it remained

until shortly after the abandonment of the stage-route, when the office was abolished, Coleman having been the postmaster continuously. After that Coleman moved to a farm on section 4, and died in 1857.

The pioneer blacksmith of Hamilton was Charles N. Poor, who had a shop at Keeler's tavern in Keeler when Coleman built the Hamilton tavern; but when the latter took the stage business from Keeler he followed with his shop to Hamilton, and stuck to the bellows at Coleman's as long as the stages stuck to the Territorial road, after which he went to California.

The first store in the township was opened, as has already been told, by Henry Coleman, in his roadside tavern, but as a place of trade it was rather insignificant. Aaron W. Broughton, who came to Hamilton in 1839, brought with him a stock of goods valued at about \$2000, and set up a store of some pretensions near Philotus Haydon's, and there transacted a flourishing business for some years. Mr. Broughton moved to Paw Paw and died there.

A saw-mill was put up in 1842 by one Trader, near Robert Nesbitt's, but it lasted only a brief period.

Grist-mills were not accessible to settlers of Hamilton in the early days, nearer than Flowerfield or Whitmanville, and carrying grist to mill was no pleasant task, but it was an important and necessary one, although there were times when the home-made corn-mill of tree-stump or tin pan had to suffice for temporarily supplying corn-meal, and deferred for a time the dreaded journey to mill. Hamilton was supplied by Robert Nesbitt with a grist-mill in 1856, and that, still doing good service, is the only grist-mill the township has ever had.

#### A WINTER FRIGHT.

It is told that during the "hard winter" of 1842-43 quite a number of the inhabitants became much exercised over the belief current in some quarters that the extraordinary snow-fall had been sent as an instrument for the ultimate destruction of the earth,—the theory being that the snow would, in melting, turn to oil, take fire, and so burn the world with everything upon it. Just how far that belief extended cannot be stated, but it is certain that it occasioned to some no little uneasiness, and somewhat disturbed the serenity of their existence until the advance of gentle spring turned the snow to water and warmed the blood of the timid into healthful action.

#### WOLF STORIES.

Of course wolf stories in endless profusion range through the early history of Hamilton, just as they do through the history of all early settlements in Michigan. Robert Nesbitt relates that while staining a coffin he had made for a man named Fenton,—killed in Keeler by the fall of a tree,—a pack of wolves, attracted by the odor of the liquid coloring, surrounded him, and despite his efforts to repel them they clung close to his cabin, and kept up a continuous howling the night through. The beasts frequently attacked Mr. Nesbitt's large watch-dog and chased him to the very cabin door. Coming home on foot from Kalamazoo, Mr. Nesbitt was attacked at nightfall by a pack of ravenous wolves, and he lost no time accordingly in climb-







*Robert Nesbitt*



*Sophia L. Nesbitt*

#### ROBERT NESBITT.

This gentleman, whose portrait appears above, was born near Belfast, Ireland, March 18, 1810, and emigrated to the United States in the spring of 1826, arriving in Plattsburgh, N. Y., on the 4th of May, and remained there six months. He then proceeded to Ann Arbor, Mich., and settled near that place March 23, 1827, and began work at the mill-wright's trade. In the fall of 1829 he removed to Kalamazoo County, and while there assisted in building the first saw-mill in the county. He took charge of the mill as sawyer, and prepared and sent to Kalamazoo the first load of lumber ever received there. In the spring of 1835 he located the first land entered in Hamilton township, Van Buren Co., settled upon it, and has since made it his home. His entry included three eighty-acre lots in the midst of a dense forest, and this has been transformed into his present excellent and finely improved farm. In 1871 Mr. Nesbitt erected the residence he now occupies,—one of the finest in the county. He has been the owner of three thousand acres of land, his farm consisting at present of four hundred and sixty acres. Soon after his location he began cutting the valuable timber on his place, manufacturing it into lumber, and shipping it in various directions. The first cargo of walnut lumber ever shipped around Cape Horn to California was furnished by Mr. Nesbitt, he being secured on it by real estate until returns were made. Five saw-mills were built and worn out by him in the manufacture of lumber, aside from a steam saw-mill in Allegan County.

Mr. Nesbitt has been twice married. His first wife was Miss Masia Comley, daughter of John Comley, to whom he was married Dec. 1, 1836, and who bore him four children,—Mary, Elizabeth, George, and Masia; of these but two are now living. Mrs. Nesbitt died October 6, 1857; and on the 18th of September, 1858, he was married to Mrs. S. L. Griffin, by whom he has also had four children,—Robert, Minnie, Nellie, and Dora; two of the number fell before the sickle of the great reaper, Death. Mr. Nesbitt is a well-known advocate of

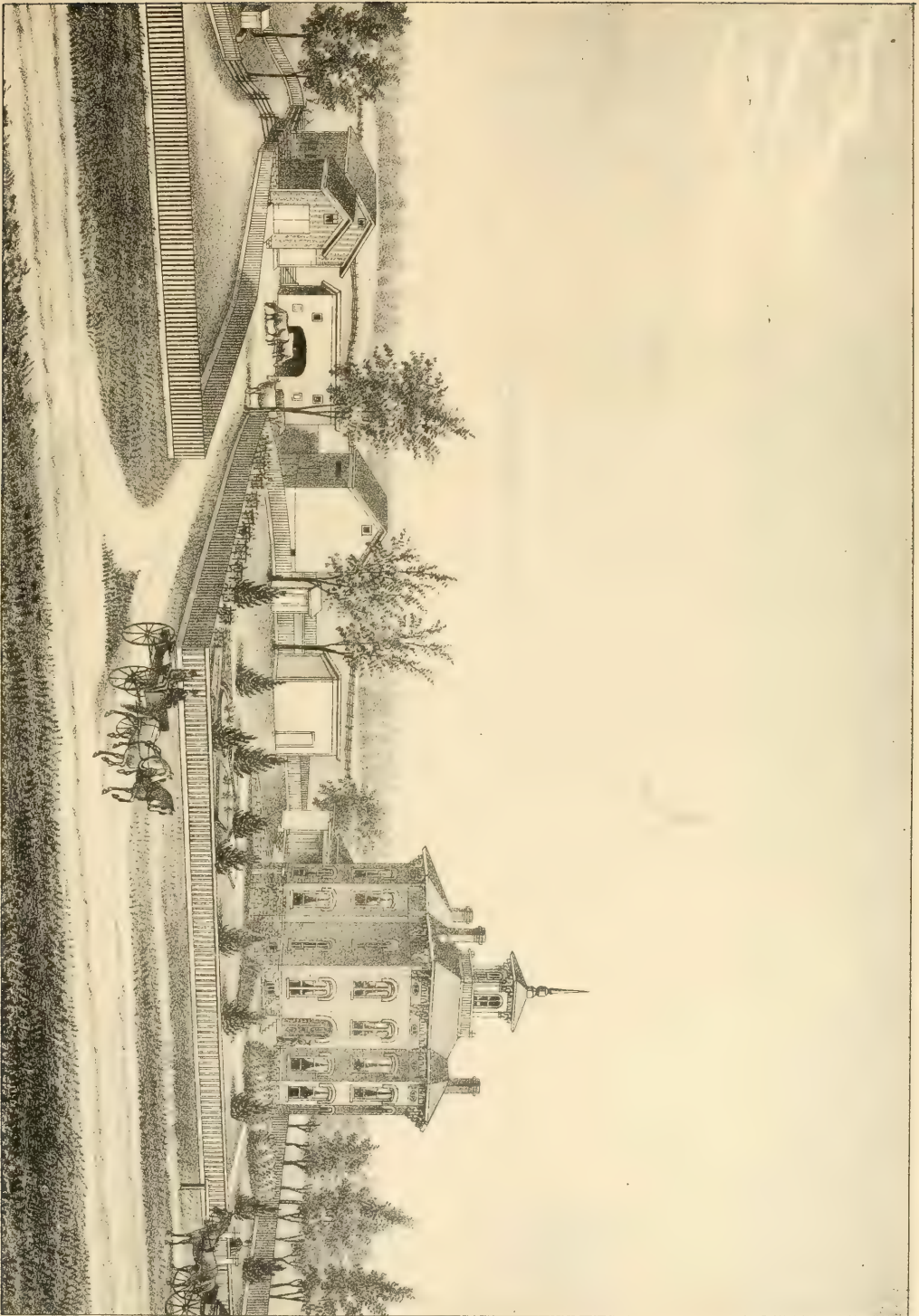
the doctrine of Spiritualism, and has devoted more than thirty years of his life to an investigation of the subject. He is a firm believer in the ministrations and manifestations of departed friends, and frequent meetings of those interested in the study of the doctrine are held at his house, and largely attended; prominent mediums from this and other States being often present.

Mr. Nesbitt, in summing up in December, 1879, said: "At this time I run one saw-mill and a grist-mill, beside a large farm, well stocked; am now in my seventieth year. I superintend all my own business, having but one son, who 'paddles his own canoe.' My health is good, my spirits light. I walk several miles every day looking after my business." Mr. Nesbitt's qualities have made him a leader in many things, and his integrity, through his long business career, has won for him the confidence of those with whom he has associated. He has made many friends, and his home is a place of hospitality and generous entertainment. His anecdotes of the days of pioneer life are ever interesting, and no man was better fitted than he for the duties of such a life. He is one of the few landmarks of a swiftly passing generation, and is

"Only waiting till the shadows  
Are a little longer grown,"

when he will join the innumerable throng of those who have gone before.

Mr. Nesbitt's father, George Nesbitt, emigrated to the United States in 1830, and purchased two thousand one hundred acres of land in Kalamazoo Co., Mich. He was engaged during his life in agricultural pursuits, and died July 22, 1843. The parents of Mrs. Robert Nesbitt came to "the States" about 1851, from Durham Co., Ont., Canada (where Mrs. Nesbitt was born Oct. 23, 1825), and settled in Breeds-ville, Van Buren Co., Mich. Her mother died in 1865, and her father in 1872.



RES. OF ROBERT NESBITT, HAMILTON, MICH.





ing a tree. He was about a mile from his home, and from the tree-top he could see the fire-light at his cabin, but the wolves waited for him with savage howlings at the foot of the tree, ready to pounce upon him as soon as he should descend. He was miserable enough indeed to be thus imprisoned, and to add to his discomfort the weather was bitter cold. Half frozen after a time, he became desperate. Determined to fight his way out at all hazards, he cut a heavy stick, and, descending rapidly to the ground, made such a fierce onslaught upon his foes that they fell back. Taking advantage of the truce, he ran to the next tree, and braced himself for another encounter just in time to receive the hungry pack which had returned to the charge. In that fashion he was compelled to fight his way homeward, and although he reached his cabin in safety, he was wellnigh worn out by the excitement and violent exertion.

The taking of deer was an easy matter, and venison became as an article of food so plentiful as to become distasteful. An old settler says that he once counted 27 deer within sight of his door-step, and from the top of a tree counted 52 feeding in his turnip-patch. James Brooks used to tell how when he cut a tree he found about 20 deer browsing upon it as soon as it fell, and they were so tame that they did not appear to mind his presence. When the woods resounded with the howls of wolves, the general expression among the settlers was that the beasts were holding "Mormon meetings," although *why* Mormon meetings no one stands ready to explain. On one occasion they held meeting to such good purpose as to carry off two stray calves belonging to Lewis Johnson. Caleb Bartlett and the Geers, then occupying neighboring cabins, set out with guns in response to the cries of the calves, and for a time the sport of wolf-chasing was fast and furious.

Two of Mr. Stearns' daughters going out towards evening in search of the cows, came suddenly upon the bovines just as the latter were flying pell-mell before a pack of wolves. The cattle were greatly demoralized, and that example the girls were not slow in following. Strange to say, the sound of human voices reassured the cows to that extent that they presently halted in their flight, while the wolves, disconcerted by the same agency, stopped short and vented their rage in howls. Each girl, crying loudly, and wofully frightened, seized the tail of a cow, and thus protected moved away from the threatening danger and reached home in safety.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND CIVIL LIST.

The territory now occupied by the townships of Keeler and Hamilton was set off under legislative act of March 11, 1837, as the township of Covington, and included a district six miles in width by twelve in length. In 1839 Covington was divided into two townships, that on the west being called Keeler, and that on the east Alpena. The record of proceedings at the first town-meeting in Alpena is given as follows:

"The qualified electors of the township of Alpena met at the house of Henry Coleman, April 1, 1839, for the purpose of organizing said township. Appointed Philotus Haydon Moderator and Ralph Mason Clerk; Henry Coleman, Robert Nesbitt, and George A. Bentley, Inspectors.

Whereupon township officers were elected as follows: Supervisor, George A. Bentley; Clerk, Henry Coleman; Treasurer, Marcus Merriman; Assessors, Ralph Mason, Philotus Haydon, and Henry Coleman; Constable and Collector, Ebenezer Lombard; School Inspectors, Ralph Mason, Calvin Fields, Jr., and James Nesbitt; Directors of the Poor, John Comley and Aaron Barney; Commissioners of Highways, Jackson Pratt, Philotus Haydon, Zebina Stearns; Justices of the Peace, Henry Coleman, Robert Nesbitt, Calvin Fields, Jr., and Ralph Mason; Overseers of Highways, Joseph B. Bradt, Marcus Merriman, George A. Bentley, Robert Nesbitt, Henry C. McClure, and Elisha Geer."

The name of Alpena did not suit the townspeople, and so, upon discussion, it was decided in 1840 to exchange it for that of Hamilton, in honor of the American statesman of that name, and Hamilton it has remained.

The names of the persons chosen annually, from 1840 to 1880, to be supervisor, clerk, treasurer, and justice of the peace are given in the following list:

- 1840.—Supervisor, G. A. Bentley; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, James Nesbitt; Justice of the Peace, S. F. Howell.
- 1841.—Supervisor, G. A. Bentley; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, James Nesbitt; Justice of the Peace, John Comley.
- 1842.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, James Nesbitt.
- 1843.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, James Nesbitt; Justice of the Peace, Robert Nesbitt.
- 1844.—Supervisor, G. A. Bentley; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, James Nesbitt; Justice of the Peace, P. Haydon.
- 1845.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, James Nesbitt; Justice of the Peace, Joseph McClintock.
- 1846.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, James Nesbitt; Justice of the Peace, C. Fields, Jr.
- 1847.—Supervisor, Palmer Earl; Clerk, S. R. Barker; Treasurer, James Nesbitt; Justice of the Peace, Robert Nesbitt.
- 1848.—Supervisor, Palmer Earl; Clerk, S. R. Barker; Treasurer, H. Coleman; Justice of the Peace, P. Haydon.
- 1849.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, H. Coleman; Treasurer, H. Coleman; Justice of the Peace, T. Foster.
- 1850.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, Truman Foster; Treasurer, H. Coleman; Justice of the Peace, John Baxter.
- 1851.—Supervisor, G. A. Bentley; Clerk, Truman Foster; Treasurer, Calvin Field; Justice of the Peace, R. Nesbitt.
- 1852.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, Truman Foster; Treasurer, Calvin Field; Justice of the Peace, Prentice Geer.
- 1853.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, Truman Foster; Treasurer, Calvin Field; Justice of the Peace, George Bennett.
- 1854.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, Truman Foster; Treasurer, Calvin Field; Justice of the Peace, F. K. Adams.
- 1855.—Supervisor, P. Haydon; Clerk, Truman Foster; Treasurer, Calvin Field; Justice of the Peace, T. Riddle.
- 1856.—Supervisor, H. Coleman; Clerk, Truman Foster; Treasurer, Calvin Field; Justice of the Peace, J. F. Tuttle.
- 1857.—Supervisor, R. Nesbitt; Clerk, H. A. Bradley; Treasurer, Charles Osborn; Justice of the Peace, O. Atkins.
- 1858.—Supervisor, T. Foster; Clerk, H. A. Bradley; Treasurer, G. A. Bentley; Justice of the Peace, John Baxter.
- 1859.—Supervisor, T. Foster; Clerk, H. A. Bradley; Treasurer, G. A. Bentley; Justice of the Peace, D. V. Sutfin.
- 1860.—Supervisor, T. Foster; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, G. A. Bentley; Justice of the Peace, Palmer Earl.
- 1861.—Supervisor, T. Foster; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, Joseph McClintock; Justice of the Peace, William Bee.
- 1862.—Supervisor, R. Nesbitt; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, D. V. Sutfin; Justice of the Peace, J. Baxter.
- 1863.—Supervisor, R. Nesbitt; Clerk, Irving Babcock; Treasurer, D. V. Sutfin; Justice of the Peace, M. D. Mapes.
- 1864.—Supervisor, R. Nesbitt; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, D. V. Sutfin; Justice of the Peace, Palmer Earl.

- 1865.—Supervisor, R. Nesbitt; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, P. Earl; Justice of the Peace, D. V. Sutfin.
- 1866.—No record.
- 1867.—Supervisor, G. G. B. Yeckley; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, A. H. Williams; Justice of the Peace, R. Hoppin.
- 1868.—Supervisor, G. G. B. Yeckley; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, A. H. Williams; Justice of the Peace, O. W. Field.
- 1869.—Supervisor, G. G. B. Yeckley; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, J. L. Harrison; Justice of the Peace, Oliver Geer.
- 1870.—Supervisor, G. G. B. Yeckley; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, J. L. Harrison; Justice of the Peace, S. P. Tuttle.
- 1871.—Supervisor, G. G. B. Yeckley; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, J. L. Harrison; Justice of the Peace, A. W. Haydon.
- 1872.—Supervisor, G. G. B. Yeckley; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, J. L. Harrison; Justice of the Peace, John Bennett.
- 1873.—Supervisor, G. G. B. Yeckley; Clerk, A. S. Wise; Treasurer, J. H. Smith; Justice of the Peace, Jarvis Skinner.
- 1874.—Supervisor, C. Field; Clerk, D. J. Lee; Treasurer, S. B. Hagar; Justice of the Peace, J. R. Hendryx.
- 1875.—Supervisor, S. B. Hagar; Clerk, D. J. Lee; Treasurer, E. Osborn; Justice of the Peace, Jacob High.
- 1876.—Supervisor, S. B. Hagar; Clerk, D. J. Lee; Treasurer, E. Osborn; Justice of the Peace, D. V. Sutfin.
- 1877.—Supervisor, S. B. Hagar; Clerk, D. J. Lee; Treasurer, E. Osborn; Justice of the Peace, E. F. Baxter.
- 1878.—Supervisor, S. B. Hagar; Clerk, D. J. Lee; Treasurer, E. Osborn; Justice of the Peace, W. Horton.
- 1879.—Supervisor, S. B. Hagar; Clerk, D. J. Lee; Treasurer, E. Osborn; Justice of the Peace, Philo Selby.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

Although Hamilton has enjoyed from time to time the benefit of local religious organizations, there has never been within its limits a church building, and town school-houses have therefore been called upon to do frequent duty as houses of worship.

Elder Levi Dewey organized a Disciple Church in 1877, and preached about a year at Grange Hall, but during the past year public worship by the congregation has been irregular. Methodist Episcopal preaching was occasionally enjoyed by the early settlers, for preachers of that faith paid close attention to the Michigan pioneers, and so public worship was available many times even before public schools brightened the prospect. Hamilton has not bestirred itself as briskly as some towns in the matter of religious worship, although the fact that there are churches in neighboring townships of easy access accounts doubtless for the lack of church organizations in this town at present. Thus there are in Hamilton to-day but two Methodist classes and the Disciple Church above mentioned.

#### BURIAL-GROUND

The first public burial-ground in Hamilton was laid out about 1840, on section 16, and in it the first person laid to rest was a Mr. Searls. The ground is still used, and is the only public burial-place in Hamilton. It covers 2½ acres, and is very handsomely laid out as well as embellished with many fine monuments.

#### SCHOOLS.

About 1837 or 1838 a Mrs. Millard, who lived with her daughter, Mrs. Bennett, taught a select school and Sunday-school at Mrs. Bennett's house. A Miss Litchfield, living in Pennsylvania, was brought to Hamilton by Robert Nesbitt, to teach his children, not long afterwards. The first district school in the township was taught in the "Red

School-house," near Coleman's tavern, in 1837, and had then twenty pupils.

The condition of the public schools of Hamilton, as shown by an official report for the year 1879, is given as follows:

Number of districts (1 fractional), 8; number of children of school age, 362; average attendance, 334; value of property, \$3200; teachers' wages, \$1308; total year's expenses, \$1574.

The school directors for 1879 were H. B. Smith, James Neville, Zebina Stearns, William Anson, John Reed, S. H. Mallory, M. C. Steele, J. B. Morehouse, R. H. Abbott.

#### HAMILTON GRANGE, No. 355,

was organized in March, 1874, with 84 members, and reached at one time as high as 100. Now, however, the membership is but 63. At the organization A. W. Haydon was Master; John Bennett, Overseer; and J. R. Hendryx, Lecturer. A. W. Haydon served three years as Master, and was succeeded by J. M. Weeks, whose term continued two years. The present officers are D. J. Lee, Master; John Read, Overseer; A. W. Haydon, Lecturer; J. Q. Adams, Steward; Edward Osborn, Assistant Steward; John Bennett, Chaplain; G. W. Wait, Treasurer; A. S. Wise, Secretary; S. H. Mallory, Gate-Keeper; Mrs. J. M. Weeks, Ceres; Mrs. Eliza Yeckley, Pomona; Mrs. J. Skinner, Flora; Mrs. John Bennett, Lady Assistant Steward.

The Grange Hall, in which sessions are held, was built in 1875.

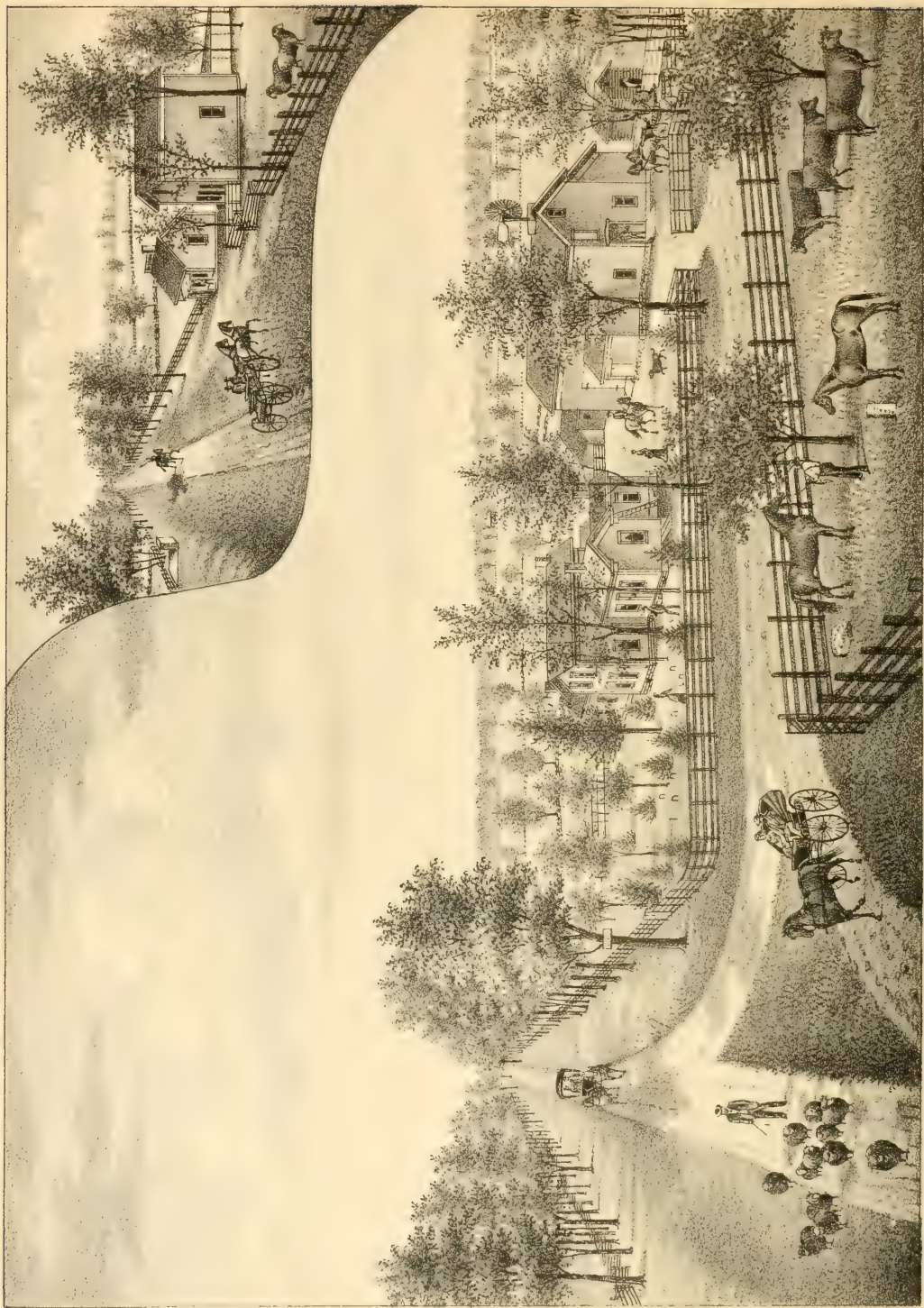
### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

#### CAPT. JOSIAH R. HENDRYX

was born in the town of Fairfax, Franklin Co., Vt., March 4, 1807. His father was David Hendryx, his mother Fanny (Hunt) Hendryx. His grandfather, Isaiah Hendryx, who settled in Bennington, Vt., in an early day, was a soldier in the Revolutionary war, and the subject of this sketch often says, with pride, that he was one of the party who prevented Molly Stark from becoming a widow at the memorable battle of Bennington. His father enlisted in the war of 1812, leaving his mother to support four small children. Josiah, the only son, being the second in age, with his sister, Almena, two years older, were put out at such places as could be found for them from time to time until Josiah was eleven years old, when he found a permanent home in the family of Gov. Jonas Galusha, of Shaftsbury, where he was treated with the greatest kindness. Having set his heart on being the owner of a piece of land, and hearing that a family in town (Stephen Sturdevant) were about to remove to what was then called the Genesee country, the lad (then seventeen years old) got permission to go and see him, when an entire day of persistent entreaty resulted in gaining permission to accompany him to the then far West. His father,—who had returned from a five years' service in the army and saved a little money,—with the balance of the family, accompanied the







OAK AVENUE FARM— RESIDENCE & STOCK FARM OF J. R. & H. J. HENDRYX, HAMILTON, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.  
BREEDER OF HAMBLETONIAN HORSES, JERSEY CATTLE & AMERICAN MEMBRIND SHEEP  
(PO. ADDRESS, DOWAGIO, MICH.)

party by canal to Rochester, and thence by team to Covington, Genesee Co., N. Y. Josiah remained with Mr. Sturdevant until Oct. 1, 1826, appropriating all his wages for the benefit of his father's family, when, learning there was wild land in Orleans Co., N. Y., the lad of nineteen started out on foot to look out a home for the family. He went into the township of Yates, where he worked one month for ten dollars, then took a job of chopping six acres, for which a portion of the pay was kindly advanced. He went to Batavia on foot, entered fifty acres of land at five dollars per acre, and returned to Covington. It required much persuasion to induce the family to remove to the then wilderness home, but Josiah returned and erected a log cabin for the family, which was occupied late in the fall. The winter was spent in chopping. In the spring, after getting in four acres of corn, Josiah took a job of fourteen acres to chop, in order to raise money to enter fifty acres adjoining the first purchase. At the age of twenty-one he

and well-to-do farmer, sold out and moved to Calhoun Co., Mich., where he bought several hundred acres of wild land. Hendryx remained with him twenty months, at the end of which time he was employed by the Hon. J. D. Pierce, then superintendent of public instruction, to take charge of a one-thousand-acre farm. Here he remained two years, then spent one year as overseer, building two miles of the Michigan Central Railroad near Albion, where he made the acquaintance of Marvin Hannahs, who was largely interested in tanning and lumbering in Van Buren County, and endeavored to secure his services in that business, but having purchased eighty acres of wild land three and a half miles west of Marshall, he commenced the improvement of it, which, with the assistance of his eldest son, Horatio J., he completed in two years. Then leaving it in charge of his son, only fifteen years old, he accepted the offer of Mr. Hannahs and entered his service, remaining seven years, during which time Mr. Hannahs built two grist-mills and



MRS. JOSIAH R. HENDRYX.



CAPT. JOSIAH R. HENDRYX.

entered forty acres for himself, and commenced its improvement.

At the age of twenty-three he married Evelyn Downs, then eighteen years old and eldest of a family of six,—three sons and three daughters. This young couple commenced the battle of life March 11, 1830. Seven years of incessant toil had placed them in independent circumstances when an unfortunate venture stripped them of everything which the law did not allow them, even to household furniture. Other parties in this enterprise shifted their property, a thing Hendryx could not be persuaded to do, saying, "I have decided to save this much out of the wreck, my good name and my credit, which with my hands shall constitute the capital to commence life anew." He hired out to the man who came in possession of his farm for thirteen dollars per month, his wife and two boys, Horatio and Lewis, going home to her father for the summer. During this time his father-in-law, Lemuel L. Downs, an intelligent, enterprising,

two saw-mills, Mr. Hendryx being the active man in all these enterprises. As remarked by a writer who a few years ago wrote up the various enterprises of the county, "Capt. Hendryx, mounted upon his faithful Crazy Jane, was the moving power that kept this harp of a thousand strings in constant tune."

In 1853 the Michigan Central Railroad Company established an office in New York City, and tendered Mr. Hendryx a subordinate position in it. He accepted the position, but rapidly advanced until he was the contracting freight agent of this great central route, the New York Central, Canada and Michigan Central each sharing in the payment of his salary, which had increased to three hundred dollars per month and expenses. All of his salary not needed for necessary expenses was sent home and judiciously expended by his son, until they jointly owned six hundred acres of choice land, with good buildings and fine stock. One incident will serve to show how well Horatio managed affairs



at home during his father's absence. The Agricultural Society offered a premium for the best-kept farm in the county; all farms entered were visited by a committee appointed by the society. Young Hendryx, then twenty years old, was induced to enter their farm, and we see now a silver cup at their home bearing this inscription: "Calhoun County Agricultural Society, Oct. 2, 1851. Presented to J. R. Hendryx, as a premium for the best farm." In 1861, Mr. Hendryx resigned his position in New York and returned to enjoy the fruits of his fifteen years' absence. Mrs. H. spent much of her time with her husband while in the city, and accompanied him in many of his business trips in the West.

In the fall of 1852, Horatio, being at his majority and the only living child, became joint owner of all real estate, and in the fall of 1867 they sold their farm, Horatio going to Decatur and engaging in the tanning business, and J. R. moving with his wife to the city of Marshall, where they remained until 1872. Becoming weary of separation from his only child, he removed with his wife to Decatur, and assisted in the business there until the fall of 1874, when they traded the tannery for the two hundred acres where they now live. They commenced at once to make additions, until they now have four hundred and sixty acres with good buildings and improvements.

In politics Mr. Hendryx is a Democrat, but he never gave much attention to parties until the outbreak of the Rebellion, from which time he has been prominent. When charged with disloyalty by the Republican press of his county he proposed, through the Democratic paper, to place one hundred dollars by the side of the same amount of any man in his county and compare war records, and the one who could show that he had given the most time and money to the support of the government during the war could take up the two hundred dollars. It is needless to say that the challenge was not accepted.

Josiah R. and Evelyn Hendryx have had six children, three dying in infancy, one at the age of five years, and the other in his ninth year. His only living child, Horatio J., married Ada Raven, Feb. 5, 1852. They have three living children, viz.: Lillian, now Mrs. C. T. Barter, of Chicago; Ada, aged fifteen, and Louis, aged thirteen. Three died young, Frankie being killed by the kick of a horse when he was four years old. Ten orphan children have been reared in the Hendryx family, and no corporal punishment has been inflicted under any circumstances. Mr. Hendryx once remarked in a public lecture that he would be proud to exhibit the whole party before that audience. He never made a public speech until he was fifty-nine years old; since that time he has become somewhat noted for that which has been tersely termed "sledge-hammer oratory." He has never sought office, never but twice been a candidate, and then much against his wishes, but in both cases ran ahead of his ticket; yet on the stump and through the press he has been a zealous advocate of Democratic principles. His influence and aid has often been sought and cheerfully given for the advancement of all public enterprises. A railroad enterprise from Coldwater north through Marshall being about thirty-five thousand dollars short on the subscriptions to its stock, and little hope entertained of raising it, as a last resort called

Mr. Hendryx from Decatur to take hold of the matter. He made public speeches, canvassed all along the line on foot, and finally succeeded in raising every dollar.

He celebrated his seventy-third birthday March 4, 1880, and with his faithful wife, who has shared with him in all life's battles, celebrated their golden wedding March 11, 1880. As to education, Mr. Hendryx has been often heard to say that the outside world has been his school-master; all he knew of the world he had learned by mixing with it; all he knew of business he had learned by transacting it, and if he ever had any polish in his manners, he had rubbed it off from some polished individual with whom he had come in contact.

Mrs. Hendryx is a zealous member of the Baptist Church in Marshall; she united with it by letter in 1840, when the first society was organized, and only two of the original members now survive,—Mrs. Hendryx and Mrs. Lusk. Mrs. Hendryx devotes much of her time in assisting missionary societies and other projects which are intended to promote the spread of the gospel. Mr. Hendryx has always given his support to this church. Although not a professor of religion, he says he never could shut his eyes to the fact that church influences produce salutary results. And now we find this well-preserved old couple enjoying the respect and esteem of the community in which they live surrounded by many friends. They have given to their friends, in this work, a fine view of their home, and their portraits, which will remain as monuments to their memory. They have walked life's journey together for fifty years,—years which have brought sunshine and sorrow to their home; but to-day they enjoy more than ever each other's society and the visits of their many friends, who are always welcome to their hospitable home. Long may they yet live to enjoy the fruits of their industrious youth.

#### PHILOTUS HAYDON.\*

No man who ever lived in Van Buren County was more universally honored and esteemed while living, and more sincerely and generally mourned when dead, than Philotus Haydon, whose portrait appears in connection with this sketch. There are many now in easy circumstances living in this vicinity, where Mr. Haydon lived from the year 1836 to the time of his death, who often refer with emotion to the timely assistance he rendered them when struggling for existence in the early settlement of the country. Never was he known to take advantage of a man's necessities, never taking more than simple interest—and often none at all—on even a note. No honest man, however poor, was ever turned away empty-handed when applying to him for assistance. If by misfortune he lost a horse or an ox out of his team, he knew right well where to go to supply its place. No one who ever knew this large-hearted man, and reads the above, will say that it does him more than simple justice.

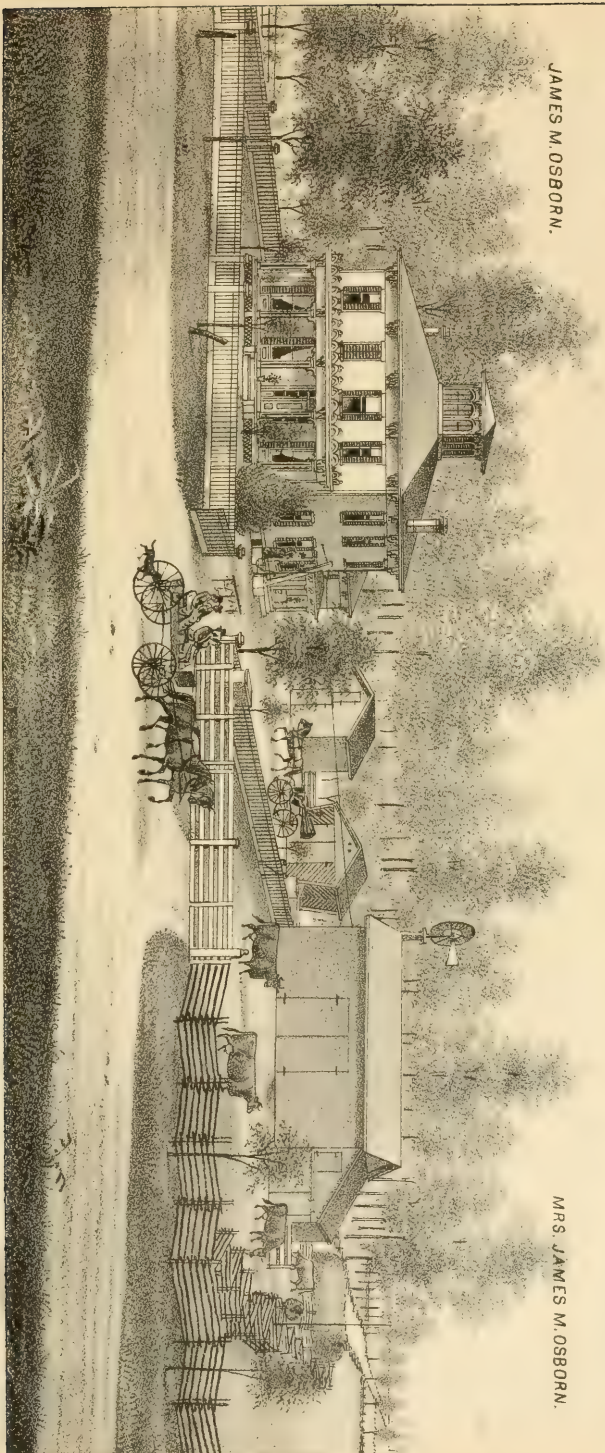
Mr. Haydon was born in Montgomery Co., N. Y., in the year 1810. When quite a young man he went to Brandon, Vt., and engaged in the mercantile business; there he married Mary A., daughter of Aaron W. Broughton of that



JAMES M. OSBORN.



MRS. JAMES M. OSBORN.



RES. OF JAMES M. OSBORN, HAMILTON, MICH.





place, soon after removing to Hamilton, Van Buren Co., Mich., where he located one thousand acres of land in the year 1836, and began at once to make extensive improvements, and soon had an abundance with which to supply settlers who came in after him. He sold a portion of his large domain, but at the time of his death, which occurred March 10, 1866, owned about seven hundred acres. The



PHILOTUS HAYDON.

fruits of his marriage with Miss Broughton were two sons,—Charles B., born in the year 1834, who enlisted as a private in the 2d Michigan Infantry at the outbreak of our late civil war, and soon rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and in 1864 died of wounds received at Jackson, Miss. The other son, Arthur W., was born April 22, 1844, and about the year 1870 married Miss Elizabeth Baker, daughter of Hiram Baker, Esq., of Keeler township, and settled on a portion of the old homestead set off to him by the administrators, where he now lives in a neat and commodious dwelling on a well-cultivated farm, and ranks among the best citizens of this township. Mrs. (Broughton) Haydon died in 1848, and Oct. 24, 1850, Mr. Haydon married Adelia E. Buck, by whom he had three children,—F. Mortimer, born Feb. 24, 1859; Mary A., born Aug. 19, 1861; Blanche, born Aug. 16, 1865. Mortimer is at present engaged in a store in Decatur. Mary A. and Blanche are completing their education in the Ann Arbor University. The mother of these three children died very suddenly in Decatur, Jan. 24, 1877, while coming for her children in attendance at that school. She was a lady of rare accomplishments, loved and esteemed by all who knew her, and, like her honored husband, was most heartily mourned at her death.

Mr. Haydon never professed or talked religion, but would every day of his life do more real Christian acts than nine-tenths of those who do profess and talk much.

In politics he was a Republican, and was an able advocate of his principles upon the stump. He served in the State Legislature from 1844 to 1851, also in 1859. Was elected supervisor of his township as long as he could be induced to serve.

#### JAMES M. OSBORN,

the son of Stephen Osborn, who removed from Connecticut to Vermont, and thence to New York, was born in East Windsor, Conn., and engaged in farming with his father until he was twenty-one years of age, when he rented a farm in Steuben Co., N. Y., and began work for himself. Three years later he caught the "Western fever," and emigrated to Michigan, with his wife and one child. The journey was accomplished with a team and wagon, in which latter were stowed all his worldly goods. His capital was in the form of health and unlimited energy, and possessing these he felt assured the labor of his hands would in time bring him prosperity. He and his brother Daniel purchased a tract of ninety-three acres, and worked it in partnership. At the end of four years he sold his interest to his brother, and purchased eighty acres in Hamilton township, to which four hundred acres have since been added. His father, Stephen Osborn, settled in the county in the fall of 1844, after his sons had located, and purchased forty acres of land, on which he lived until his death. His family consisted of eighteen children, nine by each of his wives,—he being twice married. J. M. Osborn married Miss Julia R. Allen, daughter of Samuel Allen, and she has borne him the following children: Gideon A., Catharine S., Edward A., and Eliza. Three of these are now living. Mrs. Osborn died Dec. 17, 1871, and on the 17th of March, 1872, Mr. Osborn married Martha J. Warren, who was born in Ohio, June 17, 1834. Politically, Mr. Osborn is a Democrat, and is liberal in religious matters.

#### ERASTUS OSBORN

is the oldest son of Stephen Osborn, by his second wife, and was born March 24, 1838, in Ossian, Allegany (now Livingston) Co., N. Y. The family was formerly from Vermont, and of Welsh descent. Mr. Osborn's mother was a daughter of Benjamin Hungerford, a well-known woolen-manufacturer in Allegany County, who moved to Michigan in 1840, Stephen Osborn following in 1844, and remaining at Mr. Hungerford's during the succeeding winter. March 24, 1845, Stephen Osborn and family settled on section 20, in the township of Hamilton, Van Buren Co. Mr. Osborn's death occurred in March, 1853, and his widow, having nearly completed her threescore and ten years, resides on the old homestead.

Erastus Osborn, during the year after his father's death, worked with Mr. A. Barney, then for three years "by the job," and for fifteen years with a thrashing-machine. In March, 1858, the rumors from the Pike's Peak mining region induced him to journey thither, but before the company was quite ready to start he was disabled, by the kick of a horse on his knee, and forced to remain at home until some time after the others had left, sending his teams and effects along with them, however. He overtook them by rail in Illinois. This company was one of the few that made the trip through to Denver, and stayed four weeks in Boulder. Mr. Osborn, whose dreams of fortune vanished when the stern realities of the position became apparent, returned to Iowa, where he remained two months, proceed-

ing from there homeward, reaching the farm in November, with one hundred dollars left. In company with his brothers, Benjamin and Horace, he commenced in earnest to carve out a home. Hon. Philotus Haydon and Robert Nesbitt, two worthy pioneers of Hamilton township, furnished them respectively with land and money, on credit, and gave them some good advice. The struggle to meet these obligations was a severe one with the brothers, but



*Erastus Osborn.*

they finally triumphed, and had cause to keep in grateful remembrance the men who had befriended them. In 1864 a portion of their land was exchanged for what was known as the Whitlock farm. In 1865, Erastus Osborn purchased the interest of his brothers, and now owns the entire farm. March 24, 1864, he was married to Annette M. Lascelle, a native of Jefferson Co., N. Y. Miss Lascelle was a teacher, and under her instruction Mr. Osborn passed a winter when in his twenty-fourth year. He yet insists that she was the best teacher he ever knew. Their children are two in number,—Mary E., born in October, 1865, and Luona A., born in October, 1866. They have both been educated at home, yet Mr. Osborn has been much interested in the cause of education, and has exerted his influence for good schools in his own district. This is owing largely to the fact that his own advantages in this respect were exceedingly limited. He has, however, a thoroughly practical knowledge. With neither money nor material, he at one time contracted to build a school-house in sixty days, and successfully completed the work. He is a Democrat in politics, and in 1875 was elected township treasurer, holding the office five successive terms, being elected the first time by twenty-two and the last time by fifty-six majority, and this is an acknowledged Republican township. Mr. Osborn aims to make his "word as good as his bond," and professes no other religion than the desire to do always as he agrees. His experience as a pioneer included such episodes as drawing corn and wheat twenty-five miles, with ox-teams, to market, and selling them respectively for fifteen

and forty cents per bushel. His wife has long been an invalid, and his efforts have, consequently, been in a great degree single-handed; yet he has always maintained a large household, and was never known to turn a traveler from his door, whether rich or poor. "*Rastus Osborn will keep you,*" are words which have been spoken many times to tired and dusty wayfarers, and the assertion was ever fully realized as true. Many families of emigrants have been fed and sheltered by him, and if without food, furnished with sufficient for several meals, and sent on their way rejoicing; and Mr. Osborn is confident that in the North and West are many warm friends who in such manner partook of his bounty. He is a slave to no bad habits; does not use tobacco in any form; is a man of correct principles; is far-sighted in business affairs; possesses fine executive ability and unflinching energy; is a kind husband and father, a true friend, and ever ready to forget differences which may arise with others. He, in a word, commands the universal respect of his acquaintances.

#### JOHN BENNETT.

George Bennett was born Sept. 16, 1811, and in 1824 removed, with his parents, to Ann Arbor, Washtenaw Co., Mich., from the State of New York. Oct. 24, 1830, he was married to Miss Eliza Barney, and moved to Unadilla, Livingston Co., in 1835, with his wife and two children. Six children were born to them in the latter township, and in 1849 they again directed their footsteps westward, and located in Hamilton township, Van Buren Co. Here a ninth child was born, and here they resided until the spring of 1855, when they left the farm and settled in the village of Decatur, where they are still living. Mr. Bennett has been engaged in various occupations,—farming, grain-thrashing, railroading, lumbering, and stone and brick mason-work.

John Bennett, the eldest son of George, was born at Ann Arbor, Washtenaw Co., Mich., Nov. 17, 1834, and on the 17th of November, 1855, was married to Lucy M., youngest child of Calvin D. and Lucy Millard. She was born in Lyme, Conn., March 30, 1836. The newly-wedded pair settled the following spring in Decatur, which was their home until August, 1865. When, in the summer of 1862, the President issued a call for troops to aid in suppressing the rebellion, Mr. Bennett enlisted in the 4th Michigan Cavalry, and served under Gens. Rosecrans and Thomas. He was captured in the Atlanta campaign, and was in prison three months at Andersonville and two months at Florence, S. C. After being exchanged he returned to his regiment, and found a second lieutenant's commission awaiting him. He took a prominent part in the capture of the petticoated and fugitive president of the Confederacy, for which he was brevetted first lieutenant, and received his share of the reward of one hundred thousand dollars, which had been offered. He was honorably discharged after three years of active service, and purchased and moved upon the farm he now occupies. It was then in a sadly-neglected condition, but through the energy of Mr. Bennett and his wife has been brought to its present state of order and thrift.



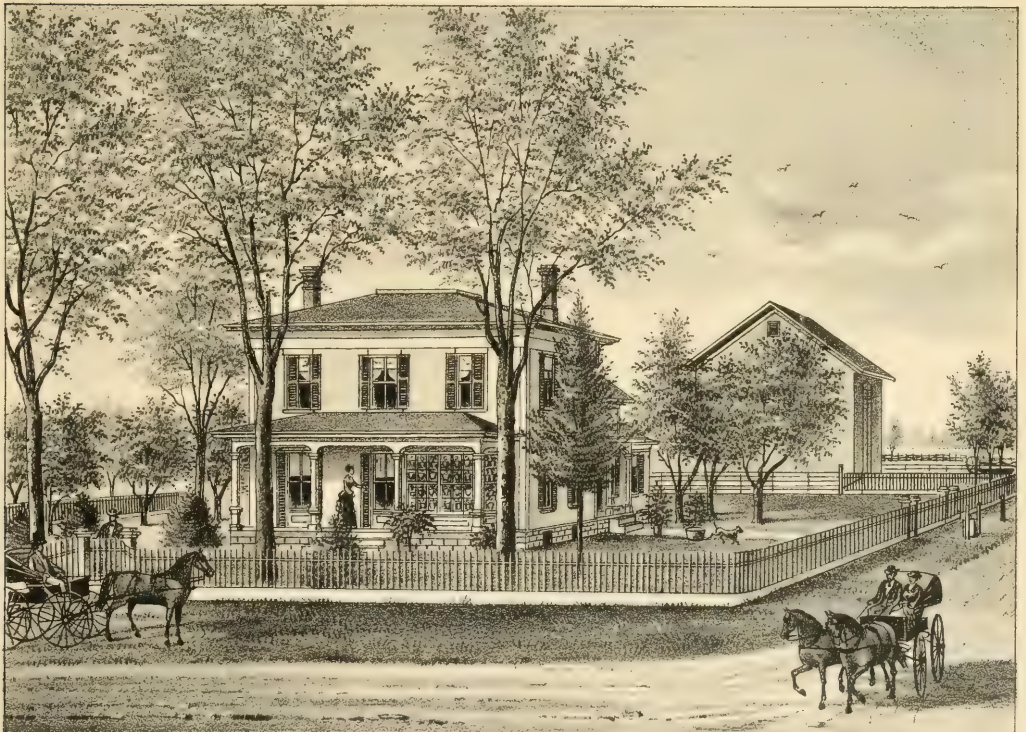


JOHN BENNETT.



MRS. JOHN BENNETT.

PHOTOS BY GOLDEN & ROBINSON



RESIDENCE OF JOHN BENNETT, HAMILTON TP, VAN BUREN CO, MICH.





Mrs. Bennett's mother, Mrs. Millard, who came with her husband and family to Michigan in 1837, was called upon to endure many hardships in the pioneer days of the settlement. Her husband died in 1838, leaving her and a young family to be provided for. Mrs. Millard, who had been reared in a city, was unaccustomed to the privations of frontier life, yet she fought with difficulties and overcame them, as only a pioneer mother in such a strait could. At one time the grist-mill was broken, there was no bread in the house, nor a single ounce of flour in the neighborhood. Her babe was crying for bread, and it seemed in vain. Finally, however, she thought of the coffee-mill, and those of the family old enough were set at work grinding, and at

last meal sufficient for a loaf was prepared, sifted, and baked, and hunger was appeased, and the children's faces were once more wreathed in smiles. The first Sabbath-school and the first common-school in Hamilton township were taught by Mrs. Millard, in her own house, the pupils being her own and the neighboring children. The nearest trading-post was many miles distant, and clothing and all articles of food, except wild game, could be procured no nearer. Game was furnished in abundance by a younger brother, Ralph Mason. Mrs. Millard was a professed Christian for more than forty years, and died at the residence of her son-in-law, John Bennett, Feb. 19, 1872, in the seventy-eighth year of her age.



JOHN QUINCY ADAMS.

## JOHN QUINCY ADAMS,

whose portrait, together with that of his wife, appears on this page, was born in the town of Andover, Allegany Co., N. Y., Sept. 8, 1837. He lived there with his father until Sept. 8, 1857, when, with the family, he removed to Michigan, residing at home until he was twenty-five years of age, and assisted his father in clearing up and paying for two hundred and seventy-eight acres of new land on the west line of the town of Hamilton. In April, 1862, he built a cabin on his father's farm, and on Dec. 25, 1862, he married Jane K. Jacobs, who was born in the town of Comstock, Kalamazoo Co., June 3, 1839. She lived with her father until she was married; went to housekeeping in April, 1863.

Mr. Adams lived in the cabin on his father's farm until May 1, 1865, and in that humble abode their first child—Emma Jane—was born. In the month of January, 1865, he bought the farm where he now lives, containing one hundred and sixty acres. The following April he cleared the spot where his dwelling now stands, and on the 1st day of May moved into it. He at once commenced to improve his land. In the summer of 1866 he built on his place a commodious barn, and in June, 1879, bought fifty-three acres adjoining his first purchase, making his present domain two hundred and thirteen acres, with one hundred and



MRS. JOHN QUINCY ADAMS.

sixty acres under improvement, including orchards and comfortable buildings.

The fruit of the union of Mr. and Mrs. Adams has been four children,—Emma Jane, born Sept. 17, 1864; B. E., born Aug. 30, 1866; John Q., Jr., born Nov. 19, 1869; Gertie, born March 17, 1876, died Oct. 28, 1877.

It will be seen that the subject of this notice gave the first four years after arriving at his majority to the securing of a home for his parents and the younger members of the family, where the father, with two younger brothers, now live, his mother having died Sept. 16, 1878. After achieving this praiseworthy object, he unaided set out to secure the same comforts for himself, and with the hearty co-operation of his frugal and faithful wife has within the short space of fifteen years made himself a comfortable home.

In religious matters Mr. Adams holds liberal views. Politically, he is a staunch Democrat, although never taking any active part in politics. He and his wife were charter members of the Hamilton Grange, and have much of the time held office in it since it was organized, six years ago. Mr. Adams was the second in a family of ten children,—six boys and four girls,—all now living but the oldest, who was a daughter, and all but the two youngest boys are married and settled in life. Six of them live in the town of Hamilton and vicinity.



WILLIAM HORTON.



MRS. WILLIAM HORTON.

Photos. by Prichard, Decatur.

## WILLIAM HORTON.

This gentleman was born in Deerfield, Portage Co., Ohio, Sept. 21, 1815. Mrs. William Horton was born in Palmyra, Portage Co., Ohio, Feb. 1, 1817. Mr. William Horton, Sr., father of the above, died in 1835. His wife died in 1875. The subject of this sketch lived in Ohio until the year 1846, when he removed to Berrien Co., Mich., and purchased eighty acres of land, and after clearing up a portion of it he traded it for one hundred and sixty acres in Pipestone township, Berrien Co. He also cleared the latter and improved it to some extent, then sold and bought again in Silver Creek, Cass Co., Mich. The last farm consisted of one hundred and twenty acres. Having a desire to own a larger one, he again sold, and moved to Hamilton township, Van Buren Co., and purchased two hundred and thirty-five acres, upon which he is now living. Mr. Horton married Miss Matilda, daughter of Gibson and Mary McDaniel. This union has been blessed with eleven children, of whom six are living. The names are Worthing B., Emily, William, Isaac, Vincy, Gibson M., Dwight, Richmond P., Emeline, Asa, and Eliza. One of the sons is living in California and two are in Missouri. Mr. Horton has always been interested in the advancement of his township, devoting a part of his time to its business. He was an assessor in Ohio, a commissioner in Berrien County, and at present is a justice of the peace, which office he has held about six years. He is a member of the Disciples' Church. In politics is a Democrat. There were eight children in his father's family, of whom but three survive. Mr. Horton is in the sixty-fifth year of his age, and is considered one of the substantial men of his township. His house is always a home for his grandchildren, fourteen of whom are living, three being deceased; five of these are at his home at this time.

## A. S. WISE.

This gentleman was born in Washington township, Morris Co., N. J., June 14, 1830. In 1832 he removed with his father to Livingston Co., N. Y., the father, Andrew Wise, locating on a farm. In 1855 the son, who until that time had remained on the home-farm, decided to search for a suitable location in the West for a future home for himself and wife,—he having, on the 22d of March, 1855, married Miss Hannah J. Read, daughter of Ezekiel S. and Delilah Read, who was born in Sparta, Livingston Co., N. Y., Jan. 12, 1832. Turning their faces westward, they began a long journey, and in the same year they were married located in Hamilton township, Van Buren Co., Mich., on one hundred acres of land, which Mr. Wise purchased and which is still their home; to it sixty acres have since been added. Mr. and Mrs. Wise are the parents of two children,—Eda D., born Nov. 2, 1857, and H. Evelyn, born Nov. 15, 1863; both are living at home with their parents. Mr. Wise is also the owner of one hundred and forty acres of land in Oakland Co., Mich. Politically he is a Republican, and has filled several township offices. In religious matters he is liberal. He has been an active farmer through life, and has devoted much time to the improvement of his stock; sheep, of which he at present has a fine flock, and swine being his specialties.

## JOHN H. COLLINS.

Prominent among the thrifty and prosperous farmers of Hamilton township, Van Buren Co., Mich., is John H. Collins, who was born in Erie Co., N. Y., Nov. 6, 1846, and came to Decatur, Mich., in 1859, with his father, Henry Collins. He was engaged in farming until 1871, when he entered business as a grocer at Grand Junction,





J. H. COLLINS.



MRS. J. H. COLLINS.



RES. OF J. H. COLLINS, HAMILTON,  
MICH.



Van Buren Co. At the expiration of three years he rented a farm in Hamilton township, and occupied it three years. In 1878 he purchased the farm of one hundred acres, in the same township, on which he now resides. In 1873 he was married to Miss Ellen M. Beattie, daughter of Isaac and Jane Beattie, who was born in Van Buren Co., Mich., Nov. 20, 1845, and by her has two children,—Fannie J., born May 10, 1875, and John Guy, born Oct. 17, 1876. Mr. Collins acts with the Republican party in political affairs, but is a quiet worker, and not a man who desires publicity. In his religious views he is liberal. Mr. Collins, who was but a small boy when he came to this State, and began life without capital and is still a young man, has been remarkably successful in business, and is one of the most prosperous and enterprising farmers in the township. Everything on his premises evinces taste and thrift.

## CHAPTER LXII.

### KEELER TOWNSHIP.\*

Location, Surface, and Waters—Early Settlements—Territorial Roads—Township Organization and List of Officers—The Village—Societies and Orders—Religious Societies—Schools—Forest Home Camping Ground.

#### LOCATION, SURFACE, AND WATERS.

KEELER, the southwestern corner township of Van Buren County, is composed of 36 full sections, and is known and distinguished on the United States survey as township 4 south, range 16 west. It is bounded on the north by the township of Hartford, on the east by Hamilton, on the south by the township of Silver Creek, in Cass County, and on the west by Bainbridge township, Berrien Co. The surface of the township is generally level. Originally a large part of the township was burr-oak openings, but in some parts was covered with scrub-oak. For agricultural purposes the township is in advance of any other in the county. Its soil is a fine sandy loam, and is particularly adapted to the successful cultivation of wheat, and is all in a high state of cultivation, having no waste lands. Steady, persistent industry and energy, with the richness of the soil, have brought to its fortunate owners an abundance of this world's goods, as is shown by the excellence of their farm residences and buildings.

The township is watered by small streams rising in the central part and flowing west and joining branches that flow into the Paw Paw River, and one that rises in the east and flows easterly through the south part of the township. There are a number of lakes, among the largest being Round and Crooked Lakes that lie near together in the southwest part, on sections 31 and 32; Magician Lake, in the south part of section 34; Keeler Lake, in the east part of section 23; Brown Lake, in the east part of sections 20 and 29; and two in the west part of section 17.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The townships along the lake-coast having accessible harbors and landing-places were visited by persons in search of

lumber and wood and eligible locations for mills, and whose object was not permanent settlement, but simply the cutting and manufacture of lumber.

The townships lying back from the coast were not even sparsely settled till about 1833-34, when emigrants began to come in from the East to look for lands and to locate farms; Decatur leading the townships in the county and having the first settlers in Dolphin Morris and Henry Swift, who remained two or three years before they were joined by any others. The first to come in this township were John and James Nesbitt, natives of Ireland, who bought 120 acres of government land, in the southeast quarter of section 14, in the summer of 1834. They built a tent of two crotched sticks driven into the ground, a pole placed across the top and poles down the sides, all covered with marsh hay. Here they lived until the middle of the summer of 1835, when they sold to Wolcott H. Keeler. John Nesbitt is still living, and resides in Porter.

The next to locate was Tobias Byers. He was a native of Pennsylvania, and when young went to Sparta, Livingston Co., N. Y., with his parents. In February, 1835, he left home for Michigan, traveling by stage and private conveyance through Buffalo, Cleveland, and Coldwater to Illinois, where he remained four months, and came to what is now the township of Keeler, examined the country, and went to the land-office at Bronson (now Kalamazoo) on foot, and located 120 acres of land on the east half of section 19 and 240 acres on the east half of section 13. He cut logs for a house on section 19, then went back to New York, and remained till about the last of October. Isaac De Long and David Byers (his brother) came with him, and raised the log house for which he had made preparations in the spring. David Byers soon returned to New York, but afterwards settled in Bainbridge. Isaac De Long hired out to W. H. Keeler to work by the month. Tobias Byers worked one month for John B. Freeman, near Prospect Lake, and boarded most of the time with Mr. Keeler. His early life in the country was passed in locating land for settlers, and in clearing and breaking up land for others, a business which he followed for about fifteen years. In 1850 he built a frame house on section 13, in the east part of the town, and carried on the farms in both places at the same time, living the most of the time on section 13 after the house was built. In 1856 he married Jeannette Wilson, and they now live on the east farm. Mr. Byers has been elected justice of the peace several times, and has held other township offices.

Wolcott H. Keeler was a native of Vermont, and on the last day of June, 1835, came into the township a week after Tobias Byers, and bought of Nesbitt the 40 acres in the southeast quarter of section 14, and 80 acres on the southwest quarter of section 13, at five dollars per acre, and then went to Bronson and located the west half and northwest quarter of section 24 at 10s. per acre, this making a total of 480 acres of government land. He returned to Vermont, but in the fall of that year came back with his son Eleazer and his daughter Almira. They erected a log house, afterwards building to it a frame addition. This house was built where the brick dwelling of John Rosevelt stands. Mr. Keeler returned to Vermont after the

\* By A. N. Hungerford.



house was built. His son Simon, in the winter of 1835-36, drove through from Vermont with a team and a load of household goods, and in the spring of 1836 Mr. Keeler and his wife and daughter Ursula came round by the way of the lakes to St. Joseph, and then came in on the newly-surveyed track of the Territorial road.

Mr. Keeler laid out a village at the place where he built his house. The house was made a tavern. The stage-route passed through here, on the Territorial road, and for a time it bade fair to become a village; but, like many others, it was simply on paper. The Keeler family remained here till in 1850 and sold 570 acres to John Roosevelt, who now lives on the place. Eleazer Keeler was the first town clerk of Keeler, in 1839, and filled other positions of trust in the township. A store was kept here also by the Keelers in 1836. Harlow Wright was a blacksmith in 1837.

James Hill, a native of Vermont, emigrated to New York when twenty-one years old, and to this place in May, 1836, with his wife and his children,—Whiting S., Lyman G., James A., Mary, and D. Clinton Hill. Mr. Hill bought the west half of the northwest quarter of section 11. Mr. Hill was supervisor in 1839; Lyman G., his son, was supervisor from 1848 to 1852, and from 1854 to 1856. At that time Tobias Byers was living on section 19, and Keeler was on section 14. His son, Justus Hill, came from Vermont in 1840, and settled on part of his father's farm, in the east half of the northwest quarter of section 10. In 1865 he removed to the present village of Keeler, where he still lives. In 1840, when Justus Hill came in, the place was still a wilderness. In the north lived Henry Hammond, Peter Williamson, R. B. Everett, these being in the township of Hartford. Theodore Phelps lived south and east, on section 25. South and west was William Earle, on the southeast quarter of section 28, where William Warren now lives. On the south, beyond Keeler Centre and on to Cass County, no one was then located.

Willard Dodge, a native of Jefferson Co., N. Y., in the winter of 1835-36 located government land as follows: the west six lots of section 26; all of section 27; the east half of southeast quarter of section 21; the north half of the southwest quarter of section 2; and 160 acres of the south part of the north half of section 3; and also lands in Hartford township. Ira Foster, a native of Madison Co., N. Y., with his wife and child and brother Truman, came into the township, bought land of Wolcott H. Keeler, on the northwest quarter of section 15, and on the 7th day of April, 1837, commenced to chop and to build a log cabin. He worked alone for seven years with two yoke of oxen, breaking up land. He was one of the first to form a Methodist class, in 1840. His nearest neighbor was James Hill, on section 11, on the north; on the south was Samuel Treat, at Silver Creek, in Cass County; Keeler on the east; and Tobias Byers on the west. Mr. Foster lives on section 16, across the road from his first settlement. Benjamin Hungerford came from Livingston Co., N. Y., in 1837, with his wife and a large family of children, and moved first into the house of Tobias Byers, on section 19. That house was used by many of the early settlers till their own cabins could be built. Mr. Hungerford bought of Henry Byers 640 acres of land on the Territorial road, the east

half of section 28, part of the northeast quarter of section 20, and the southeast quarter of section 17. On the place where Mrs. Andrew Klett now lives he built his cabin, and occupied it with his wife and thirteen children. They lived here for many years, and Benjamin and his son Stephen filled several town offices. The family have become scattered, like many others, and none of them are now living in the town.

Zenas Sikes, a native of Westhampton, Mass., was a student of the Thompsonian practice of medicine before he came here, in 1836. He located the south half of section 18, the northeast quarter of section 19, and northwest quarter of section 20. On the 15th day of June, 1837, he arrived at the place, with his son Orendo M., and built a frame house, buying the lumber of Robert Nesbitt, in Hamilton township, who had the only saw-mill in a large section of country, and supplied the early settlers with lumber. In November of that year the wife of Dr. Zenas Sikes, with several sons, came in. Orendo M., Samuel, and Pliny P. are now living in the township. The children were Orendo M., Lorin W., Lucina G., Pliny P., Samuel J., Zenas, Charles L. W., and John F. Dr. Sikes practiced his profession until his death, in 1861. Orendo M. Sikes lives on the old homestead.

Adrian Manley came in 1836, about the same time with Thomas Conklin and Burrell Olney, and settled on the northwest quarter of section 4. The family came on in 1837. Calvin Hathaway, of Oneida County, came in with Ira Foster in 1837, locating on the southeast quarter and the west half and southwest quarter of section 10, where L. D. Robinson now resides. The family are now all gone. Jeremiah Johnson, a native of Ohio, in the winter of 1835-36 located in the southeast corner of the township, on section 36. His son Daniel now lives in Hamilton.

While the laborers were at work clearing and breaking up the land along the line of the Territorial road, one of the men was taken sick and died. He was buried at St. Joseph. In the winter of 1835-36 one Mathew Fenton, a cousin of W. H. Keeler, was killed by the falling of a tree, and was the first person buried in the town.

Samuel Pletcher, from the eastern part of New York, came here in 1838, and located in the west part of section 19. His wife was a sister of Tobias Byers. With them came Mattie Byers, afterwards well known as Aunt Mattie, who settled in Bainbridge, on section 24, on the Territorial road. She had on her place a never-failing well, and the stages all stopped there and made it a general watering-place. David Byers, a brother of Tobias, located in 1838 in Bainbridge, just west of Aunt Mattie's, on the Territorial road. Mr. Pletcher died in 1845. His daughter married Dr. J. Elliott Sweet, now of Hartford.

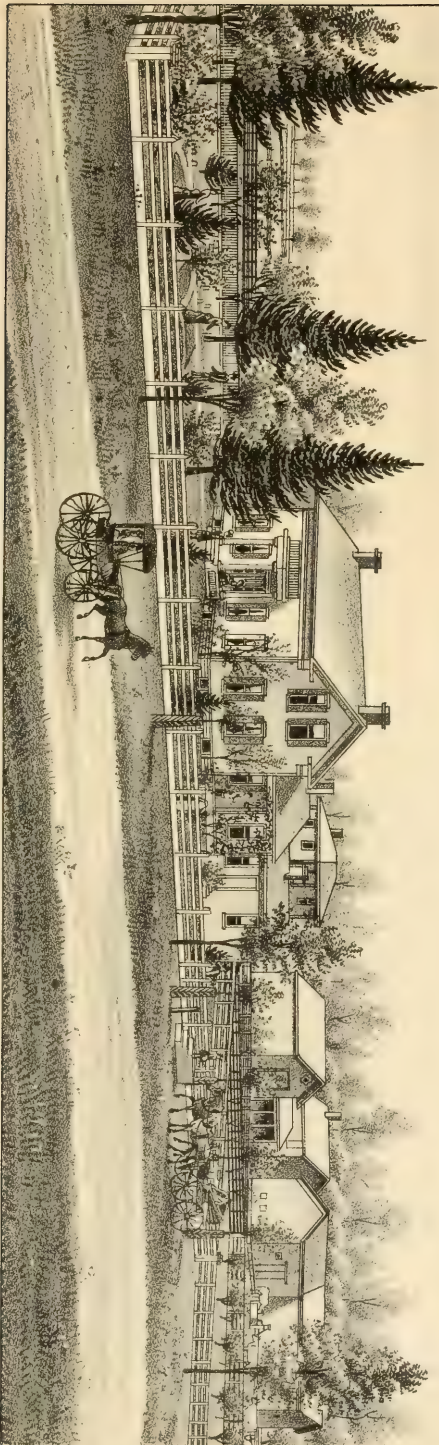
Capt. Marshall Lewis was a native of Southington, Conn., and a civil engineer by profession, which he followed in that State and Pennsylvania. He came to New York, and was employed by De Witt Clinton as engineer and placed in charge of important work in the construction of the Erie Canal. He designed the plans of the locks that were accepted for the Welland Canal, for which a premium of \$1000 was offered, and was employed by William Hamilton Merritt, general manager of the project, to superintend



CHAS. DUNCOMBE.



MRS. CHAS. DUNCOMBE.



RESIDENCE OF CHAS. DUNCOMBE, KEELER, MICH.





the construction of the locks and bridges. Later, he came to Monroe, Mich., and superintended the construction of the Raisin Canal, under Gen. Henry Smith. In 1837 he came to Lawrence, with Gen. Chadwick, and in 1838 removed to Keeler.

Gen. Benjamin F. Chadwick, who was a native of Massachusetts, moved to Cayuga Co., N. Y., with his parents, when quite young, and remained till twenty-one years of age, when he went to Canada, and built a furnace at Chipewawa. Soon afterwards he erected a foundry at St. Catharines, in partnership with Capt. Lewis, whose daughter he married. In 1836 he came to Michigan, and located 320 acres of land, in two different sections, in what is now Lawrence township, and on the 13th day of April, 1837, Gen. Chadwick and his family, and Capt. Lewis, arrived at Judge Keeler's, at Keelersville. They remained overnight, and the next day went to the land they had bought, and purchasing a few boards from Judge Haynes at Brush Creek, erected a board shanty 12 feet by 12, cleared about three-fourths of an acre, and lived there until the fall of that year, and then sold to Judge Broughton. Gen. Chadwick then located and bought 160 acres on section 25, in Keeler township, where S. M. Conklin now owns, in the northeast quarter. Jeremiah Johnson lived on the adjoining quarter-section south; Anson Barney was half a mile east, in Hamilton township; Philotus Haydon was also in Hamilton township, on the Territorial road.

Capt. Lewis and Gen. Chadwick were residents of Keeler township about three years, when the property was exchanged with Theodore Phelps, for mill property on section 22 and one-half of section 27, and they removed to that place. Capt. Lewis died in 1844. Gen. Chadwick was appointed in 1852, by President Pierce, superintendent of public works at St. Joseph, during the repairs and extension of the piers. He remained two years, and was appointed light-house-keeper, a position which he occupied six years. He is now living with his son-in-law, William Anderson, in Hartford.

Palmer and William Earle located in the township about 1839. Palmer settled on the southwest quarter of section 35, and William on the southeast quarter of section 28, when William Warren now lives. About 1842, Ira Gould, a native of Cherry Valley, N. Y., came from Coldwater, Mich., with an Englishman by the name of John Duncombe, in 1842. Gould purchased the Palmer Earle farm at the east end of Lake Magician, on section 35, and Duncombe the west half of the northwest quarter of the same section, where Henry Keith now lives. The Goulds still occupy the farm. John Duncombe left here in 1846, by overland route for California before the gold excitement. He bought 40 acres of land where San Francisco now stands, and soon after died, leaving a wife and three little girls. A few years later the value of the land was enhanced by the wonderful growth of the city, and the sale of it gave them an independence which they are still living to enjoy.

Daniel J. Osborne came from Western New York about 1842, and settled on section 17, where he still lives. Marvin Palmer settled on the southeast quarter of section 36, where he built a barn. He sold out and went to California, where he was successful, and returning to Michigan, bought a farm

on McKinney's Prairie, Cass Co., but again sold out and went to California.

About 1840, Thomas Arner located on the north-and-south Centre road, near Ira Foster, where P. D. Peters now lives.

Linus Warner located on section 31; Ebenezer Lyon, on section 29; and Samuel Robinson on section 5; William and Thomas Green, on the same section; James Lee, a son-in-law of one of the Greens, on section 2, where Henry Shepherd lives.

In 1844 not a road had been opened on a quarter-section line in the township. The Territorial road was run from east to west through the township in about 1835, and as early as 1838-40 a diagonal road ran from Sikes', on section 20, southeast to the east end of Lake Magician, and a year or two later, one about a mile from Hungerford's diagonally southeast. A mail-road also was opened from Keelersville to Cassopolis.

In the year 1844 quite a number of emigrants came in, among whom were Ormon Rosevelt, of Monroe Co., N. Y. He was a single man and lived at Linus Warner's, on section 31. He bought the southwest quarter of that section. Afterwards (in 1845) bought the place now owned by George I. Sherman, on sections 26 and 27.

John Buck and Lucius O. Buck, from Livingston Co., N. Y., came in the spring of 1844, and settled on the northeast quarter of section 15, where Lucius Buck now lives. John S. Buck, their father, came in 1846 and settled on the southwest quarter of section 22, where W. Jolly now owns. Samuel Gordon also settled on section 27.

Henry S. Keith, from Jefferson Co., N. Y., bought, in 1843, of Willard Dodge, of that county, the south half of the southeast quarter of section 27, in Keeler, this being part of the lands Mr. Dodge purchased in 1835-36. In June, 1844, Mr. Keith arrived here with his wife and four children. They lived a few days with John Duncombe, and built a small frame house on the farm where his son Fleury now resides. Mr. Keith now lives on section 35, where Mr. Duncombe lived.

Dr. George Bartholomew, of Jefferson Co., N. Y., emigrated to this township in 1846, bought the north half of the southwest quarter of section 26, remained there two years, and then went to Paw Paw, where he spent three years, then moved to Decatur, where he lived two years, and from that time was in the employ of the Panama Railroad Company for five years in Central America. He returned from there and lived in Berrien eleven years, and returned to the village of Keeler, where he has been in practice from that time to the present. At the time Dr. Bartholomew came in, the log cabin of Moses Duncombe stood where the village of Keeler now is. Mr. Duncombe came from Canada in the spring of 1844 to Grand Rapids, and located land which is a part of the village site. His two daughters, Mary and Elizabeth, came with him, and they began housekeeping in a log cabin of James Hill, on section 11, and in the fall went into a house he built at the centre. Mrs. Duncombe, Charles, Caroline (now Mrs. Wheeler), William, and S. W. Duncombe came in afterwards. Charles and Mrs. Wheeler are still living at the

centre. S. W. Duncombe resides at Paw Paw. Charles Duncombe was a member of the Constitutional Convention in May, 1867. John V. Roosevelt, from Monroe Co., N. Y., purchased of Wolcott H. Keeler, the 27th of June, 1850, 547 acres, where he still lives. He has been for several years and is still supervisor of the town.

The residents of Keeler township whose names appear on the tax-roll dated May 25, 1839, were the following: H. Hammond, Peter Williamson, R. Everett, Ruel Wilcox, A. Newton, F. Ruggles, J. Ruggles, Thomas Conklin, Russell A. Olney, Henry Miner, Alba De Long, Ferdino Olds, Smith Johnson, Adrian Mauley, John Palmenter, Thomas H. Green, William Green, William B. Green, Benjamin Hungerford, Hiram Hungerford, Stephen Hungerford, Zenas Sikes, Orendo M. Sikes, Tobias Byers, Samuel Pletcher, William Earle, Palmer Earle, Benjamin Chadwick, Wolcott H. Keeler, Eleazer H. Keeler, W. H. and E. H. Keeler, W. S. Hill, Coloni Hathaway, Ira Foster, Lyman G. Hill, James Hill, James Lee, James Spinnings, and Marshall Lewis. The assessors of the township were Benjamin F. Chadwick, Lyman G. Hill, and E. H. Keeler. Of those included in the above list, only three are now living, viz.: Tobias Byers, O. M. Sikes, and Palmer Earle. The total real and personal assessment of residents of the township in that year was about \$15,000.

To give an idea of the settlement of Keeler, the names of the settlers are given as they were living on the different roads in the township in 1850. On the Territorial road, running from east to west, lived Tobias Byers, on the east part of section 13; Wolcott H. Keeler, Simon Keeler, and John Brown, at Keelersville, on the west part of the same section where J. V. Roosevelt resides; Mrs. Rider, on section 14, where John Baker lives; John S. Buck, on section 22, where Wilson Jolly lives; Moses Duncombe, on section 15; D. M. Thomas and Lysander Bly, on section 21, at the village; Benjamin Hungerford, on section 20, where Widow Klett now lives; Zenas and Orendo M. Sikes, on the same section; John Campbell, on section 19. On the road running through the centre of the town north and south, commencing at the north, was Truman Fowler, on the northeast quarter of section 9; Ira Foster, on section 15; and Thomas Ames, on section 15. South of the centre were Mrs. Earle Benjamin and Daniel Sill, and Stephen Gregory.

On the first east-and-west road south of Hartford, commencing at the west end, were Ephraim Warren and Gilbert Leach, on section 8; Justus Hill, on section 10; Elder Rowe, on section 11; and Ozam Abbott, on 12. On the first north-and-south road east of the centre were James and Adrian Mauley, on section 2; Lyman G. and James Hill, on 11; John and Lucius E. Buck, on 15; John S. Buck, on 22; Mrs. Farnham, Orman Roosevelt, Samuel Gordon, and H. S. Keith, on 27; and Ira Gould, on section 35.

#### TERRITORIAL ROADS.

The Congress of the United States passed an act to construct a road from Detroit to Chicago, in 1824, to pass through the lower counties in the State. Afterwards branches were surveyed and laid out. One of the branches came through the township of Keeler to St. Joseph, and

was commenced about 1834. When the first settlers came, in 1835, the workmen were still at work breaking up, clearing, and grading. The road ran in a straight course southwesterly, entering the town about the middle of the northeast quarter-section of 13, passing through 14, intersecting the section line on 15 and 22, passing through 22 and 21 and 20, intersecting the quarter-section line at nearly the west end of it, and about half-way across section 19 deflecting northwesterly, passing into Bainbridge near the centre of the west line of the northwest quarter of section 19.

In 1835, John Allen, of Brush Creek, now Lawrence, took a contract for carrying the mails from Lawrence to St. Joseph, and in January, 1836, he established a stage-route from Lawrence to Keeler, where his route struck the Territorial road and passed on to St. Joseph. John Reynolds carried the mail through Dopp Settlement and Keeler before a post-office was established,—which was, however, done in that year, at Keelerville. William Taylor afterwards drove the stage. About 1838 the first change was made in the route, and was from the intersection of the road with the south line of section 15, following west along the section line to what is now the centre of the village, thence south about sixty rods, striking the old line of road. This change was made by the commissioners of the township. Still later a change in the route was made in the line from the intersection of the road on the south line of section 20, near where O. M. Sikes now lives, and following the section line west to the intersection of the deflecting line northwesterly. John Allen built a road from Reynolds' tavern, on the east line of Lawrence township, near Lake George, to Brush Creek, and from there to Keeler. The road was long a stage-route, and as many as ten coaches each way were run every day in the year. Upon the completion of the railroad from Kalamazoo to Niles the coaches were mostly withdrawn.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND LIST OF OFFICERS.

An act of the Legislature was approved March 11, 1837, to divide the township of Lafayette into seven towns. The township of Covington was one of the seven towns, and comprised what is now Keeler and Hamilton. In 1839, Covington was divided into separate townships, and in the division, Keeler not only embraced the territory of township 4 south, range 16 west, but township 3 south, same range (now Hartford), that prior to that time belonged to Lawrence,—being embraced in that township when the township of Lafayette was divided into seven towns. At the first township-meeting 29 votes were cast and the following officers were elected: Supervisor, James Hill; Town Clerk, E. H. Keeler; Justices of the Peace, Lyman G. Hill, B. F. Chadwick, B. A. Olney, and R. B. Everett; Collector, Thomas Conklin; Highway Commissioners, W. H. Keeler, R. B. Everett, and Tobias Byers.

Part of these first officers lived in Hartford and part in Keeler, and in the spring of the next year Hartford was set off as a separate town. No vote was cast in the township limits while it was in the township of Lafayette, and when Covington was formed, in 1837, the first election of that town was held at W. H. Keeler's tavern, in Keelers-





A. E. GREGORY.



MRS. A. E. GREGORY.



RESIDENCE OF A. E. GREGORY, KEELER, MICH.





ville, and later, when Keeler and Hamilton were formed and Hartford was attached to Keeler, the elections still continued to be held there until about 1847. Mr. Tobias Byers says that in 1843 the snow was so deep that men came on snow-shoes to the election.

The township records from 1839 to 1846 are missing. From the latter year until the present time, the principal offices of the township have been held as follows:

## SUPERVISORS.

1846, Theodore E. Phelps; 1847, George Bartholomew; 1848-52, Lyman G. Hill; 1853, James A. Lee; 1854-56, Lyman G. Hill; 1857-59, Charles Duncombe; 1860, Charles G. George; 1861, Isaac J. Cox; 1862-64, Charles Duncombe; 1865, Albert E. Gregory; 1866, Charles Duncombe; 1867, William Tuttle, Jr.; 1868, Charles Duncombe; 1869-70, Orendo M. Sikes; 1871, Charles Duncombe; 1872, John Baker; 1873, Isaac J. Cox; 1874-75, John V. Rosevelt; 1876, Henry S. Keith; 1877, Charles Duncombe; 1878, Henry S. Keith; 1879, John V. Rosevelt.

## TOWN CLERKS.

1846-47, Lucius E. Buck; 1848, John S. Buck; 1849-50, Lucius E. Buck; 1851, C. A. Buck; 1852, Lucius E. Buck; 1853, Daniel M. Thomas; 1854-55, Lucius E. Buck; 1856, David A. Buck; 1857-58, Pliny P. Sikes; 1859, Andrew Armstrong; 1860-61, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1862, Mursell M. Merritt; 1863, Joseph E. Sweet; 1864-70, Mursell M. Merritt; 1871, Willard S. Hill; 1872, J. Elliot Swett; 1873, Charles G. George; 1874-77, William E. Draper; 1878, James W. Thomas; 1879, William E. Draper.

## TREASURERS.

1846, James A. Lee; 1847-54, Ira Gould; 1855, John F. Buck; 1856, Marquis F. Buck; 1857, Albert E. Gregory; 1858-59, Benjamin D. Sill; 1860-62, Merritt Haynes; 1863, Newton T. Foster; 1864, Merritt Haynes; 1865-67, James W. Thomas; 1868-69, Henry B. Babcock; 1870-71, Lorenzo D. Robertson; 1872-77, John F. Taylor; 1878, Amos Irish; 1879, Franklin Hill.

## JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1846, Henry S. Keith; 1847, Tobias Byers; 1849, Samuel Robertson; 1850, Luther Chapin; 1851, Tobias Byers; 1852, Ira Foster; 1853, Charles G. George; 1854, Charles N. Poor; 1855, James G. Haynes; 1856, John Baker, O. M. Sikes; 1857, Charles G. George; 1858, Ira Foster, William Tuttle; 1859, John G. Haynes, Simeon P. Tuttle; 1860, Orendo M. Sikes, William J. Merwin; 1861, Simeon P. Tuttle; 1862, John L. Harrison; 1863, Robert B. Thompson; 1864, Orendo M. Sikes; 1865, Simeon P. Tuttle, Ephraim Warren, Stephen M. Miller; 1866, James H. Haynes, Jacob I. Rosevelt; 1867, Ephraim Warren, Aaron M. Knight, Isaac S. Rosevelt; 1868, Orendo M. Sikes, Edward M. Cook, James E. Durden; 1870, Charles G. George, John Baker; 1871, Samuel Robertson, Oscar Adams; 1872, Orendo M. Sikes, Horace B. Clover; 1873, Horace B. Clover; 1874, Charles G. George; 1875, Isaac S. Rosevelt; 1876, O. M. Sikes; 1877, Horace B. Clover, Charles W. Daily; 1878, George G. Scott, Truman D. Pitcher; 1879, Charles Duncombe.

## SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1846, Eleazer H. Keeler, Linus Warner; 1847, Charles O. Buck; 1848, Charles Duncombe, Loren W. Sikes; 1849, David Foster; 1850, John H. Haynes; 1851, J. G. Haynes, Aaron Rowe; 1852, James H. Haynes; 1853, M. Kimball; 1854, John G. Haynes; 1855, Henry M. Farnham; 1856, Hiram Baker; 1857, Hamilton J. Willmoth, Henry A. Starr; 1858, Henry M. Farnham; 1859, James H. Haynes; 1860, Henry M. Farnham; 1861, James H. Haynes; 1862, Henry M. Farnham; 1863, James Thompson; 1864, James H. Haynes; 1865, William M. Campbell; 1866, James H. Haynes, Albert E. Gregory; 1867, Albert E. Gregory; 1868, James H. Haynes; 1870, Alfred H. Cook, Henry B. Babcock; 1871, J. Elliot Swett, Seth Felt; 1872, William O. Cook; 1873, Albert E. Gregory; 1874, Albert C. Thompson, Horace B. Clover; 1875-77, William O. Cook; 1878, Lucius E. Buck; 1879, William O. Cook.

## SUPERINTENDENTS OF SCHOOLS.

1875-76, John Baker; 1877-79, George W. Baker.

## THE VILLAGE.

The first store kept in the village was by Loren W. Sikes; the first school was taught by Maria Head; the first church was built in 1860. Dr. J. Elliot Swett was the first resident physician.

The village contains about forty families, two churches (Methodist and Congregational), one store, two groceries, post-office, hotel, school-house, two blacksmith-shops, cooper-shop, cabinet-shop, two wagon-shops, paint-shop, harness-shop, and shoe-shop.

The First Post-Office was established at Keelerville in 1836, on the opening of the stage-route by John Allen, of Lawrence. Wolcott H. Keeler was the postmaster. The office remained there until 1856, and was removed to Keeler village. The postmasters who succeeded Mr. Keeler were John Buck, S. W. Duncombe, Mrs. Caroline Wheeler, and John F. Taylor, who now holds the office.

## SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Salathiel Lodge, No. 233, F. and A. M.*—This lodge received its charter from the Grand Lodge of Michigan, Jan. 8, 1868, with the following-named persons as officers: Stephen W. Duncombe, Worshipful Master; Willard S. Hill, Senior Warden; J. Elliot Swett, Junior Warden. The present number of members is 41, and the present officers are George E. Scott, Worshipful Master; William E. Draper, Senior Warden; G. E. Rider, Junior Warden; O. M. Sikes, Sec.; Henry S. Keith, Treas.

*Keeler Lodge, No. 204, I. O. O. F.*—This lodge was chartered March 27, 1873, with the following charter members: James E. Dusen, Rossiter Kappin, Jacob High, James Shearer, Charles Lambert, Estel Smith, and Isaac Cox. The present members are 41 in number, and the officers for 1879 are Alfred Lamont, Noble Grand; Albert Brown, Vice-Grand; John Nostrand, Rec. Sec.; Chester Irish, Per. Sec.; Franklin Hill, Treas.

*Carmel Rebekah Lodge, No. 21, I. O. O. F.*—The lodge was instituted Feb. 22, 1879, with the following as charter members: Robert K. Evans, Alvah Tuttle, S. Zimmerman, Charles G. George, Franklin Hill, John S. Rosevelt, John Ashman, Alfred Lamont, James Shearer, A. Campbell, J. M. Babcock, G. L. Rathbone, William Sikes, Justus Irish, Mrs. R. K. Evans, Emily Tuttle, Anna Zimmerman, Dolly George, Molly Hill, Harriet Ashman, Sarah Lamont, Polly Shearer, Mary Babcock, Jane Fowler. The present officers are William A. Sykes, Noble Grand; Mrs. Jane Fowler, Vice-Grand; Charles G. George, Rec. Sec.; Alfred Lamont, Per. Sec.; Mrs. Sarah Lamont, Treas. The present membership is 23.

*Women's Christian Temperance Union.*—This society was organized Nov. 14, 1879, with Mrs. Charles Duncombe, President; Mrs. Lucius E. Buck, Vice-President; Mrs. Henry Thomas, Second Vice-President; Mrs. Beulah Keith, Sec.; Mrs. Isaac Cox, Treas.

*Patrons of Husbandry.*—This grange was granted a dispensation, Dec. 24, 1873, as "Keeler Grange, No. 139." The charter was granted, March 21, 1874, as "Gilman of

Keeler Grange, No. 159." The following are the constituent members: Mr. and Mrs. J. J. Cox, Mr. and Mrs. Tobias Byers, Mr. and Mrs. Henry Keith, Mr. and Mrs. William O. Cook, Mr. and Mrs. John S. Roosevelt, Mr. and Mrs. John Baker, Mr. and Mrs. S. J. Sikes, Dr. George Bartholomew and Mrs. Bartholomew, Mr. and Mrs. K. B. Martindale, J. I. Roosevelt, Mr. and Mrs. Isaac S. Roosevelt, Mr. and Mrs. P. Peters, Ira Foster, Mr. and Mrs. C. O. Hills, Rev. J. Webster, Mrs. J. Webster, O. Bartholomew, Mr. and Mrs. O. M. Sikes.

The officers for 1879 are William Warren, Worthy Master; John Baker, Overseer; De Witt C. Warren, Steward; G. A. Abbott, Asst. Steward; Elmira Abbott, Lady Asst. Steward; Franklin Conklin, Sec.; Tobias Byers, Treas.

The society now numbers about 75 members.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—The first class of this denomination was formed at the house of Samuel Pletcher, who lived on the west part of section 19, near the town line, in July, 1840. The members were Ira Foster and Carolina Foster, Adrian Manley and wife, Thomas Conklin and Martha Conklin, — Griffin and wife, and Mrs. Ferdino Olds. Ira Foster was the class-leader.

The first preacher on the circuit through that section was Henry Worthington, who was followed by E. L. Kellogg, — Van Order, — Knox, — Granger, — Shaw, — Whitlock, — Jones, Thomas McCool, J. D. Robinson, Milo Corey. At this early time meetings were held at the school-houses in the Haynes and Hill neighborhoods. The first meetings held at Keeler Centre were in the school-house, and the Revs. John Hoyt, T. T. George, and Henry M. Joy preached there. During the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Colwell, in 1860, a church edifice was erected, and dedicated in 1861. Mr. Colwell was succeeded by the Revs. G. A. Buell, — Hoag, E. Beard, John W. Miller, — Fowler, — Webster, — Force, C. Woodward, — Sparling, and George Elliot (the present pastor). The church now numbers 40 members.

*Congregational Church.*—This church was constituted July 7, 1850, by the following persons, who brought letters from different churches: Joseph Haynes and Mrs. Mary Haynes, James H. Haynes, Jonathan W. Haynes, Luther Chapin and Mrs. Louisa Chapin, Mrs. Mary Gregory, and Mrs. Harriet Pletcher. Joseph Haynes was chosen deacon, James H. Haynes clerk. The services were conducted by the Rev. Sidney S. Brown.

The first pastor of the church was the Rev. E. Andrus, who was succeeded by the Revs. W. H. Osborne, William Campbell, Charles E. Moon, and N. G. Lamphere (who is the present pastor). Services were held for the first few years at the Haynes school-house, afterwards in the school-house at Keeler village. In 1865 the present church was built at a cost of \$3500, and it was dedicated in 1866. The church at that time was under the charge of the Rev. William Campbell, and contained about 40 members. It now has a membership of 26. A union Sunday-school of the Congregational and Baptist societies contains about 80 pupils. William O. Cook is the superintendent.

*Baptist Church.*—In 1843, Justus Hill, Emily, his wife, and William Everett and wife were dismissed from the Baptist Church of Lawrence to form a church in Keeler. This handful of Baptists gathered a few around them, but did not become a regularly organized body, being simply a branch of the Lawrence Church.\* Preaching was held in the school-house in the Hill neighborhood by the Rev. Moses Clark, Wm. T. Dye, and others. At a later date a church was organized, with about 15 constituent members. The Rev. Harvey Munger was the minister at the organization, and was pastor for a year or two afterwards. He was succeeded by the Rev. Albert Gore, who remained till 1861, Wm. Simons, J. B. Ross, and James G. Portman. The church has a membership of about 40. A Sunday-school, of which Wm. O. Cook is superintendent, is taught in connection with this and the Congregational society. Services are held in the Congregational church.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school was taught about 1839 by Miss Woodman on section 19, on the Territorial road between the residences of Tobias Byers and Zenas Sikes. The children who attended were of the families of Pletcher, Sikes, and others.

As early as 1842, Mrs. Prudence Williamson, daughter of William Everett, taught school on section 11, in a house that belonged to James Hill, and had been occupied by his brother, Lyman G. Hill. The pupils of that early school numbered but 12.

The precise time when the township was formed into school districts cannot be accurately ascertained, but the township records, commencing in 1845, contain this entry:

"School Districts as recorded in Old Book.

"Dist. No. 1 contains Sections No. 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15, and 9; Dist. No. 2 contains Sections No. 4, 5, 6, 7, and 8; Dist. No. 3 contains Sections No. 17, 18, 19, 20, 29, 30, and the west half of 21, 28; Dist. No. 4 contains Section No. 13 and east half of Sections 24, 25; Dist. No. 5 contains Section Nos. 26, 27, 28, 33, 34, 35, and 21."

An annual report of the school inspectors to the county clerk, made Oct. 17, 1845, by David Foster and Orendo M. Sikes, shows as follows:

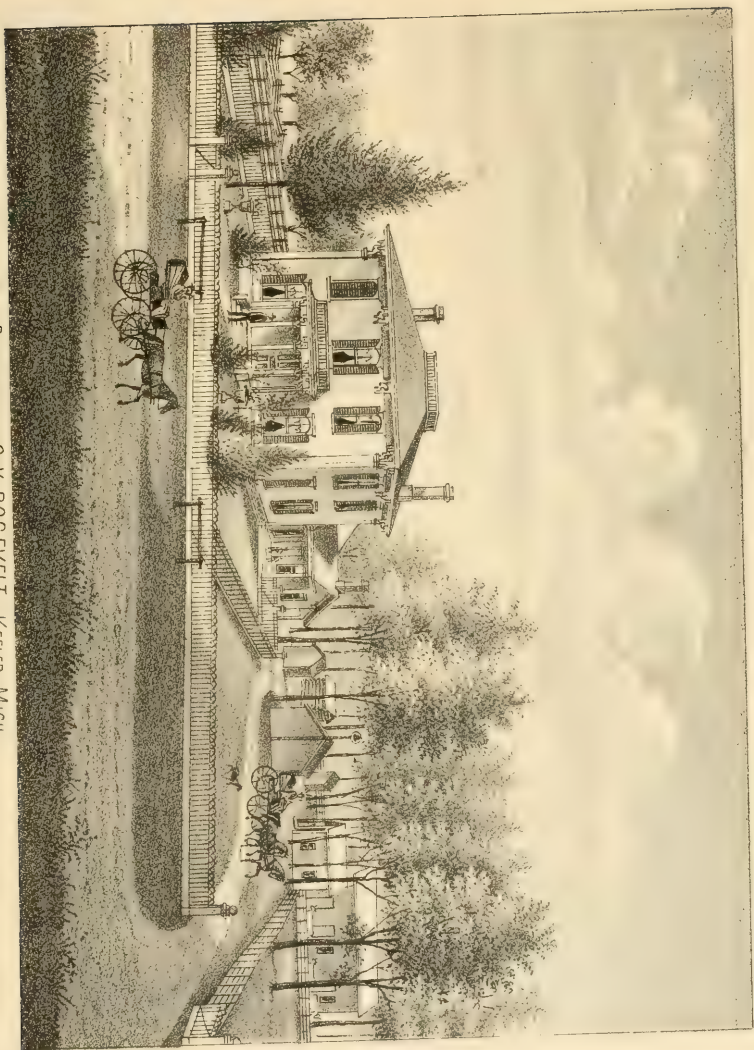
	District			
	No. 1.	No. 3.	No. 5.	
Total number of districts .....	5			
Reports received from three districts.....	1	3	5	
Number of children of school age.....	27	29	18	
" " attending in each district .....	30	40	9	
" " qualified teachers .....	2	...	1	
" " months school taught.....	8	8	3	
" " volumes in township library .....				129
Amount raised for library purposes.....				\$25

Books used in school: Elementary Spelling Book, English Reader, Hale's History of the United States, Olney's Geography, Kirkham's Grammar, Daboll's and Adams' Arithmetic.

The following persons were granted certificates by the school inspectors, after passing examination: Miss Mary A. Bragg and Miss Harriet McKein, May 2, 1846; Martha Baxter, Aug. 7, 1846; Charles A. Bush, Nov. 7, 1846, to teach in District No. 1; Emily Gould, April 8, 1848, to teach in District No. 5.

In 1845, 187 volumes were purchased for a library. Additions were made from time to time, till in 1858 the



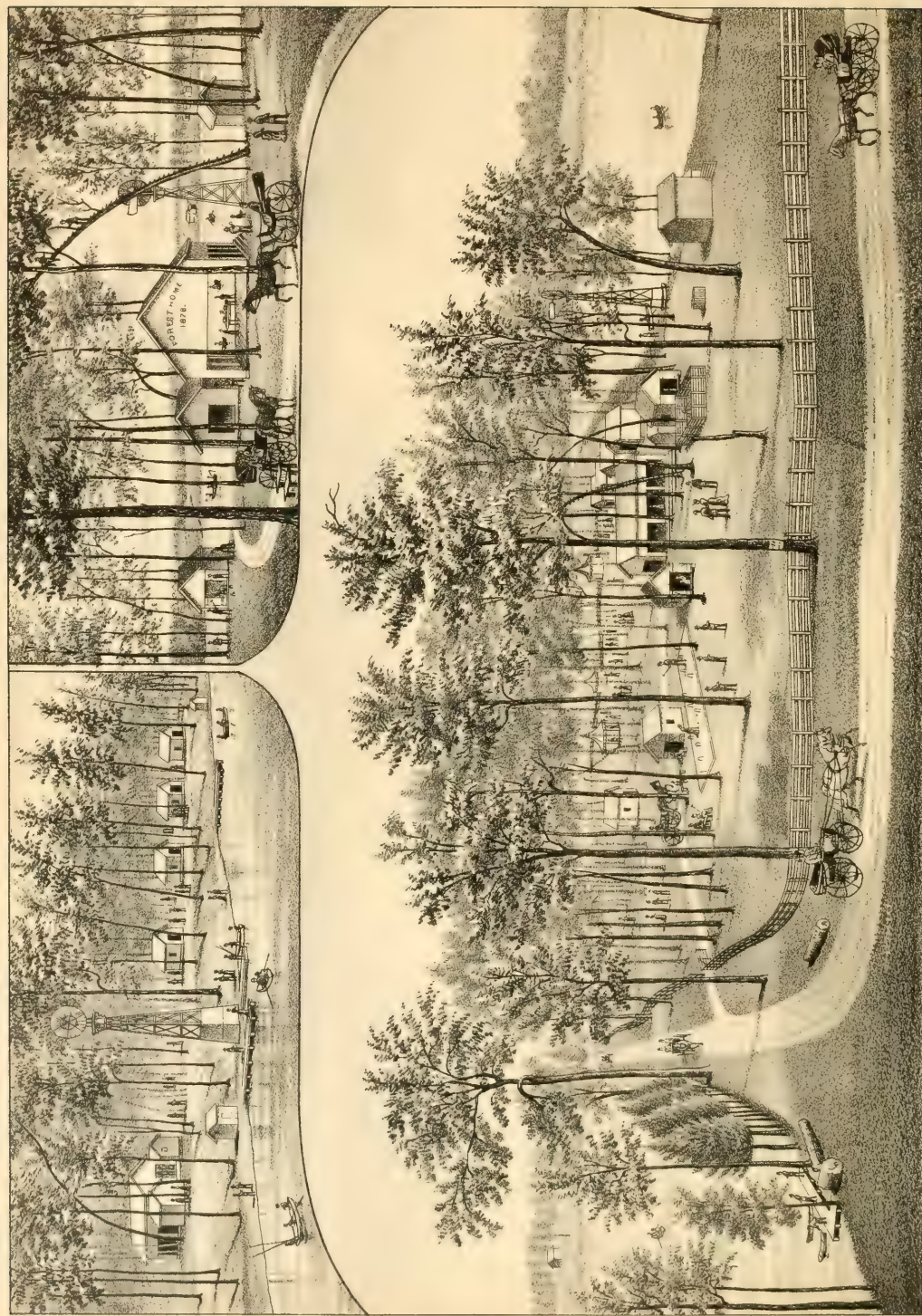


RESIDENCE OF O. V. ROOSEVELT, KEELER, MICH.









CAMPING GROUND OF E. PARDEE, KEELER, MICHIGAN.  
SITUATED BETWEEN SISTER LAKES.

number had reached 521. For the past few years the township has been without a library.

## SCHOOL REPORT FOR 1879.

The school directors in 1879 were John McAlpine, Samuel Hammond, Alfred Lamont, Hiram Baker, M. B. Keith, A. E. Gregory, John Baker, W. J. Britton, James Shearer, H. B. Clover.

District.	Number of Children of School Age.	Frame School-Houses.	Seating Capacity.	Value.	Number of Teachers.	Amount of Wages.
No. 1.	24	1	30	\$460	2	\$132.00
No. 2.	33	1	45	300	2	200.00
No. 3.	65	1	40	50	2	141.50
No. 4.	20	1	50	500	1	116.00
No. 5.	32	1	30	500	1	90.00
No. 6.	29	1	30	250	3	87.20
No. 7.	92	1	100	3000	2	192.00
No. 8.	37	1	60	450	2	100.50
No. 9.	35	1	70	1000	3	49.00
No. 10.	34	1	68	600	2	136.00
Total.....	401	10	523	\$7050	20	\$1215.20

## RECEIPTS.

District.	Money on hand Sept. 1, 1878.	Two-Mill Tax.	Primary-School Fund.	District Tax.	Total Resources.
No. 1.....	\$29.56	\$91.31	\$14.88	\$65.00	\$201.78
No. 2.....	32.72	99.30	21.52	105.00	272.56
No. 3.....	128.59	65.61	33.00	79.00	308.51
No. 4.....	232.72	146.50	12.88	.....	412.19
No. 5.....	4.38	20.90	14.88	238.70	371.45
No. 6.....	34.34	124.00	17.28	10.00	195.00
No. 7.....	69.96	171.20	44.16	285.80	612.66
No. 8.....	28.57	85.40	.....	25.00	138.97
No. 9.....	36.16	70.25	18.24	59.43	230.02
No. 10.....	31.90	73.76	.....	100.00	211.46
Total.....	\$649.50	\$1030.22	\$176.84	\$967.93	\$2954.60

## EXPENDITURES.

District.	Teachers' Wages.	Amount on hand Sept. 1, 1879.	Paid for Building and Repairs.	All other purposes.	Total Expenditure, including amount on hand.
No. 1.....	\$132.00	\$30.02	.....	\$39.76	\$201.78
No. 2.....	200.00	14.06	\$35.00	23.50	272.56
No. 3.....	141.00	135.06	26.33	6.12	308.51
No. 4.....	116.00	293.79	.....	40	412.19
No. 5.....	90.00	9.87	240.63	30.95	371.45
No. 6.....	87.20	66.55	.....	41.25	195.00
No. 7.....	192.00	104.64	.....	108.12	612.66
No. 8.....	80.00	40.60	.....	18.37	138.97
No. 9.....	49.00	77.67	.....	23.35	230.02
No. 10.....	136.00	53.96	.....	21.50	211.46
Total.....	\$1223.20	\$828.22	\$301.96	\$313.32	\$2954.60

## FOREST HOME CAMPING-GROUND.

On the opposite page is given a view of "Forest Home Camping-Ground," the property of E. Pardee. The grounds are situated between the Sister Lakes, on section 31, Keeler township, Van Buren Co., and are about eleven miles northwest of Dowagiac, and the same distance south of Hartford. As is shown in the engraving, this camp is located on a narrow strip of land only about twenty-five rods wide, yet it is high rolling ground, heavily timbered with forest-trees and some twenty-seven feet above the lakes, whose pure, limpid waters wash the beautiful gravel beach on either shore. The place was first used as a camping-ground by E. Pardee and A. Maykes in 1868, who camped there two weeks in a tent nine feet square. The next year C. L. Sherwood and Thomas Rix, with their families, joined the party, and in 1872 it was still further increased by the accession of J. H. Smith, A. L. Rich, A. Jones, and B. L. Dewey, with their families.

In 1876 the grounds were bought by E. Pardee from B. D. Sill, for which he paid \$100 per acre. Mr. Pardee

at once proceeded to clear off the underbrush and fit up the place as a permanent summer resort, erecting substantial buildings, improving its great natural advantages until now parties visiting these grounds find not only the picturesque beauty with which it was endowed by nature, but all the conveniences of our noted summer resorts, such as cottages, tents, and boats, while excellent facilities for fishing are provided.

In the foreground may be seen a large hall which is for the use of the occupants of the cottages and tents, which form a circle across the grounds from lake to lake.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

## DR. GEORGE BARTHOLOMEW\*

was born at Brownsville, Jefferson Co., N. Y., May 2, 1821. He worked on a farm until he was seventeen years of age, attending the district school about three months in each year. From the age of seventeen to twenty his time was



*Geo. Bartholomew*

occupied in attending and teaching district and grammar schools. At the age of twenty he commenced to read medicine with Dr. Duncan, at Plessis, Jefferson Co., N. Y., with whom he remained one year, teaching school four months of the time to raise means to meet his expenses. The two succeeding years he read medicine with Dr. Amasa Trowbridge, President and Professor of Surgery at Willoughby University, Lake Co., Ohio, where he attended two courses of lectures, teaching four months in Watertown, Jefferson Co., N. Y.

After his second course of lectures he commenced the

\* By Capt. J. R. Hendryx.



practice of medicine at Stone Mills, Jefferson Co., N. Y., under the general supervision of Professor Trowbridge, of Watertown, N. Y. He remained there five months, and married Minerva E. Keith, of Brownsville, N. Y., July 31, 1845. Immediately after he went to the Castleton, Vt., Medical College, where he received his third course of medical lectures, graduating at Willoughby University the following spring. He then, with his bride, removed to Keeler, Van Buren Co., Mich., and commenced the practice of medicine and surgery. He remained in Keeler one and a half years, then removed to Paw Paw, and formed a copartnership with Dr. Henry C. Clapp, which continued two years. From Paw Paw he went to Decatur, and put up the third building erected in that place, on Front Street, for a drug-store, and also practiced medicine until late in the fall of 1849, when he accepted the position of surgeon, and took charge of the hospital at Panama, for the Panama Railroad Company, remaining until the road was completed across the Isthmus, when he returned to Michigan completely broken down in health and unable to follow his profession. He then moved on a wild farm in Berrien township, in Berrien County, cleared it up, and planted the largest fruit farm in the township. After ten years of rustication and digging in the earth he regained his health, sold the farm, and returned to his old stamping-ground, in Keelerville, and resumed his profession, where he still remains, and where he intends to spend the remainder of his days.

The taste the doctor acquired for fruit culture when in Berrien he did not convey in the deed to the purchaser of his fruit farm. He, some four or five years ago, bought forty acres on an elevated site, two miles north of Keelerville, improved it, and planted it all to fruit. This farm is managed by his sons, under his close inspection and management. The doctor's counsel is often sought by amateur fruit-growers, as well as in public assemblies of pomologists.

His skill in his profession, his devotion to his patients, his well-known integrity, large-heartedness, and his ever genial face, have given him an extensive practice, and made him a favorite wherever he is known. As a public speaker he is correct, logical, and often eloquent. In the summer of 1877 he built a fine residence in the village, where he and his amiable and accomplished wife, with their family of three boys, on a fair competency, live most happily. The doctor says he has no religion or politics,—the religion he practices is that of the golden rule. He votes for who he pleases and asks no favors. The doctor is of French descent, his wife of Scotch. His grandfather and mother were Vermonters. Mrs. Bartholomew's father served three terms in the New York Legislature. The doctor's grandfather was a soldier in the Revolution, and served all through the war. In the war of 1812 he, with three of his sons,—Ebenezer, Augustine, and Oliver, Jr., the latter the father of the subject of this notice,—were the first mechanics engaged in building fortifications at Sacket's Harbor.

Oliver, Jr., was born March 18, 1793, and married Mary Everetts in the year 1819. The fruit of this union was seven children,—four sons and three daughters,—Dr. George being the oldest. His mother died in Hamilton township, Sept. 19, 1867, after which event his father came to live with

him at Keelerville, Mrs. Bartholomew vying with her husband in kind care and attention to this venerable and worthy sire, who passed to his reward calmly and peacefully on the 6th of March, 1877. The doctor's family at present consists of himself and noble wife and his sons,—George, born Sept. 20, 1857; Flurey K., born Feb. 14, 1851; and Estes, born April 13, 1866.

#### ORRENDO M. SIKES.

This gentleman is a descendant of Richard Sikes, who was born about 1600, and emigrated to America from London, England, in company with Governor Winthrop and William Pynchon, Esq., two of the noted pioneers of Massachusetts. He settled first at Roxbury, in that State, and in 1641 removed to Springfield, five years after the latter colony was founded. He had two sons,—Jonathan and Titus. In 1660 a settlement was commenced at Suffield, to which place Jonathan removed. His sons—Jonathan, Samuel, and Victory—all settled in the same place. Jonathan Sikes, Sr., was a master carpenter, and built each of his sons a house, that of Samuel being still in existence, and a fine specimen of the architecture of that day. It is still in the possession of his descendants. Jonathan Sikes, Sr., was born about 1640; his son Samuel, in 1675; the latter's only son, Victory, in 1710; and his son, Samuel, in 1752, who also had a son named Samuel, born in 1773. Victory Sikes (1st) had but one son, Titus, who sold his possessions and removed to Bennington Co., Vt., becoming one of its first settlers. His descendants are numerous and respectable. Jonathan Sikes (2d) was the father of two sons,—Jonathan and Posthumous,—and lived to an extreme old age. Jonathan (3d) had five sons,—Lot, Jonathan, Paul, John, and David. Posthumous Sikes had four sons,—Amos, Stephen, Shadrach, and Gideon. Victory had two sons and six daughters, viz., Samuel, Victory, Mehitable, Demarius, Mary, Mercy, Lucy, and Eleanor. Samuel (2d) had eight sons and four daughters, viz., Samuel, Eunice, Chloe, Oliver, Martin, Lucinda, Uriel, Wealthy, Silas, Ezra, Orrin, and Reuben. Victory (3d) had eight sons,—Alexander, George, Ambrose, Alfred, Jesse, Theodore, Franklin, and James. Lot had three sons and three daughters,—Jemima, Lot, Lovisa, Calvin, Ashbel, and Mehitable. Lot, Jr., had three sons and eight daughters,—Ashbel, Frederick, Julia, James, Calista, Maria, Arabel, Sarah, Emeline, Lovisa, and Cynthia.

Benjamin Sikes, the great-great-grandfather of Orrendo, died Aug. 2, 1781, aged seventy-seven years. His son Abner, one of a family of nine children,—three sons (Abner, Benjamin, and John) and six daughters,—was born Oct. 12, 1729. He was married, June 13, 1757, to Mercy Parson, who was born Feb. 20, 1733. They became the parents of seven children,—Mary, Abner, Experience, Increase, Pliny, Lois, and Zenas. Abner Sikes, Sr., died June 24, 1800, and his wife, March 24, 1818. Increase Sikes had nine children and Pliny four, those of the latter being Zenas, Orrin, Anna, and Lucinda. Zenas was the father of eight children, as follows: Orrendo, Loring, Lucina, Pliny, Samuel, Zenas, Charles, and John.





O. M. SIKES.



MRS. O. M. SIKES.  
(DECEASED.)



MRS. O. M. SIKES.

PHOTOS. BY CHAS. F. FRITCHARD



RES. OF O. M. SIKES, KEELER, MICHIGAN.



Orrendo Montague Sikes, the oldest son of Zenas and Nancy (Janes) Sikes, who were married in East Hampton, Mass., in 1813, was born in West Hampton, in the same State, in 1815. His brother John died in 1838, and his sister Lucina in 1848. His brothers, Pliny and Samuel, are living in Michigan, and Loring, Zenas, and Charles in California. In 1837, O. M. Sikes came with his father to Michigan, and settled on the west half of the northwest quarter of section 20, in the township of Keeler. On the 8th of January, 1846, he was married to Ann Elizabeth George, daughter of Woodbridge C. George, an early settler of Berrien Co., Mich. She was born in Orleans, Jefferson Co., N. Y., Aug. 18, 1825. Mr. and Mrs. Sikes lived until 1855 in Benton township, Berrien Co., on a farm, but in the latter year returned to Keeler, and Mr. Sikes now resides on the old homestead of the family. They became the parents of the following children: William Arthur Sikes, born in Benton, Berrien Co., Mich., Oct. 10, 1847; Lucina Elizabeth Sikes, born at the same place, May 23, 1849, married, in December, 1870, to Albert F. Hurlbut, and now living near Fort Worth, Tex.; Kate Isabel Sikes, born in Benton, May 8, 1852, died March 14, 1860; Lelia Orra Sikes, born in Keeler, Jan. 27, 1864.

Mrs. Sikes died Dec. 6, 1867, and in 1871 Mr. Sikes was married to Mrs. Susan E. Parmelee, widow of Byron L. Parmelee, of Benton, Berrien Co. By her he has had one child, Lyman Montague Sikes, born in Keeler, June 27, 1872. Mr. Sikes, who was a Democrat originally, became a Republican on the formation of the latter party. He has been a justice of the peace since 1856, and has been chosen to other offices. He is at present secretary of Salathiel Lodge, No. 233, F. and A. M., at Keeler, and overseer of the county grange. He has always led the life of a farmer. Mrs. Sikes is a member of the Methodist Church. The parents of Mr. Sikes were both members of the Congregational Church, and he, although not a member, is a trustee of the Congregational Church at Keeler.

#### ORMAN V. ROSEVELT.

Jacob Rosevelt, the grandfather of Orman V., was a native of Germany, and came to America in company with his brother, settling quite early at Schenectady, N. Y. His children numbered six,—five sons and one daughter. His youngest child, Isaac Rosevelt (the father of Orman), was born at or near Schenectady. He was married, in Saratoga Co., N. Y., to Maria Veeder, and removed with her to the town of Barre, Orleans Co. Mr. and Mrs. Rosevelt were the parents of three children. Orman, the oldest, was born in Saratoga Co., Sept. 6, 1821; Jacob, in Onondaga Co.; and John, the youngest, in Orleans Co. Isaac Rosevelt died in Orleans Co., Aug. 20, 1828, and his widow moved back to Saratoga County, where she died, June 24, 1832.

Orman V. Rosevelt was but seven years old when his father died, and when his mother returned to Saratoga County he stopped with her brother, near the village of Skaneateles, Onondaga Co., and lived with him at that place until he was fourteen, when he moved with him to Rochester, in the winter of 1835-36. He remained with

his uncle until he was twenty-one years of age. In the spring of 1844 he came to Michigan, and located in the township of Keeler, Van Buren Co., where he had previously purchased land. The township had at that time but few settlers, and Mr. Rosevelt's land was unimproved. His home has since been in this town, and he has not been absent from it three weeks at a time. Oct. 28, 1847, Mr. Rosevelt was married to Nancy Sloan, daughter of Alexander Sloan, an early settler in Hamilton township, having moved to Michigan from Ohio. Mrs. Rosevelt was born in Pennsylvania, Nov. 25, 1825. In the spring of 1848, Mr. Rosevelt settled, with his wife, on section 27, in Keeler, and in 1855 located on the place he now occupies,—the south half of section 22. Mr. and Mrs. Rosevelt are the parents of three children,—George, Maria, and Frank. The latter is living at home, and the others are married and reside in Keeler township. Mr. Rosevelt is a Democrat in politics. He has held several of the offices in his township,—pathmaster, commissioner of highways, assessor, etc. From his childhood his occupation has been that of a farmer. The first thrashing-machine which was brought into the township of Keeler was owned by him, and for eighteen years he operated it for the accommodation of others. He also owned a breaking-team, and aside from breaking up all of his own land, he did good service in that line for many of the settlers in the vicinity. He is now the possessor of a pleasant, comfortable home near Keeler Centre.

#### CHARLES DUNCOMBE.

Mr. Duncombe's father, Moses Duncombe, was a native of Norwalk, Conn., and married Sarah Oliphant, who was born in Ballston, Saratoga Co., N. Y. To them were born eight children,—three sons and five daughters. Soon after their marriage (about 1816-17, in Saratoga Co., N. Y.), they removed to Ancaster, near Hamilton, Ontario. About 1824 they returned to Waterford, Saratoga Co., N. Y., and in 1833 removed again to Canada, locating at Blenheim. In the fall of 1844 they came to Michigan, and located at what is now Keeler Centre, on a place which Charles Duncombe had purchased, and the same which he now occupies. The family was the first to settle at Keeler Centre. Mr. Duncombe was a tanner, currier, and shoemaker by trade, and after coming here worked at that business winters and made improvements on the farm during the summers. He was a very industrious man, an active politician, and a respected citizen. He was a Whig until the formation of the Republican party, when he became a member of the latter. He was never an office-seeker. Mrs. Duncombe died in Keeler in 1848; Mr. Duncombe's death occurred in Hartford (Van Buren Co.) in 1866.

Charles Duncombe, the third child in his father's family, was born May 30, 1822, at Ancaster, Canada, and until he was thirty-five years old aided greatly in supporting the family. In 1849 he went to California and engaged as a dealer in stock, dry goods, miners' furnishings, etc., returning to Michigan in 1852. In October, 1855, he was married to Frances S. Knights, of Half Moon, Saratoga Co., N. Y., where she was born on the 30th of January, 1830.



Her father, Aaron N. Knights, came to Keeler a few years later, and is now living in Decatur, Van Buren Co. His wife (Mrs. Duncombe's mother) died in Keeler township. The place on which Mr. Duncombe now resides has been his home since he came to Michigan. For several years he was cashier of the First National Bank at Decatur, but is not now connected with that institution. He is one of the proprietors of the "Decatur Mills," and owns a hotel and several stores at that place. Decatur owes many of its improvements to him, he having taken great interest in their projection. In the summer of 1879 he erected a brick-store building in that village. He at present operates several fine farms. In 1867 he was a member of the State Constitutional Convention, and has been active in political matters. He was supervisor of Keeler township for twelve or fourteen years. Mr. and Mrs. Duncombe are the parents of six children,—three sons and three daughters. These are all living except one son, who met a painful death from scalding when quite young. The others reside with their parents, except one daughter, Fannie E., who is now the wife of Seth Taft, and living in the neighborhood.

#### ALBERT E. GREGORY.

Stephen Gregory, the father of the above, was born in Livingston Co., N. Y., and married Mary Stevens, a native of the same county. They became the parents of nine children,—four sons and five daughters,—of whom three sons and one daughter are now living. In the fall of 1846, Mr. Gregory removed with his family to Michigan, and settled in Keeler township, Van Buren Co., on the farm now owned by his son, Albert E. Gregory, on section 34. No improvements whatever had been made on the place, and it was as much of a task to make it habitable and a source of prosperity as if the surrounding region had not before witnessed the arrival of a white settler. Mr. Gregory's occupation was always that of a farmer. His death occurred in April, 1869, and that of his wife in May, 1873.

Albert E. Gregory, who was born in Livingston Co., N. Y., was of very tender age when his father removed to Michigan. With the exception of three years, his home in Michigan has always been upon his present place. Mr. Gregory has been twice married, and has two children,—a daughter, Bernice E., by his first wife, and a son, Donald F., by his second. His last marriage was with Cora Force, the daughter of Rev. James P. Force, a Methodist clergyman; this occurred Oct. 27, 1873. Mrs. Gregory was born at Winchester, Randolph Co., Ind., Nov. 27, 1853. In political matters Mr. Gregory is a Republican.

#### TOBIAS BYERS.

The great-grandparents of this gentleman were from Germany, and settled at an early day in the State of Pennsylvania (Lancaster County). Jacob Byers, the father of Tobias, was a young man at the time of the Revolutionary

war. He was a wagon-maker by trade, and did work of that kind in the army. He was married in Lancaster County to Fannie Zimmerman, and lived afterwards in Centre County, removing finally to Livingston Co., N. Y. He was the father of twelve children,—seven sons and five daughters. He and his wife both died in the county last mentioned.

Tobias Byers, the youngest son of Jacob and Fannie Byers, was born Feb. 9, 1808, in Centre Co., Pa., and when four years of age (1812) removed with his father to Livingston Co., N. Y., where the family were among the earlier settlers. Mr. Byers attended the district schools in the neighborhood of his home in New York, and does not recollect that he ever went to school in any but a log building. When he became of sufficient age he assisted his father on the farm, the latter working most of his time at his trade. After he became of age, Tobias Byers worked his father's farm on shares for two or three years, afterwards teaming a portion of the time for four years to Rochester. In February, 1835, about four years after his father's death, he left home and started for Michigan, proceeding by private team to Buffalo, thence by stage to Cleveland, and thence on by team through Michigan to Illinois, extending his journey as far south as Peoria. In June, 1835, he returned to Michigan and purchased the farm on which he now lives, on section 13, Keeler township, Van Buren Co., purchasing also on sections 15 and 19, the whole amounting to four hundred and forty acres,—all from government. He settled at once on section 19, built a log house, and lived in it several years. He had company occasionally, when settlers, with their families, would stop with him for a few days. In March, 1856, Mr. Byers was married to Jeannette M. Wilson, who had come to the township the year previous, from Allegany Co., N. Y., in company with her sister, Mrs. John Baker, who, with her husband, is still living in Keeler township. Mrs. Byers' grandparents were from Massachusetts, her parents from Wayne Co., N. Y. She was born Jan. 5, 1832, in Independence, Allegany Co., N. Y., and taught school from her fifteenth to her twenty-fourth year. Mr. Byers at the time of his marriage was living on the place where he now resides, which has since been his home. His business has always been that of a farmer. Mr. and Mrs. Byers are the parents of five children, as follows: Charles, born Aug. 2, 1857, died Nov. 26, 1857; Flora I., born June 24, 1858, died Feb. 28, 1865; Nellie I., born June 23, 1862, died Feb. 17, 1865; Birney F., born May 21, 1866; Eddie, born Nov. 29, 1871, died Jan. 28, 1872. Mr. Byers is a Democrat in politics, and has held several offices in his township, among them that of justice of the peace about fifteen years. Neither he nor his wife belong to any religious society. He is a member of the subordinate and county granges, as is also his wife. Mr. Byers was the first permanent settler in the township of Keeler. His home-farm contains two hundred and thirty-three acres, and he is the owner, in the aggregate, of five hundred and thirty-three acres, in various localities.



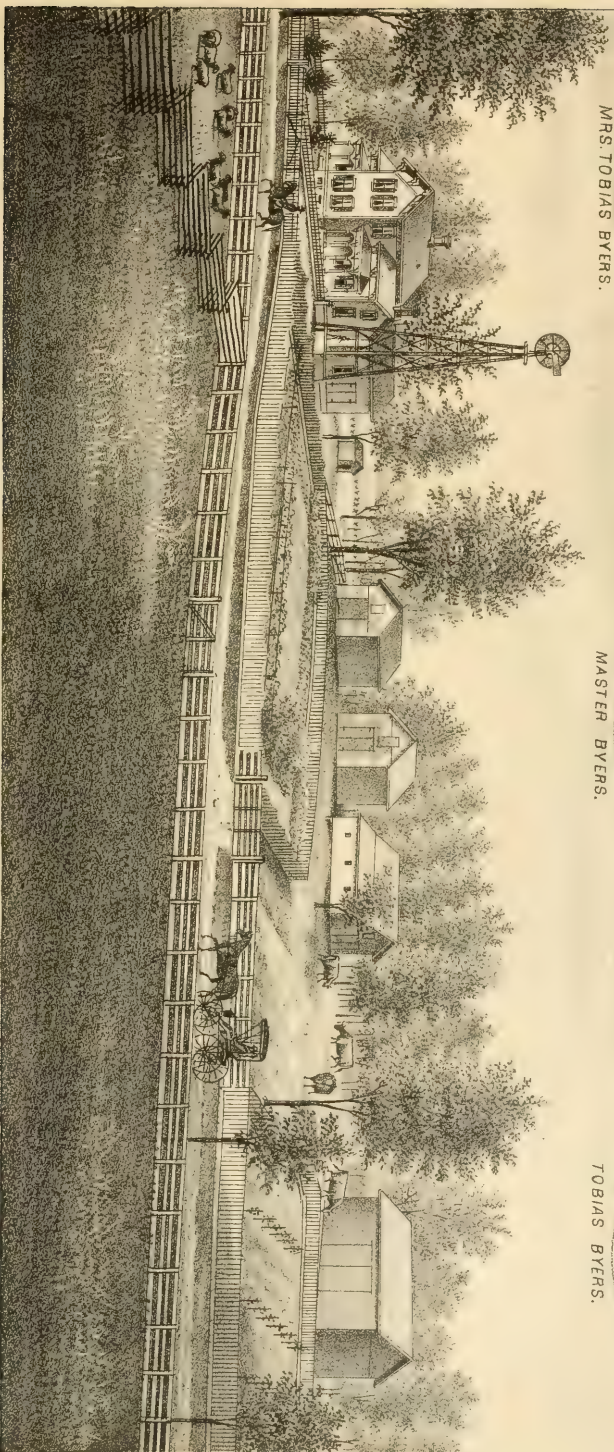
MRS. TOBIAS BYERS.



MASTER BYERS.



TOBIAS BYERS.



RESIDENCE OF TOBIAS BYERS, KEELER, MICH.





## CHAPTER LXIII.

## LAWRENCE TOWNSHIP.\*

Boundaries and General Description—Indian Mounds—Pioneers and Early Settlements—Roads—Boating on the Paw Paw River—Van Buren Centre—Township Organization and Officers—Lawrence Village—Religious Societies in Lawrence—Schools.

Town 3 south, range 15 west, is the designation applied in the original government survey to the township now known as Lawrence. It embraces thirty-six full sections and a fractional section in the northeast corner,—thus apportioned, doubtless, so that the Paw Paw might be the boundary line at that point between Lawrence and Arlington. On the north of the township is Arlington, on the south Hamilton, on the east Paw Paw, and on the west Hartford.

The country, originally heavily timbered with beech, maple, whitewood, basswood, elm, ash, black walnut, and butternut, covers a region of gently-rolling lands, whose rich, sandy soil makes the township's agricultural interests exceedingly profitable. Wheat averages from fifteen to twenty-five bushels per acre. Fruit grows in abundance, especially apples. Peaches were at one time cultivated extensively, but disease among the trees has cut the crop down to insignificant proportions. There are also at Lawrence village milling interests which contribute not a little to the sum of local prosperity. Excellent water-power is gained from Brush Creek, the most important tributary of the Paw Paw in Lawrence. The river itself flows through the northern portion of the township, which is watered also by numerous river tributaries, and a half-dozen or more lakes, the largest of which are Taylor's Lake, Lake George, and Prospect Lake. Prospect Lake, in sections 25, 26, 35, and 36, is a mile and a half in length and half a mile wide. It was earlier known as Crystal Lake, because of the clearness and purity of its waters, and is now a place of popular resort for anglers and pleasure-seekers.

The township contains but one village,—Lawrence,†—which is connected by railway with the Michigan Central line at Lawton, and by a daily stage with Hartford, on the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad. The population in 1874 was 1726, and the assessed value in 1879 was \$531,100.

## INDIAN MOUNDS.

Some traces of Indian mounds may still be seen in Lawrence, on sections 7 and 18, and old settlers say that before the plow had disturbed these elevations they were in some cases very clearly defined, and contained, moreover, numerous Indian relics. Just north of Sutton's Lake, on section 7, were three of these mounds, each about four feet high and twenty feet in diameter, sloping gradually to the level. They were located about ten rods apart, and in combination

formed a triangle. On the northeast quarter of section 18 were three smaller mounds, but similar in location and shape to the others. In 1840 one Wetherby, a hunter, opened these mounds, and found within them human bones and flint arrow-heads. At that time beech-trees sixteen inches in diameter were growing on some of the mounds. Between these two groups of mounds extended a ridge of land about forty rods wide, and in this ridge of land the plow has turned up from time to time considerable quantities of flints. Many thoughtful observers declare that at some remote period a battle was fought there, but by what race of beings (if by any) conjecture even has not seen fit to indicate, save in a general way that the race was savage.

## PIONEERS AND EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

Although the early settlements in the township concentrated upon the site of Lawrence village, the *first* settlement in the township was made on the west shore of Prospect Lake, on section 26, by Stephen Fountain, a bachelor, in June, 1835. Very little can be said about Fountain's representation as a Lawrence pioneer, for he tarried in his new quarters but a short time, and when he left, traces of his existence in Lawrence disappeared with him. It was also in June, 1835, that John Allen founded the village of Mason, now the village of Lawrence; but as early settlements upon that spot receive mention elsewhere in this chapter the recital that follows will deal with the pioneers of the interior.

The summer and fall of 1835 saw the arrival also of John R. Haynes, Thomas S. Camp, George and John Reynolds, and others. Haynes located on section 10, Camp on section 4, and the Reynolds family on section 13. Mr. Haynes became one of the most prominent men of the township, and was for some time one of the associate judges of the county court. He was postmaster at Lawrence many years, the second coroner of Van Buren County, also a merchant and miller. He held many local offices of trust, and lived in the village until his death, in 1856.

Sept. 1, 1835, James Gray, with his wife and six children, started from Lenawee Co., Mich., for Lawrence, and after a tiresome journey of ten days, made in a lumber-wagon drawn by two yokes of oxen, and over roads which the hardy Gray himself had oftentimes to make, they reached section 11, in Lawrence, where Mr. Gray had located a farm. Gray's cabin was in size 10 by 15 feet, roofed with tree-boughs, boasting the country's soil for a floor, and adorned with a blanket, which served as a door, before the only opening the establishment had. The roof let in the rain, and sometimes so freely that the tenants were actually afloat within the domicile. Gray did odd jobs as a carpenter, and also farmed industriously, but bad luck overtook him, and, being forced to sell his farm, he moved to Breeds-ville, whence he returned to Lawrence village, and there died in 1873. Gray did something in the early days of his settlement in the way of flat-boating on the Paw Paw, and it was owing in part to his poor success in that branch of traffic that he succumbed to financial misfortune.

Eaton Branch, of Ann Arbor, came to Lawrence in 1835, with his wife, and worked for John Allen a year, making roads, underbrushing at Mason village, and doing

\* By David Schwartz.

† The village of Van Buren was laid out on the north side of Prospect Lake, in Lawrence, in the flush times of 1836-37, with plenty of streets and lots, but no houses. In 1839 it was owned by T. E. Phelps, R. Christie, and Charles Chadwick, and assessed in the aggregate at \$1135, according to the county records. The streets were named Water, Broad, Park, and Forest. The village failed to appear in any later documents.

what else came to his hand, living meanwhile in the house vacated by Ephraim Palmer. In 1836 he entered 160 acres of land on section 4, and rather than go around by the section line, he bought of Judge Haynes the right of way through section 9, and cut a road to his farm. As this road happened to be chosen subsequently by the highway commissioners for a town road, Branch got his money back. On the farm he then entered Mr. Branch has ever since lived. He was actively concerned in township affairs, and, as highway commissioner for several years, laid out many of Lawrence's first roads. Israel Branch, brother to Eaton, came, in March, 1836, to Lawrence, with his wife and three children, and, setting up a cooper-shop in the village, worked at his trade several years. He then settled on section 4, where he died in 1873. Luther Branch, another brother, came from Oakland County in 1837, worked a while as a cooper in the village, and eventually located upon a farm in section 14. He moved to a place on section 5, where he died in 1845. Vine Branch, the father, became a resident of Lawrence in 1836, and with his wife made his home at the house of his son Eaton, where he died in 1852.

Orrin Sutton was a settler upon the Holland Purchase, N. Y., and in 1834, coming West with his family, located first in Washtenaw Co., Mich., and in 1836 in Mason village. He helped John Allen build the first saw-mill at Mason, worked about the neighborhood a short time, and then settled upon a farm in section 7, returning, however, to the village, from which he migrated to Hartford, where he died in 1868, and where his son Luther (editor of the *Day Spring*) now resides. Orrin Sutton was the first township clerk of Lawrence, and during his residence therein served extended terms as justice of the peace, town treasurer, and in other local offices.

Horace Stimson, who became distinguished as the first postmaster at Lawrence, moved from Kalamazoo to section 1 in Lawrence, in 1836. Orrin Sutton built a double log house for Stimson, and finished it just in time to be used for the first town-meeting, held April 3, 1837. Stimson moved out of the township soon after, selling his place to Daniel Buckley, who died in Allegan County.

Thomas S. Camp, hailing from Connecticut, came to Lawrence in 1836 and made purchase of considerable land in the township, and lived upon a farm in section 4. July 12, 1861, while fishing with a Mr. Brown, in Monroe's Lake, he was drowned. One of his daughters, Mrs. Eliza West, lives on section 4.

In the Reynolds family were George, the father, and four sons,—John, George, William, and Burr. The elder Reynolds put up a log tavern on the Territorial road in section 13 early in 1836, and there for many years kept the old Reynolds tavern. His sons lived with him a while, and then all but John moved out of the township. John Reynolds, who had in early life been a boatman on the Ohio, renewed that occupation when he settled in Lawrence, and for some time was actively engaged in flat-boating on the Paw Paw between Lawrence and St. Joseph. His river experience elevated him to the dignity of flat-boat "captain," and he was a man of some local river fame for that reason. He was by trade a baker, and when he left Lawrence he opened

a bakery in Paw Paw. He now lives on a farm south of that village.

J. R. Monroe, one of Lawrence's most eminent and honored citizens, was for forty years closely identified with the most progressive interests of not only Lawrence township, but of Van Buren County. At the age of twenty (in 1826) he was engaged at Detroit with Gen. Cass and Campau in locating Western lands. He went back to New York in 1828, and in 1830, returning to the West, he undertook an exploration of Michigan, making his home at Prairie Ronde. In 1833 he entered the land upon which the village of South Haven now lies, and in 1835 laid out a road from Prairie Ronde to South Haven. That road passed through Lawrence township in the northeast corner, and crossed the Paw Paw on the west line of section 1. He built the first house ever put up in South Haven.

His permanent settlement, however, in Michigan was made in Lawrence in 1837, upon land in section 2, through which the road from Prairie Ronde to South Haven had its course. On that farm he lived until his death, in October, 1876. Mr. Monroe was a large land-holder, and a man of mark in the community which was proud to claim him as a member. He was an earnest supporter and promoter of beneficent public enterprises, did much for the encouragement of public education, assisted in the foundation of both the State and Van Buren Agricultural Societies, occupied the judicial bench (sitting as associate judge in the first court held in the county, June 6, 1837), filled numerous local public trusts (serving twenty-five years consecutively as county commissioner of the poor), and stood until his death at the head of the County Pioneer Association, which he called into existence, and of which he was the only president during his life.

During Judge Monroe's extended service as poor commissioner, he frequently provided at his own house for the wants of indigent poor, and to such his residence came to be known as the poormaster's house. One day, while the judge attired in shabby garments was at work in a ditch on his farm, he was accosted by an apparent traveling pauper with the inquiry, "Where is the poormaster's house?" and upon the judge pointing it out without revealing himself, continued, with a look of curious examination, "Do you work for him?" "Yes," replied the judge. "And what does he give you for working?" "Oh, he gives me just what he has himself," was the judge's answer; "pork and beans, potatoes, johnny-cake, and old clothes." "Well," exclaimed the tramp, preparing to move off, "if that's all a fellow can expect, I'll be goll-darned if I stop with the old hedge-hog." And away he went, determined that the county shouldn't support him on those terms.

In 1838, Uriel T. Barnes left Calhoun Co., Mich., where he had been living four years, and with his family set out for Van Buren County, his chief reasons for making the move being that in Calhoun County there was not timber enough to suit him, while peaches, he was satisfied, would not grow there. Arriving at Paw Paw at the close of a cold day, the family put up at Dodge's tavern, and there, Mrs. Barnes being asked by some person where the family was bound, replied, "For Brush Creek." "Brush Creek!" replied her interrogator, "why, you'll starve there. All the

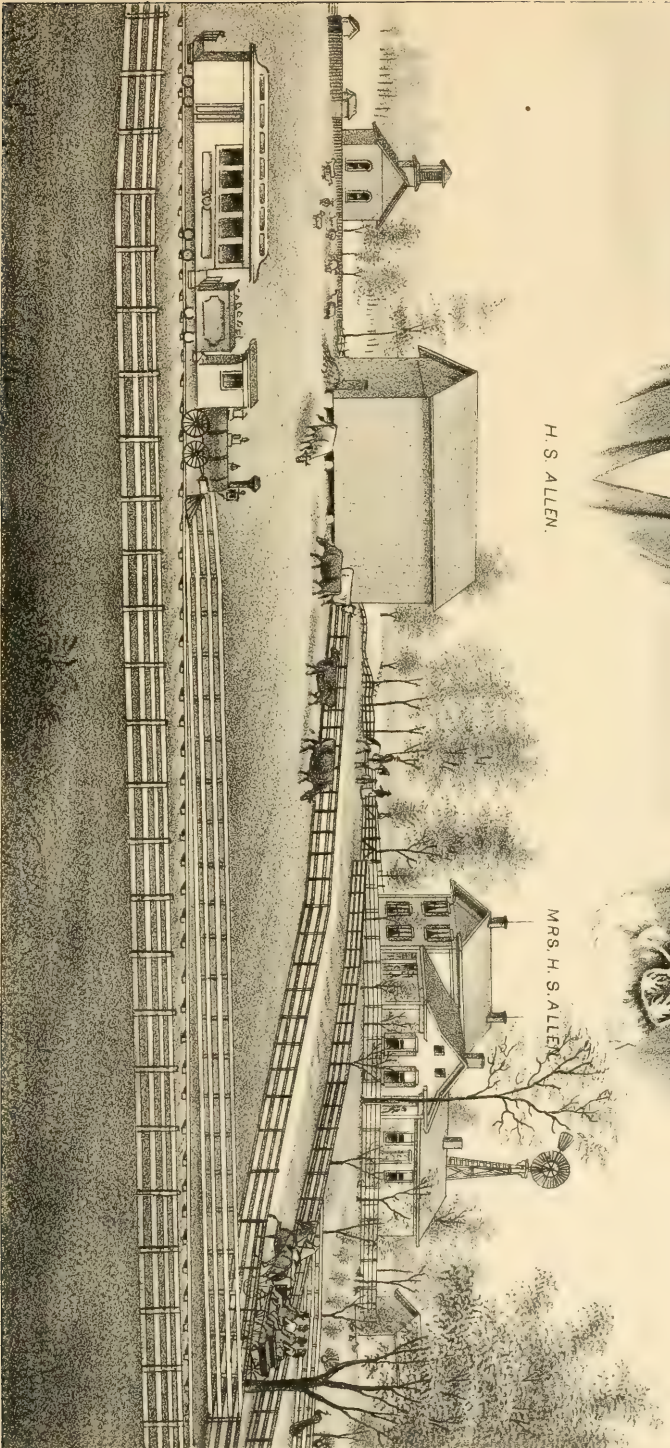




H. S. ALLEN.



MRS. H. S. ALLEN.







people out there are starving. It's in the woods, and you won't be able to raise a thing." "Well," replied the lady, "I've had a four years' pioneer experience and haven't starved yet. I think, therefore, that I won't starve yet awhile."

Pushing on, Mr. Barnes soon reached the hospitable cabin of Uncle Jimmy Gray, on section 11, in Lawrence, and in a trice the strangers were made welcome and comfortable. The next day the Barnes family moved into an abandoned log cabin on what is now the Baker & Richards farm, in section 14; a few days thereafter, Mr. Barnes bought 80 acres of land of Eaton Branch, on section 5, put up a frame house, and transported his family thither as soon as possible. Eaton Branch had cut out a road from the village to his place, and from Branch's to the farm on section 5, Mr. Barnes cut the road himself. Mr. Barnes lived upon that farm until his death in July, 1853. His son, A. U. Barnes, occupies the old place, and adjoining him lives his brother, H. G.

Mrs. Allen Rice, a daughter of Uriel T. Barnes, says that when her father came to Lawrence there were but four families in the village,—those of J. R. Haynes, Dexter Gibbs, John Allen, and Israel Branch. She says further, "A saw-mill had been erected and a school-house built. I well remember the first time I went to school in that old school-house. I expected to see something like a village, but after walking what seemed a great distance through the dense woods, I came to a house and inquired how far it was to the village. 'To the village, dear?' returned the woman; 'why, you are in the village now, only you can't see it for the trees.' 'Well,' said I, 'where is the school-house?' 'Only a little way farther in the woods,' was her response; and after walking what appeared to be half a mile, I found the school-house. There were about 30 scholars, and the teacher was Truman Foster, of Keeler."

The widow McKnight, who came to Lawrence in 1838, was a sister of John and Joseph Haynes, and for some time kept house for Joseph. She brought with her two daughters and a son, and owned a little place in the village, now occupied by her daughter, Mrs. A. F. Haskins. Mrs. Henry Mayner, another daughter, lives in the township. The son removed to California some years ago.

Ephraim Taylor, originally from New York, came to Lawrence in 1836 to work for John Allen, sold goods for him in Gibbs' tavern, drove stage, and finally settled on a farm in section 30, where he died in 1877.

A. H. Phelps, one of Lawrence's early settlers, lived in the village about 1840, and soon afterwards, with his brother Theodore, built what is now called the Chadwick mill, south of Lawrence. He subsequently became interested with H. N. Phelps in milling and other business enterprises in the village, and for a long time was known as a fur trader, while he also manufactured deer-skin gloves and mittens. He dealt extensively with the Indians, and was himself esteemed during his early life in Lawrence as a great hunter. He lived an honored citizen in the township nearly forty years, and died in the village in 1877, only a few weeks after celebrating his golden wedding, leaving a widow who still survives him.

George Parmelee, who came to the village in 1838, was

a tinner. After working about in the vicinity some time, he married a daughter of T. S. Camp, and went to live upon a farm on section 8, given him by Mr. Camp. He moved to Bainbridge a few years after, and subsequently to St. Joseph. He lives now at Old Mission, Grand Traverse Co., Mich., and is president of the State Pomological Society.

H. P. Barnum, who was among the earliest and ablest of the county surveyors, settled in the eastern part of Van Buren in 1835, and in 1838 selected a permanent settlement upon section 11 in Lawrence township, where he lived until his death in 1851. Mr. Barnum surveyed nearly all the early roads in Lawrence, and devoted himself also assiduously to his farming interests.

R. B. Danks came to Lawrence from Washtenaw County in 1836, and worked a farm for John Allen on section 14. Subsequently he bought a farm on section 19, west of Taylor's Lake, and moving thence to Hartford, died in the latter place. Danks was a firm believer in Spiritualism, and in his strong devotion thereto he frequently exhibited apparent eccentricities which gave him a peculiar local celebrity. Among other stories related of him, one is told of how when his horse fell sick he sought to cure him by mesmeric influence, but the influence was not quite strong enough to keep the animal alive.

In 1838, Nelson S. Marshall, of Oakland Co., Mich., moved with his family into Lawrence and sought quarters in the Dexter Gibbs tavern, Marshall's wife being the daughter of Dexter Gibbs. The Marshall family lived in the Gibbs house a little more than a year, and then, Nelson's brother, Harvey, having joined him in the purchase of a farm on section 17, formerly owned by Dexter Gibbs, the brothers moved to the place in 1840 and managed the farm jointly. Nelson Marshall moved to Watervliet in 1856, and died there in 1863. Harvey Marshall still lives on the farm which he has occupied continuously since 1840. H. M. Marshall, one of the leading merchants of Lawrence, is one of Nelson's sons.

When Marshall entered the village there were there the Gibbs tavern and the houses of Orrin Tutton, Alex. Newton, J. R. Haynes, and Watson Pool. When he moved to his farm on section 17, Peter Dopp was living on section 31, where Dopp's widow and her son Amos now reside. Mrs. Dopp was a woman of determined energy, and more than once, when there was sickness in her household, used to walk alone through the woods to the Marshall place, nearly four miles distant, to ask Harvey Marshall to ride to Paw Paw for a doctor. Harvey was then about the only one in the township boasting the possession of a horse, and for that reason was frequently called upon to perform the kindly service of riding away after a physician when sudden emergencies arose. The only other dwellers in the southwest corner in 1840 were David and James Dopp, Peter's brothers, Cyrus Bateman, Hosea Howard, and Roderick Irish, living on section 32. All these settlers came to Lawrence in 1836. Irish died in Keeler in 1878. Orrin Tutton, already mentioned, moved to a farm two miles and a half west of the village, and subsequently to Lawrence, where he died. Alexander Newton went to Kalamazoo and remained. He lived in a log house that stood upon

the site now occupied by the village tavern. Newton was not the most industrious man in the community, and, *apropos* of his inordinate fondness for lingering within grateful shade on a summer day, it is related that H. P. Barnum once said that he could always tell the time of day by marking Newton's gradual march around a house in the wake of the moving shadow of the building. Cyrus Bate-men, above mentioned, lived on the place of his first settlement until his death. He and Roderick Irish married sisters of the Dopps.

Samuel Gunton, the first elected sheriff of Van Buren County, settled on the Territorial road, one mile south of Prospect Lake, in 1836. In 1839, nearly all the members of his family being dead, he returned to New York State, his former home.

S. M. N. Brooks, a young man, lived with his brother-in-law, John Reynolds, in 1838, roved about for a time, and settled eventually in Keeler. In the same year John Andrews located on section 14, east of Baker's Lake; he moved afterwards to Hartford, where he now lives. William R. Williams, a New Yorker, settled upon section 20 in 1836, and at an early day, selling his place to John Raven, moved to the eastern part of the State. Thomas Price and his widowed mother came from New York in 1836, in company with David Dopp, who had previously married Mrs. Price's daughter. They all lived together at the village a short time, and settled in company upon a farm in section 29, where Mrs. Price died. Her son Thomas lives now in the far West. In 1836, also, John Mellen, with his wife and ten children, journeyed from New York, and located on section 17, in Lawrence, where both Mellen and his wife died in 1843. All of their children moved out of the township. Mellen was at the time of his death a blacksmith in the village.

Joseph Haynes, a carpenter, located in Brush Creek in 1836, worked at his trade there some time, and settling upon a farm in section 15, died there in 1858.

Volney A. Moore, a nephew of Harvey Marshall, came to Lawrence in 1838, lived with the Marshalls for a time, and marrying, bought a farm on section 30, where he died. General B. F. Chadwick, who bought the Phelps mill, south of the village, owned also a small farm near there. He lives now in Hartford. The old mill is still known as Chadwick's mill. Mr. Chadwick says it used to be called "Chad's old mill," and "old Chad's mill," just as the popular humor fancied. Leonard Watson, who settled in Breedsville in 1835, and in Lawrence in 1838, married one of Judge Haynes' daughters, and died in Cass County. In 1838 also came Warren Van Vleet, who owned a farm on section 13, and who still lives in the township. Barney and Daniel Evans came to Lawrence with their father in 1838, and located near Prospect Lake. They are all dead. Barney's widow lives on section 16.

Watson Pool, a carpenter, became a resident of Mason in 1837, and besides his work at the bench attended to the cultivation of a few acres on what is now called St. Joseph Street. His widow still lives in the village.

The first birth in Lawrence was that of Sarah, daughter of John and Jane Reynolds, her advent occurring March 21, 1836. She died in Lawrence in her youth.

William R. Williams and Elizabeth Gibbs were the pioneer wedded couple of Lawrence, but as they mated before Lawrence had a "squire" they were compelled to go to Schoolcraft to have the ceremony performed. The first marriage in the township was that of Ephraim Taylor and Emeline Gibbs. They were joined in the autumn of 1836, by Justice Jay R. Monroe, in Dexter Gibbs' double log tavern, which was, on that important occasion, alive with merry-making, and radiant with a joyous gathering, from far and near, of friends and fellow-settlers. Judge Monroe was on his way to Schoolcraft when he was overtaken by a messenger in hot haste, and told that he was wanted to marry a couple at Dexter Gibbs'. The judge turned about, got to Gibbs' at nine o'clock that night, married them, and resumed his trip.

No death occurred in the little settlement until 1838, when, in the month of April, Dexter Gibbs' wife was called from her earthly cares, and three months later her daughter, Mrs. Ephraim Taylor, died. Dexter Gibbs himself did not remain long, for in October of the same year he followed the others. Mother, father, and daughter were buried upon the banks of Brush Creek, just outside the present eastern limits of the village. This place was afterwards used as a public burial-ground until the present village cemetery was laid out.

The frequent necessity of sending a grist to mill was to the early pioneers of Lawrence a task of considerable magnitude. For the first two or three years after its first settlement, "going to mill" meant going to either Kalamazoo, Prairie Ronde, Flowerfield, or Whitmanville, and sometimes even to Three Rivers,—places from twenty-five to thirty miles distant. A journey like that through a wild country, and over rough roads, or no roads at all, was not a pleasant subject for contemplation, but the necessities of the hour offered no loophole of escape, and the issue had to be met. The tree-stump corn-mill at home served many a good turn, and was a valued and useful coadjutor in the business of producing corn-cake. Of course the march of improvement soon relieved the settlers of the inconvenience attendant upon reaching distant mills, but while the exactions continued, they were distressing. Matters improved somewhat in that respect in 1838, when John R. Haynes put a small run of stones into his saw-mill at the village of Mason.

As an illustration of the difficulties encountered by the early settlers in procuring the necessities of life may be cited an incident in the experience of Mr. Warren Van Vleet. He spent, on one occasion, several days in a fruitless search through the country for some flour. Eventually, he discovered a man in Prairie Ronde who had eight barrels, but who refused to sell less than a barrel, and that at an extortionate price. Van Vleet was pretty nearly desperate at the dealer's obstinacy, and told him that he had better lock his flour up somewhere, for the people might presently be urged by hunger to deeds of violence, "and then," said he, "where would your flour be?" Failing to get flour Van Vleet bought a lot of rice at Paw Paw, but when he got home he found that there were no edibles in the house but the rice. Thereupon he roamed the woods in search of wild honey, and finding some, he and his fam-



ily subsisted several days on honey and rice. His next search for flour resulted in his finding 80 pounds at Paw Paw, which he lugged home on foot, a distance of nine miles.

"When we bought a piece of pork," says he, "it was generally the thickness of a finger, with hair on it long enough to lift it out of the pot with, and by the hair we, indeed, used to lift it out and hold it, too, while we ate it."

When Ephraim Palmer got fairly located in the house he put up on the site of Lawrence village, he had as guests one day Edwin Barnum, the surveyor, John Allen, and James, his son. Supplies were all out, and Palmer started for Kalamazoo for a stock, but a fearful rain-storm coming on, the country was flooded, and he was six days making the trip. Meanwhile the Allens, Barnum, and Mrs. Palmer subsisted on cranberries and coffee. Allen caught a woodchuck, but there was no salt in the house, and the project of cooking it was about to be abandoned, when a few wild leeks being found, they were forced to do duty as seasoning, although the dish was voted distasteful, despite the hunger of the party.

In common with settlers in all parts of Michigan, the pioneers of Lawrence were annoyed by wolves and other wild beasts, although no serious trouble was at any time occasioned. Wolves used to howl about the cabins in an apparently very fierce manner, though really they were cowardly curs unless running in packs. Still travelers were not without apprehensive fears when called abroad after dark, and usually took precautions to ward off the attacks of beasts. Sheep, calves, and hogs were carried off sometimes in broad day by the marauding creatures, despite the utmost vigilance of settlers.

There was, however, some consolation in the knowledge that game was plentiful, and that a day's hunting was sure to produce a fruitful yield, especially of deer, which were so numerous that they could be shot from doorsteps, while the organization of grand hunts in the winter seasons provided fine sport for the inhabitants, and helped materially towards supplying the means of subsistence.

#### ROADS.

The first township road was laid out in the summer of 1837, and was known as the Watervliet road,—James Gray and Eaton Branch being the highway commissioners, and H. P. Barnum the surveyor. The highway commissioners of Lawrence had no sinecure in their office. Their territory of exploration covered the present townships of Hartford, Lawrence, and Arlington, and when they entered upon their task of providing roads for a new country where roads had not been, and where water-courses, marshes, and swamps were no inconsiderable obstacles, they needed indeed all the vigorous energy and persistent industry at their command.

A road from Mason village towards Keelerville, surveyed in 1836 by Jesse L. Church, was laid out in 1837, and about then, also, another, called road No. 4, was laid out from the southeast corner of section 32 to the northwest corner of section 16. The river road, the Paw Paw road, a road north from Mason, one from the south side of sec-

tion 4 to the Black River road, and one from the southwest corner of section 19 to the southwest corner of section 20, were laid out in 1837.

Among the roads laid out in 1838 were the Breedsville road, Hand's road, Phelps' road, Olds' road, Hammond's road, Taylor's road, Barnes' road, and Branch's road. In 1839 the roads included the town line road between Alpena (now Hamilton) and Lawrence, Major Heath's road, the Briggs road, Mellen's road, Peter Clark's road, and others.

Until 1839, James Gray and Eaton Branch were the highway commissioners who performed the work set down for the board, and until 1841, Eaton Branch was more actively engaged than any other citizen in the work of laying out roads. H. P. Barnum was the surveyor of many of the earliest roads in Lawrence, although Jesse L. Church and E. H. Keeler performed an important share of the business. The Territorial road, which reached from Detroit to St. Joseph, passed through the southeastern portion of Lawrence. It was an important highway of travel from 1835 to 1848, and before the completion of the Michigan Central Railway resounded daily with the roll of many wheels, and bore upon its surface great numbers of stage-coaches and freight-wagons, which in the early days plied between the eastern and western boundaries of the State.

#### MAIL SERVICE.

In 1836, John Allen, who opened the settlement of Lawrence, had the government contract for carrying the mail between Kalamazoo and St. Joseph, and being desirous of favoring Lawrence as much as he could, constructed a road from Mason village to Keeler, and changed the mail-route so much as to take Mason in on the journey between Kalamazoo and St. Joseph. The Lawrence post-office was not established, however, until 1837, when Horace Stimson was appointed postmaster. John R. Haynes, who succeeded Mr. Stimson, held the office for many years, and relinquished it only upon his death, in 1856. His successor was John B. Potter, who retired in 1865, in favor of B. F. Chadwick, but returned to the office in 1867. In 1873 he gave place to G. A. Cross, the present incumbent. The office receives and forwards two mails daily. The receipts of its money-order department average \$413 weekly, and payments \$70.

Prospect Lake Post-Office, on section 26, was established in 1851, H. Jacobs being appointed the first postmaster. His successor, Dennis Cooper, now in charge of the office, was appointed in 1876. When Stimson was appointed postmaster, the mail for Lawrence was conveyed over the route between Paw Paw and South Haven, Stimson's house being on that road, near the Paw Paw River. Allen's contract for carrying the mail between Kalamazoo and St. Joseph began Jan. 1, 1836. From that time to January 15th, the mail was carried from Kalamazoo to Lawrence by team and wagon, and from Lawrence to St. Joseph on horseback, John Reynolds being the mail-rider. From January 15th, during the winter, Ephraim Taylor carried the mail from Lawrence to St. Joseph in a sleigh, but when spring set in the roads to and from Lawrence became so bad that the mail-route *via* that point was abandoned in favor of the Territorial road.

## BOATING ON PAW PAW RIVER.

The Paw Paw River was, in the days of Lawrence's early settlement, an important highway for the transportation of freight from the Paw Paw Valley to St. Joseph, and many people were engaged in the business of boating flour on flat-boats. Above Brush Creek village, navigation was exceedingly uncertain, and that point was therefore a place of shipment for the neighboring country, flour being hauled overland from Kalamazoo, and shipped to St. Joseph from Brush Creek. John R. Haynes built a warehouse for the reception of river-freight at that place, and forwarded as well as received great quantities of goods. Many people of Lawrence were employed now and then upon the river, and a fortunate thing it was for many of them, too, for in that employment they managed to obtain ready cash, a very scarce article among the farmers. The traffic on the Paw Paw continued with more or less regularity until the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad, in 1848. Chauncey Willard, one of the early boatmen, met his death near Lawrence, where the overhanging branch of a tree swept him into the river. Ten days after, his body was found several miles below the village.

## TAVERNS.

Dexter Gibbs' old log tavern, already noticed, was probably highly thought of, for it existed in the period and amid times when wayfarers were not inclined to be over-nice as to the accommodations, and when a place of rest and refreshment was more of a luxury than it is to-day.

The second hotel built in Lawrence village, and the only one, besides Gibbs', which the town has ever had, was erected in 1849 by H. N. Phelps. Slightly changed since then, the building still does duty in its original character, and is now known as Mather's Hotel. Phelps kept the house until 1853, and sold it to H. S. Dolph, who was succeeded as landlord and proprietor in 1855 by S. G. Mather. Mather kept it until January, 1858, when he sold it, but took it back again in the fall of 1860. In 1866, Mather rented it to Capt. Whittaker, and in 1867 to E. Waterman. In 1869, Mather was again the landlord, and in 1876, A. G. Warren took it, only to relinquish it in 1878 to Mr. Mather, who is still its proprietor and occupant.

There were two log taverns on the Territorial road within Lawrence, and, until the abandonment of the stage-route, they were features in current history. George Reynolds opened the first one near Lake George (or Reynolds' Lake), and kept it upwards of ten years. South of him, on the banks of Prospect Lake, H. N. Phelps opened a stage-house in 1837, and, as it was for some time a place where the stages changed horses, it was considered a place of some consequence. Phelps sold the tavern to Robert Christie, who was its last landlord.

The place occupied by Phelps for his tavern he bought from John D. Freeman, who had it from Stephen Fountain,—the first white settler in Lawrence. Freeman is now living in St. Joseph County.

## VAN BUREN CENTRE.

Mention of Phelps' tavern will recall to the minds of old settlers the history of John D. Freeman's paper town, on

the shores of Prospect Lake, and the settlement of the Christie family. Freeman entered an 80-acre lot on section 26 (where Moody Emerson had previously squatted), put up a shanty against a side-hill, and contemplated the erection of a steam saw-mill. He abandoned his plans, however, before maturing them, and moved away. When Freeman came in, he occupied Emerson's shanty as a stable. He conceived the idea that the shores of Prospect Lake presented an attractive site for a town, and went so far in his imagination as to believe the place might, with proper attention, be made the county-seat. In pursuance of that idea, he interested Maj. Calvin Britain, of St. Joseph, in the project, laid out the 80 acres into village lots, staked a site for the court-house, published a map, upon which he showed a thriving village, with a steamboat proudly plowing the waters of the lake, and put his town on the market. Wild-cat money was then plenty, and Freeman sold a number of lots as high as \$150 each to speculators, H. N. Phelps buying 23 of them.

Freeman put up a small frame building, in which he proposed to open a store, and matters began to look encouraging for Van Buren Centre. Before any considerable result was reached, however, the wild-cat money of the day became worthless paper, Freeman failed, and his ambitious projects went down with him. Phelps, having become interested in the prospective village, put up a tavern opposite Freeman's store building, and was the landlord when, in 1837, Robert Christie, of Washtenaw County, came along with his family *en route* to Hartford, where he had bought considerable land. The ideal village of Van Buren Centre consisted then of Phelps' tavern and Freeman's abandoned store building, into which latter Christie moved his family, proposing to stop there until he could prepare his Hartford place for habitation.

He and his two eldest sons went to Hartford, in July, worked there until Saturday night, and returned to the lake to spend Sunday. They were, however, stricken with ague, and from that time until the next January not only they, but the rest of the family, lay helpless with fever and ague. During that time Christie exchanged his Hartford land with Phelps, taking the latter's 23 village lots and tavern stand therefor. Christie thereupon took possession of the tavern, converted his village lots into a farm, and was a landlord until the stages were withdrawn from the Territorial road, when he closed the tavern, but continued to reside there until his death, in April, 1865. Five of Mr. Christie's sons are now living, namely, Henry, Charles E., and James E., in Lawrence; David, in Decatur; and McDaniel, in Hamilton.

John H. Stoddard, a son-in-law of Robert Christie, came from Washtenaw County the year following Christie's settlement, and located south of Prospect Lake, where he lived a year, and then moved to Paw Paw. He remained there until 1863, returning in that year to the lake, where he now resides. When Mr. Christie came to Prospect Lake, Samuel Gunton was living on section 35, but two years later returned to New York, whence he had come. Nathaniel Starkweather was living in the southern portion of section 36, but left about 1840 for other parts. In that vicinity other early settlers were Oliver Witter,—whose



Photo. by Agrell, Allegan.

### A. S. HASKIN, M.D.

This gentleman was born in the town of Moriah, Essex Co., N. Y., Sept. 15, 1827. In 1828 he moved with his parents to Bridport, Addison Co., Vt., and in 1834, to Brockport, Monroe Co., N. Y. In 1840 he removed to La Grange Co., Indiana; in 1843 to Benton, Elkhart Co., Ind.; in 1848, to Cass Co., Mich.; and in 1857, to Lawrence, Van Buren Co., Mich., where he at present resides, enjoying the comforts of a pleasant home. Until the year 1850 he was engaged in agricultural pursuits; but at that time he decided to enter the professional field, and chose the medical branch. He engaged as a teacher until 1855, employing his spare time in the study of medicine. In the fall of 1855 he entered the office of William E. Clark, and read for two years, attending lectures during the time at Ann Arbor. In the fall of 1857 he began practice, and through the succeeding years has been eminently

successful. His father, Samuel R. Haskin, came to Lawrence about 1866-67, and died here in November, 1868. His wife had died in 1866, on the old homestead in Vermont. Mr. Haskin, Sr., passed his days as a farmer, never desiring to engage in any other pursuit.

Dr. Haskin was married, April 9, 1854, to Miss Olive, daughter of Selah and Charity Pickett. Her death occurred Nov. 10, 1855; and on the 17th of December, 1860, the doctor was married to Miss Martha J. McKnight.

Dr. Haskin has filled, with satisfaction to all, several offices in the township and village, to which he has been elected. He is at present one of the coroners of the county of Van Buren. He is a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church, uniting with it at the age of seventeen. In politics he has always been and remains a staunch Republican.





two sons, O. J. and L. M. Witter, now live in the township, —Rodolphus Howe, Cyrus Rathbone, and Leonard Watson.

Hosea Howard, a Vermonter, came to Lawrence in 1839, and settled in section 32, upon a farm purchased of William M. Lee; Hector Yorke located the land in 1836, and sold it to William Clark, who settled upon it, but remained a short time only.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND OFFICERS.

Lawrence township was organized in 1837, and included at that time the territory now occupied by Lawrence, Arlington, and Hartford. Hartford was set off in 1840 and Arlington in 1841.

The records of the township furnish the following report touching the first township-meeting:

"At the first township-meeting of the inhabitants of the town of Lawrence, held at the house of Horace Stimson, on the 3d day of April, 1837, John R. Haynes was called to the chair as moderator, and John Reynolds was appointed clerk *pro tem*. Proclamation was made by the presiding officer of the days for opening of the polls for the election of township officers. . . . The following persons were duly elected, to wit: John R. Haynes, Supervisor; Orrin Sutton, Township Clerk; Hiram Hilliard, Collector; Joseph Haynes, John Reynolds, Horace Stimson, Assessors; John D. Freeman, James Gray, and Eaton Branch, Commissioners of Highways; Hiram Hilliard, William R. Williams, Constables; George S. Reynolds and Dexter Gibbs, Directors of the Poor.

Resolutions were passed at this meeting as follows:

"Resolved, That there be a bounty of five dollars on each wolf-scap taken in this town the present year, and five dollars on each panther-scap caught in this town the present year.

"Resolved, That there be eight overseers of highways in this town the present year. The following persons were chosen overseers of roads: For road district No. 1, Truman Gillman; No. 2, Eaton Branch; No. 3, William M. Reynolds; No. 4, Orrin Sutton; No. 5, William R. Williams; No. 6, Samuel Ganton; No. 7, Peter Dopp."

At a special meeting, on April 29th, in the same year, justices of the peace and school inspectors were elected, as follows: Justices, George S. Reynolds, Dexter Gibbs, Richard B. Danks, Alvin Harris; School Inspectors, Nathaniel B. Starkweather, Hiram Hilliard, John Reynolds.

The persons chosen annually, from 1838 to 1879, inclusive, to serve as supervisors, clerks, treasurers, school inspectors, and justices of the peace, are named in the following list, with years of their election, viz.:

- 1838.—Supervisor, John Reynolds; Clerk, Orrin Sutton; Treasurer, Joseph Haynes; School Inspectors, L. Humphrey, H. Hilliard, C. Bateman; Justices of the Peace, Henry Hammond, H. N. Phelps.
- 1839.—Supervisor, John Reynolds; Clerk, Orrin Sutton; Treasurer, O. Sutton; School Inspectors, C. Bateman, L. Humphrey, J. Reynolds; Justice of the Peace, O. Sutton.
- 1840.—Supervisor, J. R. Haynes; Clerk, George Parmelee; Treasurer, Joseph Haynes; School Inspectors, G. Parmelee, H. Hilliard, N. S. Marshall; Justice of the Peace, J. Reynolds.
- 1841.—Supervisor, J. R. Haynes; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, Joseph Haynes; School Inspectors, E. H. Keeler, J. Reynolds, E. O. Briggs; Justice of the Peace, Major Heath.
- 1842.—Supervisor, B. F. Chadwick; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, Alexander Newton; School Inspectors, H. P. Barnum, J. Andrews, B. F. Chadwick; Justice of the Peace, John Andrews.

- 1843.—Supervisor, John Andrews; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, Alexander Newton; School Inspectors, J. Andrews, N. S. Marshall, B. F. Chadwick; Justice of the Peace, B. F. Chadwick.
- 1844.—Supervisor, H. P. Barnum; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, Alexander Newton; School Inspectors, J. Andrews, N. S. Marshall; Justice of the Peace, J. R. Haynes.
- 1845.—Supervisor, H. P. Barnum; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, J. R. Haynes; School Inspector, George Parmelee; Justice of the Peace, J. Andrews.
- 1846.—No record.
- 1847.—Supervisor, H. P. Barnum; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, H. N. Phelps; School Inspector, T. B. Irwin; Justice of the Peace, T. S. Camp.
- 1848.—Supervisor, H. P. Barnum; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, H. N. Phelps; School Inspector, O. M. Baker; Justices of the Peace, D. Hodges, T. B. Irwin.
- 1849.—Supervisor, H. P. Barnum; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, H. N. Phelps; School Inspector, W. M. Blowers; Justice of the Peace, Chauncey Potter.
- 1850.—Supervisor, H. P. Barnum; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, H. N. Phelps; School Inspector, O. M. Baker; Justice of the Peace, John Andrews.
- 1851.—Supervisor, John Andrews; Clerk, A. H. Phelps; Treasurer, J. G. Lammon; School Inspector, C. P. Prindle; Justice of the Peace, H. Balfour.
- 1852.—Supervisor, John Andrews; Clerk, Richard Ferris; Treasurer, J. G. Lammon; School Inspector, O. M. Baker; Justice of the Peace, N. S. Marshall.
- 1853.—No record.
- 1854.—Supervisor, T. B. Irwin; Clerk, J. L. Phillips; Treasurer, J. G. Lammon.
- 1855.—Supervisor, T. B. Irwin; Clerk, J. L. Phillips; Treasurer, J. G. Lammon; School Inspector, N. Rowe; Justice of the Peace, John Andrews.
- 1856.—Supervisor, John Andrews; Clerk, J. L. Phillips; Treasurer, J. G. Lammon; School Inspector, C. S. Dunham; Justice of the Peace, J. H. White.
- 1857.—Supervisor, E. Southwell; Clerk, William Hodges; Treasurer, S. G. Mather; School Inspector, W. M. Blowers; Justice of the Peace, William Powers.
- 1858.—Supervisor, Nelson Rowe; Clerk, William Hodges; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspector, A. S. Haskin; Justice of the Peace, Chauncey Potter.
- 1859.—Supervisor, Nelson Rowe; Clerk, N. Crissey; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspector, E. S. Dunham; Justice of the Peace, George Bennett.
- 1860.—Supervisor, Nelson Rowe; Clerk, J. L. Phillips; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspectors, O. Rowland, T. Stow; Justice of the Peace, J. H. White.
- 1861.—Supervisor, Nelson Rowe; Clerk, H. M. Marshall; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspectors, O. Rowland, J. B. Upton; Justice of the Peace, George Bennett.
- 1862.—Supervisor, Nelson Rowe; Clerk, H. M. Marshall; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspector, B. M. Williams; Justice of the Peace, D. C. Sweet.
- 1863.—Supervisor, Nelson Rowe; Clerk, H. M. Marshall; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspector, H. L. Cornwell; Justice of the Peace, J. M. Blowers.
- 1864.—Supervisor, J. B. Upton; Clerk, H. M. Marshall; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspector, C. C. Stutsman; Justice of the Peace, J. H. White.
- 1865.—Supervisor, J. B. Potter; Clerk, J. H. White; Treasurer, Orrin Sutton; School Inspector, H. Jacobs; Justice of the Peace, S. Ransom.
- 1866.—Supervisor, J. B. Potter; Clerk, L. M. Hodges; Treasurer, H. M. Marshall; School Inspector, J. Scotsford; Justice of the Peace, E. Lunnphear.
- 1867.—Supervisor, J. B. Potter; Clerk, L. M. Hodges; Treasurer, H. M. Marshall; School Inspector, A. G. Coney; Justice of the Peace, J. M. Blowers.
- 1868.—Supervisor, J. B. Potter; Clerk, O. W. Rowland; Treasurer, W. W. Bass; School Inspector, H. L. Cornwell; Justice of the Peace, J. H. White.
- 1869.—Supervisor, J. B. Potter; Clerk, G. A. Cross; Treasurer, A. H.

- Draper; School Inspector, S. Plopper; Justice of the Peace, E. Rowland.
- 1870.—Supervisor, C. Richards; Clerk, G. A. Cross; Treasurer, A. H. Draper; School Inspector, H. Jacobs; Justice of the Peace, A. Sturtevant.
- 1871.—Supervisor, W. W. Bass; Clerk, George W. Rowe; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, H. Donaldson; Justice of the Peace, A. Rice.
- 1872.—Supervisor, W. W. Bass; Clerk, L. J. Dane; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, A. Rice; Justice of the Peace, C. Rockwell.
- 1873.—Supervisor, C. Rockwell; Clerk, J. F. Barrows; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, E. S. Cleveland; Justice of the Peace, S. Cole.
- 1874.—Supervisor, C. Rockwell; Clerk, J. F. Barrows; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, H. Donaldson; Justice of the Peace, C. Rockwell.
- 1875.—Supervisor, C. Rockwell; Clerk, J. F. Barrows; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, H. Donaldson; Justice of the Peace, J. M. Blowers.
- 1876.—Supervisor, C. Rockwell; Clerk, J. F. Barrows; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, H. L. Cornwell; Justice of the Peace, H. A. Donaldson.
- 1877.—Supervisor, C. Rockwell; Clerk, J. B. Potter; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, B. M. Williams; Justice of the Peace, J. Burcham.
- 1878.—Supervisor, C. Rockwell; Clerk, J. F. Barrows; Treasurer, G. A. Cross; School Inspector, H. Donaldson; Justice of the Peace, C. Rockwell.
- 1879.—Supervisor, C. Rockwell; Clerk, J. B. Potter; Treasurer, J. F. Barrows; School Inspector, H. Donaldson; Justice of the Peace, W. H. Page.

The Township Board for 1879 comprised Charles Rockwell, J. B. Potter, Henry Donaldson, Jabez Burcham. The School Inspectors were Henry Donaldson and Rev. L. A. Cole (School Superintendent). The Justices of the Peace were H. A. Donaldson, J. Burcham, and W. H. Page.

#### LAWRENCE VILLAGE.

In June, 1835, John Allen, of Ann Arbor, entered 40 acres in the southwest quarter of the northwest quarter of section 10, of the township now Lawrence. Here Mr. Allen laid out a village and called it Mason, in honor of the (then) Governor of Michigan. The new village was south of the Paw Paw, and near a creek which possessed considerable water-power; and upon the manufacturing capacity of these streams at that point Allen doubtless based his theory that the village would thrive. Having laid out his town on paper, Mr. Allen, who had himself no intention of actually settling, looked about him for some man whom he could induce to begin the improvement of the place. He interviewed Eaton Branch, of Ann Arbor, upon the matter; but Branch was not inclined towards the venture. Shortly afterwards Allen met Branch, saying, "I don't want you; I've got a man and his wife to go out to Mason." "Who's the man?" asked Branch. "Ephraim Palmer." "Ephraim Palmer?" replied Branch; "well, all I have to say to you is, watch him." "Oh," returned Allen, "you needn't attempt to set me against Palmer; I am a phrenologist, I tell you, and I am thoroughly satisfied that the man is honest." So Palmer and his wife, fresh from Ohio, went to Mason, and from a spot on the bank of Brush Creek, about thirty-five rods north of the Lawrence school-house, he cleared the underbrush preparatory to putting up a log cabin. It was in August, 1835, that the Palmers reached the place, and

as before that time the only settlement in the township was that of Stephen Fountain, a bachelor, near Prospect Lake, theirs was the first family settlement in Lawrence. Palmer cut logs of fourteen feet in length for his house, and when he was ready to raise it he had the assistance of Allen, Fountain, E. Barnum (who had just come in from Paw Paw), and a man who happened to be there in search of land. These five men raised the house seven logs high, as the best their strength could reach. The cabin had a door but no windows, and for a little while the Palmers lived in it without floor or roof. The fireplace was against the logs of the side-wall, and a hole in the roof served instead of a chimney.

About a month after Palmer's settlement he left the place suddenly and was heard of no more, except that he passed through St. Joseph, with his wife, on their way West. It is said that his sudden departure caused Mr. Allen to lose faith in the value of his phrenological knowledge.

Shortly after Palmer's departure his deserted cabin was occupied by John Reynolds, who, with his brother George, had just previously located upon section 13. Nov. 15, 1835, Reynolds and his wife received into their cabin a delegation of eleven people, ten of whom came to settle, and as Reynolds' house was the only one at hand, they were forced to crowd into it. These people were Eaton Branch and wife, Dexter Gibbs and wife, with five children, John Allen, and William Williams. There were thirteen, all told, who occupied the house, and as the room in which they slept was but twelve feet square, they were really in close quarters. As a matter of convenience, the gentlemen selected for their dressing-room an out-door spot behind a brush pile. They were, however, shortly in more expansive accommodations, when Allen built a double log house, and called it a tavern. It had on the ground-floor two rooms each fourteen feet square, with sleeping apartments above, and stood just east of where Mrs. Goodenough now lives. Dexter Gibbs was promoted to be the landlord of the tavern, and maintained the dignity of that position until his death, in October, 1838.

The building of a saw-mill in 1836 by John Allen and John R. Haynes gave the village some impetus, but its growth was exceedingly slow, and in 1843, eight years after Allen laid it out, it contained but ten families, viz.: Watson Poole, a carpenter; Alexander Newton, a farmer; Norman Birse, cabinet-maker; John R. Haynes, miller; Joseph Haynes, farmer; Israel Branch, farmer; A. H. Phelps, fur-trader and miller; J. P. Fisk, blacksmith; Benjamin Dunning, blacksmith; and Rodolphus Howe, stock-dealer. At that time the place had lost its original name of Mason and was known as Brush Creek, from the stream flowing through it.

The story is told of John R. Baker (living in Paw Paw at that time, and the owner of considerable village property in Brush Creek) that he rechristened the place Lawrence, after the name of the township, and that upon being asked by a traveler for directions to find Brush Creek, sent the man to Chadwick's mill, on the creek, saying immediately afterwards, "I'll teach him not to call my bright little village by the ugly name of Brush Creek."

John Allen, who founded Lawrence village, was a resident





*Moncrie C. Howard*



*J. W. Howard*



RESIDENCE OF T. W. HOWARD, LAWRENCE, MICH.



of Ann Arbor, and a very enterprising man. He dealt largely in Western lands, confining his ventures chiefly to Michigan. Unlike most Western land speculators, he sought to improve his purchases by the practical method of fitting the territory for settlement and cultivation, and thus by energetic management realized a considerable profit in the business, while he pushed the development of the country briskly forward. He joined the tide of speculation as it set in towards the Pacific coast, and died a resident of San Francisco, Cal.

It may be mentioned that Allen mortgaged the Mason village property to John R. Baker, and to satisfy that Baker was compelled to take the land, and thus, as has been noted, became the village proprietor, and renamed it Lawrence.

*Lawrence Merchants.*—While Dexter Gibbs was keeping hotel in the old double log house, John Allen put a small stock of goods into the bar-room, and engaged Ephraim Taylor to sell them. The assortment was doubtless meagre and the stock light, for there was scarcely a field at that time for the development of liberal enterprise in the matter of trade. Not much of an improvement was the store opened by John R. Haynes, in the second story of his saw-mill, some time in 1836. Half of his customers, it is said, were Indians, and probably very few of his goods were sold for cash. Cash was scarce, but "dicker" was more plentiful, and Haynes, of course, like a sensible trader, accommodated his customers. He carried on the trade four or five years, when he disposed of his store and saw-mill interest to H. N. and A. H. Phelps. H. N. Phelps had come to Lawrence for the purpose of lumbering, and had brought a stock of goods with him. These goods he put into the Haynes store, and there he and his brother traded until 1845, when they transferred the store business to a log house formerly occupied by Alexander Newton as a residence, upon the site now covered by the Chadwick block. In 1847 they built a short distance south of the log structure a story and a half frame dwelling, and moved their goods into it. That store was in that day considered a remarkably fine one, and awakened great admiration. The Phelps brothers continued in their new store until 1849, when they retired and leased the building to John R. Haynes, who resumed business and stocked the store with goods bought from Albion by Marvin Hannahs, the latter having come to Lawrence to put up a grist-mill.

Haynes traded at that location two years, and in 1851 having put up a fine building at what is known now as Crissey Corners, opened it as a drug- and grocery-store. Upon his retirement from the Phelps store it was reopened by Thomas De Wolf, who had been the representative at Lawrence of James E. Bishop, of Chicago, who was largely concerned in lumbering. In 1853, H. N. Phelps became De Wolf's partner, and retiring in 1854, was succeeded by the firm of Phelps, Balfour & (James) Haynes. That firm wound up business in 1855. Haynes closed his grocery- and drug-store in 1854, and was succeeded there by Thomas De Wolf and Sylvanus Rowe. De Wolf removed to Chicago in 1855, and Rowe continued on his own account until 1856, when he moved to a place previously occupied by Uri Utley, took in Mr. Lockwood as a partner, and closed January, 1858. Rowe went to Decatur, came back

to Lawrence and opened a store, in which he was burned out, and after that he confined himself to the practice of medicine.

Returning to 1850, one Mitchell opened a store that year on the site of Dexter Gibbs' log tavern. He soon moved across the river, where he traded a year, and in 1851, William Hodges opened a store adjoining Mitchell's place, and carried it on until 1855. In 1854, J. M. Fisk and Clemens put up the first building, on the east side of the street south of Crissey's Corners, and opened it with a general stock. Clemens went out in about ninety days, and in 1857, J. M. Fisk sold the business to his father, J. P. Fisk, who retained it until his death, in 1865. E. H. Phelps kept store for a time in the place vacated by Sylvanus Rowe in 1858, and in 1856, J. E. Bishop opened what is now the Chadwick store. E. E. & J. L. Chadwick first occupied the place in 1858. The store is still kept by E. E. Chadwick, his brother having died in 1872.

In 1860, H. M. Marshall, who had been clerking for Sylvanus Rowe, opened a store across the river, moved into the village the same year, and in 1874 completed and occupied the fine brick block in which he now carries on his business. Charles W. and J. M. Fisk succeeded J. P. Fisk in 1865, and in 1868, the firm dissolving, J. M. Fisk moved into the brick store he now occupies, and which he built that year. Ridlon, Phelps & Co. entered the trade in 1867, in the building now occupied by H. L. Cornwell. Ridlon bought out his two partners—Phelps and Cornwell—and pursued the business until 1872, when he moved away. Cornwell—who had been at Cassopolis—returned to Lawrence in 1873, and reopened the old store for account of Phelps & Cornwell. Phelps retired in 1875, and W. E. Cornwell came in. In 1879, W. E. Cornwell retired, and opened a store across the way.

Besides the general stores of E. E. Chadwick, H. M. Marshall, J. M. Fisk, and H. L. Cornwell, there are in the village the grocery-stores of W. E. Cornwell and J. L. Phillips; the drug-stores of J. F. Barrows and George Jerome; the hardware-store of Hill Brothers; and the usual minor business establishments found in a country town.

*Physicians.*—The Rev. J. L. Marvin, one of the pastors of the Lawrence Congregational Church, also practiced medicine from 1844 to 1851, when he moved to Paw Paw. Previous to Dr. Marvin's coming, Lawrence people had to go to Paw Paw when a doctor was needed. During Dr. Marvin's residence in Lawrence, Dr. C. P. Prindle was also a village practitioner. He became afterwards a resident of Dowagiac, where he died. During 1853, Drs. Nelson Rowe, Sylvanus Rowe, and Joel Camp located in the village. Dr. Nelson Rowe died in 1864. Dr. Sylvanus Rowe is still in practice at the village. Dr. Camp went to Bangor to live in 1861. Dr. A. F. Haskins came in 1858, and is still one of the village physicians. Dr. Terwilliger came in 1861, and left in 1863. In 1862, Dr. O. B. Wiggins began practice in Lawrence, and still pursues it. Besides the physicians above noted as in practice in Lawrence, there are also Drs. E. S. Cleveland and William Rowe.

*Mills and Millers.*—In the summer of 1836, John Allen and John R. Haynes built a saw-mill on Brush Creek, but



did not saw any lumber until early in the winter. About 1844, H. N. & A. H. Phelps bought the mill, and afterwards replaced it with the one now operated on the same site by Rufus Tillou. Previous to 1844, A. H. & Colonel Theodore Phelps had put up a saw-mill two miles and a half south of the village. They sold it in 1843 to Gen. B. F. Chadwick, from whom it took the name by which it is yet known,—Chadwick's mill. Thomas Hayes operates it at present.

The Phelps brothers had also a store in connection with their mill, and used to barter goods for logs. Their lumber they floated to market at St. Joseph.

In 1848 a stock company, composed of William Hodges, H. N. Phelps, T. S. Camp, John Andrews, and A. H. Phelps, put up a large saw-mill on the Paw Paw River, near the village. In 1850, Marvin Hannahs, of Albion, erected a grist-mill near the saw-mill and put in two run of stones. Haynes had a small run of stones in his old mill in 1838, but its grinding capacity was very small. Hannahs' mill may therefore be noted as the first of its kind worthy the name of grist-mill. In 1862 the grist-mill and saw-mill on the Paw Paw were destroyed by fire. In that year William Anderson built on Brush Creek the grist-mill now owned by Tillou & Olin, to whom Anderson sold the property in 1868. Rufus Tillou manages both the grist-mill and the adjoining saw-mill for his own account.

The steam saw-mill just east of the village, run by Sutton & Seeley, was started by Tillou & Cable in 1864. R. Osgood's steam saw-mill, near there, was built by Osgood & Lane in 1867. Henry E. Rowland's steam planing-mill, which he built in 1878, completes the list of mills at the village.

L. J. Dane, who has a plow-point works and general repair-shop at Lawrence village, has been engaged in the same business at that place since 1866. He operates also an extensive cider-mill, and is interested with C. L. Northrop in a cider-jelly manufactory, a cider-vinegar works, and an apple-drying establishment, all these being located near the railway depot in Lawrence.

*Village Organization.*—The village of Lawrence was incorporated under act of Legislature approved March 24, 1869, and in that act the village limits were described as follows: All that tract of country situated in the township of Lawrence as to wit, the east half of the southwest quarter of section 9 and the east half of section 9, the west half of section 10, the north half of the northwest quarter of section 15, and the north half of the northeast quarter of section 16.

The first annual election for village officers was held May 3, 1869, in Chadwick's Hall, on which occasion the aggregate number of votes cast was 139. From the year of the first election to 1879, inclusive, the village presidents, trustees, recorders, and treasurers have been chosen as follows:

1869.—President, Sylvanus Rowe; Recorder, B. M. Williams; Treasurer, E. S. Cleveland; Trustees, Joseph Trumbull, James B. Johnston, Amos Darling, Francis A. Waketield, Charles M. Bridges.

1870.—President, Sylvanus Rowe; Recorder, J. B. Potter; Treasurer, E. S. Cleveland; Trustees, James B. Johnston, Amos Darling, Joseph Trumbull, H. M. Marshall, Stephen Ransom.

1871.—President, James B. Johnston; Recorder, H. M. Marshall; Treasurer, George Rowe; Trustees, L. J. Dane, Joseph E. Trumbull, Sylvanus Rowe, James M. Fisk, J. B. Hendricks.

1872.—President, John M. Fisk; Recorder, Edward S. Cleveland; Treasurer, George A. Cross; Trustees, Charles Rockwell, H. M. Marshall, Lyman J. Dane, E. H. Phelps, Leonard Watson.

1873.—President, Sylvanus Rowe; Recorder, E. S. Cleveland; Treasurer, George A. Cross; Trustees, J. M. Fisk, Charles Rockwell, E. H. Phelps, R. Webster, H. M. Marshall.

1874.—President, Sylvanus Rowe; Recorder, H. M. Marshall; Treasurer, J. F. Barrows; Trustees, M. A. Howe, Talcott Shaver, C. S. Sutton, L. J. Dane, R. Webster.

1875.—President, J. B. Johnston; Recorder, H. M. Marshall; Treasurer, J. F. Barrows; Trustees, J. F. Barrows, J. M. Fisk, Charles Rockwell, G. A. Cross, R. Webster.

1876.—President, A. S. Haskin; Recorder, Theo. L. Reynolds; Treasurer, John F. Barrows; Trustees, A. H. Draper, T. O. Sweet, E. H. Phelps, J. W. Seeley, William W. Vanderveer.

1877.—President, J. B. Johnston; Recorder, J. B. Potter; Treasurer, John F. Barrows; Trustees, O. B. Wiggins, F. A. Chadwick, William W. Vanderveer, Samuel G. Mather, James M. Fisk.

1878.—President, K. L. Warren; Recorder, J. B. Potter; Treasurer, J. F. Barrows; Trustees, Charles Rockwell, O. B. Wiggins, A. S. Haskin, F. A. Chadwick, Samuel G. Mather.

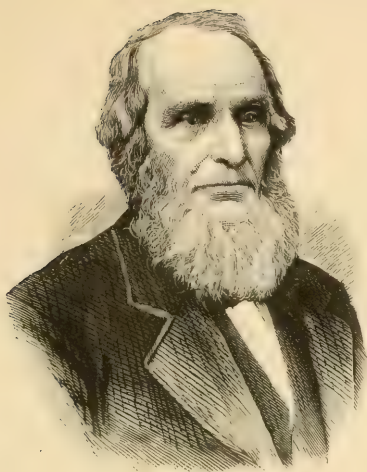
1879.—President, O. B. Wiggins; Recorder, J. B. Potter; Treasurer, J. F. Barrows; Trustees, J. W. Seeley, O. E. Holmes, Francis Branch, Charles Rockwell, H. M. Marshall, Thomas O. Sweet.

*The Fire of 1859.*—On the night of Dec. 31, 1859, the village of Lawrence was visited with a destructive fire, which swept the west side of Paw Paw Street of all its stores, and laid nearly the entire business portion of the town in ashes. The stores burned were two belonging to Chadwick & Bro., and the places of Sylvanus Rowe, J. B. Potter, George Koon, J. L. Phillips, and L. Moulton. The aggregate loss was about \$12,500. Measures were, however, speedily taken for the rebuilding of the structures, although the business interests of the village received a severe blow through the disaster, which now would be considered serious, and then was a great public calamity.

*The Lawrence Advertiser*, now published at Lawrence by Van Hoesen & Bates, was founded by Theodore L. Reynolds in February, 1874, and continued by him until 1876, when he sold it to G. A. Cross, who disposed of it three months afterwards to R. L. Warren. In October, 1879, Mr. Warren transferred his interest to the present publishers, continuing, however, his editorial control. The paper is strongly Republican. It contains 4 pages, or 28 columns of printed matter, and is issued weekly.

*Paw Paw Valley Agricultural Society.*—In 1863 a stock company was organized for the purpose of holding annual autumn fairs at Lawrence, and in the western part of the village laid out grounds and improved them to the extent of an investment of \$5000. After an existence of eight years the company failed, and its effects passing to a new organization called the Paw Paw Valley Agricultural Society, this latter has carried the matter forward since then with much success. The grounds, which are well appointed, cover about 20 acres. For 1879, the President was H. J. Hendryx, of Decatur; the Vice-President, Amos Dopp, of Lawrence; the Secretary, J. B. Potter, of Lawrence; and Treasurer, Charles Rockwell, of Lawrence.

*Rising Sun Lodge*, No. 119, F. and A. M., was chartered Jan. 13, 1860, and is claimed to be the third lodge



DAVID FERRIS.



MRS. DAVID FERRIS.

#### DAVID FERRIS.

Thomas Ferris, the father of David, was born in Washington Co., N. Y., April 19, 1779. Mrs. Thomas Ferris was born Nov. 9, 1790. Their family consisted of the following children, viz.: David, born Dec. 12, 1812; Rachel, born April 30, 1814; Daniel, born Jan. 20, 1817; Adeline, born July 9, 1818; Julie E., born June 23, 1820; Warren, born Sept. 20, 1822, died Oct. 28, following; Elizabeth A., born April 23, 1824; Lucy Ann, born Feb. 25, 1826; Sheldon, born Jan. 18, 1830; Ira W., born Oct. 3, 1832; Hattie, born Dec. 1, 1834. Mrs. Ferris died Sept. 14, 1840; Thomas Ferris died May 27, 1875.

David Ferris, the oldest of the above large family of children, was born in the State of Pennsylvania. When but a child he removed with his parents to Washington Co., N. Y.; thence, in 1820, to Jefferson County; in 1833, to St. Lawrence County; and in 1850 he came to Lawrence township, Van Buren Co., Mich. Mr. Ferris was reared on a farm, and

engaged in agricultural pursuits, with his father, until he was twenty-five years of age, when he entered the employ of an iron company, at ten dollars per month, and remained with them five years. Jan. 9, 1843, he married Miss Elizabeth A., daughter of Joseph and Jerusha Goodell. Their children have been six in number, as follows: Jerusha, born April 6, 1844; Louisa A., born July 14, 1845; Charles D., born May 29, 1847; Ellen J., born Aug. 29, 1849, died Aug. 7, 1873; Harriet J., born Nov. 1, 1854; Sheldon E., born Jan. 6, 1862, died Oct. 8, 1865. In 1862, Mr. Ferris purchased eighty acres of wild land, cleared and improved it, and has transformed it into a fruitful farm, which he now occupies. He is known to his neighbors as an upright, honorable man, and to no one is he indebted a single dollar. His persevering labors through the years that have passed have brought him prosperity and a competence, which he can now enjoy. Mrs. David Ferris died April 7, 1878.





in the State in point of age. Its charter members were 10 in number, as follows: Emory O. Briggs, M.; J. R. Stevenson, S. W.; John B. Hudson, J. W.; — Goodale, R. B. Danks, S. G. Mather, C. H. Betts, Peter Dyer, Clark Van Dervoort, H. Bunnell. The lodge-room, in the Marshall block, Lawrence, is one of the handsomest in the county. The membership Dec. 1, 1879, was 80, when the officers were J. F. Barrows, W. M.; O. B. Wiggins, S. W.; Orrin Crawford, J. W.; Charles Rockwell, T.; George Crawford, S. D.; T. O. Sweet, J. D.; L. J. Dane, Tiler.

*Lawrence Chapter, No. 95, R. A. M.*, was chartered Jan. 20, 1875, with Amos Dopp, S. G. Mather, R. W. Stickney, Eri Bennett, A. S. Haskins, Isaac Monroe, Newell Crissey, William Webster, E. L. Cross, and J. F. Barrows as members. Amos Dopp was H. P.; S. G. Mather, K.; R. W. Stickney, S. The present membership is 55. The officers are as follows: Newell Crissey, H. P.; S. G. Mather, K.; A. S. Haskins, S.; O. B. Wiggins, Sec.; Charles Rockwell, Treas.; G. A. Cross, C. of H.; Eri Bennett, P. S.; J. F. Barrows, R. A. C.; C. W. Sweet, 3d V.; C. R. Webster, 2d V.; T. O. Sweet, 1st V.; M. Ryan, Tiler.

*Lawrence Grange, No. 32*, was organized in 1874, with 21 members. Meetings are held in Lawrence village once every two weeks. The present officers are William W. Bass, M.; F. Branch, O.; D. S. Bacon, L.; Albert Bryant, Treas.; Charles Jacobs, Sec.; T. Lanphear, Steward.

*Railway Communication.*—Previous agitation touching the necessity of railway connection with some point, resulted, in 1867, in great activity and enthusiasm in support of a project urged by John R. Baker to build a railway which should connect with the Grand Trunk. The proposition awakened much eager attention, brought out the promised support of local capitalists, filled the community with sanguine expectations, and pushed business briskly ahead, while real estate advanced considerably. Unfortunately the enterprise failed, and the reaction was great and depressing. Other railway projects followed in due time, and each fresh proposition received such local encouragement as disclosed a strong desire for railway conveniences, but nothing in the way of tangible results was reached until 1877, when the narrow-gauge road, known as the Toledo and South Haven, was completed from Paw Paw to Lawrence, and on September 15th of that year the first train reached Lawrence. Since that time the village has enjoyed the convenience of daily rail communication with the outside world.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES IN LAWRENCE.

*First Congregational Church.*—From an old church record, of date Aug. 19, 1837, it appears that "at a meeting on that day of several professors of religion, agreeable to previous notice given, in the township of Lawrence, the Rev. Silas Woodbury, of Kalamazoo, being present took his seat as moderator, and Horace Stimson was appointed clerk. On motion it was resolved 'that the time has arrived when it is our duty to organize ourselves into a church.'" The following persons presented letters and certificates of church membership: John R. Haynes,

Margaret Haynes, William Haynes, Vine Branch, Abigail Branch, Israel Branch, Betsey Branch, Eaton Branch, Peter and Isabel Dopp, Margaret and James Dopp, Harriett Bateman, Thomas S. Camp, Elizabeth Camp, Horace and Cynthia M. Stimson, Amanda M. Branch, and Anna Mellen. It was voted to call the church the First Presbyterian Church of Lawrence. John R. Haynes and Horace Stimson were chosen to be ruling elders, and a resolution was adopted placing the church under the care of the St. Joseph Presbytery. At the next church meeting, August 20th, Thomas S. Camp and Vine Branch were ordained deacons. In February, 1838, Philander, infant daughter of Israel and Betsey Branch, and Mary Coates, daughter of Horace and Cynthia M. Stimson, were baptized by Rev. Luther Humphrey.

Rev. Luther Humphrey was the first pastor of the church, and succeeding him Revs. Calvin Clark and D. Jeffers occupied the pulpit, although only the latter was ordained as pastor. At a meeting held Aug. 11, 1844, it was voted "to change the church to Congregational," whereupon all the officers resigned. The church was named the First Congregational Church of Lawrence, and August 12th Watson Pool and Horace Stimson were chosen deacons, and by resolution the church was placed under the care of the Kalamazoo Presbytery.

Until February, 1858, worship was held in the village school-house and the Baptist church. February 20th the society's new church edifice was dedicated, E. Taylor, of Kalamazoo, preaching the dedication sermon.

Since 1844 the church has had for its pastors Revs. J. L. Marvin, Walter Pattinson, John Scotford, Edward Cleveland, Edward Shaw, James Watts. Rev. G. W. Blanchard is the present pastor, and preaches once a week. The church trustees are H. L. Cornwell, F. M. Banta, and Eaton Branch. The deacons are Eaton Branch and Geo. Kelley. The membership Dec. 1, 1879, was 33. The Sunday-school is in a prosperous condition, and is in charge of the pastor.

*The First Baptist Church of Lawrence.*—A Baptist Church was organized in Paw Paw, April 21, 1838, by six persons, and called the First Baptist Church of Lafayette. March 20, 1841, at a special meeting held in the house of Henry G. Monroe, near Lawrence, Orrin Sutton and wife, Peter Clark, and Simeon Brooks, of Lawrence, were received as members, Peter Clark was chosen deacon, and the name of the church changed to that of the Van Buren County Church, located at Paw Paw and Brush Creek. At that meeting it was resolved, "That we adopt the following articles in addition to our former ones: 'As we believe faith establishes the law as a rule of articles, and is inseparably connected with good works, consequently we believe it to be inconsistent with a profession of religion to sell or purchase lottery tickets, vend or use any intoxicating liquors, except as a medicine or for mechanical purposes, or to resort to any method of personal gratification or profit which will corrupt good morals or endanger the salvation of others.'"

May 5, 1841, at a meeting of the church in the Brush Creek school-house, Laura A. Barnes (now Mrs. Allen Rice) was received by baptism. At a council convened at

the Brush Creek school-house, May 5, 1841, at which delegates from the churches of Edwardsburg and La Grange were in attendance, the young church was recognized. Its members numbered then 14, as follows: Stafford Godfrey, Ursula Conklin, Archibald Buys and wife, Luther Branch, Henry G. Monroe and wife, Peter Clark, Sally Heath, Simeon Brooks, Orrin Sutton and wife, Amanda Briggs, and Laura Adelia Barnes. Rev. William T. Bly was engaged as pastor, and preaching through 1841, added 11 persons to the church membership. May, 1842, the church joined the St. Joseph River Baptist Association, and until 1844 struggled feebly without a pastor. From 1844 to 1845, Rev. Moses Clark was the pastor, but from 1845 to 1851 no regular public worship was held, and matters were far from prosperous, the organization of a new church in Paw Paw in 1844 having materially weakened the membership.

In 1851 the advent of Rev. E. S. Dunham as pastor gave the church a new lease of life, and under his zealous and active care much prosperity was gained. During his pastorate, which extended from 1851 to 1858, the name of the church was changed, Sept. 6, 1851, to the First Baptist Church of Lawrence. The First Baptist Church society was organized Nov. 29, 1851, with Orrin Sutton, Allen Rice, and O. S. Witter as trustees. The building of a church edifice was commenced January, 1853, and in June, 1854, the church withdrew from the St. Joseph River Association to join the Kalamazoo River Association. The first church trustees were Thomas De Wolf, O. S. Witter, D. T. Fox, Allen Rice, and Horace Dowd, and although the church was opened for worship in 1854,—three denominations using it in common,—it was slow of completion and was not dedicated until 1865. A union Sunday-school was organized with the Congregationalists in 1854 and continued until 1858, when the latter occupied their own house of worship. After Mr. Dunham's retirement, in 1858, there was no pastor until 1861, when Rev. Albert Gore, of Hartford, was engaged and preached one year. His successors have been Revs. William H. Simons, Donald McGregor, H. Hayden, George S. Martin, J. W. Megan, and S. A. Cole. Mr. Cole has been the pastor since 1878, and preaches every Sunday. The membership is now about 80. The deacons are Allen Rice, H. G. Barnes, and Henry Donaldson. The trustees are H. G. Barnes, Henry Donaldson, Levi Firmin, Lyman Moore, and L. Alden. The Sabbath-school numbers 40 scholars, and is in charge of Superintendent William Merritt and five teachers.

*The Methodist Episcopal Church of Lawrence* was organized about 1840, and began to hold worship in the village school-house. In the absence of records referring to the early history of the church, the relation of that portion of the church's history is restricted to oral evidence. Upon the erection of the union school-house in Lawrence, the house previously in use was sold to the Methodist society, and remodeled into a house of worship. As such it still serves. The present pastor is Rev. V. G. Boyington, whose charge includes Lawrence, West Lawrence, and Hartford. The present church trustees are W. H. Corey, E. J. Lane, and Messrs. Ives, Moden, Cornwell, and Brainard. The class-

leader is E. J. Lane, and the church membership about 40. The Sabbath-school, which is in a flourishing condition, has an average attendance of from 30 to 40, and is in charge of T. J. Parker as superintendent.

*Latter-Day Saints.*—In the "Nauvoo" district, just west and north of Prospect Lake, exists a religious organization known as Latter-Day Saints, and by many incorrectly called a Mormon community. The organization was effected in the year 1868, by one E. C. Briggs, a traveling elder, with a membership of about 10, and called a branch of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints. Since 1868 preaching has been enjoyed pretty regularly every Sabbath in the Nauvoo school-house. The church membership was at one time about 50, but is now reduced to 12. The last elder of the church was Columbus Scott, who preached until November, 1879, since which time there has been no preaching, although meetings have been held every Sabbath as usual. The present church officials are Seth M. Bass, Priest; David Bentley, Deacon; Henry Manece, Teacher.

*First Free Methodist Church of Lawrence.*—Catherine Coombs, Caroline Erdman, and Jane E. Ransom were the only members of the Free Methodist Church at its preliminary organization, Aug. 27, 1871. At a second meeting, held September 17th, Lawton Draper and wife, Stephen Ransom, and Hannah Say were received into membership, and a permanent organization of a class was effected by the election of Lawton Draper as leader. The organization was effected in the Baptist meeting-house by Rev. Edward P. Hart, district chairman of the Coldwater district, attached to the Michigan Conference. Until October, 1875, when the present house of worship was erected, services were held in the Baptist church once a fortnight. Upon its organization the church was included in the Waverly and Lawrence circuit, and has had for its pastors Revs. Ellsworth Leonardson, S. C. Stringham, J. W. Sharp, H. Ferguson, W. H. James, and J. Lawrence, the latter being now in the second year of his pastorate. The membership is 25. The trustees are Daniel Abrams and Stephen Ransom. The steward is Stephen Ransom, and the class-leader James Thompson. The Sunday-school contains six classes and is in charge of the pastor.

*Disciple Church.*—In March, 1874, Rev. W. W. Johnson, an evangelist from Illinois, stopped at Lawrence during a tour through Michigan, and finding there seven persons of the Disciple faith anxious for a church organization, formed the church at a meeting held in the Baptist meeting-house March 22d. The seven persons who were admitted into the membership were T. O. Sweet and wife, Michael Ryan and wife, Alice Denton, Luanie Howe, and Mary Howe. Nightly revival meetings were held in the Baptist church until April 6th, when the further use of the house being denied, and the church failing to increase beyond the original seven, the organization was discontinued.

No further attempt was made towards reviving the church until the winter of 1878, when Elder Levi Dewey, of Dowagiac, who had been holding services at the Red Creek school-house, held a meeting at Fisk's hall, in Lawrence, and there, with his Red Creek school-house congre-



MRS. A. U. BARNES.



A. U. BARNES.



RESIDENCE OF A. U. BARNES, LAWRENCE T<sub>P</sub>, MICH.





gation and members of the faith in Lawrence, organized a church, whose membership then aggregated 25. When Elder Dewey organized the church he removed to Lawrence, and until September, 1879, held services every Sunday. He then returned to his farm near Dowagiac, and since then has preached for the Lawrence Church once a fortnight. Cross' hall is now used as a place of worship and for the sessions of a Sabbath-school, which was organized in the winter of 1878, and had at one time 45 pupils. The church membership is now 65. The elders are Stephen Plopper and T. O. Sweet. The deacons are M. H. Plopper and Merrick Aldrich. Michael Ryan is clerk and treasurer.

## SCHOOLS.

The first school-house erected in the township was built by James Gray in the spring of 1837, on the east side of Paw Paw Street in Lawrence village. This was the first township-school, and, as far as can be learned, the first school of any kind taught in Lawrence. The building now does duty as H. Smith's blacksmith-shop. Its first teacher was Elizabeth Camp, in the summer of 1837, and its second Truman Foster, who taught during the following winter.

*Lawrence High School.*—The only graded school in the township is the one at Lawrence village. It occupies a fine brick edifice, which was completed May 1, 1869, at a cost of \$11,117. It has four departments, in charge of a principal and three assistants, and during 1879 instructed an average of 225 pupils, of whom 30 were non-residents.

The condition of the public schools of Lawrence, as shown from the annual report made Sept. 1, 1879, is as follows:

Number of districts (whole, 5; fractional, 2).....	7
" scholars of school age.....	522
Average attendance.....	526
Number of school-houses brick, 1; frame, 6.....	7
Value of property.....	\$11,500
Number of teachers employed.....	18
Amount paid teachers.....	\$2,998.90

The school directors for 1879 were E. Williams, A. S. Haskin, Arthur Jennings, L. H. Clark, F. L. Spencer, John Robinson, Howland Place.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

## ANSON U. BARNES.

Soon after the close of the Revolutionary war two brothers named Barnes emigrated from Boston, England, to America, and settled in the State of Connecticut. One of these brothers was Abel Barnes, the father of Uriel T., and grandfather of A. U. Barnes, of Lawrence, the subject of this biographical sketch. Not long after his settlement in Connecticut Abel Barnes removed from that State to Schoharie Co., N. Y., and a few years later to the town of Floyd, Oneida Co., in the same State. He had married Miss Mindwell Roberts, and they became the parents of eleven sons and three daughters, most if not all of whom were born after their removal to New York.

Uriel T., the fourth son of Abel and Mindwell Barnes, was born in Schoharie Co., N. Y., Oct. 14, 1794, and while yet scarcely more than a child removed with his parents to Floyd, Oneida Co., where on the 30th of August, 1821, he married Huldah A., daughter of Zenas and Mary (Merrill) Gibbs, of Broome Co., N. Y., and with her settled in Floyd, where their daughter Adelia was born, June 19, 1824. Their eldest son, Trumas S., was born in Westmoreland, Oneida Co., N. Y., Dec. 27, 1826, and soon afterwards Mr. Barnes moved to a small farm which he had purchased in Oswego County, where three children were born to him, viz., William M., born April 26, 1828; Mary S., born Oct. 5, 1829; and Harlow G., born March 3, 1831. About that time he sold his farm with the ultimate design of leaving the sterile lands and severe climate of Northern New York to find a better home in the West. He, however, engaged to work in a saw-mill in Durhamville, Oneida Co., during the winter of 1831-32, but in the spring of the latter year was so severely injured by the machinery of the mill that he remained a helpless invalid for many months. In the following December, being unable to perform heavy labor, he commenced a grocery business in Whitesboro', N. Y.; but soon found that he could not live by this, unless he engaged in the sale of ardent spirits. That he would not do; his principles would not permit him to support his own family by carrying desolation into the families of others, so he sold his little stock and left Whitesboro'. During his stay at that place his daughter Sarah Ann was born, Jan. 2, 1833.

Mr. Barnes having now regained his health sufficiently to labor, spent the following winter in the vicinity of Geneva, chopping wood at twenty-six dollars per month and house-rent, and on the 10th of April, 1834, he set out with his family for Michigan, by way of the Erie Canal, Buffalo, and Lake Erie. About a week was spent on the canal and three days on the steamer "Michigan," but at the end of that time they safely reached Detroit, from which place they engaged Lorenzo Graham to transport them to Jackson County, where they arrived about the 1st of May. Mr. Barnes' first Michigan settlement was made in Albion, Calhoun Co. His total property at that time consisted of two cows, his few household goods, and fifty dollars in money. He engaged to work for Mr. Tenney Peabody, of Albion, but about that time the entire family were taken sick and his fifty dollars was soon exhausted. But he was still resolute in his determination to secure a home, and he resolved to "squat" on government land, hoping to be able to pay for it in time. With the help of a few neighbors he reared a cabin which was warm and comfortable enough, though there was not a pane of glass in it, nor was there a nail nor a sawed plank or board used in its construction. Into this dwelling the family moved in January, 1835. They had some corn, raised in the previous season on land owned by Mr. Peabody, and on this corn and the milk of their cows the family subsisted. During the entire summer of 1835, Mr. Barnes was sick with the ague, and to add to his troubles a speculator purchased the land on which he had "squatted" and demanded possession. Being unwilling, however, to proceed to extreme measures, he finally paid Mr. Barnes fifty dollars to vacate. This money he invested

in forty acres of land, and with the help of neighbors erected a pole cabin upon it. In this cabin the family were comparatively comfortable, and here Anson U. Barnes was born. Settlers were coming in rapidly, a mill was being erected near by, work became plenty at reasonable wages, the family had regained their health, and the worst of their privations had passed.

In the fall of 1837 Mr. Barnes sold his land near Albion for eight hundred dollars in "wild-cat" money, and in January, 1838, removed to Lawrence, Van Buren Co., where he domiciled his family in a log house on what is now the Baker and Richards farm. Not long after, he purchased from Eaton Branch, for two hundred dollars, the eighty acres on which his son, A. U. Barnes, now lives. On this land he put up a frame house in the following spring, and went energetically to work to convert the wild land into a productive farm. He cleared nearly the whole eighty acres with his own hands, besides doing a large amount of work for others. In the year next following his settlement he was chosen commissioner of highways, and was elected justice of the peace in 1840, being a member of the board at the election held (at his house) in the fall of that year, when Gen. Harrison was elected President of the United States. In 1844, Mr. Barnes' daughter Adelia was married to Allen Rice, this being the first marriage in the family. About this time Mr. Barnes' health began to fail, and he never again fully recovered. In June, 1853, he had a sudden and violent attack of hernia, which baffled the skill of the physicians who were called to attend him. He sank rapidly and died on Sunday, July 3d, in that year. At his funeral (July 4th) the Rev. E. S. Dunham preached from the text, "Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints."

Mr. Barnes was converted in 1820, and became a member of the Baptist Church in Floyd, N. Y. He was the first of the family to pass over the mysterious river, and he died in the firm hope and belief of immortality. Mrs. Barnes survived her husband thirteen years, and died Sept. 30, 1866, of consumption. She was an excellent wife, and in every way a most worthy woman. She bore with patience and fortitude all the trials and privations of pioneer life. She was respected and beloved by all who knew her, and her children rise up and call her blessed.

Anson U. Barnes, the youngest son of Uriel T. Barnes, was born near Albion, Mich., as before mentioned, the date of his birth being Jan. 6, 1837. He was a boy of but sixteen years of age at the death of his father, and after that event remained on the old homestead, which is still his residence. He was married, Feb. 21, 1860, to Sarah E. Shaver, whose family were from Lowville, Lewis Co., N. Y. Of their union there have been born six children,—three sons and three daughters,—all of whom are living. Mr. Barnes cast his first vote in 1860, for Abraham Lincoln for President. He has been elected by his fellow-townsmen to the office of commissioner of highways, and has been a member of the school board for a number of years. He is a substantial land-owner, and a man who commands the respect of all who know him.

## EATON BRANCH,

son of Vine and Abigail Branch, was born in Benson, Rutland Co., Vt., April 8, 1808. His father was of English descent; mother, Scotch. In 1810 the father moved with his family to Onondaga Co., N. Y., locating about nine miles from what was then called Salt Point. They remained there twelve years, clearing up land, and in 1822 pushed west to the Holland Purchase, in Wyoming Co., N. Y. As the family possessed little means the educational



Ph. to by C. G. Agell, Allegan.

EATON BRANCH.

advantages of the children were limited. Eaton says, with reference to his education, "I was schooled in the use of the axe, hoe, and ox-gad." In 1833 he started to see the western country, and pushed as far as Ann Arbor, Mich. Returning to the old home the same year, he married Amanda M. Allen. In 1834, in company with his wife, father, and mother, he came back to Michigan. In 1835 the country was threatened with war, and Eaton, with many others, was drafted in the "Toledo war," by order of Governor Mason. As the trouble was of short duration he was soon able to return to his work. Not having means to purchase land he was obliged to hire out, and engaged with a Mr. Allen to go to Van Buren County and superintend his business, as he (Allen) had bought land at the mouth of Brush Creek and laid out a town. On the 7th of November, 1835, Mr. Branch and his wife started in a wagon for this place. They were eight days going one hundred and twenty miles; stayed in Kalamazoo over the Sabbath, and attended service in a school-house, the sermon being preached by Rev. Silas Woodbury. They finally reached Mason, as it was then called,—now known as Lawrence,—November 15th, where they found a log house, owned by Mr. Allen, and at once occupied it; it was twelve feet square. Thirteen persons lived in it until they could build a double log house, which latter was used for some time as a hotel. Mr. Branch has been a very active man in the advancement of the interests of his township. In April,



1837, he assisted in organizing the first town-meeting, and was elected one of the highway commissioners, which office he held for many years. He was a charter member of the First Presbyterian Church, organized Aug. 19, 1837, afterwards changed to a Congregational Church. In 1858 a new church was built, Mr. Branch furnishing about two thousand five hundred dollars towards its construction. In 1852 the first agricultural society was formed, which he helped organize, and a fair was held in the court-yard at Paw Paw. In 1872, Mr. Branch was an assistant in organizing the first pioneer society, and has been present at every meeting since, and is one of its officers. Mr. Branch has raised a family of six boys, all of whom lived to manhood. His oldest son was the first male child born in the town. Three sons served in the Rebellion, all returning after the war. Four of his sons are settled on lands which their father assisted them in buying. Mr. Branch first located a quarter-section in Lawrence township, President Van Buren signing the deed, and a part of this is now in his home. He united with the Presbyterian Church in 1831, and has always been an active member. Mrs. Branch died March 30, 1866, in her fifty-third year.

#### T. W. HOWARD

was born in Lawrence township, Van Buren Co., Mich., Nov. 13, 1841. His father, Hosea Howard, had settled here in 1838, on a farm of one hundred and sixty acres, which he improved and occupied until his death, in 1847. His family consisted of four sons, of whom the above is the only survivor. Mrs. Hosea Howard has reached the age of eighty years, and is living with her son.

T. W. Howard has owned the old homestead since 1861. On the 3d of June, 1864, he married a daughter of Horace Place, and to them have been born the following children, all of whom are living: George E., Aug. 19, 1865; Effie C., Oct. 22, 1868; Fannie E., Nov. 13, 1870; Isa C., March 26, 1873; Frank E., Aug. 31, 1876. Mrs. T. W. Howard was born in Albion township, Crawford Co., Pa., June 3, 1842, and came with her parents to Michigan in 1848. Her father, Horace Place, died in 1850; her mother is still living in the township of Hamilton, Van Buren Co. In politics, Mr. Howard is a Democrat.

#### HOWARD S. ALLEN.

Prominent among the thrifty farmers of Lawrence township is found H. S. Allen, who was born in Washington Co., N. Y., July 2, 1810. During the early part of his life he assisted his father, who was a blacksmith, and learned the trade, at which he worked until he was twenty-two years of age. In 1838 his mind became impressed with the advantages offered by the West, and he accordingly came as far as Cleveland, Ohio, where he remained six weeks. He purchased a farm thirteen miles from that city, and occupied it until 1851, when he removed to Van Buren Co., Mich., and settled near Breedsville. Five years later he purchased two hundred and two and a half acres of land, unimproved, in the township of Lawrence, moved upon it,

and began the work of clearing and improving it. His present surroundings are evidence of his perseverance, industry, and energy. Mr. Allen was married, Oct. 9, 1831, to Miss Esther, daughter of John and Elizabeth Moore, and four children have been born to them, viz.: George W., born Nov. 24, 1834; John Augustus, born June 7, 1837, died Sept. 26, 1838; William M., born Oct. 6, 1839; James E., born April 3, 1845. Mr. Allen's parents both died in New York. Mrs. Allen lost her father when she was but five years old, and her mother came to Michigan as one of its pioneers. She is now living with her daughter, Mrs. Allen, at the advanced age of eighty-seven years. While residing at Breedsville Mr. Allen was elected and served as justice of the peace and supervisor, and upon settling in Lawrence was again elected justice of the peace, but refused to serve, preferring the quiet of his home to political honors. Two of Mr. Allen's brothers are at present residing in the State of New York, one on the old homestead. Portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Allen, and a view of their home, appear in this work.

#### ABNER M. MUNGER.

Luke Munger, the father of the above, was a native of Boston, Mass., and when seven years of age removed with his father to Ohio, locating near Sandusky City, where a farm was taken and cleared of timber. Luke Munger remained at home until 1835, and on the 29th of March in that year he was married to Miss Loretta Reed, also a resident of Ohio. In the fall of 1839 they removed to Michigan, and purchased land in Kalamazoo County. Upon that, however, he did not settle, but rented a farm for the first year, and afterwards traded the forty acres he had purchased in Kalamazoo County for eighty acres on section 24, Porter township, Van Buren Co., upon which he built a log cabin and commenced making improvements. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Munger were as follows: Esther A., born Dec. 6, 1835; Russell V., born Aug. 22, 1837; Lafayette M., born June 27, 1840, killed by lightning, Aug. 7, 1861; Abner M., born Feb. 7, 1842; Eliza A., born May 14, 1844. Mrs. Munger sickened and died June 18, 1847, aged thirty-two years, leaving Mr. Munger with five small children. On the 12th of March, 1848, he married Rebecca, daughter of Amos Harris, an early settler in Kalamazoo County, and by her was the father of the following children: Eunice A., born ———, died April 17, 1851; Sarah M., born Nov. 7, 1849; Mary E., born Sept. 30, 1851, died April 14, 1852; Salmedor R., born Aug. 15, 1853; William H., born Oct. 1, 1855; Cynthia J., born Feb. 28, 1858; Luke W., born June 30, 1859; Eva A., born Nov. 22, 1861; Frank M., born April 21, 1863, died Feb. 6, 1865. Mr. Munger lived long enough to find himself and family in very comfortable circumstances, and died Dec. 3, 1863. He was an active worker in the affairs of the township, and sought to further its interests in every way. In religious matters he was liberal, and in politics a Democrat. He was a man who respected the religious views of others, and who was not a seeker after political distinction. His sons, Abner M. and Russell V. Munger,

cause this article to be inserted in the history of the county in which he resided so long.

Abner M. Munger was married, Dec. 24, 1865, to Oliva Corey, whose parents—Sanford and Eliza Corey—were among the earliest settlers of Porter township. Mrs. Munger was the oldest in a family of three children, and in turn became the mother of three children,—Charles C., born Oct. 26, 1866; Warren G., born March 11, 1870; Albert L., born Aug. 31, 1875. Mrs. Munger died Oct. 17, 1876, and Mr. Munger's sister assisted in the duties of his household until Nov. 28, 1878, when he married Miss Sarah M. Hibbard, daughter of Enos B. and Betsey Ann Hibbard. She is a native of the State of New York, and came with her parents to Lenawee Co., Mich., in 1866. Her father died Nov. 6, 1879; her mother is yet living in Lenawee County. Mr. Munger resides with his family on the farm formerly owned by Sanford Corey.

## CHAPTER LXIV.

### PAW PAW TOWNSHIP.\*

General Description—Pioneers of Paw Paw—Later Settlers—The Crooked Paw Paw—Forest Adventure of a Pioneer—Organization and First Town Meeting—Township Civil List—Paw Paw Village—Prospect Hill Cemetery—Religious Societies in the Township—Schools.

THIS township, originally called Lafayette and rechristened Paw Paw in 1867, is known in the government survey as town 3 south, range 14 west, and is bounded on the north by Waverly, south by Decatur, east by Antwerp, and west by Lawrence. It contains in addition to the usual township allotment of thirty-six sections about a section and a half in the northwest corner, which was taken from the southwest portion of Waverly for the sake of convenience, this part being separated from the rest of the township of Waverly by a swamp.

Three-Mile, Four-Mile, and Eagle Lakes, and some smaller sheets of water pleasantly diversify the surface of the township; while the west branch of the Paw Paw flowing north through Paw Paw village furnishes at that point excellent water-power, which is liberally employed. The Toledo and South Haven Railroad connects Paw Paw village with Lawrence, while the Paw Paw Railroad unites the same place with Lawton, on the Michigan Central road.

Paw Paw village is the seat of justice of Van Buren County. The township was named from it in 1867, and it was itself called after the river, named by the Indians from the paw paw fruit, growing thickly upon its banks.

The population of the township in 1874 was 2752, and the assessed valuation \$744,800 in 1879.

#### PIONEERS OF PAW PAW OUTSIDE OF THE VILLAGE.

In 1833, E. L. Barrett, induced by Peter Gremps, for whom he afterwards worked, came with his wife and several small children, and settled upon 160 acres of land near Paw Paw village before there was a framed house in the county. Capt. Barrett took especial pride in fine oxen, and at one

time owned nine pairs, which he "broke" and trained with great care. He named them, respectively, Nick and Duke, Buck and Bright, Brin and Berry, Jim and Larry, Spot and Spark, Charley and Ned, Bill and Joe, Sam and Ez, Ben and Tom. With his oxen he used to break a great deal of land for new settlers, and boasted of breaking several hundred acres in a year.

Capt. Barrett built on a village lot in Paw Paw what is said to have been the first frame house in the county. He sold it to a man who moved it away, and while he was building another his family lived two weeks in the horse-stable. He drove the first team from Paw Paw to Little Prairie Ronde, and upon his return experienced the exciting sensation of being chased by a panther and a pack of wolves. His first mercantile venture was the purchase of a barrel of whisky, at five "York shillings" a gallon, and the sale of it to thirsty settlers at fifty cents a pint, at which business he would have made a fortune in quick time could he have continued it extensively. He drove the first team from Paw Paw to Breedsville, when he moved thither the family of Mr. Brown,—the father of Smith Brown. After living a few years in the village, during which time he logged and broke land, Mr. Barrett located permanently on his farm, north of the village, removing subsequently to a place on section 36, where he has since lived.

John Agard located in 1833 upon a place on section 1, east of Paw Paw River, and established a trading-post at which he did a large business with the Indians, trading for furs, sugar, etc. He had on his place a dozen or more log huts, in which he stored his goods, and until his death his post was a famous resort for Indians, and usually presented a very busy scene. After his death, his family moving away, it was abandoned. Mr. Agard died suddenly of heart disease, in October, 1835, and was buried on his place; his coffin being made by Williamson Mason, who still lives in Paw Paw village.

William Gunn settled upon section 1, and was about the only settler who in 1833 and 1834 did much at farming. He removed in after years to Iowa. South of Agard's post was William Ackley, who, with Enos L. Barrett, dug the race for Willard & Gremps' grist-mill, in 1838. He moved to Indiana.

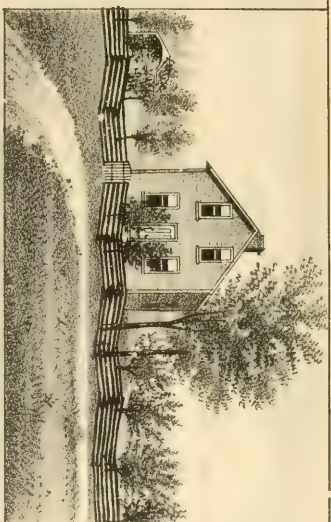
In June, 1835, John Lyle and John K. Pugsley (the latter a bachelor), living near Utica, N. Y., started in company for the West, intending to look for land in Illinois. Journeying by way of the lake to Detroit, they traveled on foot over the Territorial road to Paw Paw, and just before reaching Jesse Abbe's tavern, on that road, in Antwerp, they overtook Edwin Barnum, who was bound for Paw Paw. When they reached the site of Paw Paw village, they found there, on the east side of the river, but two houses, one of which was Daniel O. Dodge's tavern, where they stopped for the night. Barnum remained in Paw Paw, and after a while settled on a farm a mile and a half west of the village, where he built a cabin 10 feet by 16, and went to keeping "bachelor's hall."

Lyle and Pugsley pushed on for Illinois, skirting the shore of Lake Michigan, and after a tedious tramp reached Chicago. They prospected a while in that vicinity, but found the prairies too low to suit them, and returned to

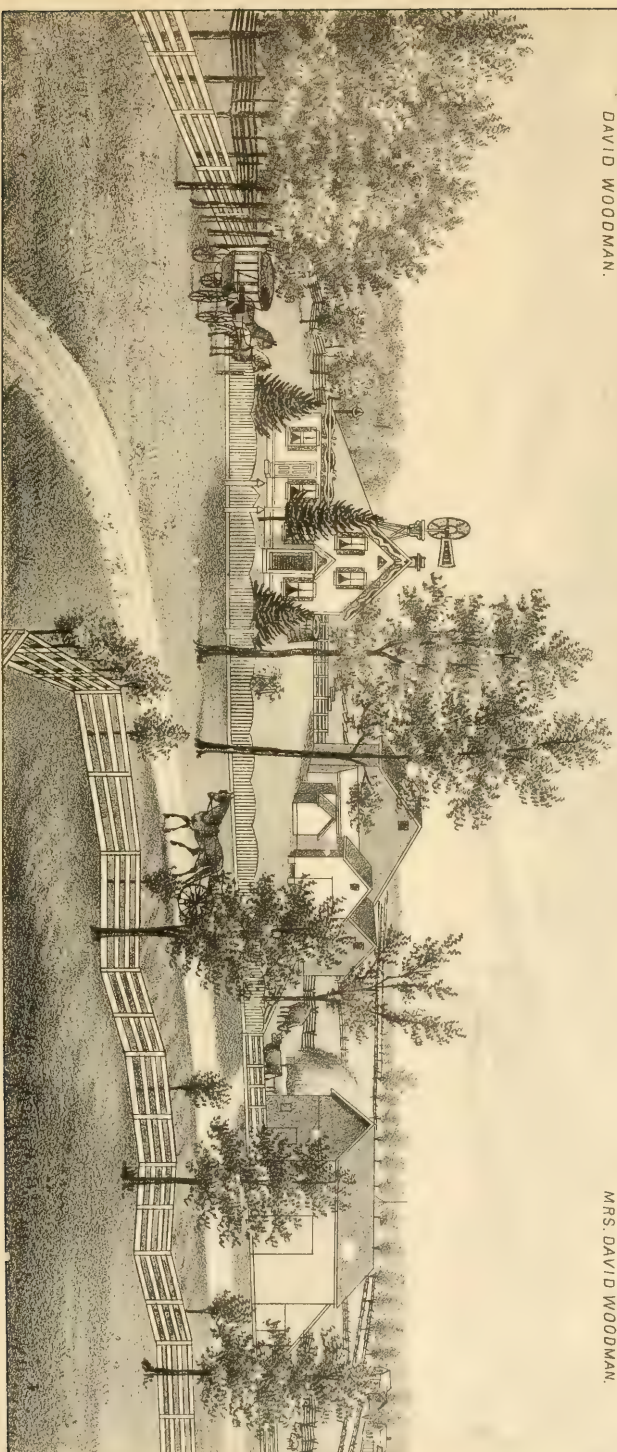




DAVID WOODMAN.



MRS. DAVID WOODMAN.



RESIDENCE OF DAVID WOODMAN, PAW PAW TR., MICH.





Paw Paw township, where they entered land on section 2, Pugsley taking 160 acres, and Lyle 240 adjoining him on the north. Pugsley began at once to build a cabin and clear his land, but Lyle hastened eastward for his family, whom he brought to Michigan in the fall of 1836, moving at once into Pugsley's cabin. There they also found Hugh Jones, who was at work for Pugsley, and who soon entered a farm just west of him, on which he lived until his death. The widow of his brother, Frank R. Jones, now owns the place.

Mr. Pugsley's cabin boasted but one room, but within its narrow limits Pugsley, Jones, and the Lyle family, aggregating thirteen persons (of whom nine were children), managed to live for the space of ten days, when Lyle's own cabin was finished, and he moved his family into it. Says Mr. William Lyle, in recounting the experiences of that time, "We all slept in that one room, and pretty well crowded it was too for thirteen of us, I can tell you; but then folks were not as particular in those days as they are now." Mr. Pugsley has resided in the township since his first settlement, and still lives on section 2. Mr. Lyle sold his farm in 1849, and moved to the village, where he resided until his death in 1870, aged seventy-seven.

It has already been observed that when Mr. Lyle came to Paw Paw with his family he brought with him nine children, and it is a somewhat remarkable circumstance that they, as well as one child born after the settlement in Michigan, are all living to-day. John and William are living on farms in Paw Paw township; Daniel and George in Dowagiac; Merwin is a druggist in Paw Paw, in which village, too, reside the five daughters,—Mrs. Russell Parker, Mrs. Frank Parker, Mrs. Francis Selleck, Mrs. N. P. Conger, and Mrs. Edwin Barnum.

At the time of the settlement of Mr. Pugsley and the Lyles, that portion of the township was an unbroken forest, the only settler there besides themselves being Richard Hutchins, who located upon section 2 in the summer of 1835. Among those who settled in and near that neighborhood at an early date may be mentioned Joseph Luce, Loyal Crane, Henry Harrington, William and Nathan M. Pugsley, H. M. Pugsley, Amos Deming, — Ball, and the families of Jennings and Hicks.

In 1842, William and John, sons of John Lyle, left the parental roof together, to take up homes of their own in the south part of the township. John located on section 29 and William on section 32. That portion of Paw Paw was but little settled at that time. Besides William and John Lyle, the settlers were Jesse Bickell, John Sherrod, Daniel Abbott, and Archibald Buys. Buys lived about a mile east of William Lyle, and except him there was no one between Lyle and the township line, nor were there any settlers whatever in the southeastern portion of the township.

Anthony Labaday and his wife came to Paw Paw village in 1836, and during the next year occupied a house previously inhabited by Lawson Grout, who in that year moved out to a farm on section 22, where he died, and where his son George now lives. In 1837, Labaday and his wife settled upon the farm of Williamson Mason (Mrs. Labaday's brother), in section 22, where they lived until 1842, when

Mr. Labaday bought of Peter Gremps a farm on section 21, and lived there until his death, in 1860. His widow still resides on the place. When the Labadays moved upon section 22, in 1837, their nearest neighbor was Asa Hinckley. In 1838 they had another neighbor, Horace Chadwick, who moved to Illinois with his family about 1850.

Edwin Barnum, already mentioned, came to Paw Paw in 1835 when a young man, purchased 280 acres on sections 10 and 15, went at once upon his land, and lived there a bachelor until 1840, when he married a daughter of John Lyle. He removed to Paw Paw village in 1864, and resided there until his death, in August, 1875. His widow still lives in the village. Mr. Barnum held numerous local offices, and was for some years county treasurer.

James Cate, with his son Lorenzo, settled in 1836 upon section 9. He died in the township, and after that Lorenzo moved to the far West.

In June, 1835, Asa G. Hinckley, of New York, reached Paw Paw with his wife and five children, and settled on section 14, the land having been entered by Elder Jonathan Hinckley, his father, who came out a few months before, and who himself located in Breedsville. Asa moved in 1846 to a farm south of Eagle Lake, and died there in 1871. Later his widow moved to Paw Paw village, where she now lives.

In June, 1835, also, Richard Hutchins, of Oneida Co., N. Y., came with his wife and two children, and located upon section 2, where he died in 1870, and where his widow now lives.

John Barber, a Vermonter, came West with his family, in company with the Cate family, and located on section 8, where he died in 1838. West of him were the families of the Grouts and Henry Rhodes. Shortly afterwards Henry Monroe and Orimel Butler settled in that vicinity.

Loyal Crane and family, from Cayuga Co., N. Y., came to Paw Paw in 1837, his father having come out in the previous year and located land. Loyal settled upon sections 10 and 11, and lived there until 1865, when he moved to the village, which has since been his home. His father, James Crane, became a settler in 1840, and kept store in the village in 1842. He died in 1869, while visiting friends in Pennsylvania. Alonzo Crane, who settled on section 10 in 1840, died there in 1847.

Orimel Butler came from Western New York in 1836, and made Prairie Ronde his home until 1843, when he removed to Paw Paw and located upon section 10, where he died in 1869. His son, William K., also settled in Paw Paw, on section 8, where he now lives. He obtained his farm of Sylvester Murch, whose brother purchased it from John Barber, the original settler. The house in which Mr. Butler now lives is the one built by John Barber in 1836, and is considered one of the oldest habitable houses in the county. H. W. Rhodes pushed westward from Monroe Co., N. Y., in 1835, and located on section 8. He now resides in Paw Paw village, his son occupying the old homestead.

Nathan M. Pugsley, being persuaded by his uncle, John K., already located in Paw Paw, came directly from his home in England to Michigan in 1838, and settled upon section 10, where he has since lived. His brother, H. M.

Pugsley, now lives on section 7, on land which he located in 1845. A. R. Wildey came in 1835 to Paw Paw, and eventually settled upon section 9, where he now lives.

B. F. Murdock, now residing in the village, came to Kalamazoo in 1836, and to Paw Paw in 1842. Mr. Murdock passed much of his early life in the West in school-teaching, having down to 1842 taught in five counties. When he came to Paw Paw he worked at carpentering, and sold fanning-mills for J. M. Andrews, who was then manufacturing those machines in the village, as the successor of Jerome Walton.

Abraham Ball, of Ohio, came to Paw Paw in 1837, and started a brick-yard on E. Barnum's farm, the first one in the county. He followed the business until 1849. In 1855 he died, while on a visit to Coldwater.

Edmond Hayes, a tailor, and Rufus Currier, a carpenter, made a trip from Pennsylvania to Paw Paw in 1838, returning the same year to that State, and reporting so favorably regarding the Western country that William H. Lee determined to accompany them to Michigan. The three set out in the fall of 1838, proceeding to Detroit by water, and traveling thence on foot to Paw Paw village. Hayes and Currier remained in the village, where they proposed to ply their trades. Lee proceeded about a mile westward, to the place of Asa G. Hinckley, for whom he engaged to thrash wheat, his pay to be one bushel in eight. He also bought an acre of land of Hinckley, and while he was building a cabin lived with Loyal Crane. He returned to Pennsylvania in the winter of 1839 for his family, with whom, and accompanied by Jesse Bickell, his brother-in-law, and Mrs. Bickell (the latter's mother), he came back to Paw Paw in February of that year, the entire journey being made by wagon, and ending at Paw Paw in snow eighteen inches deep. Lee lived on his one acre four years, during which time he plied his trade as a mason, working all over the county, until he became acquainted with most of the people living in it. In 1843 he bought of Willard Dodge a place on section 28, where he still lives. Mr. Lee's father (James Lee), his mother, and his brother Uriel came to Paw Paw in 1841, and located upon section 33, where Uriel now lives with his mother (aged ninety-one), the elder Lee having died in 1852.

Mr. Lee says he used to get sugar for his family by plowing for Pee Pee Yah, an old Indian, who had a farm on section 22. The Indians were always well supplied with sugar, but could not master the business of plowing. Lee did not get much sugar for a day's plowing, and what he did get he had to divide with Asa Hinckley, to pay for the use of the latter's horses. Mr. Lee used to take his dinner with him when he went to plow for Pee Pee Yah. One day, at noon, he discovered that dogs had captured it. Marching briskly into Pee Pee Yah's house, he told the squaw that as her dogs had devoured his dinner, he must have some from her. The old woman handed him a wooden ladle, pointed to a large kettle full of stewed corn, and told him to help himself. He began to eat, when presently the dogs came up and joined him in the repast, dipping in with their mouths where he used the ladle. He rapped them sharply with the ladle, but they insisted upon keeping him company, and as he was desperately hungry, and was

assured by the squaw that it was according to the etiquette of the house for the dogs to eat out of the same dish with the family, he proceeded to complete his meal, and soon got so that he did not much mind his canine messmates.

Pee Pee Yah was said to have been once a prominent chief of the *Pottawattamies*, but had turned farmer, and had bought of the government a quarter of section 22, which is known to this day as the Pee Pee Yah farm. There were in the township other Indians who owned small pieces of land, but Pee Pee Yah was the only one who ever approached the dignity of being a farmer, and his farming was at its best confined to the cultivation of a little soft corn and the boiling of sugar. He was, however, regarded by the other Indians as a superior sort of creature, and was much respected by them. When the government was endeavoring to procure the removal of the Indians of this vicinity to the West, he conceived the idea that it would seek to remove him, despite the fact that he was a land-holder, and therefore fled to Canada with his squaw and child. He died in Canada, and the squaw then returned with her child to Paw Paw, and reoccupied the farm. She afterwards sold it, however, to John R. Baker, and moved to Hartford township.

#### LATER SETTLERS.

John Sherwood, now living in the southern part of the township, was a settler about 1840. David Woodman (2d), who came with his father, Joseph Woodman, to Antwerp in 1835, located land on section 20, in Paw Paw, in 1841, and has made his home there since that time.

Jonas Harrison came with his family from New York in 1846, and located with his son, William H., on 40 acres in section 16. He took up a farm himself on the same section in 1847, and lived in the township until his death, in 1864. Of his sons, William H. lives in Kalamazoo, Albert resides on section 16, in Paw Paw, and Aaron lives south of him, on the same section. About the time Mr. Harrison settled in Paw Paw there were living in his neighborhood Henry Wilson, A. R. Wildey, Joseph Luce, E. Tyler, — Mitchelson, William K. Butler, Riley Woodman, and A. Hemingover.

Henry Wilson, who located in Adrian as early as 1837, went from there in 1840 to Pennsylvania (whence he had migrated), remained there until the spring of 1846, and then came with his family to Paw Paw. He took up 40 acres on section 16, and has lived upon it until the present time.

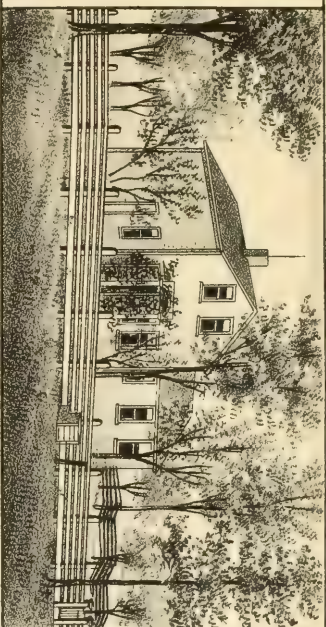
In 1848, Philip Sherrod came from Western Pennsylvania to Paw Paw, and after working for farmers until 1851 bought a farm on section 29 of Nathan Lawton, and has lived there to this day. H. Cuddeback, a sailor on the lakes, came to Michigan with his father, Sylvester Cuddeback, in 1849, and located land on section 28. The father settled on the farm, but the son returned to a life on the water, which he followed until 1851. He then became a farmer upon the place he still owns, his father removing subsequently to Lawrence, where he now lives.

David Woodman, who came to Michigan in 1834, settled in Antwerp in 1838, and in Paw Paw in 1858, where he still lives, at the age of eighty-seven. Thomas B. Irwin





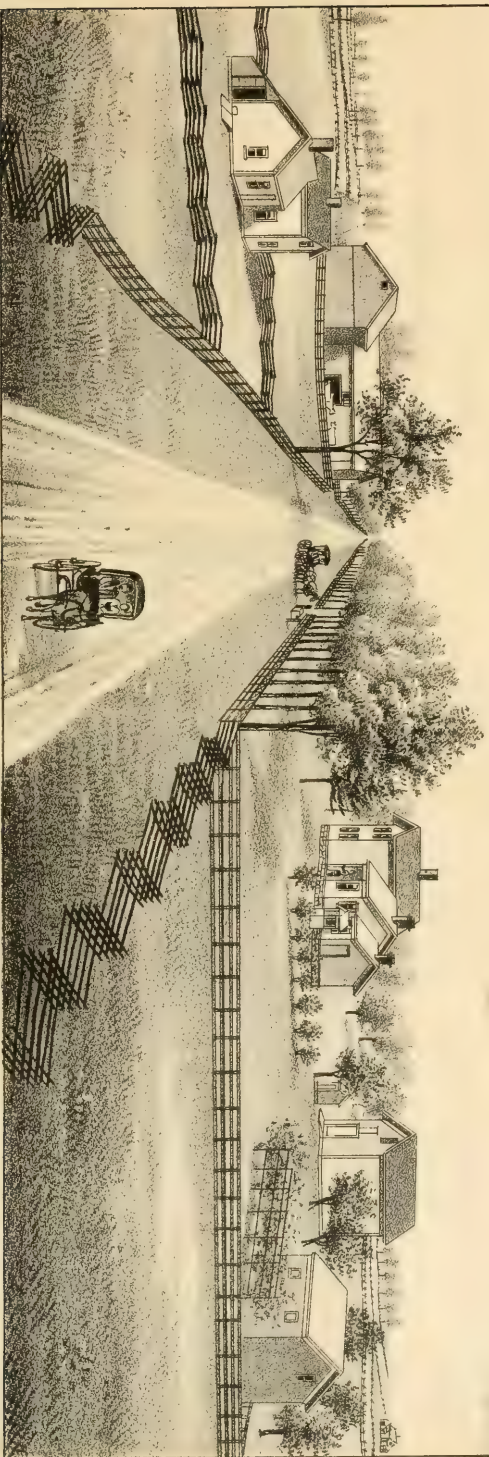
ALBERT HARRISON.



OLD HOME.



MRS. ALBERT HARRISON.



RESIDENCE OF ALBERT HARRISON, PAW PAW T<sub>P</sub>, MICHIGAN.



came to the State in 1843, located in Lawrence in 1846, and in 1864 removed permanently to Paw Paw village. E. A. Thompson, who located in Paw Paw village, his present home, served between 1855 and 1859 as Deputy Secretary of State.

#### THE CROOKED PAW PAW.

Before the days of the Michigan Central Railroad, when the subject of water transportation between Paw Paw and Lake Michigan was one of much importance, the Paw Paw River was utilized, after a fashion, as a highway for flat-boats, although it is generally believed that flat-boating on the Paw Paw was never a paying business. As early as 1833, however, the Paw Paw was regarded as navigable, and the settlers entertained strong hopes that a part of the stream at least might be profitably used by steamboats.

In the spring of 1833 the Territorial government, desirous of promoting easy access to the river, authorized the construction of roads connecting the "Forks of the Paw Paw" (the supposed head of navigation) with Schoolcraft, Big Prairie Ronde, Adamsville, Little Prairie Ronde, Gun Prairie, and Barry County. "The Landing," near Lawrence village, came, later, to be a place where considerable freight was received for shipment down the river. In 1840, I. W. Willard, of Paw Paw, built two large flat-boats, loaded them with flour from his mills at Paw Paw, and dispatched them to St. Joseph. The boats were the "Daniel Buckley," commanded by A. R. Wildey, and the "Wave," in charge of William H. Hurlbut. They made the trip, but occupied so long a time and met with so much difficulty, on account of low water, etc., that the venture was not profitable. Other efforts to utilize the shallow stream as a water highway proved similarly unsuccessful, and although there was for a time considerable flat-boat traffic from Paw Paw to St. Joseph, the general verdict was decidedly unfavorable.

In 1848, however, interest in the matter was revived by the passage of an act of the Legislature appropriating 10,000 acres of land for the improvement of the Paw Paw, with a view to make it navigable, at least for flat-boats; but the scheme miscarried, and the Paw Paw remains what it was,—only a mill-stream.

There are among the residents of the county many well-known men who used to "flat-boat it," and one is at no loss to gather a bountiful chapter of stories illustrative of life on the "raging Paw Paw" when the lusty boatmen poled their craft along its sinuous course and over its numberless sand-bars. Mosquitoes were the bugbears of a boatman's existence, and by day as well as by night waged incessant warfare upon the river-rovers, whom at times they drove well-nigh distracted. William M. Lyle says he once shipped as cook on board a Paw Paw flat-boat, and used to find the mosquitoes so thick that they would settle in swarms on the meat frying in the pan. Unable to get rid of them, he always fried them with the meat, or at least with the gravy, and served the food in that way. The boatmen never found fault, probably because it was mosquitoes and beef or nothing.

#### FOREST ADVENTURE OF A PIONEER.

About the year 1836, Edwin Mears, a young man living in Paw Paw village, set out in midwinter with a half-dozen

companions on a hunting expedition. In the course of the day young Mears found himself separated from his comrades, and despite his persistent efforts and shouts he could neither find them nor the way homeward. So he wandered through the woods four days and nights, half-dead with cold and hunger, and at the end of the fourth day found himself on the shore of Lake Michigan. There he discovered an abandoned hut, and in it a few grains of oats, which he ate with great avidity, for he had had no food since leaving Paw Paw, four days previously. His sufferings from cold and hunger were intense, and he had about made up his mind to perish there when he heard human voices, and was rescued by a party sent out in search of him when it was found that he did not return home. He was in a most unfortunate condition, and for a time after being taken home it was thought he would die, but he at last rallied, and long survived to recount his painful experience. It is said that a few years afterwards Mr. Mears' rifle was found at the foot of a beech-tree.

#### INDIAN SKULLS.

Skulls and other human bones have frequently been turned up by the plowshare, especially in the southern portion of the township. Indian burying-grounds are known to have been laid out on sections 21 and 22, on the latter of which Pee Pee Yah had a farm, and there were within the recollection of many of Paw Paw's present citizens as many as two-score of Indian graves there.

#### ORGANIZATION AND FIRST TOWN-MEETING.

The township of Lafayette (now Paw Paw) was formed by act of the Legislative Council on the 26th day of March, 1835, and included the whole of Van Buren County, which was then temporarily attached to Cass. The first township-meeting was held at the house of D. O. Dodge, on the 4th of April, 1836, when Peter Gremps was chosen Supervisor; Daniel O. Dodge, Town Clerk; Edward Shults, Collector. By an act of the State Legislature, approved March 11, 1837, Lafayette (or Van Buren County) was divided into seven townships, of which the present Paw Paw retained the old name of Lafayette.\*

The first meeting of the new township of Lafayette (created under act of March 11, 1837, giving Van Buren County separate jurisdiction) was held at D. O. Dodge's tavern, in Paw Paw village, on the first Monday in April, 1837. Levi H. Warner was appointed Moderator, and there were present D. O. Dodge, Town Clerk, and Peter Gremps, Supervisor. The polls being duly opened the following freemen voted: Joseph Luce, R. Currier, E. L. Barrett, Peter Gremps, D. O. Dodge, William Eckler, E. Jones, John Barber, A. Buys, John Hughes, E. Mears, L. H. Warner, J. K. Pugsley, Edwin Barnum, D. Thorp, J. Barnes, D. Barker, A. G. Hincley, H. Gray, C. G. Harrington, R. Hincle, John Lyle, E. Shults, T. B. Colton, William Prater, Lorenzo Cate, M. Hoskins.

The following officers were elected: D. O. Dodge, Supervisor; Edwin Mears, Township Clerk; L. H. Warner, J. H. Simmons, J. K. Pugsley, and E. Barnum, Justices of

\* The name was changed to Paw Paw by an act of the Legislature approved March 15, 1867.



the Peace; Joseph Luce, J. H. Simmons, and L. H. Warner, Highway Commissioners; J. H. Simmons and L. H. Warner, School Inspectors; Rufus Currier, Edward Shults, and Edwin Barnum, Assessors; Charles G. Harrington, Collector; C. G. Harrington, Myron Hoskins, David Thorp, and L. A. Grout, Constables; E. L. Barrett and Asa G. Hinckley, Directors of the Poor.

At the second township-meeting, held April 2, 1838, at the house of H. Wilder, the voters were John Barber, Rodney Hinckley, James Cate, D. O. Dodge, Edwin Barnum, Zethan Warner, Hugh Jones, Joseph Luce, L. D. Cate, Levi T. Ball, William Eckler, Charles G. Harrington, John Hughes, David Barker, L. H. Warner, Hegry Gray, L. A. Grout, Williamson Mason, H. Read, Henry Rhodes, Peter Gremps, James Conklin, Francis Jones, S. C. Buys, E. L. Barrett, Archibald Buys, William Prater, R. E. Churchill, Joseph E. Roys, Charles Ivison, E. R. Hays, Martin Liscomb, H. Robinson, A. A. Greaves, A. G. Hinckley, and David Thorp.

At that meeting it was voted to raise upon the taxable property of the township money enough to purchase and fence one and a half acres of land for a burial-ground.

#### TOWNSHIP CIVIL LIST.

A list of the persons annually chosen by the township from 1838 to 1880 to be supervisor, treasurer, clerk, and justice of the peace is given below:

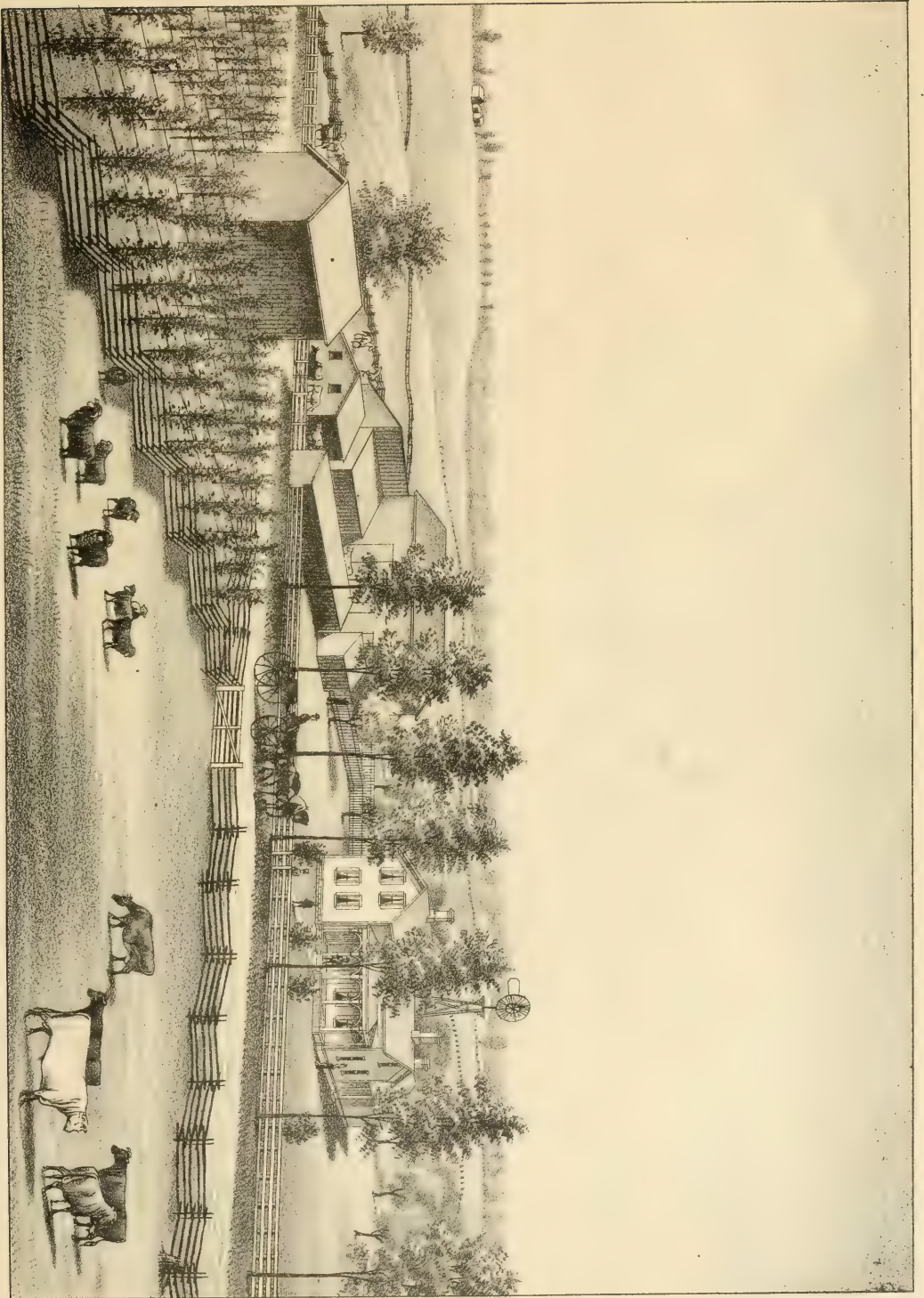
- 1838.—Supervisor, J. H. Simmons; Clerk, H. Wilder; Treasurer, C. G. Harrington; Justice of the Peace, J. K. Pugsley.
- 1839.—Supervisor, Joshua Bangs; Clerk, J. H. Simmons; Treasurer, Joshua Bangs; Justice of the Peace, Joseph Luce.
- 1840.—Supervisor, J. H. Simmons; Clerk, J. H. Simmons; Treasurer, George Smith; Justice of the Peace, F. H. Stevens.
- 1841.—Supervisor, Peter Gremps; Clerk, L. H. Warner; Treasurer, George Smith; Justice of the Peace, Loyal Crane.
- 1842.—Supervisor, Peter Gremps; Clerk, G. H. Baker; Treasurer, George Smith.
- 1843.—Supervisor, S. J. Foote; Clerk, A. Crane; Treasurer, F. R. Lord; Justice of the Peace, J. Shevarts.
- 1844.—Supervisor, J. B. Barnes; Clerk, A. Crane; Treasurer, L. H. Warner; Justice of the Peace, D. O. Dodge.
- 1845.—Supervisor, J. K. Pugsley; Clerk, A. Crane; Treasurer, A. J. Goodrich; Justice of the Peace, J. H. Simmons.
- 1846.—Supervisor, I. W. Willard; Clerk, Abner Hayes; Treasurer, Edmund Smith; Justice of the Peace, S. H. Blackman.
- 1847.—Supervisor, Loren Darling; Clerk, Elisha Durkee; Treasurer, J. B. Barnes; Justice of the Peace, D. Woodman (2d).
- 1848.—Supervisor, Benoni Hall; Clerk, Elisha Durkee; Treasurer, J. H. Simmons; Justice of the Peace, James Crane.
- 1849.—Supervisor, Benoni Hall; Clerk, Edmund Smith; Treasurer, H. W. Rhodes; Justice of the Peace, J. H. Simmons.
- 1850.—Supervisor, F. H. Stevens; Clerk, Edmund Smith; Treasurer, A. C. Kimball; Justice of the Peace, S. J. Foote.
- 1851.—Supervisor, J. K. Pugsley; Clerk, G. B. Sherwood; Treasurer, O. F. Parker; Justice of the Peace, A. Heininover.
- 1852.—Supervisor, F. H. Stevens; Clerk, G. B. Sherwood; Treasurer, B. D. Thompson; Justice of the Peace, John Reynolds.
- 1853.—Supervisor, G. B. Sherwood; Clerk, J. M. Longwell; Treasurer, N. P. Conger; Justice of the Peace, J. H. Simmons.
- 1854.—Supervisor, Elisha Durkee; Clerk, E. Mather; Treasurer, N. P. Conger; Justice of the Peace, James Crane.
- 1855.—Supervisor, Edwin Barnum; Clerk, B. D. Thompson; Treasurer, A. Stewart; Justice of the Peace, David Webb.
- 1856.—Supervisor, R. Avery; Clerk, George Voke; Treasurer, G. S. Cogswell; Justice of the Peace, L. B. Sheldon.
- 1857.—Supervisor, Edwin Barnum; Clerk, T. R. Harrison; Treasurer, Thomas A. Granger; Justice of the Peace, Calvin Cross.
- 1858.—Supervisor, Edwin Barnum; Clerk, E. B. Butler; Treasurer, James H. Prater; Justice of the Peace, T. E. Hendrick.
- 1859.—Supervisor, Charles Selleck; Clerk, A. J. Sartore; Treasurer, E. A. Sheldon; Justice of the Peace, J. H. Simmons.
- 1860.—Supervisor, L. B. Sheldon; Clerk, A. J. Sartore; Treasurer, G. W. Oecbock; Justice of the Peace, O. D. Glidden.
- 1861.—Supervisor, G. J. Hudson; Clerk, T. H. Stephenson; Treasurer, T. W. Melcher; Justice of the Peace, George Young.
- 1862.—Supervisor, J. K. Pugsley; Clerk, T. H. Stephenson; Treasurer, Russell Parker; Justice of the Peace, T. E. Hendrick.
- 1863.—Supervisor, Charles Selleck; Clerk, J. J. Roe; Treasurer, Edwin Cate; Justice of the Peace, E. M. Glidden.
- 1864.—Supervisor, Loyal Crane; Clerk, S. H. Blackman; Treasurer, G. S. Lane; Justice of the Peace, H. P. Sanger.
- 1865.—Supervisor, Charles Selleck; Clerk, A. J. Sartore; Treasurer, G. S. Lane; Justice of the Peace, A. W. Nash.
- 1866.—Supervisor, Charles Selleck; Clerk, E. M. Glidden; Treasurer, J. W. Free; Justice of the Peace, T. E. Hendrick.
- 1867.—Supervisor, E. M. Glidden; Clerk, A. J. Sartore; Treasurer, J. W. Free; Justice of the Peace, E. M. Glidden.
- 1868.—Supervisor, O. D. Glidden; Clerk, Joseph Kilburn; Treasurer, John Pelton; Justice of the Peace, W. H. Kandall.
- 1869.—Supervisor, J. L. Ross; Clerk, John Knowles; Treasurer, H. L. Eggleston; Justice of the Peace, A. H. Herron.
- 1870.—Supervisor, E. O. Briggs; Clerk, A. M. Harrison; Treasurer, H. L. Eggleston; Justice of the Peace, T. E. Hendrick.
- 1871.—Supervisor, E. O. Briggs; Clerk, A. M. Harrison; Treasurer, R. Rogers; Justice of the Peace, S. H. Blackman.
- 1872.—Supervisor, E. O. Briggs; Clerk, A. M. Harrison; Treasurer, R. Rogers; Justice of the Peace, Wm. R. Butler.
- 1873.—Supervisor, Edwin Barnum; Clerk, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, R. Rogers; Justice of the Peace, C. E. Galligan.
- 1874.—Supervisor, E. O. Briggs; Clerk, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, R. Rogers; Justice of the Peace, D. Woodman (2d).
- 1875.—Supervisor, E. O. Briggs; Clerk, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, Charles Selleck; Justice of the Peace, S. H. Blackman.
- 1876.—Supervisor, E. O. Briggs; Clerk, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, J. J. Forsyth; Justice of the Peace, John Knowles.
- 1877.—Supervisor, J. W. Free; Clerk, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, A. C. Lindsley; Justice of the Peace, K. W. Noyes.
- 1878.—Supervisor, J. W. Free; Clerk, R. I. Jarvis; Treasurer, A. C. Lindsley; Justice of the Peace, W. H. Mason.
- 1879.—Supervisor, D. Woodman (2d); Clerk, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, Charles Selleck; Justice of the Peace, S. H. Blackman.

#### PAW PAW VILLAGE.

The first settlement in the present township of Paw Paw was made upon the site of Paw Paw village in the year 1832, when Rodney Hinckley located upon a farm in the northern portion of the present village. In that year, also, Pierce Barber, of Prairie Ronde, began the erection of a saw-mill on the river at the west end of the village. Mr. Barber soon sold his interest in the mill to Job Davis and Rodney Hinckley, who, however, soon disposed of it (in 1833) to Peter Gremps and Lyman J. Daniels.

These gentlemen came hither on a prospecting tour in that year, bought the mill property, improved it, purchased considerable land in the vicinity, and laid out upon it a village which they called Paw Paw. Daniels lived in Schoolcraft, and at no time became a settler in Paw Paw. Gremps, who came from the Mohawk Valley, in New York, to find a mill-site in the West, returned to his home after purchasing the Paw Paw property, and did not settle permanently on his new possessions until 1835, when he moved into a cabin just west of the saw-mill. Edward Shults, Mr. Gremps' nephew, came out from New York with his uncle, and worked for the latter in his saw-mill.

—Township name changed to Paw Paw.



RESIDENCE OF G. F. HARRINGTON, PAW PAW T<sub>P</sub>, MICHIGAN.





While Mr. Gremps was absent in the East, his partner, Mr. Daniels, was busy looking after the saw-mill and devising means to further the interests of the new village. He thought there ought to be a tavern, especially as the Territorial road was likely to pass through Paw Paw, and so one day in 1834, on meeting in Schoolcraft Daniel O. Dodge, who had been teaching school in those parts, he offered to give him an entire block in Paw Paw, and build a board house for him, if he would come on and keep tavern in it. Dodge agreed, and in the same year opened an inn, which became one of the most famous in this part of the State. Meanwhile, Enos L. Barrett had located land north of the village, but lived in a board shanty on one of Gremps' village lots. David Thorp was also on the west side of the river, where he occupied a building, in which he lived and operated a turning-lathe.

Shortly after Mr. Gremps' permanent settlement he sent to Stone Arabia, N. Y., and invited Dr. Barrett (a resident of that place) to come out to Paw Paw and set up practice. Barrett came, and lived in a cabin just west of Dodge's tavern. Dr. Barrett was the first physician of Paw Paw. He was sorely afflicted with phthisis, and after three or four years' practice at Paw Paw removed to Kalamazoo, where he ended his days.

Early in the summer of 1835, Mr. Gremps concluded that there ought to be a store in the village, and so he sent word to Edward Legrave, of Kalamazoo, that he wanted a carpenter capable of building a good store. Legrave found Williamson Mason (a carpenter from Wayne Co., N. Y., who had been in the West working at his trade since 1832), and induced him to go over and build Gremps' store. Mason started with three hands on Monday, July 6, 1835, and on the evening of that day reached Dodge's tavern, which was so full of people that he and his companions were compelled to sleep in a couple of abandoned shanties on the west side of the river. In them, too, they lived while they were building the store, which was erected in a short time, though in good style for that period. It was, of course, the first store in Paw Paw, and it stood west of Dodge's tavern, where Phillips' blacksmith-shop is. Mr. Gremps moved his family into the back part of the building before it was entirely finished, and soon afterwards stocked the store with goods which he had brought from New York, and began business in it, with Edward Shults as his clerk.

After completing the store, Mason and his fellow-workmen built a dwelling-house for Mr. Gremps just opposite, which is still known as the Gremps house.

Mr. Mason, who is yet a resident and manufacturer at Paw Paw, says that when he came to the village, in July, 1835, it contained on the east side of the river Rodney Hinckley's house, Dodge's tavern, and Dr. Barrett's cabin; on the west side, Gremps & Daniels' saw-mill, David Thorp's turning-shop, and the two shanties occupied by Peter Gremps and Enos L. Barrett.

Soon the need for a blacksmith began to make itself felt. Rodney Hinckley had put up a blacksmith-shop, but little work if any had been done in it. When blacksmithing was needed, the settlers went either to Schoolcraft or St. Joseph. So Peter Gremps said to Williamson Mason,

"We must have a blacksmith." Gremps thought he could get Craig Buys, of St. Joseph County, a brother-in-law of Rodney Hinckley, and empowered Mason to promise Buys the gift of a shop if he would come. Buys did come, and occupied a shop which Mason built for him on a lot west of Dodge's tavern. Buys plied his trade there about six years, and then moved to Ohio.

The first shoemaker of Paw Paw was Charles G. Harrington, who is now working at his trade at Lawton. Mr. Harrington came from Kalamazoo in 1836, and opened a shop in Paw Paw, in a building put up by Williamson Mason, just east of where the Dyckman House now stands. Mr. Mason also built the first school-house in the village, in the fall of 1836, its location being on Gremps Street north of Main Street. Rodney Hinckley, of whom mention has been made, finally moved to South Haven, where he died.

Madison Eastman, a carpenter, settled in the village in 1835. He afterwards removed to Decatur, but returned to Paw Paw, and died there.

The first foundry in the village was started by Calvin Hawley, who was also one of the first carriage-makers in Paw Paw. His widow, a sister of the late Edwin Barnum, still lives in the township.

Peter Gremps, the founder of Paw Paw, came West, as already observed, in 1833, to find a location for a mill, and while stopping at Schoolcraft discovered one John Derosier, who piloted him to Paw Paw, as a place certain to suit him. Gremps at once entered considerable land in the neighborhood, returned East, and came again in 1835, with his family. Mr. Gremps never lived out of the village after that. He built the first store, and was the first merchant and first postmaster. After a busy career, he lived during the latter years of his life in peaceful retirement, dying upon the old homestead in 1874, at the age of seventy-three. Two of his children—Mrs. Alonzo Shults and Peter H. Gremps—are now residents of the village. Edward Shults, his nephew, who came to Paw Paw in 1834, and who was Mr. Gremps' right-hand man in business for many years, caught the gold fever in 1849 and migrated to the Pacific slope, where he still lives.

Myron Hoskins, a carpenter, who came to Paw Paw in 1836, still lives in the village. William Prater, also a carpenter, came in the same year. J. H. Simmons, a cabinet-maker, came in 1836, and was the first who worked at that trade. He became a man of some mark, served as county surveyor and judge of probate, and lived in the village until his death. William Engle, who now lives south of the village, came in 1840, and followed the business of coopering. Richardson Avery, a carpenter, came to Paw Paw in 1835, and died in the village in 1875.

*Public-Houses.*—Daniel O. Dodge's tavern in Paw Paw village, on the Territorial road (known also as the Paw Paw House), was a place of considerable importance from its erection in 1834; and later, when stage-coaching and other means of travel made the Territorial road an important highway, the old Dodge tavern was held in high esteem by those who traveled on that thoroughfare. It was an humble board shanty with four rooms, and measured about 16 feet by 24. Dodge's tavern was enlarged in 1835, and

in 1836 was rebuilt. Mrs. Dodge was a famous cook, and gave the house great repute. The stages changed horses at that point, and for many years travel on the Territorial road was exceedingly brisk. It is said that Dodge had at one time as many as a hundred people at breakfast, and that Mrs. Dodge did the cooking for all of them.

The tavern stood on what is now the south side of Main Street, at the western end opposite the bank, and for a year or more was almost hidden by trees. Trees, indeed, were so plentiful in Paw Paw, even after the village was laid out, that travelers frequently rode through it without knowing there was a town there, and searchers for the village often asked at Dodge's where Paw Paw was. Dodge sold the tavern to Horace Wilder, but being afterwards forced to take it back, carried it on until it was destroyed by fire. Mr. Dodge continued after that event to live in the village in retirement until his death. His widow and a son, Thomas, now live in Lawton.

During Mr. Dodge's career as a Paw Paw landlord, Dr. Warner opened a tavern about opposite where the post-office is now, but it had only a brief existence. James Crane put up the Exchange Hotel on the site of the Dyckman House, which latter, erected by E. B. Dyckman and John Smolk, was built soon after the burning of the old Exchange. The Willard House, remodeled by I. W. Willard from an old store building, was a popular hotel many years ago, but has long since ceased to be a public-house.

*The Great Immigration of 1836.*—The year 1836 brought a great army of land speculators and settlers to Michigan, and all along the Territorial road stages and taverns had more business on hand than they could comfortably manage. Travel was then at its flood on that highway, and travelers coming weary and footsore to a roadside inn with the glad expectation of rest and food, often found that neither could possibly be obtained; that the beds were all filled (having at least two persons in each), and that the larder had been completely exhausted. A participator in that bustling era says that Dodge's tavern was at that period like a bee-hive, and even then could not accommodate one-tenth of the people who sought its shelter. "Why," remarks this old settler, "I've known the time when the rush at Dodge's was so great, and the demand for lodging so pressing, that travelers offered as high as a dollar for the privilege of leaning against a post." This probably exaggerates but also illustrates the situation.

*Early Merchants.*—It has already been observed that Peter Gremps opened the first store in Paw Paw. The next store-keeper was Nathan Mears (now a merchant in Chicago), whose store was west of where the bank is. After him Edwin Mears opened a store on the corner now occupied by E. Smith & Co. James Crane was an early merchant, and kept store on Smith's corner.

Willard & Gremps opened a store on Main Street in 1838, and intrusted its management to Edward Shults. Willard afterwards bought Gremps' interest, and took Shults as a partner. Later the firm was Willard & Moffat. Isaac W. Willard was a man of considerable note in the community, and from 1838 until his death was closely identified with the interests of Paw Paw as a miller and merchant, and was a man of prominence in the community.

Alonzo Sherman came from the State of New York to Paw Paw in 1844, and engaged in mercantile business in the village as a partner with E. J. House, who was then keeping store in the building previously occupied by Edwin Mears. Since that time Mr. Sherman has been continuously engaged in trade at Paw Paw, and is now a member of the firm of Sherman & Avery, as well as extensively concerned in milling. H. L. Dickinson bought out Nathan Mears in 1845, and in 1847 became a partner with Alonzo Sherman. Mears went into business again, soon after selling to Dickinson, and in 1846 disposed of his store to William R. Hawkins, who had settled in Kalamazoo County in 1836, and had resided in Paw Paw since 1846. F. H. Stevens and Loren Darling opened a store in 1844 on the corner where Sherman & Avery now are, and remained there until 1847, when they retired from business. In that year Edmund Smith, a resident in the town since 1843, and a carpenter by trade, commenced in Paw Paw as a merchant, and still carries on that business.

The village has now five dry-goods stores, four grocery-stores, five drug-stores, one clothing-store, and numerous minor marts of business.

*Lawyers, Doctors, and Newspapers.*—The lawyers and physicians of Paw Paw are mentioned in the chapters devoted to the legal and medical professions in the general history of the county, and in the chapter on the press will be found notices of the various papers which have flourished or languished there.

*The Postmasters of Paw Paw.*—Peter Gremps was the first postmaster of Paw Paw, his appointment dating from 1835. Mr. Gremps, however, paid very little attention to the post-office, Edward Shults, his clerk, being also the deputy postmaster, and transacting the business of the office. Gremps was succeeded in 1842 by George L. Gale, and he was followed successively by John McKinney, John Smolk, A. J. Goodrich, F. H. Stevens, J. M. Longwell, J. W. Huston, E. J. House, A. J. Sorter, O. F. Parker, T. B. Irwin, and George W. Matthews, the latter being the present incumbent.

During the three months ending Dec. 31, 1879, \$800 worth of stamps were sold at the office, money-orders were issued to the amount of \$6624, and \$3817.53 were paid out on such orders.

*Mills and Millers.*—The building of the first saw-mill at Paw Paw and its transfer to Gremps & Daniels have been elsewhere mentioned. Gremps & Daniels controlled the property until the death of the latter, after which the mill passed to a numerous succession of owners, until it was worn out and eventually demolished. The mill-site is near that occupied by the Phoenix Flouring-Mill, which uses the same power. The latter establishment, containing two run of stones, belongs to Thomas L. Stevens, and is carried on by M. Wells.

In 1837, Stafford Godfrey, a mill-wright, came from Chautauqua Co., N. Y., in response to an invitation from Peter Gremps, and in 1838 began, with R. E. Churchill, the erection for I. W. Willard and Peter Gremps of the grist-mill long known as the Paw Paw Mills, which now contains six run of stones, and is carried on by A. Sherman & Briggs. The castings and stones were brought from St.





RESIDENCE OF PHILIP SHERROD, PAW PAW TP, MICH.



RESIDENCE OF A.C. WEBB, PAW PAW TP, VAN BUREN CO., MICHIGAN.





Joseph, and that its completion gave much satisfaction may be understood from the fact that people had previously to go to Kalamazoo and to Flowerfield, St. Joseph Co., to mill. A. Sherman & Briggs also carry on the Central Flouring-Mills, formerly used as a woolen-mill.

Stafford Godfrey, here mentioned, settled in Paw Paw in a house which stood upon the site of the Dyckman House, and in 1842 and 1843 he and Churchill built the present county court-house. His next important work was effected in 1856, when he built the brick Baptist church. Mr. Godfrey, aged eighty, now lives in the village.

Free & Martin have a planing-mill in the village, and near there Williamson Mason occupies a building which was put up by J. H. Simmons in 1840, and in which Mr. Mason has a planing-mill, turning-shop, etc. In the same building George Birkenshaw has a woolen-mill, in which he operates the first carding-machine brought to Paw Paw, one Frank Taylor having introduced it into the village.

Aside from the manufacturing establishments above named, the principal ones are the foundries of M. Snow & Sons and W. H. Randall, both of which are engaged chiefly in the production of plows.

*First Wedding, Birth, and Death.*—The first wedding in Paw Paw was that of Hannah Mead and one Belfontaine, in 1833. The bride was a servant-girl in the service of John Thomas, an employee at Job Davis' saw-mill, while the groom was one of the mill-hands. There was neither minister nor justice of the peace in the vicinity, but Job Davis, who declared that he had once been justice of the peace, said he knew the form of the ceremony, and thought it would be all right if he married them. They thought so, too, and were accordingly married by Davis, and began living together as man and wife. They soon moved to Indiana, and for aught that is known have lived as happily (or unhappily) as if a regular ministerial or judicial functionary had celebrated their nuptials.

The first child born in Paw Paw—Simeon, son of Archibald Buys—is still living in the township.

The wife of Daniel O. Dodge died in 1837, and was the first who died in Paw Paw. She was buried in the tavern garden, but in 1838, when the cemetery in the northern portion of the village was laid out, her remains were conveyed thither.

*Indian New-Year Calls.*—On the last day of the year 1835, Peter Gremps moved into the new house built for him by Williamson Mason and Joseph Royes. That evening Edward Shults—who by reason of a year's residence knew something of Indian customs—told the family that on the morrow they would be visited by a delegation of Indians, whose fashion it was to make New-Year calls on the white settlers, for the understood purpose of ratifying friendships for another year. Sure enough, on the ensuing day a band of about twenty-five Indians, gayly adorned with paint and feathers, called in force, somewhat to the trepidation of the women, whom the Indians insisted upon kissing despite violent protests. Altogether the affair was a jolly one, notwithstanding the kisses. Mrs. Dodge put on her war-paint when the twenty-five Indians demanded to kiss her, and by a sudden attack routed and drove them from her house at the point of the rolling-pin.

*The First Fourth of July Celebration.*—The first celebration of the national holiday in Paw Paw occurred in 1836, and, according to tradition, was a very patriotic and enthusiastic affair, though confined to a limited number of patriots and enthusiasts. The ceremonies attendant upon the celebration included an oration by F. C. Annable (now living in Almena); an address to three veterans of the war of 1812 (of whom Harmon Van Antwerp, aged ninety, was one), presented by a youthful daughter of Peter Gremps, now Mrs. Alonzo Shults, of Paw Paw; periodical "anvil" salutes, fired by Rodney Hinckley; and a banquet to everybody; the scene of the demonstration being the so-called "Public Square," an open space in the woods just west of the present court-house grounds.

*Village Incorporation and List of Officers.*—Paw Paw village was incorporated under an act of the Legislature passed in the spring of 1867, and on the 6th of May of that year the first meeting for the election of village officers was held at the court-house. The judges of election were Russell Parker and J. Whittaker, and the clerk was A. J. Sorter. Two hundred and eighty-six votes were cast, of which Thomas H. Stevenson received 159 votes for president, and C. F. Allen, 127. A full list of the persons chosen annually to be president, trustees, recorder, and treasurer from 1867 to 1879 is here given:

- 1867.—President, Thomas H. Stephenson; Trustees, F. W. Selleck, Alonzo Sherman, Charles Selleck, E. G. Butler, Chandler Richards; Recorder, A. J. Sorter; Treasurer, Edwin Barnum.
- 1868.—President, E. O. Briggs; Trustees, G. J. Hudson, W. H. Randall, E. A. Park, Alonzo Sherman, Chester F. Allen; Recorder, A. J. Sorter; Treasurer, Charles R. Avery.
- 1869.—President, E. O. Briggs; Trustees, George Voke, J. W. Van Fossen, Joseph Davey, T. W. Melchor, William H. Randall; Recorder, A. J. Sorter; Treasurer, George W. Longwell.
- 1870.—President, Edwin Martin; Trustees, Sydney Cox, A. M. Harrison, E. C. Palmer, P. I. Bragg, Aaron Van Auker; Recorder, John Knowles; Treasurer, John W. Free.
- 1871.—President, Peter H. Gremps; Trustees, Joseph Davey, E. C. Palmer, Russell Parker, Peter H. Gremps, Sydney Cox; Recorder, A. M. Harrison; Treasurer, Charles R. Avery.
- 1872.—President, G. J. Hudson; Trustees, J. H. Freeman, William Wiley, John W. Free, Joshua Hunt, Aaron Van Auker; Recorder, A. M. Harrison; Treasurer, Charles R. Avery.
- 1873.—President, J. H. Freeman; Trustees, Joshua Hunt, George Voke, P. H. Gremps, William Read, A. W. Miller, James Meyers; Recorder, William H. Mason; Treasurer, Charles R. Avery.
- 1874.—President, I. W. Willard; Trustees, J. C. Rousseau, Joseph Kilburn, James Bennett; Recorder, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, C. R. Avery.
- 1875.—President, Peter H. Gremps; Trustees, E. O. Briggs, Joshua Hunt, A. W. Miller; Recorder, W. H. Mason; Treasurer, C. R. Avery.
- 1876.—President, Edmond Smith; Trustees, George W. Longwell, C. R. Osobeck, William C. Macullar; Recorder, William H. Mason; Treasurer, C. R. Avery.
- 1877.—President, Loyal Crane; Trustees, Joshua Hunt, A. W. Miller, R. E. Quick; Recorder, Scigfried Shafer; Treasurer, E. P. Hathaway.
- 1878.—President, Charles S. Maynard; Trustees, James Phillips, N. P. Conger, Charles Flanders; Recorder, Edgar M. Snow; Treasurer, E. P. Hathaway.
- 1879.—President, J. W. Ball; Trustees, Alonzo Shults, James L. Tyrrell, A. F. McNeil; Recorder, E. M. Snow; Treasurer, E. P. Hathaway.

*Paw Paw Fire Department.*—This department was organized Sept. 29, 1868, with one engine company and one

hose company, H. L. Eggleston being the chief engineer. A hand-engine and hose-cart were then purchased and furnished to the companies; later a hook-and-ladder company was added. The original engine is still in use, although efforts are being made to supersede it with a steamer. The officers of the department are William Wiley, Chief Engineer; A. W. Showerman, Assistant Engineer; S. H. Lamont, Secretary; and M. P. Allen, Treasurer. The engine company numbers 37, Henry Hopping being the foreman. L. W. Melchor is the foreman of the hose company, which has 18 members, and R. E. Quick of the hook-and-ladder company, which numbers 14 members.

*Fires.*—The business centre of the village has on three occasions been ravaged by severe fires, and two of them were especially disastrous. The first conflagration of any note took place in 1859, when the old Exchange Hotel, standing upon the site of the present Dyckman House, was destroyed. In 1866 the flames swept both sides of Main Street west of Kalamazoo Street. The loss was a severe one, but the citizens afterwards found some consolation in the presence of the fine brick blocks which now line both sides of Main Street upon the district burned over in 1866.

On the 8th of January, 1868, the north side of Main Street between the Dyckman House and the post-office was ravaged by fire, which incident has thus far been the last important conflagration in the village.

*The Peninsular Electric Telegraph Company* was organized in 1876, for the purpose of providing local telegraph conveniences. About two miles of wire are in use, and about 25 families enjoy the convenience of direct telegraphic communication between their homes and all parts of the village. O. W. Rowland is the President, E. E. Rowland the Superintendent, and F. J. McEntee the Secretary and Treasurer.

*The Press of Paw Paw.*—The first newspaper in Van Buren County was published at Paw Paw in January, 1843, and was named the *Paw Paw Democrat*. Mention of that paper has already been made in the general history of the county, as also sketches of the several newspapers which have been published from time to time in Paw Paw village at later periods, down to the beginning of 1880, when the *National Independent* went out of existence. Shortly after that event the material of the *Independent* was utilized by a stock company in the publication of the *Paw Paw Herald*, which gives promise of success.

*Banking.*—The village of Paw Paw had no organized banking institution until Aug. 11, 1865, when the First National Bank of Paw Paw was chartered, with a capital of \$50,000. It was the outgrowth of the private banking-house of Stevens, Holton & Co., who had carried on a banking business in Paw Paw for several years previous to 1865, as the successors of Stevens, French & Co. The first Board of Directors of the First National Bank was composed of Thomas L. Stevens, Alonzo Sherman, James Crauc, Thos. H. Stevens, Chas. S. Maynard, N. M. Pugsley, and E. O. Briggs. Alonzo Sherman was chosen president, and J. A. Holton cashier.

The bank has now a capital of \$100,000, a circulation of \$45,000, a deposit account of \$65,000, and a loan account of \$120,000. The bank building on Main Street

was erected by the directors, and was first occupied in 1867. Mr. Alonzo Sherman is now the president (having filled that place since 1865), and F. E. Stevens is the cashier.

The robbery of the First National Bank in 1867 was for many years after its occurrence an important local sensation. It happened in March of that year, while the bank was occupying temporary quarters in R. M. Buck's hardware-store, pending the completion of its new building. The cashier, E. O. Briggs, discovered upon opening the bank-safe one Monday morning that upwards of \$22,000 in bonds and currency had been abstracted, and that, too, without leaving any exterior marks to show that the combination-lock had been forced. Pinkerton's Chicago Detective Agency being called upon to furnish a key to the mystery, sent one of its corps to Paw Paw, who managed so cleverly that although he resided at Paw Paw about six months as a professed insurance agent, no one, save two of the bank officials, knew his real business, until he startled the community one day by causing the arrest of R. M. Buck, the hardware merchant (a young man high in popular esteem), on the charge of robbing the bank. The evidence against him was complete, and he was convicted and sentenced to three years' confinement in the State-prison. Nearly all the money, which had been buried by Buck on a farm in Keeler township, was recovered.

*The Paw Paw Rifle Company.*—This organization was formed in 1839. Andrew Longstreet was chosen captain, Edwin Mears first lieutenant, and David Woodman second lieutenant. The command numbered about 40 men, and was attached to the 28th Regiment, 14th Brigade, 7th Division, of the State militia. The "Rifles" maintained an organization until the outbreak of the Mexican war, into which several of the members entered, when the company disbanded.

*Paw Paw Lodge, No. 18, I. O. O. F.*—This lodge was instituted Nov. 19, 1846, when a charter was issued to John McKinney, E. O. Briggs, Frank Taylor, C. R. Maffit, and John Smolk. It is now in a flourishing condition, with a membership of 78, and owns a handsome lodge-room, the first session in which was held in 1874. The present officers of the lodge are C. W. Ward, N. G.; A. Van Auken, V. G.; O. W. Rowland, Sec.; C. Lich, P. Sec.; E. Martin, Treas.; C. N. Griffin, W.; O. N. Hilton, C.; Edward Snow, I. G.; William Jones, O. G.; C. A. Harrison, R. S. N. G.; N. P. Conger, L. S. N. G.; A. F. McNeal, R. S. S.; William Reed, L. S. S.; L. S. Tyrrell, R. S. V. G.; — Chapman, L. S. V. G.

Of the charter members named above only three are still living,—E. O. Briggs, Frank Taylor, and John Smolk.

*Paw Paw Lodge, No. 25, F. and A. M.*—This lodge was organized under dispensation May 6, 1848, and on the 10th of January, 1849, a charter was issued to A. W. Broughton, B. F. Chadwick, D. O. Dodge, Peter Gremps, Hubbell Warner, O. Warner, and John McKinney. Until the charter was obtained the lodge worked under the "Ancient Order." At the first election of officers, Feb. 10, 1849, B. F. Chadwick was chosen W. M.; J. R. Baker, S. W.; D. O. Dodge, J. W.; Peter Gremps, Treas.; F. E. Stevens, Sec.; Hubbell Warner, S. D.; Williamson Mason, J. D.; John Smolk, Tiler. On the 13th of February, 1849, the



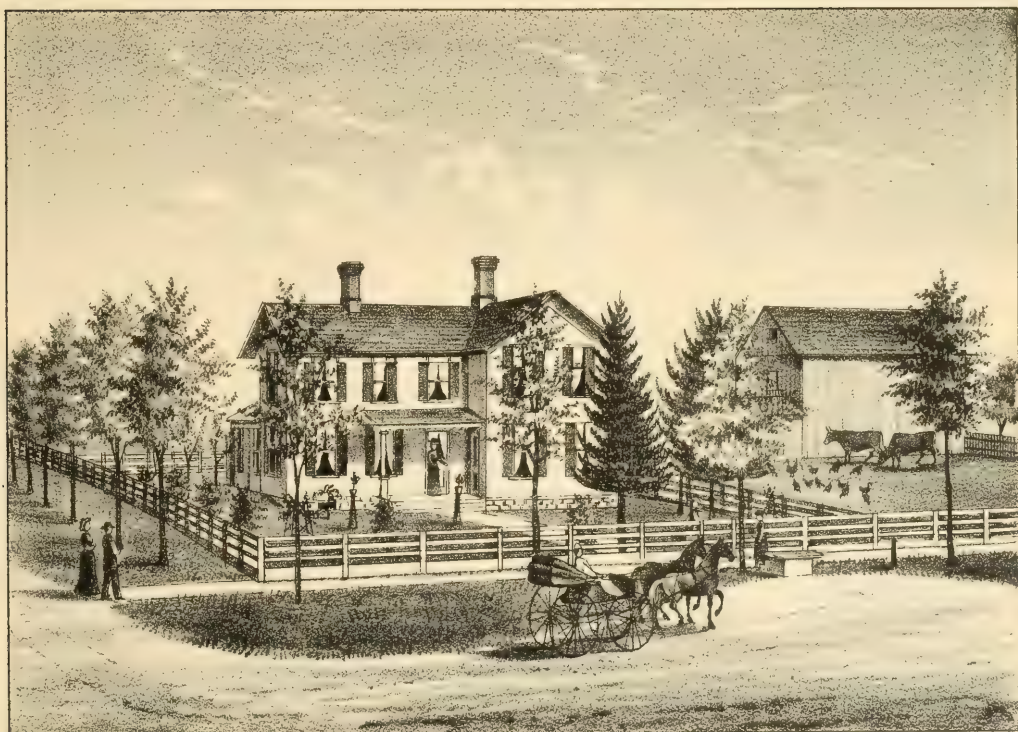


B. A. MURDOCK.



MRS. B. A. MURDOCK.

PHOTOS BY J. H. PRATER



RESIDENCE OF B. A. MURDOCK, PAW PAW VILLAGE, MICH.



newly-elected officers were installed by John Stewart, G. M.; C. L. Bird, D. G. M.; H. Marsh, G. Marshal; Nathaniel Pullman, G. C. The lodge now owns a finely-appointed lodge-room, and has upon it over 100 active members. The present officers are E. Curtis, W. M.; W. M. Thayer, S. W.; J. B. Smith, J. W.; C. G. Nash, Treas.; F. E. Stevens, Sec.; and Andrew Harwick, Tiler.

*Paw Paw Chapter, No. 34, R. A. M.*—This Masonic body was organized Jan. 10, 1865, the charter designating J. R. Baker as H. P.; O. S. Simmons as K.; and E. O. Briggs as Scribe. The membership is now 60, and the officers are as follows: H. P., G. J. Hudson; K., William Dole; S., William Thayer; C. of H., E. A. Blackman; P. S., Ella Curtiss; R. A. C., C. R. Ocobeck; 3d V., Joseph Davy; 2d V., R. O. Beebe; 1st V., S. Shaefer; Treas., C. G. Nash; Sec., F. E. Stevens; Sentinel, A. H. Harwick.

*Paw Paw Encampment, No. 30, I. O. O. F.*—Paw Paw Encampment was organized March 26, 1868. The charter members were C. M. Odell, B. Odell, C. Lich, S. H. Blackman, T. W. Melchor, E. Martin, and J. M. Brown, of whom all are still living except T. W. Melchor. The membership is now 28, and the officers are as follows: G. W. Matthews, C. P.; J. M. Brown, H. P.; William Reed, S. W.; O. W. Rowland, Scribe; C. Lich, Finan. Sec.; E. Martin, Treas.; William P. Jones, J. W.

*Paw Paw Lodge, No. 37, A. O. U. W.*—This is a section of a new secret society, and was organized Feb. 26, 1878, with 10 members. E. S. Dunning was P. M. W.; O. W. Rowland, M. W.; and John Knowles, G. F. The membership on the 1st of January, 1880, was 26, when the officers were O. W. Rowland, P. M. W.; Albert Robinson, M. W.; G. M. Koons, G. F.; S. M. Wilkie, O.; W. H. Mason, Recorder; B. F. Heckert, Financier; M. J. McEntee, Receiver; R. A. Whitman, G.; P. G. Forsyth, I. W.; A. E. Quick, O. W. Regular sessions are held every Thursday.

*Martin Lodge, No. 18, A. Y. M.*—This lodge was organized in 1874, with 10 members, L. R. Roberts being W. M.; Jonathan Grinage, S. W.; and B. F. Roberts, J. W. The membership is now 19. L. R. Roberts is W. M.; Edward Cable, S. W.; and Francis Smith, J. W.

*Paw Paw Lodge, No. 30, Knights of Honor.*—The society just named was organized Dec. 1, 1877, with 13 members, B. F. Stearns being D.; John Ihling, P. D.; and F. B. Kelly, R. The membership is now 22, and the officers are A. J. Mills, D.; H. Legrave, V. D.; C. W. Ward, A. D.; H. A. Rogers, G.; J. D. Sherman, T.; B. F. Stearns, R.; H. S. Williams, F. R.; L. C. Woodman, Chaplain. Regular sessions are held the first and third Thursdays of each month.

*Paw Paw Grange, No. 10, P. of H.*—The Paw Paw section of the Patrons of Husbandry was organized Dec. 31, 1872, with about 20 members. The Masters to the present time have been Joseph Gilman, J. J. Woodman, T. R. Harrison, David Woodman (2d), A. C. Glidden, T. R. Harrison (second term), and J. C. Gould. The present officers are J. C. Gould, M.; S. D. Searls, O.; D. Woodman (2d), L.; A. C. Glidden, Chap.; James Clancey, Treas.; O. H. P. Sheldon, Sec.; Peter Brummel, G.; H. D. Sherrod, Steward; M. Buskirk, Assistant Steward.

*Blue Ribbon Club.*—At a meeting of seven friends of temperance, held in Dickson's harness-shop in the year 1878, the Paw Paw Blue Ribbon Club was organized, for the sole object of promoting the cause of total abstinence, its seven founders having previously been members of the Red Ribbon Club (since dissolved), from which they had withdrawn in consequence of their dissatisfaction with its management. The Blue Ribbon Club increased in strength rapidly from the outset, and down to Jan. 1, 1880, had received full 400 members, of whom there were on that date 334 in active membership, inclusive of 54 in the children's department. Weekly meetings are held in the Opera-House, at which pleasant literary entertainments are presented to the public free of charge. The present officers are E. E. Rowland, President; Jared Loveland, First Vice-President; Charles Stevens, Second Vice-President; Miss E. E. Crane, Recording Secretary; E. H. Lindsley, Financial Secretary; C. C. Hoppin, Treasurer; and Frank Rawson, Marshal.

*The Opera-House.*—In 1876, George W. Longwell bought the building previously used for thirty-two years as a Methodist church and transformed it into a commodious and tastefully-appointed theatre. It has a seating capacity of 600, is supplied with a gallery, and has a stage well furnished with scenery and mechanical appliances.

*Library and Literary Association.*—An institution was organized in January, 1880, for the purpose of providing a public library and reading-room, and has received at the outset such encouragement as to give it a strong prospect of success.

#### PROSPECT HILL CEMETERY.

On the 24th of March, 1859, the Prospect Hill Cemetery Association was organized, for the purpose of providing a public cemetery on Prospect Hill. Land was accordingly purchased there and handsomely laid out with lawns, smooth drives, walks, and other attractive improvements. I. W. Willard was chosen president, Elisha Durkee clerk, and T. A. Granger treasurer. Prospect Hill is one of the highest elevations in Van Buren County. Upon its summit, in 1875, Mr. I. W. Willard erected an observatory 127 feet high, from which, on a clear day, it is said may be seen the waters of Lake Michigan and as many as thirty villages. The cemetery, which now covers an area of 30 acres, has many natural beauties, and is adorned with costly monuments. The present officers of the association are F. W. Selleck, President; J. W. Van Fossen, Clerk; and G. J. Hudson, Treasurer.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES IN THE TOWNSHIP.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—The first sermon (of which there is any present recollection) heard in Paw Paw was delivered by Rev. Junia Warner, Jr., a Methodist Episcopal elder of Alcona, in April, 1835, in Hinckley's blacksmith-shop. From that time until 1839, Mr. Warner preached frequently in the village, as did occasionally traveling preachers from Kalamazoo and Silver Creek.

In the fall of 1835, Rev. J. T. Robe, in charge of the Kalamazoo mission, organized a Methodist Episcopal class in Paw Paw, with the following members: Theophilus and Charlotte Baugs, Junia Warner, Jr., Arminda Warner, W. Newcomb, Clarissa Newcomb, David Thorp, Junia



Warner, Sr., Philura Warner, Sellick Longwell, Nancy Longwell, John Lyle, Oliver and Avis Warner, Horace and Susan Bonfoey, John K. and Emeline Bingham. Of the foregoing, two are still members of the church, namely, Arminda Warner, aged seventy-five, and Charlotte Bangs, aged eighty-one. David Thorp, who was the leader of the first class, offered his log chair-shop on the west side of the river as a place of worship. After using it some time the class went into a framed house owned by Myron Hoskins. Afterwards the village school-house was used, and in 1844 a church building was erected upon the site of the one now in use. The first church trustees were Theophilus Bangs, Julia Warner, Jr., Oliver Warner, Horace Bonfoey, and John Lyle.

Among the earliest pastors were Revs. T. P. McCool, S. S. Williams, E. Kellogg, and H. B. Beers. The church was at first attached to the Laporte district, Indiana Conference, afterwards to the Michigan district, in the same Conference, and later still to the Kalamazoo and Niles districts. The corner-stone of the present handsome house of worship was laid Aug. 9, 1876. The structure, which cost \$6600, was dedicated Dec. 17, 1876. Soon afterwards a union meeting was held in it, when 75 persons were received into the Methodist Church, and 70 into the Presbyterian. Rev. J. K. Stark was the Methodist and Rev. T. D. Marsh the Presbyterian pastor.

During the forty-four years of its existence the church has received into membership upwards of 2000 persons. The membership on the 1st of January, 1880, was 160, Rev. S. B. Mills being then the pastor in charge. The trustees are James Bale, Thomas Adriance, S. H. Blackman, C. A. Young, A. J. Sorter, John Walker, H. H. Hurlbut, and E. M. Snow. The class-leaders are C. M. Gilson, James Abrams, and Samuel Qua. The Sunday-school is in charge of C. A. Young, and has an average attendance of about 80.

*First Baptist Church.*—On the 21st of April, 1838, a few Baptists living in Paw Paw village met to talk about organizing a Baptist Church. Stafford Godfrey was chosen chairman, and William D. Baldwin clerk of the meeting. As a result the First Baptist Church of Layfayette was then formed, with the following six members: Stafford Godfrey and wife, William D. Baldwin and wife, E. H. Niles, and Ursula Conklin. E. H. Niles was chosen clerk, and Stafford Godfrey and William D. Baldwin deacons. Elder Hall, of Kalamazoo, was invited to preach once in four weeks. During the first year five members were added, namely, Archibald Buys and wife, Luther Branch, and Henry G. Monroe and wife.

On the 20th of March, 1841, the name of the organization was changed to "The Van Buren County Church, located at Paw Paw and Brush Creek," the reason being that worship was held at Brush Creek, as well as Paw Paw.

In 1844, the church being controlled by residents of Lawrence township, the Paw Paw members withdrew, and on the 8th of August in that year eight persons met in Paw Paw, at the house of Elder M. Clark, and organized the First Baptist Church of Paw Paw. The eight persons were Elder M. Clark, Stafford Godfrey, Alonzo Sherman, Matilda Engle, Lucy Ann Sherman, Jane Woodman, El-

mira Baker, and Jane Legrave. The records do not indicate that the church employed any regular pastor for the first few years, but show that occasional supplies were provided. The school-house was used for services, as was the court-house. An attempt was made to build a house of worship in 1848, but it was not successful.

Between 1850 and 1853 meetings were held but seldom, but in the latter year there was a renewal of interest. The membership increased to 37, and Rev. J. T. R. Jones was engaged as pastor.

In October, 1855, Elder Alfred Handy succeeded Elder Jones as pastor, and remained until 1859.

On the 9th of September, 1857, the corner-stone of the brick church now in use was laid, and within a brief period the house was occupied for worship, services having previously been held in a building in Main Street now used as a part of Harris' carriage-factory. The pastors since 1860 have been Elders Dunham, Walden, Maybin, Purrett, Galpin, Haydon, Stephenson, Choate, Heritage, and Wilkie. Rev. Mr. Wilkie, the last minister, retired in August, 1879, since which time the church has been without a pastor. The church membership on the 1st of January, 1880, was about 80. The deacons were then Stafford Godfrey, J. S. Cogswell, and Eli Wise. The church trustees are N. Grover, A. Sherman, R. B. Lane, A. M. Palmer, and J. C. Evert.

*Christian (or Disciple) Church.*—From an old church record dated March 25, 1843, is taken the subjoined entry: "We, the undersigned, members of the Church of Christ, having met at the dwelling of Brother Loyal Crane, for the purpose of setting in order the things that remain, have proceeded to do so by appointing Brothers James Crane and Loyal Crane bishops (elders), and Brothers Asahel S. Downing and Samuel Turner deacons. James Crane, Loyal Crane, Samuel Turner, Asahel S. Downing, Alonzo Crane, Daniel Abbott, James B. Crane, Almon B. Corey."

It would appear from the foregoing that an organization had been effected previous to the meeting above mentioned, and according to the best evidence the date of that organization was in February, 1842. Besides those above named as members, the following joined the church at the meeting of March 25, 1843: Rheuma Barnum, Sally Ann Crane, Hannah Downing, Alonzo J. Abbott, Eliza Crane, Ann Turner, Sarah Ann Barnum, Susannah Lee, Sally Armstrong.

At a church-meeting held in the school-house at Paw Paw, March 30, 1844, James Crane and Asahel S. Downing were appointed elders, Samuel Turner and Loyal Crane deacons, and Edwin Barnum and Loyal Crane evangelists. The first preacher was Rev. Mr. Martin, a missionary, who preached only at extended intervals. In 1858 the society purchased the meeting-house previously used by the Baptists, and in 1861 the church edifice now in use was completed and occupied. At the close of that year the clerk reported that the membership was 234, that 101 had been admitted during the year, that 11 had been dismissed, that 3 had been excluded, and that 11 had "gone to the war."

After Rev. Mr. Martin's time, among those who served the church as pastors were Rev. Messrs. Martindale, Miller, Anderson, Roe, Wilcox, Lane, Jackson, Spencer, Frame, Crane, Ebert, Collins, Russell, Searls, and Brooks. Rev.

Theodore Brooks, now the pastor, entered upon his charge in 1878.

The membership is now 219, and in the Sunday-school (of which James Crane is superintendent) there are 13 teachers and an average attendance of 102 pupils. The church elders are David Woodman (2d), J. W. Ball, and N. P. Conger. The deacons are A. S. Downing (chosen March 25, 1843), M. P. Allen, S. Shafer, and J. F. Bul-lard.

*Free-Will Baptist Church.*—The Free-Will Baptist Church of Paw Paw was organized Feb. 13, 1841, in School District No. 2, in the township of Antwerp, near Paw Paw village. The first members were Samuel Gilman, Judith Gilman, Abigail Woodman, David Woodman, Joseph Butler, Laura Butler, James Lee, Hannah Lee, Roxanna Lee, Susan Morrison, Silas Breed, and Anna Gray. The records mention the election of Silas Breed as the first clerk, but are silent as to the election of deacons. Those who have served the church as pastors to the present are Revs. Daniel Osborne, J. H. Darling, L. J. Whitcomb, Stephen Bathrick, G. P. Blanchard, G. P. Linderman, and J. B. Drew, the latter being the present pastor, who began his services Sept. 1, 1878. Three hundred and eight persons in all have been received into the church since its organization. The membership on the 1st of January, 1880, was 200.

Worship was continued in the Antwerp school-house and other convenient places until the completion of the present edifice, which was dedicated in 1859.

The deacons of the church are Philip Sherrod and O. H. P. Sheldon, the latter being also the clerk. The Sunday-school, in charge of Edwin Douglass, has a membership of 150 and an average attendance of 90.

*First Presbyterian Church.*—The First Presbyterian Church of Paw Paw was organized in the autumn of 1843, at the residence of Edmund Smith. The loss of the early records has rendered it impossible to reproduce the names of all the first members, but the memory of old residents supplies the names of some of them, as follows: Mr. and Mrs. Daniel Van Antwerp, Salmon Hunt and his daughters Mary and Margaret (one of them, now Mrs. N. M. Pugsley, being still a member of the church), Mrs. Edmund Smith, Mr. and Mrs. Elias Harwick, Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Mills.

The first elders were Daniel Van Antwerp and Samuel Mills. The first trustees of the society, elected June 24, 1844, were Daniel Van Antwerp, Salmon Hunt, Samuel Mills, A. K. Axtell, Dwight C. Grimes, Lorin Darling, A. V. Pantland, Samuel Grimes, and Edmund Smith.

During 1844, Rev. James McLaurine was chosen to be the first pastor, who served about three years. After being then absent a year (during which time Rev. Mr. Davidson supplied the pulpit), he returned and remained two years. He closed his labors in 1850, and was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Holmes, who was followed in 1852 by Rev. Oliver W. Mather. For a brief season, in 1855, Rev. Mr. Whitney was pastor, and about the beginning of 1856 Rev. H. C. Tuttle entered upon the charge. Rev. Norman Kellogg succeeded him in 1859, and remained six years. In 1865, Rev. Albert E. Hastings began his pastorate, and in 1868

Rev. O. H. Barnard became the pastor, and remained until 1871. He was followed by Revs. N. Otis, C. R. Wilkins, and T. D. Marsh, the latter being now in charge.

During about a year after its organization worship was held in the ball-room of the Exchange Hotel, and in 1845 a church edifice was erected near the court-house. In 1856 the building was destroyed by fire, and in 1858 was replaced by the present structure, which was dedicated March 3d of that year. The church has now a membership of 140, and the Sunday-school an average attendance of 90. The present elders are Robert Morrison, N. M. Pugsley, Lyman Tuttle, John S. Tuckey, E. P. Mills, Chandler Richards, John W. Free, Henry Randolph, Thomas Tuckey.

*St. Mark's (Protestant Episcopal) Church.*—St. Mark's parish was organized at the court-house in Paw Paw Feb. 22, 1851, by A. W. Broughton, Anthony Cooley, Thomas J. Pinnock, Charles Selleck, I. W. Willard, Williamson Mason, T. W. Melchor, George B. Sherwood, J. R. Baker, E. S. Smith, George W. Ocobock, O. F. Parker, R. J. Merrill, Henry Ismon, H. L. Eggleston, A. V. Pantland, Peter Gremps, S. T. Conway, J. K. Pugsley, B. Hurd, A. Wilder, William Hill, and Benoni Hall. At the second meeting, March 11th, Theodore P. Sheldon and Thomas J. Pinnock were chosen wardens, and I. W. Willard, George B. Sherwood, G. W. Ocobock, Anthony Cooley, J. K. Pugsley, and B. Hurd as vestrymen. Of the vestrymen the only one known to be living is J. K. Pugsley.

On the 3d of June, 1851, Bishop McCoskry gave his canonical consent to the organization of the church, and on the 1st of July Rev. V. Spalding was called to act as rector, at a salary of \$200 per year, it being understood that the Missionary Society would furnish him \$200 more. Mr. Spalding held his first service in an abandoned store, and used the counter as his pulpit. In February, 1852, a cooper-shop belonging to the Messrs. Grimes, and previously used by the Congregational Society, was leased, at a rental of \$1 per week, being occupied about a year. That house of worship is now a portion of Harris' carriage-factory. Mr. Spalding preached until December, 1852, and after that the church organization ceased its active existence for a period of thirteen years.

On the 11th of January, 1865, Rev. Dr. C. A. Foster, of St. John's Church, Kalamazoo, revived St. Mark's Church with considerable success, and remained in charge until January, 1866. Rev. Darius Barker was then chosen rector, and served as such until December, 1877, when Rev. George P. Schetky, the present rector, began his service. Shortly after Mr. Barker entered upon his pastorate he built a commodious addition to his residence in Paw Paw, in which the church met for worship until the erection, in 1876, of the edifice now in use.

The church membership is now 47. The wardens are D. C. Coleman and J. K. Pugsley; the vestrymen are C. J. Nash, F. E. Stevens, J. Davey, A. J. Mills, J. W. Van Fossen, and William Pugsley. The Sunday-school has an attendance of 60, and is in charge of the pastor. The stations in St. Mark's parish are Paw Paw, Lawrence, Hartford, Bangor, Breedsville, South Haven, Pine Grove, Kendall, Lawton, and Decatur.

*St. Mary's Church of the Immaculate Conception (Cath-*

*olic*).—As early as 1848, Father Barron, of Notre Dame, at South Bend, used to visit Paw Paw occasionally for the purpose of holding mass for the benefit of the families of Pee Pee Yah and other Indians. In 1855, when the village contained seven or eight Catholic families, Father La Belle, of Kalamazoo, held mass in the residence of James Bennett, and came after that about once a month for several years, holding services generally at Mr. Bennett's house. After Father La Belle's death, there came Father Cappon, of Niles, Fathers Quinn, Tierney, and Murray, of Kalamazoo, and Father Roper, of Silver Creek, during which period Paw Paw remained a mission in Kalamazoo parish. It was then created a parish by the name of St. Mary's of the Immaculate Conception, with Rev. John Wernert as the first resident priest, who still holds that position. The present house of worship was commenced during Father La Belle's time, but was not completed until 1872. The attendance includes about 50 families. The missions attached to the parish are Arlington and Decatur. The church trustees are James Doyle, William Ryan, and William Hough.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first village school in Paw Paw was taught by Miss Roxa Agard, in the summer of 1835, and there being no better school-house available, Rodney Hinckley's blacksmith-shop was utilized for that purpose. The appointments of that school-house consisted principally of a few slab seats, but the scholars are said to have been quite as studious and zealous as in some more pretentious institutions. There were perhaps ten scholars when the attendance was at its best, but there were times when not more than four or five would respond to roll-call. Of that chosen band of ambitious girls and boys, those known to be living are Mrs. Alonzo Shults (a daughter of Peter Gremps) and Jonathan J. Woodman, of Paw Paw, and Isaac Hinckley and his two sisters (children of Rodney Hinckley), now living at South Haven.

The next summer (1836) the village school was taught by Melissa Warner, in a log shanty on the west side of the river, just north of where Mason's planing-mill now stands. That school had 15 or 20 pupils. During the summer of 1836, Williamson Mason and Joseph Royes built a school-house on Gremps Street, and in the fall it was occupied, Lorenzo Cate being the first teacher in it, and being also the first male teacher employed in the village. That building was used not only as a school-house, but also as a court-house, and on Sundays it became a house of worship.

The condition of the public schools of the township on the 1st of September, 1879, according to the official report for the year 1879, may be learned from the subjoined table:

Number of districts (whole, 5; fractional, 4)....	9
" " scholars of school age .....	849
Average attendance.....	756
Value of school property.....	\$31,300
Number of teachers .....	31
Amount paid teachers.....	\$1,973
Total expenses for the year.....	\$9,721

The school directors for 1879 were J. Andrews, W. Wilson, G. T. Sherrod, E. E. Crane, Charles H. Butler, H. Hinckley, B. Odell, W. M. Shepard, George L. Tuttle.

*Paw Paw Union School.*—The building now used as a town-hall was originally the union school, and although additions were made to its accommodations as the demand for room increased, there was still a lack of space, and in December, 1868, the district resolved to build a brick school-house, to cost \$25,000, and to borrow the money required. The result was the present elegant and imposing structure which stands at the head of Main Street, and which is justly the pride of the town. The entire cost of ground, building, and furniture was \$40,000. The edifice was begun in the winter of 1868-69, and was opened for use in September, 1870. It contains six departments,—high school, grammar school, two intermediate, and two primary departments,—in which the aggregate average attendance is 414.

The members of the school board are E. O. Briggs, Josiah Andrews, G. J. Hudson, Andrew Richards, Aaron Van Auken, and George W. Longwell.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

##### ALBERT HARRISON.

This gentleman was born in the town of Tyre, Seneca Co., N. Y., April 19, 1828, and was the fourth in a family of seven children,—four sons and three daughters. His father, Jonas Harrison, was a native of New Jersey. His mother, Hannah (Markham) Harrison, was a native of England, and came to the United States in 1812. She is still living, aged eighty-four, but her husband is deceased. In the fall of 1847 the family came to Van Buren Co., Mich.

Albert Harrison, who had remained at home until he was twenty-one, worked for two years thereafter at monthly wages, and in 1850 purchased land on section 36 in Paw Paw township, which he subsequently exchanged for forty acres on section 16, where his father-in-law now lives. Sept. 7, 1856, he was married to Esther E., daughter of Hiram I. and Elizabeth Southwell, she being the fourth in a family of seven children,—four sons and three daughters. She was born in Cayuga Co., N. Y., May 3, 1836. Her parents, who were both natives of that State, came to Michigan in the spring of 1855. Mr. Harrison purchased one hundred and twelve acres of land, which is all under improvement. As they have no children of their own they adopted an orphan girl at the age of two and a half years, who is now living with them, aged twenty-one, and could scarcely be dearer to them if she were their own daughter. Mr. and Mrs. Harrison are consistent and influential members of the Disciples Church, with which Mrs. Harrison united when she was seventeen years of age. Mr. Harrison is a Republican in politics, but never took an active part in the political field, and has never sought for nor held an important office.





PETER GREMPs.

## PETER GREMPs,

whose portrait, together with that of his wife, appears on this page, was born in the town of Palatine, Montgomery Co., N. Y., May 12, 1801, and was the youngest and the only son in a family of six children. His parents, John P. and Nancy (Belinger) Gremps, were also natives of the town of Palatine. John Gremps was a soldier of the Revolution, and was wounded in action. He died about the year 1815. Mrs. Nancy Gremps died in 1837.

After his father's death Peter Gremps remained at home with his mother. In 1820, when but nineteen years of age, he was married to Christina H., daughter of Peter and Elizabeth Houck, natives of Schoharie Co., N. Y., and lived on the old homestead until 1835. His attention was attracted to the wonderful tide of emigration which swept westward, and he decided to join the throng who were seeking homes in the great West. To decide was to act, and he came to Michigan *via* the Erie Canal to Buffalo, thence by lake to Detroit. At the latter place he met his son, John Gremps, and a nephew named Arnold Vedder, who had made the journey with teams across Canada. Two weeks later they arrived at the site of Paw Paw, Van Buren Co. Mr. Gremps purchased land on section 12, and became one of the founders of Paw Paw village. He was its first postmaster, which was the only office he could be induced to accept. He was ever industrious, frugal, and genial, and trained his family to similar habits. He at first accumulated but a moderate quantity of worldly goods, but finally became possessed of an abundance. In company with Messrs. Willard and Daniels, he built the first grist-mill at Paw Paw, the same which is now standing. His principal business was always that of a farmer. Mr. and Mrs. Gremps were the parents of six children, as follows: John, born in 1821, died in 1861; Ann Eliza, born in 1823, died in 1847; Rosanna, born Dec. 14, 1825, married to Alonzo Shultz, May 25, 1854, and now living with her husband in the village of Paw Paw; Peter H., born July 17, 1828, married to Caroline S. Durkee, Jan. 16, 1868;



MRS. PETER GREMPs.

Margaret, born in March, 1830, died April 2, 1862; Nancy M., born in March, 1833, married to Daniel Boone, June 5, 1868, and now living in Adrian, Mich. Peter H. Gremps occupies a portion of the old farm, but not the old homestead. He has one child, Belle, born Dec. 24, 1871, and is a worthy representative of his honored sire, who died March 29, 1874. Mrs. Peter Gremps, Sr., died April 24, 1860.

## ANDERSON C. WEBB.

The father of this gentleman was a native of New York, and was born July 10, 1811. He married, in the State of Ohio, Julia Cone, who was born in Connecticut, May 21, 1815. They are both now living in Kansas.

Anderson C. Webb is the third in a family of seven children, and was born March 16, 1839. Until he was fourteen years old he lived with his parents in Ohio, and came from there with them to Michigan, settling in Paw Paw township, Van Buren Co. He remained at home most of the time, assisting his parents, until he was twenty-six years of age, and on the 2d of February, 1865, was married to Miss Laura M. Rhodes, daughter of Henry W. and Laura M. Rhodes. She was born in Paw Paw, June 3, 1843, her father being one of the pioneers of the place. Mr. and Mrs. Webb are the parents of four children, as follows: Dora M., born June 8, 1866; Frank J., born Oct. 26, 1868; Cora M., born Feb. 12, 1872; Fred A., born April 28, 1878. On the 24th of October, 1865, Mr. and Mrs. Webb settled on the farm where they are now living, a view of which will be found in this work. The place, which contains one hundred and forty acres, was but partially improved when Mr. Webb occupied it, but is now a very pleasant home. Mrs. Webb is the oldest in a family of five children; her parents are yet residing in Paw Paw. Mr. Webb is a Republican in politics, and he and his wife are members of the Free-Will Baptist Church, with which they united in 1870. Mr. Webb received his education at the common schools, although for a short time he attended the Agricultural College.



HENRY W. RHODES.

## HENRY W. RHODES

was born in the town of Burrilville, R. I., Nov. 8, 1811, and was the second in a family of six children,—four sons and two daughters,—who are all living at present. Mr. Rhodes' father, Henry Rhodes, was born in Providence, R. I., in 1783, and died in Paw Paw, Mich., March 24, 1852. The latter's wife, Demaris (Parker) Rhodes, was born in Rhode Island in 1782, and died in Paw Paw, in 1868. William Rhodes, the grandfather of Henry W., was a sea-captain during the Revolutionary war. The parents of Mrs. Henry Rhodes, Sr., Mr. and Mrs. Parker, were natives of England, and Quakers.

Henry W. Rhodes removed to Vermont with his parents when eight years old, and remained there until he was twenty-two, assisting in the home duties and taking care of his father and mother. In the summer of 1833 he proceeded to Monroe Co., N. Y., returning to Vermont in the winter following, and coming thence to Michigan. In October, 1835, he arrived in the latter State, and in November purchased one hundred and sixty acres of land on section 8, in the township of Paw Paw, Van Buren Co. May 18, 1836, he was married to Laura M., daughter of Joseph and Achsah (Moore) Luce, and widow of Jeremiah Trumble. She was born in Monroe Co., N. Y., on the 22d of April, 1813, and was the fourth in a family of eight children,—three sons and five daughters. Mr. and Mrs. Rhodes were married in Monroe Co., N. Y., where he had returned for her. Her father, Joseph Luce, was born in Massachusetts, June 11, 1782, and died April 9, 1847. Her mother, Achsah (Moore) Luce, was born in New Hampshire, Feb. 9, 1780, and died April 5, 1863. To Henry W. Rhodes and wife have been born the following children, viz.: Laura M., born June 3, 1843; William H., born Dec. 3, 1844; Charles P., born May 1, 1846, died Oct. 18, 1850; Frank W., born July 19, 1849; Julia S., born March 26, 1853. Laura M. is the wife of A. C. Webb, of Paw Paw; William H. married Mary E. Roeney, of Philadelphia; Frank W. married Jenny Salt, a native of Canada, and resides on the old homestead in



MRS. HENRY W. RHODES.

Paw Paw; and Julia S. became the wife of James H. Wilder, who has settled on a farm in Dakota Territory.

Henry W. Rhodes is by trade a mason, and his start in life was made with the trowel, his wife keeping house in the woods, with no neighbors nearer than a distance of three-fourths of a mile. The forest was thronged with wolves, whose nightly howls woke the echoes far and near. The red man visited the lone cabin occasionally to beg for victuals, and Mrs. Rhodes' recollection is vivid regarding the experiences of life in the Michigan wilderness. Mr. Rhodes began with the proceeds of his summer's work, less than two hundred dollars, and became an extensive owner and dealer in real estate, owning, at one time, seven hundred acres of land, aside from other tracts to which he held tax titles. He has at the present time considerable wild land in Kansas.

Mr. and Mrs. Rhodes have been connected with the Christian Church since 1844. In politics Mr. Rhodes is a Republican, and has often been selected to fill office in his township. He is numbered among the energetic class who have acquired prominence as self-made men, and is now enjoying the fruits of his labor through more than forty years in the "beautiful peninsula."

## EDWIN BARNUM,

whose portrait is given in connection with this sketch, was born in Mentz, Cayuga Co., N. Y., March 31, 1814, and was the fifth in a family of seven children,—four sons and three daughters. He assisted in the duties of home until he was twenty-one, and in the spring of 1835 came to Paw Paw township, Van Buren Co., Mich., in which he lived, with the exception of a few brief periods, until his death, which occurred Aug. 24, 1875. Soon after his arrival in this State he located land on section 10 in Paw Paw, and kept "bachelor's hall" for one year. He boarded during the remaining time until 1840, and on the 21st of March, in the latter year, was married to Sarah Ann, daughter of John and Mary Lyle, who had moved from the State of

New York in the fall of 1835. Mrs. Barnum was born Nov. 5, 1820, and was the third in a family of ten children,—five sons and five daughters. Of these, eight are now living in Van Buren Co., and two in Cass Co., Mich. Mr. and Mrs. Barnum have had but one child,—Isaac, born May 19, 1842. At an early age he evinced extraor-



EDWIN BARNUM.

dinary talent; being of a delicate constitution, he adopted the study of the law, in which profession he would have without doubt distinguished himself, had his health permitted. He is now in Colorado, seeking a new lease of life among the rocky peaks and pure, dry atmosphere of that State.

At the age of twenty-nine years, Edwin Barnum embraced religion, and united with the Christian Church, in which he was soon licensed to preach. He labored earnestly in this sparsely-settled region with an acknowledged power of doing good. His purity of life, genial temper, liberality, and great kindness of heart made him many friends. In language he was eloquent, and in principle correct. He held the office of county treasurer eight consecutive years, and filled, very acceptably, the office of supervisor several terms. For thirty-two years he was a consistent member of the Church of Christ. His faithful and devoted wife, now wearing the garb of widowhood, is living in the village of Paw Paw, surrounded by the comforts which she assisted her husband to accumulate.

#### DAVID WOODMAN,

the second son of the late Joseph Woodman, was born in March, 1818, in Wheelock, Caledonia Co., Vt. In the summer of 1831 he removed, with his father's family, to Riga, Monroe Co., N. Y., remaining there, laboring upon the farm summers and attending the district school winters, until the spring of 1835, when his father and family removed to Michigan, leaving him with Joseph Luce, upon a rented farm. In September, 1835, he, with Mr. Luce and family and four other families, took up their line of march

for Michigan. The party consisted of twenty-nine persons; their outfit was five covered wagons, each drawn by two pair of sturdy oxen; nine cows were driven along, which furnished milk and butter for use on the way; it was known as the "big ox-train," and its progress was a matter of record at that time. It crossed the Niagara at Queens-town, arriving in Detroit fourteen days afterwards. It then wended its way westward, and arrived at Paw Paw in October, the journey occupying twenty-eight days. Paw Paw at that time consisted of a saw-mill, a very small hotel, a post-office, and three or four log huts or dwellings. The entire county of Van Buren at that time was included in the township of Lafayette, now Paw Paw. Young Woodman rendered his father efficient aid in improving the farm and erecting permanent buildings. As the spring of 1836 approached he, with his brother, prepared for sugar-making on section 33, and with two exceptions he made sugar at the same place for more than thirty years. At the time he opened his camp the adjoining forest was one vast Indian sugar-camp.

Several wigwags being in close proximity to his own, he became quite familiar with the Indian language and their traits of character, one of which was honesty; that was always strictly adhered to. He well knew the old chiefs Pokagon and Pee Pee Yaw, and the old warrior, Shavehead, who was supposed to be one hundred years old, and boasted that he had killed a hundred men. In the spring of 1836, Mr. Woodman made a canoe at his sugar-camp, and, with the assistance of two others, the canoe was "backed" to Eagle Lake, about a mile distant. They were, no doubt, the first white men that ever floated upon that beautiful lake, and it was this party that gave the present name to that sheet of water. A pair of bald eagles had built an enormous nest in the forks of a large whitewood-tree standing on its southern shore, hence it was called *Eagle Lake*. Mr. Woodman was present at the first election ever held in Van Buren County, also at the first Circuit Court. He was also present at the organization of the township of Antwerp. He held a second lieutenant's commission (which bears the name of Stevens T. Mason) in a company of riflemen, also a first lieutenant's commission, signed by William Woodbridge, Governor, dated 1840. He commenced on the farm where he now resides in 1839, keeping what was called "bachelor's hall," working on his place summers and at other vocations winters. He frequently passed an entire week without seeing a single person. In 1841 he visited his old home in New England, and returned, thankful that he had found a better place than old Vermont. In the mean time he had cleared away the forest and erected a comfortable dwelling. He also built a house on some land he had purchased on the east side of the village of Paw Paw, and in May, 1844, he married Miss Jane Harris, who, about two years previous, had arrived from Wheatland, Monroe Co., N. Y., and was now a resident of Antwerp. They remained on their place in Paw Paw until April, 1845, when they removed to their farm. Early in the spring of 1852, Mr. Woodman removed his family to the village of Paw Paw, and, in company with his two brothers and brother-in-law, made a trip to California, their teams leaving Paw Paw March 16th, and arriving on Feather



River the 27th of July, making the journey in one hundred and thirty-five days. Mr. Woodman returned in the spring of 1853, by the way of Panama, Kingston, Jamaica, and New York, arriving home in June, 1853. He immediately took possession of his farm, purchased one hundred and fifty acres adjoining, and, with his usual energy, commenced improving his new purchase and preparing for building. His house had burned during his absence, and a small, rough structure had been erected in its place. He built his present residence in 1857, and in the summer of 1864, accompanied by his wife, he again visited Vermont. They traveled extensively in Maine, Massachusetts, and New Hampshire, and returned through New York, visiting the early home of Mrs. Woodman. In 1866 they visited his brother in Kansas, traveling through Illinois, Missouri, Nebraska, Iowa, and Wisconsin, journeying over four hundred miles by stage and wagon. In 1876 they visited Washington, crossing over to Arlington Heights, where the nation's dead are buried, and where stands the mansion of the rebel chieftain, R. E. Lee. They spent a week at the Centennial, and returned by the Lehigh Valley and Suspension Bridge.

Mr. and Mrs. Woodman have had five children: Celia, born in 1845; now in California. Edson, born in 1847; enlisted in the army in 1864; was with Sherman in his Southern campaigns; was wounded at Bentonville, and receives a pension from the government; he owns a fine farm adjoining his father's, and is a noted breeder of Percheron Norman horses. Emma, born in 1854, died at the age of three years. Jason, born in 1860, is a member of the junior class in the Agricultural College. Dora, born in 1862, is a student in the Paw Paw union school.

Mr. Woodman has been one of the most successful farmers in his township, his farm comprising about three hundred acres of choice land. He practices mixed husbandry, raising stock and all the staple varieties of grain. He is one of the principal stockholders in the First National Bank of Paw Paw, and has been since its organization. He has held various township offices; has been assessor, highway commissioner, justice of the peace, and is now supervisor of Paw Paw. He is also president of the Van Buren County Farmers' Mutual Fire Insurance Company; president of the Van Buren County Agricultural Society; director of the Western Michigan Agricultural and Industrial Society. He is also Master of the Van Buren County Pomona Grange. He is and has been for many years an elder in the Disciples Church of Paw Paw, a position he holds with honor to himself as well as to the church. He is now almost sixty-two years of age, enjoys perfect health, has never been confined to bed by sickness since he can remember; has only been visited by a physician, professionally, once, and that was to replace a dislocated shoulder, caused by a runaway accident. He has never used intoxicating liquors nor tobacco, believing both to be ruinous to health, destructive to property, and degrading to all using or trafficking in them.

#### PHILIP SHERROD

(a view of whose home appears in this work) was born in Erie Co., Pa., March 12, 1829, and was the third in a family of four children,—three sons and one daughter. His

father, Daniel Sherrod, was born Sept. 20, 1800, in Pennsylvania, and his mother in Lincoln Co., Ohio, in 1802. They were married in Ohio in June, 1824, Mr. Sherrod having then been in the latter State one year. The maiden name of Mrs. Daniel Sherrod was Rebecca Kyle. After their marriage they located at Erie, Pa., where Mr. Sherrod engaged in farming.

Philip Sherrod came to Michigan in 1848, and remained eighteen months, farming and attending school. In the spring of 1850 he returned to Pennsylvania, but in November, 1851, came again to Michigan, and purchased the place upon which he now resides, in the township of Paw Paw, Van Buren Co. May 2, 1852, he was married to Berryund, daughter of James and Hannah Lee, who were early settlers in Michigan. Mrs. Sherrod was born June 16, 1823, and was the ninth in a family of ten children,—seven sons and three daughters. Daniel Sherrod had purchased, through an agent, the land on which Philip now lives, the latter purchasing of his father. Upon his arrival in Michigan Mr. Sherrod found his means exhausted, and in order to pay for his land cut and sold saw-logs. The first year he occupied the place, he cleared seven acres and sowed it to wheat. Mr. Sherrod now has one hundred acres, including twenty which have been added to his original purchase. All is under excellent improvement. His residence is neat and commodious, and his out-buildings are ample. Mr. and Mrs. Sherrod are the parents of three children, as follows: Daniel, born Oct. 9, 1854, died Aug. 12, 1858; Lena, born March 12, 1871; and one who died in infancy, nameless.

In 1868, Mr. Sherrod and his wife united with the Free-Will Baptist Church, in which Mr. Sherrod is now a deacon and a trustee. He is, politically, a Democrat, never having acted with any other party. He has held the office of highway commissioner six years, and justice of the peace, to fill vacancy, two years. Rebecca, the first wife of Daniel Sherrod, died in February, 1833, and in February, 1835, Mr. Sherrod was married to Hannah Cole, who was a native of New York. Seven children were the fruit of this union. Mrs. Daniel Sherrod, aged seventy-nine, is living in this township.

Mr. and Mrs. Philip Sherrod enjoy the esteem and confidence of all their acquaintances. Their walks have been upright in life, and their industry and economy have built for them the home they now occupy, with all its comfortable surroundings.

#### WILLIAM H. LEE.

This gentleman, whose portrait appears in this work, was the third in a family of ten children,—six sons and four daughters,—and was born in Chenango Co., N. Y., July 18, 1812. His father, James Lee, was a native of New York, and his mother, Hannah (Church) Lee, of Vermont. At the age of fourteen years William Lee began to learn the trade of a mason with his father, and worked in that business with the latter until he was twenty-four. In April, 1836, he was married to Susanna Brown, who was born June 5, 1817. To them were born ten children, of whom five are now living, viz.: Harriet E., wife of Alma Mulligan, of Bangor; John S., now a resident of Nebraska;

Mrs. Hannah Payne, residing in Paw Paw township; Roxy S., wife of O. W. Baltzley, living in Nebraska; and Almira J., who is also living in Nebraska. In 1838, Mr. Lee came to Michigan and settled in the township of Paw Paw, Van Buren Co. His wife died Oct. 10, 1869, and on



WILLIAM H. LEE.

the 16th of October, 1870, he was married to Mrs. Eliza Howe, widow of W. Howe. Her genial temper and broad intelligence contribute greatly to make the life and home of Mr. Lee most happy. She was born Oct. 16, 1820, in New Hampshire, and was the tenth in a family of fourteen children. She came to Michigan in 1845. Her union with Mr. Howe was blessed by four children,—Harry T., born November 20, 1841; Susan, born April 20, 1844, now the wife of Charles Flanders, of Paw Paw village; Lucetta, born Dec. 22, 1849, the wife of Alvah A. Hutchins; William S., born March 30, 1852, died Dec. 29, 1853.

Mr. Lee has always followed his occupation as a mason, preferring it to agricultural labor. Although his facilities for acquiring an education were limited, his natural gifts and determined mind have thus far enabled him to succeed well in life, and sufficient means have been accumulated to keep him from want during the remainder of his life. He is an honored and respected citizen. Following the example of the members of his family on both sides, he early united with the Christian Church, of which he is still a consistent member.

#### JEREMIAH H. SIMMONS.

Mr. Simmons was born at Woodstock, Windsor Co., Vt., July 27, 1800, and was the second in a family of seven children,—three sons and four daughters. His father, Howland Simmons, and his mother, Experience (Dunham) Simmons, were both natives of Connecticut, and farmers by occupation.

When Jeremiah Simmons became of age he commenced learning the trade of cabinet-making. May 23, 1826, he was married to Miss Sarah B., daughter of Shadrach and Phebe (Goff) Phillips. Her father was a native of Rhode

Island, and her mother of Massachusetts. Mrs. Simmons was born Oct. 8, 1802, in Woodstock, Vt., and was the third in a family of six children,—two sons and four daughters. Mr. Simmons taught school in the East about nine years, and in the summer of 1836 came to Paw Paw,



JEREMIAH H. SIMMONS.

Van Buren Co., Mich., arriving on the 31st of July. He located eighty acres in the township of Paw Paw, and for two years succeeding his arrival worked at his trade. He built the first carding-mill that was erected in the county, and about 1854 engaged in the hardware business, having previously sold his interest in the carding-mill. Mr. and Mrs. Simmons became the parents of the following children, viz.: Orville C., born in Woodstock, Vt., Oct. 17, 1828; Irene P., born in Paw Paw township, May 15, 1838, now the wife of I. W. Vanfossen, of Paw Paw; and one (the first) who died in infancy. Mr. Simmons was a Democrat in politics, and a prominent man in his township and county. He held the positions of judge of probate, county clerk, register of deeds, and justice of the peace, and was one of the founders of the Masonic lodge at Paw Paw. He continued to live in this township until his death.

Orville C. Simmons was associated for some years with his father in the hardware business. He was married, Nov. 4, 1851, to Margaret Gremps, who bore him two children,—Clayton R., born Dec. 15, 1855, now living with his grandmother, S. B. Simmons; Ida M., born Dec. 15, 1858, now the wife of Frank Hudson, of Paw Paw. Mr. Simmons died in Paw Paw, May 4, 1869.

Miss Irene P. Simmons was married, June 23, 1858, to I. W. Vanfossen, who was born in Livingston County, N. Y., July 24, 1827, and came to Jackson County, Mich., with his father, in 1833. In 1854 he removed to Paw Paw, and commenced publishing the *Paw Paw Free Press*. Mr. and Mrs. Vanfossen are the parents of three children,—Zell, born March 18, 1864, died Oct. 29, 1869; Vern, born Feb. 21, 1872; Rena Ray, born July 4, 1875.

## HENRY WILSON

(a view of whose home and portraits of himself and wife appear in this volume) was born in Trumbull Co., Ohio, Aug. 18, 1821, and was the second in a family of seven children. His father, James M. Wilson, was born in New York, and his mother, Lydia (Trask) Wilson, in Vermont. The latter died in 1841, and the former in 1848. From the time Henry Wilson was eleven years of age, until he was seventeen, his father hired his services to different parties, and appropriated his earnings towards the support of the family. At the expiration of the time stated, in 1837, he came to Michigan, and found employment with Judge Barry, in Lenawee County, at fourteen dollars per month, which was then the highest wages paid for common labor. He remained with the judge eighteen months, earning sufficient to pay for forty acres of land he purchased in the fall of 1837, at four dollars per acre, and having a balance on hand. He walked thirty-eight miles for the purpose of placing his deed on record, and then proceeded, still on foot, to Toledo, where he took passage on a boat for Erie, Pa. Upon his return home he found his mother in failing health, and entered the employ of Charles Reed, who lived near. In trading away his Michigan land he was the victim of misplaced confidence, and lost the whole, finding himself, at the age of twenty-one, forced to begin the battle anew. With a stout heart and willing hand he commenced work, and for three years was engaged, on contract, in chopping, clearing, and fencing. Oct. 24, 1844, he was married to Eliza O., daughter of Moses and Olive Olds, who was born March 30, 1824, and was the third in a family of four children. Her father was born in Genesee Co., N. Y., and her mother in Vermont, and previous to her marriage with Mr. Wilson they had removed to Pennsylvania. In the spring of 1846, Mr. Wilson came West with his wife, *via* the great lakes, stopping a few days in Illinois, and proceeding thence to Paw Paw, Van Buren Co., Mich., arriving with a capital of eighty dollars. For four weeks Mr. Wilson was employed by I. W. Willard and Daniel O. Dodge. About the last of May, 1846, he purchased forty acres of land on section 16, in Paw Paw township, paying for the same at the rate of five dollars per acre, and canceling one-fourth of the debt (fifty dollars) at the time. Within three days he built a log shanty, roofed it with "shakes," laid a hewed floor over one-half the room, and moved into it. His wife did the cooking out of doors for four months,—or until he could spare enough money, to buy a stove. During the spring and summer he was most of the time in the employ of others, but at late and early hours he worked upon his own place, and in time had cleared four acres, which he sowed to wheat. On one occasion, not having money enough to pay the postage on some letters which had come to his address in the post-office, he took his tools on his back, walked one and a half miles to Benoni Hall's, cut and split two hundred rails, received his pay, one dollar, returned home, and the same evening walked to Paw Paw for his letters. About this time, his supply of meat having failed, he walked one morning to Paw Paw, cut and split four cords of four-foot wood for I. W. Willard, received his pay in pork, and carried it home

in the evening of the same day. At another time he started for Paw Paw, three miles distant, with two bushels of wheat on his back, intending to have some milling done. When about half way he was overtaken by a team, and his burden was carried for him. In this manner he kept the wolf from the door until he could harvest a crop of his own, and since then his energy has been exerted in clearing and fencing his land, and at times increasing the extent of his possessions. He is now the owner of two hundred acres of land, one hundred and sixty being under the highest state of cultivation; has a fine lot of stock and excellent buildings, and is free from debt. His son Walter is settled on eighty acres in the immediate neighborhood, his younger son, Henry, remaining at home. Mr. and Mrs. Wilson are the parents of seven children: Eliza Jane, born Feb. 20, 1846, died March 30, 1864; Cornelia A., born May 9, 1848, died March 13, 1873; Warren H., born Aug. 30, 1850, died March 10, 1864; Walter H., born Aug. 18, 1854; Lowell H., born Aug. 13, 1856, died March 24, 1864; Cora J., born January 1, died March 21, 1864; Henry, born March 27, 1867. Mr. Wilson's education was limited to six months' tuition in the common schools, but he has always been able to transact successfully his own business and keep his accounts straight, and is emphatically a self-made man. By the aid of his faithful and most excellent wife, who has stood by him through sorrow, adversity, and every trial, he has been enabled to acquire a competence, and both are living to enjoy it. In religious matters Mr. Wilson is liberal, having due respect for the opinions of others, and in politics is a Jacksonian Democrat.

## G. F. HARRINGTON.

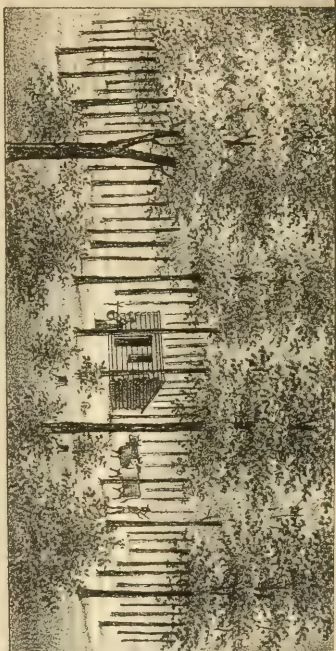
This gentleman was born April 25, 1827, in Oneida Co., N. Y., and was the second in a family of nine children,—six sons and three daughters. His father, H. C. Harrington, was born in Madison Co., N. Y., in 1804; his mother, Catherine (Marshall) Harrington, was a native of the same county, and was born the same year. Her grandfathers and his maternal grandmother were natives of Rhode Island, and his paternal grandmother was born in Vermont.

Until he was twenty-one years of age he worked on his father's farm, and after that was engaged for seven years in farming and dealing in produce. In the fall of 1855 he came to Michigan, in company with Rev. A. C. Tuttle, and purchased one hundred and thirty acres of land on section 10, Paw Paw township, Van Buren Co. Mr. Tuttle moved upon it, and Mr. Harrington boarded with him. In 1864, Mr. Harrington's father came from New York and purchased Mr. Tuttle's interest in the farm. On the 10th day of April, 1864, G. F. Harrington was married to Ruth M., daughter of Calvin and Emily Cross. She was born in Bangor, Mich., July 28, 1846, and is the fifth in a family of eight children,—three sons and five daughters. Mr. and Mrs. Harrington are the parents of the following children: Delos, born April 29, 1865, died Aug. 3, 1865; Edward J., born Oct. 6, 1866; Wayne Cross, born July 11, 1868; Fred, born Aug. 13, 1870; Lou, born Jan. 24, 1872; Harry C., born March 3, 1879, died Feb. 14, 1880.





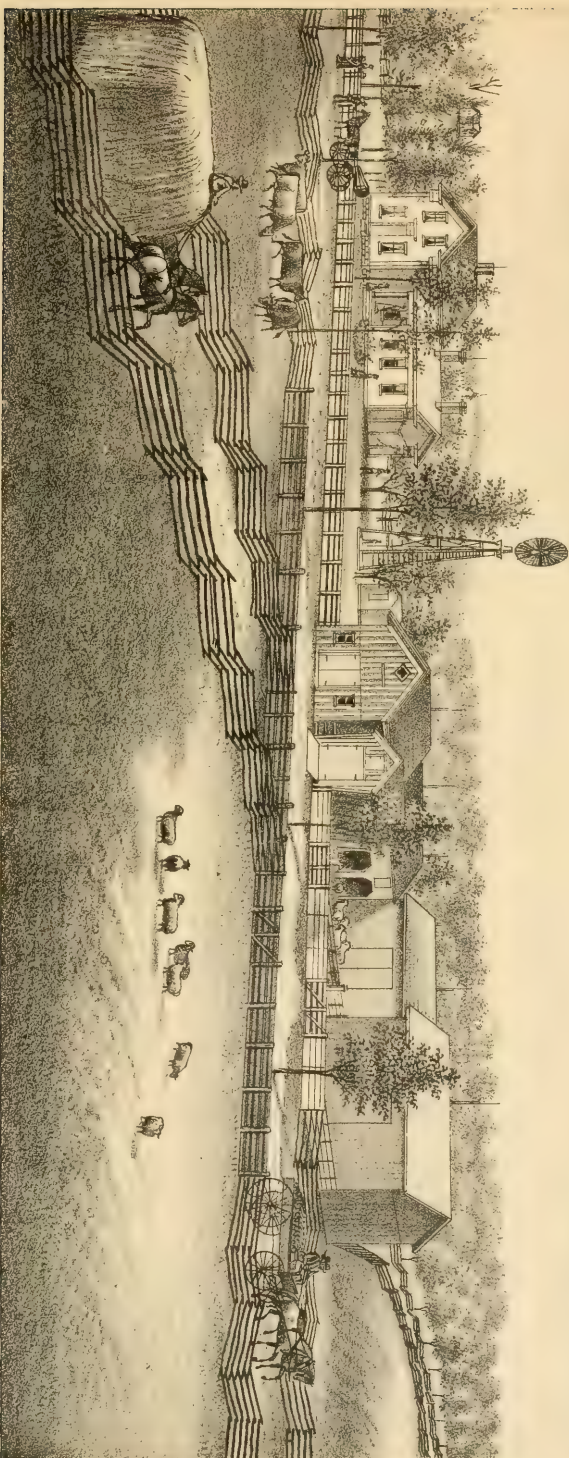
MRS. HENRY WILSON.



FIRST HOME.



HENRY WILSON.



RES. OF HENRY WILSON, PAW PAW, MICH.



After the death of his father, which occurred in July, 1878, Mr. Harrington purchased the old homestead, and now owns four hundred and fifty-eight acres of land, with one hundred and sixty acres under good improvement. He pays considerable attention to raising fine stock,—horses, merino sheep, and Poland China swine being his specialties. In this enterprise he is greatly assisted by his three fine boys, even though they are yet small. Mr. Harrington markets most of his own stock, occasionally shipping a carload at a time, and accompanying it himself. In religious matters he entertains liberal views, and endeavors to the extent of his power to inculcate strictly moral principles in the minds of his children, and give them the benefit of his own example. In politics he is a conservative Republican, never seeking for office nor taking an active part in political matters.

#### B. A. MURDOCK.

Mr. Murdock was born in Hamilton, Madison Co., N. Y., Jan. 17, 1815, and was the second in a family of five children,—two sons and three daughters. His father, Ariel Murdock, a native of New York, was a farmer. He held a captain's commission in the war of 1812, and was for a time stationed at Sacket's Harbor, N. Y. He died September, 1826. His wife Tryphosa (Bonney) Murdock, a native of Chesterfield, Mass., was a member of the Baptist Church for over a third of a century. She died Jan. 6, 1867.

B. A. Murdock remained at home, until twenty-one years of age, working the farm in the summer season, and attending school in winter. On the 22d of March, 1836, he started for Michigan, arriving in Van Buren County, in the latter State, on the 10th of April following. In the same year he located one hundred and sixty acres of land on section 24, South Haven township. From 1836 to 1839 he worked at farming, except in winter, when he employed his time in teaching school. In 1839 he returned to New York, and in October of that year, in company with Benjamin Parlin, started on a tour of the States, returning to New York in June, 1840. He taught school in Madison County the following winter, and about July 10, 1842, came again to Michigan. From that time until his marriage he engaged in different occupations, teaching school, merchandising, and speculating in land. May 1, 1859, he was married to Mary V. Anderson, daughter of Le Grand and Catharine (Shaw) Anderson, both natives of Virginia, who emigrated in an early day to Pickaway Co., Ohio, where Mrs. Murdock was born, Feb. 13, 1824. In 1832, Mr. Anderson moved, with his family, to Van Buren Co., Mich., having previously visited what is now Van Buren County as early as 1828.

Mr. and Mrs. Murdock have had two children,—a son and a daughter,—both of whom died in infancy. Two nieces of Mrs. Murdock (and adopted daughters), M. Grace and Clara S. Anderson, whose mother died in 1869, are much-loved members of Mr. and Mrs. Murdock's happy home. Mr. and Mrs. Murdock have been members of the Christian Church since 1861. He has been trustee and clerk of the same church many years. He has been a school-

teacher in the counties of Allegan, Kalamazoo, St. Joseph, Cass, and Van Buren.

Mr. Murdock has been an extensive land-holder, having owned at one time sixteen hundred acres. He has now five hundred acres, aside from his present residence and several locations in the business portion of Paw Paw. He is engaged in farming. He votes with the Republicans, but was never an active politician. He attends strictly to his business, and is a quiet, upright, and highly-honored citizen. Portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Murdock, together with a view of their home, are given in this volume.

### CHAPTER LXV.

#### PINE GROVE TOWNSHIP.

Location, Topography, and Population—First and Early Settlements—Civil History—Later Settlements in Pine Grove—Village of Kendall—Pine Grove Mills and Gobleville—Educational—Religious Worship.

#### LOCATION, TOPOGRAPHY, AND POPULATION.

THIS township, which derives its name from the fact that the major portion of its surface was originally covered with pine forests, is situated in the northeast corner of Van Buren County. According to the field-notes of the original survey, other varieties of timber then growing here were beech, cherry, elm, white oak, linn, white ash, black ash, tamarack, butternut, whiteoak, aspen, hickory, yellow oak, maple, and sycamore.

The surface is broken by irregular ranges of low hills dotted with several small lakes, and intersected by numerous unimportant water-courses. The lake surface embraces a total area of about 600 acres, Clear, Brandywine, and Lilypad lakes being the most important.

In the eastern part of the township are situated some three or four thousand acres of black-ash and tamarack swamps. Much of this swamp-land, however, will be reclaimed ultimately by drainage.

A sandy loam predominates, which with intelligent culture yields average crops of the earth's products common to this region. The soil and climate are also peculiarly well adapted to fruit culture.

During early years the people were chiefly engaged in lumbering; but with the almost total disappearance of their pine forests, attention has been turned more particularly to the pursuits of agriculture, and commodious farm buildings, surrounded by well-tilled acres, now appear where but a decade ago naught was seen but the woodman's shanty and its necessary adjunct, the "slashing."

Since 1870 population has rapidly increased, the census of 1874 returning a total of 1851 inhabitants.

It has at present (1880) a voting population of 570, showing an estimated total of at least 2300 inhabitants.

#### FIRST AND EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The first settler within the boundaries of this township was Joseph H. Hawks, who in 1839 purchased from the

\* By John S. Schenck.



general government lands, situated upon section 21, and in the following year (1840) his name appeared upon the Clinch assessment rolls as a resident owner of a portion of that section, lying in township 1 south, of range number 13 west. About a year after Hawks' settlement on section 21 a man named Stone purchased a part of section 30, in this township, and erected thereon a log habitation for himself and family, situated about sixty rods south, and a little east of the present village of Pine Grove Mills. He remained there until 1842 or 1843, clearing about ten acres.

There seems to have been no further attempt looking towards permanent settlements until the years 1847 and 1848.

Messrs. Morrill & Dyckman then owned several thousand acres of timbered lands, situated in this township. In 1848 they erected upon section 32 the old Pine Grove saw-mills, and established a store. They employed a large number of men in and about the mills, and here was formed the nucleus of a settlement which in thirty years has expanded to the present populous township.

In 1849, with about 30 voters, the township was set off from Bloomingdale and began a separate existence.

Among the residents at that time were Charles M. Morrill, the first supervisor; Dewitt C. Lockman, first township clerk; Aaron S. Dyckman, first treasurer; C. B. Palmer, Ephraim Taylor, Peter T. Valleau, Jephtha Waterman, E. B. D. Hicks, Uriah Stevens, Thomas Southward, Freeman Southward, Henry F. Bowen, John Pettibone, Benjamin P. Wolcott, Robert Love, James Clark, Edwin Pettibone, Benjamin H. Blair, Clark Brewer, Myron Parks, John Greenwood, Grove Love, Royal Cooley, Robert Ivy, Daniel Frary, James Ketchum, Sylvester Brown, W. H. Stevens, Horace H. Hadley, and Moses Waterman.

Additional early settlers to 1852, inclusive, were Harmon Ostrander, Abel P. Conant, Newell Nash, Philip M. Brooks, David Salisbury, Jason Russell, William B. Clement, Jerome Thrasher, Samuel Impson, Samuel Impson, Jr., William Impson, Abram Nash, William Adair, Jordan H. Jones, Rudolph Rogers, Peter Miller, Albert Abrams, and David Wise.

William B. Clement erected a saw-mill on section 20 in 1851, and engaged in lumbering quite extensively for a number of years. His mill was twice burned and as often rebuilt. In 1879 the machinery of this mill was removed to Montcalm County by his son.

David Wise and family came from Lysander, Onondaga Co., N. Y., in May, 1852, and settled upon section 32. The following year he was elected supervisor of this township. His son, David D. Wise, besides serving in many other honorable capacities, has filled the office of supervisor ten terms, and is the present incumbent. He is also station-agent at the village of Pine Grove Mills.

Chauncey Wise, another member of this family, served as supervisor during the years 1868-70.

Henry Veley, if not the first, was one of the very earliest settlers in the northern part of the township.

Among the residents here in 1854 and not already mentioned were James Hall, Henry Brown, George Clugston, Charles Jefferson, Amasa Southward, John Story, John Southward, Dewitt Church, William J. Charles, Sylvester

G. Baker, Thomas Story, Stephen Remalig, James Earl, Chapman Lay, John J. Charles, Benjamin Earl, Volney Blanchard, Abram Fitzgerald, James Clement, C. M. Blanchard, Philip Strong, Myron Austin, Oscar Everest, Elias J. Aldrich, J. G. Ostrander, George Cook, Seth Munn, Hiram Hiscock, Henry Packer, William Ash, A. C. Hiscock, Ebenezer Van Tassell, A. M. Morrill, Richard Salisbury, C. C. Westcott, Nathan Baker, and W. L. Conant.



CHAUNCEY WISE.

Until after the close of the late war the township increased but slowly in population or material wealth, and but twice had there been polled more than 100 votes at township elections, viz., in 1861 and 1864.

With the establishment of peace between the warring sections of our common country came many additional settlers to Pine Grove, in the persons of ex-soldiers, men who of all others are entitled to citizenship in a free land and under the flag they so bravely defended.

By this influx and the contemplated building of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad, the population was augmented to such an extent that in the spring election of 1868, 240 votes were cast.

The Pine Grove Mills post-office, on section 32, was first established in 1857, David D. Wise, postmaster.

The first framed dwelling was erected in the same locality in 1856, by Wise, Morrill & Co., and used as a boarding-house for their employees.

The only water-power saw-mill was built on Pine Creek, section 1, about the year 1865.

The Allegan State road, which ran along the west border of the township, was authorized by the authorities of Almena and Waverly, and surveyed by A. Crane, county surveyor, Sept. 2, 1844. The first road laid out by the highway commissioners of Pine Grove was of date July 12, 1849, upon the application of E. B. Dyckman and others, through whose land it was to pass.

#### CIVIL HISTORY OF THE TOWNSHIP.

The territory designated as township No. 1 south, of range No. 13 west, formed part of the original township of

Clinch. It was set off as Almena in 1842, Bloomingdale in 1845, and by an act of the State Legislature became a separate organization under its present name in 1849.

*First Township Election, etc.*—Pursuant to the act of organization, the legal voters to the number of 25 assembled at the place designated April 2, 1849, and chose Charles M. Morrill, Moderator; Aaron S. Dyckman, Clerk; Henry F. Bowen and Jephtha Waterman, Inspectors of Election.

At ten o'clock A.M. the polls were declared open by Jephtha Waterman.

It was then voted "To divide said township into two equal road districts by an east-and-west line." Board adjourned for half an hour.

Upon reopening the polls, proclamation was made that the same would close at half-past four o'clock P.M.

By a *viva voce* vote, Uriah Stevens was elected road overseer of District No. 1,—the north half of the township,—and Ephraim Taylor road-master of District No. 2, being the south half of the same.

By a majority vote other resolutions, as follows, were passed:

"That \$200 be raised for township purposes.

"That a bounty of \$5 be paid on full-grown wolves, and \$2.50 for each wolf-whelp killed in said township.

"To raise 50 cents on each scholar between the ages of four and eighteen years, for the support of common schools.

"To raise \$200 for the improvement of roads, to be equally divided between the two road districts.

"That the next annual meeting be held in the school-house near Horace H. Hadley's."

As a result of the canvass of votes, it was found that Charles M. Morrill was the unanimous choice of the 25 electors present, and the remaining officers elected were named as follows: Dewitt C. Lockman, Township Clerk; Aaron S. Dyckman, Treasurer; C. B. Palmer, Ephraim Taylor, School Inspectors; Peter T. Valleau, Jephtha Waterman, Directors of the Poor; E. B. D. Hicks, Peter T. Valleau, Uriah Stevens, Highway Commissioners; Thomas Southward, Henry F. Bowen, Horace H. Hadley, Dewitt C. Lockman, Justices of the Peace; John Pettibone, Benjamin P. Wolcott, Robert Love, James Clark, Constables.

At the general election held Nov. 6, 1849, the whole number of votes polled was fifteen, of which John S. Barry received 12 and Flavius J. Littlejohn 3.

*Residents of 1849.*—The names on the first assessment roll of Pine Grove Township, in 1849, were as follows:

Sec.		
Daniel Frary.....	7	Myron Parks.....Personal.
James Ketchum.....	17	Jephtha Waterman....."
Sylvester Brown.....	7	John Greenwood....."
W. H. Stevens.....	32	E. B. D. Hicks....."
Horace H. Hadley.....	19	Chauncey B. Palmer....."
Benjamin P. Wolcott.....	Personal	Grove Love....."
John Pettibone.....	"	Royal Cooley....."
Edwin Pettibone.....	"	James Clark....."
Dewitt C. Lockman.....	"	Charles M. Morrill....."
Benjamin H. Blair.....	"	Aaron S. Dyckman....."
Ephraim Taylor.....	"	Thomas Southward....."
Robert Love.....	"	Freeman Southward....."
Clark Brewer.....	"	Robert Ivey....."
Henry F. Bowen.....	"	

The total amount of taxes levied upon residents during the same year was \$19.07.

The township was then a lumbering region, and the foregoing list comprises for the most part lumbermen and their employees.

The whole number of votes polled for presidential electors in 1852 was 27, of which the ticket headed by John S. Barry received 19, and that headed by John Owen received 8.

*Voters of 1854.*—The voters at the spring election in 1854 were James Hall, Henry Veley, Henry Brown, George Clugston, Charles Jefferson, Amasa Southward, Jerome Thrasher, John Story, W. B. Clement, John Southward, Dewitt Church, Robert Ivey, William J. Charles, Sylvester G. Baker, Thomas Story, Stephen Remalig, James Earl, Chapman Lay, John J. Charles, Benjamin Earl, Volney Blanchard, Thomas Southward, Abram Nash, Abram Fitzgerald, James Clement, C. M. Blanchard, Philip Strong, Samuel Impson, Samuel Impson, Jr., James Clark, Myron Austin, Oscar Everest, Elias J. Aldrich, J. G. Ostrander, George Cook, Seth Munn, Chauncey B. Palmer, Hiram Hiscock, Henry Packer, William Ash, A. C. Hiscock, Chauncey Wise, Ebenezer Van Tassell, A. M. Morrill, Richard Salisbury, A. P. Conant, David Salisbury, Newell Nash, C. C. Westcott, Nathan Baker, W. L. Conant.

*Township Officers.*—The following is a list of township officers from 1849 to 1879, inclusive, with years of their election:

#### SUPERVISORS.

1849, Charles M. Morrill; 1850–51, Harmon Ostrander; 1852, Charles M. Morrill; 1853, David Wise; 1854, Seth Munn; 1855, Abel P. Conant; 1856–57, Newell Nash; 1858, Philip Strong; 1859, Moses A. Norris; 1860–66, David D. Wise; 1867, William Z. Bronson; 1868–70, Chauncey Wise; 1871, F. E. Adams; 1872, John Fessenden; 1873–74, David D. Wise; 1875–78, Tobias Johnson; 1879, David D. Wise.

#### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1849, Dewitt C. Lockman; 1850, Abel P. Conant; 1851, Henry F. Bowen; 1852, A. M. Morrill; 1853, Abel P. Conant; 1854, William J. Charles; 1855, Amos D. Stocking; 1856, James L. Clement; 1857–58, David D. Wise; 1859–62, Charles R. Nightingale; 1863, S. B. Farr; 1864, James L. Clement; 1865, Seth N. Clement; 1866, William Z. Bronson; 1867–68, Seth N. Clement; 1869–70, Solomon Jewell; 1871, Seth N. Clement; 1872, William F. Winterburn; 1873–74, J. B. David; 1875–76, William O. Bond; 1877–78, George P. Stearns; 1879, George F. Stevens.

#### TREASURERS.

1849, Aaron S. Dyckman; \* 1850–51, Charles M. Morrill; 1852–53, Chauncey B. Palmer; 1854, James Clement; 1855, Oscar Everest; 1856, Henry C. Story; 1857, Oscar Everest; 1858–59, Harvey M. Babbitt; 1860, John Goble; 1861–70, David Wise; 1871–76, David O. Everest; 1877, Hiram Cobb; 1878, George R. Elms; 1879, Jonathan McMichel.

#### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1849, Thomas Southward, Henry F. Bowen, Horace H. Hadley, Dewitt C. Lockman; 1850, Clark Brewer, Newell Nash, P. M. Brooks; 1851, David Salisbury, Philip M. Brooks, Chauncey B. Palmer; 1852, Jason Russell; 1853, Philip Strong, W. B. Clement, Samuel Impson; 1854, Nathan Baker, Sylvester G. Baker, David Salisbury; 1855, Newell Nash, William J. Charles; 1856, Victory P. Jones, T. G. Cutler; 1857, Philip Strong, Elias J. Aldrich, Harvey M. Babbitt; 1858, Moses A. Norris, James C. Chaffee; 1859, T. G. Cutler, Samuel Impson, Charles A. Clement; 1860, David O. Everest, William Bradshaw; 1861, S. B. Farr; 1862, Samuel Wells; 1863, Henry Miller, James L. Clement; 1864, John H. Chamberlain, David O. Everest; 1865, S. B. Farr, David

\* Harmon Ostrander appointed to fill vacancy, Feb. 25, 1850.

Myers, Orrin Plumb; 1866, Edmund R. Allen, William Z. Bronson, Henry C. Story; 1867, Elijah J. Heath, John J. Starr; 1868, Benjamin Deputy; 1869, Martin Joslin; 1870, W. H. Gregory, Benjamin Deputy; 1871, Ransom Snell; 1872, William Jones, Hiram Cobb; 1873, Lawson D. Herman; 1874, William O. Bond, Henry C. Story, David R. Wheeler; 1875, James H. Eldridge, Solomon Jewell; 1876, A. H. Haines; 1877, James H. Underhill, Horace Ward; 1878, James H. Underhill; 1879, James H. Eldridge.

## ASSESSORS.

1850, Chauncey B. Palmer, Henry F. Bowen; 1851, Henry C. Southward, Robert Love; 1852, W. B. Clement, Jerome Thrasher; 1875, William H. Gregory, Edson Howard. Supervisors all other years.

## HIGHWAY COMMISSIONERS.

1849, E. B. D. Hicks, Peter T. Valleau, Uriah Stevens; 1850, William Impson; 1851, C. B. Palmer, Abram Nash; 1852, Jerome Thrasher; 1853, Philip Strong; 1855, Samuel Impson; 1856, Tarrant G. Cutler; 1857, Chauncey Wise; 1858, Samuel Impson; 1859, Tarrant G. Cutler; 1860, Henry C. Strong; 1861, Oscar Everest; 1862, William T. Perrin; 1863, Charles R. Nightingale; 1864, Salmon E. Farr, John W. Veley, Elias J. Aldrich; 1865, Charles Goodwin; 1866, Henry S. Sheldon, John G. Davis, Samuel Becker; 1867, Leander Simons, David Wise; 1868, John W. Veley; 1869, William H. Gregory; 1870, John V. Daratt; 1871, Hurlbut Brooks; 1872, M. W. Henry; 1873, George R. Palmer; 1874, John Graham; 1875-76, George R. Palmer; 1877, George R. Elms; 1878, John V. Daratt; 1879, Newland N. Nash.

## DRAIN COMMISSIONERS.

1872, George W. Howland; 1873, Mathew Attmore; 1874, John W. Veley; 1875, William Healey; 1878, Elijah M. Brown.

## SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1849, C. B. Palmer, Ephraim Taylor; 1850, Abel P. Conant; 1851, Newell Nash, William Adair; 1852, Aaron S. Dyckman, W. B. Clement; 1853, Chauncey B. Palmer, Jordon H. Jones; 1854, James Clement; 1855, Abel P. Conant; 1856, Victory P. Jones; 1857, John Smolk, John Draper; 1858, Chauncey Wise, James C. Chaffee; 1859, Augustus House; 1860, David D. Wise, John Goble; 1861, Stephen L. Babbitt; 1862, David D. Wise; 1863, William P. Perrin, David D. Wise; 1864, Lewis A. Churchill; 1865, William Bronson, Milton G. Wise; 1866, Leander Simmons, Edmund R. Allen; 1867, John J. Sturr; 1868, Leander Simmons; 1869, John J. Sturr; 1870, William Z. Bronson; 1871, John Fessenden; 1872, George R. Elms, T. S. Potter; 1873, David H. Smith; 1874, David D. Wise, Hiram Cobb; 1875, Lawrence Knowles; 1876, James H. Eldridge; 1877, David D. Wise; 1878, Arthur Webster; 1879, John Graham.

## TOWNSHIP SCHOOL SUPERINTENDENTS.

1875-77, Otis L. Moshier; 1878, Arthur Webster; 1879, Otis L. Moshier.

## DIRECTORS OF THE POOR.

1849, Peter T. Valleau, Jephtha Waterman; 1850, P. M. Brooks, Clark Brewer; 1851, Charles M. Morrill, Newell Nash; 1852, Rudolph Rogers; 1854, Henry Brown, Thomas Story; 1855, Henry Brown, Philip Strong; 1856, Andrew H. Jones; 1857, Abram Nash, Thomas Randall; 1858, David O. Everest, Thomas Story; 1859, David Wise, Samuel Impson; 1860, David D. Wise, Newell Nash; 1861, Henry C. Cutler, Marvin Lowell; 1862, David Wise, Arnold Clement.

## CONSTABLES.

1849, John Pettibone, Benjamin P. Wolcott, Robert Love, James Clark; 1850, Ephraim Taylor, Royal Cooley; 1851, E. B. D. Hicks, Peter Miller, Freeman Southward, Abram Nash; 1852, E. B. D. Hicks, Albert Abrams; 1853, Isaac H. Conklin, John Dodson, Dewitt Church, Obadiah Munn; 1854, Robert Ivey, James Clement, John J. Charles, J. G. Ostrander; 1855, Alanson Hisecock, T. G. Cutler, Samuel Impson, Jr., David Deforest; 1856, S. B. Farr, T. G. Cutler, Andrew H. Jones, Abram Nash; 1857, William Rapp, Seth Newcomb, Philip Strong, Jr., Erastus P. Brown; 1858, Charles Clement, Jacob Gruber, Syrenus Daniels,

Charles Finch; 1859, Edwin T. Phelps, Henry C. Cutler, Syrenus Daniels, John Allen; 1860, William H. Bradshaw, Charles H. Finch, Ezra Fasmire; 1861, Samuel Impson, David Wise; 1862, John W. Veley, Nathan A. Wood, Charles F. Norton, David M. Dayton; 1863, William Stevens, Nathan A. Wood, Lyman Millman, Elias J. Aldrich; 1864, Charles Stamp, Charles F. Norton, Benjamin Deputy, Abram Nash; 1865, Mason Cutler, Nathan A. Wood, Alexander Baxter; 1866, Charles A. Clement, Lorenzo D. Story, Nathan A. Wood, Loren W. Norris; 1867, Jonathan C. Thompson, John W. Veley, James B. Chilson, Lee Mason; 1868, Orrin Phelps, Lee Mason, Lewis Camfield, James B. Chilson; 1869, Samuel Hayes, William Stevens, W. R. Story, Edwin Aldrich; 1870, Porter Salisbury, Lee Mason, Shepard Baldwin, Edwin Aldrich; 1871, A. O. Story, C. W. Stamp, J. P. Williams; 1872, Frank Jones, Judson Bennett, George Conway, Abraham Gregory; 1873, Augustus Smith, George Galland, James Lane, Charles Veley; 1874, John Slover, Charles Veley; 1875, Eugene Dustin, Frank Everest, John F. Slover, Bradley Lane; 1876, M. Woodward, E. D. Bradley, Frank Everest, Eugene Dustin; 1877, Millard Woodward, Edward Aldrich, Shepard H. Baldwin, George Walker; 1878, Charles A. Spencer, Bradley Lane, Warren Green; 1879, Charles A. Spencer, John Slover, George Smith, and James Whelpley.

## LATER SETTLEMENTS IN PINE GROVE.

For many years Mattawan, Paw Paw, and Kalamazoo were the principal shipping- and trading-points for the inhabitants of this region, the manufacture and sale of shingles being the principal reliance of the poorer classes for the means of purchasing necessary "store-goods."

The progress of settlement in the eastern half of Pine Grove was very slow, on account of its isolated position. Being hemmed in on the east and south by a swamp one mile wide, its general surface quite hilly and broken, and a reputation for poor soil, it was in 1864 very sparsely settled. Mr. Baxter had settled and made a small opening on section 27, E. J. Aldrich and Curran Elms on section 34, Mr. Cobb and Stoughton Warner on section 35. Wm. H. Gregory had just built a cabin on section 23, while on and north of the centre K. Withey, Thos. Donaldson, S. Williams, S. Becker, L. Harbolt, and a few others had let the light of the sun in spots into this dense forest of oak, beech, and pine, and were striving to make themselves homes.

## VILLAGE OF KENDALL.

In June of 1864, Lucius B. Kendall bought of Judge E. B. Dyckman 160 acres of land, densely covered with pine and oak timber, on section 22, and in company with James Thistle laid the foundation of a steam saw-mill on the banks of Duck Lake. In July, Albert Arms, of Kalamazoo, became associated with them in the enterprise. The mill was completed and the first lumber sawed about the 1st of September. There were no roads in this region, and the lumber was hauled with much labor, and under many difficulties, out of the forest through Almena to Mattawan,—twelve miles,—the nearest point on the Michigan Central Railroad. Soon finding that the oak of this region was of too "brash" a nature to be salable in the Chicago market, the company at once resolved to go into the stave business. Machinery was purchased, put into the mill, and the business commenced.

In the spring of 1865, P. Ranney and W. L. Cutting, of Kalamazoo, became associated with the company, adding more capital, and the business was pushed forward with energy under the name and firm of Kendall & Co.

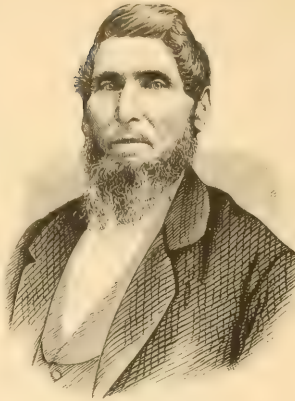




## DAVID WISE,

son of Daniel and Elizabeth Wise, was born of German parents in the town of Sharon, Schoharie Co., N. Y., Feb. 26, 1804, he being the youngest of a family of nine sons and two daughters. At the age of eight or nine years he was sent to an English school, at which time he could scarcely speak or understand a word of the English language. At that period the school facilities were limited, and his father, being only in moderate circumstances, was unable to give his children more than a common-school education. At the age of fourteen years his father died and left him upon his own resources. At the age of fifteen he went to learn the tanner and currier trade, at which he worked for three years.

In March, 1822, himself, mother, and two older brothers, moved West to what was then a wilderness country, the town of Cicero, Onondaga Co., N. Y. The first summer after settling in Onondaga County he worked for his brother clearing land, and thus saved money enough to buy three acres of land for



DAVID WISE.

himself, upon which to erect his tannery and buildings. In the fall of the same year he commenced erecting his buildings and gathering together hides to tan upon shares, which at that time was a customary practice with small tanneries. March 9, 1823, he married Catharine Young, daughter of George and Margaret Young. She was born Aug. 3, 1801, in Minden, Montgomery Co., N. Y. In 1821 she, with the rest of their family, moved West shanty near his tan-

yard and buildings. In the fall of the same year he commenced erecting his buildings and gathering together hides to tan upon shares, which at that time was a customary practice with small tanneries. March 9, 1823, he married Catharine Young, daughter of George and Margaret Young. She was born Aug. 3, 1801, in Minden, Montgomery Co., N. Y. In 1821 she, with the rest of their family, moved West shanty near his tan-

a trip to California in April, 1850. He returned home Jan. 8, 1851. In the autumn of 1851 he, with his eldest son, took a trip into Michigan, and were induced to purchase an interest in a saw-mill. In the spring of 1852 he, with his family, left Baldwinsville and moved to Pine Grove, Van Buren Co., Mich., arriving May 12, 1852.

In 1853 he represented the township of Pine Grove in the board of supervisors. In the fall of 1853 he disposed of his interest in mill and lands to John Smolk, Jr., of Antwerp, and Jan. 1, 1854, he moved with his family to Kalamazoo, Mich., where he bought village property and erected a sash-, blind-, and door-factory, which he carried on until June, 1855, when he sold and moved back to Baldwinsville, N. Y., where he had left some property unsold. While there he was engaged mainly as a master builder.

Having disposed of his property in April, 1858, he again moved back to Pine Grove, Mich. By this time



MRS. CATHARINE (YOUNG) WISE.

to Cicero, N. Y. There being a pioneer log yard, he moved his family into it and commenced housekeeping. He finally worked his stock of hides through, finished the leather, and to the satisfaction of his customers. Not having capital to continue with, and, finding the business would not support his family, in the spring of 1824 he abandoned it, and adopted the carpenter and joiner business. By his own ingenuity and persevering industry he became a master builder, and followed it as a business with good success.

In 1842 he moved to Baldwinsville, Onondaga Co., N. Y., where he invested in village property, and erected a large shop with a water-power, where he engaged in general building and the manufacture of sashes, doors, and blinds, employing a large force of men. On the night of January 8, 1849, the shop took fire and was burned to the ground, which for the time being put a check upon him, and prompted him to take



MRS. FANNY S. (SORTOR) WISE.

daughter of Henry and Sally Sortor, who was born in Friendship, Allegany Co., N. Y., Sept. 20, 1833, and came to Pine Grove in 1868. She died Dec. 19, 1872, aged thirty-nine years, two months, and twenty-nine days. As a result of the care and anxiety arising from the illness of his wife, he was prostrated by sickness, from which he did not recover until the following April. Sept. 11, 1873, he married Nancy Soule, widow of Henry Soule, and daughter of Peter and Mary Miller. She was born in Luzerne Co., Pa., August 13, 1815.

Since his return from the State of New York, in 1858, he has devoted his time and attention to agricultural pursuits. In 1861 he was elected to the office of treasurer of Pine Grove township, and continued to hold the office from year to year until 1871. Since his severe and protracted illness, in 1872 and 1873, he has not performed any manual labor, and has only been able to attend to his secular and other affairs as they present themselves.



MRS. NANCY MILLER (SOULE) WISE.



RESIDENCE OF DAVID WISE, PINE GROVE, VAN BUREN CO., MICHIGAN.





The settlement of this part of the town was now really commenced,—roads were laid and worked in every direction, new settlers came in, and the company paid out from \$15,000 to \$20,000 annually for stave timber and logs. This cash market for their timber enabled the people to improve their farms and build houses, and in a few years the wilderness was changed to an open and fruitful country. Kendall & Co. also opened a store and supplied the community with nearly all the goods required. The products of the mill must be sent to market, and from 10 to 40 teams were loaded daily with staves and lumber. In the fall of 1866, E. T. Mills, of Kalamazoo, bought the interest of P. Ranney, and became one of the company. James Thistle died the same year. In September, 1867, the mill was burned,—loss, \$10,000; insurance, \$4000,—but it was rebuilt, and in about two months was in running order again. In 1869, H. E. Hoyt, of Kalamazoo, purchased the interest of Wm. L. Cutting, and became one of the firm of Kendall & Co. Geo. W. Howland bought the interest of E. T. Mills, and is still an inhabitant of the village of Kendall.

The question of a railroad from Kalamazoo to South Haven was agitated in the winter of 1868–69, and met with a hearty response from the people along the line. A company was soon formed, and Lucius B. Kendall chosen one of the directors. The work was pushed forward with energy, and the first locomotive ran into the place Jan. 3, 1870. About the same time a post-office was established, and the place was named Kendall. Albert Arms was appointed postmaster, which office he still holds.

In 1871, Tobias Johnson, of Kalamazoo, in connection with Kendall & Co., opened a brick-yard and commenced the manufacture of bricks under the firm-name of Johnson & Co., and bricks of superior quality in large quantities have been turned out every year and shipped to various parts of the State. At this time the company are making the finest red pressed-brick to be found in the State, equal to the best Philadelphia.

In 1873, Mr. Kendall and associates, under the name of the Michigan Chair Company, put up a brick building 100 by 60 feet, four stories high, well filled with machinery for the manufacture of cane- and wood-seat chairs, and for the purpose of working up the large quantities of beech, maple, and basswood timber to be found in the vicinity.

The operations of Lucius B. Kendall and his partners in business have been mentioned here more at length for the reason that they have had more to do with the settlement and advancement of the village and the east part of the township, the opening of roads, the making of a good market for timber, and the general improvement of the country than all other causes combined. Since their commencement their varied business has been carried on successively under the firm-names of Ranney, Kendall & Co., Kendall, Mills & Co., The Michigan Chair Company, and (at present) L. C. Pratt & Co. In the chair-works some thirty men are steadily employed, and the product of the mills is shipped to many parts of the United States.

The village of Kendall is situated one mile east of the geographical centre of the township, and is a station of the Kalamazoo and South Haven branch of the Michigan Cen-

tral Railroad, which was opened in January, 1870 (as before mentioned), and on the 8th of February, in the same year, the village plat was made and recorded by Lucius B. Kendall, Henry E. Hoyt, George B. Robinson, Albert Arms, and George W. Howland, the plat being located on sections 22 and 27.

A lively little village of 400 inhabitants was built up, with a substantial two-story brick school-house, and a fair prospect of rapid progress, when the panic of 1873 swept over the country, blighting business in Kendall, as elsewhere, and taking from the village many of its most industrious citizens. The population is now about 250, and the village contains besides the brick school-house, an extensive chair-works, already mentioned, a church edifice (Methodist Episcopal), a hotel, three general stores, and several mechanic shops.

Dr. M. Mason commenced practice here about 1865, and has proved himself a skillful physician. Dr. L. D. Knowles has practiced in the village and vicinity for about six years, to the general satisfaction of his patrons. He has recently removed, and has been succeeded by Dr. Huff.

One of the best peach, pear, and apple-orchards in the State was planted and brought to maturity by William H. Gregory, on his farm near Kendall. The orchard is now owned by Mr. Scott.

#### PINE GROVE MILLS AND GOBLEVILLE.

This village, also a station on the South Haven branch of the Michigan Central Railroad, contains the extensive mills of Everest, Wise & Co., one store, post-office, school-house, and about 125 inhabitants. Prior to the completion of the railroad, Benjamin De Puy and family were the only inhabitants in the immediate vicinity.

The railroad was finished from Kalamazoo to this point Jan. 10, 1870, and for nearly six months this was its western terminus.

On the 4th of February, 1870, the village of Pine Grove Mills was platted by David Wise and Benjamin De Puy, upon lands situated upon section 30. Additions have since been made by Daniel B. Brown, David O. Everest, and Chauncey Wise.

Everest, Wise & Co. built their grist- and planing-mills in 1872. A sixty horse-power engine is in use at the present time, and fifteen men are steadily employed. This company, besides their other industries, now manufacture the wood-work for eighty sets of spring-tooth drags per day. Attached to these mills is an iron-foundry, which was established by E. H. Haynes & Co. in 1875, for the manufacture of various agricultural implements. A beautiful school edifice (the best in the township) was erected here in 1873, at a cost of \$2250.

The village of Gobleville, situated partly in this township and partly in Bloomingdale, is more particularly described in the history of the latter township.

#### SOUTH HAVEN AND KALAMAZOO RAILROAD.

This railroad, now known as the South Haven branch of the Michigan Central, was completed to the station of Pine Grove Mills in January, 1870.

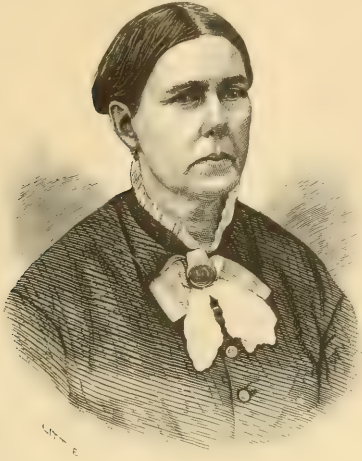
In its passage through the township it intersects sections





Aside from the regular business of the firm, Mr. Everest has built five lumber-mills, and his inventive genius has enabled him to make many valuable improvements. Much

lows: Frank O., born Aug. 22, 1851; Jane L., born Dec. 3, 1852; Mary, born April 2, 1854, died at two years of age; Emma, born Nov. 15, 1856; John H., born Nov. 16,



MRS. D. O. EVEREST.



D. O. EVEREST.

of the machinery used in these mills was constructed after patterns of his own invention. In 1850, Mr. Everest was married to Miss Reliance A. Strong, of Onondaga Co., N. Y., which union has been blessed by six children, as fol-

lows: Addie B., born May 24, 1865. Mr. Everest always used his personal influence for the benefit of those whom he employed, and is a man very much respected by his acquaintances.

## CHAPTER LXVI.

### PORTER TOWNSHIP.

Boundaries and General Description—Pioneers and Early Settlements—Township Organization, Name, and Civil List—Churches—Schools—Porter Grange, Patrons of Husbandry.

#### BOUNDARIES AND GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

PORTER, originally attached to Decatur township, covers an area of six miles square, and occupies the southeastern corner of Van Buren County, its boundaries being Antwerp township on the north, Cass County on the south, Kalamazoo County on the east, and Decatur township on the west. Designated in the original survey as town 4 south, range 13 west, it was not named until 1845, when it was set off from Decatur with separate jurisdiction.

The surface of the country is generally hilly, and from many of the eminences picturesque views, reaching over a wide extent of territory, may be obtained. In the south-east there is considerable swamp-land, although elsewhere the drainage is good and effective, by means of numerous lakes. The largest of these is Bankson's (or Mack's) Lake, which has an area of about 600 acres. Cedar Lake covers about 500 acres, and among the smaller ones may be mentioned Grass, Gravel, Barker's, Van Sickle's, and Hersey.

\* By David Schwartz.

The water in Bankson's Lake is deep and clear, and abounds in fish, having recently been stocked by the State. Gravel Lake has a remarkably fine, hard beach, which admits of a superb roadway around its entire circuit.

Porter has no immediate railway conveniences, although the Michigan Central line touches the northwestern corner. In 1870 the township voted \$15,000 in aid of the Paw Paw Valley Railroad, which was to pass through Porter, but the project failed. The township contains no village, has but one church building, and has no post-office, no store, or mercantile enterprise of any kind except one saw-mill. The business interests are entirely agricultural. The population of Porter in 1874 was 1182, and the assessed valuation in 1879 was \$357,400.

#### PIONEERS AND EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

The southwestern corner of section 13, now occupied by Samuel Kidney, is conspicuous in being the first tract of land entered in Porter township. Abner Mack, now living in Kalamazoo County, located the lot in 1833, and built a cabin upon it. He concluded, however, within a short time to abandon it, and effecting with Jonas Barber, of Kalamazoo County, an exchange for land in Prairie Ronde, he moved away. Barber hired Milton Van Duzer to work the Porter place, and there Van Duzer was living in 1835, when James Young, his half-sister, Elizabeth Gibson, and

her sons, Washington and Robert, moved in from Prairie Ronde, and occupied a tract of 67 acres on section 14, bordering upon Bankson's Lake. According to the best obtainable evidence, therefore, Porter's first settler was Mack, its second was Van Duzer, and its third Young. Washington Gibson still occupies the original 67 acres. Young started for Utah in 1850, to cast his fortunes with the Mormons, but lost his life while on the way, by falling into the hold of a Mississippi River steamer. Mrs. Gibson died in Porter in 1870. Van Duzer remained but a brief period, and then removed farther west. The second house built in the township is supposed to have been put up by one Crooks, of Kalamazoo, although the structure was never finished or occupied. It stood on section 13, north of Mack's, and, as the story goes, Crooks, repenting his choice of location, abandoned the place before preparing it for habitation, and Porter saw him no more.

Settlements in the township having begun in the east, this narrative will accordingly follow at first the settlers who came as pioneers into that district.

*The Kinney Settlement.*—The father and founder of that portion of Porter known for years as the Kinney settlement was Elijah Kinney, who in 1835 came from Milan, Ohio, with his wife, seven unmarried children, his son Luther and family, and his son-in-law, Samuel Corey. The elder Kinney had bought four 80-acre lots, and built his cabin on section 24, where he died in 1864. The place is now occupied by his son Stephen. Luther located south of Mr. Kinney's, and removing subsequently to St. Joseph, still lives there. Up to the time of Elijah Kinney's arrival, James Young and Milton Van Duzer had been the only permanent settlers in Porter. Uri Kinney, Elijah Kinney's nephew, was a settler in 1835, upon section 12, where he lived until his death.

Nelson Corey and his brother Sanford, both young men, entered Porter in 1836, and labored upon the farms of others until 1840. In that year Nelson bought a place on section 26 of one Chapin, who had located there in 1838, and who upon selling to Corey went to Illinois. Sanford purchased also on section 26, of T. R. Smith, a settler, who moved in 1840 farther west. Nelson Corey now lives on section 16. His brother Sanford died in Porter in 1878. Among the settlers in the Kinney settlement in 1836 were George Wilson and Mathew Lewis. In that year Lewis lost a child by death, and buried it on the Luke Munger farm. Lewis' child was the first person who died in the township. Lewis afterwards moved west. Wilson died in Porter.

Stephen, brother of Elijah Kinney, came from Milan, Ohio, in the fall of 1838, with a family of eight children, accompanied also by John Webber and family and John Bennett. Stephen Kinney bought 240 acres of new land in section 26, where he died in 1847. His son, Orrin G., who came with him, located on section 25 in 1842, and still lives there. Webber settled on section 25, and died in Lawton. Bennett, who bought a place on section 26, went afterwards to Iowa, where he died. E. Z. K. Munger, who came as a farm-hand with Elijah Kinney in 1835, worked a year for Mr. Kinney, and then located 80 acres on section 25. He migrated subsequently to Minnesota.

Among the inhabitants of the Kinney settlement in 1838 were James Young, Elizabeth Gibson, George Colvin (on the Abner Mack place), Uri Kinney, Elijah, Luther, and Stephen Kinney, E. Z. K. Munger, T. R. Smith, Lyman Wood, and Clark Pratt. Colvin died in Porter. Wood moved to St. Joseph County, and there died. Pratt went to the far West.

Moses Monroe was considered the most useful man in the settlement. He was the only mechanic among them all, and he could turn his hand to carpentering as well as to shoemaking, while he was quite clever at any work requiring mechanical skill. Truly, Moses was looked upon as a boon to the pioneers, and he was never a moment suffered to be idle; there were constant calls upon him from every side. He lived in the settlement until his death, in 1872.

Luke Munger, who settled in 1840 upon section 24, died in 1863 on section 26, where his son Abner lives. James Maxam, now living on section 34, settled in 1844 upon section 27. Manasseh Kern located in 1846 upon section 13, where he now lives. In 1846 his neighbors on the north were the Wilsons, Longcoys, Harpers, Locks, and Finches. S. V. P. Bradt came in 1848, and located in 1848 upon section 24, his present home. In the same year Jacob Markle settled on section 3, where he has since resided. Mr. Markle came West in 1837, and in that year became a resident of Antwerp township, whence in 1848 he moved to Porter. William H. McLane came from St. Joseph County in 1852, and located upon section 15, where he now lives; adjoining him, on the south, being his son John C., who bought his farm in 1860.

Settlements in the central part of the township were made as early as 1835, in which year Benjamin Reynolds, of Ohio, came with a large family and located 160 acres in section 15. His sons, Buell and Benjamin, Jr., attended to the land, which was divided into two farms, the elder Reynolds living with Buell until 1852, when he took up his residence with his son-in-law, William Perley, and there died in 1853. His only child, now living in Porter, is Mrs. Miles Van Sickle.

Daniel Alexander, also from Ohio, became a resident of Michigan in 1832, and for four years lived in Cass County on leased land. In 1836 he bought 200 acres of government land in Porter township, on sections 20, 29, and 30, and while preparing a place of habitation upon his new possessions, he lived with his wife (a daughter of George Tittle, of Decatur) in Dolphin Morris' old log cabin on Little Prairie. Alexander built on section 29 a log cabin 16 by 24, and when he moved into it, in 1836, he was the only white settler in the western portion of the township, except John Tittle, his brother-in-law, who kept bachelor's hall on a place adjoining Alexander. Indeed, he thought for a time there were no other settlers in the township until he accidentally discovered James Young while out on a trip of discovery. Mr. Alexander died in 1862, on his Porter farm, where his widow still survives him. Mrs. Alexander tells many interesting stories of her lonesome experiences among the Indians while her husband and brother were away from the cabin. She was at first much alarmed at the sight of the savages, but soon grew to understand that they were peaceable and inclined to be friendly. Indeed, they



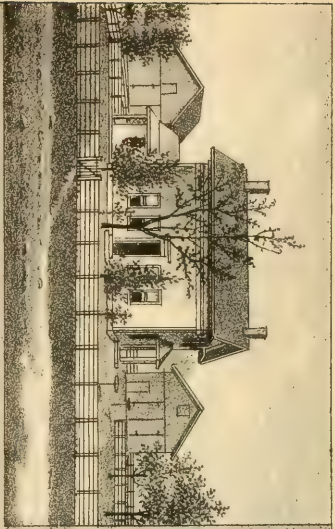




SANFORD COREY.



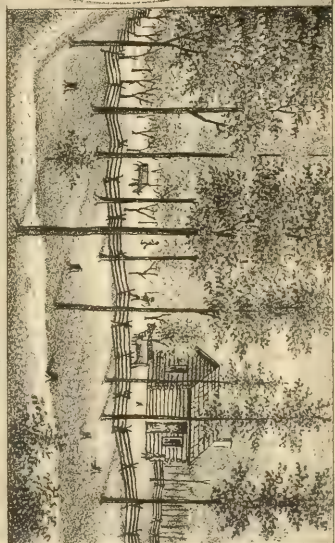
RESIDENCE OF A.M. MUNGER, PORTER, MICHIGAN.



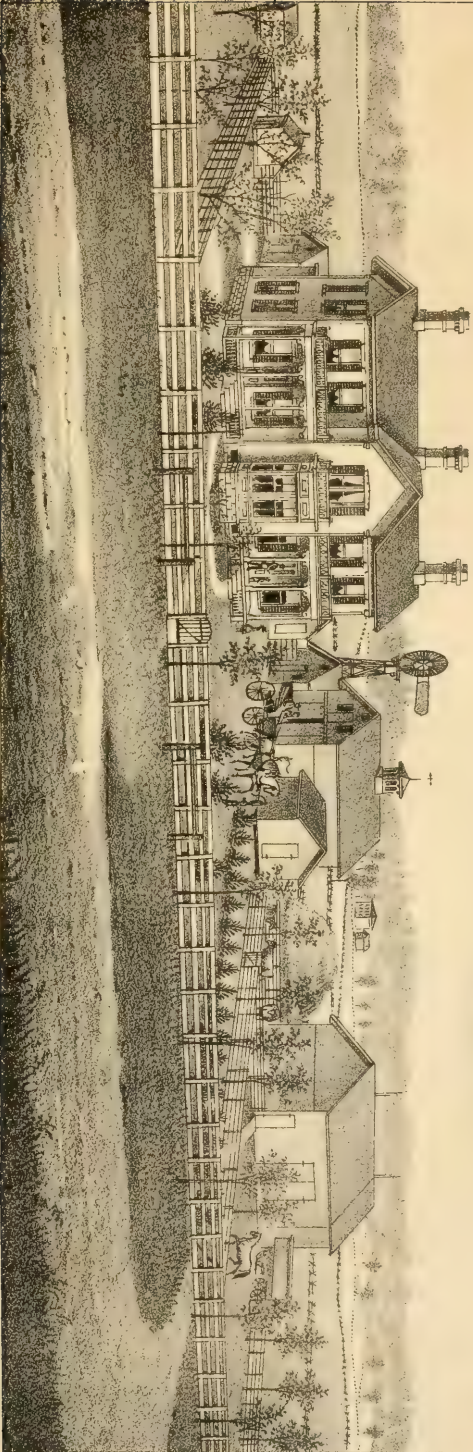
RES. OF THE LATE LUKE MUNGER.



LUKE MUNGER.



PAITHENS OLD HOME BUILT 1841.



RES. OF R. V. MUNGER, PORTER, MICH.





were at times exceedingly sociable, and more than once did she receive presents as tokens of Indian friendship. Her husband used to say that he desired no better neighbors than those same Indians. John Tittle, to whom reference has been made, moved to Iowa in 1855.

In the summer of 1836, Roderick Bell settled near Gravel Lake, where he lived until 1862, when he removed farther West. Near Gravel Lake also, in 1837, settled Nathan Cook, George S. Freese, and John B. Compton. Cook died in Porter in 1867, leaving a widow, who now resides with her daughter on section 16. Freese caught the gold fever in 1849 and went to California, where he was drowned shortly afterwards. About 1840 other settlers were Thomas Alexander and the Nelsons, the latter of whom sold out to Silas Gould and moved away.

Millies Van Sickle, who settled in Michigan in 1826 and in Porter in 1840, still lives in the latter township, on section 17. In January, 1840, his father, John Van Sickle, came to Porter with Elias Harmon and Jacob Stillwell, and all three settled with their families in Porter. Van Sickle died in Porter in 1861. Elias Harmon, who settled on section 17, still lives in the township. Stillwell located on section 21, and died in Porter. His son John resides on section 9. In the spring of 1840, L. H. Weldon located on section 28. He died in the township in 1872. Two of his sons, Augustus and George, now reside in Porter.

John Nesbitt was one of the pioneers in the settlement of Keeler township, where he says he and his brother James turned the first furrow and kept for a time bachelors' hall in 1834. He came to Porter in 1837, and bought land on section 4. He hired one Wilcox to work the place, and pushed on to the far West. Coming back after an absence of two years, he married and settled upon the farm himself. In 1846 he changed his location to section 9, where he now lives. As an evidence of the newness of the country even at that date, it may be interesting to observe that when Mr. Nesbitt moved to his new farm, in 1846, he was obliged to make his own road, while his wife drove the ox-team. A quilt hung up before the cabin opening was the best door they could command for some time, while as to a kitchen, an open space under two white-wood trees was for two months the spot where Mrs. Nesbitt did all the family cooking.

Isaac Hall came to Michigan in 1834, and to Porter in 1842. His brother Amos, also a Michigan pioneer of 1834, settled in Porter in 1846, when in the neighborhood between Grass and Cedar Lakes. The other settlers were Silas Gould, L. H. Weldon, David Gilson, and the Widow Merritt. Shortly after 1840, Thomas Fletcher, a Virginian, came to Porter and bought two hundred acres of new land on section 23, of Joel Clarke, living in Prairie Ronde. Fletcher made a settlement at once, and lived on the place until his death, in 1875.

Samuel D. Harper, who settled in Porter in 1843, died in 1873, on section 5, where his son William now lives. Jeremiah Barker, a New Yorker, traded in 1845 some New York land for 320 acres on section 9, in Porter, and in that year settled there with his family, and there he died in 1849. John, a son, died on section 9 in 1876. Joseph, another son, still lives on a portion of the original farm.

William Hathaway, of New York, was a settler in Antwerp township in 1838, on section 27, and there in the same year died of fever and ague, which was then fatally prevalent in Antwerp. In 1848 his three sons, A. H., William N., and Charles E., settled in Porter. The only one of the three now in the township is A. H., who lives on section 16. His two brothers are now residents of Iowa.

The pioneers of Porter found a heavily-timbered but an inviting country. There were great tracts of heavy timber and oak openings, through which it was easy enough to drive a team without clearing a road. The vicinity of any one of the large lakes was peculiarly attractive to the eye of the new-comer, while the rich sandy soil promised the farmer an abundant yield and cheered his eager anticipations. Wolves, deer, and all kinds of game abounded in great profusion. But the wolves, although numerous, were troublesome only as depredators upon small live-stock, which required careful watching. Although Porter has now no post-office, it was better favored in the earlier days. About 1840, George S. Freese was appointed postmaster, and kept the office in his house near Gravel Lake. What little mail he received was left with him by a mail-rider, who traversed a route extending from Schoolcraft to Dowagiac. In 1845 the custody of the office was transferred to Isaac Hall, and shortly after the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad to Lawton, the Porter office was abolished.

In the matter of mills, Porter has never had anything to boast of, chiefly for the reason that the township has no water-power. There was no saw-mill even until 1866, when Samuel Strong built one on section 35. The only mill in the town now is the saw-mill of Leonard Waldron, on section 23. The early settlers were, however, not so badly off for mill conveniences as pioneers in some towns, for Flowerfield and Whitmanville, with a grist- and saw-mill, were not very far distant.

The only store ever opened in Porter was one kept at the Centre by a Mr. Lewis, which had, however, but a brief existence.

The only tavern was a house known as the Sisson place, but even that was not much more a tavern than every house in the town, since every resident kept open house in the pioneer days whenever a traveler sought entertainment.

The first marriage was that of William Nixon, of Bertrand, to Electa, daughter of Tinker R. Smith, one of Porter's pioneers. The ceremony was performed in Mr. Tinker's house by Rev. Samuel L. Julian, and took place some time during 1837.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION, NAME, AND CIVIL LIST.

The township of Porter was originally a portion of Decatur, from which it was set off in 1845.

Mrs. Harriet Van Antwerp says that one day, after it was decided to set the township off from Decatur, there was a consultation at the house of her father, Nathan Cook, as to what name ought to be selected. Miss Cook happened just then to be reading in the room "Cooper's Naval Heroes," and struck by the story of Com. Porter's career, suggested that as Decatur had appropriated a naval hero's

name, the new township should follow the example and take the name of Porter. The suggestion was voted an excellent one, and adopted at once.

The first township-meeting was held April 7, 1845, when the greatest number of votes cast for any candidate was 45. A full list of the officials chosen on that occasion is given, as follows: Supervisor, Harvey Barker; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, Isaac Hall; School Inspectors, W. S. Corey, Harvey Barker; Highway Commissioners, William L. Barker, John Nesbitt, and William I. Finch; Constables, Miles Van Sickle, John Bennett, and Richard Wilson; Overseers of the Poor, Ira Harman and Benjamin Reynolds; Poundmaster, John Tittle; Justices of the Peace, Harvey Barker, Samuel D. Harper, H. H. Adams, John Nesbitt; Overseers of Highways, Peter Van Etten, Orrin G. Kinney, William McMinn, William L. Barker, Jacob Stillwell. The Township Board consisted of Horace H. Adams, Stephen Kinney, David A. Alexander, and Samuel D. Harper; Clerks of the Board were Nathan Cook and Warren S. Corey.

The jurors chosen to serve for the year 1845 were Samuel D. Harper, William McMinn, Uri Kinney, Luther Kinney, John Webber, Orrin G. Kinney, Buell Reynolds, David Gilson, Jacob Stillwell, Elias Harmon, Thomas Alexander, Charles Mitchelson.

The supervisors, clerks, treasurers, school inspectors, and justices of the peace from 1846 to 1880, were as follows:

- 1846.—Supervisor, Uri Kinney; Clerk, H. H. Adams; Treasurer, Nathan Cook; School Inspector, W. O. Matthews; Justice of the Peace, Orrin Sisson.
- 1847.—Supervisor, John McKinney; Clerk, H. H. Adams; Treasurer, Nathan Cook; School Inspector, W. S. Corey.
- 1848.—Supervisor, Uri Kinney; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, Nathan Cook; School Inspector, W. O. Matthews; Justice of the Peace, Manasseh Kern.
- 1849.—Supervisor, Orrin Sisson; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, John Nesbitt; School Inspector, W. S. Corey.
- 1850.—Supervisor, Manasseh Kern; Clerk, E. A. Park; Treasurer, W. Gibson; School Inspector, A. H. Hathaway; Justice of the Peace, Roderick Bell.
- 1851.—Supervisor, J. McKinney; Clerk, E. A. Park; Treasurer, J. Nesbitt; School Inspector, W. H. Paddock; Justice of the Peace, J. McKinney.
- 1852.—Supervisor, Luther Kinney; Clerk, J. McKinney; Treasurer, J. Nesbitt; School Inspector, A. H. Hathaway; Justice of the Peace, Manasseh Kern.
- 1853.—Supervisor, J. McKinney; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, J. Nesbitt; School Inspector, Asahel Bryant; Justice of the Peace, Elias Harmon.
- 1854.—Supervisor, J. McKinney; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, J. Nesbitt; School Inspector, W. S. Corey; Justice of the Peace, Isaac Hall.
- 1855.—Supervisor, W. S. Corey; Clerk, S. I. Burnett; Treasurer, Harvey Barker; School Inspector, W. H. Paddock; Justice of the Peace, C. Hollister.
- 1856.—Supervisor, W. S. Corey; Clerk, Thomas Barker; Treasurer, John Nesbitt; School Inspector, J. B. Sackett; Justice of the Peace, Manasseh Kern.
- 1857.—Supervisor, Asahel Bryant; Clerk, Thomas Barker; Treasurer, John Nesbitt; School Inspector, Asahel Bryant; Justice of the Peace, Elias Harmon.
- 1858.—Supervisor, Sanford Corey; Clerk, L. S. Dailey; Treasurer, John Nesbitt; School Inspector, C. Hollister; Justice of the Peace, Isaac Hall.
- 1859.—Supervisor, Sanford Corey; Clerk, Amos Hall; Treasurer, O. Sisson; School Inspector, Joseph McKay; Justice of the Peace, Dean Longcoy.
- 1860.—Supervisor, J. Barker; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, Asahel Bryant; School Inspector, C. Hollister; Justice of the Peace, M. Kern.
- 1861.—Supervisor, J. Barker; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, Asahel Bryant; School Inspector, Asahel Bryant; Justice of the Peace, C. Hollister.
- 1862.—Supervisor, C. Hollister; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, Aaron Norton; School Inspector, A. H. Hathaway; Justice of the Peace, S. D. Harper.
- 1863.—Supervisor, C. Hollister; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, Aaron Norton; School Inspector, A. Bryant; Justice of the Peace, A. H. Hathaway.
- 1864.—Supervisor, W. Anderson; Clerk, Isaac Hall; Treasurer, Aaron Norton; School Inspector, W. Anderson; Justice of the Peace, M. Kern.
- 1865.—Supervisor, F. B. Adams; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, J. Atwell; School Inspector, A. Bryant; Justice of the Peace, S. Corey.
- 1866.—Supervisor, O. Williams; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, A. H. Norton; School Inspector, J. H. Hall; Justice of the Peace, L. B. Dewey.
- 1867.—Supervisor, J. Barker; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, A. H. Norton; School Inspector, R. M. J. Hall; Justice of the Peace, J. A. Edmonds.
- 1868.—No record.
- 1869.—Supervisor, O. Williams; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, J. C. McLane; School Inspector, J. H. Hall; Justice of the Peace, M. Kern.
- 1870.—No record.
- 1871.—Supervisor, S. Corey; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, R. M. J. Hall; School Inspector, A. Bryant; Justice of the Peace, M. Kern.
- 1872.—Supervisor, C. A. Van Riper; Clerk, A. H. Hathaway; Treasurer, R. M. J. Hall; School Inspector, J. H. Hall; Justice of the Peace, T. Alexander.
- 1873.—Supervisor, O. Williams; Clerk, J. W. Burlington; Treasurer, J. C. McLane; School Inspector, J. H. Hall; Justice of the Peace, J. A. Edmonds.
- 1874.—Supervisor, O. Williams; Clerk, J. W. Burlington; Treasurer, R. V. Munger; School Inspector, J. H. Hall; Justice of the Peace, A. J. Weldon.
- 1875.—Supervisor, O. Williams; Clerk, J. W. Burlington; Treasurer, R. V. Munger; School Inspector, James Nash; Justice of the Peace, E. Harmon.
- 1876.—Supervisor, O. Williams; Clerk, J. W. Burlington; Treasurer, A. J. Hall; School Inspector, James Nash; Justice of the Peace, H. Corey.
- 1877.—Supervisor, J. C. McLane; Clerk, J. W. Burlington; Treasurer, Frank Cooley; School Inspector, James Nash; Justice of the Peace, R. A. Ward.
- 1878.—Supervisor, E. Warner; Clerk, J. W. Burlington; Treasurer, Frank Cooley; School Inspector, James Nash; Justice of the Peace, H. J. Kellogg.
- 1879.—Supervisor, J. C. McLane; Clerk, J. W. Burlington; Treasurer, J. H. Hall; School Inspector, James Nash; Justice of the Peace, C. A. Van Riper.

The Township Board for 1879 was composed of J. C. McLane, Jason Atwell, and J. W. Burlington. A neat town hall at the Centre, built in 1869, serves for all meetings connected with public affairs.

#### CHURCHES.

In 1837, Rev. Samuel L. Julian, a Free-Will Baptist preacher, settled in Porter, and immediately organized in the Kinney settlement a church of that denomination, which for a time flourished briskly. Julian removed to the far West in 1838, after selling his farm to Jacob Wright. After Mr. Julian's time Elder Dodge, a Baptist minister, preached in the settlement. In the west, Rev. Wilder Mack, a Protestant Methodist preacher, held occasional services at the house of George S. Freas. Harvey

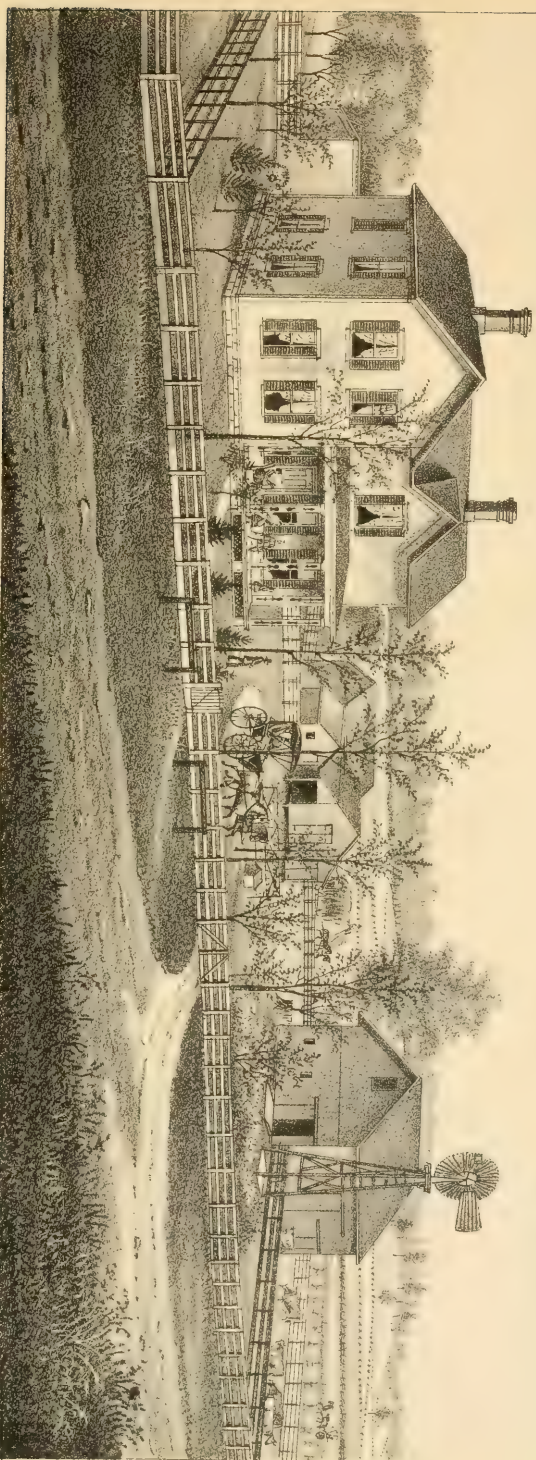




SAML. BARTLETT.



MRS. SAML. BARTLETT.



RESIDENCE OF SAMUEL BARTLETT, PORTER, MICHIGAN.





Barker, from Wayne County, was a settler in 1841, and was also a local Methodist Episcopal preacher. For some time after his settlement he preached every Sunday at the dwelling-house of some settler.

*The First Methodist Episcopal Church of Porter.*—A Methodist Episcopal class was organized in Porter as far back as 1844 at Gravel Lake, and meetings were held in Roderick Bell's cooper-shop, as well as in town school-houses. The first class-leader of whom there is any recollection was Mr. Mitchelson, after whom, in 1847, Myron Hall was chosen. The class was on the Paw Paw circuit, and its first pastor was Rev. Mr. Reynolds. The Methodist Episcopal classes now in Porter—three in number—are attached to the Lawton charge, of which Rev. T. T. George is pastor. Their aggregate membership is 75, and they are called respectively South Porter, Porter Centre, and Number Nine, their places of worship being township school-houses.

*A Free-Will Baptist Church* was organized in 1858 by Rev. Edward Root, of Ohio, who then came to Porter as a settler. He was the church's pastor continuously until 1870, when he moved farther west. For the past year the church has had no pastor. Elder Daniel Osborn holds services, however, once a month. The church attendance includes about 20 members. Isaac Parish and Abner Munger are the deacons, and James Bradt the clerk.

*The First Methodist Protestant Church* was organized March 14, 1865, by Elder Samuel Reeves, as the West Porter class, in the school-house on section 17. The organizing members were B. White and wife, Augustus Weldon and wife, Merritt Tappen and wife, Elias Harmon and wife, John Stuyvesant and wife, Miles Van Sickle, Malintha Harmon, and Leonard Harmon. The Valley class was organized Jan. 3, 1866, with 33 members, and the North Porter class Feb. 8, 1866, with a membership of 13. The West Porter class was attached to the Van Buren circuit, in which it was the first. The pastors who succeeded Elder Reeves were Revs. Nichols, Bayne, Newell, Reed, Phillips, Byers, Murray, and Clarke. Elder Reeves, the first pastor, is in charge now for the second time. The present membership of the three classes is 80.

In 1867 the society erected, on section 20, the fine church building which is now in use. The church trustees now serving are Augustus Weldon, Henry Corey, Warren Wood, Elias Harmon, and James Ellis.

*The Christian Advent Church*, worshipping in the Bell school-house, was organized in 1871 by Rev. James Ferris, of Buchanan, at the Porter Centre school-house, with 25 members. Mr. Ferris continued to preach until 1878, since when no regular services have been held. The membership is now about 30. John Carver is the deacon and Peter Rock the clerk.

#### SCHOOLS.

The first school-teacher in Porter of whom there appears to be any recollection was Warren S. Corey (brother to Nelson Corey), who taught in the Kinney settlement. Sarah, daughter of Nathan Cook, taught the first school in the Bell neighborhood, and the second one at Porter Centre,—the first teacher at the latter place being Josiah Judson. Loring Barker taught a school in 1841 in Miles

Van Sickle's log cabin. The township has now ten school districts, of which six were organized in 1845. The appended table will show the condition of the public schools as per official report for the year 1879:

Number of districts (whole, 7; fractional, 3).....	10
" " scholars of school age.....	397
Average attendance.....	348
Value of school property.....	\$1650
Number of teachers.....	22
Total expenses for the year.....	\$1587

The school directors for 1879 were George D. Boyce, Charles Hooper, J. W. Burlington, L. M. Walden, C. W. Lohr, A. J. Hall, D. Cornish, D. C. Van Antwerp, J. H. Hall, S. Beach.

#### PORTER GRANGE, No. 23, P. of H.

This grange was organized April 26, 1873, with 19 members. The first Master was George D. Boyce, whose successors in that office have been James W. Burlington, Elijah Warner, and John McLane.

The present membership is 50, and the officers as follows: John McLane, M.; Russell V. Munger, O.; George H. Weldon, L.; Elias Harmon, Chaplain; Mrs. Elijah Warner, Sec.; Mrs. Manasseh Kern, Treas.; Leonard Bates, Steward; Henry Yetter, Assistant Steward; Mrs. George Weldon, Pomona; Miss Mary Kern, Flora; Mrs. Samuel Bartlett, Ceres; Mrs. J. P. Barker, Stewardess. Regular sessions are held at the town hall, Porter Centre.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### SAMUEL BARTLETT.

The grandfather of this gentleman, Asaph Bartlett, was a native of Massachusetts, as was also his father, William L. Bartlett. The latter, at the age of nineteen, married Abigail Warren, and that couple were the parents of five children,—three sons and two daughters. Of these Samuel Bartlett was the oldest, having been born in Genesee Co., N. Y., Feb. 16, 1816, to which county his parents had moved from Massachusetts, and where they occupied a farm. At the age of sixteen years Samuel Bartlett was deprived of his mother, and from that time until he was twenty-one he attended school winters and worked for monthly wages during the summers. His school days were over after he became of age, but his days of laboring for hire were not, and for seven years he found employment at different occupations, a portion of the time being spent in a store.

The latter was detrimental to his health, and he was forced to begin again on a farm. March 24, 1844, he was married to Miss Charlotte Parsons, daughter of David and Lucy Parsons. She was born in Le Roy, Genesee Co., N. Y., July 9, 1825, and was one of a family of six children, of whom but two were sons. Her grandfather's name was Aaron Parsons; her grandmother was of Welsh descent. Her parents were natives of Vermont—the rugged "Green Mountain State." Samuel Bartlett and wife became the parents of one child, a daughter, Helen A., born Feb. 8, 1849. She became the wife of Russel Munger.

After Mr. Bartlett was married he worked a farm for two

years on shares, after which he, in company with his brother, purchased one hundred acres of land, and farmed it together until 1853, when they sold it. In 1856, his health being poor and a change appearing necessary, Mr. Bartlett came to Michigan, and purchased forty acres on section 25, Porter township, Van Buren County, including the site of his present residence. He has since added forty acres to his farm, and the whole is excellent in quality. It was covered with heavy timber when he came into possession, and in the respect of clearing he had all the experience of the earlier pioneers. Mr. Bartlett's mind in earlier years was imbued with the teachings of the Baptist Church, but his religious views are at present of a liberal nature. He allows all the privilege of believing as they choose, and respects their opinions. His political status is that of a Democrat, but he has never taken an active part in township politics.

#### SANFORD COREY.

Sanford Corey, the sixth in a family of nine children,—three sons and six daughters,—was born in the State of New York, May 7, 1821. In 1823 his father removed, with the family, to Ohio, and in 1835 the son came with an uncle, Samuel Corey, to Michigan, and lived with him five years. He then found employment at clearing land by contract, and soon purchased a tract for himself in Kalamazoo County, which he subsequently sold, and made another purchase of sixty acres on section 26, in Porter township, Van Buren Co. To this he has added from time to time, and now owns a fine farm of two hundred acres. Jan. 31, 1844, Mr. Corey was married to Olivia J., daughter of Jabez and Eleanor Matthews, who was born April 25, 1826. The children of Mr. and Mrs. Corey were the following: Oliva S., born Aug. 15, 1845, died Oct. 17, 1876; Charles M., born Sept. 17, 1847, died April 21, 1866; Ella M., born April 18, 1852. Mr. Corey was one of the first to settle and clear a farm in this portion of the township, and it is related that the stories he told of his experience in those early days were interesting and amusing. His wife died Nov. 9, 1875, and he survived her only until Aug. 1, 1876. His daughter Ella, who causes this sketch to be inserted in this work, was married, Sept. 28, 1873, to Benjamin S. Harris, a native of Kalamazoo, at which place his people settled at an early date. He had one brother and one sister. Mr. Corey was a member of, and an active worker in, the Free-Will Baptist Church. In his political views he was a Democrat, and held various positions of trust in the township, including the offices of supervisor and justice of the peace. He was very much respected by his fellow-citizens, and his loss was sincerely regretted. His early educational advantages were quite limited.

#### NELSON COREY.

Nelson Corey was born in Vermont, Aug. 19, 1816, and was the fourth son in a family of nine children. His father, Jacob Corey, was a native of Vermont, and was married at the age of eighteen to Miss Betsey Durham, she being but sixteen years old. In the year 1818 he moved to Ashtabula, Ohio, where he remained until his death, which oc-

curred in 1828. Nelson was then twelve years of age, and from that time until he was twenty-one he worked by the month. In the spring of 1837 he came to Michigan, and in 1840 bought his first piece of land, on section 26, Porter township. On the 12th of May, 1842, he married Miss



NELSON COREY.

Lucina Kinney, whose people were very early settlers in the township, and lived happily until Aug. 2, 1855, when death separated them. Mr. and Mrs. Corey were the parents of seven children, as follows: Sanford, born April 8, 1843, died July 16, 1843; Edward S., born October 1, 1844; Henry J., born May 26, 1846; Martha L., born May 14, 1848; Horace H., born November 26, 1849; Almon W., born August 12, 1853; Willis N., born August 2, 1855. Mr. Corey was married, in January, 1856, to Delila Fletcher, daughter of one of the early settlers of the township, and to them were born two children,—Delcena R., November 11, 1857, and Mary U., March 3, 1859. With this wife Mr. Corey lived until July 30, 1865, when death again entered his home and left him a widower. His children are all living, except two, some being settled in Michigan and others farther west. Mr. Corey is an active member of the Protestant Methodist Church. In politics he is a Republican. Since the death of his wife he has resided with his son Henry, who married Rohama Anderson, a daughter of one of the pioneers of the county. Mr. Corey is now sixty-five years of age, and has lived in Michigan forty-three years. He has witnessed the transition of a wilderness into a garden, and sees a productive and beautiful region in the place of a land covered with a mighty and unbroken forest. The history of Van Buren County would scarcely be complete without some account of the life of Mr. Corey.

#### RUSSEL V. MUNGER.

This gentleman—a view of whose home appears in this volume—was born in Ohio, August 22, 1837, and came to Van Buren County with his father, Luke Munger, in 1839. When he had reached the age of twenty-one years he went to Minnesota, with a capital of fifty dollars, and pre-empted



one hundred and sixty acres of land, upon which he remained about one year, and returned to Michigan to assist his father with his farm duties. In June, 1861, he sold his Minnesota land for five hundred dollars, and in August, 1862, purchased forty acres on section 34, in this township (Porter). That was disposed of in 1864, and he bought sixty acres on which he now resides, on section 28; to this he has added until his present farm consists of one hundred and forty-nine acres. On the 13th of August, 1865, Mr. Munger was married to Helen A., daughter and only child of Samuel and Charlotte Bartlett, who came to Michigan in 1856 from the State of New York. Her parents are residents of the township of Porter. Mr. and Mrs. Munger are the parents of four children, as follows: Frank R., born November 24, 1868, died March 27, 1871; Charlotte E., born June 10, 1872; Berenice A., born July 23, 1874, died March 6, 1875; Alberta M., born April 20, 1878. Mrs. Munger was born February 8, 1849. Mr. Munger is a Democrat in politics, and has held various township offices; is enthusiastic and energetic in all his undertakings, and has been blessed with prosperity.

#### MANASSEH KERN.

The grandfather of this gentleman came from Germany to Pennsylvania at an early day, and settled in Lehigh County. His son, John Nicholas Kern, was born in that county in 1764, and was one of a family of ten children,—



MANASSEH KERN.

seven sons and three daughters. He was married to Catharine Sager, and was a farmer by occupation. His children were ten in number, as were his father's, and divided in the same ratio, and of these the gentleman whose name appears at the head of this notice was the youngest, his birth occurring in the same county in Pennsylvania, Oct. 31, 1809. When he was ten years old he suffered the loss of his father, after which he remained with his mother until he was eighteen, when he commenced to learn the tobaccoist's trade, at which he worked about eighteen years. In 1840 he was married to Miss Caroline Herlan, daughter of Jacob

and Caroline Herlan, she being the oldest in a family of five children, who were all girls but one. She was born in Germany Feb. 7, 1820, and came to America with her father in 1832, the family settling in New York. In 1836 they removed to Detroit, Mich., where the daughter was married to Mr. Kern. For five years after their marriage Mr. and Mrs. Kern resided in Detroit, and in the spring of 1846 came to Van Buren County and settled upon the present home, in the township of Porter, he having purchased it ten years before. It was then entirely new, not a spot cleared even large enough on which to erect a house. To his first purchase of one hundred and sixty acres one hundred and twenty have since been added, aggregating two hundred and eighty acres. Mr. and Mrs. Kern are the parents of six children, as follows: Frances Albina, born Oct. 24, 1841, married John W. Alexander; Caroline Catherine, born Jan. 22, 1844, died Feb. 21, 1852; Mary Cornelia, born Nov. 19, 1845; Clara Maria, born March 5, 1848, married Alfred Bayliss, who is a teacher at Sterling, Ill., where Mr. Alexander is also living and practicing law; Elizabeth Warren, born Feb. 7, 1850, died Jan. 7, 1853; Julius M., born June 10, 1853, married Margia, daughter of James Young, and now living in this township. Mary C. Kern, unmarried, is living at home. Mr. Kern's education was acquired by attending the district schools during the winters, his summers being spent at hard labor. He is not a member of any religious denomination, and is liberal in his views on religious subjects, but his life has been one of uprightness. In politics he is a Republican, although not an active politician. He has held the office of supervisor one term, and has been a justice of the peace for twenty years.

## CHAPTER LXVII.

### SOUTH HAVEN TOWNSHIP.\*

Boundaries, Topography, and Soil—Settlements and Settlers—Early Roads—Township Organization—List of Township Officers—Village of South Haven—Banking—Societies and Orders—Schools—Religious Societies—Fruit Interests of South Haven.

#### BOUNDARIES, TOPOGRAPHY, AND SOIL.

THE township contains eighteen full sections and seven fractional sections along the lake-shore. It is the north-west corner township in the county, and is bounded on the north by Allegan County, on the east by the township of Geneva, on the south by the township of Covert, and on the west by Lake Michigan. Along the shore rise high clay bluffs, ranging from thirty to fifty feet in height, many of them crowned with the original forests of hemlock and pine. From this elevation the land rises gradually in undulating slopes for about a mile, when a plateau is reached having an altitude of about one hundred and ten feet from the surface of the lake. This table-land declines towards the lake on the north and recedes from it on the south.

It is watered by the Black River and its south branch in the north part of the township, and a small stream that

\* By A. N. Hungerford.

risers in section 27 flows northerly through sections 21 and 22, and empties into the lake. The Black River flows through a narrow valley near its mouth, and swampy, marshy lands in almost its entire course, and its dark waters are stained with the decay of the forests through which it flows. The township in its original state was heavily covered with a heavy growth of pine, hemlock, walnut, oak, maple, basswood, whitewood, and other woods.

The extract given below, is from an address delivered before the South Haven Pomological Society by J. E. Bidwell, and it gives a faithful description of the soil of South Haven:

"The country adjoining the village of South Haven is favored by nature with the greatest conceivable variety of soil and exposure, including light sand and heavy clay, or rich sand, gravel, and clay loam, separate or mixed in every conceivable proportion, or all combined in the most desirable compound, including all necessary vegetable or mineral properties required by the particular appetite of certain plants for their peculiarly constructed organization, or by those exacting a portion of all covering deep slopes, undulating tracts, dry, level prairie, or moist bottom-lands, which the winds and waters of past ages have separated, or mingled in different proportions, so that no kind of soil or situation could be desired without finding it readily and at a reasonable price. In fact, all departments of agriculture, from the least even to the greatest, can be successfully carried on here, from flourishing vegetable-gardens, prosperous wheat-fields, and verdant meadows, to permanent orchards. True, there is necessarily some poor land, but the proportion of good is tenfold greater, and the very good even tenfold greater than the good."

The climate is very favorable to successful fruit-raising, and the attention of the people of the township is largely directed to that industry.

#### SETTLEMENT AND SETTLERS.

The territory to the southward, around St. Joseph, had been occupied by settlers years before the white man had invaded any part of this or adjoining townships. The first to explore the region was Jay R. Monroe, a native of Surrey, N. H., who, while still a boy, moved with his father's family to Hamilton, Madison Co., N. Y., whence in 1826 he came to Detroit, and in company with Mr. Campau's men made the circuit of the lakes as an employee in the fur-trade. After his return he went in the employ of Gen. Cass and Mr. Campau, locating lands for a few years, and then returned to New York. In 1830 he removed to Prairie Ronde, Mich., and was traveling through the State much of the time, examining and locating lands for others. His commissions were applied to the purchase of land for himself. He was the first to pass through what is now South Haven, and in 1833 he built the first house where South Haven now is. He was a bachelor at that time, and a family by the name of Thomas was placed in the house. While the family lived here a child was born and died, this being the first birth and death in the township. Mr. Monroe made a village plat,\* and provided for a school lot. In 1836 he sold other lands for \$6000 to Thomas

Sheldon, Charles E. Stuart, and others, and was to keep a family on the place for a year. A family named Fink lived there until November, 1836, when Henry Monroe, a brother of Jay R., with his wife and child, came into the house and remained till spring. Mr. Jay R. Monroe, with Charles U. Cross, of Bangor, in 1835 laid out a road from South Haven to Paw Paw, and previously had laid out a road from South Haven to Prairie Ronde. After the Monroe property passed into other hands, nothing was done by way of improvement till Marvin Hannahs purchased the land laid down in the plat of 1852, which embraces all of the southwest quarter of section 10 lying south of the river. Mr. Monroe married Miss Fanny Rawson, a native of Massachusetts, Sept. 10, 1836, and lived for nearly a year at Kalamazoo. He was acting as land-agent for Eastern capitalists, and continued his agency until it was transferred to his son Charles, who still retains it, and has yet lands belonging to those early land companies. In the spring of 1837, Mr. Monroe moved to lands he had taken up in the township of Lawrence, where he remained several years, and where were born his children,—Charles J., Andrew H., Isaac, Lyman S., J. Randolph, and one daughter (Mrs. Eunice Moore, of South Haven.) He became one of the largest land-owners in this section of country, owning at one time 80 eighty-acre lots. He was commissioner of the poor for twenty-five years; appointed judge under the Territorial government, and was the adviser and friend of the early settlers. He was one of the first organizers of the State Agricultural Society and of the Van Buren County Pioneer Society. Three of his sons are now in the banking business at South Haven, with a branch bank at Bangor. Charles J. is also engaged in fruit-raising and as a surveyor, which occupation he followed from 1860 to 1868. He is acquainted with the land and its titles in all parts of this and adjoining townships.

In 1838, Daniel Pierce came in from Schoolcraft with the first horse-team. He purchased of Mr. Monroe 160 acres of land in the northwest quarter of section 14, where he now lives, and built upon it a cabin, in which he lived at times, though he made Kalamazoo his home. He was a trapper and caught many wolves, receiving the State bounty of \$13, securing in that year (1838) 13 scalps. He owned a nursery at Kalamazoo, and lived here but little, using his hut simply as a hunting cabin. Indians were plenty during the sugar season, coming up the lake in fleets of canoes carrying sail when the wind was favorable. Daniel Pierce, now living, has seen 17 bark canoes at the mouth of the river at one time. A small number of Indians remained along the lake-shore and in the valleys of the Paw Paw and St. Joseph Rivers.

A part of the sugar manufactured was sewed up with deer-sinews in birch-bark bags, called mokoks, and buried in the ground for the winter's supply. Small patches of corn were planted by them also, which was ready for the harvest on their return in the fall.

Daniel Pierce was the only man living in the territory now South Haven who voted in the spring of 1838. Twenty-two votes were cast.

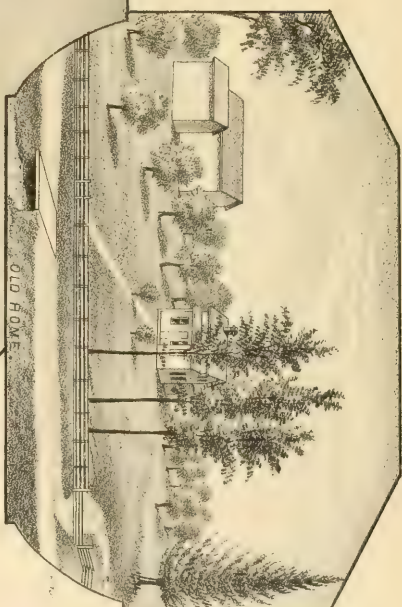
In the fall of that year a three-masted schooner, the "La-porte," Captain Webster, was wrecked near to where now is the south pier. Clark Pierce carried the baggage of the

\* It is now embraced in the Hannahs plat of 1852.





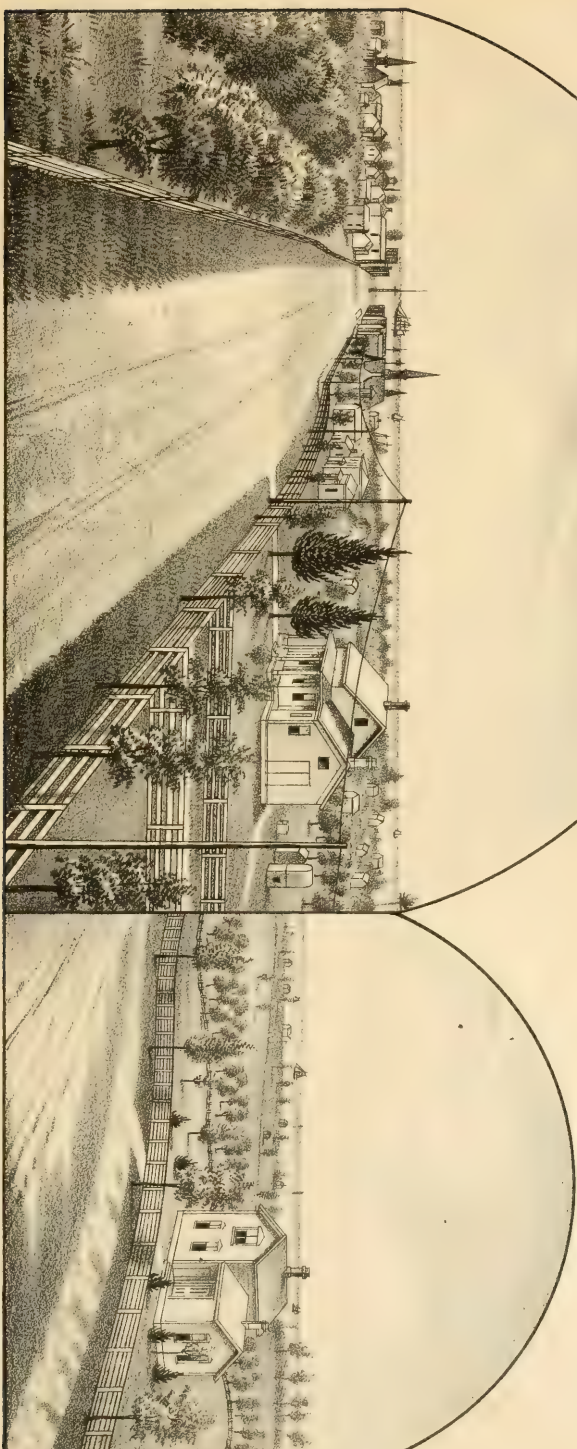
W. H. HURLBUT.



OLD HOME.



MRS. W. H. HURLBUT.



RESIDENCE OF W. H. HURLBUT, SOUTH HAVEN, MICHIGAN.

FARM TENANT HOUSE, SOUTH HAVEN, MICH.





sailors to Paw Paw, and they went on foot. In the spring she was burned by the owners for the iron fastenings.

About 1841 an effort was made to establish a mail-route from South Haven to Schoolcraft, and a Mr. Harrison, living at Gourd-Neck Prairie, took the contract to deliver the mail once a week. He made the trial once, but could not find the postmaster, and returned with his mail to Schoolcraft. Daniel Pierce had been appointed postmaster, but refused to act.

On the road from the mouth of the river (now South Haven) there were but few inhabitants; one settlement of lawless depredators lived on the route, at a place called Owlsville, from the nightly visits of the inhabitants to the farms, hen-roosts, and pig-pens of the country round.

In August, 1843, Edwin Forrest, the famous tragedian, purchased an interest in part of what is now known as the Dyckman & Woodman Plat, and Isaac Willard, about the same time, bought where the Tubbs & Wells Mill afterwards stood, also in the land north of Phoenix Street, in the southeast fractional quarter of section 3.

The land that formerly belonged to Mr. Monroe had passed into the hands of William A. Booth, Dr. Abbott, and others, of New York City. In June of 1845, Louis A. Booth, brother of William A., and agent of the company, Clark Pierce, with his wife and two boys,—Almon and Irving,—came to the mouth of the Black River, and took possession of Mr. Monroe's cabin, on the bank. Mr. Booth and Pierce made a plan for a house, and went north about twenty miles to Uncle Jimmy Hall for their lumber, spending one night in the woods. The remainder of the lumber needed was drawn from Breedsville. In due time the house was finished, and July 18, 1845, Clark Pierce and his family moved into it. This was the first frame house west of Bangor. Mr. Pierce remained here till April, and was then succeeded in the house by a Mr. White, with his wife and child. Dr. Camp, of Bangor, whose wife was a sister of Mrs. White, joined them. A Mr. Branch and son also came on from the East in the interest of the company.

In the winter of 1845-46, Dr. Abbott, one of the partners, visited the place, and preparations were made to build a mill near the mouth of the river. Workmen were employed getting out timber, but for some reason the operations ceased, and the timber was shipped to St. Joseph. Afterwards a German family by the name of Shawfinch occupied the house, and his wife and child died there. From that time the house became the resort only of a few stragglers through the country.

In 1849, Clark Pierce with his family, and Mr. Wood and wife, C. B. Gross and wife, living in what is now Geneva, started on horseback and with an ox-sled drawn by horses to the house on the lake, and there celebrated the Fourth of July of that year.

In August, 1850, Mr. Joseph Sturgis, foreman of Marvin Hannahs, with a corps of assistants, consisting of Ai Blood, Joseph Dow, and Horace Thomas, came down the river from Jericho and commenced the erection of a steam mill on the site of what is now known as the Quaker Dock. Other houses were erected, which were soon occupied by Horace Thomas, S. B. Morehouse, and others, Mr. Sturgis living in the house previously built by Mr. Pierce.

Marvin Hannahs was a native of Litchfield, Conn., and a tanner. He moved to Utica, N. Y., in 1831, and in 1837 to Albion, Calhoun Co., Mich., where he was largely engaged in lumbering and other pursuits. He purchased land in Jericho, Geneva township, and erected the first frame house at that place, and built a tannery. Land was purchased at this place about 1850, and Capt. J. H. Hendryx, now of Decatur, and Joseph Sturgis were sent to South Haven, the former as business manager. Mr. Hannahs platted the village in 1852. His son, George Hannahs, became interested with his father, and came to South Haven in 1864 to reside and take charge of the property. He was elected the first president of Albion, and also of South Haven. He was in the mercantile and milling business for eight years, and opened a branch in Albion, which was carried on for a few years.

Hon. George Hannahs was elected to the State Senate November, 1870; delegate to the Cincinnati National Republican Convention. He is a trustee of the Eastern Asylum at Pontiac. His father, Marvin Hannahs, died Feb. 7, 1866, at Albion, where he settled in 1835.

After Mr. Sturgis had moved to South Haven and commenced operations, others soon came in. Mr. Hannahs had a house built, and Horace Thompson and his wife occupied it. In the same year Ai Blood built a large double house, which is still standing. He lived in Chicago, and did not come in until the September following. He was a carpenter, and was engaged afterwards in building lighters for Dyckman, Hall & Co., to load vessels in the lake outside the mouth of the river. Joseph Sturgis built a saw-mill, with one upright saw, on what is now Quaker Dock. Upon the commencement of Dyckman, Hall & Co.'s operations, Mr. Sturgis became one of the partners, his property becoming a part of the stock. Mr. Sturgis died in 1855.

Stephen B. Morehouse, a native of New Jersey, came to South Haven in January, 1852, with wife and two daughters, and moved first into the unoccupied house built by Ai Blood in the previous year. Frank Gray came a few days after with his wife and one child, and lived in a shanty, where he remained three years.

Alpha Tubbs, with wife and daughter, and Nelson Tubbs, with wife and three children, came in the spring of 1852, and built a house and mill on the north side of the river. This year the Fourth of July was observed. Notice had been sent out to all the settlers, and about 100 gathered in to the feast and to celebrate the birthday of the nation. The exercises were held in front of Joseph Sturgis' house. A fawn had been shot by the young men, and was roasted for the occasion. The tables were set out-of-doors, and the day passed off pleasantly.

A frame school-house about 18 by 24 feet was built near the lake in the summer of 1852, and was taught by Miss Ella Barnes, an adopted daughter of S. B. Morehouse. The pupils were seven,—Joseph Sturgis, Jr. (nicknamed the Judge), Julia and Harriet Morehouse, three children of Nelson Tubbs, and "Tip" Ormsby.

Joseph Sturgis was appointed postmaster about 1855. His deputy was S. B. Morehouse, who soon succeeded to the postmastership.

The first religious services were held at the house of Joseph Sturgis, in April, 1852, by a Baptist minister, and a few weeks later the Rev. Mr. Doughty, a Methodist minister, preached in the dining-room of S. B. Morehouse. Notices were sent out to the people, and these services were well attended.

December 25, 1852, a Christmas party was given at the house of Mr. Morehouse, at which every man, woman, and child in the settlement was invited.

Mr. S. B. Morehouse purchased 80 acres on the northwest quarter of the northeast quarter of section 10, and in 1854 set out three acres in fruit (mostly apples), purchasing his trees in Kalamazoo. During the season of 1853 he was out of corn, and the roads were bad and provisions scarce. During this state of affairs he was awakened early one Sunday morning by a rap at his door, and on answering it he found a man there, who said he had a boat-load of corn (100 bushels) that he wanted to exchange for wood. The exchange was soon effected. The vessel was the "Petrel," with capacity for carrying 12 cords. Mr. Morehouse thus became the first to ship cord-wood from South Haven to Chicago. Soon after the advent of the "Petrel," the little schooner "Lapwing" came to this port, in command of Capt. Mitchell, who was for several years the only navigator from the port of South Haven.

July 1, 1854, the woods caught fire on Mr. Morehouse's farm, and in fighting it he overworked, and produced a sickness by which he was confined eight months, and from which he never entirely recovered.

Dr. Hathaway, of Breedsville, was the first physician who practiced in this region, and while here on a professional visit in 1854 was so much pleased with the country that he purchased two acres of Mr. Morehouse, and soon after erected a house and lived here, following his profession.

The first wedding in the township was that of Leland Spencer and Ella Barnes, at the house of Mr. Morehouse, who, being a justice of the peace, performed the ceremony. Mr. Morehouse was supervisor of the town in 1861, and filled at various times other positions. He died in 1862, leaving a widow and two daughters,—Mrs. Charles J. Monroe and Mrs. A. B. Chase, now of Bangor. Mrs. Morehouse is still living, and resides at Bangor. Alpha and Nelson Tubbs, from Climax Prairie, commenced operations in the spring of 1852, on the north side of the river, building a mill and boarding-house. This mill remained till 1861, and was destroyed by fire. The land is known as Tubbs' addition. About 1860 the mill was sold, and Nelson moved away. Alpha remained a few years longer, and in 1866 sold the remainder of his land and removed to Illinois. Clark and Samuel G. Sheffer came in the fall of this year, and settled north of the village, where they still live.

Evert B. Dyckman, of Schoolcraft, Mich., visited the townships of Columbia and Pine Plains before 1852, and located about 1000 acres in those townships, attracted by the excellence of their pine timber. In the fall of 1852 his son, A. S. Dyckman, was sent out to make a further examination of the lands, and to decide upon the most feasible way to market the lumber. He came on foot down the north side of the middle branch of South Black

River. His only companion was a hunter known as "Lop Horn Loomis." Except a few Indians, no inhabitants were on the line between Humphreysburg and the mouth of the river. At the mouth of Barber Creek they passed one night with the Indians, and breakfasted next morning on venison. From there Mr. Dyckman traveled alone to the mouth of the river, arriving about midnight. Here he remained a few days, and returned to Schoolcraft, when arrangements were made by Evert and A. S. Dyckman, of Schoolcraft, and A. V. Pantland and C. H. Morrill, of Paw Paw, for the purchase of lands owned by James B. Murray, of New York City. The lands located were the west half of the northeast quarter of section 10, and all of the north half of section 2 lying south of the river, and the north half of the north half of section 1.

February 1, 1853, A. S. Dyckman and Joseph S. Wagoner arrived at South Haven with two wagons loaded with supplies. Mr. Wagoner was a carpenter, and the first work was to haul lumber from Hannahs & Sturgis' mill, and to erect houses. They also built a company store and a building which became the Forest House. In March, 1853, Mr. Morrill retired from the firm and Mr. Sturgis became a partner. A large lumber business was carried on, and the village numbered about 200 inhabitants, mostly employees of the different mills at the mouth of the river. An operation called snagging was commenced in the fall of 1853, and was continued till about the 1st of January; this consisted in clearing the middle branch of the river for a distance of about twenty miles, to the pine lands of Dyckman & Co., and was a work of great labor.

The supplies for this little colony for the winter for 1853 were bought in Chicago, and shipped mostly in the scow "Drew." She was anchored about a mile from shore, and her cargo was unloaded with flat-boats, taking two days and nights. The goods were landed safely on the beach, and consisted of pork, beef, lard, butter, flour, grain, and hay. The cargo was owned mostly by Dyckman, Sturgis & Co., Tubbs, McClelland & Co., and Daniel Howard, who was engaged in getting out wood and bark at the intersection of the north and middle branches of the river.

In 1857 attention having been directed to this locality as being favorable for fruit culture, Mr. A. S. Dyckman, son of Evert, planted a peach-nursery, and in 1859 set out four acres of peaches from this nursery near his present residence. Mr. Dyckman has since that time been largely interested in fruit, and is the most extensive fruit-grower in this section, having 55 to 60 acres on the home-farm, mostly in peaches, 400 apples, 150 pears and small fruits, and on the north side of the river 16 acres in peaches; up the river, on the south side, about 15 acres in peaches and small fruits. He has at the present time 8000 peach-trees. He planted and shipped in 1877 20,000 baskets, and in 1879 11,000 baskets. Mr. Dyckman was president of the State Pomological Society in 1873, and has been among the foremost in the South Haven Pomological Society.

Barney H. Dyckman and Randolph Densmore about 1857 built a tannery on the low land northwest from the bridge crossing the river, which was in operation several years. J. H. Davis made the bricks here for the arch in Hannahs' mill in 1853, and afterwards started a brick-



yard. The hotel was first kept by — Pennock, who had a wife and a family of three daughters and one son. The business of the hotel was largely supported by the milling interest of Dyckman, Hale & Co. Marshall Hale, of the firm, was a native of Vermont, and was interested as a partner with Judge Evert B. Dyckman in the purchase of land, at first for speculative purposes, afterwards to develop the country and realize from the lumber. He came here in 1833, after the completion of the store, his family coming the next year. The firm passed through many changes as one after another came, but still Judge Dyckman and Mr. Hale have property here together. Judge Dyckman is living at Schoolcraft, and Mr. Hale about 1861 moved to the same place, and in 1872 to San José, Cal., where he is engaged in mercantile business. His son George has charge of the store at South Haven.

Samuel P. Wilson, a native of Seneca Co., N. Y., came to South Haven in 1854, and taught school on the north side of the river and in the township and village for several years. Afterwards engaged in shipping wood and lumber, and in shipping on the lake. He is supervisor of the township, and has held the position for several years. Rodney Hinckley in 1855 built a log cabin on the southwest corner of fractional section 16, where T. Hoppin now lives. His wife was a carpet-weaver. He died about seven years later. His son Isaac lives in the village. William H. Schroppe came in 1855, and is still living here. Charles and George Gibson came in 1857, and settled on section 22, where they still own. James L. Reid came about the same time.

Daniel G. Wright, a native of Onondaga Co., N. Y., on Nov. 19, 1855, became a partner in the firm of Dyckman, Hale & Co. In the spring of 1856 he went to Chicago to take charge of the lumber business of the firm in that city. He remained about five years, when he returned, and is still living in South Haven. L. H. Bailey, a native of Windsor, Vt., emigrated in 1842 to Arlington, where he lived eleven years, and in 1853 bought of a Mr. Howard, of Vermont, 120 acres, where he now lives, on the west half of southwest quarter of section 11, South Haven. In 1855-56 he set out an apple-orchard, and he now has 1300 apple- and 1000 peach-trees. Mr. Bailey was agent for the Vermont Land Company, and examined and located land through Van Buren, Eaton, and Ingham Counties for them, and was through here before Mr. Sturgis settled in 1850.

Daniel Pierce came in first in 1836 or 1837, and bought 160 acres on section 14. In 1850 he went to California, and remained there some years, and then moved to Wisconsin, but returned to his farm in South Haven in 1859, buying 40 acres adjoining, where he still lives.

In the fall of 1857, Peter Davis, who came in 1852, settled on the point where the Ludwig pier now is. At that time there was but a small clearing, but afterwards 30 acres were cleared, and part of the land set out to peaches.

Uzziah Conger, of Oswego Co., N. Y., came to South Haven Dec. 28, 1855, and in 1856 became a member of Dyckman, Hale & Co. At that time the hotel and store were built, and the saw-mill had been built the year before on the east half of the southwest quarter of section 3. Mr.

Conger was with the firm through its changes from Dyckman, Hale & Co., Hale, Wright & Co., Hale, Conger & Co., to its dissolution, and is now in business in the village.

Aaron Eames settled on section 16 before 1860, and soon set out a peach-orchard. George Breed also settled in the same section. The first school taught in the south and southeast part of town was kept by Martha Grover, in a cabin at Maple Grove Corners, on the Monroe land, about 1863. She had fourteen pupils.

John Williams, a native of New York, came in 1844 to Washtenaw Co., Mich., and in 1861 removed to South Haven, locating on the east half of the east half of section 14, where he is still living. He is the inventor of a fruit evaporator that is regarded as a great improvement on others.

Henry Hurlbut located about the same time in the east part of the town. Jefferson Archer settled earlier on section 14. William M. Hurlbut came into the territory then South Haven in 1840, and was one of the early officers, but did not remove to the present South Haven until 1863. He has represented the district in the Legislature for four years.

An enterprise connected with the early history of the village is worthy of mention, although it failed. A Quaker by the name of Halleck, from New York City, came to the village in the year 1857 or 1858 and bought land at what is known as the Quaker Dock. He took down the mill, drove piles, and built the dock, and got out large quantities of timber, preparatory to building a large store and warehouse. He had purchased a vessel in New York, and loaded it with goods. This vessel came round the lakes, but a heavy storm rising as she approached this harbor, she was driven past the mouth of the river, and was shipwrecked above St. Joseph, and the goods and machinery on board were so damaged as to be almost worthless. This disaster put an end to a project that would doubtless have inured to the prosperity of South Haven. Immediately after the disaster Mr. Halleck returned to New York.

#### EARLY ROADS.

In the year 1835 a road was opened from South Haven to Paw Paw by Jay R. Monroe and Charles U. Cross. The first road of which mention is made in the records was laid out Sept. 9, 1843, known as Wood's road, "commencing at a station on the quarter line of section 8, T. 2, R. 16 west [now Bangor], running north to the northeast corner of section 5, re-surveyed by Charles U. Cross in 1846." The laying out of a road is recorded June 4, 1845, "commencing at the east line of T. 2 south, R. 16 west [Bangor], at the N. E. corner of section 36, running south." July 8, 1845, the town-line road between South Haven and Columbia was recorded. Young's road was recorded May 23, 1846, commencing at the west line of section 35, and running north to intersection of the Waterford road on the east line of section 15. The South Haven and Hartford was recorded Oct. 18, 1845, each township agreeing to keep the road in repair within its own territory. The South Haven Lake road, "commencing 140 rods west of the N. E. corner of section 3, T. 1 S., R. 17 west, running south across the river along the centre of Paw Paw street,

still south to a stake in centre of Monroe Street," dated May 13, 1852.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION.

Upon the division of the township of Lafayette into seven townships, in the winter of 1836-37, South Haven was one of the number, and was laid out to contain the present territory of Bangor, Columbia, Geneva, and Deerfield. The act organizing South Haven reads as follows: "That all that portion of the county of Van Buren designated on the United States survey as township one south, in ranges fifteen, sixteen, and seventeen west, and township two south, in ranges sixteen and seventeen west, be and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of South Haven, and the first township-meeting therein shall be held at the house of J. R. Monroe in said township."

The early records of the township are lost, and it is not known who the first officers were, but with the exception of J. R. Monroe the residents were in what is now Bangor, Columbia, and Geneva:—Charles U. Cross in Bangor; Silas Breed, Jonathan N. Howard, A. Bobot, Samuel Watson, and J. N. Hinckley, at Breedsville; Clark Pierce in Geneva. The offices were held, school districts laid out, and early improvement made in that portion of the township.

The first records on file in the township clerk's office commence Sept. 30, 1844, when the township board met at the school-house at Breedsville, J. N. Hinckley, Horace Humphrey, Daniel Taylor, and Mason Wood being present. The accounts of the township were audited and amounted to \$95.22. It was resolved "that the election be holden on the first Monday of November at the dwelling-house of Daniel Taylor, and on the day following at the school-house in Breedsville." Pursuant to notice the township board met at the Mansion House of Daniel Taylor for the purpose of holding a general election. The polls were opened by J. N. Hinckley, Horace Humphrey, Harvey Manley, Mason Wood, Daniel Taylor, and J. N. Howard. Lyman Loomis was chosen clerk. At the close of election on that day adjournment was made to meet at the school-house on the following day. This record is of date Nov. 8, 1844, and signed J. N. Howard, Town Clerk.

The first township election of which record is found, was held at the dwelling-house of Daniel Taylor, April 7, 1845, at which the following officers were elected: Perrin M. Northrup, Supervisor; William M. Hurlbut, Township Clerk; Mason Wood, Justice of the Peace four years; Charles U. Cross, Justice of the Peace two years; Mansel M. Briggs, Justice of the Peace one year; Harvey Potter, John Smith, Hiel Swan, Commissioners of Highways; Charles U. Cross, Township Treasurer; Mason Wood and Charles U. Cross, Overseers of the Poor; Charles U. Cross and Mansel M. Briggs, School Inspectors; Charles A. Taylor and Sherman Northrup, Constables; Mason Wood, Sealer of Weights and Measures.

A settlement was made April 30, 1845, between South Haven and Columbia, the latter having been set off as a separate township, and included the present town of Geneva. The Board of Supervisors of Van Buren County set off Bangor at their annual meeting in October, 1853, and the township of Deerfield (now Covert) in 1856.

#### LIST OF TOWNSHIP OFFICERS.

The supervisors, clerks, treasurers, justices of the peace, and school inspectors of South Haven, from 1846 to 1879, inclusive, have been as follows:

##### SUPERVISORS.

1846, Perrin M. Northrup; 1847-48, William H. Hurlbut; 1849, Jesse Ball; 1850, William H. Hurlbut; 1851-52, Mansel M. Briggs; 1853, William H. Hurlbut; 1854, William B. Hathaway; 1855-56, Randolph Densmore; 1857, Aaron S. Dyckman; 1858, Barney H. Dyckman; 1859, Randolph Densmore; 1860, Aaron S. Dyckman; 1861, Stephen B. Morehouse; 1862, Kirk W. Noyes; 1863, George B. Pomeroy; 1864, John Andrews; 1865-66, William H. Hurlbut; 1867-70, Kirk W. Noyes; 1871-72, Charles J. Monroe; 1873-74, Albert Thompson; 1875-79, Samuel P. Willson.

##### TOWNSHIP CLERKS.

1846, William H. Hurlbut; 1847-48, Jesse Ball; 1849, Oscar R. Southard; 1850, John L. Northrup; 1851-52, James D. Kingston; 1853, Perrin M. Northrup; 1854-56, Stephen B. Morehouse; 1857, Kirk W. Noyes; 1858-59, Edwin Densmore; 1860, Samuel A. Tripp; 1861, Edward H. Lounsbury; 1862, George B. Pomeroy; 1863-68, Elisha B. Moon; 1869-70, William E. Stewart; 1871, Elisha B. Moon; 1872-78, Augustus B. Chase; 1879, Elston Hewson.

##### TREASURERS.

1846-47, Perrin M. Northrup; 1848-49, Mansel M. Briggs; 1850, David T. Taylor; 1851-52, Mason Wood; 1853, Mansel M. Briggs; 1854, Amos J. Eggleston; 1855, Horace S. Thomas; 1856, John F. Withey; 1857-58, William B. Hathaway; 1859-60, James P. Williams; 1861-62, George H. Bradley; 1863, Horace S. Thomas; 1864-67, S. P. Wilson; 1868-69, Joseph B. Hurlbut; 1870-72, Charles Delamere; 1873-74, Peter Davis; 1875, Milton H. Rice; 1876-77, Alwyn M. Prouty; 1878-79, George B. Pomeroy.

##### JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.

1846, Mansel M. Briggs, Jesse Ball; 1847, Charles U. Cross; 1848, Charles U. Cross, Stern L. Ripley; 1849, James B. Croft; 1850, Mansel M. Briggs; 1851, Ai Blood; 1852, Stephen B. Morehouse, Daniel Van Auker, Adolphus Brown; 1853, Daniel T. Fox; 1854, Alpha Tubbs, Benoni Young, and Charles B. De Armond; 1855, James R. Reed; 1856, Stephen B. Morehouse, Horace S. Thomas, William B. Hathaway; 1857, Samuel Merry; 1858, Randolph Densmore, Wilbur Hale; 1859, Joseph S. Wagoner; 1860, Kirk W. Noyes, Enoch Conger, Rossiter Hoppin; 1861, Samuel Follett; 1862, Wm. H. Hurlbut; 1863, Joseph S. Wagoner, Richard L. Bonfoey; 1864, James Calkins, A. N. Moulton; 1865, Calvin Fletcher; 1866, George H. Bradley; 1867, Joseph B. Hurlbut, Augustus Voorhees; 1868, D. M. Phillips, William P. Bryan; 1869, Alonzo H. Chandler; 1870, Calvin Fletcher, William H. Hurlbut; 1871, George W. Byers, Alonzo M. Haynes, William P. Bryan; 1872, William P. Bryan, Uzziah Conger; 1873, Uzziah Conger; 1874, Calvin Fletcher; 1875, George W. Byers; 1876, Benjamin Tuttle; 1877, Edward M. Cook; 1878, George W. Byers, Edward M. Cook, Benjamin M. Tuttle, Calvin Fletcher; 1879, Uzziah Conger.

##### SCHOOL INSPECTORS.

1846, John L. Northrup; 1847, William H. Hurlbut; 1848, Charles U. Cross; 1849, William H. Hurlbut; 1850, Charles U. Cross; 1851, Mansel M. Briggs; 1852, Charles U. Cross; 1853, William H. Hurlbut; 1854, Samuel F. Foster, Aaron S. Dyckman; 1855, William B. Hathaway; 1856, Samuel F. Foster; 1857, Samuel A. Tripp; 1858, Barton C. Palmer; 1859, Nathaniel Grover; 1860, James Cook; 1861, Daniel G. Wright, Nathaniel Grover; 1862, Elisha Moon; 1863, Samuel Follett; 1864, A. S. Dyckman, S. A. Tripp; 1865, E. L. Andrus, D. G. Wright; 1866, E. L. Andrus, William S. Burton; 1867, A. S. Dyckman; 1868, C. J. Monroe; 1869, E. B. Moon; 1870-71, Charles J. Monroe; 1872, Benjamin F. Heckert; 1873, C. J. Monroe; 1874, William H. Wilcox; 1875, John N. Foster; 1876-78, Aaron S. Dyckman; 1879, Joseph Lanni.



SOUTH HAVEN, MICH.





## SUPERINTENDENTS OF SCHOOLS.

1875, Joseph Anderson; 1876, Charles J. Monroe; 1877-78, Charles H. Pleasants; 1879, Charles J. Monroe.

The volunteer bounty fund in 1865 was raised by tax, and amounted to \$3080.27. In 1866 the amount raised was \$1701.25; 1867, balance of amount, \$18.27; making a total of \$4799.79. Incidentals increase this amount to \$5387.17.

## VILLAGE OF SOUTH HAVEN.

The village of South Haven was incorporated by act passed in January, 1869, and an organization was effected, but it was found so imperfect that the village was reincorporated in 1871, under the corporate name of the "Village of South Haven," with a president, treasurer, three trustees, and an assessor. The territory embraced all of section 10, fractional sections 9 and 3, and a strip of land 80 rods wide on the west part of section 2, and the northwest quarter of the northwest quarter of section 11.

The first election under the reincorporation was held May 10, 1869. The following is a list of presidents, clerks, treasurers, and trustees from that time to the present:

## PRESIDENTS.

1869-70, George Hannahs; 1871-72, Foster I. Parks; 1873, Barney H. Dyckman; 1874, Calvin Fletcher; 1875-77, George Hannahs; 1878, Samuel A. Tripp; 1879, Chase H. Dickinson.

## CLERKS.

1869-70, Alonzo M. Haynes; 1871, H. H. Hunter; 1872-73, George T. Rogers; 1874-79, Henry E. Dewey.

## TREASURERS.

1869, William H. Andrews; 1870, Eugene D. Conger; 1871-79, Alwyn M. Prouty.

## TRUSTEES.

1869, Daniel Howard, Albert Thompson, Levi R. Brown, George L. Seaver, William P. Bryan, and Barney H. Dyckman; 1870, Elijah Rathbone, Calvin Fletcher, Orris C. Lathrop; 1871, Darius E. Comstock, Daniel G. Wright, Timothy Bishop; 1872, B. F. Heckert, Uzziah Conger, A. S. Dyckman; 1873, Hiland W. Sweet, William M. Patton, William P. Bryan; 1874, David R. Jones, William F. Smith, B. F. Heckert; 1875, James E. Gunsolly, Marshall J. Dickinson, Charles Delamen; 1876, Daniel G. Wright, George N. Hale, Humphrey Cain; 1877, Charles Delamore, George B. Pomeroy, John Mackey; 1878, Daniel G. Wright, Humphrey Cain, William H. Thompson; 1879, John Mackey, George B. Pomeroy, George N. Hale.

*Village Plats.*—A village plat was laid out by J. R. Monroe in 1834, but the plat declined, and the plat remained a waste of wild land.

The first plat of the present village was made by Marvin Hannahs, and bears date Feb. 18, 1852. It embraced the northwest quarter of section 10, lying south of the river, and that portion of the southwest quarter of section 3 lying south and west of the river.

The subsequent additions to the village plat have been as follows: Tubbs' addition on section 3, along the lake-shore; Dyckman, Hale & Co.'s addition, 80 acres, northwest quarter of northeast quarter of section 10; Hale, Conger & Co.'s addition, 190 acres, comprising all that portion of section 3 lying east and south of river in section 3; Hale's survey of about 40 acres on the southwest quarter of the southwest quarter of section 2; Dyckman & Woodman's addition, comprising all of the southwest quarter of section 3 west of the river; and Elkenburgh's addition, south of the

original plat, comprising the west half of the southwest quarter of section 10.

The location and advantages of South Haven are well given in an address of J. E. Bidwell, delivered in February, 1873, from which the following is quoted: "Commercially, South Haven is favorably located at the mouth of Black River,—whose dark waters are stained with the dissolution of mineral deposits and the decay of original forests and their annual foliage, replaced with thriffter trees in great variety,—from which many vessels are now annually laden with rich cargoes of choice lumber, wood, and timber, consisting principally of beech, whitewood, walnut, cherry, oak, maple, pine, and basswood, and conveyed across the lake to Chicago and other lake cities, to finish and warm their beautiful cottages and splendid mansions, their palatial stores and other commercial buildings, their numerous lines of railway and vessels,—all assisting the growth and prosperity of our great Northwest. South Haven is also the terminus of the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad, connecting a few miles out at Grand Junction, with the Michigan Lake Shore Railroad, and at Kalamazoo, forty miles distant, with the Michigan Central and other important lines of railway, pointing in every direction. South Haven is also connected by steamer and vessel with Chicago, sixty-eight miles distant, southwest, and Milwaukee, ninety miles across the lake, northwest, connecting with steamers for Detroit, Cleveland, and Buffalo eastward."

The village now contains a population of about 1600, with five churches (Congregational, Baptist, Methodist, Reformed, and Catholic), two hotels, post-office, American Express Company, telegraph-office, deputy collector of customs, light-house, railroad depot at the terminus of the South Haven Division of the Michigan Central, office of the *South Haven Sentinel*, opera-house, bank, Lake Shore Nursery, three warehouses, seven general stores, two hardware-stores, three drug-stores, two tailors' stores, four boot- and shoe-stores, one clothing-store, two jewelers' stores, four milliners' stores, two photograph-galleries, one fruit-package-factory, one fruit-evaporator, two steam saw-mills, one grist-mill, one tannery, one iron-foundry, one wooden-bowl-factory, one brick-yard, one planing-mill, one flour- and feed-store, three furniture-stores, two markets, one cooper-shop, one harness-shop, four blacksmith- and wagon-shops, two insurance-offices, two dentists, three physicians, three lawyers, one master-builder.

## BANKING.

*First National Bank.*—A private bank was started in January, 1868, by Boardman & Penniman, which firm was succeeded by S. B. Boardman, in May, 1868, and by S. B. Boardman & Co., Jan. 1, 1869. On the 1st of May, 1870, the Bank of South Haven was organized by S. B. Boardman and Charles J. Monroe, and July 1, 1871, it was chartered as the First National Bank of South Haven, with a capital of \$50,000. Silas B. Boardman, President; George Hannahs, Vice-President; Charles J. Monroe, Cashier.

*Monroe's Bank* at Bangor is under the same management as the First National Bank of South Haven. C. J. Monroe, President; S. B. Boardman, Vice-President; A. B. Chase, Cashier.

## SOCIETIES AND ORDERS.

*Literary Club.*—This society was formed in the winter of 1857–58, with S. B. Morehouse as President, A. S. Dyckman, Secretary, and numbering about 15 members. The society met once a week at the houses of the different members. Miscellaneous reading, discussions, reading of original papers, and music were the exercises. Meetings continued till about 1866, when they declined. About 1869 an unsuccessful effort was made to revive the society.

A festival was held at Masonic Hall, Feb. 22, 1876, at which meeting it was decided to again revive the club. Meetings from that time have been held weekly. About 1870 a library association was organized and incorporated. Effort is now being made to unite the club and association as one society under incorporation. Under the auspices of the club lecturers from abroad are obtained. The organization of the society in the early history of the village did much to elevate the tastes of its inhabitants, and a similar effect has resulted from its revival.

*Star of the Lake Lodge, No. 158, F. and A. M.*—This lodge was chartered Jan. 19, 1865, with the following officers: Liberty H. Bailey, W. M.; Calvin Fletcher, S. W.; Araba N. Moulton, J. W. The officers for 1879 are L. A. Leighton, W. M.; Jerry Crowley, S. W.; Sidney Holmes, J. W. The present membership is 120.

*South Haven Chapter, F. and A. M., No. 58.*—This chapter was instituted Jan. 7, 1868, with L. H. Bailey as High Priest; George L. Seaver, King; Calvin Fletcher, Scribe. The present officers are Marshall J. Dixon, High Priest; S. P. Wilson, King; John Sandlaun, Scribe. The present membership is 58.

*Council, No. 45, R. A. M.*—A dispensation was granted Dec. 4, 1875, with L. H. Bailey as Thrice Illustrious Master; Henry E. Dewey, Deputy Master; and Comp. Marshall J. Dixon, Principal Conductor of Work. The present officers are Marshall J. Dixon, Thrice Illustrious Master; H. E. Dewey, Deputy Master; George L. Seaver, Scribe.

*Neptune Lodge, No. 297, I. O. O. F.*—The lodge was instituted July 18, 1877, with the following as charter members: William E. Stewart, John M. West, Robert A. Douglas, David E. Histed, Charles S. Sharon, Charles H. Wigglesworth, Albert Cross, and B. A. Cross. The present membership is 45, and the present officers are Albert Cross, N. G.; George Hannahs, Jr., V. G.; Frank A. Keazie, Recording Sec.; N. K. Jillson, Permanent Sec.; A. D. Healy, Treas.

*Pomona Grange, No. 219, P. of H.*—A dispensation was granted to this grange Jan. 26, 1874, and charter granted July 6, 1874.

*Post-Offices and Postmasters.*—The first post-office was established in South Haven about 1852. Joseph Sturges was the first appointed postmaster. He was succeeded by S. B. Morehouse, B. H. Dyckman, Daniel G. Wright, B. H. Dyckman, and Wm. E. Stewart, the present incumbent.

## SCHOOLS.

In the first platting of the village of South Haven a lot was set apart for school purposes. But the first account of any school being held in the territory of the township dates in 1837. A house was built and school taught by Lorenzo

Cate in that part of South Haven now the township of Columbia. In 1845 a school was taught by Miss Mehitable Northrop. No account is to be found of a school being kept at that early day in what is now South Haven. School records were commenced Jan. 31, 1845, and the first entry is as follows:

"School District No. 1, Town 1 South, Range 15 West [now Columbia], to contain the following Sections, viz., Sections No. 19, 20, 21, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33. This District has become a legally organized School District under Section 11 of an act relating to Common or Primary Schools.

"School District No. 2, Town 2 South, Range 16 West [now Bangor], contains the following Sections: Nos. 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, and 15.

"HARVEY MANLEY,  
J. N. HOWARD,  
WM. N. HURLBUT, } *School Inspectors.*"

March 24, 1845, School District No. 2 was reformed to contain the following sections: Nos. 1, 12, and 13, in town 2 south, range 16 west (Bangor), and sections Nos. 6, 7, and 18, town 2 south, range 15 west (Arlington), and to be known as District No. 2 of South Haven and Arlington.

Between the time of the meeting of the inspectors, March 24, 1845, and the meeting of May 3d, given below, the township of Columbia had been organized. "The Board of School Inspectors met, pursuant to notice, at the dwelling-house of O. S. Brown, and proceeded to examine Eliza Hoppin in regard to her qualifications for teaching a primary school, and gave her a certificate."

September 13th of the same year fractional school district No. 1 was formed of South Haven and Arlington, and contained section 25, the west half of section 36, and south-east half of section 24, in town 2 south, range 16 west (Bangor).

At the same time was formed district No. 1 of South Haven, containing sections No. 1, 2, 11, 12, 13, and 14 of town 2 south, range 16 west (Bangor). At a meeting held May 2, 1846, William N. Hurlbut was appointed librarian.

A fractional school district was formed of South Haven and Hartford, and March 17, 1851, there was apportioned to school district No. 1, \$6.54<sup>2</sup>/<sub>5</sub>; to fractional district No. 1 of South Haven and Hartford, \$2.43; to fractional district No. 1 of South Haven and Arlington, 75 cents; and to district No. 2, \$2.43. At this meeting district No. 3 was formed in township 1 south, range 17 west (now South Haven), and contained sections Nos. 1, 2, 3, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, and 15, and a district, to be known as district No. 4, was set off from district No. 3, and comprised sections Nos. 2, 3, 10, 11, 14, and 15.

June 11, 1853, the school inspectors of the township of South Haven and Ganges (Allegan County) met pursuant to notice and divided district No. 4 as follows: "So much of the territory as is enclosed by the base line, South Black River and Lake Michigan, be united with fractional section 35, and the whole of Section 36, Town 1 North, Range 17 West; also Section 31 and south half of Section 30, Town 1 North, Range 16 West, to form a Union School District,



to be known and distinguished as Fractional District No. One of the townships of South Haven and Ganges."

It is shown that no district was laid out in what is now the township of South Haven until March 17, 1851, when one was laid out, which included the nine north sections of the townships, and was known as district No. 3. This district was divided several times before 1854.

Bangor and Deerfield had been set off into separate townships from 1853 to 1854, and the inspectors' record for 1854 shows that the board met at the office of the town clerk April 15, 1854. Present: A. S. Dyckman, Samuel F. Foster, and S. B. Morehouse. Prior to this time no names of residents in the present township appear among the officers.

May 2, 1857, a new school district was formed, known as No. 3, and embraced of territory not before laid out sections 23 and 24, and a strip 160 rods wide on the north part of sections 25 and 26, also section 1 and that part of 2 lying south of Black River, and the whole of sections 11, 12, 13, and 14. This district was enlarged May 26th of the same year, and embraced in addition, a strip 160 rods wide on the north part of sections 27 and 28 to the lake, and northerly along the lake to the mouth of Black River, and on the south side of the river to the intersection of sections 2 and 3.

Many changes were made in the districts, but no new territory added until Jan. 30, 1864, when that portion of sections 27 and 28 not before embraced was included in a district, and on May 5, 1865, new territory was added to the district so as to comprise that portion of sections 25 and 26 not previously embraced, also the north half of sections 35 and 36. The township was redistricted Feb. 20, 1874.

A statement of the condition of the schools of the township in 1879 is shown by the subjoined report for 1879:

## SCHOOL REPORT FOR 1879.

District.	Number of Children between 5 and 20 Years.	Number of Frame School-Houses.	Seating Capacity.	Value of Property.	Number of Teachers.	Wages of Teachers.
No. 1.	378	1	320	\$5000	6	\$988
No. 2.	56	1	50	1200	1	.....
No. 3.	48	1	50	700	..	180
No. 4.	90	1	60	1000	1	112
No. 5.	40	1	45	1000	*2	.....
No. 6.	22	1	25	200	1	128
Totals.	634	6	550	\$9100	11	\$1108

## RECEIPTS.

District.	Moneys on hand Sept. 2, 1878.	Two Mill Tax.	Primary School Fund.	District Taxes for all Purposes.	Raised from another Source.	Total Resources for the Year.*
No. 1.	\$292.12	\$458.75	\$208.92	\$1900.00	\$123.66	\$3054.45
No. 2.	130.97	55.77	29.81	.....	30.00	516.55
No. 3.	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
No. 4.	.....	93.65	47.18	191.17	.....	332.00
No. 5.	125.51	53.00	19.26	167.00	.....	241.77
No. 6.	9.90	40.50	9.61	142.50	1.21	214.72
Totals...	\$445.50	\$701.67	\$316.78	\$2390.67	\$154.87	\$4359.49

## EXPENDITURES.

District.	Paid Teachers.	For all other Purposes.	Amount on hand Sept. 1, 1879.	Total Expenditure during the Year.*
No. 1.	\$1888.00	\$427.82	\$738.63	\$3054.45
No. 2.	275.00	66.09	175.46	516.55
No. 3.	.....	.....	151.51	.....
No. 4.	112.00	15.00	.....	332.00
No. 5.	.....	25.00	77	211.77
No. 6.	128.00	64.63	11.09	203.72
Totals.....	\$2403.00	\$598.54	\$1077.46	\$4359.49

\* Including amount on hand.

The school directors for 1879 were Calvin Fletcher, H. M. Avery, Charles Gibson, J. J. Moulthrop, J. F. Hopkins, L. K. Jillson.

Following is a list of persons examined by, and who received certificates from, the school inspectors down to the year 1867:

Eliza Hoppin, May 3, 1845.  
 Mehitable Northrup, May 2, 1846.  
 Eliza Camp, July 11, 1847.  
 Joseph Hurlbut, Nov. 4, 1851.  
 Hannah Hawks, March, 1852.  
 Amanda Haynes and Mary McKnight, July 10, 1852.  
 Lesbia E. Fox, April 9, 1853.  
 Lucinda Haynes, June 11, 1853.  
 Sarah E. Reynolds, Aug. 12, 1853.  
 Samuel Follett, Nov. 18, 1854.  
 Samuel P. Wilson, Dec. 1, 1854.  
 Miss E. J. Eaton, April 14, 1855.  
 Austin Harman, Dec. 4, 1855.  
 Samuel A. Tripp, April 22, 1856.  
 Edward H. Lounsbury, Oct. 18, 1856.  
 Angelina Foster, May 2, 1857.  
 A. D. Taylor, April 10, 1858.  
 Sarah Dow, April 17, 1858.  
 A. S. Dyckman, Nov. 6, 1858.  
 Mrs. H. Bradley, Dec. 3, 1858.  
 Mrs. E. P. H. Lee, April 18, 1859.  
 Frances Hale, Jan. 21, 1860.  
 Harriet Morehouse, March 31, 1860.  
 Miss Frank Wright and Miss Mary Potter, April 4, 1860.  
 Ella Conger and Elisha Moon, Nov. 3, 1860.  
 Ruth Hunt, May 21, 1861.  
 Julia Morehouse, April 12, 1862.  
 — Nelson, April 12, 1862.  
 Eliza Longwell, Nov. 18, 1862.  
 Anna McDowell, Dec. 28, 1862.  
 Charles J. Monroe, Sept. 19, 1863.  
 Martha E. Grover, Nov. 14, 1863.  
 Mrs. Frances W. Moon, Emma Brent, Ann McNitt, April 30, 1864.  
 Julia A. Church, May 7, 1864.  
 A. J. Dyer and Anna McDonald, Nov. 9, 1864.  
 Theodore Hoppin and Mrs. Edward Napier, Nov. 14, 1864. Mr. Hoppin to teach in the principal department of the union school.  
 Mrs. N. Phelps, same date.  
 Miss Lesbia Warner and Miss Orpha Williams, April 29, 1865.  
 Miss J. Van Dyck, May 23, 1865.  
 Miss Ann Atwater, May 27, 1865.  
 Hattie Morehouse, Louisa Wood, George S. Williams, Jane Wright, and Mrs. P. C. Napier, April 12, 1866.  
 Helen Briggs, May 8, 1866.  
 Nathaniel Earl, H. Farnham, Mrs. S. A. Simmons, Nov. 3, 1866.  
 Mary L. Bryant, Julia Morehouse, Carrie Grover, April 13, 1867.  
 Ellen Horr and Lesbia Warner, April 27, 1867.

## RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

*The Congregational Church.*—An ecclesiastical council was held at South Haven July 2, 1856, composed of the following persons: Rev. A. H. Reed, American Home Missionary Agent; Rev. T. Jones, Galesburg; Rev. Edward Taylor, Kalamazoo; Rev. A. Rowe, Lawrence; and Deacon Mills, of Galesburg. The First Congregational Church of South Haven was organized at that meeting, with the following-named persons as constituent members, nine of whom presented letters from other churches, viz.: Joseph Wagoner, from Congregational Church of Kalamazoo; Mrs. T. McDowell, from Congregational Church, Jamestown, N. Y.; Mrs. Joseph Dow, Samuel F. Foster, Mrs. Jane Foster, Miss Angelina Foster, and Mr. H. C. Wells; Mrs. L. Wells, from Plymouth Congregational Church of Chicago; George W. Wallace, from Congregational Church,

Bradford, Vt.; Dr. Charles M. Lee, from church at Phoenix, N. Y. Dr. Charles M. Lee was elected deacon, and Samuel F. Foster clerk.

Preaching was held at the school-house and at the hall of the Forest House (now Pacific) during the winter.

June 14, 1857, the Rev. Nathaniel Grover was ordained as pastor of the church, and remained in charge until his death, May 10, 1863. He was succeeded by the Rev. William Pattinson, who commenced his labors in November of the same year, and closed them in August, 1865. He was succeeded by the Rev. David Wirt. Under his charge a chapel was built, and dedicated Dec. 19, 1867, the Rev. E. Andrews, of Allegan, preaching the dedication sermon. The Rev. Joseph Anderson accepted a call Sept. 13, 1869, and remained till Nov. 19, 1871, when he resigned. He afterwards preached about six months in 1872.

The present pastor, the Rev. E. A. Paddock, was called to the pastorate Sept. 3, 1876. A church building was erected on Phoenix Street, at a cost of \$6000. A town clock was placed in the tower, at a cost of \$1000. The dedication services were held Nov. 18, 1878. The sermon was preached by the Rev. H. N. Burton, of Kalamazoo. The church has a present membership of 160. A Sunday-school with about 200 pupils is in connection, of which the pastor is superintendent.

*First Baptist Church.*—Aug. 22, 1846, pursuant to notice, the following-named persons met for the purpose of organizing a Baptist Church: E. D. Farnham, A. C. Merritt, G. H. Clark, Mrs. Harriet James, J. H. Farnham, C. H. Wigglesworth, Mrs. A. J. Wigglesworth, Thomas W. Merritt, Mrs. Hannah D. Merritt, and S. A. Simmons. E. D. Farnham presided. It was resolved to hold Sunday services, and the hall of Pomeroy & Worthington was secured for that purpose. A. C. Merritt, a resident of the locality and an ordained minister, preached alternately with Dr. William Hewson. Five trustees were chosen Aug. 28, 1867, and at this meeting it was "resolved that this church be known as the First Baptist Church of South Haven." E. D. Farnham was chosen deacon.

After the erection of the Congregational chapel, services were held for some time on Sunday afternoons, but finally discontinued on account of the ill health of Dr. Hewson. Mr. George Hannahs presented the society with a deed of two lots where the church now stands. The board of trustees were appointed a building committee April 7, 1869. The church was visited by the Rev. C. Johnson, of Lansing, then superintendent of State Reform School, who offered them \$200 towards building a church edifice. Subscriptions were then taken up, and the church built on the present site, at a cost of \$2102.96.

Nov. 7, 1870, it was resolved to call a council to recognize the church, and letters missive were sent to the churches of Benton Harbor, Kalamazoo, Paw Paw, Keeler, Watervliet, Plainville, and Cheshire, and to the Rev. C. Johnson and the Rev. Mr. Mather, Missionary Agent. At this meeting 32 persons presented letters from other churches to become constituent members. Dr. Hewson, A. C. Merritt, and C. H. Wigglesworth were appointed to represent them in the council.

The council met on Saturday, Nov. 19, 1870, when the

church was regularly constituted, and the next day (November 20th) the church edifice was dedicated. The morning sermon was preached by the Rev. Mr. Mather, and the evening sermon by the Rev. C. Johnson.

The church has at present about 70 members, and a Sunday-school of 60 pupils, of which Charles H. Pleasants is superintendent.

*A Universalist Society* was organized in South Haven about 1863, when the Rev. W. N. Burton was living there, but it declined upon his leaving, in 1868. He is now living in Boston.

*A Church of the United Brethren* was also organized, and a church edifice was built that was sold to the Catholics in 1877, and the society declined.

*Episcopal Church.*—A call, signed by E. Rathbone, Calvin Fletcher, Marshall D. Talcott, Joseph Lanning, and Charles Rathbone, was extended to those interested in the formation of an Episcopal society, April 5, 1870, for a meeting to be held April 18th, at which time an organization was perfected. C. Fletcher, E. Rathbone, Joseph Lanning, George Hale, C. Delamere were chosen vestrymen. The Rev. J. B. Dooley became their rector. Services are held in Grange Hall. The church is now supplied occasionally by the Rev. G. P. Shetky, rector of St. Mark's Church of Paw Paw.

*Reformed Church of America.*—This society was organized with 12 members, April 18, 1872, and was first under the pastoral charge of the Rev. — Kickentwelt, succeeded by the Revs. H. K. Boer and D. G. Dangremond, who is the present pastor. The church edifice was erected in 1872. The society now has a membership of 42, and a Sunday-school in connection, of which C. Van Brussel is superintendent, has 25 pupils.

*Catholic Church.*—This church was organized in January, 1877, with five families, under the care of Father Tyson, of St. Joseph, under whose charge it still remains. Services are held once in three months. The edifice of the United Brethren was purchased soon after the organization.

*Methodist Church.*—The earliest knowledge of any preaching by members of this denomination was in May, 1852, when the Rev. Mr. Doughty preached in the house of S. B. Morehouse. About 1855 the Rev. Mr. Colwell came on the circuit. A class was then formed, in which Jared P. Breed, Sarah, his wife, and Jesse L. Lane were among the early members. From that time until 1865 but little information is obtained, except that the circuit preachers, Pendlan, Van Wyck, and Berry, were here occasionally. The pastors from that time have been the Revs. William M. Paddock, E. L. Kellogg, J. W. H. Carlisle, E. H. McChesney, H. H. Parker, W. A. Hunsberger, and N. D. Carroll, the present pastor. The present membership is 160. Connected with the church is a Sunday-school of 80 pupils; J. J. Atherly superintendent.

Worship was first held in the school-house. In 1867 a church building was erected, which was destroyed by fire in 1871, when the present edifice was erected.

#### FRUIT INTERESTS OF SOUTH HAVEN.

The interest in fruit culture in this township began soon after the actual settlers took possession of the land. The

first to venture in this untried field was Stephen B. Morehouse, who came here for that purpose. It was not, however, entirely an experiment, for the success that had crowned the efforts of Eleazer Morton and George Parmelee, of Benton Harbor, and Gaius Boughton, B. C. Hoyt, and others, of St. Joseph, was a guarantee of success in this locality, it being under the same thermal influence.

Mr. Morehouse, after getting his land in proper condition, purchased trees in Kalamazoo, and planted an orchard of three acres, mostly apples. Randolph Densmore, about the same time, set out a small orchard adjoining that of Mr. Morehouse. These orchards were within the present village plat. James L. Reid, about 1857, planted an orchard on the lake-shore, on section 16. This was afterwards enlarged by Thomas Hoppin. About the same time A. S. Dyckman planted an orchard of four acres of peach-trees, and in 1858 the first vineyards were planted. Mr. Dyckman set out one acre, and Orris Church one and a half acres, and in 1864 Aaron Eames set out the Delaware grape largely, having planted orchards much earlier. Slowly, but surely, these pioneers in fruit culture felt their way, realizing every year by the wider experience gained, and the results which followed their efforts, that the lands of South Haven were well adapted to successful and continuous fruit-raising.

A pomological society was organized in January, 1871, and it has been instrumental in promoting a general interest in fruit culture of all kinds. The members of this society have been prominent in the State society, it having furnished two presidents,—A. S. Dyckman and T. T. Lyon, its present president, the latter of whom is widely known throughout this and other States as a contributor in all departments of horticulture and pomology.

A meeting of the State Pomological Society was held at Pomological Hall, at South Haven, June 19, 20, and 21, 1877, and to this society is the State indebted, to a certain extent, for the law authorizing a commissioner to destroy peach-trees affected with the "yellows," and the seizure of all fruit affected by it. Upon the first appearance of the dreaded disease at St. Joseph this society appointed a committee, who acted with the concurrence of the fruit-growers of the vicinity, and destroyed all trees found affected. In the winter of 1874-75 the society presented a petition for a law having the above provision applicable to Van Buren, Allegan, and Ottawa Counties, which law was passed.

The facilities of South Haven for marketing are now unsurpassed, the port being but eight hours from Chicago by steamer, and connected with the main line of the Michigan Central by a branch from Kalamazoo. The exports of fruit for 1879 are given in another place.

*South Haven Pomological Society.*—In December, 1870, a number of fruit-growers met at South Haven to consult on the propriety of organizing a society that would draw more closely together those who were interested in the cultivation of fruit, and by an interchange of thought enlarge their general knowledge of the best means and methods for the successful prosecution of the business. This meeting resulted in an organization formed in January, 1871, when the following officers were elected: President, Norman

Phillips; Vice-President, C. H. Wigglesworth; Secretary, C. T. Bryant; Treasurer, C. J. Monroe. Succeeding officers of the society have been as follows: 1874, President, Norman Phillips; Secretary, C. T. Bryant; Treasurer, C. J. Monroe. 1875, President, T. T. Lyon; Secretary, H. E. Bidwell; Treasurer, C. J. Monroe. 1876, President, T. T. Lyon; Secretary, H. E. Bidwell; Treasurer, C. H. Wigglesworth. 1877, President, H. E. Bidwell; Secretary, A. S. Galley. 1878, President, William H. Hurlbut; Secretary, J. G. Ramsdell; Treasurer, H. Chatfield. 1879, President, C. H. Wigglesworth; Secretary, J. G. Ramsdell.

The society has steadily increased in numbers and interest. Meetings are held weekly, and discussions are held on the different questions that are constantly arising. The society adopted a trade-mark, under which members ship their fruit, thus holding the members responsible for the credit of the society. Exhibits of fruit from the society were sent to the Vienna Exposition, for which was received a bronze medal; also at the Centennial Exhibition in 1876 and at Chicago, where they took more prizes than any other society.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH.

### WILLIAM H. HURLBUT.

William Harrison and Wealthy (Cross) Hurlbut were married Jan. 4, 1816, and were the parents of the following children: William H. (the subject of this sketch), born Aug. 25, 1819; Charles B., born Jan. 15, 1826; George, born June 14, 1828; Joseph, born Dec. 25, 1830; and Albert, born Dec. 4, 1842.

William Harrison was a native of the town of Richland, Oswego Co., N. Y. When he was four years of age his parents removed to St. Hyacinth District, Canada, remaining there about eight years, and it was there that Charles B. and George were born. About 1830 they moved to and made St. Lawrence County their home, where Joseph B. was born; and in 1833 returned to Richland, where Albert was born. After arriving at the age of sixteen, young Hurlbut, with the consent and blessing of his parents (that being all they had to give him), a cash capital of seventy-five cents in his pocket, and worldly effects to the extent of one shirt tied up in a cotton handkerchief, left the paternal home to make his fortune. About sunset of the third day, tired and foot-sore, and with but five cents in money left, he found himself a stranger in the pleasant village of Hamilton, N. Y. Here he succeeded in obtaining employment with Samuel Payne, Sr., deacon of the First Baptist Church, and one of the founders of the Baptist Theological Seminary of Hamilton. For nearly five years young Hurlbut remained with the deacon, working for wages summers and doing chores for his board and attending school in the village winters.

In the fall of 1840, with his carefully-boarded savings in his wallet, his effects packed in one small trunk, and with the fatherly counsel and blessing of the good deacon, he started for the "far West," which at that time meant anywhere beyond Lake Erie.



In October, 1840, he arrived in Van Buren Co., Mich. (then an almost unbroken wilderness), with barely money sufficient to enter eighty acres of wild land, which so far had been the height of his boyish ambition.

He located on section 11 of what is now the town of Bangor, but then known as South Haven.

Here Hurlbut pursued a bachelor life, spending his summers mostly in chopping, either on his land or in cutting roads, and teaching district school winters in a neighboring township until 1845, meanwhile having exchanged his eighty acres with improvements for a wild one-hundred-and-sixty-acre tract on section 13 of the same township, incurring in the transaction an indebtedness of four hundred dollars.

In May, 1845, he was united in marriage with Fanny, daughter of Robert Christie, of Lawrence, she bravely consenting to settle in the woods, and with her companion to share all the labors and privations of pioneer life; and it is only justice to say that with fortitude and cheerfulness she has borne her full share of the trials and vicissitudes to be encountered in rearing a family on the frontiers of civilization, and in helping to build up a home in the wilderness.

Immediately after marriage Mr. and Mrs. Hurlbut settled down in a hastily-constructed board cabin in the woods, erected near where now stands the old homestead, having at that time no neighbor within half a mile, no clearing in sight, and no road, save a blazed sled-track through the woods. Here in earnest commenced the second stage of life's battle, and it is now the testimony of both that whatever of success has attended their efforts may be credited in no small degree to the firm resolution with which they started out—rigidly adhered to—never to run into debt.

From 1846 to 1861 he was prominently identified with all the public enterprises and improvements introduced into this portion of the county, and officially connected with town and county during that period. He assisted in building the first school-house in Bangor and the first saw-mill, eventually becoming half owner.

In 1850 he was elected register of deeds for Van Buren County, which position he held two years.

His good judgment and sterling integrity had secured him a position high in the estimation of the people, whose voluntary suffrages had throughout this period almost continually kept him employed in some official capacity, and in 1868, by a large majority, he was elected to represent his district in the State Legislature. He was re-elected in 1870. This position he filled with his usual ability and fidelity.

In December, 1861, he removed to South Haven, and in the spring of 1862 erected his present residence, a view of which, together with his old home, appear on another page. Mr. Hurlbut's knowledge of pioneer life is of a practical nature. Besides his Bangor farm of one hundred and sixty acres, he has also cleared one hundred and twenty acres here, on which he has a peach orchard of thirty acres.

Mr. Hurlbut's family consists of his wife and five children, viz.: Janet, Caroline, Jane, Irene, and Frank, all of whom live in this vicinity.

In politics he was a Democrat up to the organization of

the Republican party, when he became identified with it, and so continued until 1876, when he united with the National or Greenback party.

Coming here with but small capital, he has by industry and competent management acquired considerable property, and by his ability and integrity established for himself an enviable reputation; while he has so discharged the duties of the positions of honor and trust that have been bestowed upon him as to merit and receive the confidence and approbation of all.

## CHAPTER LXVIII.

### WAVERLY TOWNSHIP.\*

General Description of the Township—Pioneer Settlers and Early Events—Township Organization and List of Officers—Post-Offices—Religious—Educational.

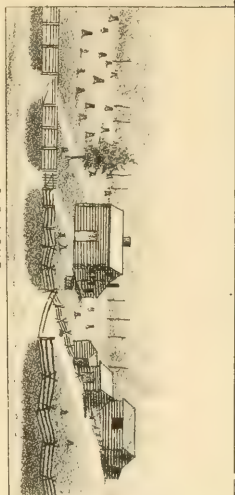
#### GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

TOWN 2 south, range 14 west, now known as Waverly, was originally a portion of the township of Clinch, created in 1837, when Van Buren County was divided into seven townships. Waverly's boundaries are: Bloomingdale on the north, Paw Paw on the south, Alma on the east, and Arlington on the west. When organized, Waverly contained thirty-six full sections, but one and a half sections in the southwest corner have been since set off to Paw Paw township, for the greater convenience of the people living in that part of the territory.

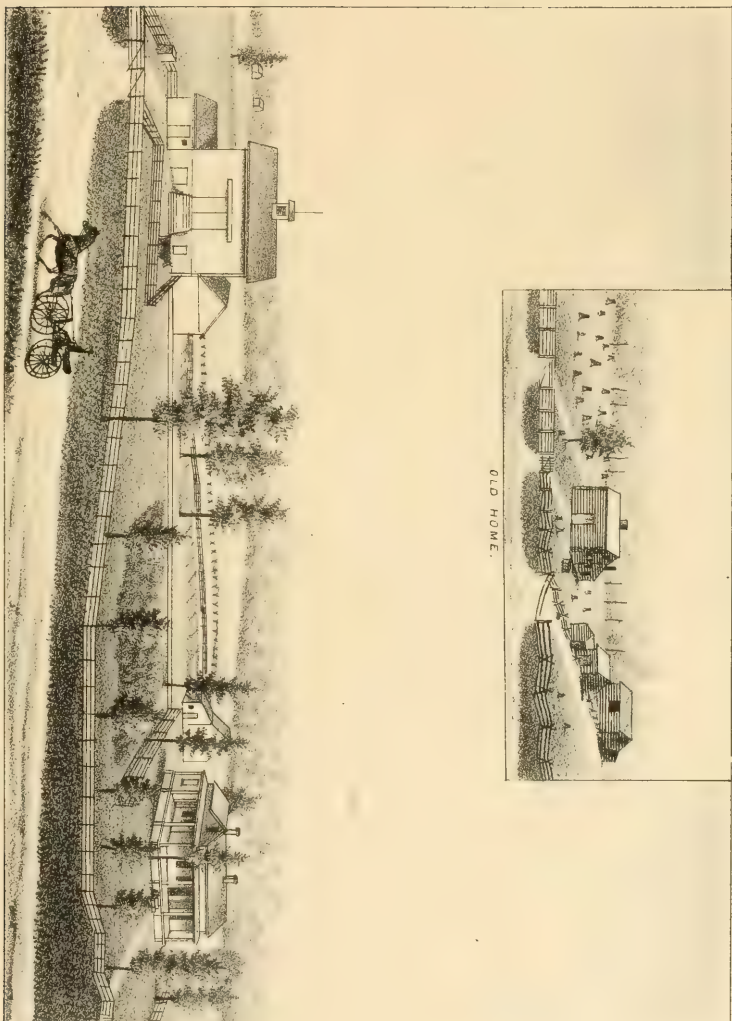
There is a large swamp in the southwest, and swamplands are observable in numerous portions of the town. Generally the character of the soil is heavy, and as to the production of wheat, it ranks very high. It is said that 40 bushels per acre have been grown in some cases, and that 25 bushels may be regarded as far from rare. Heavily-timbered lands are plentiful, as are also water-courses. In the south the Paw Paw River flows westward, and here and there numerous smaller streams are found, although in no case are the streams rapid enough to furnish water-power. Apart from the saw-mill interest there are no manufactures. There is a post-office called Glendale, but no village, nor is there within the limits of the township a church building. The interests of agriculture are the sole dependence of the people, and they are valuable enough to make the community a prosperous one.

#### PIONEER SETTLERS AND EARLY EVENTS.

In 1837 Bloomingdale and Waverly received their first settlers simultaneously, and received them from the same family. In the fall of 1836, Mallory H. Myers, Merlin M. Myers, Reuben J. Myers, William H. H. Myers, and their mother, with two sisters, migrated westward to White Pigeon, Mich., and there determined to remain temporarily. In the spring of 1837, Mallory, Reuben, and William started upon a land-looking tour, and fancying some land in the township of Clinch, concluded to locate there,—Reuben selecting a tract on section 2, in the present town of Waverly, and his two brothers locating farms in what is now Bloomingdale. The rest of the family coming directly



OLD HOME.



RESIDENCE OF O. A. BRECK, WAVERLY T<sub>P</sub>, VAN BUREN CO., MICH.





from White Pigeon, they all lived together in a cabin built on Mallory's place. Reuben began at once, however, to clear his land in Waverly, and in the fall of 1838 he erected a comfortable log cabin, into which he moved with one of his sisters, who kept house for him until some time in 1839, when James Scott, a shingle-maker employed in the neighborhood, courted and married Miss Myers, and took her away to Decatur. Reuben and his sister had been the first and only settlers in the town, and when she left, Reuben was the solitary white inhabitant, although he had neighbors in the adjoining towns of Bloomingdale and Almena (both being then a portion of Clinch).

In 1839, Merwin Myers came over from Bloomingdale to keep Reuben company, and located on section 1, where he lived until 1857, when he removed to Illinois, his present home. Reuben Myers has always lived in Waverly since he first settled there. He has his home now on section 11.

In that same year there were settlements in the southern portion of the township by Loren Hurlbut and Jacob Finch, both of whom located on section 35. Hurlbut died in Paw Paw in 1877. Finch moved to the far West after a not very extended residence in Waverly.

When Isaac Brown moved into Waverly from Washtenaw County, in 1839, and settled upon section 13, there was no settler within two and a half miles of him. He lived there until shortly after 1860, when he moved to Paw Paw, where he died in 1865. Mr. Brown's son, John D., born in 1839, was the first person born in Waverly. He now lives in Bangor, where also resides Isaac Brown's widow, aged eighty-seven.

Zeri Taylor located upon section 13 in 1839, and Brown was therefore not left long without a neighbor. Taylor departed, however, after a few years' stay, but whither he went cannot be stated.

Rezin Bell came to Michigan in 1833 and made his home in Adrian, but left there in 1837 for Van Buren County, and although he located land in Waverly in that year on section 2, he lived in Almena two years before becoming a permanent resident of Waverly. He moved to Bloomingdale in 1854, and died there in 1865. When he came to Van Buren County he had five children, of whom only one is now living.

In 1839, William Murch, a young man from New York, came to the town, and located land upon section 2; but devoting the next twelve months to laboring for others, he did not effect a permanent settlement until 1840, when he married one of Reuben Myers' sisters. The marriage was solemnized at the house of Mallory H. Myers, in Bloomingdale, by Elder Junia Warner, of Almena, and may be regarded as the first marriage among the Waverly settlers, although the ceremony was performed across the line in Almena. The marriage of Scott to one of Mrs. Myers' daughters took place in 1839, but in that case only one of the contracting parties belonged in Waverly.

In the same year of 1840 a six-year-old son of Rezin Bell, named Josiah, fell sick and died. That death was the first in the township. There was then no public burial-ground in Waverly, and the lad was accordingly buried near Elder Warner's house, in Almena.

Leonard Lull bought land on section 2 in 1840, but did

not effect a permanent settlement, although he was in and out of the town for a few years. Philo Herron came from New York in 1841, and settled upon the northeast corner of section 3. Subsequently, however, he moved to Pine Grove, where he died. Almon B. Covey and his brother Amon, after remaining a short time in Almena, located in 1841 upon section 12, in Waverly. Amon married after a while and moved to Almena. Almon became ultimately a resident of Arlington, where he died in 1878.

Jonah Austin, a New Yorker, was a settler in Oakland Co., Mich., in 1836, and after a residence there of six years moved to Waverly, where he had bought 160 acres on section 24,—the land being now occupied by his sons Alexander and Jasper. The elder Austin died on his place in 1869.

John Scott, one of the best known of Waverly's citizens, came hither from Monroe Co., N. Y., in September, 1843, having bought 80 acres on section 6, of Mr. McVean, before he started. While preparing his own place for habitation he lived with his family at Ashbel Herron's, four and a half miles east, and with the assistance of the Herrons he put up a log cabin 18 by 24 feet. The lumber and shingles for floor and roof he hauled from Porter's mill, in Allegan County, thirteen miles distant. Between him and the Paw Paw River on the south there was no settler, and on the east his nearest neighbor was Philo Herron, living three and a half miles away. When Mr. Scott finished the construction of his log cabin he had only 18 cents in cash at his command, "but," says he, "I never borrowed any trouble, never went hungry, and never had any complaint to make touching the general character of my experience. I have always kept up a stout heart and so have prospered." In that heavily-timbered region roads were luxuries and exceedingly difficult of attainment. Mr. Scott's journeys on foot were easily made over Indian trails, but traveling by wagon was a different affair. Then he had to cut his way before him, and cutting out a road was a tedious business. Still, it was necessary to do that or stop at home, and stopping at home when mill or market were necessities was not to be thought of. Paw Paw was the market and mill point, and tramping over the wearisome way on foot, with grist on back, was a common task, while it was not unfrequently a dangerous one, especially as the only bridge over the Paw Paw was a fallen tree, and across it the trip was sometimes necessarily made after dark.

Joseph Cox, of Monroe Co., N. Y., came also in 1843, and became a settler upon 160 acres in section 22, entered previously by his father. In 1849, Cox joined the gold-seekers and set out for California, but, dying *en route*, his bones were left to bleach upon the Plains.

Upon section 12, in 1843, James C. and Eben Armstrong were the pioneers, and with their cheering presence encouraged the little band of struggling settlers. James died in the town. Eben is now a resident of Bloomingdale. Daniel Relyea located upon section 2 in 1843, but died there in the following year.

The year 1844 brought Isaac Spaulding as a settler. He was a pioneer in Lenawee County in 1834, and ten years afterwards located land on section 21, in Waverly. For a

year he divided his time between clearing his land and working in Breedsville at his trade as a tanner. In 1845 he settled permanently upon his Waverly land, and removing subsequently to section 16, he lived there until November, 1879, when his home was destroyed by fire. When Mr. Spaulding built his first house in Waverly he had to draw his lumber from Brush Creek, and having in the journey to go around streams over which there were no bridges, the trip to the saw-mill and back covered fully thirty miles. Besides all that, he had to cut out the road in many places, and taken altogether the task was a severe one. The deer injured his wheat crops so much that he built about his wheat-field a rail-fence eight feet high, which was the admiration of his brother settlers.

Peter T. Vallean, familiarly known as Uncle Peter, was a settler in 1844, upon section 22. He was an eccentric old gentleman, with many kindly traits, and passed his declining years at the home of his son Theodore, upon section 2, where the latter located in 1858. In 1844, also, John Reed joined the army of settlers, and where he then located, upon section 24, he still lives.

Hubbard Westcott and T. W. Thayer came in 1845. Westcott settled on section 21, but moved subsequently to Tecumseh, where he died. Thayer lived with his father in Bloomingdale until 1845, when he married Polly, a sister of Elisha Marble (a settler in Waverly in 1843), and located a farm upon section 1, in Waverly, which is still his home.

Reuben Mather, one of Waverly's early settlers, occupies a farm originally settled in 1848 by Charles Rogers, who died on the place in 1854.

Orlando H. Newcomb, a comer to Waverly in 1850, moved with his father to Almena in 1836, settled afterwards in Bloomingdale, where he engaged in milling with Mallory Myers, and in 1850 settled upon section 12, in Waverly, where he died in 1873, and where his widow still resides. O. M. Alger, who moved from Ohio to Michigan in 1846, lived on Prairie Ronde a year, and then settled in Antwerp, whence in 1851 he migrated to Waverly. He died in 1876, leaving a widow, who, with her son, lives on the old homestead on section 3.

The year 1852 brought quite a number of settlers, prominent among whom were George Carr, O. A. Breck, the Shaw and Rogers families, and J. L. Fox. Carr, a New Yorker, made his home upon section 23, where he had bought some wild land of E. O. Briggs. His sons, William H. and Jacob, now live on the farm settled by their father, whose present home is on section 27.

Joseph Rogers, a bachelor, and William, his brother, a man of family, came from Wayne County, and bought a farm on section 27. There William died in 1878, and there Joseph is still a resident. J. L. Fox came from Kent Co., Mich., and selected a home on section 15, where he has since remained. From Wayne Co., Mich., came Richmond and W. B. Shaw. The former lived a while upon section 21, and then moved out of the town. The latter yet lives on section 22, where he located in 1852.

Orson A. Breck was a young bachelor when he came from Wayne Co., N. Y., to Waverly in 1852, and took quarters with his uncle, Isaac Spaulding, with whom he lived

two years. In 1854, young Breck married a daughter of Samuel Rogers (living with his sons on section 27), who died in Waverly in 1873, aged eighty-seven. Previous to his marriage Breck had entered land on section 17, where he now lives. When he made a settlement there, in 1854, he was the first inhabitant of what was soon afterwards organized as school district No. 8. Following Breck into that district the settlers were Benjamin Smith, Zeri Skinner, B. G. Stanley, John McKnight, and others.

The voters in Waverly in 1852 numbered about 30, and included the following: Reuben J. Myers, Merlin M. Myers, Theodore W. Vallean, Almon B. Covey, O. H. Newcomb, Henry Whelpley, Dr. Babbitt, Philo Herron, Daniel Brown, N. H. Whitford, John Scott, Benajah Davis, Isaac Spaulding, Hubbard Westcott, Charles Rogers, Ephraim Butterfield, — Young, Jonah Austin, Jasper Austin, George Austin, James Armstrong, William March, Ora Brown, Cyrenus Brown, Isaac Brown, John Smith, Edwin Smith, George P. Smith, Loren Hurlbut, Rezin Bell, Ebenezer Armstrong, and L. W. Thayer.

The year 1854 was enlivened by what is still remembered as the famous "School-House War," which sprang from the incidents attendant upon the organization of school district No. 8, and efforts to fix upon a permanent location for the school-house. Upon the first discussion touching the school-house site there appeared to be conflicting opinions, some wanting it in one place and some in another; but the party headed by Benjamin Smith carried the day, and decreed that the school-house should be built upon Smith's place, near the big swamp. Smith was, however, so ridiculed for wanting the school-house located in a swamp that he pressed for a change of site, and agreed to have it built on Joseph Skinner's farm, to the north; but insisted subsequently that the district should make a road through Skinner's farm for the convenience of his (Smith's) children, so that in going to school they might make a short cut of it. This the district declined to do, whereupon Smith gathered his party, and revoking the decision which placed the site on Skinner's farm, effected another change, whereby the location was fixed upon Breck's farm. To this move Smith's wife raised her voice in emphatic protest and declared that "that school-house shouldn't stand one inch upon Breck's farm" if she could help it. Smith being therefore directed by his good dame to see to it promptly, and "keep that school-house away from Breck's," called his henchmen in council and ordered another change of base, the Smith party, it may be well to observe, possessing a ruling majority in the district. A fourth site was accordingly selected upon Bailey Stanley's farm, a little south of the saw-mill, and for the first time in the course of the controversy active measures were taken towards the erection of a building. Indeed, the frame was raised, and everybody supposed, of course, that trouble was at an end, and that the district was at last to have a school-house. Unhappily, the people reckoned without their host. About the time of the completion of the frame Bailey Stanley fell out with Benjamin Smith, and most positively declared that the school-house should not stand upon his land, for he would never execute a deed. Appealed to by the community, he remained firmly obstinate, and so there was nothing to

do but to take the frame down, look for another location, and trust to Providence. The fifth attempt to locate the school permanently, resulted in a complete success, and thus far it has been allowed to remain undisturbed upon its present site, north of Jones' saw-mill.

During the progress of the conflict a great deal of bad blood was generated, and party feeling ran high upon the questions of "Smith" and "anti-Smith." So fierce was the faction fever that at one stage the anti-Smithites would raid the fences of the Smithites at night, and turn cattle into the growing crops, while in turn the Smithites would retaliate with similar measures, and as a cap to the climax, personal discussion over the matter not infrequently led to personal fistic encounters, although most reports agree in saying that no blood was shed.

In 1853, Eli Bush, of Ohio, came with his family, in company with the family of Henry Kingsbury, and made a settlement on section 2, where he now lives. While building his cabin he lived with S. N. Root, who had come a short time previously, and located upon section 1, his present home. Kingsbury stopped a short time only before removing to Lawton. Even at that late day, the region in which Mr. Bush settled was a forest wild, although he had neighbors moderately near at hand. C. W. Gilman, now living near Mr. Bush, although a late comer in Waverly, was one of the early residents of Antwerp, in which his father was one of the pioneer advance-guard.

John Merchant, now living in Waverly, upon section 15, where he located in 1854, was one of the pioneers of Hillsdale County. Jacob Hungerford was a settler in Cass County in 1837, and now lives upon section 26, in Waverly. L. W. Simmons came in 1858, and occupied a place earlier owned by Jesse V. Stevens, now a resident on section 13, while among other prominent early settlers may be mentioned Charles Stanley, A. G. Dayton, S. L. Abernethy, F. M. and P. T. Streator, H. H. Jennings, C. W. Butterfield, T. L. Niles, and F. W. Dibble.

The first burial-ground was laid out in the fall of 1857, north of Jones' saw-mill. The first burial in the inclosure was that of Charles Rogers, whose body was taken up from the Rogers farm and transferred, as were also, soon after, the bodies of others previously interred in family grounds. In 1858 the cemetery on section 23 was laid out, the two grounds named being now the only ones in the township.

The pioneer saw-mill was built by William Heald, in 1861, on section 16. This mill—now carried on by S. H. Jones—and the one owned by S. W. Fisk are the only mills of any kind in Waverly.

The swamp known as the "Huckleberry Marsh" did not invite settlements to its neighborhood at a very early date, but in 1854 the neighborhood west of the school section began to receive population, although the growth thereof was exceedingly slow. Latterly there have been indications of speedy efforts looking to the reclamation of the swamp lands in the southwest, and as a result of the success of such a move, the town must gain considerable valuable land which is now almost worthless.

But few wolf stories are told by Waverly's early settlers, but it is related that William Murch, while traveling to

Breedsville, encountered a pack of wolves, and taking to a tree, was kept there a prisoner all night in a driving snow-storm. Fearful that he might fall asleep, and thus fall down into the jaws of the hungry beasts, he bound himself firmly to the tree with his handkerchief, which, luckily, kept him safe, for he did fall asleep, and might have fallen to his death had he not been bound.

Mill conveniences to a majority of the early settlers were easily accessible at Paw Paw, and so they were better off than many neighboring townships.

The number of voters in Waverly in 1842 was but 13. In 1849, there was an increase to 27; in 1852, to 30; in 1856, to 73; and in 1861, to 134. In 1869 the town enjoyed its greatest prosperity as to population, and had then 315 voters. At this time (January, 1880) the voters number 250.

The first frame house built in Waverly was erected in 1846, by J. C. Armstrong, and is now occupied as the residence of Nelson Armstrong. Mr. Armstrong, who, it may be observed, was the pioneer carpenter of the town, built also the first frame barn.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION AND LIST OF OFFICERS.

When Van Buren County was divided into seven towns, under the act approved March 11, 1837, Clinch township (one of the seven) embraced the territory now included within Waverly, Almaena, Bloomingdale, and Pine Grove. In 1842 the town was divided into two equal parts, that on the west being called Waverly (including the present towns of Bloomingdale and Waverly), and that on the east Almaena. F. C. Annable, of Almaena, then a member of the Legislature, presented the petition for the division, and named both towns, christening Waverly in honor of the novelist Sir Walter Scott, whom he much admired.

The first meeting of the electors of Waverly after the division, was held April 4, 1842, when the aggregate vote was but 13. In 1845, Waverly was divided, the northern half being set off as Bloomingdale, while the southern portion retained the old name.

Subjoined is a list of those elected as supervisor, clerk, treasurer, and justice of the peace since 1842:

- 1842.—Supervisor, M. H. Myers; Clerk, W. H. H. Myers; Treasurer, W. H. H. Myers; Justices of the Peace, Ashbel Herron, Isaac Brown, A. B. Covey, M. H. Myers.
- 1843.—Supervisor, M. H. Myers; Clerk, W. H. H. Myers; Treasurer, W. H. H. Myers; Justice of the Peace, Harvilland Thayer.
- 1844.—Supervisor, W. H. H. Myers; Clerk, M. H. Myers; Treasurer, M. H. Myers; Justice of the Peace, A. B. Covey.
- 1845.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, E. Marble; Treasurer, Rezin Bell; Justice of the Peace, Isaac Brown.
- 1846.—Supervisor, Joseph Cox; Clerk, Isaac Brown; Treasurer, E. Marble; Justice of the Peace, Lorin Hulbert.
- 1847.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, M. H. Myers; Treasurer, E. Armstrong; Justice of the Peace, Philo Herron.
- 1848.—Supervisor, Isaac Brown; Clerk, M. H. Myers; Treasurer, E. Armstrong; Justice of the Peace, William Murch.
- 1849.—Supervisor, Wm. Murch; Clerk, M. M. Myers; Treasurer, E. Armstrong; Justice of the Peace, George P. Smith.
- 1850.—Supervisor, E. Armstrong; Clerk, E. A. Smith; Treasurer, J. C. Armstrong; Justice of the Peace, A. A. Holly.
- 1851.—Supervisor, William Murch; Clerk, Isaac Brown; Treasurer, George P. Smith; Justice of the Peace, Philo Herron.
- 1852.—Supervisor, William Murch; Clerk, E. A. Smith; Treasurer, George P. Smith; Justice of the Peace, L. W. Thayer.



- 1853.—Supervisor, George P. Smith; Clerk, J. L. Fox; Treasurer, Rezin Bell; Justice of the Peace, G. W. Glidden.
- 1854.—Supervisor, George P. Smith; Clerk, J. L. Fox; Treasurer, William Murch; Justice of the Peace, H. Kingsbury.
- 1855.—Supervisor, William Murch; Clerk, M. M. Myers; Treasurer, O. H. Newcomb; Justice of the Peace, H. Caldwell.
- 1856.—Supervisor, H. Caldwell; Clerk, Josiah Hopkins; Treasurer, O. H. Newcomb; Justice of the Peace, E. Decker.
- 1857.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, Josiah Hopkins; Treasurer, O. H. Newcomb; Justice of the Peace, Amos Wood.
- 1858.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, Josiah Hopkins; Treasurer, A. B. Covey; Justice of the Peace, N. A. Whitford.
- 1859.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, Josiah Hopkins; Treasurer, N. A. Whitford; Justice of the Peace, Zeri Skinner.
- 1860.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, J. L. Fox; Treasurer, N. A. Whitford; Justice of the Peace, B. J. Stanley.
- 1861.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, D. H. Smith; Treasurer, N. A. Whitford; Justice of the Peace, G. W. Glidden.
- 1862.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, D. H. Smith; Treasurer, A. Niles; Justice of the Peace, William Murch.
- 1863.—Supervisor, D. H. Smith; Clerk, J. Hopkins; Treasurer, A. Niles; Justice of the Peace, B. J. Stanley.
- 1864.—Supervisor, D. H. Smith; Clerk, P. T. Streator; Treasurer, A. Niles; Justice of the Peace, J. E. Showerman.
- 1865.—Supervisor, R. J. Myers; Clerk, P. T. Streator; Treasurer, J. E. Showerman; Justice of the Peace, L. Hurlbut.
- 1866.—Supervisor, C. W. Butterfield; Clerk, E. D. Nash; Treasurer, A. Niles; Justice of the Peace, George Edgell.
- 1867.—Supervisor, C. W. Butterfield; Clerk, G. H. Bennett; Treasurer, A. Niles; Justice of the Peace, S. Randall.
- 1868.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, G. H. Bennett; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, Cyrus Smith.
- 1869.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, William D. Lane; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, C. W. Whipple.
- 1870.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, William D. Lane; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, George Edgell.
- 1871.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, William D. Lane; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, M. J. Blakeman.
- 1872.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, William D. Lane; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, William M. Green.
- 1873.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, William D. Lane; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, H. H. Skinner.
- 1874.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, O. A. Breck; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, George Edgel.
- 1875.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, William D. Lane; Treasurer, R. Mather; Justice of the Peace, C. A. Fox.
- 1876.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, S. E. Qua; Treasurer, B. Smith; Justice of the Peace, A. Nixon.
- 1877.—Supervisor, P. T. Streator; Clerk, W. D. Lane; Treasurer, A. J. Rich; Justice of the Peace, M. J. Blakeman.
- 1878.—Supervisor, M. J. Blakeman; Clerk, O. S. Rodenbaugh; Treasurer, D. Dillon; Justice of the Peace, Geo. Edgel.
- 1879.—Supervisor, M. J. Blakeman; Clerk, O. S. Rodenbaugh; Treasurer, D. Dillon; Justice of the Peace, Chas. A. Fox.

Waverly's population in 1874 was 1104, and in 1879 its assessed valuation was \$347,625.

#### POST-OFFICES.

The post-office of Glendale was originally known as Lemont, having been so named in 1868, by Bailey Stanley, after a hymn-book tune of which he was exceedingly fond. William D. Lane was appointed the first postmaster in 1868, and in connection with the post-office he kept a store south of Jones' saw-mill. His successor in 1875 was Orson A. Breck, who resigned in 1878, and was succeeded by Oscar Rodenbaugh, the present incumbent. During Lane's term the name of the office was changed to Glendale because there happened to be in Ottawa County a post-office known as Lamont, and frequent miscarriages of mail resulted. Mail service to and from Glendale is now performed twice a week between that office and Paw Paw by

way of Waverly post-office. The latter office, originally established in Waverly township, was in 1874 transferred to Almena, its present location.

#### RELIGIOUS.

Waverly has not, nor has it ever had, a church building within its limits, and at this time has but one religious organization, viz., a Methodist Episcopal class. A Free-Will Baptist Church was organized in the town as early as 1843, but although still known as the Waverly Church, its place of worship is in Almena township, where a church was built in 1866. A Methodist Episcopal class was organized in Waverly in 1842, and worship was at first held in the town-line school-house on section 2. Other places were subsequently used for services, but after a time the class became much reduced in membership and was merged into the class now called the Glendale class. This latter was organized in 1858 as the Waverly class at the Spaulding school-house, and contained among its members Mr. and Mrs. Decker and their three daughters, Mr. and Mrs. O. A. Breck, Mr. and Mrs. Isaac Spaulding, Bailey Stanley and wife, Mrs. Sarah McKnight, Mr. and Mrs. Benjamin Smith, Joseph Skinner, and Henry Manee and wife. Of the foregoing, the only ones now members are Mrs. McKnight and Isaac Spaulding.

Elder Caldwell, of Breedsville, who organized the class, had previously conducted spirited revival meetings in Waverly, and subsequent to the organization preached one year. Bailey Stanley was the first class-leader. The pastor following Elder Caldwell was Rev. Mr. Tuttle, and after him came Rev. Charles Fisher, who is again, after an absence of eighteen years, serving the church as pastor. A removal of the place of worship to the Breck school-house, the present location, led to a change of name to that of "Glendale class."

This class, which was at first in the Kalamazoo district, was subsequently changed to the Niles district, and later returned to the Kalamazoo district, in which it now is. Since 1858 worship has been enjoyed pretty regularly once every two weeks. The membership is now about 20. The class-leader is Lucius Rogers.

#### EDUCATIONAL.

The children of Waverly's earliest pioneers gathered the rudiments of learning in a school-house located just north of what is now the line between Bloomingdale and Waverly. The first public school-house in Waverly as it now stands was built in 1844. The town-line school already spoken of was taught in 1838, and had then eight scholars, with W. H. H. Myers for its teacher. The second teacher was Sarah, a sister of Mr. Myers. The school report for the year ending Sept. 30, 1879, showed the condition of Waverly's public schools to be as follows:

Number of districts (whole, 5; fractional, 3).....	8
" children of school age.....	420
Average attendance.....	365
Value of school property.....	\$3300
Amount of teachers' wages.....	\$1270

The school directors for 1879 were M. J. Harmon, N. Merchant, W. W. Scott, P. Bummell, C. E. Ritson, G. Spencer, M. Anton, R. J. Myers.

























LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 016 097 718 8